This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world’s books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that’s often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book’s long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ **Make non-commercial use of the files** We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ **Refrain from automated querying** Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google’s system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ **Maintain attribution** The Google “watermark” you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ **Keep it legal** Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can’t offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book’s appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google’s mission is to organize the world’s information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world’s books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at [http://books.google.com/](http://books.google.com/)
JOURNAL

OF THE

AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY.

ELEVENTH VOLUME.

NOTE TO THE READER
The paper in this volume is brittle or the inner margins are extremely narrow. We have bound or rebound the volume utilizing the best means possible.
PLEAS HANDLE WITH CARE

GENERAL BOOKBINDING CO., CHESTERLAND, OHIO
JOURNAL

OF THE

AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY.

ELEVENTH VOLUME.

NEW HAVEN:
FOR THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY,
Printed by Tuttle, Morehouse and Taylor, Printers to Yale College.
MDCCLXXXV.

SOLD BY THE SOCIETY'S AGENTS:
NEW YORK: B. WESTERMANN & CO., 838 BROADWAY;
LONDON: TRÜBNER & CO.; LEIPZIG: F. A. BROCKHAUS;
PARIS: E. LEROUX.
Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1885, by the
AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY,
in the office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

274114

STANFORD LIBRARY

The first Part of this Volume (Art. I.–V., pp. 1–208; and Proceedings etc., pp. i.–civ.) was published in 1882; and extracts of the first three articles were distributed by their authors in 1879 and 1880. The twelfth volume was published in 1881.
CONTENTS

OF

ELEVENTH VOLUME.

ART. I.—ON THE VERBAL ROOTS OF THE SANSKRIT LANGUAGE AND OF THE SANSKRIT GRAMMARIANS. By A. Hjalmar Edgren, Instructor in Modern Languages in Yale College (Sheffield Scientific School). - - - - 1

ART. II.—ON THE ACCENTUATION OF THE VOCATIVE CASE IN THE RIG- AND ATHARVA-VEDAS. By Willard Haskell, Ph.D., of New Haven. - 57

ART. III.—ON THE RELATION IN THE RIG-VEDA BETWEEN THE PALATAL AND LABIAL VOWELS (i, u, a) AND THEIR CORRESPONDING SEMIVOWELS (y, v). By A. Hjalmar Edgren, Instructor in Modern Languages in Yale College (Sheffield Scientific School). - - - - - - - - 67

ART. IV.—NOTICES OF FU-SANG, AND OTHER COUNTRIES LYING EAST OF CHINA, GIVEN IN THE ANTIQUARIAN RESEARCHES OF MA TWEEN-LIN. By S. Wells Williams, Professor in Yale College. - - - - 89

ART. V.—INDRA IN THE RIG-VEDA. By Edward Delavan Perry, Tutor in Greek and Latin in Columbia College, New York. - - - - 117

ART. VI.—THE CYPRIOTIC INSCRIPTIONS OF THE CERNOLA COLLECTION IN NEW YORK. By Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of New York City. - - 209

ART. VII.—ON THE PROPERED QUOTATIONS FROM MANU FOUND IN THE MAHABHARATA. By Edward W. Hopkins, Instructor in Columbia College, New York City. - - - - - - - - - - - - - 239

ART. VIII.—THE ARABIC BIBLE OF DR. ELI SMITH AND CORNELIUS V. A. VAN DYCK. By Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of New York City. - - - 276

ART. IX.—ON A MANUSCRIPT SYRIAC LEXICONARY. By Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of New York City. - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 287

ART. X.—THE UNDERWANTED VERB-FORMS OF THE RIG- AND ATHARVA-VEDAS. By John Averey, Professor in Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Me. 326
ART. XI.—THE NORTHERN BARBARIANS IN ANCIENT CHINA. By W. A. P. Martin, President of Tung-wen College, Peking, North China. - 362

ART. XII.—ON THE POSITION OF THE VAITANA-SUTRA IN THE LITERATURE OF THE ATHARVA-VEDA. By Maurice Bloomfield, Professor in the Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Md. - - - - - 375

ART. XIII.—THE GREEK STAMPS ON THE HANDLES OF RHODIAN AMPHORES, FOUND IN CYPRUS, AND NOW IN THE METROPOLITAN MUSEUM OF NEW YORK. By Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of New York City. - - - 389

Proceedings of the Society, October, 1878. - - - - i
Principal Contents: Sepulchral monuments of So. India, J. Avery.—Tentative linguistic forms, C. R. Lanman.—Female education in China, S. W. Williams.—Dispersion of the Semitic peoples, T. C. Murray.—Relation in the Rig-Veda between the i- and u-vowels and their semi-vowels, y, e, A. H. Edgren.—Vedic compounds with genitive as prior member, M. Bloomfield.

Proceedings of the Society, May, 1879. - - - - vi
Ellison of a after e and o in the Vedas, J. Avery.—Copper stamp with Greek inscription, F. P. Brewer.—Pre-historic revelations among the Nile-dwellers, T. O. Paine.—Contest between Bel-merodach and the dragon, W. H. Ward.—Recently discovered Hittite inscriptions, W. H. Ward.—Use of gold and silver among the Assyrians, S. Merrill.—Analysis of the Rei-qi rui-ten, G. Attwood.—Darmesteter’s Ormuzd and Ahriman, J. Luquiens.

Proceedings of the Society, October, 1879. - - - - xiv

Proceedings of the Society, May, 1880. - - - - - xxi

Proceedings of the Society, October, 1880. - - - - xxxv
v


Proceedings of the Society, October, 1881.

Delitzsch on the site of Eden, C. H. Toy.—Non-dipthongal e and o in Sanskrit, M. Bloomfield.—The Miao-tsz’ tribes of China, and the Nestorian tablet, S. W. Williams.—The so-called henotheism of the Veda, W. D. Whitney.

Additions to the Library, July, 1878—December, 1881.


The Kushites, C. H. Toy.—The cosmogonic hymn, Rig-Veda x. 129, W. D. Whitney.—A royal leper, W. Butler.—God and the soul among the Nicodemites, T. O. Paine.—De Harlez's Avesta, J. Luquien.—The rude tribes of N. E. India, J. Avery.—Verb-supplement to his Sanskrit grammar, W. D. Whitney.—Metres of the Rig-Veda, W. Haskell.

Proceedings of the Society, October, 1882.


Greek inscription found at Gerash, T. O. Paine.—The site of Pithom, L. Dickerman.—Japanese nai or of composition, B. S. Lyman.—The Oriental genius, J. W. Jeus.—The Jāmīniyā- or Talavākāra-Bṛāhmaṇa, W. D. Whitney.—Modes in relative clauses in the Rig-Veda, J. Avery.—Irregular Vedic subjunctives or imperatives, M. Bloomfield.—Was there a god El at the head of the Babylonian pantheon? D. G. Lyon.—The bronze-crab inscription of the New York obelisk, I. H. Hall.—Peking pronunciation of Chinese, B. S. Lyman.—Two Buddhist Sūtras from the Tibetan, W. W. Rockhill.

Proceedings of the Society, October, 1883.

Proceedings of the Society, May, 1881.  -  -  -  clxxxvi

Notices of the deaths of Professors S. Wells Williams and Ezra Abbot.


Proceedings of the Society, October, 1884.  -  -  -  ccxiii


Additions to the Library, January, 1882—May, 1885.  ccxxxii

List of Members, May, 1885.  -  -  -  -  -  ccxli

Note. — Pages cl.—clxiv. are wrongly numbered, as cl.—clxxiv.
ARTICLE I.

ON THE

VERBAL ROOTS OF THE SANSKRIT LANGUAGE

AND OF THE SANSKRIT GRAMMARIANS.

BY A. HJALMAR EDGREN,
INSTRUCTOR IN MODERN LANGUAGES IN YALE COLLEGE (SHEFFIELD SCIENTIFIC SCHOOL).

Presented to the Society May 29th, 1878.

The object aimed at in this paper has been a separation of authenticated and unauthenticated verbal roots or root-forms in Sanskrit; a general classification and description of the former, and an attempt at determining the value and the character of the latter.

It is a recognized fact that the majority of Sanskrit radicals enumerated by native lexicographers and grammarians have never been verified by modern investigation of the literature of the Hindus. Different causes have been assigned to account for this fact. Some scholars have expressed a suspicion that at least a considerable portion of these strange forms are counterfeits—products of scholastic inventiveness, which have never entered into circulation in the living language. But others, and, it is believed, with the weight of authority on their side, have trusted to the disclosures of a more thorough sifting of all the material for the justification of such forms; or have made dialectic variations and borrowing from unrelated tongues responsible for these pariahs rejected by classical records.

Another fact is also that not only a great number of these problematical root-forms, but also a great many authenticated radicals, are invested with meanings which have never been recognized by modern researches. This also must be due to one of two causes: either to mere invention or guessing on the part of the native lexicographers and commentators, or else to the existence of parallel radicals, identical in their form, but differing in their signification.

VOL. XL

1
This whole subject seems, for two reasons, to deserve especial attention. The first and more general reason is the importance, in Indo-European etymology, of the evidence furnished by Sanskrit roots. The value of their testimony is in exact proportion to their authenticity. Indications are by no means wanting that etymologizers are tempted to lend an undue, indeed often a fallacious, importance to doubtful forms, in allowing them to stand at the side of authenticated roots, as their full equals, supporting far-reaching conclusions: and it might be said with truth that the structure of Indo-European etymology, in so far as it is reared on such foundations, is loose and unsafe. The second and more special reason is the desirableness of facilitating a correct acquisition of the language by disencumbering the dictionaries of what is false, and thus misleads or unnecessarily burdens the memory of the student.

The great dictionary of Böhtlingk and Roth, which determines the value of every root-form as far as the present knowledge of the language permits, and which, no doubt, will for years to come be the corner-stone of all etymological constructions on the Aryan field, will, we hope, some day yield a satisfactory solution of the enigma of these unidentified roots and definitions. In the mean time, the following facts, mainly drawn from that source, and the conclusions founded on them—conclusions given with all the caution which the consideration of a subtle and elusive question has constantly suggested—may serve as a slight contribution to such a result, if only by inviting to the subject a wider discussion than it has hitherto received.

**The Authenticated Verbal Roots and Root-forms.**

By authenticated radicals is here meant all such as, given or not given¹ in native root-collections, especially in Pāṇini’s Dhātupāṭha, and further explained or illustrated by native commentators, have been actually found in any personal or impersonal form by modern researches in the Hindu literature. All forms not thus verified have been ruled out, whatever, in other respects, their claims might seem to be.

**The Number and Classification** of these authenticated radical forms must vary according to different methods followed. In the first case a very large number of radicals catalogued in the

---

¹ About fifty forms, found especially in the Rig-Veda, are wanting in Westergaard’s Rādices Ling. Sanscr. (ākkh (denom. ?), arj (?), dṛ, ākkh (ukkh given), kṣṭ, kṛ (=kam), kṛṣṭh, krṣṇa, ṛṇa, gānd, gāulp, gāulp, gārāha, āṇa, pāṇa, dān, teṇa, 1, 2 iṣ, iṣṭ, iṣṭu, dān, ṛṇa, gānd, pāṇa, pāṇa, dān, bān, bhāṣa, bāh, bhūreṣa, maṇ, miha (=mih). myākṣa, yad, ragn, rapt, red, ṛam, vṛt, ṛd, ṛvṛd, ṛvṛd, ṛvṛd, vṛvṛd, vṛvṛd, vṛṣṭ
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

Dhātupāthas are only convenient duplicates of one and the same root, parallel forms corresponding to slight inflectional changes or varieties which involve no change of sense whatever; as in the case of ḍā, dad, ḍāy; ḍhā, ḍadh; ḍi, i, ay; vīp, veś; the frequent nasalization of roots like badh, bandh; gubh, gumbh; sañj, sanj (also sañj, by assimilation); and so on. If all such possible variations were taken into account, the root-list would be increased beyond endurance. In point of fact it is considerably swelled by these parallel forms, without beginning to exhaust the possibilities; and, moreover, the number varies somewhat according to the method of different lexicographers (European included). The following collection of verified root-forms (in the main though not absolutely agreeing in arrangement with that of the Dhātupātha) contains not less than 108 duplicates of the above description (not counting such as kar, kr, since they are not given separately in the Dhāt.). To these may be added kar, khid, 2 tan, paq, being simply later types of the likewise extant earlier skar, skhid, stān, apag, and implying no organic change or change followed by modification of the meaning, but only a wearing away of the initial consonant. Aside from these 112 duplicates, then, there are altogether 880 radical forms which are authenticated on the principle laid down above.

But, secondly, even these 850 forms must be considerably reduced in number before we have what may be fairly called radicals. There are many forms which, in all probability, must be considered as denominatives, and which, as such, have no more right to occur in a root-collection than other and more evident denominatives, which are excluded from it. It cannot, indeed, be stated with absolute certainty which forms are denominatives; and probably the weight of the best authority is now in favor of the supposition that all verbs of the cur-class were ultimately of that kind. Without resorting, however, here to this theory, and classifying as denominatives, for the most part, only such verbs as seem clearly derived from existing nominal bases both in form and sense, and whose late occurrence in the language, moreover, gives strong support to this theory of secondary formation, a number of 48 is obtained. They are (only the 7 marked † occurring also in the RV.): aṁ, aṁk, aṁkh† (?), argh, arth, brh, kath, kiri, kuts, khand, gan, gand, guṇ†, cūn, tir, dand, ḍhāp, 2 paṭ†, path, 2 paq, pāḍ, pind, 2 phal, phull, mantra†, mṛṣ†, mārg, mīr, māl, 2 mokṣa, yantr, 2 raś, rākṣa, ṛop, lukeś, liṅg, varṇa, vāt, vās, viṛ†, vyay, vṛan (?), cabd, cil, subhāj, sukṛ, adṛt, stān (compare also nād).

Further, there are a few forms which are apparently nothing but (for the most part older and somewhat anomalous) derivative verb-forms (mainly desideratives) from roots existing at their side; and with which, like other more regular derivatives of the kind, they might be properly classed. There are about 16 of them, viz.: kārikah (desid. of kam), khaḷ (caus. of khaḷ), 2 kshap (caus. of kṣap), jāgar (intens. of 3 gur), daridrā (intens. of drā),
diksh (desid. of daksh), diksh (desid. of dih), dip (caus. of di), pār (caus. of par), 3 bādh (desid. of bādh), bhiksh (desid. of bhaj), mīksh (desid. of mīp or mih), moksh (desid. of muce), sā (desid. of ed), hīns (desid. of han), ērnu (fr. var. vrnut); [compare also a few less certain as akeš (aś), naksh (nāś), etc.].

Subtracting the preceding 64 forms from the number 880, there remain 816 radical forms.

Though these figures represent the number of identified radical verb-forms with an independent character and with their own distinct meanings or shades of meaning, it is nevertheless generally conceded that many even of them are but the results of older processes of linguistic change, and that not a few among them are referable to simpler or more primitive roots, which are yet extant. Still the nature and scope of these processes are very differently interpreted, and the classifications, as a consequence, very diverse and uncertain.

In a limited number of cases, indeed, we need feel little or no hesitancy. Thus, especially, there are some radicals like ramb, lamāb (both meaning 'hang down,' but the former occurring only in its literal sense in the Rig-Veda, while the latter, with various figurative meanings attached to it, occurs in the later language alone), or bhan, bhan (the former 'resound, shout,' and Vedic; the latter 'speak,' and post-Vedic) of which lamāb and bhan are evidently nothing but later forms of ramb and bhan. Such couplets, involving no addition or loss of consonants, and no vowel-change, are in fact but one root, and might conveniently be so given, were it not that they often show different shades of meaning, giving rise to different derivations, and that they occur in different epochs, the more original forms generally alone in the Vedic period, and the later forms (mostly alongside the earlier) in a later stage of the language. On these grounds they are justly held apart, being in fact separate forms; only where the preceding distinctions are wanting have they been counted as one. Omitting, of course, the frequent interchange between v and β, which is optional rather than historical, there are altogether 27 such slightly varied radicals, for the most part on the r-l theme, viz.: laṅgh (raṅgh, raṅgh), lap (rap), labh (raḥb), lam (ram), lamāb (ramāb), las (ras), likh (rikh), lip (rip), līp (rip), lih (rik), tud (til), lup (rup), (kshal, caus. of kshar), cal and cul (car), jval (jvar), dat (dar), phal (phar), sphul (spur), hval (hvar), ptu (pru), mruc (mruc), plath (crath), clish (crish); bhan (bhan), at (at); har (bhar), ruh (rudh).

There are also some, like 1, 2 kal, 1, 2 karsh, etc., which are identical in form, but which follow different inflectional systems, and which have generally developed more decided changes of meaning. It has seemed preferable, however, for various reasons, to arrange such forms, in the list which follows, under one head, wherever the kinship of meaning seemed to argue convincingly an ultimate identity; and to leave those subject to more uncertainty to be separated, merely suggesting their relationship.
Reducing again the number 816, which was left above, by the 27 historically modified forms, there remain 789 radicals, which may be considered as either entirely distinct roots, or secondary formations chiefly by means of acretion, or vowel-change and transposition, outside any of the ordinary grammatical processes.

The classification of the greater part of these root-words is necessarily fraught with much uncertainty; and it is here that individual feeling and theorizing, mostly unsupported by direct historical evidence, have established very different principles, and arrived at very diverse results. Leaving entirely to their worth such bold classifications as those attempted by Fick, on the one hand, and by Pott and others, who resort to the prefix-theory (for an anomalous exception comp. ujj), on the other, and building mainly on the principles cautiously and guardedly laid down by Curtius in his Grundzüge der Griechischen Etymologie (pp. 58–72, 4th ed’n), a tolerably correct, though no doubt very incomplete grouping may be obtained. According to these principles a change of roots has taken place, on some principles not yet understood, chiefly by the suffixing of certain consonants, more seldom by a vowel-change, and very rarely by a loss of prefixed consonants.—The last change not being organic, or, as Curtius calls it, a Wurzelaffection and not a Wurzelvariation, has been treated above (p. 3).

Thus it seems reasonable to suppose that couplets or groups of radicals like ḳi, ‘go,’ in, ‘cause to go;’ c, ‘observe,’ c, ‘observe, know,’ cint, ‘think, reflect upon;’ gar, ‘raise the voice;’ gar, ‘bellow, roar;’ si, ‘bind,’ sī, ‘bind together, sew;’ mar, ‘grind, crush,’ marn, ‘crush,’ mard, ‘grind, crush,’ marc, ‘hurt’—and others of a similar character, are closely akin. And when, further, we consider the prevailing tendency of Indo-European roots to growth by means of suffixes, and that the more original meaning can be traced in most cases, though not in all, to the simpler form, it is natural to assume that the longer forms of the preceding examples are later developments of the shorter, by means of the consonantal suffixes, n, t, j, v, d, c.

When, again, we meet with pairs like pā, ‘drink,’ pā, ‘drink;’ sād, ‘accomplish,’ sād, ‘be accomplished;’ rāj, ‘be bright,’ rāj, ‘shine;’ and so on,—we cannot forbear to consider the latter forms as weakenings or strengthenings of the former, and thus to admit vowel-change as instrumental in this root-variation.

Finally, such similar forms as man, ‘think,’ mdl, ‘think;’ par, ‘fill,’ prā, ‘fill;’ gar, ‘swallow,’ gras, ‘swallow;’ jar, ‘move near,’ jri, ‘move’—evidently show a kinship: be it that the variation of form was caused by metathesis; or, as argued recently by Dr. Brugman (Morphologische Untersuchungen, I), by means of a vowel-suffix [prā=p(a)r+d].

Adhering in the main to these three principles (exceptionally an infix, and in two or three cases a prefix, being allowed), 156 forms have been judged to be such derivatives from simpler and more primitive radicals. It should be remarked, however, that
most (about 110, comp. p. 7) of these presumable branch-roots appear side by side with their stems in the earliest monuments of the language, and that a great part of them are shown by corresponding forms in other cognate languages to have existed before the separation of the common primitive speech into its branches. If these 158 conjectural—and no doubt, on the whole, real—root-derivatives of extant roots be subtracted also from the sum 789, which remained above, we arrive at a total of 633. This may be considered as a moderate estimate of all genuine Sanskrit roots which are really independent, in so far as, though sometimes related, they are not derived, directly or indirectly, from one another.

But not only do a great many of these independent roots bear traces of secondary foundation, though the more primitive form is lost or unauthenticated, but several of them are so similar in both form and sense, that they appear to be varied developments of some lost elementary root, or otherwise kindred forms. Thus, for instance, we have beside kamp, 'tremble,' kup, 'be stirred or excited' (to which two forms an original kup is wanting); beside kan, 'be pleased, love;' kam, 'love;' beside nad, 'sound,' nard, 'roar;' beside jabh, 'snap at with the mouth,' jeh, 'gape' (by Benfey wrongly, as it seems, considered to be an intens. of hā); and so on. It is often a matter of great difficulty to draw the line between these indirectly kindred radicals and those treated above; and it has seemed preferable, in the appended classification of root-forms, to arrange all evidently kindred ones together. By this means a list of 587 roots and groups of related root-forms is obtained.

It must be remembered, however, that this classification nowise aims at being exhaustive. It only seeks to bring together tentatively those forms which have seemed to bear more evident traces of kinship, leaving all that seemed too uncertain, by formation or meaning, to stand by themselves. There is no doubt that a more rigorous dealing with the subject would considerably reduce this number, for much latitude may be indulged here, but it would also, in so uncertain a field, be subjected to many doubtful and erroneous inferences, a danger which even so general a grouping as this cannot hope to have entirely escaped. Such obscure questions as whether jńa, 'know,' comes from jan, 'bear, be born,' or man, 'think,' from ma (nd), 'form or measure,' though occasionally noted, have not been considered in the arrangement. Various forms like tud, hū, both meaning 'push,' gū, gubh, both meaning 'shine,' though they may be originally akin, have also been left separated, in the absence of a common tu, gū. Further, var and vul, 1, 2, 3 cam (all connected by Fick), etc., have been left separated for want of any closer connection in their meanings. It has seemed preferable, in regard to such forms as the above, to assume the possibility of their independent coexistence, rather than to follow a sweeping theory of reduction. Scarcely any account has been taken of prefixed consonants
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

though it seems to be not without significance that occasionally words occur with kindred forms and meanings like an, kram, dram, bhram for motion, tan, kvan, dhvan, bhan (bhan), ran (ran), evan for sound, and some others less numerous. In some exceptional cases a deviation from a more generally accepted etymology has been ventured on. Thus the theory, apparently supported by cognate languages, that bhā, ‘shine,’ and bhān, ‘speak,’ belong to an original bhā, ‘speak, shine,’ has not been followed, for various reasons. The alleged support of that theory by other Sanskrit roots which have the same two meanings is of a very dubious character, inasmuch as those other forms (not less than 38) are all, with one single exception, unauthenticated, and the definitions, as will be shown further on, probably artificial. The one authenticated exception is las, which is found both in the sense of ‘shine’ and ‘sound,’ and is by the Petersburgh Dictionary given as one root. But it seems more probable, after all, that las, ‘sound,’ is but a later form of ras, ‘give forth any loud sound, roar,’ etc. (comp. old bhan, ‘resound, shout’); and which ras never means ‘shine.’ To this should be added, however, cakah, which, though not meaning ‘shine,’ is found in the sense of ‘be visible, appear; announce, say’ (Petersb. Dict.); and which is derived from kdeh, ‘shine.’ It seems as if here the meaning ‘announce, say’ (found chiefly when the root is comp’d with ā, praty-ā, etc.) had been developed causatively through ‘make apparent, etc.’ As regards the root bhan (bhan), on the contrary, its earliest (Vedic) sense appears to be ‘resound, shout,’ not ‘speak,’ and this latter (post-Vedic) meaning therefore to be directly derived more naturally from the idea of sound. Besides bhan (bhan) seems in some way, if only by analogy, to connect itself with a number of roots in -an (see above), meaning ‘sound.’ Why not accept two different elements as well for bhā, bhan, as for the kindred verbs qaiv-ā, qn-ú in Greek? The remarkable alternative coincidence of lengthened vowel and nasalization might be accidental, and is not found in other kindred tongues.

The occurrence of the authenticated radicals and radical derivatives is as follows. Of the 832 forms which remain after the merely graphically different ones and the denominatives have been deducted 528 occur in both the Rig-Veda and the other literature.' Of the remaining 304 forms, 62 occur in the Rig-Veda alone (4 others in the Atharvan alone, see note below):

dr, ṭ, 2 uksh, gadh, gārdh, jagjh, janj, 2 jar, 3 jār, ji, jūr, jeh, jri, tak, 2 tan, tand, tur, tuc, twuksh, dan, dāt, 3 di, dudh, drā, dhan, dhav, dhraj, nas, nīn, nīd, pāj, pruksh, phar, bhan, bhanā, bharv, bhishaj, bhur, bhraj, bhī, bhresht, myuksh, yad, rups, raph, ramb, rikht, ript, 1 rudhī, vakt, 2 uksh, vat, 4 vas, vrad, vṛddh, vlag, čeam, čār (?), gār, pāj, prush, sridh.

1 The following 26 radicals occur in the Atharvan, but not in the Rik (only 4, thus marked, in the Atharvan alone): art (A.V. alone), ā, kash, kā, khan, keshv, pād, cat, caekht, chā, tvar, tāv (? A.V. alone), pad (A.V. alone), bhās, mhr, murch, marc, rup, lāp, līk, tup, valg, vh, cat, 1 cad, has (A.V. alone).—Some other Atharvan roots occur in the Rik in a participial form only.
Of these 62 there are 11 (marked †), however, which have derivative words in the later language; and others appear to be secondary forms of also post-Vedic roots, viz.: sī (_index), seh (jatāḥ), jīrṇa (jvar), dudh (dhā), dhān (dhānu), bhrāṣṭa (bhraṣṭ), yād (yā). On the whole, therefore, there are but 44 radicals which belong exclusively to the earliest Vedic period, and have no connection with the later literature.

The following list contains the remaining 242 forms which do not occur in the Rig-Veda (those 26 found in the Atharvan, however, are so marked):

Forms with an l-sound, 1 kal, 2 kal, klath, klam, klid, klīc, kṣkāl, kṣkvel, khet, gud, guhāḥ, cat (AV.), jat†, jvāl, tul, dāl, dāl, pātpat, pūsh†, phōl, bāl, bhal, it (AV.), mil, mech, lāj†, lāgh, lāj†, lāp (AV.), lam, lamb, tul, lāsh, lās, tā, likh (AV.), līś, lī, lāic, lāt, 1 lāth, 2 lāth, lānch, lānd, lāp (AV.), tul, tin, tik, loc, val† (AV.), val, vī (AV.), ga, gāth, gādgh, gādh, kṣkāl, spha, spha†, hōld, hvālt‡:—with a linguat mute or nasal at, kāt†, kūt†, kūn†, krad, ḱvan, ḱvan, (= kshan), kshvid, guṇ†, guṇ†, guṇ†, gīat, guh, gār†, gārm, cat, cesat (AV.), jhat, tānk, ḍām, dām, di, dhāunk, tat, nat, pat, path, paut, bhal, bhan, man, mand, mred, rat, ran (= ran), red, rath, vesh†, vran, vrid, mṛd, sti†, spha, spha†, hind, (+ 1 lāth, 2 lāth, lānch, lāl from the l-series):—terminating in a palatal, ḍēnch, ṛj, ṛjīh, nič, ku(ṅ)c, khac, khac, garj, guṇ†, caic, care, tāic, tuj†, pu†, march? (†), mārč (AV.), mruo (AV.: RV. verbal), vij, sic, hurch (+ kīq, mech, lāj†, līq, lāic, loc from the l-series):—others, anq†, ant† (AV.), kath†, kāmp†, kush (AV.), kāṅkša, kuth, kush, kā†, kāj (AV.), kārd, kūn†, kṛath, kwath, kshan (AV.), kshap, kṣhp, kshubh† (AV.), khadd†, gād (AV.), gārd, gumpāt†, gulp, gharsh (ghuksh), dānt†, carv, cint, cupt, cumb, cur, cūsh, chard, chā (AV.), chur, jup, jyv†, jvāl†, 1 tan, tark, tāv (AV.), tīnt, rap, tvaṅ, tuar (AV.), darbh†, darp, darvād, dā, dān, 2 div, dikh, du, dram, 2 drāt, dhi(n), dikhā, dhavār†, nard, nikāh, ned, 2 par, pis, path, pāy, pānt (AV.), purh (brnhr), bharts, bhāso, bάnd, bhās (AV.), bhāṇk, bhrānt†, midn, mīn (AV.), yah, raksāt, rāṅgh, rambh, 1 ras, 2 ras, ruht, rās (rāg), riik, riit, riif, rath, ruht, rupt (AV.), rāsh, 2 varīth, 5 ras, vāt, vāḥ, with, cat (AV.), 1 gād (AV.), caṅk, cik, sap, subh, sūrkh, sāt, sīgh, sīn, stīn, stāk, 2 end, spha†, had, has (AV.), hikk, hras, krād, hresh, hlād‡.

Of these 242 forms there are 31 (marked †), however, which have derivative words in the Rig-Veda. There remain consequently 211 radicals which cannot be proved to have existed in the language at that time. A considerable share of these are found, however, in the other Vedas (28 in the Atharvan, of which 4 there alone) or in the Brāhmaṇas (several there alone); and a comparison between the whole Vedic and the post-Vedic period would show a far smaller discrepancy here, whereas the exclusively Vedic radicals would be considerably increased in number.

It is evident, also, that the absence of any form in the Rig-Veda is no certain, nor hardly even presumptive, evidence of its non-
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

existence in the language at that period; since one single work of a not large or varied extent, like the Rig-Veda, can embody but a certain part of the language of its time.

But an examination of these 242 radicals evinces, nevertheless, that a considerable share of them may with great probability be considered as of later formation. Thus, as seen above, not less than 63 radicals (only 7 of them in the Atharvan), have the \( l \)-sound (25 initial, 25 final, 15 medial). But an \( l \) is generally conceded to be (for the most part, at any rate) a later change of a more original \( r \). It is rare in the Rig-Vedic root-forms, occurring altogether in but 11 out of 590 radicals (4 times as initial, lubh, lip, li, lubh; once as final, mil; and 6 times as medial, kalp, klum, gta, mtrc, mid, vitr(\( i \))g; and in the denom. jalt). The immense disproportion is evident, being nearly that of 14 to 1, or of one \( l \)-sound in every fourth root of the strictly post-Vedic material to one in every fifty-fourth root of the Vedic. Even the assistance of the seven Atharvan roots in \( l \) would not change very much this discrepancy. Moreover, several of these \( l \)-forms give a more direct proof of their late formation, inasmuch as the older \( r \)-forms are found only in an earlier stage of the language (compare the list below).

The preceding remarks apply also to the lingual mutes and nasal. They also are rare in the Rig-Veda, occurring altogether in only 12 radicals (id, kud, krid, tow, tid, pid, pham, mar, mara (euphonic), vih, vrid, hid). But in the other literature they are found in 48 root-forms (only 1 of these in the Atharvan), as is seen in the above list; the disproportion being here nearly as that of 10 to 1, or of one lingual in every fifth root of the strictly post-Vedic material to one in every forty-ninth root of the Vedic. Even here the direct evidence of actual change is not wanting (see below); though probably foreign elements have also entered.

It is worthy of notice that while the Rig-Veda has 100 root-forms terminating in palatals (28 of these the palatal sibilant), only 26 of all the non-Vedic forms (see p. 8) terminate thus (and of these only three in the palatal sibilant): i.e. there is four times greater frequency in a material little more than one and a half times larger, or about one palatal in every ninth or tenth root of the strictly post-Vedic material to one in every sixth root of the Vedic. In regard to the remaining non-Vedic forms, no such marked differences on a noteworthy scale have been remarked.

Another feature worthy of mention, as helping to demonstrate the comparatively late character of many of these radicals, is that 47 of them are more or less evidently changes or developments of more primitive roots, also extant, viz.:

With an \( l \)-sound: 2 kal (=1 kal), kshat (kshar), col (car), jalt (jar), juat (jwar), col (dar), 1 phal (phar), lait (ruith), lam (ram), lamb (ramb), las (ras), tikh (rick), tig (rip), tik (rit), lup (rup), loc (ruw), loc (ruw), col (car), stil (prath), stil (prish), hual (hwar), sphul (spur);—with a lingual mute or nasal, at (at), kut (kurt), ghat (ghurth), nat (nart), path (prath), bhar (bhan), bhan (bhan),
sphat (sphar, phal?), sphut (sphat), vesht (vish) — others, dīksh (acř), arj (ar), kāṅkṣh (desid. kim), cūkṣā (kṣā), gārj (gār), guṇj (gu), cīnt (cī), jyut (div), tim (tam), tvar (tar), dīkṣh (desid. dukṣh), dārīdṛā (intens. drā), rākṣh (ṛṛp), rās (ṛd), rīṅkṣh (ṛṅg), rudh (vardh).

The productiveness, finally, of the verified roots should be noticed. Like germs planted in the fruitful soil of living language, they have sprung up and borne fruit, often a hundred-fold. Or, it might be said with more appositeness that, like living members of the society of language, they have entered into union with other members, and given birth to new families of words: by means of suffixes, to nouns on the one hand; and, by means of prepositional prefixes, to new verbs or to nouns on the other. So general is this productiveness, and the trace of it, that it might well be called the law of a genuine root. Out of our 832 radicals (denom. deducted), some of them of a very late formation, 814 observe this law; and the vast majority of these, or rather more than 700, have derivatives of both kinds (only about 35 being found compounded with prepositions, but without derived nouns or adjectives; and about 65 vice versa).

Only 18 authenticated root-forms (waiving a few uncertain ones) appear barren and isolated in the dictionary: viz. krūḍ, gārd, 2 jār, tuṣ, tuṅg, dān, bāl, bhūraj, bhri, rūth, vrud, 1 pad, gēam, gār, gaj, stigh, viṭh, ḫās. But almost every one of these appear in a single passage only (and that nearly always in ḫV.); only one of them (pad) in more than three passages. They are therefore invested with much uncertainty in regard both to sense and connection. Besides, bhūraj is a late derivative, and gēam is perhaps incorrect writing for ḫam. This feeble exception to the general rule is, therefore, of a wholly uncertain and insignificant value. Possibly a closer examination may add a few forms to these; but it is as likely to remove some of these from their present isolated state.

The Unauthenticated Verbal Root-forms.

The number of radical forms, graphically or otherwise distinct, which have not been verified in use, is a little above eleven hundred. By allowing for forms of identical meaning, on the same principle on which this was done for the other class of radicals, the number is reduced to somewhat less than a thousand.

An important fact, however, must be considered in connection with this statement. It is this: not only a large part of these forms, but also a considerable number of the authenticated radicals, are invested with meanings incompatible with one another, and in the latter case, with the verified sense: and many of them are assigned to two or more conjugational systems. Were all these meanings to be accepted as real, then such radical forms should rightly be divided into as many radicals as the meanings warrant. This would probably raise the total number considerably above
two thousand. In some instances (as for amb, etc.), they are thus properly separated in the Dhātupātha; and etymologists are also led, when necessary, to keep them apart. It would, however, be an ungrateful task to try such a separation, so long as the whole subject is involved in much doubt and shows evident corruption; and, in general, only the unauthenticated forms, but not their varied meanings, will be considered for the present.

To determine the value and character of these doubtful forms is a very precarious task. The following considerations seem, however, to be strong presumptive evidence in favor of the un genuineness of the vast majority of them.

I. The disproportion between authenticated and unauthenticated radicals.—Some scholars of the highest authority have, to be sure, trusted to the discoveries of a fuller investigation of the whole literature for the justification of doubtful forms; or have made dialectic variations and foreign borrowing responsible for this mass of strange material. Thus Westergaard, in his Radices Lingua Sanscrita, expresses himself in regard to the idea of fictitiousness: "Mira tamen assertio, quam tam paululum literæ Indicee notae sint. Puto contra quemque sibi persuasum habere posse, eas radices, de quibus omnes grammatici consentiant, quam literæ Indicee melius cognote fuerint, omnes exemplis inde sump tis probatas repertum iri." Henfrey, in his Vollständige Grammatik der Sanskritsprache, § 140, without questioning the genuineness of any radical given by native lexicographers, suggests that dialectic usages and the engrafting of foreign elements have caused a great diversity of forms.

A vast progress in the study of the Sanskrit literature has been made since the Danish scholar uttered his cautious words (1842), and still the unverified elements remain virtually at the same point as then. The very oldest records of the language have been in the main thoroughly sifted; and all the more important parts of the later literature, theological, philosophical, and aesthetic, have been searched, and still over a thousand—or shall we say over 2,000?—alleged roots have never been met with. And we are to believe that this host of radicals will be found chiefly in that part of the post-Vedic literature which has not been investigated, in spite of the fact that the vast field actually searched shows but a very small root-increase even from the earliest monuments down (comp. p. 8, 2, note). In view of these considerations, it seems reasonable to suppose that we can never hope to find, at the best, more than a small fraction of this mass in the literature.

Still, there are weightier objections than these, bearing also on the other opinion—that the dictionary has been recruited from dialects or unrelated tongues. We refer to:

II. The different relation which the authenticated and the unauthenticated radicals sustain to the other material of the vocabulary.—The authenticated elements (as has been pointed out, p. 10) are, almost without exception, living germs growing and ramifying: they have given birth to new parts of speech, and
have in union with prepositions formed new verbs. So general is this principle of organic development, that it could be used with a high degree of certainty as the special touchstone by which uncertain roots might be tested. How, then, do the unverified roots come out of such an examination? Out of about 1,000 radicals (genuine forms with unverified meaning as well as inflection counted), less than 150 seem to have any possible connection in sense with surrounding or similar nominal forms, viz.:—

\[\text{aṅc (}= \text{aṅ\text{\textsubscript{s}}})\], \text{ag, aṅh, and, anḍh, abhr, ark, al, ind, ul, oj, on, kac, kuṅc, kaṅ, kath, kad, kan, kaṅth, kand, kab, kar, kard, kal, kall, kav, kil, kī, kel, kū, kūn, kumb, kul, kūṅ, kūṭ ("enclose"), krath, kļa(n)d, kļib, kšhur, kšhmāy, kļaj, kļur, guj, gad, gandh, gar (gr, "spinkle"), gav, guh, gu, ga, gā, gārd, gōa, graṅth, ghar ("shine"), ghārsh (}= \text{harṣ})\), ghur, cand, cā, cīt, cūnī, jai, jai, jin, tāl, tīk, dim, taṅka, tay, tān, tā, dān, dyai, drūn, dūr, dhi, dhī, dhor, dhuṅka, nar, nai, nīsh, pa(h)a, pand, pān, pī, pīth, pū, pun, pur, pūkh, bal, bid, bis, buk, bust, bāna, bhā, math, man, ma, ma, mā, mānd, mur, mus, yant, ray, rek, laṅ, vaṭ, vānṭh, vār, vārc, vaṅb, vin, vel, veh, saṅ, gath, sam, cav, ciṅg, ciṅh, cuṅhit, cārp, pāl, ṣron, plak, sbāhr, sar, skhād, sthā, sthr, hath, ḫal.

The connection which these radical forms may have with certain nouns or adjectives, has been noted on the very questionable supposition that the latter are all genuine. The list would be much smaller still, were only authenticated nominal forms to be considered. Further, it must be observed that this connection is nearly always restricted to one of the meanings of the radicals, that it extends frequently to but one or two words, and that it is sometimes of a very doubtful character. This apparent relation may be owing to one of three causes. Either the root-forms are genuine, and have given rise to the word or words in question; or they have been invented or inferred by grammarians to account for the same, or to serve as their denominatives; or, finally, the agreement is purely an accidental one. It is probable that each of these causes has been active; but a study of this relation, which has often too artificial an aspect to be credited as natural, makes it more than likely that the second cause has been especially instrumental in bringing it about. The fact that the greater part of these radical forms are given without connection with any prepositions (contrary to the nature of real roots, p. 10), gives support to this opinion. Even Böhtlingk and Roth, who maintain a cautious reserve in regard to the real nature of the authenticated root-forms generally, leaving them to stand for what they may be worth, not unfrequently suggest such forms as the above to be artificial.

But these few radicals form but a small fraction of the whole unidentified mass. There remain about 850, which either appear like perfect strangers in the midst of clusters of words that might be akin to them in form, but nowise in meaning, or else stand perfectly isolated in both respects (there are about 300 of the latter).
Thus, while the authenticated radicals appear like veritable prajnapā surrounded by a generally numerous kindred, which they never, as a rule, entirely survive, these unverified forms have no kindred, or have outlived them all, if they ever had any! There seems to be no escape from this anomaly, except in the supposition that these forms are, for the most part, intruders of some sort. Shall we then call them dialectic borrowings? But the same objection would apply also to this hypothesis. It seems, namely, in the first place, entirely incredible that all dialectic derivatives should have been completely left out, while such a wholesale borrowing of dialectic roots took place. And, secondly, what must the dialect have been, if this host of roots had no connection in sense whatever with so similar classical words as those by which they are often surrounded, or if they had no kindred whatever in the literary language?

The idea that they could be borrowed from unrelated tongues, if it was ever held, needs no refutation. Such a borrowing could only be sporadic, and would more likely be of nouns than of radicals.

But an equally strong argument against the genuine character of the plurality of these forms seems to be:—

III. The different relation between authenticated radicals of kindred form and meaning on the one hand, and unauthenticated ones of the same kind on the other; and the artificial aspect of the latter.—The verified radicals of kindred form and meaning were connected with one another chiefly by means of an extension or inner vowel-change of the simpler root. Radicals of kindred meaning without any such connection, but running on the same scale, as kram, bhram, or dhwan, bhan, etc., though not wanting, are comparatively few in number; and the longest series of them counts but seven (or nine) verbs (tan, etc., see p. 7). An examination of the unauthenticated forms shows that they, on the contrary, are connected chiefly, and to a prodigious extent, on the latter principle. Radicals with absolutely identical meanings, and with that analogy of form which excludes the principle of growth or decay, are so frequent, that not far from four-fifths of the whole material in question can be arranged in groups of such parallel forms, containing each from two or three up to twenty or even more of them. To enumerate all such groups would consequently amount to giving the bulk of the unverified root-forms. But as the scattered connections are generally pointed out in dictionaries, a few of those larger groups which they form when collected may here suffice as examples. Thus: kev, khev, gev, glev, pev, glev, mle, glev; meb, peb; meb, lep are all in the Dhatuvātīya defined by seven or 'serve, honor:—

amb, kamb, khamb, gamb, ghamb, cumb, tamb, namb, pamb, bamb, mamb, gamb, shamb, samb, sāmb; vam, chamb are all defined by kātu (gatyām) or 'go':—met, med, met, med (also real), mlet mled are defined by umāde or 'be angry:—kakāh, khaikāh, gaggh, gaagh, ghuagh are defined by hasane or 'laugh:—marc, marj, márj, muj, muuj, muj, gaj, maru are all gabdārthāh or words
meaning 'sound':—*tup, tump, tumb, tubh, tumph, turr, trup, cumb, grub, cumh, rph, rimpf, ramph, prih, grimbh, srih, sinidh*, all mean 'hurt, kill':—*arb, karb, kharb, garb, gharb, carb, tarb, nurb, parb, barb, marb, lurb, sarb, surb; parp, rarpf, raph, karv, thurv, phavr, marc, sarv, all again mean 'go':—etc., etc.

But, further, many of these groups represent the same meaning, and run into one another; and when all words with the same definition are collected, their number sometimes reaches enormous proportions. Thus especially in case of the radical forms with the alleged meaning 'go.' Counting all unauthenticated instances (the unverified 'go' of auth. roots, and a few Sautra-roots included) not less than 336 radicals are said to have that sense. And it will be found by the following arrangement that nearly all of them fall, more or less evidently, into such groupings of analogous forms.

2 aúg, taúg, traúg, maúg, raúg, laúg, vaúg, saúg, cláig, zónig, saúig; aúgh, maúgh, vaúgh; carygh, darygh, rágh; aka, kank, traík, manúk, vaúnik, cláúk, zónik, saúnik, wónik:—nákk, náuñ, makh, máuñkh, rakh, ráuñkh, kakh, lúñkh, vakh, vaúnik, traúnik, ukh;—ikkh, liññkh, triññkh, rikh, liññkh, piññkh:—pháukk, makkk, wáuñkk, shaúnik, saúnik, shukkk:—tik, dik, tik, tik, tik, tik; sek, sek, sek:—mask, máuñkh, váñnik, váñkh, wónik, wónik; wónikk:—ling (= riñq):—ac, vaac, xac, anúc, taúc, tráuc, maúc, neac, gáac, váac, saúc; marc:—akuuc, muuc, muúnc, múuñc; mlúuc:—kuc, kuuc, gruc, gluuc, gluuc; rék, viuc:—aj, kskaj, dhwrj, dhwañj, raj, reñ, rañj, vaj, swañj, sañj, sañj, sarj; ñáñj, dhrrij, dhrrij, nñj, viñj:—jesh, nesh, pesh, presh, bresh, bhesh, bhrish, khrish, 2 sh, ash, push;—pis, bis, mis, vis, pes, ves; biic, ñiic, ñiíc, beíc:—ai, 2 kan, kañu, wran:—tskk, daks, jankh.

amb, kamb, khab, gamb, ghamb, camp, camb, champ, tamb, namb, pamb, bumb, mamh, ramb, cumb, shamb, samb, sambh, kshamb:—arb, karb, kharb, garb, gharb, carb, tarb, tharv, nurb, parb, pharb, borb, marb, lurb, sarb, surb; raarb, ramph, rarpf, varph:—kap, ktrip, krap; kep, glep, prep, rep, rep, ren, lep;—parp, c뷰, danu, rinu; dru:—jam, dram, brahm, snam, hamm, drumm, mnnn:—cay, day, nay, pay, nay, ray, voy, hay, hary, vyay (or = vi i):—kel, khel, kahve, cel, cell, pel, phel, sel, sel; pal, pail, phy, val, val, cal, cal, zval, svall, soal, sal, svul; til, till:—ahhr, mahr, bahhr:—yur, ghur, dhur:—au, kan, kan, can, phan, pen, ven, ven, pain, lan, pun, pun, jun, jrun:—kañ, kant, kant, nut, pat, pand, pat; ath, mareth, veth, zveth, zunar, zvart;—Jud, drad, drál, but, luth, bant, runh; hrid, hid, had, hod, hund, hrrnd:—it, it, kit, nnt, nnt:—dhrr, pàd, ód, cá (cái), caya (cyai):—pi, pri, hi, veni; plí, bòi, vli:—ká, klu, gu, chyiu, jyu, jhun, jhun, du, dò, drr, dhú, dhú, dhru, dhrr, pru, m:—ah, áh, ir, it, gandh, nard, vast, cay(yút), sidh, not referable to any of the preceding groups.

This grouping, though not always certain, is with very few exceptions perfectly evident. Into the whole number 336 enter
about 65 radicals verified in other sense than 'go, move.' But these 'go'-roots, though much exceeding any others in number, are not the only ones of abnormal numbers and obvious classifications. Another very frequent definition is 'hurt, kill' (kṣīṣṣdyān, etc.). There are about 110 forms with that meaning assigned to them; and they can all, with very few exceptions, be arranged into 18 or 19 groups of the same nature as those above (for examples, see p. 14). Then there are about 70 equally classifiable forms (for examples, see p. 13), called gabdārthāḥ, or words expressing sound; 37 (see p. 10) mean 'speak, shine:' about 60 mean 'speak'; and so on.

These facts, it seems, bear an aspect too evidently artificial to be accepted as the natural results of linguistic processes. It appears even that they indicate the very cause of such strings of root-growth which, spreading and ramifying everywhere in rank and intricate confusion, underlie the whole soil of the language. It seems probable that the actual existence of a few similar forms with a kindred meaning, and perhaps also some noticed dialectic varieties of the same word, have gradually led lexicographers to an artificial extension ad libitum of such kindred forms. The first cause of the extension might have been a desire to set up roots for certain classes of words the real elements of which were unknown. This supposition seems confirmed by the fact, that several words are said to be derived from unauthenticated root-forms with which they have a seeming connection in form, but none in idea. In coining these counterfeits, however, it seems as if the guiding principle had been at first to model them in form and sense on some genuine radical, rightly or falsely interpreted; for in the greater number of instances the strings of kindred forms clearly show such a point d'appui. Thus, in the examples given above, ken, khen, gen, gle, pev, etc., all meaning 'serve or honor,' lean on the real root sev of the same meaning; cav, dav, nay, pay, etc., for 'go,' may depend on ay, 'go;' 2 ang, tang, mang, rang, etc., for 'go;' are evidently variations of 1 ang, twang, 'go;' further, an, kan, kun, can, can, 2 tan, dhan, dhan, dhan, dhan, dhanan, ban, ban, man (?) van, van, all meaning 'sound,' clearly agree with tan, kvan etc. (p. 7); and so on.

These two principles, namely, that of coining roots for certain classes of words, and of modelling those new vocables on true radicals not only in form, but also in sense, independently of the word or class of words they were to preside over, would seem to have been the beginning of the extension. Gradually, however, these principles, false from the beginning, ran into excess in two directions. On the one hand, the mere desire of adding a new vocable by means of this current change by analogy, would seem to have given rise to a host of forms, even when there were no noun-forms to account for. In a few exceptional changes the larger part of the alphabet is taxed for such variations. Thus, for instance, in the series of unverified roots beginning amb, kamb, khamb, gamb, ghamb, etc. (some of which stand perfectly isolated),
only eight consonants are wanting as initials. It is worth noticing that in these eight instances no nouns calling for such fictitious radicals are found. The series beginning *arb, karb, kharp, garb,* etc., represents a similar case. On the other hand, the desire to account for words without known roots probably freed itself in a limited number of cases from the prevailing principle of dependence on other roots (especially where no suitable ones were found), and assumed, by means of inference, meanings akin with the word to be explained. From these inferred, and no doubt at times rightly inferred, radicals new-derived groups again were established. Finally some sporadic causes of a still more arbitrary nature may have been instrumental in the creation of new vocables.

The subject of the diversity of definitions may properly be considered here. As was pointed out above, a large proportion of the authenticated root-forms have two or several irreconcilable meanings assigned to them; and many authenticated radicals are burdened with definitions never verified. The majority of these definitions seem plausibly explained by the following considerations:

First, the same principle which led to one fictitious meaning of a radical also led to others: i.e., a certain analogy of form with another radical suggested a renewed transfer of meaning; and sometimes the desire to explain words, additional definitions. Thus we find, for instance, in the series referred to already, that *gandh, lik, tig, dru, dhru, dharp, vast* are enrolled among both the ‘go’ and the ‘kill’ groups.

Secondly, within the very definitions the idea of using closely similar words has for some reason, perhaps to cover an uncertainty or from habit, been applied. Thus the two *bhargane and bhawnane,* so similar in form but different in sense, have been assigned to not less than 37 forms, also falling into different groups, viz.: *kun, kuins, rni, dan, dauns, truns, kwais, pin, hun:*—*kup, gun, dhp:*—*ghat, gharn, ghan, tad, nat, nal, pat, put, puni, putth, rut, bet:*—*pun, min, luiz, luwig, bwanj:*—*bark, vark, bath, varh:*—*aik, maih, ruagh, laung:*—(lok, loc real in sense of ‘see,’ probably originally ‘shine’:—*vich, vie*). The two meanings in question seem too different to be of so frequent occurrence together; and only one root-form (or two? comp. p. 7) having both of them is verified in all the language. But the insufficiency of that support has been pointed out already. The weak testimony of *qarn* and *qenu* (same p.) appears also too uncertain to outweigh the artificial aspect of the proceeding. Other definitions of a similar character are *dvarane, dprawane, dpawane; upaharane, apaharane, avaharane; thavakarane, thawakarane,* and so on.

Sometimes by prefixing the privative *a,* or in some other way, two contradictory definitions for the same word are obtained: as in *hrap, hlap, klap,* defined by *vyaktam vdc* and *avvyaktam vdc,* or in *sirksh,* defined by *andare, adare,* etc.

In the third place, the real roots were subjected to many vague
and stumbling or even false interpretations, which in their turn reacted on the others. At last, as a result of the whole artificial system, we may suspect arbitrarily appended meanings. And thus the dictionary became gradually burdened with a heap of inorganic rubbish, in some parts hiding and well nigh extinguishing its real life. So uncertain are the native definitions that in some instances not one of those given to genuine radicals have been accepted by modern investigations.

We have yet to note one more reason for considering the majority of the unverified root-forms as spurious, namely:—

IV. THE DISCREPANCY between the number of authenticated and unauthenticated radicals represented in cognate languages.—Fick, in his Wörterbuch der Indogermanischen Sprachen, finds about 450 of the authenticated radicals, as here given, proved by collateral evidence to have belonged to the original Indo-European speech. But of the whole mass of unauthenticated forms or meanings, only the following 80 have been by him accepted on such evidence:—

agh, arj, u, kakâ, kac, kañ, kar (kill), kark, kuc (sound), kuñj, kud, kuh, kuv, kñâ (stink), kmar, khaj, khad, kharj, khav, khâ, khur, khod, gagh, gaj, gandh, gar (sprinkle), gu, ghâr, can, cap, jhar, tip, tin, tøp, tøph, tonym, tus, trakk, trak, trakûh, travîq, trup, truph, trump, trumph, tvânc, drâgê, dhor, dhran, pan, pard, piñj, bhârc, bhûc, mac, may, mañj (= mañj), minn, muj, mund, mû, ramb (‘sound’), lambh, vaûg, gûbh, ges, gûbh, glâkh, sul, sur, skund, skhâd, stak, stigh, stip, sthal, svar, hrap, hlap.

Though the evidence given in their favor be sometimes convincing, it seems, however, in other instances, too weak. Thus hrap, hlap, ‘sound,’ are supported only by Old Norse gjâlf-r, ‘sound, roaring,’ and by a reference to Lith. zleptérët and Sanskr. jâlp, ‘speak lowly;’—tip, støp, ‘drip, sprinkle,’ by Gr. trîp-os, ‘bog, ditch,’ trîp-îs, ‘boggy,’ trîp-n, ‘water-spider,’ Lat. tîpâla, ‘water-spider;’ Lith. tepû, têp-ti, ‘smear,’ stem top. Moreover, in a few of the 80 radicals, Fick has been obliged to assign meanings different from those given in the Dhâtupâtha.

Though the general conclusions from the preceding arguments would be that the vast majority of the unauthenticated forms are pure figments of the native grammarians, the probability still remains that a certain percentage of them are real, and either stored away in some unexplored part of the literature, or, for some reason, never recorded there.

Aside from the possible disclosures of future research, only a careful weighing of all the evidence, external and internal, should decide. The collateral evidence of cognate languages is of course

1 Occasionally a root which seemed lost beyond recovery or false will come to light. Thus the roots/stîp, rîth (rith) pîlay (not really a root, but from pra + s) have been found but recently, by Dr. Schröder, in the Maiträyânpî-Sûhîtâ.—Böthlin: Both were able to add, in their Beiträge, a dozen roots, nearly half of which, however, are not given in the Dhâtupâtha.
of prime importance, but should not decide alone, unless very clear. Thus, for instance, *khaj*, 'stir up, churn,' is supported not only by Gr. *νυξ-εωρ*, 'stirred-up drink,' *νυξ-αρ-ω*, 'stir about;' Lat. *cocēb-m*, 'stirred-up drink;' Old Norse *skak-a*, etc.; but it has also several clear derivatives, as *khaja*, 'churning,' *khajaka*, 'churning-stick,' etc.; — *skhad*, 'split,' is supported by Gr. *σχαξω*, 'split,' Lat. *scandula*, 'splint,' etc., and is followed by *skhadana*, 'cutting to pieces:' — *gudh*, 'cover,' besides being assisted by Gr. *ντίνα*, Germ. *Haut*, etc., and followed by some derivatives, seems to be the older form of *guh*; — *gharsh* seems to stand in the same relation to *harsh*; — *kakh*, 'laugh,' is supported by Gr. *κακοξω*, 'laugh;' Lat. *cachinn-ari*, 'laugh,' etc.; but it has no derivatives. Still its meaning is not one of the current coins of the spurious vocabulary; and it stands alone with nothing to account for, and seems to be of onomatopoetic origin. But if it be established as a genuine radical, there is nevertheless reason to suspect its satellites *khakak*, *gaggh*, *ghagh*, *ghaggh* as arbitrary variations.

Much more uncertainty belongs to a form like *pih*, for instance. To be sure, the meaning 'paint' seems supported by Gr. *πινυ-ό*, Lat. *pingo*, and Slav. *peg-u*; but, on the other hand, it is overlaid with such a variety of meanings besides 'paint,' as 'sound, join, adore, kill, be strong, give, take, dwell, speak, shine!' Its natural form-derivative *pihja* has no connection with it in sense; while 'paint' may be added simply to explain *pihja* (of uncertain derivation), 'tawny, red.' Finally it seems in the senses of 'speak, shine' to connect itself with the suspicious groups of those meanings given above. On the whole, therefore, the weight of evidence appears to be less for than against its genuineness.

Whatever proportion of the unauthenticated root-forms may be established as true, the doubtful aspect of the great majority of them will probably remain unchanged; and this fact gives additional weight to the warning of Curtius: ‘Wer nicht bloss in Bezug auf die Laute sondern auch in Bezug auf das geistigere Element der Sprache Genauigkeit erstrebt, der wird sich beim Etymologisieren vor den *αμερνα* κάρνα der Wurzelverzeichnisse wohl zu hüten haben.’
AUTHENTICATED ROOTS, ROOT-FORMS, AND DENOMINATIVES OF THE DHÂTUPÂTHA.\(^1\)

[Abbreviations, etc.:

* denotative.—\(V\), occurring in the Rik and in the Atharva-Veda (roots occurring only in the latter thus indicated: comp. note, p. 7).—\(V\)-\(D\), only derived forms occurring in the Rig-Veda.—\(p\)-\(V\), occurring in the post-Vedic (= non-Rik or Atharva-Vedic) literature.—\(p\)-\(V\)-\(D\), only derived forms occurring in the post-Vedic literature.—\(P\), found compounded with prepositions (almost always as a new verb).—\(D\), derived words occurring.—\(BR\), Böhlinger-Roth.—\(Cur\), Curtius, Griech. Etym.—\(F\), Fick, Wörterb.—\(Gr\), Graßmann.—\(Dhdt\), Dhâtupâtha.]

\(\alpha \dot{i} s\), \(\alpha s\), \# only with \(\dot{r}\), divide; render harmless, ward off. [Only two ex. For \(\alpha s\) (Dhdt., "divide"), not found, from \(\alpha s\), "part?" \(p\)-\(V\); \(P\), \(D\).]

\(\alpha \dot{n} \dot{h}\) (?), \(\dot{h}\) join (?) [Only one very doubtful form, \(\alpha n\dot{h}\) (R.V.); other forms referred to \(\alpha h\), \(\alpha n\dot{h}\) belong to \(\alpha h\); see Aufrecht, Z. D. M. G., xxv. 234; and BR, Nachträge.]

\(\alpha k\dot{s} h\), see under \(\alpha c\).

\(\alpha \dot{n} k\dot{h}\), \(\alpha k\dot{h}\), \# only under \(\alpha c\).

\(\alpha \dot{n} g\), \(\dot{g}\) move. \([\text{V-D}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

From it:—\(\dot{g}\), move, stir, tremble. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha c\) (\(\alpha c\)), bend, curve, curl; distinguish or adorn (?) \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

Akin:—\(\alpha \dot{k}\dot{h}\), mark, brand. \([\text{Fr. aisk} \alpha \dot{c}, \text{"mark"}]. \(\alpha \dot{k}\dot{k} h\), \# cling to, clasp; draw, check. \([\text{Geburt ohne Zweifel zu aisk} \alpha \dot{c}, \text{"hook," fr. aisk}].\)

\(\alpha j\), \(\dot{j}\) set in motion, drive. \([\text{BR. Nachtr. V.}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

From it:—\(\dot{j}\), set in motion, drive. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha \dot{n} c = \alpha c\).

\(\alpha \dot{n} \dot{j}\), smear, anoint; adorn, honor. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha \dot{t}\), see under \(\dot{a}\).

\(\alpha \dot{t}\), \(\dot{t}\) go, wander, run. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

From it:—\(\dot{t}\), go about, roam. \([\text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha \dot{d}\), \(\dot{d}\) eat. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha n\), breathe, gasp. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha m\) (the simple pers. form in only one passage), \# fasten, fix (BR. Nachtr.); part. perf. \(\text{em} ir i n k\), hurtful, destructive; causat. injure; with \(\alpha h i\), proceed violently against, torment; \(\alpha m s a m\), approach urgently, secure one's self of; bind or unite oneself; determine, fix. \([\text{Gr. \"proceed with might, be hurtful or destructive. \" Perhaps \"press down, fix; oppress, injure,\" with prepositions \"press against, etc. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha y = \ddot{\alpha}\).

\(\alpha r\) (\(\ddot{\alpha}\)), set in motion, send forth or up, stir up; cause to reach a place (whence \"give; return; fit in or fix,\" etc.); reach, meet; meet as an enemy, injure. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

From it:—\(\alpha r c\), \(\ddot{c}\) shoot forth, beam; adorn; praise; with \(\alpha m s a m\), fix, (compare \(c\)). \([\text{BR. divided into three roots: 1 \"beam,\" 2 \"shoot,\" 3 \"fix.\" In Gr. as here. V.}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

\(\alpha r c h\) (\(\ddot{c}\)), proceed against, attack, hurt; reach, attain to; come into possession of. \([\text{V}, \text{p-V}; \text{P}, \text{D}].\)

1 The meanings ascribed to these forms comprise, in the main, the leading definitions recognized by the Petersburgh Dictionary, or by Graßmann's Rig-Vedic vocabulary. The principles of arrangement have been pointed out above. Any important departure from especially the former authority is noted.
possession of, procure.' [p-V.; P., D.]—a r d, 'be stirred up, be shat-tered; strain, hurt, torment, kill; (stir by prayer?) ask, beg.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]—1 a r s h (r s h), arshašt, 'glide onward, flow, jet; run past.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]; 2 a r s h (r s h), arshašt, 'push prick.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—r s, 'set one's self in motion, proceed, go away; set in motion, raise, hurl; promote; raise (the voice); announce.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—r s r, 'set free, let flow, flow; dissolve; separate, scatter.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—r s c, 'empty, set free; give up, abandon.' [Pr. ri. In Zend 'pour out.' V., p-V.; P., D.];—Compare also a r i h, * r i c etc., es h.

a r g h, * see under a r h.

a r c h (r c h), see under a r.

1 a r j (r j), see under a r.

2 a r j (r j), rajat, 'be stretched, run out in a straight line, spring forward; strive after, desire.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—2 a r j, 'make straight, set right; lead, command.' [Gr.; BR. only 1 r j: comp. note to 1 r j. V., p-V.; P., D.]. From this:—2 a r d j, rule, command. [Gr.; BR. only 1 r d j: see r d j above. V., p-V.; P., D.]

a r f (r f), only one ex. (Av.) with anu, 'seek to gain, invite (?) and one with abhi (?)'. [BR., Nachträge. V. (only Av.).]; P., D.]

a r h j, * 'strive after, wish.' [Pr. artha (ar t), 'aim, work.' V., p-V.; P., D.]

a r d, see under a r.

a r d h, see under 1 v a r d h.

a r j (r j) = r j (7 BR.; see note to r j).

1, 2 a r s h (r s h), see under a r.

a r h, 'deserve, be worth; have a right; be obliged, fall due; be forfeited.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—a r h, * only two ex., 'have a value, be worth.' [Rather deumon. of arpha (arh), than older form of arh, BR. p-V.; P., D.]

a v, 'have joy. be pleased; be pleased with, favor, help, protect, promote, like; wish.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

a g (a g), 1 a g a n t, 'reach, arrive at; come into the possession of; obtain; get in one's power, master, be able; reach out, offer.' 2 a g d h, 'enjoy (food), eat.' [es h only in perf. Both V., p-V.; P., D.]

From or akin with it:—a k s h, 'reach, meet; obtain.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—a k s h, 'reach, arrive at.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—1 a r a c, nashat, 'reach, hit, fall to the share of.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—f s, 'get in one's power, master; command, possess, dispose of.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 a s, 'be.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 a s, 'hurt, shoot, throw or drive away.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 a h (only in perf.), 'speak.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 a h, 'join, string together, prepare.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—n a h, 'bind, tie on, put on.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

a n c h, see under a c.

a p, 'reach, attain to, meet; come to the possession of, obtain, win; (pass. refl.) reach its end, be full or complete.' [Traces of ap in apas, apnas. V., p-V.; P., D.]

a r, 'praise' (?). [Comp. ar, arc. V.; D.]

a s, 'sit; dwell, tarry, settle; sink or lie down, come to an end.' [Connected with as]. Comp. Curt., 568. V., p-V.; P., D.]

i, (a y, t), 'go, move; go to or away,' etc. [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—i n a, i n v, 'cause to go forth, drive (away); force; promote; exercise power over, master, possess.' [nes is from in, as this from i. V., p-V.; P., D.];—i s h, five conj. forms: 1 i s h a t, 'set in rapid motion, hurl, send; raise (the voice), announce; stir; promote;' with anu ('set one's self in motion after,' whence) 'strive after, seek, seek to win, search.' 2 i s h a t = 1, without anu: 3 i s h a t, only with anu and = 1: 4 i s h a t, with or without anu, 'strive after, seek to reach or win.' 5 i s h a t: with or without anu, 'strive after, seek, seek to win. wish, long for; intend.' [By BR. divided into five separate roots. Three simple forms of eshahit given in sense of 'seek,' etc.; but they might
also be referred to esh. 1, 2, 5 V., p-V.; 3, 4 p-V.; P., D. 14 tesh, 'hurry or run away, flee.' [Perhaps a desid. of t. V., p-V.; P., D. 14 yd, 'go, proceed, go to or run away, etc.; go or appeal to.' [V., p-V.; P., D.] 14 yd (fr. yd), 'approach appealingly, apply to, entreat, pray.' [V., p-V.; P., D. 14 yd (fr. yd), only in pres. partic.: 'proceeding in union with, proceeding.' [Gr.; BR. 'closely connected or in union with.' V., p-V., D. 14 d, 'do away with, expend, squander.' [Fr. rya (vi, i). p-V.]

\[i n g, see under a ng.\]

\[i d h (i d h), 'kindle.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[i n (i n), see under i.\]

\[i d h = i d h.\]

\[i n v = i n.\]

\[i l, 'keep still, become quiet.' [BR. give a R.-Vedic form, but Gr. with Aufricht and Müller read it g. [V. (AV.), p-V.; P., D.\]

\[i s h , see under i.\]

\[f = i.\]

\[i k sh , 'see, behold, perceive.' [Desid. of a lost ac, from which akehi, 'eye.' e j, see under aj. [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[i k h , 'swing, shake.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[e d h , see under var d h.\]

\[e s h , 'glide, creep.' [By Gr. derived from 1 arsh; 'Vgl. 1h und 1, 4 1h, BR. V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[e s h , see under aj.\]

\[e d h , 'implore, beg; honor (by sacrifices, etc.).' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[e r , see under a r.\]

\[e r h y , 'envy.' [Probably contraction of ei rey. p-V.; D.\]

\[e r , see under a r.\]

\[e s h , see under i.\]

\[e s h , 'strive after, long for.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u, 'cheer, urge' (BR.); 'call out, announce' (Gr.). [Perhaps shorter form of aen, BR. Only 3 ex.: 2 V., 1 A.V.; P., D.\]

\[u k sh (v a k sh), uksahi, 'scatter in drops, sprinkle, make water.' [V-D., only in perf. V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u k sh , see under v a k sh.\]

\[u c, 'like to do, delight in'; ucita, 'suitable, just right.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u j j h , see 2 h d (under 1 h d).\]

\[u ni c h , 'glean.' [pra-uc, 'verwischen,' BR. 'wischen' original meaning. p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u (n) d, 'spring (of water), flow out; wet, bathe.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u b j , 'hold or bend down, compress.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u b h , 'hold together, bind, fetter.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u sh , see under 1 vas; (also = 1 vas, v a s g).\]

\[u k k h , only one ex. with ni, 'roar or grunt (as an animal eager for food).' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[u r n u , see under var r.\]

\[u d h , see under va h.\]

\[u nh , ohat, 'mark, observe; suppose, judge; be considered as; lie in wait, watch.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[katt, see under kar sh.\]

\[katt h ('display or proclaim loudly,' whence) 'boast, vaunt; extol, praise; blame, revile.' [p-V.; P., D.\]

\[katt h , 'converse; tell, relate, explain, command.' [Probably fr. kah- am, 'how'; 'declare how.' p-V.; P., D.\]

\[k d , only in akadda kadanam (Rámâyana), 'he wrought a destruction' (BR.). [p-V.; P., D.\]

\[k an , 'be contented or pleased; take pleasure in, seek to gain, love.' [V., p-V.; P., D.\]

\[k an : k a m , 'desire, long for; love; have sexual intercourse with.' [V., p-V.; P., D.] k d (= kan), only
one part. form, 'desire, love.' [V., D.]—k a n, 'desire, long or wait for, expect.' [Irreg. desid. of kam.
p.-V.; P., D.]—c a n, 'rejoice at, delight in.' [Only in two aorist-forms (one doubtful). V.: p-V.-D.; D.]
k a m, see under k a n.

k a m p, 'tremble, shake.' [V.-D., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—k u p, 'be moved, stirred, or agitated, be excited, be angry.' [V., p-V.-D.; P., D.]

k a r (k r, s k a r), 1, 2, 5, 8 conj classes, 'do, make, perform, etc.' [Gr.
and F. suppose skar (in askris, etc.) to be the original form; first meaning, 'cut, fashion.' In that case it
might be akin to kart, 'cut,' kutt (see kart); chur 'cut;' car, cur, 'split, kill.' (karsh, 'cut the soil (?), plow').
V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—k a p, 'be arranged, be right; accord, agree, (with dat.) be fitted or favorable for, serve to,
cause; be arranged, become, happen; (acc.) produce, prepare.' [V., p-V.;
P., D.].—k a t, 'buy.' [Comp. the
double meaning of Germ. handeln, 'act, trade.' V., p-V.-D.; P., D.]

k a r (k r), cakarti, 'think of, mention with praise.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—k a r (k r),* 'mention, relate, communicate; mention with praise, praise.' [Fr. cirt (2 kar),
'mention.' V.-D., p-V.-D.; P., D.]

k a r (k r, k r, k r), kirati, 'pour out, scatter, hurl; strewn or heap over.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

k a r t (k r t), krntati, 'cut, cut to pieces, cut off or away, split, destroy.' [See 1 kar.
V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—k a t, k a t t, 'split, crush; strike, pound.' [p-V.; P., D.]

k a r t (k r t), krntati, 'spin, twist.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin with it:—cart (k r t), 'bind, tie, connect.' [V., p-V.-D.; P., D.]
k a r p (k r p) = k r a p.

k a r c (k r c), 'grow thin or lean.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]
k a r sh (k r s h), 1 kirshati, 'draw, drag, drag along, bend (a bow); draw
to one's self or into one's power, overpower; press to and fro, torture; draw furrows, plow.'—2 krshati,
'draw furrows, plow.' [BR. give two
roots, but consider them as originally
one. Gr. gives one root, and consid-
ers 'draw furrows' as the first mean-
ing, from which the others. Possibly
to be separated into two roots of
which one akin to 1 kar, which see.
Both V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it (through Frakrit):—ka t, h, h, h, (Anziehen der Erde um die versetzten Pflanzen): BR. Nachtr.
[Two ex. p-V.; D.]

1 k a l, kalayati, 'drive, push on; convey, bear; do, perform; provide with; notice, consider.' [p-V.-;
P., D.].—2 k a l, klayati, 'drive or push along.' [p-V.; P., D.]

2 k a l, see above.
k a l p (k l p), see under 1 kar.
k a s h, 'rub, scratch, scratch out or
away.' [V. (only A.V.), p-V.; P., D.]
ak a s, 'go, move,' (with ud, 'split').
[Only one ex. in simple form. V.,
p-V.; P., D.]

k a d, see under k a n.

k a n k h, irreg. desid. of kam, see under k a n.

k a g, 'shine, be lustrous; be visible, appear.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—c a k d s, 'shine.' [By redu-
plication of kag, p.-V.; P., D.]—
k a s h, 'be visible, appear; see, per-
ceive; announce, say (in this sense
chiefly with the preposition d, and
comp's av-ad, sam-ad, etc.).' [By redu-
plication of kag. Comp. what is said on p. 7.
V., p-V.; P., D.]

k a s, 'cough.' [Akin with kash p.-V.;
P., D.]

k a r (k r) = 3 kar.

k i r (k r) = see under 2 kar.

k u = k a.

k u (k u) r, 'be contracted or bent, be
rounded or curled.' [p.-V.; P., D.]
k u t, k u t t, see under 1 kar.

k u n h, 'be blunt or dull,' (Dhât.
'be maimed or lame, be lazy'). [Only
the part. form kmthita, alone or with
n, found. p.-V.; P., D.]
k u t s, * 'revile, scold, show contempt
for.' [Fr. kutas, 'whence?], BR.
p-V.; P., D.]

A. H. Edgren,
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

**kuṭha**, 'stink.' [Only kuthika (with pra, 'decay'), and once caus. kothaya-

**kupa**, see under kamp.

**kusha**, 'tear, tear asunder or out, knead.' [p-V.; P., D.]

**ku (ku)**, 'see, behold' (Curt. 64); or 'have in one's mind' (BR.). [Probably in one of those senses giving kar, 'wise, singer,' etc. The only form found is ā-kare, 'intend,' BR. Dhat. 'sound, shout.' V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

**kāj**, 'coo, hum, groan,' etc. [V. (only AV.), p-V.; P., D.]

**kāḍ**, see kāl.

**kāna**, 'contract, shrink together or cower.' [BR., Nachtr. p-V.; P., D.]

**kārd**, 'leap, play.' [p-V.; P., D.]

Akin with it:—kārd, 'play, sport, make fun.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kāl (kād)**, 'burn, scorch.' [Only five times (V. kāl). [V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kān**, 'repeat one ex. with abhi, moisten.' [p-V.; P., D.]


**karmah**, 'give vent to joy, be wanton.' [One ex., BR., Nachtr. p-V.; P., D.]

**kraṇa**, 'neigh, roar, crack, wall.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

**krapa (karp, krp), 'long, grieve, moan.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kram**, 'go, proceed, go through; go or apply one's self to.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kri**, see under 1 kar.

**kriḍa**, see under kārd.

**kruḍh, 'become angry.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kruḍa, 'cry, shriek; cry against abuse.' [Comp. krakaḥ. V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kruḍa, 'make thick' (kruḍa). [Only once in the Kāth-recen of Yāj. V.]

**klaṭa**, 'turn round or form itself into balls' (BR.). [Only one ex., klaṭa, in the Vajasaneyi-saḥh. p-V.; P., D.]

**klaṃ**, 'become tried or exhausted or lax; wither, pine.' [Hardly found except in the partic. form klaṇḍa, 'tried,' etc. [p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—kṛma, 'be weary; weary one's self, exert one's self; mortify one's self, perform acts of penance.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kliḍ, 'be damp or moist.' [p-V.; P., D.]

**kliḍa, 'torment, injure': klicate, 'be tormented, suffer.' [p-V.; P., D.]

**kvāna, 'sound, ring, cry.' [p-V.; P., D.]

**kvath**, 'cook, boil.' [p-V.; P., D.]

**kṣaṇa = kṣaṇa.**

**kṣaḍa**, 'carve or distribute (meat); carve for one's self, take (food), consume.' [Only five ex. (4 V.). V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kṣaṇa (kṣaṇa), see under 2 kṣaṇi.**

1 **kṣapa**, 'be abstinent, do penance.' [Akin to kṣama through the unauthenticated kṣamp, 'endure'? p-V.; P., D.]

2 **kṣapa**, 'destroy,' causat. of kṣa, which see.

**kṣama**, 'be patient, submit; endure, bear, be contented with; pardon, suffer.' [Comp. 1 kṣap. V., p-V.; P., D.]

**kṣara, 'flow, glide; flow apart or away, disappear; pour out.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it (as causat.):—kṣala, kṣalayati, 'wash off.' [kṣal (kṣalai), as a variation of kṣara given in the Dhat., but not found. p-V., P., D.]

**kṣala, see under kṣara.**

**kṣā (kṣā), 'burn, parch.' [By Gr. connected with 2 kṣa, 'destroy'; by Brugman, Morphol. Untersuch'n, with ghās. V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 **kṣi, 1 kṣeti, 'dwell, abide': 2 kṣayati, ('dwell in' whence) possess, exercise authority over, rule.' [More original form in kṣa, 'dwelling,' kṣatra, 'dominion.' BR. give two roots, but suggest their ultimate identity. V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 **kṣi, 'destroy, annihilate, harm; perish (Gr.). [Original form kṣa in tvis-kṣa, etc. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Causat. of this (BR.): 2 kṣapa, 'de-
strove, remove.' [Probably through ksha. P.V.; P., D.]

Akin:—kšaḥa (kšaḥa), 'hurt, wound, break;' [átm. 'be hurt.' [Fr. original ksha?] V. (only AV.); P.V.; P., D.]

kšhip, 'throw, hurl; scatter, pour; cast away, reject; despise, scold; (throw and) hit; throw down, destroy; pass away (time); set down.' V., P.V.; P., D.

kšhu, 'sneeze.' [Onomatopoetic? P.V.; P., D.

kšhud, 'pound or stamp, crush by pounding or stamping.' [V., P.V.; P., D.

kšhudh, 'hunger.' [V., P.V.; P., D.

kšhup, in one passage in Rámāpāma: meaning? BR, Nachtr.

kšhubh, 'be moved or agitated (especially of liquids, but also fig.), tremble; stumble (morally).' [V. (only AV.); V.D.]; P.V.; P., D.

kšhnw, 'whet, sharpen.' [V., P.V.; P., D.

kšvid, 'produce any inarticulate sound, hum, buzz, roar,' etc. [kšvid, same meaning, given in Dhat, but not found used. P.V.; P., D.

kšvel, 'leap, play.' [Comp. kheld. P.V.; P.

khaḍa, 'leap or step forth?'; khaḍita, 'filled (or mingled) with; furnished or adorned with' (BR, Nachtr.). P.V.; P.

khaṇḍj, 'limp.' [Only khaṇḍjan, twice. P.V.; P., D.

khaṇḍ, 'break in pieces, divide; shatter; interrupt; disappoint, delude.' [Fr. khaṇḍa, (khaṇḍ, 1 átm., 'break,' not found) 'break, piece.' P.V.; P., D.

khaḍ, 'be firm or hard.' [Only one partic. form. V.D., P.V.; P., D.

khaṇ, 'dig, dig or root up; bury (= nibhan).' [V., P.V.; P., D.

khaḍḍa, 'chew, eat, devour.' [V., P.V.; P., D.

khd (skhid, only in infinit. skhidām, AV.), 'press down; be depressed or

angered, make angry.' [Gr. and F. refer it to khash. [V., P-V.; P., D.

khuḍ, 'peene pectoral.' [V., P-V.; P.

kheḷ, 'swing, shake, rock.' [Comp. kheḷ. P.V.; D.

khyḍ, originally 'behold, see' (Br., Gr.); the simple verb found only in pass. and causat. pass. 'be known, be noted or famous; caus. 'make known, announce, reveal; praise.' [Gr. connects it with 2 ci. BR suggest its possible connection with cakṣa. V., P-V.; P., D.

gan, * 'count, sum up, number; count as, consider; take into consideration.' [Fr. gaña, 'flock.' P.V.; P., D.

ganḍa, 'denom. of gaṇḍa, 'cheek.' [Only one ex. P.V.

gaḍ, 'utter, express, speak.' [V. (only AV.), P-V.; P., D.

gaḍh, only in gaḍhita, with d, 'clung to.' and with pari, 'clung around, embraced.' [V.; P., D.

gam (gaḍh), 'go, move, come; go away, pass; go to (with acc.), attain to.' [V., P-V.; P., D.

Varied form:—1 gaḍ, jīgḍi, 'go, come; go or attain to.' [V., P-V.; P., D.

1 gaṛ (gāṛ, gīṛ), gaṛḍti, 'call out (to), invoke, hail; proclaim, relate, praise, extol.' [Thus BR; Gr. connects it with giri, 'hight, mountain,' and others, and supposes 'raise, exalt' as the first meaning. Comp. 3 jar. V., P-V.; P., D.

From it:—gaṛ (gāṛ), 'bellow, roar, thunders.' [P-V.; P., D.—gaṛḍ, 'emit a sound, roar' (Dhat). [Only one ex., BR, Nachtr. P-V.—gaṛh, 'complain; make complaint against, blame, accuse.' [V., P-V.; P., D.—gur (gūr) found simple only in gūrī, 'approved, welcome, pleasant.' [The comp'd forms all contain the idea 'utter, express: gur, 'express pleasure at, hail?' V., P-V.; P., D.—gurḍh, 'praise.' [Only one ex. Fr. gūr. V.

2 gaṛ (gāṛ, gīṛ), gīṛā, gīḷā, 'swallow, devour; eject (= udgar). V., P-V.; P., D.

A. H. Edgren,
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

From it:—

Gar, 'eat, devour, swallow.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

3 Gar (dagar, intens., only form found), 'be awake or watchful, watch; guard, attend.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Garj (gaj), see under 1 gar.

Garj, see under 1 gar.

Garāh (grāh), 'strive after, covet, be greedy of.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Garv, see under 1 gar.

Gal, 'drip, trickle, fall away, disappear; fall, tumble.' [gar, 'sprinkle'; in Dhāt., not found used. p-V.; P., D.]

Galbha, 'be bold or determined.' [p-V.; P., D.]

1 Gā, see under gām.

2 Gā (gās), gāyati, 'sing; proclaim or sing about in verse, praise in song; sing to (acc.).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Gāh, 'drive into, penetrate; hide one's self, be lost in.' [gah, in Dhāt., not found used: comp., however, note to jāh. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Ga 'sound' (Dhāt.); only in reduplicated forms, 'cause to sound, speak out, proclaim.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—gāñj 'hum, buzz.' [Simple form gū of Dhāt. not found. p-V.; P., D.]

Gan, see under gū.

Ganātha, 'close, cover.' [p-V.; P., D.]

Gup, * see under pd.

Gum (m) pā, see under gusphp.

Gur (gār), see under 1 gar.

Gusphp, only one ex. of uncertain meaning. [BR., Nachtr., perhaps = gumpē, 'form in a series, enjoy by turns.' p-V.; P., D.]

Gusphp, only in gusphpita (RV.), 'entwined or twisted together.' [Not given separately by BR. or by GR.; but referred to gusphp, which is said to be derived from (BR.) or to be identical with (GR.) gusphp. See also P., L., p. 77. V.]

From it:—gupphp (gumpē), 'twine or string together.' [gupphp only one ex.; gumpē three, BR., Nachtr. See remark under gusphp. p-V.; D.]

Gūh, 'cover, veil, hide.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Gar (with ud, in sense of 'raise') = gur.

Garāh, see under 1 gar.

Gar (n) tāh, 'tie or string together, unite, fasten; begin' (BR., Nachtr.). [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Garāh (grāh), 'seize, take.' [grābha usual form in RV.; grāh prevailing form in A.V., and the only one in the later literature. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Gra, see under 1 gar.

Grāh = grābha.

Glah, 'play with dice, gamble.' [p-V.; P., D.]

Glad (gāti), 'be weary, faint, fade; be averse to, dislike.' [By Brugman, Morphol. Untersuch'n, derived from gal. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Ghat, 'be busy with, strive, endeavor; reach, attain, succeed; come to pass.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Ghat, see under gharsha.

Ghar (ghār), 'besprinkle, drop on.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Gharsha (ghārsha), 'rub, grind; rub or tear open, make sore; rub in.' [p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—ghat, 'rub or touch gently in passing, graze; strike against, shake, set in motion; touch with words, revile.' [p-V.; P., D.]=

Gharsha, same as Gharsha. [Only 2 ex., causat. with m, 'crush by stamping, pound.' p-V.; P., D.]

Ghas, 'consume, devour, eat.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it by redupl.:—1 jākṣa, jākṣi, 'devour, eat.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Ghuṭ, only with ava, 'cover, veil;' and yād, 'turn round.' [p-V.; P.]

1 Ghuṭha, ghoṭati, 'sound loudly; cry out, announce loudly, proclaim; fill with noise.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 Ghuṭha, see under gharsha.

Ghūr, 'move to and fro, shake, waver, quiver.' [p-V.; P., D.]

Ghrād, 'smell, scent; smell or snuff at; kiss (sep. with abhāt).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

VOL. XI
cak, only forms cakita (alone or with -s), 'terrified, intimidated, trembling;' and (see) cakita, 'look up, see.' [BR.; Dhâti, 'be contented; resist; shine.' p-V.; p-D.]

cakås, see under kác.

caksh, see under kác.

cânç, 'leap, jump.' [p-V.; D.]

cân, 'be separated or loosened, fall off.' [Comp. cañ p-V.; p-D.]

cân, 'hide one's self;' (caus. 'cause to hide:' whence, 'drive or scare away.') [Uncomp'd only in part. pr. and past. V., p-V.; p-D.]

cår, see under kan.

cân (ʔ) see cân and când.

cår, 'take into one's mouth (esp. drink), lap.' [V., p-V.; p-D.]

cår, 'go, move, travel; go or run through; pass (one's time or life), be; go to, (fkg.) practice; attend to.' [V., p-V.; p-D.]

Akin:—câl, 'move one's self, stir, quiver; set one's self in motion, start, set out, depart; march; depart from one's track, get in disorder; swerve, desert (abl.)' [Later form of car. V. (only AV.; RV-D.), p-V.; p-D.]

—2 fár (jb), jârâh, 'move on; move near, approach.' [V.]; jâri, 'go, move?' [Only in Âya jâragat, 'proceed to,' Gr. 'extend,' BR. The deriv. parjâri, 'running about,' Gr.; 'running about or spreading around,' BR. V.; p-D.]=cañ, only with ud (pra-ud, sam-ud), 'fly or start up. arise.' [Dhâti, 'go.' Found only in past. p-V.; p-D.]

cår, 'repeat; cover over with (also gleichsam verdoppeln, BR.),' [p-V.; p-D.]

cart (crt), see under 2 kart.

cår, 'crush, chew.' [p-V.; D.]

Akin:—cårás, 'reduce to powder, crush.' [Fr. cárapa (carre), 'dust, powder.' p-V.; p-D.]

câl, see under car.

cây = cî.

1 cî, cînâti, 'place in order, arrange, pile up, build; collect, gain; set with, cover.' [See note to 2 cî. V., p-V.; p-D.]

2 cî (ki), cåkî (early form), cînî (classic form), 'observe, gaze upon, investigate, seek.' [Often identified with 1 cî; and with vi- the meanings ('search out,' etc.) of the two roots are very similar. V., p-V.; p-D.]

Akin:—cît, 'observe, notice: intend, have in view, desire; know, understand; make one's self noticed, appear, be known.' [V., p-V.; p-D.]

From this:—cînt, 'think, have an opinion; reflect; think of, reflect upon, consider.' [p-V.; p-D.]=Comp. also khyâ.

3 cî, cayate, 'detest, hate; take revenge on, punish.' [Thus BR.; by Gr. not separated from 2 cî. Comp. 4 ci. V., p-V.; p-D.]

4 cî (cây), cåpati, 'be timid or apprehensive about (acc.); fear; (Atm.) act timidly or with reverence.' [Comp. 3 cî. V., p-V.; p-D.]

cît, see under 2 cî.

cînt, see under 2 cî.

câd, 'what, sharpen (Gr.); incite, drive on, speed, procure rapidly; further, help; press with a request, urge, demand; determine.' [V., p-V.; p-D.]

cup, 'move.' [Only two ex. V-D., p-V.; p-D.]

cuñb, 'kiss.' [p-V.; p-D.]

câr, 'steal.' [p-V.; p-D.]

câr, see under car v.

câsh, 'only in pass., 'boil, flow violently;' caus. 'suck out.' [BR.; Dhâti, 'suck.' p-V.; p-D.]

cesh, 'move the limbs, struggle, strive; move, be busy; do; exercise; visit.' [V. (only AV.;) p-V.; p-D.]

cuñ, 'shake, move, stir, start; go forth or away; flow or fall out, trickle; fall away, perish; bring about, make.' [V., p-V.; p-D.]

1 châd, châdayati, 'cover, veil; conceal, hide; protect.' [V., p-V.; p-D.]

2 châd (chand), see under cân and când.

châr (chr), 'pour upon, sprinkle' (only one ex.); caus. 'pour out; vomit.' [p-V.; p-D.]

châd (co), 'cut.' [Only with prep.'s. Akin to chãn. V. (only AV.;) p-V.; p-D.]

A. H. Edgren,
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

27

Akin:—jarj (?), jarjūa, 'mangled, wounded,' found (twice, p-V.), but probably for jarjarīta, (jarjara, jarr), BR—jār (jār), 'decay; become decrēpit or old, perish.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 jār, see under cār.

3 jār, jārata, 'crackle, roar (of the fire); call out; call on; invite.' [BR.; Gr. 'sing,' whence fig. 'crackle.' Comp. 1 gar. V., p-V.-D.; P., D.]

Akin:—jalp, 'speak indistinctly, mutter; speak about; address.' [Comp. jap. V.-D.; P., D.]

jārj (?), see under 1 jār.

jālp, see under 3 jār.

jās, 'be tired out or exhausted.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

jāgar, see under 3 gar.

1 jī, jīpāti, 'gain, gain by victory, acquire, conquer; gain a victory over, vanquish, surpass.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—jīyā, 'conquer, overpower; oppress, fleece, deprive; be oppressed,' etc. [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 jī, jīnāti, 'enlivens, quicken.' [Only in prā jīnāthi, RV., 438, 1. Gr. as here; BR refer it to pra-jīnav. V.; P., D.]

From it:—jīnā, 'stir, be active; stir, enliven; further, promote, favor; grant (prayer), satisfy.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

[jīnā, 'be pressed forward, be stirring or active; set in rapid motion, drive; urge on, stir; further, help.' [Comp. jīnew. Fr. earlier giv (jiv) ? V., p-V.; P., D.]

jīn v, see under 2 jī.

jīv, see under 2 jī.

jūr (jār), see under 1 jār.

jūh, 'be satisfied or pleased; be pleased with, enjoy, like, love; resort to with pleasure, dwell in.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

jū, see under 2 jī.

jū, see under jūh.

jū, see under jūh.

jēh, see under jēh.
jną, 'know; perceive, learn; recognize, approve.' [Akin to jan 'V.]; p-V.; P., D.]
jyā, see under lji.
jyut, see dyut.
jarāmbh (jērāmbh), see under jabh.
jṛi, see under car.

jvar, 'be hot or feverish.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—yāre, 'consume by heat, scorch, burn.' [Simple form in ni-jur, etc. V.; P.]; yavā, 'glow, blaze; burn.' [Later form of iwar. p-V.; P., D.]

jval, see under jvar.

jhaṭ, only in ujjhāṭita (v. 1. ujñāṭita), 'brought into confusion.' [p-V.; P., D.]

ṭaṅk, 'cover'(!); vi-lakkha, 'stamped, marked; laden with.' [BR.; compare also Nachtr. p-V.; P., D.]

ḍam, 'resound as a drum.' [Only one ex. p-V.; D.]

ḍamb, only with vi, 'imitate, equal; mock, fool; distort.' [Ḍhat. 'throw, hurl.' p-V.; P.]

ḍī, see under 2 dī.

ḍānka, 'approach' (caus. 'bring, procure'). [p-V.; P., D.]

ṭāṅka, 'shake, move to and fro; shake or pour out (fig. a wish).' [According to GR., from 1 tan; comp. also unauthenticated tas = upakṣhepa. V., p-V.; P.]

ṭākh, 'shoot forth, dart (esp. of birds), speed.' [V.; P., D.]

ṭaṅkh, see under tvakṣk.

ṭāṅk, only with ḍ (and abhyād), 'cause to flow (towards).' [p-V.; P., D.]

ṭāt, 'rumble.' [Only one ex. p-V.; D.]

ṭāḍ, 'strike, chastise with blows, knock; strike a musical instrument, play; knock against, (whence) partly eclipse; multiply.' [GR. connects it with τάρδ. V.; p-V.; P., D.]

1 tana, tanot (kasvate), 'extend, stretch; last; spread, diffuse itself (of light); shine; extend to, grant, cause.' [Curt., 230, and others connect 2 tan, 'thunder,' as a secondary meaning, with this, but the connections seem forced. BR., Benf., Corens, Pott and Gr. connect it with stana. V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—iḍy, stretch, extend.' [Compare pass. of tan. p-V.; P., D.]

2 tan, see under stana (and note to 1 tan).

tana, see under stana (and note to 1 tan).

tap, 'give out heat, be warm, shine (of the sun); warm, heat, make glowing, shine upon; be burnt or burn up; be pained; cause pain, torture; chastise, mortify.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

tam, 'lose one's breath, suffocate, faint away, perish, be exhausted; be still or immovable, grow stiff.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin with it:—iṭm, 'be quiet or immovable.' [Ḍhat. 'be moist or wet.' p-V.; D.—Comp. also stīm.

tar (tṛ, tis; tūr in optat.), 'pass across (esp. a river, etc.), through or over, cross or speed over;' (fig. 'perform, succeed in; master, overpower; help across, save,' etc.). [V., p-V.; P., D.]
From it:—tard (tṛd), 'bore thro', cleave, split open; set free.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—tṛt. * accomplish, perform successfully.' [Fr. tīra (tār), 'shore; = 'bring to the shore.' Only one ex. p-V.];—tūr (tūr), 'press forward, hurry on; overpower' (GR.). [Shorter and older form of iwar (BR.), which see below. V., p-V.; P., D.]

—inīr (tūr), 'advance victoriously; overpower, conquer, overtake; help to conquer; save.' [Fr. tur. V., P., D.];—tṛd (tṛd), 'protect, guard, save.' [Originally 'help across.' V., p-V.; P., D.];—tṛt, trūd, 'be split or rent, burst; be left out or lost' (BR., Nachtr.). [Fr. tard. p-V.; D.]

—inīr, 'speed, hurry.' [Later form of tur, which see above. V. (only AV.), p-V.; P., D.]

tarā, 'suppose; try to form an idea about, conjecture; reflect on, consider, think of; expect.' [Weber, originally 'turn, twist, torquere.' p-V.; P., D.]
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

\textit{tāraj}, 'threaten; blame, revile.' [p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tārd}, \textit{(tṛd)}, see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tārp}, \textit{(tṛp, tr̥mp)}, 'be sated or slaked, be satisfied or pleased.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tārsh} \textit{(tṛsh)}, 'thirst.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tārh} \textit{(tṛh, tr̥h)}, 'crush to pieces, grind, squash.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tāy}, see under \textit{tan}.

\textit{tāv}, only once (in AV.), \textit{vikāvati}, for which BR. suggest \textit{vikāvati}.

\textit{tij}, 'be or become sharp; sharpen; (caus. 'sharpen; goad on, incite.)' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tām}, see under \textit{tam}.

\textit{tir},* see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tu}, 'have power, be capable, succeed.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tu (ā)j}, 'strike, push, impart a rapid or violent motion to, hurl; press out, hurl forth, squirt out; impel, incite, urge on.' [V.; P., D.]

\textit{tuḍ}, 'push, prick, goad, lash, bruise.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tur}, see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tur̥v}, see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tuḷ}, 'lift; lift and weigh, balance, examine cautiously, test; make equal in weight, esteem equal, match, compare.' [Comp. \textit{dul}; p-V.; P., D.]

1 \textit{tu ḍa, ṭoṣe, 'drip.' V.; P., D.}

2 \textit{tu ḍa}, see under \textit{tāsh}.

\textit{tuṣh}, 'become quiet or appeased; be pleased; satisfy; please.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Kindred or same root: -- \textit{2 tu ḍa}, 'be quiet; pacify.' [In two RV., and two AV. passages.]

\textit{tūra}, see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tṝa}, 'leave, abandon, reject; go away from, quit; let go, give up; neglect; give away; send or shoot off.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tr̥p}, 'be embarrassed or ashamed.' [p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tr̥ṣa}, 'tremble, shudder.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{trā} \textit{(trā)}, see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tr̥ṭ} \textit{(tr̥d)}, see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tvāksh}, only in \textit{pratvākṣḍha} (RV.), 'prevailing in power, superior.' [According to Dāt. \textit{aksi}, 'create, effect.' Orig. form \textit{traka}, Curt., 235. Comp. the deriv. \textit{tvākṣas}, 'activity, active power, vigor.' V.; D.]

Akin: -- \textit{aksi}, 'fashion (esp. of wood, also fig.), build, chisel; create, prepare; cut off, split.' [Comp. note to \textit{tvākṣh}. V.; p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{tvāṅg}, 'leap, gallop.' [Only two ex. p-V.]

\textit{tvār}, see under \textit{tāra}.

\textit{tvāś}, 'be in violent motion, be agitated; stir up, revive; glitter, sparkle.' [V., p-V.; D.; P., D.]

\textit{tvāra}, 'creep; creep up to, gain by sneaking.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{dāṅg = dāś}, only the caus. from \textit{dārangas} (RV., 964, 1), 'didst chastise,' Gr. [BR., with Nirukta, refer it to \textit{dāṣ} = \textit{karma}]. Orig.' meaning 'show, teach' (Gr.). V., p-V.; D.]

\textit{dākṣh}, 'do right; be competent or strong.' V., p-V.; D.]

From it (as desid.):--\textit{dākṣh} 'prepare one's self for the performance of a sacred rite (esp. the Soma offering).'

[Orig.'ly, 'try to make one's self competent.' p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{dug}, 'reach, attain to.' [Not found uncompd': with \textit{paḍḍa}, 'fall behind, fall short of;' \textit{aṭā}, 'reach above, pass beyond;' \textit{d}, 'attack, inflict harm;' \textit{pra}, 'fail.' V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{dā ṇa},* 'chaeti, punish.' [Fr. \textit{dāṣa}, 'rod.' p-V.; D.]

\textit{dād} = \textit{1 dd}.

\textit{dā ṇa} = \textit{1 ḍā}.

\textit{dān}, 'be straight; straighten, correct.' [Only two ex., besides the uncort. desid. \textit{dāḍānale}, by BR. referred here. V.]

\textit{dābh} \textit{(dām̥b̥h)}, 'bring harm upon, injure; deceive, betray.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

\textit{dāma}, 'be tame(d) or gentle; (gen'ly) tame, subdue.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—y r a m, 'hold together or back, check, curb; hold, bear, sustain; lift, swing; hold or reach forth, offer, send forth (of light, voice or song), raise (a cry, etc.); (ātā) keep quiet or passive, obey, be faithful.' [Through ḍyam fr. dān. Comp. Curt., p. 570, Kuhn, 11, 12, etc. It seems hard to reconcile fully the various meanings. BR. in the main as here. Gr., orig. 'control by something held out, as by a string or the arm, whence, 'check,' etc., etc. V., p.V.; P., D.] Akin with this:—y a t, 'connect, join; (ātā) join or unite one's self (with), meet; seek to join or to reach, strive towards or after, seek devotedly; join in contest, attack.' [Comp. part. yātā, from yām, V., p.V.; P., D.]—y a n ir, 'curb, restrain.' [Fr. yentra (yam), 'restrain.' P.V.; P., D.]—y u y, yantā, yandā, 'harness, attach, bind, hold fast; draw to one's self, take possession of; unite, mix.' [V., p.V.; P., D.] From this:—y u y, 'yoke, harness (fig. apply, fix, arrange, make use of, employ, etc.); join, connect, (fig.) add; join with (instr.) bring into the possession of, bestow on; order; fix in one's mind, remember,' etc. [V., p.V.; P., D.]—y a d h, 'join in contest, i.e.) fight, combat; fight and conquer.' [Gr. connects it with yu yu, 'ward off.' Comp. Curt., Benf., etc. V., p.V.; P., D.]

d a m b h = d a b h.

d a y, 'divide, allot; divide asunder, destroy; share, take part in, sympathize; repent (= feel an inner disharmony).' [V., p.V.; P., D.] Akin:—d a d (dāt), dātā, 'cut, mow, divide.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]—d a n, 'cut off.' [One ex. (A.V. Prāt.; BR., Nachtr. D.]

1 d a r (dār, dūr), dhrātī, 'burst, fall asunder; burst, tear open or to pieces, rend.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]

From it:—d a l, 'split, crack; open, blossom.' [P.V.; P., D.]

2 d a r (dūr), dhrātē, only with d (abhi-d, etc.), 'regard, heed.' [P.V.; P., D.]

d a r d r ā, see under d r a m.

d a r p (dārp), 'become mad or crazed; be arrogant.' [P.V.; P., D.]

d a r b h (dārbh), 'string together, tie in bunches.' [V-D., p.V.; P., D.]

d a r g (dārg), 'see, perceive (ātā b seen, appear)' [Only in gen'1 tense V., p.V.; P., D.]

d a r h (dārh, dūr h), see under d h a r.

d a l, see under l d a r.

d a š g (dāšg), 'bite.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]

d a s, 'be exhausted, waste away.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]

From it:—d a s, only with abhi, 'be hostile to, pursue.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]

d a h, 'burn, consume by fire.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]

1 d ā (d a d, d ā y), dādītē, dāḍātē, dādā mi, (part. dadāyān), 'give, bestow grant; put, place, apply, direct; (dā d) bring along, bear, keep, preserve [V., p.V.; P., D.]

2 d ā, dīyāti, 'bind.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]

3 d ā (d a i), dīyatē, only in ara-dātē 'purified, pure;' and with vi-a-sa (part pr. and past), 'be diffused brightly [Dhāt. 'purify.' P.V.; P., D.]

4 d ā (d o), see under d a y.

d ā n, see 4 d ā, under d a y.

d ā y = 1 d ā.

d ā g, 'serve or honor (a god); offer grant, bestow.' [d ā a; in daśa, etc (Curt., p. 64, derives it fr. dd,' give V., p.V.-D.; P., D.]

d dā s, see under das.

1 d i v (?) see s t v.

2 d i n, dēvātī, only with pari, 'lament, moan.' [Dhāt. 'bring into misery Part. form dyāna, referred here, i d-dyāna (?), pari-dyāna, 'brought int. misery.' P.V.; P., D.]

d i ā, 'point out, show; direct, assign bestow (as a gift).' [V., p.V.; P., D.

d a h, 'smear, spread over, around, plaster; stroke.' [V., p.V.; P., D.]

From it (desid.)—d h k s h, 'wiel to anoint.' [One p.V. ex.]

1 d ī, dīyāti, 'fly, soar.' [Comp. 2 d di ī, P.V.; P., D.]

P-Vedic form:—d ī t, 'fly.' [Onl with prep's. P.V.; P., D.]

2 d ī (d ī d ī, d ī d ī), see under d y u t.

3 d ī, see under d ī h.

d ī k s h, see under d a k s h.

d ī d ī, d ī d ī = 2 d ī.
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

1. *dṛā*, see under *drama*.

2. *dṛā (dṛā)*, *dṛāyati*, 'sleep.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

*dru*, see under *dram*.

*druḥ*, 'harm, seek to harm.' [Originally 'bend'? Probably fr. a root *dru*, yet found as a verbal. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—*dharv* (*dharv*), 'bend, cause to fall, injure.' [Fr. *dher*, below. V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhv*, 'go crookedly, swerve, be lost.' [Fr. *heur*, below. V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhv*, 'be bent or crooked.' [By Gr. made identical with *hevar*. V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhvar* (*hvar*), 'bend one's course from the right direction, go crookedly or astray; bend; bend down.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhval*, 'go astray, swerve, be lost; stumble, fall.' [Later form of *heur*. V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dṛā*, see under *dram*.

*dvish*, 'hate, leathe.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhān, dhānv*, see under *dāḥ*.

*dhām* (*dham*), 'blow, blow or breathe out; hurl forth; fan; inflate; blow (an instrument); manufacture by blowing, melt.' [By Gr. derived from *dāh*. V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhār* (*dhār*), 'hold or bear, support; (fig. contain, confirm; keep, preserve; retain, possess; bring, etc.).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhār* (*dhārsh*), 'be bold or courageous; have courage (to do), dare.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

*dhān*, see under *dāh*.

*dham*, 'run about, wander.' [Dhāt.

*Akin:—*dārirā (intens. of *drā*), below, 'be poor' (lit. 'wander about as a beggar'). [Set up as a root to explain *dārirā*, 'beggars.' V., p-V.]

*drā*, 'run, speed; run away; run against, attack suddenly; become flowing, melt.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

*drā*, 'hurry, pursue' (Gr.); 'fetch a blow, hit' (Br.). [Only once in part. *drāṃṇa*. V., D. (verbal in comp' n.)]

1. *dāḥ (dāh)*, *diḍhāti*, 'put, set; place; (fig. bring; give, assign; cause: bear, hold; fix, determine; assert, etc.).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2. *dāḥ (dāh)*, *diḍāti*, 'suck, drink.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1, 2 *dāh*, see under *dāh*.
dhi (dhanv), 'satisfy, rejoice, please.' [p-V.; P., D.]
dhā (dhaḥ), 'appear, seem; perceive, consider; wish?' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—3 of with accha, 'direct one's mind upon, turn affectionately towards.' [In three RV. ex.; for dīḥ perhaps, by faulty writing. V.; P., D.]—dhyā (dhyāt), 'think of, consider, have in mind.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
dhikshā, see under dhi.
dhū = dhūk.
dhūrv = dhūrv.
dhū (dhw), 'shake, shake off or down, move rapidly to and fro; fan, kindle; shake one's self, bristle up.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
From it:—dūkh, only in dūdhāt, 'rushing, boisterous;' and dudhāia, 'confused.' [By redupl'n of dūk. V.; P., D.]—dāhā, 'cause to run, set in rapid motion.' [By short'g of dāhāv below. V.; P., D.]—dhrv, 'run, flow; cause to run.' [Pr. dhrāv. V.; P., D.]
—dhrv, 'run, flow; stream forth; run, haesten (to or away against; swim.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
—2 dhrv, 'wash or rub off, cleanse, polish.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
— Comp. also dham and dhas.
dhā p, 'fumigate; obscure with mist.' [Den. of dhapta, BR. caus. of dhr, Gr. In p-V.; P., D.]
dhūrv (dhūr), see under druḥ.
dhūs, in-dhūshāia, by BR. (Nacœr.) considered to stand for dhūshāia.
dham = dham.
dhāyā (dhāyāt), see under dhi.
dhraj, 'move or glide on.' [V.; P., D.]
dhvaṅ (dhwarg), 'fall or dash to pieces, be scattered, be destroyed; be strewn or covered with' (only in dhvaṅgta). V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin with it:—1 dhvan, 'be covered or closed.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
1 dhvan, see under dhvaṅ.
2 dhvan, dhvaṅgati, 'sound.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]
dhavardh (dhavr), see under druḥ.
dhvas = dhvaṅ.
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

2 n u, navate, 'move, move away.' [V., p-V. ; P.]

n u d, 'push, push on or away; drive away, dispel.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

n e d, only with ati, 'foam over, overflow.' [Simple form nad in nad, nada. p-V., P., D. ?]

p a c, 'cook, bake, roast; ripen, complete, digest.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

p a j, only in perf. intens. with apa, 'yield (BR.), or start back terrified.' [V. ; P., D.]

p a t h, 'speak or read aloud, deliver, mention, declare.' [By some derived fr. prat. p-V. ; P., D.]

p a n, 'buy in, barter; wager, stake.' [V.-D., p-V. ; P., D.]

1 p a t, patati, 'fly, speed through the air; move downwards, fall or sink down; fall upon, attain; hit; fall or happen into.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

2 p a t, see under 2 p a d.

p a t h, 'bring upon a path.' [Only ex. a p i d a t h a y a t i. Prob'ly denom. of pathi, 'path,' BR.: or orig'i verb, 'go.' Gr., Curt. p-V. ; P.]

p a d, 'fall, sink down (esp. by exhaustion), perish; go on, proceed towards, reach.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

p a n, 'be admirable; admire, praise.' [V., p-V.-D. ; P., D.]

1 p a r (pə; pə), prati, piparti, piparte, 'fall, sate; nourish, satisfy; bestow, spend liberally (dat. of pers.); be filled, etc.' etc. [Caus. p a r a t i, 'fill; heap over; overwhelm,' in Dhāt. given as a septe root. V., p-V. ; P., D.]

From it:—p a r c (pəc), 'fill entirely, give lavishly; fill up, mix, mingle.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]. From this:—p r a k s h (p r a k s h), 'fill, sate.' [Thus Gr.; BR. omit the root, referring one only of its three forms to parc. V. ; P., D.].—p a r , 'fill.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.—Perhaps also pə, which see.

2 p a r (pr), pipārti, piprāti, 'bring across or to (acc.); fig. further, help; protect, save, conquer, etc.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

3 p a r (pr), priyate, only with d or ri-

p a c (pr), see under 1 p a r.

p a i p a l, 'wash in lye.' [p-V. ; D.]

1 p a g = s p a c, which see.

2 p a g, pācayati, 'bind.' [Fr. pāc, 'rope, fetter.' p-V. ; P.]

1 p ā, V., pātī; V., p-V. pāthi (gently pīcātī), 'drink.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

From it:—1 p ā, pīyate, 'drink.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

2 p ā, pātī, 'protect, keep; watch, observe.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

Akin:—y u p, 'guard, protect, hide; (gupta, guarded, hidden, secret).'

[Only in general tenses. Secondary root from g p y (go-pā, 'cow-herd,' 'guard.' V., p-V. ; P., D.—2 p ā, pūcātā, 'guard, rule; possesses, share in, be fit for.' [Orig'ly causat. of pātī (pād, old pa, Curt., 377, Kuhn Zeitschr., 4, 317), 'lord.' But BR. derive pātī from this pāt. V., p-V. ; P., D.—p dā, 'guard, protect.' [By native grammar as considered as a causat. of pād; but rather denom. of pāda (pād), 'guardian.' p-V. ; P., D.]

p dā, see under 2 p a d.

p i = 2 p t.

p i n, p i c, p i c, p i n, p i s h = p i s h.

p i n, p i s h, 'roll into a lump or ball.' [Fr. p i s h, 'lump.' p-V. ; P.]

p i n, see under 2 p t.

p i b d, only in p i b d a mā, 'firm, compact.' [V., p-V. ; P.]

p i g (p i g), 'cut rightly, fashion; adorn, equip.' [p-V. ; P., D.]

p i s h (p i s h), 'crush, grind.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

p i s, 'extend (?).' [Dhāt. 'go.' p-V. ; D.]

1 p i, see under 1 p ā.

2 p i (p i, p y d = p y i, p y a y), paya-

p a t e (V.), p y d a t e (V., p-V.), 'swell, be full or exuberant, flow over, be fat; cause to swell,' etc. [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

From it:—p i n, 'cause to swell or overflow, pour forth; swell, overflow.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]
3 pi (piy), p'yiiti, 'abuse, mock, despise.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

piđ, 'press; oppress, torment.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

piy = 3 pi

puṭh, only in caus., 'crush, dash to pieces.' [p-V.; D.]

puśh, 'thrive, prosper, bloom; cause to thrive or develop, bring up, nourish, further, increase, exalt; enjoy, receive, display.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

pū, 'make clean or bright, purify; fig., 'clear by thinking, discriminate, think out, invent; express clearly; stone.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

pāj, 'honor, receive with honor, adore.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

pāy, 'putrefy, stink.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

pār, 2d caus. form of 1 par (p.)

pāyā (pāy, pāyā) = 2 pā

pārh, see under 1 par.

prāch, 'ask for, inquire about, seek; seek or solicit.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

prāth (prath), 'spread, extend, diffuse.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

prā, see under 1 par.

pṛ, 'please, rejoice, cheer; oblige; be pleased,' etc. [Fr. par, 'fill, sate, satisfy'] V., p-V.; P., D.]

pṛvu, 'move on, hurry, leap.' [Only with prep.'s as, 'leap over, run away,' etc. Comp. plav, p-V.; P., D.]

Akin: -prav, 'spurt, sprinkle, wet.' [Comp. plav, below. V., p-V.; P., D.]-plu (plav), 'float, swim; hover, fly, run; run away.' [Only once in RV. Later form of pra. V., p-V.; P., D.]-pluś, 'scatter sparks, burn (as sprinkle Dāt.)' [Comp. prav, above. V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

prath (proth), 'smort (as a horse), pant.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

prav, see under pra.

prath = prav.

plav = plu.

plāy, 'begin, undertake.' [Not really a root, but from pra+t. See note, p. 17.]

plu (plav), see under pra.

pluś, see under pra.

psā, see under bhas.

phān, only caus., 'cause to leap; and intens., 'leap, jump.' [Gr. connects it with phar, through pharys.] V., p-V.; P., D.]

phār, see under phār.

1 phāl, see under phār.

2 phāl, phalāti, 'bear fruit (also fig.); obtain fruit (= reward),' BR. Nachtr. [BR. separate 1, 2 phal making the latter den. of phala, 'fruit, of which they give no deriv.' It may perhaps be orig. identical with phal (comp. phāti). p-V.; P., D.]

phull, see under phār.

bāṅh (bā,h, vaṅh), 'be firm or strong.' [Only once in the causat. bāṅha, 'strengthen,' and in the part bāṅha, with prep.'s. BR. connect it with bār. The simple bāṅ wanting, except in deriv.'s. V., p-V.; P., D.]

bād = bāndh.

2 bād = vaṅh.

3 bād, desid. of bād.

bāṅd (bāh), 'bind, fasten, fetter make prisoner; unite, combine; connect (in verses), compose; bind or attach or direct (one's mind, etc.) to; bind a sacrificial victim, sacrifice; put on (fruit), strike (roots); produce, cause.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 bār (vār, bṛṛ, vṛṛ), bṛṛhāti, 'move violently, tear, tear up.' [Without prep.'s only with māla, root.] V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 bār (bṛṛ, vṛṛ, bṛṛh, vṛṛh), bṛṛhāti, bṛṛhāti, 'make fat or strong, strengthen, increase, further.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

3 bār (bṛṛ, vṛṛ, bṛṛh, vṛṛh), bṛṛhāti, vārāhāti, 'roar, bellow.' [p-V.; P., D.]

bāl, only one intens., 'whirl.' [p-V.]

bādh, see under vaṅh.

bād = bāṅh.
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

buddh, 'awake, be awake or watchful; (gen'y) observe, notice, perceive, know, learn to know; consider as.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

brā, 'speak, say.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhaks, see under bhaja.

bhaja, 'apportion, distribute; bestow, bring; receive as one's portion, share, enjoy; practice; resort or go to; be attached to, love, worship.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—bhaks, 'enjoy, consume (in older lang. = 'drink'; in later lang. = 'eat', devour.' [V., p-V.; P., D.].

bhās (bhās), 'wish to share, desire, ask for, beg.' [V., p-V.; P., D.].

bhānj, 'break, fracture; bend.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhat, only a caus. form, 'hire.' [p-V.; P., D.]

bhāna, see under bhan.

bhāna, 'sound, resound, shout.' [BR.].

bha, 401 and others connect this root, as well as bhās, with bhād. Comp., in regard to this, what is said on p. 7. Gr. defines it 'speak, proclaim.' [V.; P.]

From it:—bhab, 'speak.' [Comp. note to bhan. p-V.; P., D.]

bhanda, 'be hailed or praised.' [BR.].

'shine, beam.' [GR. and Dhat.]. [V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhar (bhr), 'bear, carry; contain, possess; bear or take away; bring, procure; bear, endure; bear, sustain, nourish; support, keep in one's pay; raise (the voice or a sound).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—hār (hr), 'bear, carry; bring, procure; carry or tear away, seize (unlawfully), rob; take or strip off, sunder receive (a gift); take hold of, master, overpower; hold back.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhāraj (bhraj) = bhraj.

bharts, 'threaten, rebuke, berate.' [P-V.; P., D.]

bhārv, 'chew, consume.' [Only two ex. Comp. bhāva. V.; P., D.]

bhārg (bhr) = bhāraça.
A. H. Edgren,

From it:—bhāṣh, 'be active or stirring, make effort, strive after, prepare;' (caus. 'adorn.' [By BR. divided into two roots: 1, only with prep.'s, and indicating motion; 2, 'exert one's self.' By Gr. as here. V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhy aś, see under bht.

bhṛāṇc (bhṛaṇ, bhṛc, bhṛć), 'fall (away or apart or down); disappear, be lost; be separated from or deprived of.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Probi'ly akin with it:—bhṛesh, 'trot, stumble.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhrājj (bhṛarj, bhṛjrj), 'fry, roast.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhrām, 'roam, wander about, move to and fro; turn round; waver, be embarrassed or confused: roam through.' etc. [V-D, p-V.; P., D.]

bhṛc = bhṛc.

bhrāj, 'shine, glow, be bright.' [Gr. connects it with bhṛaj. V., p-V.; P., D.]

bhrū, 'wound' (BR.); 'be angry, punish' (Gr.). [Only in one RV. passage.]

bhṛesh, see under bhṛaṇc.

mānā, see under māh.

majj (in Dākt. mās), 'sink or dive down; sink under, be lost, perish; bathe.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

mān (?), only in mānita, as noun 'murmuring' (?) [Comp. BR., Nachtr. p-V.; D.]

māṇḍ, 'adorn.' [p-V.; P., D.]

māṭh (mānth), 'stir around or rub violently; excite (fire) by rubbing; churn; beat up; agitate, shake; grind, crush; distress.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 mad (mānd), mādaki or māndaki (V.), medyāḍi, (originally 'gush forth,' of water: hence gen'lly 'rejoice, feel (esp. heavenly) bliss, delight, revel, be intoxicated; rejoice, gladden intoxicate.' [BR. give 'rejoice' as the origin meaning, and consider 'gush, boil' as a fig. extension of that sense. V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 mad (2 mān), see under 1 mān.

mān (1, 2, 4, 8 classes), 'mean, think, consider; think of, intend, wish; perceive, know; have consideration for, esteem, honor; approve; be considered, appear.' [Comp. ma, with which it is by sense connected. V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—2 mad (origin'y 2 mān, only form in RV.), mādāti, ('hesitate') Curt., p. 101: hence, 'tarry, delay, still.' [Comp. Gr., 2 man; BR. give pari-namāyati under ma, and refer the other two Ved. forms manmāṃḍi and ammumā to 2 mad, man. They seem, however, to belong to man as a verb of the ku-class. The RV. form manmāṭṭana, by BR. referred to 2 mad, is by Gr. referred to 1 mad.—In Čapat. Brāhm. madati occurs. The two roots ought perhaps rightly to be separated. V., p-V.; P., D.]

māṇṭr, * see under 1 mān.

mānta=māth.

mānd=mād.

1 mar (mṛ; Dākt. mṛ), mṛḍāni, 'grind, crush.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—2 mar (mṛ), moraṇ (V.); mṛṣiṇāte, 'die, decease.' [Orig'y = 1 mar? V., p-V.; P., D.]

mār (mṛ), 'hurt, injure.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

march (mṛch), 'be destroyed, perish.' [Only one ex. p-V.]—māṛ (mṛ), 'rub or wipe off, clean; adorn, prepare properly: (ātman) cleanse one's self, etc. wipe off (impurities from one's self) upon some one else (loc.) V., p-V.; P., D.—māṛ (mṛ), 'crush, thresh.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

māṛ (mṛ), 'press hard, crush, grind to pieces; rub; rub away, annihilate.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

māṛ (mṛ), 'stroke, touch, mutilate; touch mentally, consider, reflect on.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

māṛ (mṛ), 'rub, curry.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

māṛ (mṛ), 'rub.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

māṇḍ. Only two ex., with prep.'s V., p-V.; P., D.]—māṛi, 'decay,
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

78

m i t h, 'meet, unite; meet as rivals, wrangle; revile.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
m i d, 'become fat (fig. richly rewarded).'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—m i n d, 'be attached to or drawn towards, feel affection for.'
[Comp. in sense suiety. BR. do not separate mid, mid; but as each is found with its distinctive meaning only, and mind is not Vedic, a separation seems called for. Identified deri-
vals' meds, etc., point only to mid.

m i l, 'unite, meet, come together; occur.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—m i l, 'close (up the eyes), wink; vanish; collect.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

m i g (?) only in the desid. form:

m i kesh, 'mix, stir up, give a relish to;
[Thus BR: Gr. (with the nat. comment's) consider-
mi kesh as a desid. of mi , and mean-
ing 'besprinkle, give relish to.'
[V., p-V.; P., D. (i.e. mi c).]

Akin:—m i g, 'mix.'
[Fr. mi c (mi c), 'mixed.'
-V.; P., D.]

m i g r, see under mid.

m i s h, 'open the eyes; blossom.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

m i h (mi g h, me g h), 'pour out, make
water, sprinkle; emit seed.'
[migh (megh) only in nineyamanda, twice in
RV. The form mikes by Gr. and nat.
comment's referred here as a desid,
is by BR. referred to me, which see
V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 m i = 2 m a.

2 m i = 2 m i.

m i l, see under mil.

m i v, 'move.' [Only with prep's.
V. (only A.V.), p-V.]

m u c, 'loosen, set free; let go;' [Amt.]
be loosed or set free.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—1 m o k h, mokshate, set,
free, deliver.' [Desid. treated as a
sope verb, i.e., m o k h, mokshayati,
set free, deliver, wrest away; let
flow.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

m u d, 'be glad or joyous, take pleasure.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

Crumble.' [V. (verbal), p-V.; P., D.]

—m a d (m a), 'decay, wither, lan-
guish.' [Fr. 2 mar? Comp. Brug-
man, Morphol. Untersuch'n (mr + d).
V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 m a r, see under 1 m a r.

m a r c, see under 1 m a r.

m a r c h (m a r c h), see under 1 m a r.

m a r j (m a r j), see under 1 m a r.

m a r d (m a r d), 'be mild or gracious
(towards), pardon, spare.' [Akin to
mard in sense of 'stroke gently'?
Comp. mird. V., p-V.; P., D.]

m a r n, see under 1 m a r.

m a r d (m a r d), see under 1 m a r.

m a r d h (m a r d h), 'be weary, neglect;
forget, forsake, contemn.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

m e g (m e g), see under 1 m a r.

m e g h (m e g h), 'forget, neglect;
bear patiently.' [Comp. mardh.
V., p-V.; P., D.]

m a h, 'elate, delight, cheer, stir up;
esteem highly, honor; (Atm.) rejoice,'
etc. [Orig'ly 'be great or high.'
V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—m a h, 'be grand or
happy (Gr.); bestow (= make rich or
happy). give.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

m a, m d t, m n l, m d y a t e, 'measure,
meet; measure out, grant; ar-
range, form, build.' [Some derive
man, 'think' from this root (ma);
comp. mi below.
V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—1 m i, minot, 'build, erect,
establish; measure; estimate, recog-
nize, perceive.'
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 m a (1 m t), mindii, 'low, bleat.'
[The form vi-mayanate, RV, 866.
10 is by RV. referred here; but by
Gr. to a root may, 'go.'
V., p-V.; P., D.]

m t, see under 1 m a.

2 m t (2 m t), minati, m d y a t e, 'diminish,
lessen, annul; injure, transgress, frustrate;
mis (one's way); (Atm.) be diminished,' etc.
[V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 m i k e s h, see under m i c.

2 m i k e s h = m y a k e s h.

m i g h = m i h.
murch = march.

mus ḥ, 'steal, rob, plunder.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

mu ḥ, 'be lost, wander; be perplexed or embarrassed, lose one's presence of mind, stupid; fail.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

murch (murch), 'become firm or solid or strong, take shape; become torpid or senseless, faint away; grow firmer or stronger or more intense; cause to sound powerfully.' [V. (only A.V.), p-V.; P., D.]

māl, *mālāti, only with ad, 'be rooted up, be eradicated.' [māl, 'be rooted or firm.' Fr. mûla, 'root.' p-V.; P., D.]

mrāj, *mrjayāte, 'chase, pursue; hunt; seek.' [Fr. mraya, 'deer.' V., p-V.; P., D.]

megh = mikh.

1 makāh, desid. of mūc, which see.

2 makāsh, see under mūc.

mad, see under man.

māyakāh (2 miksh), 'be fixed (in), be' (BR); 'sparkle, micare' (Gr). [As second'y root, but whence? V.; P.]

mārakāsh (mṛksh), see under 1 mar.

marad, see under 1 mar.

marit, see under 1 mar.

maruc, only with mū (abhī-nī), 'go down, set (of the sun).' [Dhāt. 'go.' Comp. māruc. V. (RV. only verbal), p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—mīrūc 'go down, go to rest.' [ni-mīruc, also 'go down.' V., p-V.; P., D.]

mred, only caus. with ad, 'repeat,' and ātm. with upānti (comp. mard), 'gladden, make happy.' [p-V.; P.]

mād (maśi), see under mar.

mīch (mīch), 'speak barharously, talk an unintelligible or foreign language.' [p-V.; D.]

mīcch, see under mīcch.

mīlup, said to be another form of mīc; only in spāmīlupa, abhimīlupa, 'concealed, withdrawn.' [p-V.; P.]

mīch = mīch.

yaksh, only with prā, 'speed onward; strive after, attain to' [by Gr. connected with a lost ya and O. H. Germ. jagen. V., p-V-D. P., D.]

yaś, 'honor, worship; worship with sacrifices or oblations, sacrifices.' [V. p-V.; P., D.]

yat, see yam, under dam.

yantar, see yam, under dam.

yaḥ, 'future.' [p-V.; P., D.]

yam, see under dam.

yas, 'seethe, boil, bubble; make exercise; (esp.)ly with ā, 'make exertion, strive, trouble or weary one's self' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—yesḥ, 'boil up or ove gush.' [Only three ex. V., p-V.; P., D.]

yā, see under t.

yāc, see under t.

yād, see under t.

yādā, see under t.

1 yu, see yam, under dam.

2 yu, yūyoti, 'remove, separate, project (from abl.); ward off; stay away; be separated.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—yuṣch, 'yield, turn off, go away;' (with pra, 'be absent; it careless'). [By Gr. treated as a form of 2 yu. V.; P.]

yuc, see under 2 yu.

yuṣ, see yam, under dam.

yudh, see yam, under dam.

ypū, 'make smooth or level; efface obliterate; confuse.' [V., p-V.; P. D.]

yesḥ, see under yas.

raḥ, 'cause to flow, hasten or (ātm.) flow on.' [The form raḥ, alluded to by Kālidāsā, but nowhere found in real use. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—laḥgh, 'leap over, cross, transgress; surpass; ascend.' [Com. note to raḥ, above. p-V.; P., D.]

1 rakṣā, rākṣati, 'watch, guard; protect, save; heed.' [V., p-V.; P. D.]

2 rakṣa, see under rip.
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

39

ra, "fabricate, form, make, produce; adapt; rasita, provided (with)." [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 raja (rāja), 'be bright or white; glow, reddened, be red; (fig.) be affected by any strong feeling.' [BR: give only this ra, from which rdha, rdhā, etc.; GR. as here, driving rdha from two rdhs. Comp. Curt., 153. V., p-V.; P., D.]

- From it:—1 raja, 'be splendid, shine, be distinguished.' [Comp. note to raj above. V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 rajas, see under 2 arajas (and comp. 1 raj).

rañj = 1 raja.

raja, 'give forth a loud sound, howl, cry, roar,' etc. [p-V.; P., D.]

rana = ran.

rana, see under rama.

rad, 'scratch or cut (by any instrument), gnaw, crush; dig or open (esp. roads); open (rivers, etc.) give a free course to (rivers); give, dispense (gifts = give a free course to them).'

- Thus GR.; BR. give same meanings; but a somewhat different developement: 'scratch; dig (a road); lead (rivers) into a course; lead or bring (something) to (one)' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

radha (randa), 'be subject to (dat.); subject, deliver into one's (dat.) power; subdued.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 ran (ra), see under rama.

2 rana (ragn), see under 2 rd.

rap, see under 2 rd.

rap, only with pra, 'be sufficient;' and ra, 'be abundant or exuberant, swell.' [V., P., D.]

rapi, only once in rapiita, 'injured, miserable (?)' [V.; P., D.]

rabb (ramb), 'seize, grasp.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

- From it:—rabb, 'grasp, catch; procure, find; obtain, receive; possess; grasp mentally, perceive.' [Comp. id. V., p-V.; P., D.]

ram, 'bring to repose, calm, stop; pause, rest, like to stay (by, loc.); be pleased with, take delight in; love; daily with, future, couple (of deer); please, make happy.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—1 ran (ra), rasati, ragyati, 'take pleasure, rejoice; delight.' [Comp. 2 ran. V., p-V.; P., D.]

- raman, 'delight.' [Fr. rasa or denom. of rasa (rasa), 'agreeable.' Only one ex. V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

- lama, 'enjoy (sexually).' [For older rams. Only one ex. p-V.; P., D.]

ramah, 'hang down (loosely).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

- From it:—lamba, 'hang down; hang on or from, (with awa) depend; cling to, hold to; drink down, lag behind, tarry.' [Later form of ramha.

p-V.; P., D.]

1 ramabh = rabh.

2 ramah, see under 2 rd.

1 rasa, see under 2 rd.

2 rasa, *rasiyati, rasati, rasyati, 'taste.' [Provably rasyati from ras (ras), 'juice' and the remaining to later form, br. p-V.; P., D.]

- raha, 'leave, give up, surrender;' (raka, 'left, separated, free, without').

[Connected with radha V-D., p-V., P., D.]

1 rata, rātī, 'grant, give up, give up.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 rata (ra), rdha, 'bark; bark at.' [Dhāt. 'sound.' Provably origiiny ra, 'sound,' still retained in ara, an interj. of calling. Comp. ras, below; and, P., I., 187. Only three ex. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—2 ran (ra), 'sound, ring.' [By BR. classif'd with 1 ran, 'delight,' though defined as here, and suggested to be a sep'te root. Formed in analogy with tān kras, etc. (see p. 7).

p-V.; P., D.]

- rup, 'prattle, talk, whisper.' [Later form lap, below. V., p-V.; P., D.]

- rambha, 'roar;' withupa, 'fill with sound, make resound.'

[Only two ex. Comp. ribh, below.

p-V.; P., D.]

- ras, rasa, 'give forth a loud sound, roar, yell, neigh,' etc. [Later form las, below. V., p-V.; P., D.]

- rādha (v. I. rdha), 'scream, howl.' [Fr. ras, above. p-V.; P., D.]

- rūp (rebh), 'crackle, creak; murmur, prattle; speak aloud, shout (to).'

[With abhi, 'bark at.' Comp. ramāth, above. V., p-V.; P., D.]

- rau, raudha, ruadh, 'low, roar, yell, hum.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

- rad, 'wall, howl, weep; deplore.' [V.,
A. H. Edgren,

p-V.; P., D.]—tah, 'prattle; talk; murmur; wail.' [Later form of rap, above. V. (only A.V.). p-V.; P., D.]
—las, 'sound.' [Fr. raz, abov. Comp. note to las. p-V.; P.]

1 rágj, see under 1 raj.
2 rágj, see under 2 arj.
rådh, see under arðh.
råc = rás.
rás (v. I. råd), see under 2 rå.
ri (r), see under ar.
rik, 'scratch, tear.' [V. (only one ex. iríkka in RV.); in the later language iliik. Comp. ri; V., p-V-D.; P., D.]
Later form:—ilik, 'scratch, furrow; mark by scratching, engrave, inscribe, write, paint.' [V. (only A.V.), p-V.; P., D.]
ri kh, see under riég.
riég, 'creep (of infants), move slowly.' [P.; D.]

Akin:—ri kh, 'creep (of children), go slowly.' [One ex. p-V.; D.]
ric, see under ar.
rip, 'smear; deceive.' [V., p-V-D.; P., D.]
From it:—lip (limp), 'smear, soil; stick on, glue to.' [V., p-V.; D.]
rip, see under 2 rd.
riðh (redh), see under 2 rd.
rig (arc), 'tear or pluck off; graze; break, hurt.' [Gr. connects this and the following with ar, giving arc (rc) as the intern'me form. The only ex. of arc is arge, which Br. give as an adj. of uncertain deriv.' They refer arc to ri, but without noticing it there. V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—ric, 'tear or pluck off; hurt.' [p-V.; P., D.];—2 raksh, 'hurt, injury.' [Proply raksh=rú, rish, BR. Only in one A.V.-passage (RV.-D.); D.];—raksh, 'be hurt or wounded; meet with disaster; fail, miscarry; hurt, harm.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
riðh, see under riég.
riðh, 'lick, caress.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Later form:—íkh, 'lick; lick up, sip.' [p-V.; P., D.]
ři = ri.

1 ru, see under 2 rå.
2 ru, rável, 'break or dash to pieces.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
From it:—ruj, 'break, shatter; afflict, pain.' [V., p-V.; P., D.];—ruh, 'torment.' [Only part. ãtm. p-V.];—rup, 'suffer racking pain.' [Later form lup, 'break,' below. V. (only A.V.; RV.-D.); p-V.; D.];—lush, 'break to pieces; pounce upon; oppress; rob, plunder.' [V. (only A.V.), p-V.; P., D.];—f, 'cut, cut off or down, cut to pieces, destroy.' [p-V.; P., D.]
ruč (ru, in račand), 'shine, beam, display splendor. be adorned; appear beautiful (to, dat.), be pleasing, please (dat.); be pleased, desire (dat. or acc.); make bright or resplendent.' [Comp. sarć, V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—loš, 'see, perceive.' [p-V.; P., D.];—loc, 'see, look.' [Only with prep's. p-V.; P., D.]
ruj, see under 2 ru.
ružh, see under 2 ru.
ruá, see under 2 rå.

1 ruðh, see under varðh.
2 ružh, ruždh, 'stop, check, arrest; withhold, retain; sustain; enclose, cover; stop up, fill; oppress.' [V-D., p-V.; P.]
rup, see under 2 ru.
1, 2 ruč = ruč and rúsh.
ružh (ru), ruždh or ružk, 'be crossed or vexed, be angry; displeasure, disgust.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
ružh, see under 1 varðh.
råkh, *make thin or lean; smear, soil.' [By Br. derived from ráksh (fr. ráksh), 'rough, dry, lean, arid.' The connection between ráksh and ráksh in all senses does not seem clear. p-V.; P., D.]
råkh, *give form or shape to, represent.' [Fr. râpa, 'form.' p-V.; P., D.]
råzh, 'strew or cover with dust; smear.' [Mostly in rázhā. Comp. ráksh,* p-V.; P., D.]
ře, 'shake, cause to tremble, stir; tremble, quiver, flicker.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
ře, only in pr. part. with a-, 'non failers' (BR.). [p-V.; D.]
řeðh = riðh.
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

1, 2 ləkəh, see under əq.

1 aq, 'adhere, stick; clasp; follow closely; meet.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin with it:—1 ləkəh, ləkəhə-

ət, 'mark; denote; consider; notice, perceive, see.' [Fr. laka (lag), 'mark.' p-V.; P., D.] From this:—2 ləkəh, ləkəhə, 'notice, perceive.' [P-V.]-iəkə (only with a, and one ləkəhə), 'clasp the limbs.'

[Fr. ləkə (lag), 'limb.' Also one ləkə of 10 claps, 'infect according to gender.' p-V.; P., D.]

ləhə, see under raəh.

ləjə, 'be ashamed, blush.' [P-V.; P., D.]

ləp, see under rəd.

ləhə, see under rəbəh.

ləm, see under rəm.

ləl, 'play, sport, daily.' Causat. 'loll the tongun.' [P-V.; P., D.]

ləsəh, 'wish, desire.' [P-V.; P., D.]

1 ləs, 'shine, glitter; appear; play.' [BRI. also refer 2 ləs, 'sound' here; but this comes no doubt from 1 rəs, 'roar; sound,' which never means 'shine.' p-V.; P., D.]

2 ləs, see under rəd.

ləd, 'take, grasp.' [Only in dədwa. Comp. labh, rubh. p-V.; D.]

ləkəh, see under rəkəh.

ləŋə, see under əq.

ləp (limp), see under rip.

ləp, see under rəp.

ləhə, see under rəh.

1 lə, ləjə, 'cling or press closely to, adhere or stick; settle down or perch upon; cower down or hide in; disappear.' [Gr. connects it with rt, ar; but the meanings are very different. V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 lə, only intens. lələjə, 'totter, shake, tremble.' [P-V.; D.]

ləjəcə, 'pluck, pull, pull out, peel.' [P-V.; P., D.]

1 ləjə, lohəjə, 'plunder, rob.' [Only three ex. p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—1 ləjə, lohəjə, 'rob, plunder; peel.' [BRI. make it caus. of 1 ləh. p-V.; P., D.]

2 ləjə, see under ləl.

ləd, see under ləl.

1, 2 ləjə, see 1 ləjə, and ləl.

ləp, see under rəd.

ləbəh, 'be perplexed or in disorder; (gen'ly) desire eagerly (= be disturbed in mind, BR.; F., p. 201.); allure (= pratiḥita):' ləbəhə, 'desiring, covetous, greedy.' [V.; p-V.; P., D.]

ləl, 'stir about, agitate.' [P-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—2 ləl, ləhəti, 'roll, roll. role.' [P-V.; P., D.]-lədh, only caus. 'stir, stir up, set in motion, make uneasy.' [P-V.; P., D.]-2 ləməh, lənəhəti, 'stir up, set in motion.' [BRI. make 1 ləhəh a caus. of this. p-V.; P., D.]

ləd, see under rəd.

ləkə, see under rəc.

ləc, see under rəc.

vaənəd = bəsəh.

1 vaək = vac.

2 vaək, 'roll, revolve.' [V., p-V-D.; D.]

From it:—vaəəc, 'proceed by regular motion or crookedly, totter, reel, roll on; sneak along.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 vaəkə = 1 uəkə.

2 vaəkə, 'grow, become great or strong.' [Only in perf. and caus. V., P., D.]

Weakened form:—2 uəkə, 'grow up, grow strong.' [V., P., D.]

vəc (1 vaək), 'speak, say, tell, declare, announce; blame.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

vəj (be active or strong, be powerful') only in caus. (vədəj), 'urge to speed, spur, incite; speed.' [Thus Gr.; BR. make evj in all cases a denom. of evja (vaj). Comp. Kuhn's Zeitchr. 3, 335; and Ourt. 159. V., p-V.; P., D.]

vaəc, see under 2 vaək.

vaənə, 'divide.' [Only one ex. p-V.; P., D.]

vaət, with apr, 'receive mentally, comprehend.' [Only 3 ex. V.; D.]

VOL. XI. 6
vāda, 'speak, say, declare, name.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
From it:—vānād, 'praise, honor, greet.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

vādha (bādha), 'slay, kill, destroy.' [Aor. to lāpāni only in sār. and prec.; but found also in fut. and pot., in spec. tenses passive, and once radhāti (BR, Nachtr.).] V., p-V.; P., D.
From it:—bādha, 'press or drive away, dispel; oppress, torment; force apart.' [Comp. Kuhn's Zeitschr. 12, 120: F. 156. The desid. bhākāsi set up as a septe root 3 bādha. V., p-V.; P., D.—vādha (3 vādha), 'pierce, penetrate, smite, shoot, wound; injure, harm; goad on, incite; shake, move.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

vān, see under 3 vā.

vānād, see under vād.

1 vāpa, vāpati, 'shear, graze.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 vāpa, vāpati, 'strew, scatter, sow.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

vāma, 'vomit, eject.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 vār (vār, vār), 'envelop, cover, enclose, surround; confine, obstruct; restrain, check, guard.' [See note to 2 vār, below.] V., p-V.; P., D.
Akin:—dāru, 'surround, wrap.' [Fr. sār through vrā, by GR. not sep'd fr. sār. V., p-V.; P., D.—vāṛ, 'paint, depict.' [Fr. vārā (ear), 'paint.' p-V.; P., D.]

2 vār (vṛ, vṛ), 'choose, prefer, wish, love.' [Perhaps from 1 vār, as 'enclose mentally.' BR. as here. Dḥāt. gives only one vṛ (vṛṣṭi, vrāḍī; varāti) for 'eligere, tegere,' etc. Comp. also vārā. V., p-V.; P., D.]

vāṛ (vṛ, vṛ), 'turn, twist; turn over (the sacred grass, Gr.: BR., untwist and strew it out); turn away; divert; (ātm.) appropriate, choose.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

vāṛ, see under 1 vār.

vāṛ (vṛ), 'turn, roll, roll on (fig. pass on, take place; tarry in a place, exist; live; be (as a reg. copula); proceed, act; use,' etc. [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 vārādha (vṛādha, vṛādha, vṛdhat, vṛdhat, 'raise, increase, strengthen, cause to grow or prosper; cheer up, animate, inspire; increase, grow, prosper,' etc. [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—a-rādha (rādha), 'prosper, thrive, succeed; further, cause to succeed, accomplish; satisfy.' [V., p-V.; P., D.—rādha, 'grow, be great, thrive, be happy.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
—rādha, 'succeed, be accomplished; accomplish, carry through.' [Comp. vrādha. V., p-V.; P., D.—rādha, rādhati, 'grow, sprout.' Only two ex. V., p-V.; P., D.—rāh, 'ascend, mount; grow up, grow, develop, increase, prosper; grow together, heal.' (rākṣa, also spread abroad, diffused, generally known).] [Fr. rudh, above. V., p-V.; P., D.—vṛādha, 'stir up, spur on' (BR.); 'be great or strong or powerful' (Gr.).] [Comp. radhā. Only in a few RV. ex. D.]

2 vārādha (?), 'cut off.' [Vṛādha-vāyu, Weber, Krahaj. p-V.]

vārāsh (vṛāśa), 'rain, pour down.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

vārāh = bārāh.

vāl, 'turn, turn to; burst forth, show itself;' (vālā, 'accompanied by'). [p-V.; P., D.]

vāla, 'go by leaps, jump, speed.' [V. (only AV.; RV-D.).] p-V.; P., D.]

vāla, 'only with apa and pra, 'test by a question, propose a riddle to' (BR.). [p-V.; P.]

vāc, see under 3 vā.

1 vāc, sughati, 'be bright, shine.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—vāc, 'burn, consume, destroy, punish.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 vāc, viṣa, 'cut on a dress or covering, take form, appear; enter into.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

3 vāc, viśatī, 'stay, dwell, linger, remain; be, pass; devote one's self to.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

4 vāc, 'direct (an attack) against, attack.' [V.; P.]

5 vāc, 'only with ni, 'cut down, kill;' and pari, 'cut out.' [p-V.; P.]

vākhā, 'lead, convey, bring, bear, carry, cause; bear, endure; pass (time); cause to flow, carry along or away; travel, ride; blow (of the wind).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language. 43

1 vi ḍ ḍh, vidhāti, 'be devoted to, worship, honor; present as a devotional offering, dedicate; be propitious’ (Gr.). [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 vi ḍ ḍh (viṇḍh), viṣādhā, 'be empty, be wanting or lacking (instr.).' [V., (p-V.; Vālaḥkya); D.]

3 vi ḍ ḍh = viṣadh.

viṇḍh = 1 vi ḍ ḍh.

vi ḍ ḍh = 2 vi ḍ ḍh.

vi ṁp (eṣp), 'be in a swelling or trembling motion, tremble, quiver; shudder.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

vi ṁr, 'settle down, enter, go in, repair (to), go to, fall to (one's) luck; share; happen into.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

viṣadhā, 'be active; bring about, perform, do; gain; rule; consume.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 vi ṇ, veṭṭi, 'seek with eagerness, strive after; enjoy; grasp, procure; attack.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 vi ṇ, veṭṭi, 'impel, set in motion; stir up, incite; send.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

3 vi ṇ, only in intens., 'flutter (of the heart), tremble.' [Orig. 'flip with the wings.' BR. Only two ex. V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—vi ṇj (vya ḍj), 'fan, cool by blowing; besprinkle.' [p-V.; P., D.]

vi ṇj, see under vi ḍ.

vi ṇd, 'make firm, fix; be firm or hard.' [V., (p-V.;) D.]

vi ṇr, 'act manly or bravely.' [Fr. vīra, 'hero.' V., p-V.; D.]

veṭṭh = vi ṇc.

veṭṭn, see under 3 veṭṭ.

ve ṁp = vi ṇp.

viṣāḥ (viṣṭh), 'twine round, cling to; envelop, dress (ref.).' [viṣṭh excepty in the older language. (once viṣṭhā in RV., also in AV.)]. Gr. 'clothe, surround,' and derived from riṣ(?). [V., p-V.; P., D.]

viṣadhā, 'stagger, reel, stumble, swerve; be agitated, be disturbed in mind (by pain or fear), despair.' [Simpler form in viṣṭhā. V., p-V.; P., D.]
A. H. Edgren,

vy adh (vr id), see under va dh.
vy a y, see under i.
vy a (vr a), 'cover, envelop.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
vr a j, 'go, proceed, move; go or attain to (any state or condition).'[V., p-V.; P., D.]
vr a n (br a n), 'sound?' (t). Dhat.
[Only in vr a niti vr a s, Su czu, 2, 2, 1.–vr a s, vr a niti is a denom. of vr a s, 'wound.']
vr a d, 'become soft or ripe.' [Only one ex. V.; D.]
vr a c, 'cut off or down, split.' [Comp. vr a ka. V., p-V.; P., D.]
vr a d h, see under 1 vr a rd h.
vr i d, 'be abashed or ashamed.' [p-V.; D.]
vr a d, only vr a d h, 'sunk down, lost.' [p-V.]
va l a g (vl a h), 'twist the neck, throttle' (BR.); 'press hard, pursue' (Gr.).
[Connected with ury t, V.; P.]
vl a, 'press or cause to fall together.' [V. (only AV.), p-V.; P., D.]

ca h s, 'speak or repeat in a solemn manner, recite (esp. a verse, etc. to the gods); praise; proclaim, announce.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—1 c a s (c i k h, c i s, in some forms), 'reprimand, correct, punish (in words), check; command, govern; instruct, teach; praise; announce, confess.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
ca k, 'be able or competent, can; give help, aid, favor, grant, give in.' [BR. give two roots, but suggest that 2 ca k may be considered as a transit. to 1 ca k. The desid. cika 'try; learn; help, wish to give,' by some regarded as a septe root. V., p-V.; P., D.]
ca k, 'be sad or shy; suspect, suppose.' [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]
cu t, civa y a t, 'cut in pieces, cut off, sever.' [By Pāṇini said to be a cause. of 2 ca t. V. (only AV.), p-V.; P., D.]

1 ca d, 'fall off or out.' [V. (only AV.), p-V.; P., D.]
Prob'ly akin:—2 ca d, 'distinguish one’s self, triumph, prevail.' [Only in perf. and perf. part. V.]

2 ca d, see under 1 ca d.
ca p, 'curse, swear; promise on oath; (Atma) adjure, entreat.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
ca b d, 'sound; tell, call.' [Fr. caddo, 'sound.' p-V.; P.]

1 ca m (c i m), cava y a t, civa y a t, 'work zealously, busy or weary one’s self; prepare, arrange.' [Comp. note to 2 c a m, cava y a t, civa y a t in parallel passages. V., p-V.; D.]

2 ca m, civa y a t, 'become quiet or appeased, cease, sink to rest, be extinguished.' [Gr., F. and others consider 1, 2 ca m identical, in sense of 'weary one’s self, grow quiet.' Br. as here. Comp. Curt., p. 104. p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—1 ca m, 'quiet, another.' [Prob'ly by faulty writing or from ca m. Only in one RV. passage.]

3 ca m, cava y a t, civa y a t, with ni, 'become aware, perceive, burn, hear, learn.' [By F. referred to 1, 2 ca m, p-V.; P., D.]

4 ca m, civa y a t, 'harm.' [Only one p-V. ex.]

1 ca r (c r), 'break, burst, split; decay.' [Comp. 1 kar. V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—1 ca r, 'crush, kill.' [Only once (RV.), cāra. Gr. as here; BR. give cāra sep’tly, without any other definit’t than that of Naighant, kahi pra. V.]

2 ca r, only in gr a (also with d), 'boiled, roasted.' [Orig'ly 'glow.' The arrangem’t followed here in the main that of Gr., which gives cār (for ca r, to which he also refers cāra), fr. which ca r, gr a. Br. give ca r = ca r, where gr a is found. They further give two ca r, one 'cook' = ca r, and one 'mix. sequinu,' independent. V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—1 ca r (c ra t), only in ca r a t, 'cooked,' and in ca r a t, 'cook, boil, bake.' [Comp. note to ca r, above. V., p-V.; P., D.]

2 ca r, 'glow; cook; boil; ripen, finish off, gar machen (namentlich den Soma durch warme Milch), Gr. [BR. 2 ca r, as a septe root, 'mix (the Soma, etc.); comp. note to ca r, above. V., p-V.; P., D.]

3 ca r = ca r.
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

1. 1 చారదా (చారదా), cardho(y)ta, 'show one's self bold or strong, be defiant, mock.' [V. ; P., D.]
2. 2 చారదా (చారదా), cardhate, 'break wind.' [p-V. ; P., D.]

చార (2 చార), 'hew or cut down, slaughter.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

చడ (చడ, చడి), 3 చడి, 'whet, sharpen;' (fig.) make eager or bold or strong; hasten, promote, help; (atm.) be eager,' etc. [By Br. divided into two roots: see, however, Gr. వ, p-V. ; P., D.]

Desid.:—చడి, చడిసాతి, 'whet.'
[Translated as sep'te root.]

చడడి, see under చడ.

1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

2 చడడి = చాస.

చాసి = చడ.

చాసి, చాసి, 'give forth a sharp or shrill sound, ring, tinkle,' etc. [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

3. 1 చామి (1 చామి) = 1 చడడి, see under చడడి.

2 చామి, (చడడి) = 1 చడడి, see under చడడి.

2 చామి, 'lie, lie down or quiet; sleep.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

3 చామి, 'give way, disappear, be destroyed.' [p-V. ; P., D.]

3 చామి = చడ.

4 చామి = చడడి.

చామి, 'sprinkle, drizzle.' [p-V. ; P., D.]

చామి, 'do habitually, practice, enjoy.' [Fr. మాట, 'habit.' p-V. ; P., D.]

చడడి, 'flame, shine, beam; glow, burn (fig. be painted, grieve, wall, etc.).' [Thus Br., by others divided into two roots. Comp. చామి, cardh. V. , p-V. ; P., D.]

4. 1 చామి, only in చామిదాన, 'boasting or self-reliant?.' [V.]

5. 1 చామి (1 చామి), 'purify.' [Comp. చడడి, cardh. V. , p-V. ; P., D.]

6. 1 చామి (2 చామి), 'shine, glitter; adorn, beautify, attire; prepare, make fit; (atm.) adorn one's self,' etc. [BR.
give a sep'te root cardh, 'glide or pass on nimblly,' to explain a few RV. passages, by Gr. referred here; and they omit 'shine' from this cardh. Comp. చడడి, cardh. V., p-V. ; P., D.]

1 చామి (2 చామి), cardh, చామి, 'dry, dry up, wither, languish.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

2 చామి (2 చామి), see under చడ.

చడ (later చడడి, చడి), 'swell, increase, grow; be thriving or powerful.' [Thus Gr.; BR. refer Ved. forms in చడడి to a sep'te root చడ, 'be superior or victorious;' and later forms in చడడి, చడడి, etc. to చడ (రుడ, 2 చడడి), 'swell.' V., p-V. ; P., D.]

చడడి, see under చడ.

1 చడడి (2 చడడి), only the intens. form conicicadat, 'shining.' [By BR. referred to conad; by Gr., as it seems with better reason, to conad. posandra and conandra point to both these root-forms, and BR. give conad as the original one. V., p-V-D.; P., D.]

Akin:—2 cha (అన్న) d. chindati, chdhyati, 'appear, seem; seem good. please; try to seduce.' [V., p-V. ; P., D.]

2. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

3. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

4. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

5. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

6. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

7. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

8. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

9. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

10. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.

11. 1 చడడి (2 చడడి), see under చడడి.
grish, 'join, connect.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Later form:—lish, 'adhere or cling to, clasp, embrace, join.' [p-V.; P., D.]

grī, see under 2 car.

1 grū, grata, 'hear, listen; be attentive; listen to (a teacher, etc.), learn, find out.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
From it:—grūsh, 'hear (Gr.), listen to.' [With certainty only in srohaṃda, by BR. defined 'complaisant, confiding.' srohan, srohanu might also be referred to grū. V.; P (?), D.]

2 grū, see under sār.

grūsh, see under 1 grū.

plath, see under grath.

plāgh, 'have confidence (in, dat.); speak confidently, boast, be proud; flatter, praise.' [p-V.; D.]

plish, see under grish.

pva(n)i, c, 'open itself, receive in open arms' BR.; 'bend,' with ud., 'arise; open,' Gr. [Only a few RV. forms somewhat differently treated by BR. and Gr., and not all quoted by the former. V.; P., D.]

pvas, 'blow, hiss, pant; breathe; sigh.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—2 rūsh, rāhati, 'hiss.' [V.; P., D.]

pved, av = grū, which see.

pvet, 'be white or bright, shine.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

shīn, 'spit, spit out.' [p-V.; P., D.]

sagī, 'bear, able to bear; comprehend' (Gr.). [Only in 3 passages. V., p-V.; D.]
From it:—sag, 'overpower, conquer, master, check; be able; bear, endure, suffer, allow.' [Though 'bear' seems to be origin meaning, 'overpower' is the one prevailing in the RV. V., p-V.; P., D.]
sac (sač), see under 1 sd.
saj (saïj, saṣaj), see under 1 sd.
saṇj = saj.

sād, sādati, 'sit, sit down; besiege, lie in wait for; sink down (fig. collapse, decay, perish; be despondent, be low-spirited; be distressed or in need, etc.).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

sān (2 sā), 'gain, procure, obtain, possess, procure (for another), bestow.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 sap, see under 1 sd.

2 sap, only in one corrupt passage, sāpayan, 'futuens' (? BR.). [p-V.; D.]
sabhadja, see under bhadia.

sar (sr), 'move or hurry on, glide, flow, flow away.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
From it:—1 sar (srj, srish, 'let loose, send forth, fling, hurl; throw or pour out; let go, set free; publish; procreate, produce, beget; produce, procure, give.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
—sarp (srp), 'creep, crawl.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
—2 rū, ravi, 'be set in motion; flow apart, be dissolved or disconnected.' [Varied form or incorrect writing for sar, below V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 sarj (srj), see under sar.

2 sarj, sarijati, 'creak.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
sarp (srp), see under sar.
sac = sac (see note).
sas, 'sleep, be inactive or idle.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]
sah, see under sāgh.

1 sā (so), sāyati, 'bind, connect; yoke, fetter.' [Only with prep.na, esp'y aea, 'unbind, unyoke; (fig. desist, cease; stop, stay; abide by, decide upon, etc.).' V., p-V.; P., D.]
Akin:—sac (sač), 'be connected or associated or together with; be near, belong to; possess; be attached to; serve, follow, seek; pursue.' [Svṛt RV. forms sac, occur, referred by both BR. and Gr. to sac: only one sacāsti, in Vālakhilya, and the noun sacca, (RV.), are by BR. referred to a sep'te root sac, 'stop, withhold.' They seem, however, both explainable under sac. The two roots (sac, saca) should perhaps be considered as
closely connected, but not as identical. V., p-V.; P., D.]—saj (sajj, in pass., by assimil'n; s a h), 'cling, be attached or connected, adhere, stick.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]-1 s a p, 'adhere or be devoted to; strive after, seek to reach.' [Akin to sac, and orig.'ly sak, Kuhn. 9, 17. The verb-form sapary, 'honor,' not in the Dhät, seems connected with this as a dem. fr. a sapar (fr. sop). V., p-V.; P., D.]-s, 'bind, twine around; connect.' [By weak'g of orig.'l sa. V., p-V.; P., D.]-s (e s), 'bind or stitch together, sew.' [Fr. st. V., p-V.; P., D.]-s e r, 'be connected with; tarry in a place, stay or dwell in or by; attend to, serve, honor; be attached to, devote one's self to, cultivate, practice; enjoy (sexually).' [Comp. sec. above. V., p-V.; P., D.]-s (e s), 'tie or string together; declare, etc., in a Sūtra.' [Fr. sūtra (siv), 'thread.' P., D.]

2 s a d = s a n.

s a d h, 'reach the goal or be accomplished, succeed; carry out, adjust, set in order; accommodate one's self, obey.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—1 s i d h, sidhāti, 'reach goal, be accomplished, succeed; be the valid, be proved; be healed.' [Comp. also 2 s i d h, by Gr. connected with this. V., p-V.; P., D.]

s i, see under 1 s d.

s i c, 'pour out; emit; sprinkle.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

l s i d h, see under s a d h.

2 s i d h, sidhāti, 'scare or drive away, ward off.' [Thus Br.; by Gr. referred to 1 s i d h, 'proceed straight to one's goal,' in a caus. sense, 'drive on or away?' V., p-V.; P., D.]

s i d (siv), see under 1 s d.

s u (sū): 1 sū, sūnōti, 'press out (as'pl Soma juice).'-2 sū (sū), sūvati, sūviti, 'set in motion, cause, produce; des-teine (for), consecrate, empower.'-3 sū (sū), sūvati, sūviti, sūt, 'bring forth, generate, beget, bear.' [For the con-nect'n of these roots comp. Gr.; Curt., p. 397; Pott, Zeitschr., 6, 365: 2, p. 230: some excluding 3 sū. Orig'l meaning 'set in motion, send or bring forth?' All three V., p-V.; P., D.]

s u k h h, 'gladden, delight.' [Fr. sukh, 'joy.' P-V.; D.]

s u m b h, 'stifle' (?). [Only two ex. P-V.; D.]

s u = su.

s d e c, 'point out, indicate, show, betray.' [By Br. considered as a denom.? P-V.; P., D.]

s t a r s, see under 1 s d.

s d d, see under svasd.

s t a r k s h h, 'care for, regard.' [P-V.; D.]

s e v, see under 1 sā.

s k a n d, 'leap, spring, sprit, be ejected or hurled forth, be spilled, fall out; cover (of animals, beaupringen).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

s k a r = k a r.

s k u, 'cover, heap over; protect.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

s k h a l, 'stumble, reel, falter, slip, err, fall; stammer; stick.' [P-V.; P., D.]

s k h i d = k h i d.

s t a n, 'thunder, roar, groan.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—2 t a n, tanayati, 'thunder, resound.' [Comp. note to 1 t a m, V., p-V-D.; D.]

s t a (m) b h h, 'fix firmly, prop up (whence) reach to; check; (atm.) become stiff or rigid.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

s t a r (s t r, s t ā), 'strew, scatter, diffuse; spread over, cover; throw away or down (an enemy, etc.).' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

s t a, (s t a), only in sti, yant, 'stealthy, secret.' [V. (only A.V.), p-V. (Br., Nachtr.); D.]

Akin:—s t e n, 'steal, rob.' [Fr. stena (stā), 'thief.' P-V.]

s t i g h h, 'seize, attack.' [See note, p. 17. P-V.]

s t i m, only in sti, yta, 'heavy, dull, quiet; wet?.' [Comp. lim. P-V.; D.]

s t u, 'praise, praise in song, extol.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—s t a b h, 'shout for joy, exult, praise.' [V., p-V.; P., D.]

s t e n, see under stā.
s t y d (s t y a i), 'coagulate, grow thick or solid.' [p·v·; P, D.]

s th a g i, 'veil, cover.' [p·v·; D.]

s th d, 'stand, stand still; stay, abide, remain, endure, be in any state or situation; abide (by, loc.); desist (from abl.), etc.; stand or take place upon, mount.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s n d, smiti, 'bathe, perform ablution.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s n i h, 'be adhesive, be sticky or moist; have affection, be attached (to, loc. or gen.), love.' (Caus. 'smear, anoint, make pliant or submissive, BR.; 'make fat, melt, whence destroy, kill,' Gr.) [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s n u, 'yield any liquid (esp. mother's milk), flow.' [p·v·; P, D.]

s p a d, 'move with a quick motion, throb, kick.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s p a r (s p r), 'gain by struggle or contest; save, set free, protect, subdue.' [Comp. Gr. V, p·v·; P, D.]

From it: s p a r d h (s p r d h), 'struggle, compete, rival; strive for.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s p a r h (s p r h), 'be eager to gain, desire; envy.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s p a r d h (s p r d h), see under s p a r.

s p a r g (s p r g), 'touch, feel, stroke; reach, attain, affect; feel, experience.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s p a r h (s p r h), see under s p a r.

s p a g (p a h), 'see, behold, perceive; consider; (ám.) live to see, experience.' [poc in the pres't formations; spag in remaining tenses and caus, but only in the older language. V, p·v·; P, D.]

s p a r d h = s p a r d h.

s p a r h, see under s p a r h.

s p a r h, only in caus., 'tear apart, open, spread; draw (a bow).' [P·v·; P, D.]

Akin: —p a r h, only in intense, 'tear its way, advance with might!' [Only once in a corrupted and artificial Vedic hymn, 922, 7. BR., with Sáyana refer it to par, 'fill!' Gr., 'stew,' to sphur. V, D.—1 s p h a l, 'split, burst; defect, rebound.' [Comp. also 2 2 2 p h a l * p·v·; P, D.]

—s p h u l, 'expand, blow.' [Fr. phaila (1 phal), 'burst open.' P·v·; P, D.]

s p h a t, only in sphátila, 'split open, torn.' [p·v·; P, D.—s p h u l, 'split open, burst; expand, blossom.' [Fr. sphat. p·v·; P, D.]

s p h a l, only caus. with d, 'strike, slap; hurl; tear;' and am, 'strike on or dash to pieces.' [Comp. sphar and sphur. V, p·v·; P, D.]

s p h á d (y), only in sphiyante (BR., Nachtr.), 'are fattened; and sa sphina, 'growing fat, being fattened.' [By Brugman, Morphol Untersuch'n, derived fr. 1 sup. V·d, p·v·; P, D.]

s p h u l, see under sphar.

s p h u r, 'impart a sudden motion to, jerk; throb, quiver, tremble; flash, appear suddenly, be revealed.' [Comp. sphal. V, p·v·; P, D.]

From it: —s p h u l, only in sphátila, 'revealed, appeared.' [p·v·; P, D.]

s p u r j (s p h a r j), 'make a low noise, rumble, roar; break forth, appear.' [In latter sense comp. sphar. Perhaps 'break forth,' whence 'begin to rumble.' V, p·v·; P, D.]

s p h u l, see under sphur.

s a r, 'remember, think of; be mindful of; record, declare, teach; remember with regret, long.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s n a, 'smile, smile sweetly or with a blush; (whence fig.) bloom (of flowers).' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s y a (n) d, 'flow, run, pass or move on.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s r i t (n) s, 'fall off or asunder, crumble down; hang loosely.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s r i d h, 'make a false step, stumble, fail.' [V, D.]

s r i v (s r i v), 'fail.' [Only 3 ex. V, p·v·; D.]

s r u, see under sar.

s v a (n) j, 'clasp, embrace.' [V, p·v·; P, D.]

s v a d (s w a d, s w a d), 'make palatable or agreeable, sweeten, spice; taste good; relish, enjoy.' [By BR. divided into two roots: 2 s v a d, 'put aright = tame,' to which sud. V, p·v·; P, D.]

Akin: —s w a d, 'sweeten, make agreeable, beautiful; bless; put aright,
heal.’ [See note to svad. V., p-V.; P., D.]

sva ni, ‘sound, rush, roar.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

sva pi, ‘sleep, go to sleep; lie dead.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

svu ra, svirati, ‘emit a sound, resound; sing, praise in song.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

svu ra, sviravi, ‘shine.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

sva dād = svad.

svadī, ‘sweat.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

hād, ‘sacred.’ [p-V.; P., D.]

hān, (hāhan), ‘strike, hit; strike down, slay, kill; destroy, ruin.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From it (desid.):—hānas, ‘hurt, wound, injure.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 har (hār), see under ḫar.

2 har, (hār, hārī, hārīt), ‘be angry.’ [Origly ghar, ‘burn’? V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—harī, ‘be ashamed, blush.’

hār (y), ‘wish, yearn after; love, like.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

harāsh (hārāsh), ‘bristle or become erect (as the hair of the body; hence) be intensely moved (esp. by joy), rejoice: or the reverse develop’t of meaning (BR.). [‘Probable origl form gharaḥ (gharāš) given, but not quotable, except in deriv’ns gharah, etc. Perhaps origlly ‘be intensely moved,’ and connected with 2 har and harīy. V., p-V.; P., D.]

hāś, ‘laugh, laugh at, (fig.) bloom (of flowers).’ [Comp. smi. V. (only A.V.; in RV. the verbal has and deriv’); p-V.; P., D.]

From it:—jāksah, ‘laugh.’ [By redup’l’n. Only two partic. forms. V., p-V.; P., D.]

1 hā, jāla, ‘rush up, run away, yield, turn and flee, run to.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

Akin:—2 hā, jālā, ‘leave, abandon, reject, omit: emit.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

From this:—uṣjā (fr. ud + hā), ‘leave, abandon; avoid.’ [p-V.; P., D.]

hās, ‘race, contend in running.’ [V., p-V.]

2 hā, see under 1 hā.

hās, see under 1 hā.

hi, ‘set in motion, impel, cause; procure, favor, honor; procure.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

hīn, see under hūn.

hīka, ‘hiccough.’ [Onomat. p-V.; P., D.]

hīnā, one ex. of uncert. meaning. [p-V.; P.]

hīd (hīd, hēd), ‘be angry or hostile: offend; be frivolous;’ (origly ‘pull, pluck’?, BR.). [V., p-V.; P., D.]

hū, ‘pour (esp. clarified butter, BR.: sacrificial libation, Gr.) into the fire, sacrifice.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

hūrcā, see under dṛuh.

hā = hād.

hēd (hēd) = hīd.

hēsā, ‘neigh.’ [Comp. bresh. V., p-V.; P., D.]

hūn, ‘put out of the way, drive away; deny, excuse one’s self.’ [V., p-V.; P., D.]

hūraś, ‘become small, diminish.’ [p-V.; P., D.]

hūrdā, ‘sound.’ [p-V.; P., D.]

hūrī, see under 2 har.

hūrū, see under dṛuh.

hīrāsh, ‘neigh.’ [Comp. bresh. p-V.; D.]

hīd, ‘cool or refresh one’s self.’ [V-D., p-V.; P., D.]

hūr (hūr), see under dṛuh.

hūrā, see under dṛuh.

**Preceding Forms arranged according to the Final Letter.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>Forms</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kā</td>
<td>3 vā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 gā</td>
<td>4 vā (ve)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 gā</td>
<td>qvā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chā</td>
<td>hvā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jnā</td>
<td>çā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stā</td>
<td>kshā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sthā</td>
<td>1 sū (so)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 dā</td>
<td>2 sū (san)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 dā</td>
<td>psā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 dā</td>
<td>1 hà</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 dā (do)</td>
<td>2 hà</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 dhā</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 dhā</td>
<td>1 ci</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mnā</td>
<td>2 ci</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>snā</td>
<td>3 ci</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 pā</td>
<td>4 ci</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 pā</td>
<td>1 ji</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bhā</td>
<td>2 ji</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 mà</td>
<td>dhī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 mà</td>
<td>pi (= pi)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhmā</td>
<td>1 mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vā</td>
<td>2 mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>khyā</td>
<td>smī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jyā</td>
<td>ri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>styā</td>
<td>jri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhya</td>
<td>ṣrī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pyā (= 2 pt)</td>
<td>vli</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vyā</td>
<td>ṣī (= ṣā)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣyā</td>
<td>1 kshi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 rā</td>
<td>2 kshi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 rā</td>
<td>1 si</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ghrā</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trā</td>
<td>ḍ ṭ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 drā</td>
<td>1 ḍ ṭ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 drā</td>
<td>2 ḍ ṭ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>daridrā</td>
<td>3 ḍ ṭ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prā</td>
<td>ḍ ṭ (= 1 ḍ ṭ)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṇrā</td>
<td>ḍ ṭh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lā</td>
<td>ḍ ṭh (= ḍ ṭh)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>glā</td>
<td>nī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mlā</td>
<td>1 pī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 vā</td>
<td>2 pī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 vā</td>
<td>3 pī</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Note: The forms are in Sanskrit, and the letters represent the final letter of each form. The numbers (1, 2, 3) indicate the position of the form in the list.*
Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language.

iṣg  mlich  bhañj  nfd
riṣg  yueh  svanaj (= svaj)  pīd
liṣg  mlech (= mlīch)  sañj (= saj)  kṛd
mārg*  ānch  ċiñj  vṛd
valg  vāñch  tuñj (= tuj)  hīd
dagh  uñch  ubj  vṛud
sagh  arch  1 arj  lūd
ghāgh  march  2 arj  kṛd (= kūl)
stīgh
mīgh (= mīh)  hurch  jarj (?)  red
dugh (= duh)  aj  tarj  mred
megh (= mīh)  pāj  bharj (= bhrāj)  hēd (= hīd)
laṅgh  bhaj  marj  khañd*
argh*  yaj  varj  ganda*
ac  tyaj  1 sarj  dañd*
khac  1 raj  2 sarj  manda*
pac  2 raj  sphañj  pinda*
vyaç  bhuraj  uñjh  āñd
rāc  dhrañj  jahījh  marn
vāc  vrāj  at  gān*
vyaç (= vyaç)  vaj  ghañ  pān
sac  svaj  cat  pāñ
yāc  bhishaj  jhañ  bhan
riç  sañj  tañ  mān
1 vic  sabhāj*
2 vic (= vyaç)  1 raj  pāt  vran
sic  2 raj  sphañ  kvan
uc  bhrāj  bhañ  khañ (= khañ)
kuc  tij  rañ  kūn
muc  njj  kuj (= kuññ)  barn
ruc  vij  ghuñ  varñ*
mruc  ĵj  sphaññ  ghumñ
mluc  vij  juj (?)  cūrn*
çuç  tuñj  kaññ  at
sīc  1 bhuj  ghaññ  cāt
loc  2 bhuj  kuññ  1 pāt
añc (= ac)  yuj  vanñ  2 pāt*
cañc  ruj  visht (= vesht)  yat
tañc  čuj  cesht  vat
vañc  kuj  path  ċāt
ɟvañc  puñj  rūth  vāt*
kunç (= kuc)  ēj  1 lūth  cit
luñc  reñj  2 lūth  mṛit
arc  majj  kūnñ  ċvī
carc  bhrājñ  guñññ  ċ(terrain)
parc  lañj  lunññ  jyut
marc  saññ (= saj)  tāññ  dyut
vraçc  āññ  vṛīññ  cīnt
saçc  khaññj  kṣṣvīññ  art
prach  jaññ  tīñ  1 kart
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2 kart</th>
<th>sad</th>
<th>gurd</th>
<th>jan</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>cart</td>
<td>had</td>
<td>kūrd</td>
<td>1 tan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nut</td>
<td>khād</td>
<td>gadh</td>
<td>2 tan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vart</td>
<td>yād</td>
<td>dadh (= 1 dhā)</td>
<td>stan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>krt*</td>
<td>hrād</td>
<td>1 badh (= bandh)</td>
<td>dan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kath*</td>
<td>hūd</td>
<td>2 badh (= vadh)</td>
<td>dhan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣnath</td>
<td>svād (= svad)</td>
<td>3 badh</td>
<td>pān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>path*</td>
<td>kūd</td>
<td>vyadh</td>
<td>bhan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>math</td>
<td>skhīd (= khīd)</td>
<td>radh</td>
<td>1 man</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vyath</td>
<td>chīd</td>
<td>vadh</td>
<td>2 man (= 2 mad)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>krath</td>
<td>nīd</td>
<td>nūdh</td>
<td>1 run</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>grath</td>
<td>bhīd</td>
<td>bādh</td>
<td>2 run</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prath</td>
<td>mid</td>
<td>ṛadh</td>
<td>van</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḍrath</td>
<td>klīd</td>
<td>vrādh</td>
<td>1 dhvan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>klath</td>
<td>vid (1, 2)</td>
<td>sādh</td>
<td>2 dhvan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plath</td>
<td>svid</td>
<td>idh</td>
<td>svan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kvath</td>
<td>ud</td>
<td>sridh</td>
<td>kshan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nāth (= nādh)</td>
<td>kud</td>
<td>1 vidh</td>
<td>san</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mith</td>
<td>cud</td>
<td>2 vidh</td>
<td>han</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vith</td>
<td>tud</td>
<td>3 vidh (= vyadh)</td>
<td>dān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kuth</td>
<td>nūd</td>
<td>1 sidh</td>
<td>ān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>puth</td>
<td>mud</td>
<td>2 sidh</td>
<td>in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pruth</td>
<td>rud</td>
<td>dudh</td>
<td>ven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>veth (= vith)</td>
<td>trud</td>
<td>budh</td>
<td>sten*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>proth (= pruth)</td>
<td>kshūd</td>
<td>yūdh</td>
<td>jap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>katth</td>
<td>sūd</td>
<td>1 rudh</td>
<td>tap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>manth (= math)</td>
<td>ned</td>
<td>2 rudh</td>
<td>rap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>granth (= grath)</td>
<td>skand</td>
<td>krūdh</td>
<td>krap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arth*</td>
<td>cand (?)</td>
<td>ṇudh</td>
<td>trap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ad</td>
<td>ġcand</td>
<td>kshudh</td>
<td>lap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kad</td>
<td>chand (= 2 chad)</td>
<td>edh</td>
<td>1 vap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>skad (= skand)</td>
<td>tand</td>
<td>bandh</td>
<td>2 vap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>khad</td>
<td>nand</td>
<td>randh (= radh)</td>
<td>ġap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gad</td>
<td>spand</td>
<td>indh (= idh)</td>
<td>1 kshap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 chad</td>
<td>bhand</td>
<td>vindh (= 2 vidh)</td>
<td>2 kshap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 chad</td>
<td>mand (= mad)</td>
<td>ġundh (= ġudh)</td>
<td>1 sap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dad (= 1 dā)</td>
<td>syand (= syad)</td>
<td>ardh</td>
<td>2 sap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nad</td>
<td>krand</td>
<td>gardh</td>
<td>svap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pad</td>
<td>vand</td>
<td>spar dh</td>
<td>āp</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 mad</td>
<td>nind (= nīd)</td>
<td>mardh</td>
<td>lip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 mad</td>
<td>mind</td>
<td>1 vardh</td>
<td>rip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>syad</td>
<td>vind (= vid, 1)</td>
<td>2 vardh</td>
<td>vip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rad</td>
<td>und (= ud)</td>
<td>1 ġardh</td>
<td>kshap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mrad</td>
<td>ġabd*</td>
<td>2 ġardh</td>
<td>dīp</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vrad</td>
<td>pībd</td>
<td>gūrdh</td>
<td>kup</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vad</td>
<td>ard</td>
<td>spūrdh</td>
<td>gup*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>svad</td>
<td>chard</td>
<td>an</td>
<td>cup</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 čad</td>
<td>tard</td>
<td>kan</td>
<td>yup</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 čad</td>
<td>nard</td>
<td>khan</td>
<td>rup</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kshad</td>
<td>mard</td>
<td>can</td>
<td>lup</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mlup</td>
<td>kam</td>
<td>ghar</td>
<td>tûr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kshup</td>
<td>gam</td>
<td>car</td>
<td>pûr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhûp*</td>
<td>cam</td>
<td>1 jar</td>
<td>çûr (= 1 çar)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rûp*</td>
<td>çcam</td>
<td>2 jar</td>
<td>sûr*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vep (= vip)</td>
<td>jam</td>
<td>3 jar</td>
<td>mantr*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kamp</td>
<td>ðam</td>
<td>tar</td>
<td>yantr*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tarp</td>
<td>tam</td>
<td>star</td>
<td>miₙr*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>darb</td>
<td>dam</td>
<td>1 dar</td>
<td>1 kal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sarb</td>
<td>dhamb</td>
<td>2 dar</td>
<td>2 kal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kalp</td>
<td>nam</td>
<td>dhar</td>
<td>skhal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jalp</td>
<td>yam</td>
<td>1 par</td>
<td>gal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gushp</td>
<td>ram</td>
<td>2 par</td>
<td>cal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>raph</td>
<td>kram</td>
<td>3 par</td>
<td>dal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>riph</td>
<td>dram</td>
<td>spär</td>
<td>1 phal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gu(m)ph</td>
<td>bhram</td>
<td>phar</td>
<td>2 phal*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gulph</td>
<td>çram</td>
<td>spðar</td>
<td>sphal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>damb</td>
<td>lam</td>
<td>bhar</td>
<td>bal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ramb</td>
<td>klam</td>
<td>1 mar</td>
<td>bhal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lamb</td>
<td>vam</td>
<td>2 mar</td>
<td>lal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cumb</td>
<td>1 çam</td>
<td>smar</td>
<td>val</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>skabh</td>
<td>2 çam</td>
<td>1 var</td>
<td>jval</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jabh</td>
<td>3 çam</td>
<td>2 var</td>
<td>hval</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stabh</td>
<td>4 çam</td>
<td>jvar</td>
<td>çal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dabh</td>
<td>ksham</td>
<td>tvar</td>
<td>kshal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nabh</td>
<td>bhâm</td>
<td>dhvar</td>
<td>il</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yabh</td>
<td>tim</td>
<td>1 svar</td>
<td>mil</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rabh</td>
<td>stim</td>
<td>2 svar</td>
<td>mil</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>grabb</td>
<td>ay (= i)</td>
<td>hvar</td>
<td>çïl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>labh</td>
<td>day</td>
<td>1 çar</td>
<td>tul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ribh</td>
<td>nay (= ni)</td>
<td>2 çar</td>
<td>dul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ubh</td>
<td>vyay*</td>
<td>3 çar (= çri)</td>
<td>spðuí</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stubh</td>
<td>cãy (= 4 ci)</td>
<td>kshar</td>
<td>lûl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lubh</td>
<td>tãy</td>
<td>sar</td>
<td>kût l</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>çubh</td>
<td>dáy (= 1 dã)</td>
<td>tsar</td>
<td>palpûl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kshubh</td>
<td>spãy</td>
<td>1 bar</td>
<td>mût*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subh</td>
<td>pûy (= 2 pf)</td>
<td>2 har</td>
<td>khel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rebh (= ribh)</td>
<td>pûy (= 3 pf)</td>
<td>ãr</td>
<td>kshvel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>skambh (= skabh)</td>
<td>knûy</td>
<td>kir (= 3 kar)</td>
<td>hel (= hûd)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jambh (= jabh)</td>
<td>pûy</td>
<td>fr</td>
<td>phull*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stambh (= stabh)</td>
<td>hary</td>
<td>tîr*</td>
<td>av</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dambh (= dabh)</td>
<td>fr ây</td>
<td>vîr*</td>
<td>dhav</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 rambh (= rabh)</td>
<td>ar</td>
<td>gur</td>
<td>plav (= plû)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 rambh</td>
<td>1 kar</td>
<td>cur</td>
<td>tâv (?)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jrambh</td>
<td>2 kar</td>
<td>chur</td>
<td>dhar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>çrambh</td>
<td>3 kar</td>
<td>jur</td>
<td>shîv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>çumbh (= cubb)</td>
<td>skar (= 1 kar)</td>
<td>tur</td>
<td>div</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sumbh (= subh)</td>
<td>1 gar</td>
<td>spûr</td>
<td>srîv (= srîv)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>darbh</td>
<td>2 gar</td>
<td>bhur</td>
<td>sîv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>galbh</td>
<td>3 gar</td>
<td>gûr (= gur)</td>
<td>jîv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am</td>
<td>jàgar</td>
<td>jûr (= jur)</td>
<td>dîv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mfv</td>
<td>kash</td>
<td>1 raksh</td>
<td>2 las</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sřfv</td>
<td>bhash</td>
<td>2 raksh</td>
<td>1 vas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sev</td>
<td>laash</td>
<td>kraksh</td>
<td>2 vas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>raŋv</td>
<td>bhāsh</td>
<td>praksh</td>
<td>3 vas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhanv</td>
<td>ḍish (1-6)</td>
<td>mraksh</td>
<td>4 vas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inv (= in)</td>
<td>pish</td>
<td>laksh*</td>
<td>5 vas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jinw</td>
<td>mish</td>
<td>1 vaksh (= ukh)</td>
<td>khvās (= dhvāns)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhinw (= dhi)</td>
<td>rish</td>
<td>2 vaksh</td>
<td>ḡvās</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pinw</td>
<td>grish</td>
<td>tvaksh</td>
<td>ḡs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>carv</td>
<td>ġlish</td>
<td>niksh</td>
<td>sās</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bharv</td>
<td>viśh</td>
<td>bhiksh</td>
<td>ḡas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>turv</td>
<td>tvish</td>
<td>1 miksh</td>
<td>ḍs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhuruv (= dhūrv)</td>
<td>dvish</td>
<td>2 miksh (= myaksh)kās</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jūrν</td>
<td>1 qish</td>
<td>fḵsh</td>
<td>cākās</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhūrν</td>
<td>2 qish (= 1 qās)</td>
<td>dḵsh</td>
<td>dās</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ač (1, 2)</td>
<td>ish</td>
<td>ḏḵish</td>
<td>bhās</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dač</td>
<td>uṣh</td>
<td>1 uḵsh</td>
<td>rās</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| 1 nač | kush | 2 uḵsh | vās*
<p>| 2 nač | 1 gḥush | rōḵsh* | ḍās (= ḡās) |
| 1 pač (= spač) | 2 gḥush | 1 moksh | hās |
| 2 pač | jush | 2 moksh* | pis |
| spač | tush | kāḵsh | aṁs* |
| bhrāq | dush | bhuḵsh | ṭāṁs |
| vaq | push | sārksh | dāns (?) |
| kāq | mush | 1 ares | sraṁs |
| daq | rush | 2 ares | dhvāns |
| rāq (= ṭās) | prush | karsh (1, 2) | ḡās |
| vāq | grush | gharsh | nīṁs |
| diq | plush | tarsh | hīṁs* |
| piq | 1 gush | dharsh | kuts* |
| riq | 2 gush | marsh | bharts |
| liq | dḥūsh (= dhṛsh) | varsh | 1 ah |
| kliq | bhūsh | harsh | 2 ah |
| viq | rūsh | 1 as | dāh |
| t iq | eṣh | 2 as | nah |
| 1 tuq | yesh | kās | bah (= bāḥ) |
| 2 tuq | bheresh | ghas | maḥ |
| 1 ruq (= ruc) | hresh | jas | raḥ |
| 2 ruq (= rus) | hesh | das | graḥ (= graḥh) |
| kruq | piṅsh (= pish) | nas | glāh |
| daṅq (= dač) | aksh | bhas | vah |
| bhrāṅq | caksh | yas | saḥ |
| piṅq (= piq) | 1 jaksh | bhyas | gūḥ |
| rapt | 2 jaksh | 1 ras | vāḥ |
| arq (?) | taksh | 2 ras* | diḥ |
| karq | daksh | grās | sniḥ |
| darq | naksh | trās | mīḥ |
| sparq | bhaksh | sraṁ (= sraṁs) | rīḥ |
| bharq (= bhrāṅq) | yaksh | hraṁ | liḥ |
| marc | myaksh | 1 las | th |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>guh</th>
<th>2 úh</th>
<th>raúh</th>
<th>sparh</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>duh</td>
<td>jeh</td>
<td>vaúh (= báh)</td>
<td>1 barh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>muh</td>
<td>aúh (= ah)</td>
<td>arh</td>
<td>2 barh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ruh</td>
<td>jaúh</td>
<td>garh</td>
<td>3 barh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>druh</td>
<td>báh</td>
<td>tarh</td>
<td>varh (= barh)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 úh</td>
<td>máh</td>
<td>darh</td>
<td>valh</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Corrigenda:—Add to the note, p. 7, etc., 2 rakh (A.V. alone), std.—p. 3, line 23 from top, read 880 for 850.—p. 28, read dhauk for dhauk.—p. 35, read bhishaj for bhisej.
ARTICLE II.

ON THE

ACCENTUATION OF THE VOCATIVE CASE

IN THE RIG AND ATHARVA-VEDAS.

By WILLABE HASKELL, Ph.D., OF NEW HAVEN.

Presented to the Society October 25th, 1877.

This paper gives the results of an inquiry into the laws of accentuation of the Sanskrit vocative, as illustrated by the actual practice of the Rig and Atharva-Vedas. All the material of the Rig-Veda has been examined and excerpted, and all that of the Atharvan, but with exclusion of such vocatives as are found also in corresponding passages of the Rik; from such passages only those cases are taken in which the Atharvan has a different reading from our copies of the Rik.

The examination was intended to be exhaustive; but it would be too much to hope that no examples of the vocative have been overlooked or misapprehended. The writer is indebted to Professor Whitney for the means of comparing the printed text of the Atharva-Veda with the readings of the manuscripts, and for many valuable suggestions received during the course of the work.

The general and well-known rule is that the vocative, when accented, has the tone on the first syllable; but that it is accented only at the beginning of a sentence, or, in verse, of a pāda—since each pāda is accented as if it were a separate sentence. Cases of the vocative accented at the beginning of a sentence, except after a pause, do not easily occur in prose: examples from the prose of the Atharva-Veda are the following:

ärja ā́ śvádhá śá sáńraśáśrśvatá śá śí śí, viii.10.11.
vrá́tya kuśá 'váśává várya'vádám etc. etc., xv.11.2.
indra ji'á sańrya ji'á devá ji'ívata, xix.70.1.

VOL. XI.
Of vocatives standing at the head of the sentence or páda, and therefore accented, the Rig-Veda appears to have 1118 cases, and the Atharvan 273, making 1386 in all.

Under this head is to be noted the special case that when, by resolution of a y or v, the written initial syllable of a vocative is made two, the first of the two alone has the accent, and the syllable, as written, is therefore necessarily circumflexed. The Rig-Veda has but one example of this kind, viz.: átus (dyaus), at vi.51.5a; but the Atharvan has several, viz.: átus (dyaus)* at vi.4.3c; jáke (jya'ke) at i.2.2a; and viághra (vyá'ghra)† at iv.3.3b; and vyálá (v.22.6a) is properly of the same character, although the pada-text treats it as a compound, ví-ála. These cases do not differ in principle from the actual compound ví-anága, (súnnitá-text vyáága), in the verse last cited. The claim that there is anything special and archaic in the Rig-Veda example has been refuted by Prof. Whitney in the Proceedings of this Society for May, 1876, p. xx.

The only exception in the Rig-Veda to the general rule for the accent of initial vocatives is the following passage, where such a vocative, standing between two unaccented vocatives, is itself unaccented; (r̥ána mitrdvarunáv) r̥iráváváv r̥áagá, i.2.8b. It must unquestionably be regarded as an error of the tradition.

In the following passages, initial vocatives left unaccented in the MSS. of the Atharvan have been accentuated in the printed text: párjanya, iv.15.4b; pá'pman, vi.28.1d; ápánárya, vii.65.1b; ánne, xi.1.3b. At v.3.7a, tisrá has been changed to tisrá; at v.18.4c, áher has been amended to áhe; and at xviii.4.6a, áhrváv to áhrvév.

Of single vocatives not standing at the beginning of the sentence or páda, and therefore unaccented, the Rig-Veda has 4960 examples, and the Atharvan 1042, making a total of 6002.

In a single passage of the Rig-Veda, r̥á gird máruto dévy ádite: sádate pástye mahi, vii.27.5, where a succession of accented vocatives is broken by the single locative sádate, the interior vocative pástye is accented, contrary to the rule.

In RV. iv.10.8b, the pada-reading ánne is doubtless to be regarded as an error.

In several instances, where all or most of the manuscripts of the Atharvam wrongly accented an interior vocative (either as vocative or as some other case), the printed text has omitted the accent. The following have been noted: suddáváh, ii.14.5d, 6d (MSS. suddáváh); cítáni, iii.2.4b (for cítáni); átharvan, v.11.3c (for átharvan); átharvána, vi.1.1b (for átharvána); ápiná, vi.50.1a (for ápiná); anítráh, vi.67.2a (for anítráh); kásé, vi.105.1–3e (for kásé); ápáh, vii.89.3a (for ápáh); ája,

* For the printed text, the wrong accent, dyaus, was adopted, because it was given by two of the MSS. first used, and the reason of the circumflex was not then understood. But the other MSS., including all those since compared, are unanimous in reading dyaus.

† All the MSS. have vyá'ghra, without accent; which inadmissible reading should have been amended to vyá'ghra, instead of vyá'ghra.
Vocative-Accent in the Veda.

ix.5.15a (for अ) ; सूर्या, xiii.2.7a (for सूर्या); सूर्ये, xiv.1.16a (for सूर्ये); अचिन्द, xiv.1.35c (for अचिन्द); अग्ने, xiv.2.1d (for अग्ने); पितुराह, xviii.3.19a (for पितुराह); उपाधिः, xviii.4.8b (for उपाधिः); ज्वािदेहा, xviii.4.11c (for ज्वािदेहा); पितुराह, xviii.4.64d (for पितुराह); and in like manner द्वो might well have been corrected to द्वो in xii.6.23d, ज्वािदेहा to ज्वािदेहा in xviii.4.1a, and विचित्त्रता to विचित्त्रता in xviii.3.63c.

On the other hand, in viii.7.13b, the manuscript-reading ओषधिः, as if vocative, has been corrected to ओषधिः.

When two or more interior vocatives occur in the same पदा, but not in immediate succession, all are left unaccented, according to the general rule; e. g., त्वान्नो अग्ने तावा देव द्वृष्ण्विर, RV. i.31.12a; यद्ये मन्यो विज्ञान वास्या पदाद-तेत्रम्, manyo विज्ञान्, RV. x.83.1a. Of this sort the Rig-Veda has 108 vocatives, in 51 पदास, as follows: i.31.12a, 17a; 36.6a, 9c; 57.4a; 73.10a; 101.9a; 102.3c; 122.11b; 124.10a; 187.5b; i.1.11a; 2.9a; 22.4a; iv.2.20a; 5.6a; 34.5a; 37.1a; v.2.11c; 4.6d; 8.6a; 33.3a; 47.7a; 54.4a; vi.8.5c; 13.4c; 17.1c; 50.3b; 62.7d; vii.25.1a; 27.2a; 30.1a, 4a; 68.1a; 74.4c; 90.2b; 92.1a; viii.4.5c; 8.5d; 19.35a; 23.28c; 31.16b; 46.9c, 11c; 50.7c; 80.10b; x.4.4a; 15.12a; 45.9b; 83.1c; 142.3b. The Atharva-Veda has 20 such examples, in 10 पदास: viz., i.17.2a; ii.12.3a; iv.4.6a; v.1.9b; 20.3a, 3b; vi.11.4c; ix.2.3a, 4a; xii.1.14c.

When two or three interior vocatives occur in immediate succession, whether independent invocations or combinations of a vocative with a qualifying word, all are left unaccented. The Rig-Veda has 764 such vocatives, in 337 पदास, and the Atharvan about 92 vocatives, in 46 पदास—the number in the latter varying a little according as we follow the printed text or one or another of the various manuscripts. The cases are too frequent and their treatment too regular to require detailed references here. Examples are: of two successive interior vocatives, सब्दा इंद्रा गिर्वनाह, RV. i.5.7b: of three such vocatives, त्वा अचिन्द भ्रायांस्त दपानि, i.109.4c. In the following examples, one of the vocatives has a genitive connected with it: सिनो सहसर ज्वािदेहा, RV. iii.25.5b: सहसर सिनो अगिराह, viii.60.2a; इंद्रा ब्रह्मानाह पाते, x.16.4a: and, in one case, a genitive with an adjective; राज्या महा राष्णा गोप, vii.64.2a. In the following passages, each of several successive interior vocatives is accented, contrary to the rule: ग्रुषो व जार्न निर्मा देवह, i.29.1c; रष्या मार्गो श्रंद्व दार्शन, vii.27.5c; आ मार्गो आक्रो दश्त, viii.27.8a; आ मार्गो आक्रो, viii.83.7c; यद्यमे देवम श्रंद्व मार्गो इंद्रा देवह, x.64.12a; (कुर्वते प्रमु भार्ष्या बाध्रा) द में ग्रुषो इशरा द्वाह, AV. v.13.5b. In two passages, vocatives are accented after the interjection हये; thus हये नारो मार्गो निलांत नाह, RV. v.57.8a; हये जये माणस तीथाय घोरे, x.95.1a; in a third, a vocative remains without accent after the same interjection: हये देवह, i.29.4a.

* By a noteworthy inconsistency, in the following पदा, interior वरुणा निर्मा, having the same construction with the interior vocatives here accented, are left unaccented.
No instance has been noted of more than three successive unaccented vocatives. In a single anomalous passage, where four interior vocatives occur in succession in the same pāda, only the first is left unaccented: tāmadā agne vāruna mitra āryaman, vii.59.1c.

When an initial vocative is followed by another vocative in the same pāda, but not immediately succeeding it, usually the first alone is accent ed, in accordance with the general rule. The Rig-Veda has 156 such vocatives, in the 76 pādas here cited: i.2.1a; 3.4a; 5.8c, 5.10a; 57.3b; 80.7a; 92.14a; 110.8c; 113.7d; 123.3b; 185.7d; dyāvā rākshatam prthivi no abhined; 185.2-8d; ii.1.15b; 2.6d; 14.8a; iii.11.2b; 15.4d; 20.3a; 21.3b; 24.3a; 32.1a; 37.8c; 53.2d; 58.7a; 61.1a: iv.1.18d; 4.12d; 41.1a, 4a, 5a, 11b: v.21.1c; 36.5d; 40.1-3c: vi.8.6d; 15.14a (agnē yād adyā viṣṇu adhvarasya hotah), 16a; 16.3c; 50.10b; 60.3b; 65.5b; 69.6b: vii.5.8b; 36.4b; 75.2d: viii.19.9b; 20.1b; 23.11a; 24.7c; 38.4-6b; 47.6c; 66.11b: ix.6.3c; 79.3d; 94.5d; 108.9b (ahams pate didhiḥ deva devayih): x.7.2d; 12.4b, 8d; 30.14b; 55.4c; 80.7c; 97.4a; 100.1a; 112.10b. In a few cases (i.123.3b: v.40.1-3c: vii.24.7c), the initial vocative is a double one, composed of a noun and qualifying word. The Atharvan has a single example of this kind, containing two vocatives, at v.27.12a.

In a very few cases, an interior vocative, or more than one, coördinate with an initial accented vocative from which it is separated by intervening words, is itself accented. The following have been noted: mitra yātra vāruna gātām ārathah, i.151.6b; (vṛśakapadyey eva) sāputra ādān sāsnuhe, x.68.13b; āsīt na prthuḥ bhūthe gābhīre, x.178.2c.

A more anomalous case is: (agnā indra vāruna mitra dēvaḥ) gārhah prā yanti ma ruto tī vishno, v.48.2b, where the adjective ma ruto, qualifying gārhaḥ, is accented, while vishno remains regularly without accent. In (imām me gane yamuno sarvasvai) gūtādi śtōmai saccatā pūrshny ă, x.75.5b, we are probably to read pūrshnyā (instrumental) instead of pūrshny ă, as the corresponding cases in the other half of the verse indicate. In (gundām andhāya bhāram ahwayat sa) vrkar ucvina vrshanā nārē tī, i.117.18b, the accentuation indicates that nārē alone is the cry of the she-wolf, and that ucvina vrshanā are the utterance of the poet; if all the three vocatives belong to the former, we can hardly avoid amending the reading to ucvina vrshanā nārē tī.

When the first of several successive vocatives is initial, there is some diversity of usage. If they signify different subjects, we might fairly expect all to be alike accented, since each is an independent invocation. In the majority of cases in the Rig-Veda, viz., 18, they are so; but there are 8 cases in which only the first has the accent. In the Atharvan, of the 5 sets of successive vocatives belonging under this head, all but one are accented as independent.
The examples of successive vocatives signifying different subjects (including independent repetitions of the same vocative), where all are accented, are the following: pitāhaṃ vishnuḥ āyāvān, RV. i.90.5b; (dyau śprthiśī . . . .) pitā maṭar, i.185.11b; bhadrātī 'le śārvasviti, i.186.8a; ādṛṣṭā vīpayadeśṭāḥ, i.191.5c,8c; ādite mitra vāruna, ii.27.14a; (vaijī rōhukshana) indra nāśatya, iv.37.5b; āgna ādite vāruna mitra dēvāḥ, v.46.2a; vāruna mitra āryaman, v.67.1c; vii.67.4b; x.126.2b; vāruna mitra, v.67.2b; vii.67.2b; vii.47.1b; ādityā ādite vāsavaḥ sūdānucaḥ, x.66.12c; āranyān āranyāni, x.146.1a; īśvarāhaka īśvarāḥ, AV. ii.24.1a; īśvarāhaka īśvarāh, ii.24.2a; mrkā 'numroka, ii.24.3a; surpā 'numarā, ii.24.4a; ābṛyo ābṛyo, vi.16.1a; īndraṇī mitrāvārunaḥ, xiii.1.31c; vīcāṇmitra jāmadagne vīśishthaḥ bhāravadāja yātama vāmudeva, xviii.3.16a,b.

In sādāḥ pito maṭhaḥ pito, RV. i.187.2a, each vocative is a double one, composed of qualifying adjective and noun; and similarly in dēva satītaḥ sōna rājūn, AV. vi.99.3c, each of the two double vocatives is composed of a noun and its appositive. On the other hand, we find bāgā prāśetīr bāgā sātyārdahāḥ, RV. vii.41.3a, where each vocative of each pair is accented, and ādityā sōna cānāna nojpātāḥ, iv.37.4c, where each pair consists of genitive and vocative and only the first word of the four has the accent.

In the following examples, where several independent vocatives occur in succession, only the first is accented: bhūṣpatā indra nāsīhatām nāḥ, RV. iv.50.11a; dyauśprthiśī ādite trāśāthān nāḥ, iv.55.1b; vii.62.4a; dyauḥ prthiśī koṣhaḥ rāpaḥ, x.59.8d, 9c, 10c; āgne bhrātar vāsavo mṛljātā nāḥ: vīcā ādityā ādite sajāsāh, vi.51.5b, c;* vīcā ādityā manisvāhī yāti śhāhuḥ, x.63.6b; vīcā ādityā ādite manisvī, x.63.17b. In the last four cases, the first vocative is a double one, composed of noun and qualifying word. The Atharva-Veda furnishes but a single example, vīcā devā maṛtāḥ vīcāvāsūdacāḥ, vi.93.3b. In mitrāriṇā varūṇaḥ, RV. v.62.3b, the true reading is probably mitra rājāṇā varūṇa, or mitra rājāṇā varūṇa. As the text stands, it is a case under the present head.

When the vocatives consist of a noun with a qualifying adjective or an appositional noun, either before or after it, it seems natural that only the first should receive the accent; and this we find to be true in a great majority of cases: viz., in more than 90 cases out of a total of about 115 in the Rig-Veda, and in 15 out of 19 in the Atharvan.

The passages in which the vocative is accompanied by an adjective or an appositive, where only the first has the accent, are as follows: vīcā vīcā dēvāḥ, RV. i.3.7b: ii.41.13a: v.52.7a: x.63.6b; 128.4d, 5b; vīcā yujārāḥ, x.63.11a; vīcā ādityāḥ, vi.51.5c: x.63.17b; vīcā dēvāḥ, vi.52.13a, 17d: ix.5.11a: x.52.1a; pārīva.

* In this verse is to be noted a strange inconsistency, as regards the vocative accent, between the pīdas here quoted and the first, which reads dyauḥ pīdas prthiśī maṭar ādhrug.
W. Haskell,

hotar, i.28.5a; sākhe vaso, i.30.10c: iii.51.6d; viii.71.9c; sākhe vajrīn, i.30.11c,12b; pāciva indrā purukrā dyumatama, i.53.3a; (rōdast d' vađatā ganapriyo) nrśhedah śūrdh, i.64.9b; (ādīd te angirastam'd) 'gne vedhatāmā priyām, i.75.2b; rājān soma, i.91.4d; sōma rājan, vii.48.7c,8a; uṣah sūṅrte, i.123.5b; uṣho devi, i.123.5b; 124.12d: iii.61.2a: vi.64.2d,6d: vii.77.5b; uṣho mahoghi, iv.55.9a: v.79.6b,7b; uṣah sujāte, vii.76.6d; 77.6b; āgne bhrātār, i.161.1d: vi.51.5b; āgne pāvaka, v.26.1a; yāvishtha dāta . . . yāvishtha hotah, ii.6.6b,c; kiranāpiprā maruto, ii.34.3c; dēva tvaksṭah, iii.4.9b; dēva hotah, iii.7.9c; devīr dvadrāh, v.5.5a; dēva ratha, vi.47.28d; hōtač cikītah, iii.29.16b: v.2.7d; āndra svahādah, iii.41.8c; āndra deva, iii.43.5b; vīshno deva, vii.99.1d; āndra marutah, ii.51.7a; āndra bhrātār, iii.53.5b; ākāśa vīśo vīla, iii.53.19c; r'āvart rodus, iii.54.4b; bhdagā rātāk, ii.56.6d; āṁka cāmlā rāhavah, iv.34.11b; tūriyā "ditya, viii.52.7c; āprāniṣṭāyā mahagahan, vii.61.4a, 4b; vr'ishn indo, ix.40.6c; pāvamāna vrśabha, ix.80.38b; āgnisvaitāḥ pitarah, x.15.11a; pātoča janhā, x.53.4d; [s'no hinnāya harivah, viii.40.9e:] hōtar yavishtha sukra, iv.4.11d; devīḥ sākha ūrvī, x.128.5a; āndvīr dhrāstra vajrīnāh, x.110.5c; āndvīr dhrāstra vajrīnāh, viii.28.1c; mānojvanās vrśabha madacuyā, vii.22.16a; āndra pavishtha sātpate, viii.13.12a (cf. viii.88.1d); āpīndā vājīnaśār, vi.78.3a; āndrāgni uktahābhad, vi.59.10a; āndrāvaniṇā uktapau, vi.68.10a; śindhumāti kshātryā, vii.64.2b; āndrāgni vrītrahān, vii.68.3b; āndrāgni vrītrahān svajrā, vii.69.4c; vrītrāḥ rāhrūkshanah, vii.7.12b; d'ityādāh samahāsat, vii.18.1c; r'she vaiyapā, vii.23.24c; vr'ishn r'ipin, viii.33.12b; āndra pavishtha, viii.46.19b; āndrāgni śaṃlāmkhaya, ix.35.2a; āpo revatih, x.30.8d, 12a; mānayo vajrīn, x.83.6c. In the following passages, one of the vocatives is connected with a genitive: āgne śānā sahasah, vi.13.55; āndra vājīnām pate, vi.46.10b; āndrāvishāt madapati madadān, vi.69.3a; sahāsah sānāv dhuṭa, vii.19.2c; āndra sthātār harinām, vii.24.17a; mānaro deva yajnīṣyāh, vii.30.2c; d'ṇo napāt sahasāvan, x.118.8a.

The Atharva-Veda presents under this head the following examples which in only one of the following vocatives has the accent: dāvir manushyeshav, i.19.2c; ṣīvī devdāsah, i.12.5b; āgne vaiśvānara, ii.16.4a; pārāvadhe devi subhage urāci, iv.26.2b; āgne pratādshād, i.14.8a; dēva tvaksṭah, v.27.10b: vi.3.3d; āgne yavishtha, v.29.4d; dēva savaśāna, vii.78.3a; āgne deva maruto vīṣvaveduḥah, vi.93.3b; āgne devāh, vi.115.14; mād'vī dhrāstra vidathasya sātpate, vii.73.4c; āgne dātuvaṁ, vii.97.7b; sōma rājan, x.1.29a; bh'ā'me mādhah, xii.1.63d. In ṣāhnam napāt sindhavah, vi.3.1c, and sōmaṣṭā ṣāḥno yudhānām pate, vii.81.3a, we have examples of the vocative modified by a genitive.

In the following passages, when a noun is immediately preceded or followed by one or more adjectives or appositives, all are accented: āpīndā pūrulāhassah (nārd . . . .), RV. i.3.2a; devāsaḥ pūrshātayah, i.23.8b: ii.41.15b; pū'śhan vishnav evaśvah, i.90.5b; ( . . .) sudānavah māruto dhiḥbāhānāvah, i.172.1a; dhṛ'cā-
Vocative-Accent in the Veda.

vratā dāditya śekardā, ii.29.1a; śīvādhi pṛthuṣūkaye, ii.32.6a; (āmitame pādātame) dēvitame sārasvati, ii.41.16b; dyaśik pūtare pṛthivi mātaḥ, vi.51.5a; brāhmandaḥ pūtare sōmyaḥ, vi.75.10a; cārvane brāhmanasūcīte, vi.75.16b; bhāga prānetar bhāga sātyardāhah, vii.41.3a; (vah svatavaśah) kāvayaḥ sāryatavacaḥ, vii.59.11b; hōtar vārenyakratō (āgne), viii.43.12b; ādri pāvishtha sātāte, viii.66.1d (cf. śindra pāvishtha satāte, viii.13.12a, already cited); (dādityā rūdrā) vāsaḥ sūđānavaḥ, x.66.12a; vrshākapāyī rēvati (sūtpatra dā u sūmuse), x.86.13a; nārā dānisīshhau, x.143.3a; drāyī kāne vikāte, x.155.1a; rūdrā hīranyakvarnti, v.75.3c; śindraśyeshthā mārudgandā, i.23.8a: ii.41.15a. In vāsdhāti dēvitār janāmdānā, i.181.1d, one of the vocatives is limited by a genitive. In the Atharvana we find three examples belonging to this class: (pravato napānā mārurah sāryatavacasāh, i.26.3b; rūdrā jālāndheshajnā nīśānīkhaṇḍa kārmakrtā, i.27.6a,b; tākman yāda vi gada (vyānā bhārī yādaya), v.22.6a.

When the vocatives are separate, coordinate epithets of the same subject, the case is more doubtful, and the precise limits of the class also, as distinguished from the preceding one, are by no means easy to draw; there may be, as between epithets which seem to be sensibly coordinate, a subjective subordination or interdependence which would assimilate them to either of the following classes. In about two-thirds (35) of the passages in the Rig-Veda estimated as probably belonging to this class, the apprehension of independent value prevails. In the Atharvan, all the 16 examples of the class are accepted as independent. The examples of coordinate epithets of the same subject where each is alike accentured are the following: (āpvinā . . .) dōvastapānā sūbhās pātī (pūrūshhājā), i.3.1b; brāhmbhāno yāvishthya, i.36.16b; jāvavedo vicarshane, i.78.1b: vi.18.20b, 30b: viii.43.2b; bājishtha trādār āvīcāh, i.129.10d; (āgne . . .) māndrā svādāhāva rājādā sūkṛato, i.144.7b; (sā . . .) vāsūpatē vāsūdpān, i.6.4b; (varuna . . .) sūmrdā rātaḥ, i.28.6b; āmitame nādātame (dēvītame sārasvati), ii.41.16b; (āgne . . .) sūpcandra dēsma vīcēpate hāvyaḍā, v.8.6c; (mārurō . . .) tūvīmahādo āmṛtā rājāndā: sātyapratah kāvoyo yāvdāno (brāhgdīrāyaḥ), v.57.8b,c; (vīrādē . . .) māryādō bhādṛajaṇayāh, v.61.4b; sūjāte āravānūrte, v.79.1–10e; sāhāramosha tavianāmā sātāte, vi.46.3c; (āgne . . .) vāsīśthi pūkra dīvah pāvaka, vii.1.8b; ājpīrānī rśīvah ādōvah, vii.2.28c; (pubhas pātī) dārād hīranyakvarnti, vii.5.11b; cf. 8.1c; (āpvinā) pūrupalandrā nāśatāy, viii.3.32e; dājayaṇā nāśatāy, viii.5.35c; gēcēgō pācipcītānā, viii.17.12a; ānapate āpata āvārdpate, viii.21.3b; (maheṇate) śāharaote cādāmangha, viii.34.7b; cātanūte ātakratā, viii.46.3b; sānītāh śūṣanīta ṛgrā cītra cātāishthu sānṛta, viii.46.20a,b; (pātakratā) prācāmānyā bhāsīsana, viii.61.9d; tūvīgushma tūvīkrate pātēvō vīcēpate mate, viii.68.2a,b; ārjo napād bhādrapeṣe, viii.71.3b; ārjo napād āpamisheṭe, ii.6.2b; (āgne . . .) māndrā sūjāta sūkratō māra dāmā 'ītīhe, viii.74.7c,d; (subāho svāṅghre)
pr'thunāo pr'ṭuvādhaṅhe, x.86.8b; ृत्तंपर्ने सञ्हाहां देवाजाते सङ्हवति, x.145.2a,b; (mohguvaṇa . . . ) धृ'तिर विद्वातह, x.167.3d. In āḍārā hiranyarvaṇaṃ sūbhas pāti, viii.87.5c, we have an irregular combination of two accented vocatives with an unaccented one, the latter being limited by a genitive. Cf. viii.5.11b, 8.1c, already cited.

The Atharvan furnishes the following examples of coordinate epithets, all of which are accented: jātavedas tāṁvaṇa (āgna, i.7.2b; (osudhe) rā'ne kr'she śiknu ca, i.23.b; indropatrī sōnapaṭre, iii.10.13a; hiranyavarne sā'bhyanvaṁ vāpahtane, v.5.6a,b; hiranyavarne sābhage sūbhaṁ lomaḍaṇaṇaśike, v.5.7a.b; jātavedas tāṁvaṇa, v.8.2f; r'tiṣāva r'tāvari, v.15.1-11c; tāžman rāvaṇa vīgāda (pada-text, vi gada), v.22.6a; śindhupathiṇī śindhurājīṇīḥ, vii.24.3a; bṛ'hatpālaśe sābhage vārśhavadhā r'tāvari, vi.30.3a,b; tārdpāste vīdhaṇete, vi.50.3a; devapathi māna vādītān, vi.118.3d; vījānati prājāvati, i.x.3.13c, 14c; bhātapati pācempati, xi.2.1b; sōmāpāḥ sōmāpyānāṅah, xviii.3.64c.

In the following passages of the Rig-Veda, where several coordinate epithets occur in succession, only the first is accented: omānaḥ carshunāvānā, i.3.7a; ghr'tāhavanā dīvān, i.12.5a; (agni . . . ) hōtaḥ pāvaka, i.13.1c; (āgvaṇa . . . ) dī dyagni pucatrātā, i.15.11b; ghr'tāhavanā sāntyā, i.45.5a; (vāṃ . . . ) nā'śatyā matanavaṇa, i.46.5b; pāvishthā vajrī, i.80.1c; (indra . . . ) nāsīyā devāvaṇa, i.178.7a; pāvishtha dhrṣhno, i.84.1b; (ahā adyē'āgar gomati) dēvānavi vibhāvari, i.92.14b; (jātavedo) devā svadhāvā, iii.20.5; bhāya trātar dhishane, iii.56.6a; (dudhra khaṇāvah) pārvahātā puruvaśo suragāṇīḥ, vi.22.4d; udhavaro vira, vi.44.13a; nārā nīta, vi.03.5d; nāvaṇāra jātavedo, vii.13.2d; r'bhukshano vājāḥ, vii.48.1a; dījipate nrpate, viii.54.6a; v'rho nāpāj jātavedah, x.140.3a.

Altogether, of successive vocatives where the first is initial and accented and the rest are unaccented, the Rig-Veda has 237 cases in 114 pādās, and the Atharvan has 48 cases in 18 pādās. Where the first is initial and all are accented, the Rik has 206 cases in 86 pādās, and the Atharvan has 101 cases in 46 pādās. Where all are interior and unaccented, the Rik has 705 cases in 338 pādās; the Atharvan in 46 pādās has, according to different readings, from 92 to 94 vocatives; the printed text gives 94.

A genitive case dependent on a vocative (never separated from it by intervening words) forms as it were a single word or phrase with it, and shares its accent. Thus, for example, "O son of strength," is sī'no sāhasah or sāhasah sīno if initial, and sīno sāhasah or sāhasah sīno if interior. There are 178 such examples in the Rig-Veda, in 131 of which the genitive precedes; and 40 in the Atharvan, the genitive preceding in all but one.

The passages containing examples of the vocative modified by a genitive are the following:

Like sā'no sāhasah: RV. i.181.1d (vānahiti āpitāra jānānam, already quoted): viii.40.9c (sā'no kinnāyā harivah, see below): x.24.2c: 33.7b.
Like स्वानो सहसाय: i.48.1b,9b; 49.2d; 58.8a; 114.9b; ii.28.3c; 33.1a: iii.1.8a; 14.6a; 25.5b: iv.2.2a; 34.6a; 37.4c: v.79.2b,3b; 80.9a: vi.1.10c: 4.1b; 5.5b: 11.6c; 13.4a,5b,6a; 15.8c,19a; 18.11c: 20.1d; 21.1b; 50.9a; 69.3a: vii.1.21b,22d; 3.8c; 7.7b; 8.7b; 16.4c; 81.3a: viii.19.7b (two examples); 24.17a; 33.12d; 40.9b; 46.1c; 92.14a: x.50.6b; 127.8d. AV. xix.47.5d.

Like sāhasā sāno: i.3.1b; 44.5b (विद्वायद 'मर्त भोजनम'); 58.8d; 117.12b; 130.10b: ii.6.2b; 23.19a; 24.15a,10a; iii.24.3b; 38.5c: iv.37.4c (indraśya sāno pavaso napātah); 44.2b; 57.2a: v.4.8b; 17.5c; 63.1a: vi.54.1,2,3a: vii.8.5c (सवै ददा स्वामस्या वार्धद्वान); 17.14a; 19.25c; 26.21b; 30.2c; 84.4b: ix.31.6b; 82.4b; 108.9b: x.11.7b; 20.10b; 30.4c; 93.8a; 115.8a; 140.3a; 142.1b; 149.2b; 166.3c.

AV. i.1.2c; 13.3a: v.6.9 (cādahusko hete mānasv hete brāhmaṇo hete tápasvocca heto): vi.3.1c,3c: vii.97.8a: xvii.1.17a,18a (unaccented in MSS.); 19a: xiv.1.31c.

Like sahasā sāno: i.11.2b; 18; 15.3c,5a; 26.1b,10c; 29.2a; 30.5a,22b; 34.6d; 40.1a,2a; 42.1b; 74.5b; 79.4b: 131.4c,141.10c; 181.14d: ii.1.3c; 23.1c,5d,9a,11c; 36.2d: iii.14.4a,6a; 16.5c; 18.4a; 28.5b; 51.10b: iv.6.1a; 11.6c; 32.22b; 35.1a,8c; 47.3b; 51.10a,11a: v.3.1e,6d,9b; 4.8c; 6.5b (पाक्रसस्या pociwsas pate); 9d; 35.5d; 54.10b; 62.9b; 75.8b: vi.15.14a; 16.18b,26c,30c; 45.10b (indra vajñānām pate); 53.1a; 55.1a; 64.4d,5c; 65.6a: vii.14.2c; 55.1a; 64.2a; 77.6a; 81.5c; 97.9a: viii.5.11a; 62.1a; 8.16d; 17.13a; 19.7b; 22.4c,6c; 23.12a; 47.14b,15b; 60.2a; 84.5b; 90.5b; 92.30b; 97.6b: ix.36.6c; 83.1a; 105.5a; 105.5a: x.40.4d; 12c,13c; 85.16a; 131.4c; 155.2c; 164.1a,4a; 174.1c.

Yet in a very few cases the genitive (probably by an error of tradition) maintains its own independent accent. The following have been noted: vrshahba kshitinām, i.177.3c: vi.32.4c (in both which Grassmann would omit the accent); yadām rāṣya rath-yah, vii.66.12d: viii.83.3c; sāno hinsāaya harīvah, viii.40.9c.

Very rarely, another case than the genitive is found as adjunct of a vocative, and there are one or two instances of its recognition as such by loss of accent. Thus in vii.56.1a we read prāti te dasya vṛkṣa, with which compare dasyave vṛkṣah, vii.56.2b: and the VS. reads āgne ghrte na huta at vii.50, while the Atharvya in the corresponding passage (vi.5.1) has ghrte na. In uṣho vajena vaśini prācetyāḥ (स्त्रोमान jūnasvam), iii.61.1a, and (tāṇiścuma vānktvāt) pāśo vīvāyad mate, vii.68.2b, it is impossible to tell whether the instrumental are or are not treated as adjuncts of the vocatives. In indravānāṃ havishā vārvhdhāṃ grādāvānta nāmasv rāṭhahyā, vi.69.6b, the change of havishā to hāvishā would (in sarhvādī) alone be required in order to convert the first half-verse into a series of vocatives (compare nāmasv rāṭhahyā at v.43.14: vi.11.4); but the verse can be fairly translated as it stands.

V. o. x i. 9
The very peculiar construction is sometimes made of joining a nominative to a vocative and adding a verb in the dual; for example, \( \text{indra\, ca\, soma\, pi\, hatam\, bh\, hasate, iv.50.10a, "along with Indra, do ye two drink the soma, O Bha\, spati!" The passages in which similar forms occur are the following: }

Like \( \text{indra\, ca\, soma: i.93.5b; 164.19c (indra\, ca\, y\, cakr\, thuh\, soma\, tadhi)} \): iv.28.5b; 47.2a; 50.10a; v.51.6a; 60.7a; vi. 68.4d; 69.8c; vii.104.25b; viii.1.6c: ix.19.2b; 95.5c (\( \text{indra\, ca\, y\, ksh\, yath\, sa\, sa\, hasate, with pronoun understood: 111.3f (v\, dnas\, ca\, y\, d, bh\, d\, v\, t\, an\, a\, y\, d, with pronoun understood).} \)

Like \( \text{soma\, indra\, ca: i.2.5a,8a; 135.7a,29c,9f (iti v\, d\, so\, v\, sa\, a\, y\, dhi, ca\, } \)

\( \text{c\, yad\, g\, t\, d\, v\, a\, v\, da\, t\, a\, g\, hatam: g\, h\, um\, indra\, ca\, g\, hatam: . . . a\, p\, r\, nd\, d\, a\, ni\, y\, t\, al\, } \)

\( \text{y\, a\, h\, o\, a\, d\, h\, v\, a\, m: indra\, ca\, y\, a\, h\, o\, a\, d\, h\, v\, a\, m: i.ii.25.4a; iv.54.3a; 49.3a,b (a\, na\, indr\, bh\, hasati g\, h\, um\, indra\, ca\, ghatam: v.94.5a,b (a\, no\, mitra\, sud\, d\, bhir\, v\, r\, u\, n\, a\, ca\, s\, dh\, a\, h\, a\, d\, } \)

\( \text{7.5a,b (ko\, n\, v\, m\, mitra\, 'stuto\, v\, r\, u\, n\, a\, v\, a\, t\, a\, n\, a\, m, with v\, a\, instead of ca): vii.86.17b,c (y\, d\, ta\, n\, v\, ran\, a\, dy\, n\, mit: mitra\, ca\, s\, m\, ap\, it\, a\, e): 97.10a and 98.7a (bh\, hasate\, y\, n\, um\, indra\, ca\, v\, a\, s\, o)\).

With this construction may be compared such more isolated cases as \( \text{a\, y\, d\, v\, rh\, d\, ca\, v\, r\, u\, n\, a\, ca\, v\, a\, d\, v\, a\, m (vii.88.3a), where the pronoun a\, h\, um which in idea goes with v\, r\, u\, n\, a\, h to make the subject of v\, rh\, d\, a\, is also omitted; and m\, u\, d\, ca\, m\, e\, chad\, d\, y\, a\, h\, s\, m\, d\, v\, a\, s\, o (vii.1.6c).} \)

An example, omitted above (p. 59, below), of successive interior vocatives with accented is \( \text{v\, y\, d\, a\, te\, v\, a\, r\, u\, n\, a\, m\, 'r\, d\, '\, ry\, a\, m, vii.19.35c.} \)
ARTICLE III.

ON THE RELATION IN THE RIG-VEDA
BETWEEN THE
PALATAL AND LABIAL VOWELS (i, ï, u, ù)
AND THEIR
CORRESPONDING SEMIVOWELS (y, v).

BY A. HJALMAR EKGREN,
INSTRUCTOR IN MODERN LANGUAGES IN YALE COLLEGE (SHEFFIELD SCIENTIFIC SCHOOL).

Presented to the Society October 23d, 1878.

There is between the old Vedic dialect and the classical Sanskrit an important discrepancy as regards the treatment and occurrence before dissimilar vowels of i, u or y, v, which serves to throw some light on the history and original value of these letters. In classical Sanskrit the vowels in question (i, ï, u, ù) are never found or tolerated before a dissimilar vowel or diphthong, but only (by conversion or otherwise) their corresponding semivowels. But for the Vedic language, on the contrary, we possess metrical evidence that this euphonic combination, though graphically observed in the texts of the ancient hymns, was only partly so in reading. Semivowels artificially written, according to the usage of the later language, must often be restored, in nearly all their varied combinations, to vowels; and sometimes the very same words exhibit in different or even in the same hymns and verses a different treatment in this respect.

It might appear at first as if arbitrary usage, careless metrical construction, and corruption of the texts, had each contributed their share to this variety. That they have done so to some limited extent cannot very well be questioned; but a careful examination of the whole field shows that the diversity is in the main of organic nature, a result of actual growth rather than of lawlessness and neglect.
It is generally conceded that the Indo-European language did not at first possess the semivowels y and u, though it had the vowels i and u. The former are consequently later developments of the latter, according to the principle of a general phonetic change from the extremities of the alphabetic scheme towards its middle. We might accordingly expect to find in the older monuments of the language a transition-state quite different from that in which the classical speech was finally stereotyped. But everything in that transitional state being in flux, on an onward move, we cannot expect to see whole categories of forms or words by an equal and regular progress pass mechanically from one state into another. On the contrary, partial changes and frequent exceptions—counter-currents and eddies, so to speak, in the stream—are to be expected; and this all the more on account of the nature of the change. The vowels and semivowels in question differ so infinitesimally in articulation that they are most readily interchanged; and this fact not merely facilitated the mutation, but likewise favored, in a high degree, an occasional retention and even restoration of the more primitive vowel-sound, in the very same forms in which the later consonant-sound was mostly admitted; and vice versa. No doubt arbitrary choice on the part of the individual poet had on this very account a freer scope; but if we can only find that these discrepancies of identical words are of exceptional occurrence, and that, for the rest, general principles, unconsciously obeyed by the individual, underlie the main facts, such anomalous exceptions lose their significance.

The following statistical statements will show not only that the cases in which the same forms are differently treated, though nowise rare, are few in comparison with the cases of uniform treatment; but also that certain principles determine the whole vast residue of facts. And, indeed, these principles are to a large extent such as we might a priori expect them to be. It would seem natural that the vowels should most tenaciously preserve their identity when occurring not within a word, but at the end of one word and before another beginning with a vowel, or at the end of a stem before a vowel-suffix, since a change of the final here impairs the individuality of the word, and blends it with the following element. And, on the other hand, that they should be more readily consonantized in all combinations the original independence and significance of which were dimmed and forgotten (as in derivative, and especially in inflectional suffixes, and in radical elements), and, for euphonic reasons, wherever the vowel was placed between two other vowels, and thus occasioned a double hiatus.

Such general inferences are borne out by actual facts as found in the Rig-Veda. It should be stated, to begin with,
that the vowels \(i\) and \(u\) never, under any circumstances, occur between two other vowels in a word; this case is therefore not further to be considered at all, and is eliminated from all the following statistical statements. For the rest (i.e. when preceded by a consonant and followed by a dissimilar vowel), they are retained as \(i\) and \(u\) almost without exception in the collocation of words in sentences, there being only traces of an inchoate mutation in a few such dependent words as prepositions, etc. (and it may well be doubted whether the spoken language in this respect ever followed strictly the requirements of the written). The vowels maintain themselves likewise between the members of a compound, although here the tendency of less independent words to lose their identity and blend with others is slightly more apparent.

In combinations with a suffixal vowel, final \(i\) (\(i\)) and \(u\) (\(u\)) maintain themselves in nearly twice as many words as they are altered (especially in nouns, less so in the few verbs that come here under consideration); and in numerous instances they (especially \(i\), \(i\)) take on an additional semi-vowel of their own kind (are “split”), which bridges over the hiatus. Moreover, it is found that the mutation was favored by a preceding short syllable, while a long syllable exercised, as a rule, a conservative influence.

Among derivative and inflectional suffixes, those forming declinable stems, on the one hand, are very differently treated from those forming conjugable stems and from inflectional endings, on the other. In the former, the vowel \(i\) is prevailingly retained, while the vowel \(u\) is with few exceptions changed throughout to \(u\). But this discrepancy in the treatment of \(i\) and \(u\) in formative suffixes is not without assignable causes. Thus the vowel is, as a rule, preserved by the influence of a preceding long syllable, and by being accented; but now it so happens that these two preservative forces, while they are frequently present in words with a suffix containing an \(i\) (\(i\)), are almost entirely lacking in words with a suffix containing a \(u\) (\(u\)). In suffixes forming conjugation-stems; and also in inflectional endings (especially in those of verbs), the semivowels are found in an overwhelming majority. But even here the occurrence of some terminations containing the vowel would seem to indicate its earlier occurrence, and indications of the preserving influence of a preceding long syllable are also not lacking.

Finally, as regards the nucleus of words, the elementary part of them which remains when they are divested of their formative elements, the semivowels are found everywhere save in a few entirely sporadic cases, which may indeed point to an early formative process not entirely forgotten in the remote Vedic period.
Mainly in accordance with the principles thus laid down, the relation of the palatal and labial vowels and their corresponding semivowels will be considered, in what follows, under three heads, with their subdivisions, viz:

A. Treatment of final i, ì, u, û, before dissimilar vowels:
   I. In independent words;
   II. In compounds;
   III. In noun-stems and verb-roots.
B. Occurrence of i or y, u or v, in formative elements:
   I. In derivative suffixes;
   II. In declensional endings;
   III. In verb-inflection.
C. Occurrence of i or y, u or v in the root-element (real or apparent) of the word.

The collection of the material is based, in the main, on Grassmann's Wörterbuch zum Rig-Veda. For the statistics of noun inflection I am indebted to Professor Lanman's article on "Noun-Inflection in the Rig-Veda" (Journ. of Am. Or. Soc., vol. x.).

A. Treatment of final i, ì, u, û before dissimilar vowels.

I. In Independent Words.

An examination of a few hymns is enough to bring to light the fact that the absence of external sandhi (except graphically) is so regular that the exceedingly few exceptions which may be found must be considered as wholly sporadic—or, at the utmost, as revealing a dawning tendency to avoid the hiatus by weakening the final vowels of such subordinate words as prepositions or other particles into semivowels. In order to reach a valid conclusion in regard to the treatment of final i, ì, u, û in the text, 1294 verses (150 hymns), chosen from all the Mandalas (but especially from the 1st and 10th), were examined; and the result will show the needlessness of searching through the whole Rig-Vedic material.

In these 1294 verses the occurrence was as follows: before a dissimilar vowel, final i (ì) 285 times, and final y 1 time; final u (û) 106 times, and final v 4 times.

The exceptional occurrence of y was in prâty (i.11.8); and those of v were in anâ 3 times (i.28.23; iv.4.11; x.13.3), and tv once (Vâl.3.4). A special examination of sundry other passages in which particles in -i and -u occur before vowels showed that they were generally unchanged; only for anu a couple of additional forms anû were found. It may be worthy of notice that in compounds also, where sandhi is as a rule omitted, the prepositions in part submit to its law.
II. IN COMPOUNDS.

The treatment of final i, i, u, u of the prior member of a compound before a dissimilar vowel is in the main accordant with that of the same vowels in independent words. Below are given all the instances of such combinations that occur in the Rig-Veda:

1. i before a dissimilar vowel: akudhri- ac (?) 1. ati-eya 1 (ati- 5), inji-ti 1, abhi- (in abhi-ājana 3, abhi-ārdhaya-jovam 1; abhy- 4), annadhir-ac (?) 9, urvi-ātis 1, kaudri-ac (?) 1, kresthi-ojas 1, bhi-īgas 1, bārārīrtha 2, tīr (in tri-aniği 1, tri-ām-baka 1, tri-ārūna 2, tri-aśi 1, tri-dār 1, tri-udā 1, tri-udhān 1), dadhi- (in dadhi-āc 7, dadhi-ād 7; dadhi- 2), ni (in ni-āc 25, ni-āṇana 1, ni-āyana 2, ni-ārdha 4, ni-ākos 2, ni-ācandi 1), bhūri (bhūri-akṣaḥ 1, bhūri-āruti 1, bhūri-ojas 1, madhri-ac 3, vadhrī-ācva 5 (vadhrī-ācvar 2), vishtvadri-ac (?) 1, vi- (in vi-āden 1, vi-āyana 1, vi-ākaśa 3, vi-ācva 5, vi-āpravat 4, vi-āduci 3, vi-ātvah 4, vi-āṣṭi 29, vi-āmes 1, vi-āśi 1, vi-ādama 1, vi-āman 23, also in viṣṇu-āśi 1), hārī-ācva 24 (also in hārīcavasarala 1).

2. y before a vowel: āty- (in āty-āvi 1, āty-ārmi 1; ati- 1), ādhyaksha 4, abhy- (in abhy-ādiśeṇya 1, abhy-ārām 1, abhy-advariti 2; abhi- 1), ādhy-ārshu 1, gavy-ātis (see below) 12 (agany-ātis 1), dadhy-āc 2 (dadhi- 14), (vīt-īc 1 4).

3. u before a dissimilar vowel: ātu- (in ātu-āpas 1, ātu-ācva 2, ātu-ācva 3), uru-āyā 1, tīru-ācva 1, ādu-ādheva 5, dṛṣṭhā-ājā 2, pāru-ānaka 5, pāru-āgīs (?) 1, bandhur-ācva 1, bāhu-ojas 4, madhu (in madha-ād 1, madhu-āpās 1), vālā-āgā 3, su- (in su-āmpī 6, su-ādīga 2, su-āguṣti 3, su-āc 6, su-ācanda 1, su-ādharvā 33, su-ānka 5, su-apatiyā 16, su-āpās 16, from it su-āpas- 2, and su-āpasy- 7, su-āpaka 1, su-āprāda 1, su-āpnas 2, su-ābhāhsita 5, su-ābhāhiśiṣṭa 1, su-ābhī 2, su-ārākṣita 1, su-ārākṣa 1, su-ārtha 2, su-āvās 15, su-āṣa 17, su-ārvaya 1, su-āvici 11, su-āstra 103, su-āstigī 1, su-āstidā 3, su-āstimiti 3, su-āstidhā 1, su-ādaka 2, su-ārā 2, su-āddhā 7, su-ādaśi 1, su-ādvāj 1, su-āśudāpi 14, su-āvāsu 1, su-āṛtī 1, su-āvṛtā 1, su-ādāra 1, su-āvās 2, su-ādārā 1, su-āthā 5, su-āsma 1, su-āṣi 4; su- only in usmāti 4).

4. v before a vowel: anuratī (for anuvartī) 1, tīru-ī 17, pulu-āghā 1, su-āstā 4 (su- 328).

As will be seen from the preceding enumerations, the vowels i and u are as a rule retained unchanged in composition, final i before vowels occurring 194 times (in 17 different compounds), but final y only 29 times (in 8 different compounds); and final u before vowels occurring 359 times (in 12 different compounds), but final v only 23 times (in 4 different compounds). It is especially the prepositions ati and abhi which show a tendency to submit to the later euphonic requirements; and it seems natural that such subordinate words should first lose their independence. The other noteworthy exceptions are gadv-āti and ṛtv-ī. As for gadv-āti, it is the only form found, and occurs not less than 12 times; but the character of y is here uncertain; it seems hardly to be a final of the prior member of the compound. Pāṇini divides the compound as go-yāti, Bōhltlingk-Roth and Grassmann rather as go-ātis (with an inserted y, Gr.). And ṛtv-ī, also the only form found, and occurring 17 times, offers a striking exception to the general rule (if, indeed, the accepted derivation is the true one, as seems hardly to be questioned).

III. IN NOUN-STEMS AND VERB-ROOTS.

The treatment of final i, i, u, u of noun-stems and of verb-roots before an added inflectional ending beginning with a vowel is
somewhat different. In noun-stems these vowels are prevalingly retained, but in verb-roots they are mostly consonanitized (in verb-roots in -u, -a, indeed, always so). It should be remarked, however, that in both cases, and especially in verb-roots, the hiatus is very frequently avoided by the insertion of a semivowel between the stem or root and the ending, and in verb-roots by strengthening the vowel and converting the diphthong as usual. Below will be given a statistical résumé of the relative occurrence of vowel or semivowel before inflectional endings (for a full exposition of the treatment of nouns, see Professor Lanman’s article referred to above, p. 70).

1. Noun-stems.

a. Final i or y: in i-am 40 times (fr. 27 i-stems), y-am 1 (i-stem); i-d 108 times (intr. sing.: fr. 22 i-stems 43 times, and 35 i-stems 58 times; nom., acc., voc., dual: fr. 5 i-stems 7 times), y-d 46 times (intr. sing.: fr. 11 i-stems 13 times; dual, 6 i-stems 33 times); i-e 16 times (fr. 13 i-stems), y-e 18 times (fr. 2 i-stems); i-as 4 times (fr. 4 i-stems); y-as 37 times (fr. 17 i-stems); i-as 32 times (abl. sing.: fr. 1 i-stem once, and 2 i-stems 4 times; genit. sing.: fr. 2 i-stems 3 times, 16 i-stems 24 times), y-as 23 times (abl.: from 2 i-stems twice, and 4 i-stems 21 times). i-us 1 (näthuś), y-us 10 times (abl. once, and genit. 9 times, fr. 3 i-stems); i-as 118 times (genit. sing.: fr. 1 i-stem 3 times, and 7 i-stems 9 times; nom., voc. pl.: fr. 23 stems 12 times; acc. pl.: fr. 18 stems 34 times), y-as 86 times (genit. sing.: fr. 2 i-stems 62 times, and 3 i-stems 3 times; nom., voc. pl.: fr. 1 i-stem 20 times; acc. pl.: fr. 1 i-stem 11 times); i-dm 17 times (fr. 2 i-stems 3 times, and 8 i-stems 14 times), y-dm 16 times (fr. 3 i-stems 3 times, and 7 i-stems 13 times); y-us 2 times (pätyuṣu); i-os 66 times (fr. 5 i-stems 30 times, and 10 i-stems 26 times), y-os 11 times (fr. 1 i-stem once, and 5 i-stems 9 times).

The preceding summary shows that the vowel i or y is retained in 392 instances (308 of these from i-stems, and 84 from i-stems), and that it is altered to y in 240 instances (107 of these from i-stems and 133 from i-stems). To these should be added 30 infinitives in -dhyai (55 occurrences), 5 in -dhiai (17 occurrences), and one in -ityai, these being virtually noun-datives. The prevalence of vowel retention is decided; and if different stems alone are considered, the disproportion is still greater, i then occurring about twice as often as y. It was to be expected that the vowel-character of the finals should be prevalingly protected here by that feeling of the integrity of the word which the unaltered final in other cases than those considered kept alive. As auxiliary to it, however, are to be noticed the quantity of the final and (as in the case of the suffix -ia) the accent, and the quantity of the preceding syllable.

That the final i maintained itself more tenaciously than the final e is seen from the preceding statement. In regard to the accent, it is to be noticed that in the comparatively few instances where the final of the theme is accented before the terminational vowel (as in mandākida, sphigida, orna, manyumia, ahia, messide, erkīe, etc.) the vowel i is preserved as a rule. Generally oxytone stems shift their accent to the termination (as in pātiida fr. pīti, pṛthividda’s fr. pṛthividda, devide fr. devi, samannida fr. samannī, apitāyā fr. apiṭā, matyādā fr. maṭi, vasāyādā fr. vasāti, etc.) and then the vowel, though prevalingly retained, is not seldom changed.

A. H. Edgren,

a. i retained: (i) iantu 1; (di) di'diait 7, di'di'na 6; (dhi) di'dhiait 1, di'dhia 13; (pi) pipidnā 3; (mic) māmniat 1, (mici) māmni 1; (e) anit 1, vānti 1, vānti 3, vānti 5, vānti 1, vānti 1; (si) sia 1, siatra 1, siadhvan 1, siī 1.

ß. i changed to y: (i) iantu 20, yan 73, yant 1, yantu 1, yantu 26; (c) cikyath 1, cikyath 4; (ji) jīyath 8; (pi) pīyath 4, pīyast 1, pīyast 1, pīyath 1, pīyath 3, pīyath 1; (mi) mīyath 1; (dhi) bhīyath 2, bhīyath 4; (e) ayan 1; (si) svaī 1, svaī 1, svaī 4, svaī 2, svaī 2, svaī 1, svaī 1.

In regard to the verb-roots in -u, -ū, they all (80) connect with a following vowel either by strengthening the final, or by insertion of u, or, very rarely, by conversion of the vowel to its corresponding semivowel (as in juhuva't, juhu'a, sva'dna, etc.). The final u, u is never found retained before a following vowel.

B. OCCURRENCE OF Ī OR Y, AND U OR V, IN FORMATIVE ELEMENTS.

I. IN DERIVATIVE SUFFIXES.

Suffixes forming declinable stems, and containing either of the vowels or semivowels in question, are quite numerous; and they will be taken up below mainly in the order of their frequency. A complete statement of all simple nominal stems used alone or in composition (participles and gerundives included) is intended, and also, by the way, of compounds and derivatives from them.

The suffix -īa (-ya) is by far the most frequently used; and for reasons of convenience words with this suffix will be arranged according to their finals in two groups, one comprising those words in which the suffix is preceded by a long syllable, and the other those words in which it is preceded by a short syllable.

SUFFIX-FORM -īa.

a. Preceded by a long syllable: upārākia 1, aukia 8, sūkhi 1, āhgyia 1, gūdhi 1, apacī 1, upardhīa 1, adhīa 11, dīya 4 (-ya 1; compound: prahadādā 1), prahrādīa 1, prāhidi 1 (compounds: sāmarjādīa 1, vis rādū 1, sva'rdū 8, dūrçhū 5), bhūja 3, mārya 5, vàdhiyā 13, prahūt 3, vàdi 33 (-ya 2), dūma 1, dōpā 1, vàvarni 1, vàrhūsha 30 (derivative: vàrhūshāv 2), vàsī 8, prāttī 2, vàdī 7, vàdī 16, vàdī 17, vàdī 3, vàdī 3, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, vàdī 1, and an
Relation of \( i \) and \( u \), \( ã \) to \( y \) and \( v \) in Rig-Veda.

\[
\text{sh̥v}̥ya \text{2}, \text{dak}̥h̥y}̥a \text{4} (\text{-ya 1), vi}̥t\text{a}̥na}̥n\text{d}̥ya \text{4}, \text{ra}̥a}̥d̥ya \text{2}, \text{ma}̥d̥ya}̥y}̥a \text{1}, \text{sah}̥c}̥e}̥y}̥a \text{1}, \text{su}̥s}̥h}̥e}̥y}̥a \text{2}, \text{d}̥ya}̥r}̥a \text{12} (\text{-ya 5), va}̥r}̥̥k}̥r}̥a}̥i}̥a}̥ \text{1}, \text{m}̥u}̥n̥d}̥r}̥i}̥a}̥ \text{1}, \text{n}̥r}̥i}̥i}̥ \text{1}, \text{p}̥'̥r}̥a}̥r}̥i}̥ \text{5} (\text{-ya 1), v}̥s}̥r}̥i}̥a} \text{64} (\text{-ya 2), Ḟ}̥r}̥i}̥a} \text{1}, v̥s̥r̥i}̥a} \text{75} (\text{compounds: } \text{ḍr̥̥ṣ}̥ṭ}̥ra}̥n}̥a} \text{1}, \text{v}̥s̥r̥i}̥a} \text{76} \text{-ya 3), v}̥r̥̥̥ṭ}̥r}̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥̥...
The preceding lists show that the suffix-form -ıa occurs more frequently than -ya. Especially is this the case if only simple words are considered. Counting, according to the arrangement above, all simple words, whether found alone or only in one compound, by themselves, and all other compounds and derivatives by themselves, we arrive at the following results:

-ıa after a long syllable 1552 times (1284 times in 192 single words, and 268 times in 87 compounds and derivatives); -ıa after a short syllable 462 times (459 times in 85 single words, and 3 times in 3 compounds).

-ıa after a long syllable 91 times (80 times from 35 single words, and 11 times from 5 compounds); -ıa after a short syllable 174 times (1145 times from 94 simple words, and 602 times from 147 compounds and derivatives).

To the preceding should perhaps be reckoned 29 words with the suffix -ıya (-yıa), which presumably stands for -ıa. Four of them actually occur in two forms (niıtıya or niıtra, tüıya or rıtıya, acıyyı or acıva, nııya or nııva).

The suffixes of compounds and derivatives agree so closely with those of the simple words, or with another, in the few cases where the simple word is found only in composition) that in 222 words (884 times) falling under the category there are, all told,
only eleven absolute exceptions: (asamashta-kánya, janya in four compounds, nádúdráia, manushyajá, visva-dévá, Hastya in three compounds) to that rule; six other compounds (anindit, nrsádhi, visvádeva, vrtrátári, saúásti, svuúrjá) vary, though prevalingly adhering to the rule.

Among all the simple words (used alone or only in composition), there are 47 which are found with both -iá and -ya. A comparison will show, however, that they as a rule are used very prevalently with one of the two forms of suffixes (in two thirds of the cases with -iá); and that the exceptional termination is, in one half of the instances, a ápāζ λεγομενον:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>-iá</th>
<th>-ya</th>
<th>-iá</th>
<th>-ya</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>sáká 9</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>áp-iá 10</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d'ý-iá 4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>vadm'p-íá 2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t'd-íá 33</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>dádakh'ý-íá 4</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rát-íá 4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>ar-ýá 1</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>át-íá 8</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>ar-íá 1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dád-ýá 5</td>
<td>193</td>
<td>nárd-íá 49</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>caúk'ý-á 5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>már-ýá 4</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>agúst-íá 5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>d'v-íá 12</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>háy-íá comp'ká 1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>p'ú-r-íá 5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rúth-íá 13</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>v'ú-r-íá 64</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>núd-íá 12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>í-r-íá 3</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>anúmd'rá 4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>dár-íá 8</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an-ýá 2</td>
<td>184</td>
<td>asúr-ýá 15</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ján-íá 6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>asúr-r'á 12</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhán-íá 2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>vrvatrát-r-íá 8</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ap'm-íá 7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>hartr-r-íá 1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tiróshn-íá 7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>sú-úr-íá 16</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

If, in the preceding list, all the words with a prevailing -iá suffix be deducted from the 129 single words with -ya suffixes, this number is considerably reduced, and the disproportion between the occurrence of -iá and -ya is made still more marked.

It is evident from the absolute or prevailing regularity of the suffix for the same word in its various occurrences, singly or in composition, that the use of -iá or -ya was not a matter of mere accident or arbitrary choice, but determined by some underlying principle, and required by usage. The following considerations will help to determine this principle.

a. The place of the accent, as will be seen by comparison, has an influence only when the suffix takes the circumflex (marked -iá, -ýá), in which case the form -iá is almost invariably met with, there being 81 words in -iá to 8 in -ýá, and 4 both ways. This phenomenon seems connected with the derivation of the word (comp. c, below).

b. The quantity of the syllable which precedes the suffix seems decidedly to influence its treatment. This has been pointed out already by Sievers, in his Zur Accent- und Satzlehre, where he lays it down as a definite rule that (unless the suffix has the circumflex) a long syllable is followed by -iá (-ua), and a short, with a few exceptions, by -ya (-va). The actual facts are, according to the
preceding statement, these (compounds, of existing simple words, as almost wholly agreeing with them, being left out of account): a long syllable is followed in 192 distinct words (in 40 of which the suffix has the circumflex) by -ia, and in 35 simple words (all without the circumflex) by -ya. A short syllable is followed in 85 distinct words (in 45 of which the suffix has the circumflex) by -ia, and in 94 simple words (in 12 of which the suffix has the circumflex) by -ya. The connection between the two phenomena seems therefore very marked, though not absolute; and the influence of quantity together with that of the accent seems to account, better than anything else, for the use of -ia or -ya. Only some considerations of a general nature, to be mentioned hereafter, seem to explain the discrepancies.

c. The derivation of the word offers especially one interesting point for consideration, and does not seem to be unconnected with the nature of the suffix. It is, namely, remarkable that words clearly derived from a theme in -a (as gānīa from gānd) take, almost without exception, the form of suffix -ia. Of 110 such derivatives, there are only 8 absolute (2 sporadic) exceptions to this rule. The following lists present all the cases, waiving a few, the derivation of which is uncertain:

- anākī'a (anāka), ángīa (ánga), gāhī'ga (gāhīgī), yāvīhīta (yāvīhīta), prekhi'ta (prekhīthā), pāsia (pānī), lakshnānī (lakṣhmanī), vānī 4, -ya 7 (vīnā?), adhihāva'gī (adhihāvagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), adhāpī (adhāpī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), vārūna'gī (vārūnagī), dārāgī (dārāgī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī), prakṣa'gī (prakṣagī)

Only the following 10 derivatives from themes in -a take the suffix -ya:

- jyūshytha (jyūshytha), śrūva (śrūna), mātā (mātā), hāṣṭya 1, in composition -ia (hāṣṭa), vānā (vānā), tīhbha (tīhība), hṛdayā (hṛdayā), vāra (vāra), 15, -ya 12 (śrūna).

Words of other derivation do not admit of so satisfactory classification, although there is a pretty general tendency in words derived directly from verbal roots to take the suffix -ia.

d. Aside from those words which are found with both suffixes,
only the following are not reducible to any of the preceding principles:

13 words in -ia instead of the expected -ya (note the accent):

apr'chia, devayāyija, yāja, popayātia, adhibhū, crātia, kr'yāja, gūtha, ánīa, dāmīn, jā'maria, bhāvīa, pūthīa. (13 others are used both ways, though prevalently with -ia.)

15 words in -ya, instead of the expected -ia:

śivāhyā, jñāniśthya, rā'yāja, kūtīya, sāntya, bā'rkahya, mātīya (18 others are used both ways, though very prevalently with -ia):—śrāhāyā, dosāhāyā, hṛdayā, pātāyā, udāyā, pārāyā, hāvishyā, tawāyā (4 others, aṛyā, vasāyā, manuehyā, sahāyā, are used both ways, the first two prevalently with -ya, the others with -ia).

The conclusion to be drawn from the preceding facts seems evidently to be this: that -ia was the original form of the suffix, and that it still on general organic principles maintains its supremacy in the Rig-Veda. The primitiveness of -ia is supported in the first place by the frequent occurrence of a circumflex on the suffix, which presupposes an original vowel-value of its semivowel; and by the significant coincidence of this circumflex and the vocalization required by the metre. (Compare on this subject Benfey’s “Ist in der indogermanischen Grundsprache ein nominales Suffix ia oder statt dessen yu anzusetzen?”) Further, it is supported by the formation of words in -ia from themes in -a. More than one third of all words in -ia show clearly such a genesis; and the proportion might amount to about one half, were only the possible intermediate links of words supposed to be derived immediately from roots discovered, and the etymology of a few uncertain words known. If a suffix -ya had been evolved and ready to be added to nouns in -a there would have been no reason, as it appears, for dropping the final a of the theme, -aya being easily pronounced. But if the suffix was -ia, the case would have been different. The concurrence of three vowels (aia) required a modification of some sort, and then, the suffixial i being retained, the thematic a was dropped. The occurrence of 22 cases where an accented final a of the base corresponds to an accented i of the suffix is significant enough, and shows a tendency to transmit the accent of the final a to its substitute i. Or should we recognize here traces of the primitive evolution of the ia-suffix, seeing in i nothing but a weakening of the thematic -a, to which the old and common suffix a was added? Finally, the primitiveness of -ia is supported by the prevalence of that suffix in the earliest records of the language, and its gradual change into -ya through later periods.

This weakening tendency was checked in the Vedic period especially by the stress laid on i by accentuation; by the suffix being preceded by a long syllable, which protected, as it were, its identity; and by some obscure influence of the formative process which seems connected with the phenomenon of accent. Out of the whole number of not less than 408 words (or 830, with the compounds) which take the suffix -ia or -ya, only 28 (see above)
form an absolute, and a few more a partial, exception to any and all of these three principles.

How to account for these 28 is not easy, except by the following general consideration. As the whole language shows a gradual change from the ia to the ya-form of suffix, the discrepancies may depend, in part at least, simply on a difference in the time when the words were used. They may also be due partly to arbitrary choice and to corrupted texts. The fact that usage was not stereotyped, that the whole thing was involved in a process of change, would naturally give a freer scope tometrical requirements, and thus allow inconsistencies; and in spite of the general trustworthiness of the text such as we possess it, palpable changes obviating the seeming irregularities of the suffix could be suggested if called for. As for the varied suffixal form of the same word, it can be accounted for very naturally by one of the hypotheses just mentioned. In regard to the 13 (or 26) words in -ia preceded by a short syllable, it is worth noticing that one half of them are derived from verb-roots (sometimes, no doubt, through a lost intermediate link in -a), and five from a root-noun.

We proceed now to take up the other suffixes.

**Suffix-form -id.**

a. Preceded by a long syllable: pádi’d 3, yoqíd’ 3, rotid’ 1, pasiti’d 10, vedit’ 7, râ’mitd 4, pâ’stakud’ 6, u’rmitd 1, sârîd’ 18 (-yd 7; compounds: sâ’râ’mda 1, -yd 4, sâ’râ’mda 1, nded’ 3, cyéitd 1, kâkêitd 3.

b. Preceded by a short syllable: pathéd 24, pâdi’d 1 (-yd 3), kamid’ 16 (-yd 1), samid’ 1, hânîd’ 1, hûtîd’ 1 (-yd 1), yâvid’ 3, sâravi’d 1 (-yd 1), hâvid’ 1.

**Suffix-form -yd.**

a. Preceded by a long syllable: only sâ’ryd’ 1 (generally -yd 18), sâ’ryndempas’ 3, sâ’ryndem 4 (-yd 1).

b. Preceded by a short syllable: devânyyd’ 1, jàrayyd’ 1, ihayyd’ 1, mulhitin’ 2, yiyyd’ 2, kâryyd’ 1, sukâryd’ 9, pâdyd’ 3 (-yd 1), jêundayd’ 1, yshudyd’ 1, yrhyd’ 1, kanyyd’ 1 (-yd 16), vâpayyd’ 5, câryd’ 4, khûyd’ 1 (-yd 1), gâryyd’ 4, charyyd’ 1 (-yd 1), avishyd’ 1, tavishyd’ 1, vapatyd’ 1, urushyd’ 1, vassayyd’ (compound: suvassayyd’), sethâyd’ 1, opayyd’ 1, sêpayyd’ 1, cradhânamasyyd’ 1, namasyyd’ 1, vâsaryyd’ 2, trasyd’ 1, vrasayyd’ 3 (compound: suvrasayyd’), varasayyd’ 1, dâsa’yd’ 1.

The preceding lists show that the form -id occurs in 21 simple words (used alone or only in composition), and in these in 91 instances; and the form -yd in 33 such words, and in 85 instances. Five words are found with both forms. The principles found to prevail with the -ia, -ya suffixes are clearly noticeable here also. Long syllables, indeed, are followed by -id alone (with only one partial exception). Short syllables are followed only 9 times by -id (3 of these have the circumflex, one other is evenly divided between -id and -yd, with one occurrence for each; one, pâdi’d, is prevailingly used with -yd). It is worthy of notice that all the simple words in -yd have the accent on ì, except kany’d, pâdy’d, and câry’d, while this is the case with only one third of the words in -id.
Relation of i, i and u, ti to y and v in Rig-Veda.

Suffix -yu (never -ui).

 sapiyu 2, alayul 1, kinyul 1, yaju 10 (compounds: ayaju 5, prayaju 12, dirapiyaju 1, ajaju 1), iraju 1, bhuju 17, megyul 1, carayul 1, jaryul 1, sarayul 5, turayul 3, bhuanyul 1, ranyul 1, uhayul 1, iunhyul 1, randayul 9, tanju 1, pranyul 5, uamyul 3, riyul 14, kahanyul 1, manju 60 (compounds: vayhamanyul 1, anuttamanyul 3, jayhamanyul 1, sahanyul 1, bhuhamanyul 1, vayhamanyul 1, sahanyul 8, bhuhamanyul 1, pradhamanyul 1, sarimanyul 1, vimanyul 1, trivanyul 1, asmananyul 1, riyul 14; manyum 3, manyumitr 1; derivative: manyumit 2), riyul 1, jaryul 1, panyul 2, ahatyul 1, adhyul 53, saryul 1, panyul 12, sanishyul 6, savishyul 3, utshyul 1, makshyul 1, tacyul 1, giracanyul 1, dravnanyul 4, daryul 64 (compounds: transiyula 12; diunhyul 1, dasykara 1, dasvarita 6, dasvarita 10), panju 5, manayul 1, apanyul 6, nanasyul 2, aavyul 30, savyasyul 1, travanyul 19, duvanyul 2, nityul 1, druhul 6.

There are consequently 50 simple words (376 occurrences), aside from 24 compounds, which take the suffix -yu. It will be noticed that in every instance the suffix is preceded by a short syllable. A majority of the words are derived from denominative bases (as caranyul from carany, manasyul from manasy, etc.); and all—with the exception only of yaju, pinyul, dasu, sinya—are accented on the u of the suffix. As will be seen further on, all denominative verbs without exception have likewise the semi-vowel y.

Suffix -tiu, -tya.

Form -tiu: niśtiu 3, dvītiu 2, amdti 1.

Form -tya: aptya 6 (compounds: anaptya 1, swaptya 17, apatyaetc'), mitya 34, (compounds: mityaketra 1, niyahi, mityakitra 1), sānti 3, santya 9.

Gerunds ending in -tya (as kṛtya etc.) are treated under the verb. In the preceding adjectives it will be observed that the i of the suffix is preceded by a long and the y by a short syllable (with the exception of santya).

Suffix -niu, -nyu.

Form -niu: niyu 2 (-yu 8), dhviniu 14.

Form -nyu: niyu 8 (-tiu 2), pinyu 1.

In these three words also the quantity of preceding syllables is long before ti and short before y.

Suffix -eiu, -eiyu.

Form -eiu: vareiu 38 (compound: vareiukrati 3), vīreiu 1, dvīrīeiu 1, tāhēiu 1, tādēiu 9, marmēiu 1 (-ya 1), kīrēiu 2, yudhēiu 1, vṛdhēiu 1, užēiu 1, dṛēiu 1.

Form -eiyu: sapareiyu 1, bhatēiyu 1 (bhvaricya 1), didrēiyu 2, paprēiyu 1, marmēiyu 1 (-tiu 1).

The expected -eiu occurs in 11 words out of 15 (one being used both ways). Of the five verbal adjectives in -eiyu, one (saparyānyu) is from a denominative, three are from a reduplicated base, and only one (bhātēiyu) from the simple verb. It will be noticed that all the fifteen participial adjectives are accented on the e.

Vol. XI. 11
A. H. Edgren,

Suffix -yas (never -iās).

pānyas 5, sānyas 3, rābhyaś 1, tārvaś 1 (compound: tārvaś 2), nāvyas 46, vānyaś 39, sāhyaś 3.

All these are only exceptional comparative- formations (iēyas = iās, yās); and four of them alternate with the usual forms (pāniyās 5, tāviyās 5, nāviyās 31, sāhiyās 9). It will be noticed that -yas is in each case preceded by a short syllable.

Suffix -tyu (never -tiu).

mṛtyu 15 (compounds: mṛtyu 4, mṛtyubindhu 2).

In considering together all the preceding suffixes with the exception of -īa and -ya, which on account of their exceeding frequency have been treated by themselves, it will be found that i occurs 143 times after a long and 51 times (in 41 of which it has the circumflex) after a short syllable; but y 32 times after a long, and 605 after a short syllable. Only simple words and isolated compounds are then counted.

Suffixes containing a u or v.

These are of much less frequent occurrence than the preceding. As there is no exception to the rule that compounds and derivatives retain the suffix of the simple word (or agree with one another), it is needless to rehearse them all, especially as they are quite numerous.

Suffix -ua, -va.

Form -ua: tā'nuva (fr. tanā) 1, tā'nuva (fr. tanu) 1, tā'nuva (fr. tan) 2, āruā 1 (-rā 20), ṅona 4 (-va 224, with 58 compounds and many derivatives. The four forms in -ua seem therefore very doubtful or anomalous).

Form -va: takā 1, pakā 25, surāvā 3, rāvā 2, ṭrāvā 1, kaṇā 50, prākaṇā 5, rasā 28, ārdhā 71, ṣākarā 20, āndhārā 20, āndhārā 20 (nu 1), pārva 120, ṅona 224 (-ua 4, see above), ṅoṣa 301, ṅoṣa 49, yakaśu 21.

The preceding lists show that the suffix -ua is the law, and that -ua is at best only a sporadic and doubtful exception. It occurs alone only in the three exceptional forms tā'nuva. Its presence in ṅona is, as pointed out above, anomalous; and in the only remaining form āruā, where it occurs once out of 21 times, this is in the second part of a catalectic trishtub-pādā (ix.87.6). The suffix -va occurs in 19 simple words (1001 instances), and in more than a hundred compounds and derivatives formed from those simple words. In 15 of the 19 words, the syllable preceding the suffix is short, so that the preservative influence which a long syllable seems to exercise is here almost entirely lacking. This may have aided the general conversion of u to v.

Suffix -tua, -tva.

Form -tua. This suffix occurs in nouns only in: pētua 1, rakshatua 1, nāvandtua 1 (-va 2).

In gerundives the formation is presumably from an infinitive noun in -tu, whence also the prevalence (see below) of the vocalized form. It should properly be considered along with stems in
Relation of i, I and u, å to y and v in Rig-Veda.

-u, but is conveniently given here on account of the uncertainty of the formation. The gerundives are:

kārtua 14 (-va 3), jāntua 1 (but jānītva 4, and jānītva 1, a noun from jānt), jētua 1, nāntua 1, vāktua 2, sētua 1, md'tua 1, hāntua 1, hēntua 1.

Form -tua. With the exception only of the three nouns quoted above (each a aapanē legeōmenon), this form of suffix occurs in all nominal (almost exclusively neuter abstract) formations in question, which therefore need not be enumerated. There are 31 of them (aside from several compounds), and 145 instances. The suffix is in 30 words preceded by a short vowel (as garbhātvā, asurātvā, etc.), and in only three cases (anāgātvā 7, suprajātvā 2, nāvavātvā 2, -tua 1) by a long syllable; whereas -tua is found after a long syllable in the remaining nouns (see above). All the simple words belonging here accent invariably the a of the suffix; and it is worth noticing that the gerundives, on the contrary, accent the verb-root, and that pētua (not an abstract) also accents the root.

In gerundives (compare what is remarked above under -tua) -tua is found in kārtua 3 (-va 14) jānītva 4, sānītva 1, bhātītva 1—all, save the exceptional kārtu, after the auxiliary vowel i (i).

Suffix -ud, -vd.

Form -ud: apūd '1.
Form -vd: dā'rvd 2, jihvd' 44.

Suffix -vi (never -wi).

dāviti 2, sāhdviti 1, ghū'śṛhi 13.

Suffix -vf (never -wfi).

prīkvi 10, md'vati 2, gandharevi 1, parahārati 1, yahvi 21—all feminines with accented suffix.

Suffix -vant (never -wanti).

This suffix, forming possessives from nouns (only in half-a-dozen exceptions from verb-roots), occurs in 66 words (about 335 instances), and is in all of them—save dhr'rvat 2, dhr'svat 7, bhāsvat 2—preceded by a short syllable.

Suffix -van (never -wana).

This suffix, generally added to verb-roots, occurs in 49 distinct words (about 150 instances; also in 47 compounds). It is preceded in every simple word by a short syllable. The accent is never on the suffix, even in compounds, except in aparvan (pārvan).

Suffix -vas (vās, wās).

Nearly all words with this termination are perfect active participles; only a few are of doubtful formation. The latter will accordingly be given by themselves.

a. Perfect active participles:

jagaphāvas 17, ekāhāvas 45, jujucras 2 (-vas 1: ii.4.5), jujukrāvas 2, tatanaus 3, til磔ras 2, kāsadāvas 1, dādvāvas 1, dādvāvas 1, dādvās 1, dādvās 1, dādvās 1, dādvās 1
*esahvās* 4 (*ūas* 1); —(without reduplication): *dāvās* (?) 8 (*ūas* 6), *vīdās* 103 
(*ūas* 3), *ādīvās* 10.

b. Of uncertain relation:


There are consequently 27 words (235 instances) in *-vas* (*vās*); and only 4 of them are sporadically (altogether 18 times) found with the suffix *-uas*. In 24 of these 27 words the *-vas* is preceded by a short syllable, and only in *dāvās* (also *-uas*) and 
*sāhīvās, mūdīvās* by a long. They all accent the termination, except 
the uncertain *rābhvas, cīkvas* (*khīvās* is unaccented).

**Suffix -uana** (never -uana).


**Suffix -vara** (never -uara).


**Suffix -vāla** (never -uāla). *vīdvāla* 1.

**Suffix -tuana** (never *tuana*).


**Suffix -vati** (never -uati).

*dādhāvati* 1, *ārvatti* 3.

**Suffix -vani** (never -uani).

*cukvāni* 1, *jyurvāni* 1, *turvāni* 8, *tuturvāni* 1, *bhuvāṇi* 2, *arharīvāṇi* 1, 
*dādhāvāṇi* 1. It is always preceded by a short syllable and accented.

**Suffix -vart** (never -uart).

All such feminine formations (*vākvar, pākvar, yājvar, etc.*),
except *pīrvart*, have a corresponding masculine form in *-van*, and 
take, like these latter, the accent on the radical syllable; and 
the suffix is preceded, without exception, by a short syllable.

**Suffix -vīn** (never -ūin).

*dādhāvīn* 1, *caatanin* 1, *namāvin* 8, *turavīn* 2, *rakhevin* 7. In all cases pre-
ced by a short syllable, and accented (except in the comp. *djūdvēin*).

In considering together all these suffixes with an integral *u* or 
*v*, it will be found that *u* occurs 47 times after a long and 7 times 
after a short syllable, but *v* 266 times (chiefly owing to *πūrva* 120, 
and *ārdhāvā* 71) after a long, and over 2000 times after a short 
syllable.

For the gerunds in *-yā (-ya), -tād, -tāf, -tādyā*, see under verb-
infection.

II. **In Declensional Endings.**

The case-suffixes of which *i* or *y* forms an integral part are *syā* 
(*śīa*?), *syās* (*śīs*), *syāi, hya(m)*, *bhya(m) (bhīm)*, *syām, bhya(m)* 
(*bhīm)*, *bhyaas (bhīas)*. A summary statement of all the cases 
with reference to the quantity of the preceding syllable is here 
given. (For a detailed treatment of the case-suffixes of the nouns 
see the article referred to p. 70).
Relation of i, ñ and u, ñ to y and v in Rig-Veda.

-sya after short syllable nearly 4000 times (fr. 627 stems); -sins of doubtful, or, rather, very exceptional occurrence (see Lamm. p. 338); -syis after short syllable about 70 times (fr. 8 stems); -sís after short syllable twice (fr. 2 stems); -sýat after short syllable 11 times (fr. 5 stems); -hýam(m) after short syllable 28 times (fr. 1 stem: in 13 instances -hýa); -bhýam(m) after short syllable 205 times (asmú-bhýam 108, tãbhýam 97), -bhía only once in yuṣµábhía (i.88.3); -sydm after short syllable 11 times (fr. 5 stems); -bhydm after short syllable 47 times (fr. 15 stems), after long syllable 38 times (fr. 26 stems), -bhím after short syllable 3 times (fr. 3 stems); -bhýas after short syllable 192 times (fr. 61 stems), after long syllable 200 times (fr. 95 stems), -bhías after long syllable 120 times (fr. 76 stems), after short syllable twice (fr. 2 stems).

The vowel ñ is consequently found altogether in 128 instances, and the semivowel y in nearly 4800 instances (from which should be deducted perhaps a few in -asya). Moreover, the vowel is found in 123 instances after a long syllable (chiefly in a-stems, 72 times), and only 5 times after a short syllable (twice in an i and a van-stem, and three times in pronouns); and the semivowel in nearly 4500 instances (584 if the overwhelming number presented by -asya be deducted) after a short syllable, and 238 instances (chiefly, or 179 times, in vowel-stems) after a long syllable. It seems evident therefore that we may trace also here that preservative influence of a preceding long syllable which was clearly operative in connection with the derivative suffixes. The exceeding frequency of the suffix -asya suggests how universal was the alterative tendency when the repeated use of the form, the quantity of the word, and the dimness of formation of the suffix all conspired to the same end.

III. In Verb-Inflection.

Whatever be the varied combinations and functions of y (i) or v (u) in verb-inflection, the semi-vowel is found there almost exclusively, the exceptions being mainly a few optatives, some class-signs (nu), and three imperatives (aua). All the formative parts of the verbs are therefore most conveniently treated here together. Moreover, it would be a waste of space to enumerate the vast number of cases in which the semivowel occurs. The whole subject is most clearly and comprehensively treated by giving a short résumé of all the instances in which the semivowels are found used, and a full statement only of the exceptional cases in which one of the vowels is found. The participial forms in -ya (-ia), -enya (-enía) etc., the infinitives in -iá (-yá), and the gerundives in -tua (-túa) have been considered in connection with the noun-formations; but the gerund, as having a less distinct noun-character, will be treated here. The form ya is found (exclusive, of course, of all cases in which it is preceded by a vowel):

As a class-sign (4th or dir-class), 375 times (áryati, tiñyati; Ishyate, pātyate; ásya, áshyati; mánayámna, yudhyámna, etc.), aside from some participles in composition; as sign of the passive, 225 times (asýate, idhyate, uçyate, aiyámda, pçyámda, etc.), aside from a few participles in composition; in denominatives, 279 times (ásasyáti, irsyáti, kpyátyáti, etc.), aside from a few participles in composition; in intensives (which of this formation are of rare occurrence in the Rig-
Veda] 20 times (caryāyānda 1, marmṛjyāte 2, marmṛjyānta 5, marmṛjyāmdna 10, vṛtīyāte 1, vṛtīhyāte 1, to which Delbrück also counts, as it seems without sufficient reason, triajyati, etc.); as a tense-sign (in the future), 38 times (kariṣṭyati, bhārīṣhyāti, dhārīṣhyāhāti; kahiṣhāti, sarīṣhyāt, etc.); as a mode-sign (for the optative), 258 times (ṣaṣṭān, syāt, bhūhyāt, anājyāt, etc.); as a gerund, -yd (ya) 75 times, and -yāt 13 times.

The exceptional occurrences of -ia are as follows:

a. As a class-sign (4th conjugation) in dviṣat 3 (iv.30.20; x.72.8; 138.4?), rṣyantās (vi.37.2,3).

b. As a tense-sign: kahiṣhāntas (fut. part; ii.4.3).

c. In optatives: aṣīt'm 1 (-yin 11), aṣīma 1 (-yin 8), aṣīma 1 (-yin 8); sīt'm 2 (ṣyin 2, syin 5), sīt’s 1 (ṣyin 5), sīt’t 5, sīt’t 2 (syit 7), sītāṃ 2, sīt’m 10 (ṣyin 8), sītāṃ 62 (ṣyin 24), sīt’s 1 (ṣyin 2), sīt’s 1 (ṣyin 4); rāhīnd’m 1 (-yin 8); gamīd’s 1 (-yin 6), jagamīdat 1; vidit’t 1 (ṣyit 1), viditādam 1; vṛtīdām 1 (-yin 8), vṛtīdām 1 (-yin 8).

The form -a(v(a), etc.) is found (exclusive of cases in which it is preceded by a vowel):

In a class-sign (nu, u) about 220 times (kṛṣṇānti, hirṇānti, rṣṇānti, cīṇāt; tannānti, rauṣṇāt; jāśveda, etc.), aside from a few participle compositions; in personal terminations (-vah, -vahi, -sva, -dvre, -dvai, -dham, -dhra) nearly 700 times (somewhat over 500 of which belong to the imperative in -sva); in gerunds 65 times (-ird 21, -ird 35, -tvāya 9, 8 of which in book X).

The exceptional occurrences of the vowel ə are as follows:

a. In a class-sign (nu, u): rṣṇāntu 1, rṣṇāntu 1; sruṇānti 1, dhānunād 1; tannāt 2.

b. In a personal ending: māνu 1, maṣṭa 4; vaṇava 1, varṣṇa 3; kṛṣṇaṇa 1; amugdham 1; vaṇḍham 1.

c. In the following forms of the root dhanu (which seems to be an extension of dhanu; or in which nu is perhaps only an anomalous class-sign): dhanuṇ 1, dhanuṇa 1, dhānun 1, dhanuṇa 1, dhanuṇa 2, dhanuṇa 3.

C. Occurrence of i or y and u or v in the root-element (real or apparent) of the word.

In the very considerable number of words which come under consideration here, the semivowels y and v are found so regularly that an enumeration of all the exceptional cases only is needed. They will be considered under the various categories of words in question (radicals, their derivatives, and words of uncertain formation).

-y- or -i-.

a. In verb-roots and their derivatives:

The semivowel y occurs in all verb-roots (khyā, cyā, jyā, etc.) without exception; and it is found in the radical part of all their numerous derivatives likewise, with only the following entirely sporadic exceptions:

From the root jyā we have paramajjā (vii.1.30; -yā 1), jyād 3 (viii.38.6; vi.30.4; x.50.5; jyā 8), jīṣṭhā 21 (jīṣṭhā 16). From dyāt we have dīḍhanas (vii.29.2), suṭṭhāntat (ii.4.1: Grässmann suṭṭhāntat).

These exceptions may be valuable in helping to prove the deriv-
Relation of i, u and u, o to y and v in Rig Veda.

ation of jyā from ji, and the connection of dyut with div (compare the form div-), and also, perhaps, with di, 'shine.'

b. In pronominals:

ti 27 (tyā 120), siś 2 (syā 54). The concurrent forms in -a seem to prove that tya, sya were derived from ta and sa on the same principle that nouns with the suffix -ya were derived from others with the theme in -a.

c. In more uncertain combinations:

jśa, 'bow-string,' 3 (jśa 2; comp. Curtius, 639); jśādī 1 (from the preceding); jśāk 14 (jśāk 1? Comp. Kuhn, Zeitschr. xi.3, who derives it from div, dyā and ac); (from div 'heaven') diśn 1, diśus 28, diśm 11; siōnā 10 (fr. siv, sya ?), and its compounds sionakṣ 1, sionakṣ 2.

-ū or -u.

a. In verb-roots and their derivatives:

The semivowel occurs in all the verb-roots (tvakṣ, gvac, svaj, vish, etc.) with only one doubtful exception (compare also dhanuv, p. 88), and in all their derivatives without exception.

The only verb-root in which the vowel occurs is svad (only once, or, according to [grassmann, twice, as against 17 svad and several derivatives from this]). The form svad would seem to lend support to the theory that the root itself is a compound of su-ad (compare Pott and others); but, aside from the weighty objections brought against the prefix-theory generally by Curtius (Gr. Etymol., p. 34, etc.), the authenticity of the form svad is, at least, very doubtful. Its first occurrence is at il.1.14 in a jagati-pāda; but there it seems better to vocalize v in tvav (as is done in other passages). Its second occurrence (svādantī) is in Vālakhilya 2.5 in a bhrati-pāda. There, undoubtedly, the metre, as it stands, cannot be made out fully without vocalizing v; but the preceding hymn (v. 5), having a very analogous phrase [both yēm te svadāvant svādantī], uses svādyantī for svādantī; and the authority of an apocryphal Vālakhilya-hymn is too weak to establish the genuineness of this one exception.

b. In pronominals:

kia 32 (kā twice, doubtfully: see Grassmann);—tua 'many,' 5 (tva 10);—tuā, tei, 'thou,' both of very frequent occurrence, counting by several hundreds, but tua prevailingly found; in derivatives and compounds the two forms are also found interchanged (v 31 times, u 82 times);—sva 42 (svā 88, and in all derivatives and compounds).

All these forms, when compared with those of the verb-roots, point to an earlier formation by means of the suffix -a.

c. In more uncertain combinations:

tvaśkr 3 (but tvāśkr 60); duā 3 (compounds: duādga 4, duādgar 1; dvā 9, and in many compounds div-, dv-: comp. Curtius, 277);—siār 120 (compounds and derivatives: swarī 1, siāracus 1, siārkan 1, swarī 4, siārjava 1, siārapa 12, siārap 2, swarīd 13, siārapa 3, siārpan 2, swarīd 6, swarīd 27, swārī 11, siārshā 6; suāra 1, suārja 1, suārca 21). The vowel u, found throughout in siār and its compounds points to another derivation than that proposed by Curtius (from the only doubtfully authenticated seur, 'shine'). The accent, of course, is connected with the preservation of the vowel.
A. H. Edgren.

General Summary.

A brief summary of the number of occurrences before dissimilar vowels of i, u or y, v is as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>i</th>
<th>y</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Final of independent words, almost exclusively</td>
<td>194</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; in composition,</td>
<td>409</td>
<td>295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; in noun-stems,</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; in verb-roots,</td>
<td>1937</td>
<td>1862</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In derivative suffixes (comp's excluded),</td>
<td>128 about 4800</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In declensional endings,</td>
<td>97 about 1300</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In verb-inflection,</td>
<td>127 much more numerous.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In roots and root-elements,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>u</th>
<th>v</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Final of independent words, almost exclusively</td>
<td>359</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; in composition,</td>
<td>285</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; in noun-stems,</td>
<td>never</td>
<td>very rare</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; in verb-roots,</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>about 2400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In derivative suffixes (comp's excluded),</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>about 985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In verb-inflection,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In roots and root-elements (aside from tvā),</td>
<td>324</td>
<td>more numerous</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This summary shows clearly an inverted relation between the vowels and semivowels in regard to their occurrence, namely so that the vowels greatly prevail when finals in independent words, composition, and noun-stems, and the semivowels in other combinations. This relation becomes still more striking, if the considerable number of vowels in the root-element of a few words (as in tu-a, su-ar, etc.) really be, what seems very probable, originally nothing but finals of an independent word. It should be noticed also that the inverted relation is in some instances brought out still more clearly by counting single words instead of the number of their occurrences.

This natural relation between the vowels and the semivowels, combined with those clearly assignable causes for a vast majority of all discrepancies which have been pointed out throughout the article, confirms our introductory assertion that the varied use of vowel or semivowel in the Rig-Veda, as required by its metre, is owing, in the main, not to corruption or arbitrary usage, but to organic growth; that the great and perplexing variety is not lawless, but the natural result of a transition, apparently from vowel to semivowel, taken in the very midst of its progress.
ARTICLE IV.

NOTICES OF FU-SANG,

AND OTHER COUNTRIES LYING EAST OF CHINA,

GIVEN IN THE ANTIQUARIAN RESEARCHES

OF MA TWAN-LIN.

BY S. WELLS WILLIAMS,

PROFESSOR IN YALE COLLEGE.

Presented to the Society October 26th, 1880.

The origin of the various nations and tribes inhabiting the American Continent is a question that has attracted the attention of antiquarians ever since the discovery of the continent four centuries ago. The general designation of "Indians," given by Columbus to the people whom he met, shows the notion then entertained of their Asiatic origin, not less than his ignorance of their true position. Since that time, numerous antiquarians have given us their ideas and researches upon this obscure subject. Some have combined many scattered facts so as to uphold their crude fancies; while others have formed a theory, and then hunted over the continent for facts to prove it. When their various works are brought together, comparison only shows how little which can lead to a definite conclusion has yet been really ascertained. The digest of the most careful of these travelers, and the candid analysis of the works of antiquarians and philologists, given by H. H. Bancroft in the fifth volume of his laborious work on the Native Races of the Pacific States (pp. 1-186), fully upholds his concluding sentence as to the present state of this question: "To all whose investigations are a search for truth, darkness covers the origin of the American peoples and their primitive history, save
for a few centuries preceding the Conquest. The darkness is lighted up here and there by dim rays of conjecture, which only become fixed lights of facts in the eyes of antiquarians whose lively imaginations enable them to see best in the dark, and whose researches are but a sifting out of supports to a preconceived opinion.”

Since the publication of this work, in 1875, attention has been again directed to a hypothesis as to the origin of the native races—namely, that America was peopled from China—by the issue of Mr. C. G. Leland’s book entitled Fusang, or the Discovery of America by Chinese Buddhist Priests in the Fifth Century. Mr. Bancroft had already collected the leading data upon this particular point (volume v., pp. 34-51), and Mr. Leland adduces no new facts. He brings together in a convenient form what he has collected from De Guignes, Neumann, and d’Eichthal in favor of his theory; while he analyzes and criticizes the remarks of Klaproth, Sampson, and Bretschneider against it.

I have thought that a translation of the sections describing the lands lying to the east of China found in the work of Ma Twan-lin would tend to place his notice of Fusang in its true light, and help us to guess where that country should be looked for. This distinguished Chinese author belonged to a literary family, and spent his life in collecting and arranging the materials for his great work, the Wăn Hien Tung Kao (文献通考) or Antiquarian Researches, which was published about the year 1321, by the Mongol emperor Jin-tsung, a nephew of Kublai Khan. Ma Twan-lin’s life was passed amid the troublous times of the conquests of the Mongols, and his father held a high office at the court of the emperors of the Sung dynasty at Hangchow. He was busily engaged with these labors during the whole period of the residence of Marco Polo in China (1275 to 1295), and their deaths probably occurred about the year 1325.

The Antiquarian Researches now contains 348 chapters (k’ien), arranged without any natural sequence, under twenty-five different heads, as Chronology, Classics, Religion, Dynasties, etc. The last title is called Sse’ I Kao (四裔考) or Researches into the Four Frontiers. In it are gathered together in twenty-four chapters all the information that the author could collect respecting foreign kingdoms and peoples. He himself seems never to have traveled outside of his own land; and during the ruthless wars of the Mongols he was probably glad to escape all molestation by staying quietly at his home at Po-yang, in Kiangsi province. The eight volumes containing these notices of other countries must consequently be regarded only as the carefully written notes of a retired scholar,
Notices of Fu-sang.

who was unable to test their value or accuracy by any standard, either of his own personal observation, or of the criticisms of those among his acquaintances who had gone abroad. The energy and skill of the great Khan, so unlike the effete and ignorant rule of the native monarchs at Hangchow, must have developed much mental and physical vigor among his subjects. An author like Ma Twan-lin would therefore be stimulated to gather all the information he could, no matter whence it came, to enrich his work. His design was more like that of Hackluyt or Purchas than that of Rollin or La Harpe; and in carrying it out he has done a good service for the literature of his native land.

In his survey of lands beyond the Middle Kingdom, he commences on the east and goes around to the south and west, describing each country without much reference to those near it. Having no data for ascertaining their distances, size, or relative importance, he makes no distinction between islands, peninsulas, and continents; for of all such things his countrymen are even now just beginning to learn. When he died, the political boundaries and names of the divisions in the vast empire of Kublai, who died at least thirty years before, had already begun to change; and this source of error could not well be analyzed or corrected by him. These conditions must be borne in mind, when estimating his notices of countries lying outside of China.

The twenty-four chapters in the Su I Kao comprise 250 titles in all, but this does not mean so many kingdoms. There are twenty-five located on the east, seventy-three on the south, and twenty-four on the west; and after these come brief accounts of seventy-eight regions still further west, even to Constantinople, which is regarded as a separate kingdom. The last eight chapters notice fifty more regions on the extreme north. An idea of the difficulties Ma labored under in preparing these accounts may perhaps be obtained by imagining the trouble an Arabian antiquarian, writing in the year 1800, and ignorant of European languages, would find in compiling a history of Germany for the ten previous centuries.

His plan of grouping them by their bearings from China helps us a little when looking for them; and as my present purpose is only to give what he says of those situated eastward beyond sea, this paper is narrowed down to nine sections. Of these, Japan is the longest, and is the seventh in the series. Between it and Hia-i, eight countries are mentioned, which are all now known to have been on the mainland. Thirty pages are devoted to Wo Kwoh (倭国) or Japan; though it is placed in the series out of its proper order, between Fu-yu (夫餘) and Kao-kü-li (高句麗), kingdoms lying within
the basin of the Songari river in the present Manchuria. The
sixteenth in the list is Hia-i, or Yezo. It comes next to Poh-
hai (渤 海), a region identified with the maritime part of the
recently acquired Russian possessions east of the river Usuri.

Sect. xvi.—Hia-i (蝦夷), the Land of the Shrimp or
Crab Barbarians or Foreigners.

Hia-i is the name of an island in the sea; it is a small kingdom.
Its chiefs have beards more than four feet long. The people are
very skillful with their bows and javelins; they stick the arrows
in their heads (or hair). They will compel people to hold the
arrows, and then, standing off many tens of paces, will hit the
arrows without ever missing. In the autumn of the year A.D.
660, envoys came from this kingdom in attendance upon those
from Japan.

The mention of the long beards of these foreigners identi-
fies them with the Ainos, who still dwell in Yezo. Professor
A. F. Bickmore* regards them as the relics of an early Aryan
race, which gradually emigrated eastward in prehistoric times,
or were driven by more powerful races further and further
eastward till they reached the Pacific Ocean. Others, with
more probability, and more advantage of examination and
comparison, look upon them as the aboriginal inhabitants of
the Japan islands, and hold that the present Japanese are the
offspring of a mixture between the Ainos and a southern race,
which invaded the group before the Christian era.

The word Ainos is derived, according to one Japanese expla-
nation, from the early Chinese pronunciation of 奴奴, meaning
the ‘bondmen of the Japanese.’ Another account is that it
is changed from inu ‘a dog’; a third explains it by the phrase
ai-no-ko, or ‘offspring of the middle,’ i.e. a breed between
man and beast. The last two are given by Griffin, and they all
go to prove the antiquity of this peculiar people. The slight
notice of Ma Twan-lin shows that the Chinese knew almost
nothing of them, and regarded them as entirely uncivilized.
A Japanese description of the whole island, dated A.D. 1786,
indicates that the Ainos then formed only a part of the popula-
tion of Yezo; and Klaproth criticises the mistakes of Euro-
pean voyagers in relation to their diffusion along the islands on
the Pacific coast. It is not at all unlikely that the envoy from
Japan mentioned in this notice was sent to the great Emperor
Kao-tsu of T‘ang in A.D. 660, in consequence of the victory
obtained about that time by the Chinese over the Koreans.

*American Journal of Science and Arts, vol. xiv., May, 1868. This carefully
prepared paper contains most of the facts ascertained respecting them. See also
Miss Bird’s Unbeaten Tracks in Japan, vol. ii.
SECT. xvii.—Fu-sang (扶桑), or the Kingdom of Fusang.

In the first year of the reign Yung-yuen of the emperor Tung Hwan-hau of the Ts'i dynasty (A. D. 499), a Shaman priest named Hwu-shih arrived at King-chau from the kingdom of Fusang. He related as follows: "Fu-sang lies east of the kingdom of Ta-han more than 20,000 li; it is also east of the Middle Kingdom. It produces many fu-sang trees, from which it derives its name. The leaves of the fu-sang resemble those of the tung tree. It sprouts forth like the bamboo, and the people eat the shoots. Its fruit resembles the pear, but is red; the bark is spun into cloth for dresses; and woven into brocade. The houses are made of planks. There are no walled cities with gates. The [people] use characters and writing, making paper from the bark of the fu-sang. There are no mailed soldiers, for they do not carry on war. The law of the land prescribes a southern and a northern prison. Criminals convicted of light crimes are put into the former, and those guilty of grievous offenses into the latter. Criminals when pardoned are let out of the southern prison; but those in the northern prison are not pardoned. Prisoners in the latter marry. Their boys become bondmen when eight years old, and the girls bondwomen when nine years old. Convicted criminals are not allowed to leave their prison while alive. If the sentence is a capital one, at the time they separate, they surround [the body] with ashes. When a nobleman (or an official) has been convicted of crime, the great assembly of the nation meets and places the criminal in a hollow (or pit); they set a feast with wine before him, and then take leave of him. For crimes of the first grade, the sentence involves only the person of the culprit; for the second, it reaches the children and grandchildren; while the third extends to the seventh generation.

The king of this country is termed yueh-ki; the highest rank of nobles is called tui-ku; the next little tui-ku; and the lowest no-cha-sha. When the king goes abroad, he is preceded and followed by drummers and trumpeters. The color of his robes varies with the years in the cycle containing the ten stems. It is azure in the first two years; red in the second two; yellow in the third; white in the fourth; and black in the last two years.

There are oxen with long horns, so long that they will hold things—the biggest as much as five pecks. Vehicles are drawn by oxen, horses, and deer; for the people of that land rear deer just as the Chinese rear cattle, and make cream of their milk. They have red pears, which will keep a year without spoiling; water-rushes and peaches are common. Iron is not found in the ground, though copper is; they do not prize gold or silver; land trade is conducted without rent, duty, or fixed prices.

In matters of marriage, it is the law that the [intending] son-in-law must erect a hut before the door of the girl’s house, and must sprinkle and sweep the place morning and evening for a whole year. If she then does not like him, she bids him depart;
but if she is pleased with him, they are married. The bridal ceremonies are for the most part like those of China. A fast of seven days is observed for parents at their death, five for grandparents, and three days for brothers, sisters, uncles, and aunts. Images to represent their spirits are set up, before which they worship and pour out libations morning and evening; but they wear no mourning or fillets. The successor of the king does not attend personally to government affairs for the first three years.

In olden times they knew nothing of the Buddhist religion, but during the reign Ta-ming, of the Emperor Hao Wu-ti of the Sung dynasty (A.D. 458), five beggar priests went there from Ki-pin. They traveled over the kingdom, everywhere making known the laws, canons, and images of. that faith. Priests of regular ordination were set apart among the natives, and the customs of the country became reformed.

Ma Twan-lin makes no comment on this narrative, nor does he tell us whence Hwui-shin (騷騷) got it; he did not feel obliged to discuss its veracity, or explain its obscurities. The first impression made upon one who reads it with the idea that Fu-sang lay somewhere on the American continent, is that it proves rather too much, judging by what we yet know of the nations and tribes who once dwelt there. I do not mean that the notices it gives of the houses, unwalled cities, curious mode of judging prisoners, and mourning customs, could not have applied to the natives of Mexico or Peru; but it has not the air of the narrative of a man who had actually lived there. It is easy to reply that all traces of the people mentioned have been lost, so that our present ignorance of their early civilization proves nothing either way. Still this account reads more like the description of a land having many things in common with countries well-known to the speaker and his hearers, but whose few peculiarities were otherwise worth recording. The shaman Hwui-shin may have been one of the five priests who went to Fu-sang from Ki-pin only forty years before his arrival at Kingchau (荆州), the capital of the Tsi dynasty. Ki-pin is the Chinese name for Copthene, a region mentioned by the Buddhist traveler Fa-hien (Chap. v.) under that name, and by Strabo and Pliny as situated between Ghazni and Candahar, along the western slopes of the Suleiman Mts., in the upper valleys of the Helmond river. These priests had probably traveled far north of China in their missionary tour, as described by De Guignes and d’Eichthal (Leland, pp. 143, 144), and lived in Fu-sang until it had become familiar to them. I think that Ma Twan-lin inserts Hwui-shin’s account next to that of Hia-i, from an idea that both kingdoms lay in the same direction. He seems to have found no accounts of a later date, and the long interval of seven centuries had furnished
Notice of Fussang.

nothing worth recording about a land so insignificant as Fussang. We can hardly imagine that such would have been the case with a country to be reached by a long sea voyage, one where stupendous mountains, great rivers, well-built cities or citadels, and people with black or dark red complexions, would each make a deep impression upon an Asiatic. It is just as likely that junks drifted across the Pacific Ocean in the sixth century as in the nineteenth; but Hwui-shin is as silent respecting the manner in which he returned from Fussang, as of the way he reached it. If the five priests had traveled towards Okotsk, and beyond the River Anadyr, till they reached Behring's Straits, and then slowly found their way down to warmer climes, this would naturally form part of the story. Silence on all these points makes one hesitate in coming to the conclusion that Fussang formed any part of America.

The internal evidences to be deduced from what is stated are still more opposed to that conclusion. In our present state of knowledge of the ancient American languages, so far as I can learn, it would be a vain search to look for any words among them suggesting the names of yueh-ki (乙 祈) for king; tui-lu (虞 劭) for a high noble; siao tui-lu (小 虞 劭) for a secondary grandee; and no-cha-sha (納 啟 沙) for those of the lowest rank. It is not possible, at this date, to be quite sure what sounds were intended by the priest, or by the historian, to be represented by these Chinese characters in transliterating the three foreign words; but those here given are the present sounds in the court dialect, and probably near their originals.

But the next statement, respecting the changes required every two years in the color of the king's dress, carries with it altogether too much likeness to Chinese ritualism to be overlooked. It needs a little explanation to be made clear. The sexagenary cycle used in Eastern Asia from remote times is made by repeating ten stems six times in connection with twelve branches repeated five times; the two characters united form the name of a year. The ten years containing the ten stems begin with the first year of the sixty. Consequently, the first and second years, the eleventh and twelfth, the twenty-first and twenty-second, and so on to the last decade, will contain the same two stems—kiah yueh (甲 乙) five times over; in these two years, the king's dress must be tsing (青) or azure color. In the next two, the third and fourth in each decade, the stems ping ting (丙 丁) require it to be chih (赤), red or carnation. In the next two the stems wu-ki (戊 己) require it to be hwang (黄), yellow; in the fourth binary combination, the stems kao sin (庚 辛) require it to be peh (白), white. Lastly, the two stems jin kwai (壬 癸), denoting the ninth and tenth years of each decade, close the series, and
then his robes are to be 他 (heh), black. These five are the primitive colors of Chinese philosophy.

Nothing analogous to this custom has ever been recognized among the Aztec, Peruvian, or Maya people. The ten stems in these five couples indicate among the Chinese and Japanese the operation of the five elements, wood, fire, earth, metal, water, in their active and passive exhibitions; each one destroys its predecessor, and produces its successor, in a perpetual round of evolutionary forces. The mention of such an observance in Fu-sang seems to fix its location in Eastern Asia, where the sexagenary computation of time has long been known. It was a curious usage which would strike a priest familiar with the Chinese ritual.

The same may be said of the worship of ancestral manes and images, and of the three years' mourning by the new king. The efforts to explain the big horns of the oxen, the red pears which will keep a year, and the vehicles drawn by horses, have each their difficulties if applied to anything yet known of the nations of ancient America along the Pacific coast, but may be applied to northern Asia with some allowances. I think the red pears may denote persimmons, which are dried for winter use, and to this day form a common article for native ships' stores.

The identification of the tree fu-sang, on which the notice chiefly turns, is not yet complete. Klaproth refers it to the Hibiscus rosa-sinensis, but I agree with Dr. Bretschneider in making it to be the Broussonetia papyrifera, or paper mulberry, a common and useful tree in Northeastern Asia. The use asserted to be made of the bark in manufacturing paper and dresses does not apply to the Hibiscus nearly so well, though that plant also produces some textile fibers; as does also another large tree not yet entirely identified, belonging to the family Tiliaceae or lindens. The further statement, too, that its shoots are eatable like those of the bamboo, is inapplicable to the agave of Mexico, as well as to the Hibiscus, the linden, or Broussonetia, none of which are endogenous. It is one of the inaccuracies of the description, and cannot be reconciled with either plant. The maguey made from the agave is better fitted for threads and cloth than for making paper. The fruit or berry of the Broussonetia is reddish, indeed, but no one would liken it to a 鹿 (ti) or pear. If the agave is intended, as Mr. Leland urges, it is very probable that 鹿 (ti) would have said something about the intoxicating drink called pulque, obtained from the leaves, rather than have likened them to the 大 (tung), as he has done. This last tree is either the Eleo cocca or Pavulonia, both well known in China and Japan; so that an omission to speak of the pulque becomes rather an evidence against the agave being the fu-sang tree.
The remark about the fibers being woven into brocade is also true of the Broussonetia. A beautiful fabric is made in Japan by weaving them with a woof of silk, but nothing of this sort could be made from the weak agave fibers. Moreover, the Broussonetia has not been found in Mexico, although Neumann thinks that it once existed there. His argument in this respect is worth quoting as an instance of the general quality of those adduced to prove that Fu-sang was in America: "We know that the flora of the northwestern part of America is closely allied to that of China, Japan, and other lands of Eastern Asia. We may also assume that the fu-sang tree was formerly found in America, and afterwards, through neglect, became extinct. . . . It is, however, much more probable that the traveler described a plant hitherto unknown to him, which supplies as many wants in Mexico as the original fu-sang is said to do in Eastern Asia—I mean the great American aloe, called by the Indians maguey. From the crushed leaves, even at the present day, a firm paper is prepared. Upon such paper the hieroglyphic manuscripts alluded to by the Buddhist missionary, and destroyed by the fanatic Spaniards, were written."
—Leland's Fu-sang, page 87.

The word kin (織) applied to the curious paper-silk brocade manufactured from the fu-sang bark, according to Ma Twanlin's text, is also applied to embroidery and parti-colored textures. It is not so much the damask-like figure that is the essential point; but among the Chinese the kin always has a variety of colors. This seems to have attracted the attention of Hwui-shin, and the remarkable iridescence of some specimens of this Japanese mulberry silk still excites admiration. Professor Neumann says that in the year-books of Liang he found the reading to be mien (織), 'floss'; but the textual character kin has more authority in its favor, and is found in the Yuen Kien Lui Han. He translates the sentence: "From the bark they prepare a sort of linen which they use for clothing, and a sort of ornamental stuff." The word pu (布), here rendered linen, is now confined to cotton fabrics, but the distinction aimed at in the two terms used seems to have been that of a plain fabric and a brocaded one, like the Japanese niniki.

It may be added, lastly, that many fables have gathered around the tree and the country of Fu-sang, which increase the difficulty of their identification. For instance, the Shih Chau Ki, quoted in the native lexicon Pei-wän Yin Fu, says: "The fu-sang grows on a land in the Phül Hai or Azure Sea, where it is abundant; the leaves resemble the common mulberry (sang 桑), and it bears the same kind of berries (shin 桑); the trunk rises several thousand rods (chang 丈), and is
more than two thousand rods in girth. Two trunks grow from one root, and lean upon each other as they rise; whence it gets the name *fu-sang* (扶桑), i.e. supporting mulberry.” The use of the technical word *shin* for the fruit of the *fu-sang* is a very strong argument for its being the Broussonetia, and shows that its affinity to the silk mulberry (*Morus*) had been noticed.

Since the publication of Mr. Leland’s book, the Marquis d’Hervey de St.-Denys, who has succeeded Stanislas Julien in the Chinese Professorship at Paris, has contributed a paper in the Transactions of the Academy of Inscriptions and Belles Lettres for 1876, which contains some additional notices of *Fu-sang*. Among these is an extract translated from the *Liang Sê Kung Ki* (梁四公紀) or Memoirs of Four Lords of the Liang Dynasty, which throws some light on the times in which Hwui-shin lived, and the circumstances attending his arrival at King-chau. The Marquis shows that it was just at the overthrow of the Tsi dynasty that the priest came as envoy from *Fu-sang*, and had to wait three years before the Emperor Wu-ti of the Liang dynasty could receive him. The section in *Ma Twan-lin* he justly regards as a copy of the official report made to his superiors by Yu Kieh, one of these four Lords, obtained from Hwui-shin, the envoy. It is quite unlike the usage in such cases that nothing is said in the official annals of the presents offered by him; these, if they had come from America, would have been different from anything before seen, and therefore likely to be recorded. Such a list, however, did not necessarily fall within *Ma’s* purpose when describing *Fu-sang*. The Marquis notices some of the presents offered, which are spoken of in the Memoirs of the Four Lords, and also some popular notions of that day concerning *Fu-sang*. He identifies the envoy with the shaman Hwui-shin, and concludes, with reason, that he was one of the five priests who went in the year 458 from Ki-pin. I have no copy of the *Liang Sê Kung Ki*, and therefore quote his translation:

“At the commencement of the year 502, an envoy from the kingdom of *Fu-sang* was introduced, and having offered different things from his country, the emperor ordered Yu Kieh to interrogate him on the manners and productions of *Fu-sang*, the history of the kingdom, its cities, rivers, mountains, etc., in conformity to the usage practiced at court, whenever a foreign envoy visited it. The envoy from *Fu-sang* wept, and replied with a respectful animation, says the Chinese text, such as an old man would exhibit when he found himself in his own country after a long absence. The presents which he offered consisted especially of three hundred pounds of yellow silk, produced by worms found on the *fu-sang*
tree, and of extraordinary strength. The censer of the empe-
or, made of solid gold, weighed fifty catties (between fifty and
sixty pounds), and three threads of this silk held it up without
breaking. Among the presents was also a kind of semi-trans-
parent stone, carved in the form of a mirror, in which, when the
sun’s image was examined, the palace in the sun distinctly ap-
peared. . . . .

"One day, while he was entertaining the Court about foreign
countries, the magnate Yu Kieh began to speak thus:—'In the
extreme east is Fu-sang. A kind of silkworm is found there
which is seven feet long, and almost seven inches around. The
color is golden. It takes a year to raise them. On the eighth
day of the fifth moon, the worms spin a yellow silkworm which
they stretch across the branches of the fu-sang, for they wind no
cocoon. This native silk is very weak, but if it be boiled in the lye
made from the ashes of fu-sang wood it will acquire such strength
that four strands well twisted together are able to hold up thirty
catties. The eggs of these silkworms are as big as swallows’
eggs. Some of them were taken to Corea, but the voyage in-
jured them, and when they hatched out they were ordinary silk-
worms. The king’s palace is surrounded with walls of crystal.
They begin to be clear before daylight, and become all at once in-
visible when an eclipse of the moon occurs.'

"The magnate Yu Kieh proceeded to say:—'About ten thou-
sand li northwest of this region there is a kingdom of women; they
have serpents for husbands. The serpents are venomous and live
in holes, whilst their spouses dwell in houses and palaces. No
books are seen in this kingdom, nor have the people any writing.
They firmly believe in the power of certain sorceries. The wor-
ship of the gods imposes obligations which no one dares to violate.
In the middle of the kingdom is an island of fire with a burning
mountain, whose inhabitants eat hairy snakes to preserve them-
selves from the heat; rats live on the mountain, from whose fur
an incombustible tissue is woven, which is cleaned by putting it
into the fire instead of washing it. North of this kingdom of
women there is a dark valley; and still farther north are some
mountains covered with snow whose peaks reach to heaven. The
sun never shines there, and the luminous dragon dwells in this
valley. West of it is an intoxicating fountain whose waters have
the taste of wine. In this region is likewise found a sea of var-
nish whose waves dye plumes and furs black; and another sea
having the color of milk. The land surrounded by these wonders
is of great extent and exceedingly fertile. One sees there dogs
and horses of great stature, and even birds which produce human
beings. The males born of them do not live; the females are
carefully reared by their fathers, who carry them on their wings;
as soon as they begin to walk they become mistresses of them-
selves. They are remarkably beautiful and very hospitable, but
they die before the age of thirty. The hares of that land are as
big as the horses elsewhere, having fur a foot long. The sables
are like wolves for size, with black fur of extraordinary thickness.'
The courtiers were greatly amused with these recitals, laughing and clapping their hands, while they assured the narrator that they had never heard better stories. One minister interrupted Yu Kieh by a bantering objection: "If one can put any trust in the official reports collected in relation to this kingdom of women, it might be all simply inhabited by savages who are governed by a woman; there would then be no question respecting this matter of serpents acting as husbands. How would you then arrange this matter?"

"Yu Kieh answered pleasantly, that he had nothing more to say on that point; and then he went on from one strange story to another still more strange, in which one part truth was mixed with nine parts invention."

The whole paper from which this extract is taken does credit to its author's researches into this matter, however much we may differ from his inferences. On a previous page, he adduces further proof from two early Chinese authors, who mention Fu-sang. One of them is Kiuh Yuen, who flourished about B. C. 300, and wrote the poem Le Sao or Dissipation of Sorrows, which has since become a classic among his countrymen. In it, the Marquis says, "he traveled in thought to the four quarters of the universe. On the north, he perceived the land of long days and long nights; on the south, the boundless ocean met his view; on the west he saw the sun set in a lake, perhaps the Tengiri-nor or the Caspian Sea. On the east, in spite of the vastness of the Pacific, and of the idea which would naturally present itself to his mind, as the sun rose from the abyss of waters, he beheld the far-off shores receive the beams of Aurora, and in a valley, on a land shaded by the fu-sang tree, he places the limits of the extreme east."

He also calls in another author to fortify the poet, namely, Tung Fang-soh, whose work, the Shin-i King or Record of Strange Wonders, was extant in the Han dynasty, but was afterwards lost. That now bearing his name has been manipulated by subsequent authors, and Mr. Wylie regards it as a production of the fourth or fifth century, and "the marvelous occupies so large a portion, that it has never been received as true narrative." But the Marquis does not so regard it: "The works of Tung Fang-soh, which treat of regions most remote from China, have undergone some slight alterations at the dictum of the Chinese literati, who inform us that the alterations which they suspect date back to the fourth century after Christ. Their criticism, far from diminishing for us its authority, becomes, on the contrary, a valuable testimony of its authenticity at that date. This is what it says: 'East of this Eastern Ocean is the country of Fu-sang. When one
Notices of Fu-sang.

lands on its shores, if he continue to travel on by, land still further east ten thousand 里, he will again come to a blue sea, vast, immense, and boundless. I think that I hazard nothing in saying beforehand that it is impossible to apply these indications of Tung Fang-soh to any other country than America.

Fu-sang and Păng-lai are still used among the Chinese for fairy land, and are referred to by the common people very much as the Garden of the Hesperides and Atlantis were among the ancient Greeks. In Hânkow, when a shopkeeper wishes to praise the quality of his goods, he puts on his sign that they are from one or other of these lands. The latter is perhaps the more common of the two, for it has become associated with the conqueror Tsain Chi Hwangti, who sent an expedition, about B. C. 220, easterly to find it and two other islands, called San Sien Shan (三仙山), or Three Fairy Hills, where the genii live. Păng-lai is now the name of a district in the province of Shantung (better known from the prefectural city Tângchau, west of Chefu), which commemorates this expedition after the fairies. Nothing was more natural to people living along the Yellow River in the days of Kiuh Yuen and Tang Fang-soh, when Shantung was inhabited by wild tribes, than to regard all that little known region in the utmost East as the abode of whatever and whoever were wonderful. To quote such legends as corroborative history or travel needs the support of some authentic statement to begin with; and Hwuishin would be as likely to connect his account with something his hearers would recognize as existing in that direction, as to make up a story. I do not infer that neither the Chinese nor Japanese of the sixth century had any knowledge of the American continent from other sources, for it was as easy then for vessels to drift across the Pacific, as they still do; but they could not drift back again, and when once landed anywhere between Alaska and Acapulco, the sailors were not likely to try a second voyage to reach their homes.

There is, furthermore, an unexplained point how the name of the tree fu-sang came to be applied to the kingdom Fu-sang. If the Broussonetia be the plant denoted, and everything confirms this deduction, one would have expected its identity or likeness to the chu shu (褚樹), its Chinese name, to have been mentioned. It is, however, quite as probable that the tree got its name from the country, for the manufacture of paper from its bark does not seem to have been known in the days of Kiuh Yuen.

Yu Kieh's pleasant account of Fu-sang and its silk worms tends rather to show that in his day it was a region which everyone could people with what he chose. The use of silk among the people on the Pacific coast was, according to H. H. Bancroft, mostly confined to the Mayas in Central America; it was by no
means a common product, and mostly used in combination with cotton. This reference by Yu Kieh, although so exaggerated, tends to show that Fu-sang was regarded as on the western side of the Pacific Ocean; and I am inclined to place it in Sakhalin island.

De Guignes lays much stress on the alleged distance of Fu-sang from Ta-han, and ingeniously reduces the 20,000 li, or 7,000 miles, to an actual estimate of the road taken by Hwuishin (Leland, page 128) to get there. In the introduction to his accounts of all these eastern countries in Chap. 324, Ma Twan lin places the Flowery Land in the center of the universe (天地之中); and then adds, "East of China lies Wo-kwoh, also called Japan; east of Wo-kwoh, further on, lies Fu-sang, about 30,000 li from China." These figures are much too hap-hazard to depend on in settling this point, and carry less weight than such internal evidence as we can analyze. If compared with other distances applied to those regions by this author, we soon find how valueless they all are. No one in the sixth century had any means of measuring long distances, or taking the bearings of places, so as to make even a rough guess as to their relative positions, if he had tried to make a map. For an illustration of this remark, see Dr. Bretschneider's article in Transactions of North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, No. X, 1876, where he gives an example of Asiatic map-making in A. D. 1381 to show the divisions of the Mongol Empire. It looks like a checker-board.

The position of Fu-sang cannot therefore be yet settled from these notices; but we may, as the Marquis d'Hervey de St.-Denys hopefully remarks, yet see the day when the immense riches hidden and almost lost in Chinese books will be brought out, and something more definite on this head be discovered.

I have only two other quotations to add. One is the name Fushi-koku, i.e. the kingdom of Fu-sang, an unusual designation known to the Japanese themselves, of their own country or a part of it, and which would hardly have been applied to a land on the other side of the Pacific Ocean. The other is the mention found in the Ying-hwan Chi Lioh, or Geography of the World, by Sä Ki-yü, the late Governor of Fukkien, who wrote it in 1848. In speaking of the troubles in Corea caused by the Mongol invasion, and the ravages of the Japanese corsairs along the Chinese coast during the Ming dynasty, he proceeds to say, "But as the rising grandeur of our present Imperial house began to diffuse itself afar, its quick intelligence perceived that it ought first to scatter [as it were] slips from the fu-sang tree in the Valley of Sunrise; and thereby those lands (Corea and Japan) were awed into submission for many years, and our eastern frontier remained quiet and pro-
tected; neither of these nations presumed to incroach on our possessions." The Valley of Sunrise, used in the Shu King or Book of Records, is regarded as a synonym of Corea, and the fu-sang tree is here connected with that land. A few sentences on, Gov. Sū quotes from another book called Records of Ten Islands or Regions: "In the sea towards the northeastern shores lie Fu-sang, Pāng-kiu and Ying-chau; their entire circuit is a thousand li." He then adds, "I think that the story about these Three Fairy Hills arose from the exaggerated descriptions of our own writers, who used them to deceive and mislead men; for really they were small islands contiguous to Japan and belonging to it. If their ships of that period went to them out in the ocean, why could not [our people?] find them if they had searched for them?" He then relates the quixotic expedition sent by Tain Chi Hwangti under Sū Fuh, to find them, with several thousand men and women, none of whom ever returned. From this reference it may be concluded that Gov. Sū regarded Fu-sang and the other two to belong to the Kurile islands near Yezo. He had access to many works in his own literature, and took unwearyed pains to get at the truth of what he was writing about, by asking intelligent foreigners who were able to tell him. Among these were Rev. David Abeel (whose aid he acknowledges), and M. C. Morrison, a son of Rev. Dr. Morrison, the missionary. His opinion deserves to be received as that of an intelligent scholar, though he knew nothing of the question started by De Guignes.

In reading the Marquis's translation of Yu Kieh's story, an English scholar can hardly fail to compare it with the Voyage to Laputa; for that land was placed not far from Fu-sang by its clever discoverer and historian. Dean Swift, like Yu Kieh, drew on his imagination for his facts. The numerous references in that Voyage to the people of China, their institutions, peculiarities, costumes, and manners, must have been derived or suggested to him by the writings of Semedo, Martini, Mendez Pinto, and other travelers in Asia before 1720, which were probably in Sir William Temple's library. But one would almost as soon think of quoting Swift's assertion in Chap. iii. of this Voyage regarding "the two lesser stars or satellites which revolve about Mars," as proof that Prof. Asaph Hall's discovery of 1876 had been already known in Queen Anne's reign, as to seriously undertake from these Chinese authors to prove that they knew the American continent by the name of Fu-sang.

Sect. xviii.—Nū Kwoh (女國), or Kingdom of Women.

Concerning the Kingdom of Women the shaman Hwui-shin relates:—"It is a thousand li to the east of Fu-sang. The bearing
and manners of the people are very sedate and formal; their color is exceedingly clear and white; their bodies are hairy and the hair of the head trails on the ground. In the spring they emulously rush into the water and become pregnant; the children are born in the autumn. These female-men have no paps on their bosoms, but hair-roots grow on the back of their necks; a juice is found in the white ones. The children are suckled a hundred days, when they can walk; they are fully grown by the fourth year. Whenever they see a man they flee and hide from him in terror, for they are afraid of having husbands. They eat pickled greens, whose leaves are like wild celery; the odor is agreeable and the taste saltish."

In the year A. D. 508, in the reign of Wu-ti of the Liang dynasty, a man from Tsin-ngan was crossing the sea when he was caught in a storm and driven to a certain island. On going ashore he found it to be inhabited. The women were like those in China, but their speech was unintelligible. The men had human bodies, but their heads were those of dogs, and their voices resembled the barking of dogs. Their food was small pulse; their garments were like cotton. The walls of their houses were of adobie, round in shape, and the entrance like that to a den.

From this account following that of Fu-sang, we might conclude that Ma Twan-lin regarded Hwui-shin alone as his authority for both of them, as he is quoted at the beginning of each section. But the incident of A. D. 508 may have been taken from the History of the Liang Dynasty. The mention of Tsin-ngan (晉安), however, as the residence of the shipwrecked man who found the Nü Kwoh, shows how little dependence can be placed on the Buddhist priest’s estimate of the distance or direction of either Fu-sang or Nü Kwoh from China. The only seaport of that day named Tsin-ugan was the present Fu-tien hien (濱田縣), identical with the prefectural city of Hing-hwa, situated between Fu-chau and Tsüen-chau in the province of Fuhkien. This man was probably a fisherman bound for the Pescadore Islands, who was driven off by a storm through the Bashee Straits into the Pacific Ocean, among the islands east of the Philippines. I think the priest is not responsible for the sailor’s story, as it is omitted in the Yuen Kien Lui Han, and only the first part given. The legend of the Nü Kwoh probably applies to two places. Sir John Maundevile* places his Lund of Amazoyne beside the Lund of Caldee where Abraham dwelt; but his Yle of Nacumera, where “alle the men and wómen of that Yle have Houndes Hedes; and thei ben clete Cynocephali,” might be looked for where the History of the Liang Dynasty puts them as well as anywhere else.

*Maundevile’s Voyage, ed. by Halliwell, 1839, pp. 154, 197.
In his Book of *Marco Polo* (ed. 1871, vol. ii., pp. 338–340), Col. Yule has brought together notices of the various legends which have appeared from time to time in Eastern Asia of this fabled land of Females, to illustrate what the Venetian has reported in Chap. xxxi. about the "Two Islands called Male and Female." In his other admirably edited work, *Cathay and the Way Thither* (page 324), he alludes to the report of Marignolli, about A. D. 1330, of a kingdom in Sumatra ruled by women. The first part of Ma's notice, which is certainly ascribed to the Shaman, leads one to look northeasterly toward the Kurile Islands for people with so much hair; and suggests a comparison with the inhabitants of Alaska called Kutchin Indians, described in Bancroft's *Native Races*, vol. i., pp. 115, 147, sqq. But it would not be worth while to spend much time in looking for this fabled land, had not the idea got abroad that its location would aid in identifying Fu-sang with some part of America.

**Sect. xix.**—*Wan Shan* (文身), or Picture Bodies.

During the Liang dynasty (A. D. 502–556), it was reported that about seven thousand li to the northeast of Japan there was a country whose inhabitants had marks on their bodies such as are on animals. They had three marks on their foreheads. Those whose marks were large and straight belonged to the honorable class, while the lower sort of people had small and crooked marks. It is a custom among this people to collect a great variety of things of a very poor sort to amuse themselves. Those who travel or peddle do not carry any provision with them. They have houses of various kinds, but no walled towns. The palace of the king is adorned with gold, silver, and jewels in a sumptuous manner. The buildings are surrounded with a moat over ten feet broad. When it is filled with quicksilver, and the rain is allowed to flow off from the quicksilver, the water is then regarded in the markets as a precious rarity.

It is not certain whether marking and painting the body, or tattooing is intended by this term wan shân; but as the Chinese have a technical term king 髸, used in this extract to denote the process, it proves that tattooing must be here intended. This practice is less common among the islanders in the North Pacific than in the South, where a warmer climate enables them to show off their pretty colors and figures. The courses and distances from Japan here given would land us in Alaska, but no weight can be attached to them in this quotation from the Liang Records.

The distinction of rank indicated by the different lines described in this extract is like that in force among the Eskimo
tribes near Icy Cape, as described by Armstrong: "At Point Barrow the women have on the chin a vertical line about half an inch broad in the center, extending from the lip, with a parallel but narrower one on either side of it, a little apart. Some had two vertical lines protruding from either angle of the mouth, which is a mark of their high position in the tribe" (Bancroft, vol. i., page 48). The practice of tattooing has been so common at various times among the Chinese, Japanese, and other inhabitants of Eastern Asia, that nothing can be inferred regarding the country here intended. The singular notice of filling the moat with quicksilver may be paralleled by Sz' ma Tsien's description of the wonderful subterranean tomb of the great conqueror Tsin Chi Hwangti (B. C. 270) in Shensi, wherein he tells us that "rivers, lakes, and seas were imitated by means of quicksilver caused to flow in constant circulation by mechanism."

Sect. xx.—Ta Han (大漢), or Great China.

It was reported, during the Liang dynasty, that this kingdom lay more than five thousand li east of Wăn Shăn. The inhabitants have no soldiers or weapons, and never carry on war. Their manners and customs are the same as those of the Wăn Shăn, but their speech differs.

In Chap. 231 of the Yuen Kien Lui Han (墨簡類函), a valuable Cyclopaedia compiled by orders of the Emperor Kanghi and issued in 1710, this section is quoted verbatim from the Nan Shi of Li Yen-shau, the same source from which Ma Twan-lin got it. Though that history contains the records of the Liang dynasty (A. D. 502-557), it was not written till about one century afterwards, in the Tang dynasty; and during that interval nothing more seems to have been learned about the lands of Fu-sang, Ta Han, or Nü Kwoh. Nor had Ma Twan-lin found anything in his day, six centuries afterwards, to add to what the shaman Hwui-shin reported; while this Cyclopaedia, the product of a commission of learned men who ransacked the literature of China to find whatever was valuable and insert it, contains just the same story, hoary with the 1200 years' repose it had had in the Nan Shi. To show the carelessness of these compilers in their work, in Chap. 241 another kingdom is described under the name of Ta Han, but not a word is added to indicate how two kingdoms should have had the same name. This last is equally vague with the first in respect to its identification, and reads as follows:—

"The New Records of the Tang Dynasty say:—Ta Han borders on the north of Kûh (胡); it is rich in sheep and
Notices of Fu-sang.

horses. The men are tall and large, and this has given the
name Ta Han (i.e. Great China) to their country. This
kingdom and Kuäh are both conterminous with Kieh-kiah-sze (請
夏 斯), and therefore they were never seen as guests [in our
court]. But during the reigns Ching-kwan and Yung-hwui
(A.D. 627 to 656) they presented sable skins and horses, and
were received. It may be that they have come once since that
time.”

The compilers of the Cyclopaedia abridged this extract some-
what, for they do not refer to Lake Baikal (劍 海), where
Ta Han joins the countries of the Kieh-kiah-sze and Kuäh, and
thus help to identify it. The next section contains an extract
of seven pages from the New Records of Tang about the Kieh-
kiah-sze or Hakas, whom Klaproth regards as the ancestors of
the Kirghis now dwelling in Tomsk. If half of this account
be true, the Hakas formed a powerful kingdom in the Tang
dynasty, and their neighbors Ta Han and Kuäh are to be looked
for on the River Yenisei, or more probably between the An-
gara and Vitim rivers.

The effort of Prof. Neumann to identify the first-named Ta
Han with Alaska, simply because he places Wân Shan among
the Aleutian Islands, and Ta Han lies 5000 li east of it, is
based alone on reported distances that are mere guesses. Mr.
Leland also refers to De Guignes’ opinion that Ta Han meant
Kamchatka, and that Wân Shan was Yezo, and adds this com-
ment:—“De Guignes determined with great intelligence that
the country of the Wen-schin, 7000 li northwest of Japan, must
be Jezo, from the exact agreement of the accounts given of
that country by Chinese historians of the early part of the sixth
century (Goei-chi and Ven-hien-tum-hao, A.D. 510–515) with
that of Dutch navigators in 1648. Both describe the extra-
ordinary appearance of the natives, and speak of the abundance
of a peculiar mineral resembling quicksilver”—page 129. Mr.
Leland has been misled in regard to this agreement by not
knowing that these supposed historians are only the names of
two books, viz: Records of the Wei Dynasty (A.D. 386 to 543),
and the same Antiquarian Researches from which I have trans-
lated these six sections. He also assumes that Hwui-shin and
his predecessors went by sea, adding that this was “no impos-
tible thing at a time when in China both astronomy and navi-
gation were sciences in a high sense of the word.”

Sect. xxi.—Chü-jü Kwoh (侏儒 國), or Land of Pygmies.

In the kingdom of Chü-jü the men are four feet high. Still far-
ther south of it come the Black Teeth Kingdom, and the Naked
Peoples’ Land, distant from Japan over four thousand li. It re-
quires a year's sailing for a vessel to get to them. About ten thousand ft to the southwest live islanders whose bodies are black and eyes white; they are naked and hideous; their flesh is delicate. If one of them is shot with an arrow when traveling, his body is eaten.

In Col. Yule's *Marco Polo*, it is stated (vol. ii., p. 358) that the number of islands in the Indian and Pacific oceans is estimated at 12,000 as a round number; and in his *Cathay*, he gives a European map of that region, dated 1875, in which the total is placed at 7,548. This particular figure was no doubt obtained from *Marco Polo*'s larger number, though the process of derivation is not clear. One of the islands is specially marked Naked Savages; it lies off the Chinese coast, near where the Pescadore group is situated. Of these four islands, that of the last named probably refers to the Australians, if the distance from Japan is at all to be considered; but more probably the Dayaks of Borneo are meant. The Black Teeth Kingdom need not be sought after, for the prevalence of Malay tribes which blacken their teeth by chewing betel-nut, the usage no doubt referred to, makes it impossible to specify any particular nation. The Land of Pygmies probably denotes those parts of Celebes or Papua where the Negritos still form a portion of the population; they sometimes come to Singapore in the Bugis vessels from Celebes. Edward Lane speaks of the Arab legends respecting pygmies in this part of the world, and resolves them all into bad accounts of the apes so common in the Archipelago. It is more likely that the Arab legends had travestied the men into apes. The story quoted by Friar Oderic, in 1818, about the pygmies or Biduini, who lived on the banks of the Talay—"the greatest river that exists in the world"—in the western part of China, is illustrated by Col. Yule (*Cathay*, p. 121) with his usual research; but no one has heard of them since Oderic's day. In Pickering's * Races of Men* (Bohn's ed., pp. 175-180) the Negrillos or Negritos are described as still inhabiting many islands, or hiding themselves in the forests of the larger ones from other more powerful races of the Indian Archipelago.

---

**Sect. xxii.—Chang-jin Kwoh (長人國), or the Kingdom of Giants.**

This land is situated to the east of Sin-lo. The inhabitants belong to the human race; their bodies are thirty feet high. They saw their teeth and make hooks of their nails; they have black hair on the body, and crouching bodies. They eat no food cooked by fire, but gnaw birds and beasts, or pounce on a man in
order to eat him. They get a wife for the purpose of preparing their clothes. Their country is contiguous to a range of mountains several thousand li in extent, in which there is a narrow pass or cañon secured firmly by a two-leaved iron gate called the Guard-gate. The people of Sin-lo constantly maintain a guard of several thousand bowmen and soldiers to defend it.

It will occur to the English reader that Dean Swift had probably met with some references to these Chinese notions of strange lands in his reading, and developed his descriptions of Lilliput and Brobdingnag from their hints. The Pacific Ocean in his day was a region of wonders, almost as much as in the time of Marco Polo and Ma Twan-lin. Sin-lo (信 羅) is an old name for a kingdom in the eastern and southern part of Corea; and the Land of Giants must therefore be looked for in the islands of Quelpaert and Tsu-shima near by; or in some mountain fastness on the mainland. There is less to suppose about them, however, than their counterparts, the Pygmies; for not even a fossil fragment has yet been found of human beings who could overtop a giraffe or a dinornis.

A Japanese notice of them both, with other monsters, occurs in the Kun Mo Deu I (訓 材 目 彙) or Pictures arranged in Classes to teach Children. I have introduced one of the drawings, which does credit to the native artist in his effort to convey some idea of their relative sizes. Respecting the giants the author says: "The Chio-zhin or Tall People are called Sê-taka. Some people during the Ming dynasty were driven out to sea by a tempest, and reached the land where these people lived. They are over fourteen feet high, and very skillful in swimming." The same book says of the Pygmies:—"Their country lies to the eastward. Their bodies are from twelve to eighteen inches high. In that region the storks eat these dwarfs, so that they always go in companies to protect themselves." As to the Chu-jū (侏 僕) or Pygmies, this writer adds: "They are called issun boshi, i. e. inch elfins, for they measure only one inch; another name is tan-shin or short people." Besides the above, this work describes the Chio-hi koku, or the Land of Long-armed men, a small country in the Eastern sea. "The people have cotton clothes; their arms reach to the ground as they stand, and are seventeen feet long." Their counterparts, the Long-legged people, will run as fast as the wild beasts.

These lands are of course placed in remote regions, and most of them were first reached by sailors driven out of their reckoning, just as in English literature Lemuel Gulliver, Robinson Crusoe, and Peter Wilkins are each fabled to have reached the lands associated with their names after losing their
ships. The family likeness which pervades these Asiatic stories about giants and pygmies seems to point to a common origin. This is particularly the case with the Japanese story of the pygmies, whose efforts to protect themselves from the storks will recall Homer’s allusions to those who dwelt on the coasts of Oceanus, and were in constant danger of being snapped up by cranes. Pliny put them in Transgangetic India. The date of this Japanese work is, however, too recent to preclude the inference that the author may have heard of similar Occidental legends.

SECT. XXIII.—KINGDOM OF LIU-KIU (琉球), OR LEWCHEW.

The Lewchew kingdom is an island in the ocean. To the east of the prefecture of Tsien-chau [in the province of Fuhkien] are the islands called Pang-hu, or Pescadores. They lie near together, so that the fire signals can be seen from each other. The trip occupies five days’ sail. There are many caves in the hills.
Notices of Fu-sang.

The surname of the king is Kwan-se'; his name is Ho-lah-tau; it is not known whence he came, but there have been many generations of the family. The people of that country call him Ko-lo-yang, and his wife is To-pah-tu; the place where he lives is Po-to-tan tung. The most around it has three separate rows of palisades, one behind the other; it encircles it so as to let water flow in. Stockades, for defense, are made of spinous trees. The largest abode of the king has sixteen apartments; fine carvings are seen in them of beasts and birds, and also numerous jingling bells. A common kind of tree resembles the orange with thick foliage; the slender branches hang down like hair.

The kingdom has four or five generals who oversee all the districts; each district has a petty king. Wherever one goes there are villages, each of which has a headman, who wears an ornament like a bird, and is selected for his skill as a fighter. They all unite in setting out (or apart) trees, where the affairs of the village are managed. Both men and women bind their hair with white hempen cords, coiling it up from the nape of the neck quite to the forehead. The men make a cap out of birds' plumes, in which they interweave pearls and cowries, and further adorn with red feathers; the style of these head-dresses differs much.

The women make caps out of figured soft gauze and white cloth, square and upright in shape; they weave jingling bells in leather with all sorts of feathers, and thus form their garments. The shape and style of dresses differ much. They attach feathers to a string and hang on periwinkle shells for ornament, so that their colors shall be well contrasted. Small cowries are suspended from them which make a jingling sound like a chatelain; little cymbals also hang from the armlets, and strings of pearls around the neck. Hats are braided out of twining plants, and then adorned with plumes and feathers. They possess swords and scabbards, bows and arrows, rapiers, poniards, and other weapons. Iron is very scarce in the kingdom, so that their swords being thin and small, they employ much horn and bone to strengthen them. They plait hemp to make mail-armor, or else prepare the skins of bears and leopards for the purpose.

The king rides in a wooden car, shaped like an animal, borne on the shoulders of his guard and attended by a retinue of about ten men. The petty kings ride in a frame made like a loom, on which hang bells resembling animals. The inhabitants of the kingdom delight in fighting and pugilistic combats. The men are courageous and brave and very agile in running; they show contempt of death and much fortitude when wounded. The lords of the districts employ bands of retainers, but they never rescue or help each other. When two bands of warriors are pitted against each other, three or five men from each will rush out in front leaping and yelling, bandying words and mutual railings before they rush together and shoot their arrows. As soon as one side is worsted, the whole band scatters in flight; messengers are then dispatched to make an apology, and all parties enter into a peace before sep-
arating. If any of their number were killed in the fight, all come together and eat the bodies; it is the usage to put the skulls and bones around the king's palace; he confers [on those who slew them] a cap of honor, and they become leaders in the band.

There are no regular taxes collected; when any work is to be done there is a general levy of scutage to accomplish it. There is no well-settled or constant scale of punishments, but the whole community assembles to deliberate on and decide the cases after careful examination. Criminals are all sentenced by the bird-orned headman [of the village]; but if there is an appeal, and his decision does not end it, then it is carried before the king. He orders his officers to assemble in general council upon the case and give their final verdict. The prisons have no cangues or keys, for the prisoners are simply bound with ropes. Capital punishment is inflicted with an iron needle, like a chopstick, ten or twelve inches long, which is thrust into the nape of the neck. Lighter crimes are punished by bambooing.

There is no written character among the people. They keep their reckoning of time by noting the waning and waxing of the moon, and watch the flowering and fading of the trees and shrubs to learn the passage of the year.

The people have deep-sunken eyes and long noses, in which they resemble the Ouigours. They are not very quick-witted. There is no well-marked distinction between the high and low in official ranks, nor between the prince and his ministers, or in their acts of decorum when they meet. Father and son sleep in the same bed. Young men pull out the mustache and whiskers, and remove the hair from the body. Married women mark the hands with ink, like tattooing, making figures of snakes and insects. Marriages are performed with feasting and drinking; pearls and cowries form the betrothal presents. If a young man and woman like each other then they make a match. When a woman bears a child and suckles it, she is required to eat the placenta. After parturition she roasts herself before a fire in order to sweat off the humors; in five days she is quite well again and all right.

Sea-water is poured into large wooden troughs; it is then evaporated in the sun to procure salt. The sap of trees is used to make pickles. Samshu is made by putting leaven into rice; its taste is very weak. In eating, the fingers only are used. If one comes across a rare delicacy he first goes and offers it to his overlord. In all their feasts and assemblies, when a person is about to drink he is required to call out his name before he drains the cup. If he is feasting with the king he first calls out the king's name, when they touch their goblets, something after the custom among the Toorks, and then drain them. In their songs they keep step as they cry out; one man sings and all the rest keep time with him; the notes are rather melancholy and exciting. They raise a girl up on their shoulders, and then, swinging the hands, will dance round and round as mummers do.

When the last hours of a sick person approach they lift him out
to the arbor in front of the house. The relatives and neighbors wait and weep and condole together. The body is washed, and then swathed and bound with cotton cloths, after which it is rolled up in matting, enveloped in earth, and then put in a coffin for burial. No tumulus is raised over it. When a son mourns for his father he eats no meat for several months. The usages among the natives in the southern districts are a little different; for there, when a man is dead, the villagers and townsfolk come together and eat the body.

Among the beasts are found bears, leopards, and wolves; pigs and poultry are very numerous, but horses, asses, sheep, goats, or oxen are quite unknown. The fields are fertile and moist. They are first burned over and then irrigated through sluices in which the water runs; the streams have one water-gate only. Stones are used for coulters; they are about fourteen inches long and several inches wide; ground is plowed with them. The crops are rice, sorghum, millet (Milium), spiked millet (Setaria), pulse, red and black and large beans, etc. The trees are maple, fir, bamboo, tianos, pine, elm, rattler, laurel, and fruit trees. The medicines are like those found in our Middle Kingdom. The air and seasons resemble those south of the Nan-ling range of mountains.

The popular practice in worshiping the gods of the mountains and seas is to offer spirits and rich delicacies. To those who are killed in a battle or quarrel, the thing which killed them is offered as a sacrifice to their manes. Sometimes a small house is raised against a fine large tree; or the skeleton is hung in the tree and the people shoot arrows at it; or a tumulus of stones is raised over the body, to which is fastened a mourning banner, as the ancestral tablet. Where the king resides many skeletons and skulls are brought together beneath the wall screening the gateway so as to show its rank. In the vacant spaces above the gates and inner doors they hang the heads, bones, and horns of animals.

In the first year of the reign of Yang-ti of the Sui dynasty (A.D. 605), admiral Ho-man and others gave the following report:—

"During the spring and autumn of each year, when the sky is clear and the breeze refreshing, if one looked eastward he saw something thin or vapory, like foggy smoke arising from a fire; one could not tell how many thousand it off it lay." The emperor ordered Chu Kwan, the master of the horse, to go to sea and search for this region and find out its customs. Taking Ho-man's words for his clue, and several of his people, they went off together and reached the kingdom of Lewchew. They could not understand the language spoken there, so they seized a man and returned. Next year the emperor bade Chu Kwan to soothe and re-assure the man; but he was obstinate and gathered his clothes and armor to go back. About that time a Japanese envoy came to court, and seeing the man, remarked: "This savage is one of the men employed in the kingdom of Sié-kiu." The emperor then ordered Chin Ling, general of the Tiger Braves, to lead a body of soldiers and cross from In-gan (Swatow or Chao-chau fu) to the
island of Kao-wa (the Madjico-sima group?); from thence two days more took them to Yuen-pi (Kirrima islands?); and another day to Lewchew. The people there would not submit, and general Chin Ling attacked and routed them; he went on as far as the capital, where he burned the palace, and took captive several thousand men and women, whom he put amongst his troops with their goods, and returned. Since that time intercourse has been broken off.

In its neighborhood lies the kingdom of Pi-shé-yé, or Formosa, whose inhabitants speak an unknown language, go naked, and have such a stupid look that one can hardly imagine them to be human. About the year A. D. 1174, in the Sung dynasty, a chief-tain from this land led several hundred of his wild followers to the towns of Shui-ngao, Wei-tao, and others in Tsuen-chau prefecture [in Fuhkien], where they slew and captured many people. They highly prized iron things, spoons, and chopsticks. The inhabitants shut their doors and fled, but took their door-rings; and as they went, they threw away the spoons and chopsticks. The brigands stopped to pick them up, which constantly delayed their progress, so that our troops were able to catch and bind several. When they saw an armed horseman they would struggle to strip off his mail, and joining their heads would kill him. They used spears in fighting, and would tie a string to the weapon, a hundred feet long or more, so as to pull it back to them, so highly did they prize the iron, and could not bear to throw it away. They used no boats or oars, but sailed about on bamboo rafts; these could be piled up on each other like screens; if an emergency arose, the whole company would lift them up, set them adrift, and thus escape.

This account probably confounds the inhabitants of Lewchew and Formosa in several particulars, yet it possesses historical interest as one of the earliest references to those islands. The details bear internal evidences of being the actual observations of travelers, who had remained there long enough to learn about the people and furnish some account of them. In this respect it is far more satisfactory than the priest Hwui-shin's report about Fu-sang. The names given to the countries near Lewchew of Kao-wa (高華), Yuen-pi (靈璧), and Pi-shé-yé (毗舍耶), which I have identified as the Madjico-sima group, Kirrima Islands, and Formosa, must be received with some hesitation, as I have no means of verifying them; and their resemblance in sound to any actual localities cannot now be expected.

Ma Twan-lin names no authorities for this notice of the Lewchewans; but as the allusion to the descent of a band of rovers from Formosa, in 1174, during the reign of the emperor Hisotsung, speaks of an event which took place only about seventy-five years before his own birth, there is reason for concluding
Notices of Fu-sang.

that the section was made up from documents and books compiled during the reign of Li-tsung, under whom his father held high office. The names he gives to the king and queen of Lewchew and his residence, as Kwan-sz (歉斯) and Ho-lah-tau (羅剌九), Ko-lo-yang (可老羊) and To-pah-tu (多拔茶), with Po-lo-tan tung (波羅檀洞) for the capital, cannot, at this interval, be at all recognized from any books to which I have access.

In concluding these extracts from Ma Twan-lin's writings, I need hardly draw attention to the vagueness which marks them, when we look for any definite information. His long chapter on Japan bears more marks of well digested information than any of those which are here given, and indicates constant intercourse between it and China. Mr. Leland quotes from several authors whatever will elucidate and uphold his theory respecting Fu-sang, and deserves thanks for his research in this interesting question. He has, however, been led astray by a similarity, or an error, in spelling to confound Kamchatka with Lewchew, in the following extract, made up from Steller, a German writer of 1734: "Lieu-kuei (Loo-choo) or Hing-goci, as the Kamchatdales of the present day term their fellow countrymen dwelling on the Penshinish Bay, is situated, according to the Chinese Year Books, 15,000 Chinese miles distant from the capital, which, according to the measurement of the celebrated astronomer Ihan, in the time of Tang, gives about 388 to one of our grades—the Chinese grades being rather smaller than our geographical. Now Si-gan, the capital of China during the dynasty of Tang, lies in the district Schensi, lat. 34° 15' 34" N. and long. 106° 34' E. from Paris. Petropaulowski (Peter and Paul's Haven), on the contrary, according to Preuss, lies lat. 58° 0' 59" N. and long. 153° 19' 56" E. from Paris. These are differences which the accounts of the Chinese Year Books establish in an astonishing manner, and leave no doubt whatever as to the identity of Kamchatka with Lieu-kuei; for it is certainly satisfactory, if estimates of such great distances, drawn in all probability from the accounts of half-savage sailors, or quite savage natives, should agree within two or three grades with accurate astronomical results."—Fusang, page 15.

It is impossible and needless to analyze this mélange, for it has nothing to do with Fu-sang or its locality; but it led me to add this translation of Ma Twan-lin's section on Lewchew. Mr. Leland has a note in which he says, "it is evidently borrowed from the Tang-schu, but is much better arranged, and contains some original incidents, on which account I have freely availed myself of it." I have no means of verifying this statement, and therefore am unable to say how far Ma quoted from the History of the Tang, and also to explain whether Kam-
chatka was ever called Lieu-kuei, and what the Chinese characters for this name are;—or whether Lieu-kuei is a misprint for Liu-kiu or Lewchew. The name of this insular kingdom has been written a dozen ways by foreigners; it is called Riu-kiu by the Japanese, Doo-choo by the inhabitants, Low-kow by the Cantonese, and Lewchew by the Ningpo people; but it could never have been confounded with Kamchatka by either of them.

Since Commodore Perry's visit in 1853 and 1854, and the residence of missionaries at Napa, these islanders have become better known; and the halo cast around them by Basil Hall and Lieut. Clifford, in their narratives of the visit of the frigate Alceste in 1816, has been dissipated. They began to have official intercourse with China in 1873, when Zai-to, the king of Chung-shan, sent an envoy to the Emperor Hungwu at Nanking, who five years before had expelled the Mongols. In 1609, they came under the control of the prince of Satzuma; but during the interval of 236 years they became well acquainted with Chinese literature and usages, retaining their own spoken dialect of the Japanese. The kingdom has latterly, with all the dependent islands, been incorporated into the Japanese empire, under the name of Okinawa ken, and the royal family recently removed to Tokio.

There are several points in this notice of Lewchew which tally with what is now seen among the people. The manufacture of salt from sea-water is largely carried on, as the traveler can see on landing at Napa or Pu-tsung, where the salt vats employ many workmen. The custom of married women staining their hands with a dye, so as to resemble tattooing, is still observed. When I visited Napa, in 1887, the islanders had not seen Europeans for twenty years, and those on board the ship Morrison were strange to most of them. Among the party which landed one evening for a stroll, were Mr. and Mrs. C. W. King. We were surrounded by an eager crowd as soon as we stepped ashore, and took our way towards a hamlet not far off. Seeing a woman standing by herself near a door, Mrs. King went alone towards her, and held out a hand in token of friendliness, while the rest of us looked on until the interview had disclosed her feelings. The woman presently came forward and showed Mrs. King the blue mark on the back of her hand to indicate that she was married; but her amazement at seeing Mrs. King begin to pull off a glove to show her that she was not thus marked was a study to the rest of us, for the woman thought it was a second skin.
ARTICLE V.

INDRA IN THE RIG-VEDA.

BY EDWARD DELAVAN PERRY,
TUTOR IN GREEK AND SANSKRIT IN COLUMBIA COLLEGE, NEW YORK.

Presented to the Society October 28th, 1880.

The primary object of this essay is to give as distinct an account as possible of the great god Indra, as he appears in the light shed upon him by the Rig-Veda; more especially to determine with accuracy his position in the Vedic pantheon, and his original significance (his Naturbedeutung): i.e. the powers of nature which lie behind and are symbolized by this striking personification. The preliminary part of all such work must of course be a searching examination of the hymns themselves, and a conscientious interpretation of all passages in any way bearing upon the subject. Great care has been taken to avoid two dangers: on the one hand, that of overhasty combination and comparison with seeming parallels in extra-Indian mythology; and on the other, that of following too closely what may be called the ritualistic tendency, which puts these ancient hymns (which in the main breathe out the freshness of nature, and display the Indian people in the vigor of youth) on the same level with the religious monstrosities of a cunning, subtle, ingenious and yet frivolous priesthood of a later age, and attempts to explain obscure points in the text by not less imperfectly understood details of the later ceremonial. To the first of these perils L. Myriantheus seems to have fallen a prey; his work, Die Aepins oder Ariischen Dioskuren, was published at Munich in 1876. The other has often proved disastrous to Alfred Hillebrandt, who is represented in this field by two books, Ueber die Götter Aditi (Breslau, 1876), and Varuna und Mitra (1877).
The Rig-Veda is the only source from which materials have been drawn. The Brāhmaṇas show so decided an advance beyond Vedic ideas that great confusion would inevitably have accompanied any attempt to combine them. The same reason prevailed with regard to the Yajus. As for the Sāman, it contains only sixty or seventy verses not found in the Rik, and these offer nothing whatever of value; while a preliminary examination of the Atharvan showed that the results to be obtained from it would not differ materially from those furnished by the Rik, for which reason its discussion may well be postponed.

The essay is divided into four parts, as follows: I. The primitive conceptions of the Indians regarding Indra, and the powers of nature which are represented under this personification; II. The accounts of Indra’s parentage, and the narratives and legends of his birth; III. The functions of Indra in the supernatural and natural, the moral and the physical world, and his relations with other gods; IV. The conception of Indra as a definite person, and the resulting description of him.

I. Indra’s Significance in Nature.

For many years, from the pioneer labors of Roth in the field of Vedic exegesis to the latest researches of Ludwig and Bergaigne, most Sanskrit specialists and comparative mythologists have viewed Indra as a god of the sky—whether, on the one hand, of the radiant and sunny, or, on the other, of the rainy sky. For the first at all complete exposition of the subject we have to thank Roth, who in an essay in Zeller’s Theologisches Jahrbuch for 1846 (p. 352) styles Indra “the first of the gods, born before the other immortals, whom he has adorned with power; the god of the bright clear vault of Heaven. His cheerful yet majestic appearance makes him the protector of human beings and the dispenser of riches.” A note adds: “Indra signifies ‘the radiant one;’ from the root iđh, indh, ‘kindle;’ related to aiðw, aiḏh, in which the root is strengthened.” The next year Roth modified his views as follows (Zeitsch. d. D. Morg. Ges., 1847, p. 72): “Indra is the supreme god of the Vedic belief, or at least the one whose rule and power most immediately concerns the life of mankind. He is the god of the cheerful sky of day, which after all obscurations again shines forth, and upon which depend fruitfulness of the earth and the quiet enjoyment of human existence.” Roth’s later views, as expressed in the Petersburg Dictionary, we shall find essentially different. Lassen (Indische Alterthumskunde, 2nd edit., i. 893) takes in the main
this view, but adopts a different derivation of the name. Wuttke (Geschichte des Heidentums, 1852, ii. 241), deviating widely from all previous opinions, and completely failing to grasp the conceptions of Indra offered by the older literature, saw him only in the light of the later Brahmanic descriptions. Benfey (Orient und Occident, 1862, p. 48 ff.) regarded Indra as god of the rain-sky. He says: "It can be proved conclusively that Indra stepped into the place of the sky-god, who in the Vedas is addressed in the vocative as dyaush pitar." But, so far as I know, this has not yet been proved. Benfey's derivation of the name indra is, as will be seen below, utterly untenable. Max Müller says in his Lectures on the Science of Language (ii. 470): "The real representative of Jupiter in the Vedas is not Dyu but Indra, a name of Indian growth, and unknown in any other independent branch of Aryan language. Indra was another conception of the bright blue sky." And, on page 473, note 35: "Indra, a name peculiar to India, admits of but one cymology: i.e. it must be derived from the same root, whatever that may be, which in Sanskrit yielded indu, 'drop, sap.' It meant originally the giver of rain, the Jupiter Pluvius, a deity more often present to the mind of the worshipper than any other. Cf. Benfey, Or. u. Occ., i. 49." But in his Chips (ii. 91) the same scholar calls him "the chief solar deity of India"! The identity of Indra with Jupiter Pluvius is also maintained by Muir, Sanskrit Texts, v. 77. Grassmann (Wbch. zum R. V., s. v. indra) calls him the god of the bright firmament. Myriantheus (Die Aevina, p. xvi.), whose account of Indra is chiefly remarkable for calm assurance of statement, again identifies him with Dyu; while Ludwig (Die philosophischen und religiösen Anschauungen des Veda, p. 33) characterizes him thus: "It is very difficult to determine Indra's precise mythological nature, since he unites in himself the characteristics of several older divinities. It is perhaps most correct to style him the god of the sky, under whose protection and guidance stand on the one hand the sun and stars—hence his friendship with Pusan and Visnu—on the other the phenomena of the thunderstorm." Again, (R. V. Tranal., iii. 313): "Dyaus is described similarly with Indra, who is doubtless a mere reusuration of the older god who had been for a time thrust into the background by the rise of the Varuna-cult, and whose identity with Zeus was long ago recognized." (See also p. 318 of the same volume.) Bergaigne, in his work entitled La Religion Védique d'après les hymnes du Rig-Veda (Paris, 1878, p. xvi.), pays no attention whatever to the nature-side of the god's personality, but views merely his ethical side. He calls him the god of battle, and says of him: "He is more profoundly distinguished from the
elements than are the other gods.” Undoubtedly this is true, that Indra is a god of battle; but it is only half the truth; nor is he in fact more sharply distinguished from natural phenomena than several other divinities.

Differing from all these opinions, I consider that Indra belongs not among the deities of the sky, but among, or rather at the head of, those of the air—a distinction which we shall find a very important one when Indian mythology is in question. Without doubt, the strongest reason for the classification of Indra among the sky-gods has been his apparent identity with the Greek Zeus and the Italian Juppiter. And if the thunderstorm-mythos had in its development run like courses in India and in Greece and Italy, we could not avoid accepting this identification as correct. It is perfectly true that Indra has to wage the same contest as Zeus; and it is not less probable that in the yet undivided Indo-European mythology Dyu was the one to whose lot it fell to conquer the cloud-demons. Accordingly we must say, Indra had taken the place of Dyu. But the conclusion is unwarranted, that Indra was by nature a deity of the sky. We may merely say: the original functions of Dyu, a deity of the sky, as conqueror of the cloud-demons, were transferred by the Indians to another god, of different origin and different nature, who in the course of time had advanced into prominence by the side of Dyu. And this transfer is moreover in perfect accord with Vedic doctrines respecting the structure of the world. Before explaining these doctrines, however, I will endeavor to show what natural phenomenon Indra originally represented.

That he is really in the Veda the god—i. e. the personification—of the thunderstorm, is shown very plainly by several passages which are in fact detailed descriptions of that mighty convulsion of nature, and yet place the god, conceived of as a person, most prominently in the foreground. In the Veda we have to deal with a worship of nature, whose chief gods were long ago recognized as originally personifications of different powers of nature. We are therefore entitled, in this as in most other cases, to seek the most primitive conceptions which the Indians formed of their favorite god in those passages in which the descriptions of some phenomenon of nature, and of a personal being supposed to underlie the manifestations of this phenomenon, are most evidently and most intimately united. A number of such verses, relating especially to Indra, are treated of in Part II.; but I will introduce several of the most striking here, that we may in advance gather an idea of the true nature of this god. Thus, i. 55. 4: 1 “He manifests

1 śá id váne namasyúbhír vacaryate cåtu jáneśu prabruvápa índriyám.
himself in the forest by the bending trees, announcing his power (which is) held dear among men;" v. 32. 10: "Before him bends the godlike tree;" i. 55. 1: "Dreadful, mighty, the cause of woe unto men, he whets his thunderbolt;" i. 54. 1: "Thou, O Indra, seated on the woods asunder, didst make the streams to gush out; did not then mortals huddle together in terror?" Is this the god of the blue sky? Zeus is the sky-god and the sky; Indra is not the sky—he wins it for his worshippers. ii. 12. 13: "Before him Heaven and Earth bow, at his breath the mountains quake;" vi. 31. 2: "Through dread of thee, Indra, everything upon the earth trembles, yea even the immovable regions of the air; Heaven and Earth, the mountains, the forests—everything that is firm trembles at thy progress;" vi. 18. 2: "Raising the dust on high, he alone was the mighty shaker of the nations of men;" x. 92. 8: "Even the sun reins in his tawny mares; every one dreads Indra, for he is the mightier, and (fears) the blast from the body of the terrible giant; day after day he thunders, victorious, unrestrainable." In i. 52. 8, Indra is styled candrâ-budhna: i. e. 'having a white, or bright, ground.' This could be taken as descriptive of the sky, but suits better the thunder-cloud, as it advances across the bright heavens; we have only to translate 'with bright background.'

But even when we have proved that Indra was the thunder-storm, we are not yet justified in denying him a place among the sky-gods; in fact, with our minds full of Greek mythology, we should consider such a denial absurd. But let us see what views the Vedic poets held concerning the scene of action of the thunder-storm, and consequently of the thunder-god.

From the earliest Vedic times, the Indians marked off the universe in their imaginations in a manner peculiar to themselves. They assumed three separate regions: viz. of the earth, the air, and the sky; a conception which to my knowledge is not found elsewhere among Indo-European mythologies. Moreover, many natural phenomena which in still
earlier, ante-Vedic times they themselves imagined, and other Indo-Europeans continued to imagine in later times, as occurring in the sky, were by them transferred to the middle region, the district of the air, a region which in the Veda we find always sharply distinguished from the sky. This change from primitive conceptions must have been consummated at a very early date in the interval between the separation of the Indian tribes from the others of Aryan stock and the composition of the Vedic hymns, since we find in all parts of the Rig-Veda the three regions accurately and consistently kept apart, and yet they are mentioned in such a manner as to make it almost certain that the idea of the antarikṣam, the Air-region, was of later development than those of Heaven and Earth. For instance, in numerous passages Heaven and Earth are styled the universal parents, a name never applied to Heaven and Air, or Earth and Air. In i. 56. 5 we read: "When thou, O Indra, didst fasten firmly the region of air in the frame of Heaven and Earth;" ii. 15. 2: "He filled out the two worlds (i.e. Heaven and Earth, rōdaśī having always this meaning) and the air." Most plainly speaks iv. 42. 4: "The triple universe."

Parallel with this development of a specifically Indian triple division of the universe, of a third and new realm of nature, runs the development of a specifically Indian divinity, the field of whose activity is this new realm, and whose function it is to fight in mid-air the battles which the Aryan imagined as taking place in the sky. From what germ was developed the conception of this mighty deity Indra we shall never learn from the Veda, for therein he appears always as either the greatest, or among the greatest, of the gods. The occurrence of the word tīdṛa or aḥdra in Zend, as name of an evil spirit, and the Slav. jědrů, 'swift' (see below), perhaps point to his existence, in a very rudimentary form, in the mythology of the period preceding the separation. Other than these there seem to be no indications of him whatever, outside of the Indian peninsula.

For the Indian of the Vedic period, the sky was raised far above all strife; there was eternal light, eternal peace, the eternal waters, and there dwelt the bright Ādityas, in inviolable sanctity and majesty; but the air, the middle region, was alive with malicious spirits, whose power had to be broken by a god of greater power than they, by Indra. Yet to overcome the demons, Indra does not descend from Heaven into Air, for

1 vi yāt tirō dharūṇam ācyutam rājō 'tiṣṭhīpo divā śtāsu barhāpa.
2 ā rōdaśī aprāṇaḥ antārikṣam,
3 trīdhātu bhūma.
he is supposed to be there already. He advances along the horizon, between Heaven and Earth, as the poets never weary of singing; he is born there, as child of Heaven and Earth, which he forces sunder by his huge size and power (see x. 89). He is the god of battle, of the battle fought in the thunder-storm between good and bad spirits; and the battle-ground is the air, the home and gathering place of all demons.

Another proof that Indra was not thought a god of the sky is found in the references made to him in Yāśka's Nirukta, where Yāśka quotes the opinion of his predecessors that in reality there were but three gods: Sūrya (the sun) in the sky, Indra or Vāyu in the air, and Agni upon earth. Yāśka however maintains the plurality of divinities in each region, and places Indra (or Vāyu) at the head of those of the air. Significant is likewise the close connection of Indra with Vāyu and the Maruts, the wind- and storm-gods, whom it is impossible to view as celestial divinities.

For all these reasons, and for others which will be advanced in their proper place, I conclude that Roth's views as laid down in the Pet. Dict., s. v. indra, are correct. There we read: "Indra. Name of the well-known god, who in the Vedic creed stands at the head of the gods of the middle region, the atmosphere. The most prominent manifestation of his power is the battle which he has to fight with the thunder-bolt (vajra), in the thunder storm, against the demoniac powers. In his origin he is not the supreme, but the national and favorite god of the Indo-Aryan tribes, a type of heroic power used for noble ends; and with the gradual fading away of Varuṇa he advances more and more into prominence." My own investigations, so far as they reach, have all tended to confirm these views of my revered master.

In the present state of our knowledge of the Veda, perhaps as much is lost as is gained by the zeal for comparison between things Indian and things extra-Indian. The Sanskrit texts must be conscientiously worked through many times yet before we can speak with confidence upon all the religious conceptions and beliefs of those ancient rishis; and the light which so many have attempted to throw upon them from without often distorts instead of revealing the real truth.

The etymology of the word indra has been very variously explained. Yāśka gives no less than thirteen different derivations, and the number of modern attempted ones must be nearly as great. The Indian derivations are as usual absurd, yet hardly more so than the following by Benfey: syand-ant, pres. pple. of a supposed base syand; with loss of -t, syand-an; with change of -n to -r, syand-ar; with addition of -a, syand-ar-a; then sind-ar-a, sind-ra, ind-ra. Middletown out of Moses,
or mango out of Jeremiah King, are nothing to this. The most reasonable derivation is still that proposed by Roth, Pet. Dict., s. v.: viz. from the root *in* or *inv*, 'press, urge, have power over,' etc., with the suffix -ra (used to form *nomina agentia*), a euphonic *d* being inserted, as in the Greek *Δηλ-ρός*, *μεσημ-πία*, etc. The signification of 'the stormer, the oppressor' suits the character of the god to a remarkable degree; and Ludwig mentions as the only instance of the word in extra-Indian language (except perhaps *Zend *āndra* or *ahdra*) the Slav. *jedra*, 'swift, impetuous.' So too the *Āryas*, the mighty horsemen, are called *indratamā*, heretofore commonly rendered 'most like Indra,' for which 'most impetuous' would surely be better; and in vii. 99. 3 *Usha*, the Dawn, is likewise styled *indratamā*, where 'most like Indra' is eminently unsatisfactory. Better would perhaps be in this passage also the rendering 'very swift.'

II. Indra's Origin.

The Vedic poets did not content themselves with a mere personification of the thunder-storm and its at once salutary and destructive effects. On the contrary, they on the one hand gradually extended and multiplied the fields of Indra's activity in nature, and developed his original character, until they came to imagine him as interfering in all human affairs, and even as guiding the courses of the stars and bringing order and stability into the movements of the universe; while on the other hand they humanized his divine person, to a greater extent perhaps than any other of the Vedic pantheon, attributed to it a human form, and furnished it with a variety of human attributes, all of which however harmonized perfectly with the original conception which underlay this divine nature. Finally, they represented Indra as begotten by other gods, and as entering at his birth into an already existing world of divinities.

The numerous passages of the Rig-Veda which make mention of Indra's descent and birth will be best divided into four groups. In the first I shall include verses containing such conceptions as are still purely physical: that is, conceptions in which the original content of the mythus, the immediate impression received in the observation of nature, is most prominent, even in the details; in the second group, the anthropomorphistic statements—those in which Indra's *Naturbedeutung* sinks into comparative insignificance beside his humanized person, and in which his birth is described as happening in accordance with human experience and circumstances; in the third, passages which, although containing references to Indra's par-
ents, yet do not name or characterize them more definitely; and in the fourth group, such conceptions of his origin as proceed from later speculation, and are in fact nothing but mental abstractions from the chief manifestations of his activity.

It was not in accordance with the character of the Vedic people, which in fact was somewhat lacking in mythological versatility, fully to develop the genealogical side of the Indra-mythos. This lack of mythological versatility, as for want of a better term I have chosen to designate it, contrasts most sharply with the mental cast of other Indo-European peoples, especially the Greeks. Parents of Indra are indeed alluded to often enough, but rather en passant, and generally without mention of specific names. I have not found any passage in the Rig-Veda according to which any other divinity than Dyu is by name styled Indra’s father, while on the other hand the allusions to his mother are widely various. At one time it seems to be Prthivi, the Earth, at another the Rain-cloud, finally purely abstract personifications are called his progenitors. Of the view, advanced from different sources, that Indra is to be considered as son of Aditi, I shall have occasion to treat further on.

I now proceed to the discussion of the pertinent passages.

1. Physical conceptions.—In the following verses, the birth of Indra is plainly observed to be merely a mythical figure for the sudden breaking out of the thunder-storm, which advances along the horizon, on the edge of Heaven and Earth, “in the lap of the parents;” and in which the God’s nature manifests itself. Hardly is the deity born before the mighty battle of the thunderstorm, involving Heaven and Earth in confusion, begins to rage.

First of all belong here three verses of the 17th hymn of Book IV. Thus, v. 4:1 “Thy father is considered to be the mighty Heaven; the progenitor of Indra was an excellent workman, in that he begat the noisy wielder of the stout thunderbolt, who is immovable as is the earth from its seat;” v. 2:2 “In terror at thy vehemence the heaven trembled, in terror at thy fury the earth trembled, at thy birth; the firm mountains tottered, the plains crumbled, the waters dispersed;” v. 12:3 “Little cares Indra for his mother, little for his father, for the

1 suvàras te janitā manyata dyāur indrasya kartā svāpastamo bhūt: yāṁ jajāna svaryāṁ suvājram ānapacyutaṁ sādaso nā bhūma.
2 tāva tvigno jāniman rejata dyūu rējad bhūmir bhīyāsa svāsya manyōḥ: rghāyānta subhvāh pārvatāsa ardha dhānvaṇi sarāyanta āpāḥ.
3 kiyaḥ avid indro ādhy eti mātūḥ kiyaḥ pitūr jāntār yō jajāna: yō asya cīsam mukhārīr ṣrtya vāto nā jōtāḥ stanāyadbhir abhrātīḥ.

VOL. XI. 17
begetter that begat him: (Indra) who in a moment gives free rein to his violence, as it were a storm-wind amid thundering clouds.” In other words, the verse says: Indra pitilessly drag Heaven and Earth, in whose embrace he was born, into the whirlpool of the raging thunder-storm. A similar thought seems to have hovered in the mind of the author of the very intelligible passage iv. 22. 4. I understand the verse thus: “Every hillside and the many heights, the heaven and the earth, trembled before the gigantic one at his birth; when the courageous one brings his parents to the cow (i.e. to the thunder-cloud), then do the winds bellow mightily round about. The second half of the stanza seems to mean: when Indra hurries Heaven and Earth into the thickest turmoil of the thunder-storm, then etc. Here also, then, I can perceive only a description of the advancing storm, spreading swiftly over earth and sky; and so in i. 63. 1; but particularly viii. 59. 4: “(No one equals Indra,) the unconquered, the mighty one victorious in battle, at whose birth the great cows (i.e. the clouds), wandering in the wide domain (the sky), all bellowed together—yea, even heaven and earth bellowed together.”

In each of these passages the reference to the approach of the storm is unmistakable. In others the description is more detailed. Here is one of a thunder-storm in the mountains a daybreak: viii. 6. 28–30: “On the slope of the mountains and at the junction of the streams, the wise one was born through devotion (i.e. the storm was sent in answer to the prayers of the rain-seeking worshippers); viewing the sea of air, he looks down from this height, from whence, quivering he rages; then first does one see the light of morning, sprang from the ancient seed, as it flashes out along the sky.” Similarly i. 6. 3: “Giving light unto darkness, and shape unto the shapeless (i.e. illumining the darkness of the night or the grasp of the morning with lightning-flashes) thou wast born together with the dawns.”

A good parallel to this conception of a storm at daybreak is found in several passages which relate the violent treatment of Uṣas, the Dawn, by Indra, who shatters her ear and drives her in terror from it; but the treatment of them here would

---

1 vīṣvā rōḍhāṣā pravātaḥ ca pūrvir dyāūr ṛavāj jānīm man rejata kṣāt ā matārā bhārati çuṣmy ā gōr nyāvat pārjjanaonanuvanta vātāh.
2 āṣājham ugrām pṛtañcāsā sāskāhā yāsim mahār urujāyaḥ: sām dhanāvā jñayāmāne anonavur dyāvāḥ kṣāmo anonavuḥ.
3 upahvārā giriṁ saṃgathē ca nadānām: dhīyā vīpro ajyata. Āta samudrām udvāta cikītvāh āva paçyati: yāto viṁśā ājati. Ād it prānāyā rétaśa jyōtis paçyanti vāsarām: parō yād idhyāte divā.
disturb the continuity of the discussion of Indra’s birth and origin. I reserve them therefore until later, and proceed at once to the second group of passages, to the

2. Anthropomorphic Conceptions.—Scenes and events of human life, often boldly hyperbolical—often, too, humorously conceived—mingle themselves with the myth of Indra’s birth.

The first place here belongs by right to the remarkable and certainly very ancient hymn, no. 18 in the 4th Book, with the discussion of which that of the other passages will easily and naturally connect itself. Roth, in the Siebenzig Lieder des Rig-Veda of Geldner and Kaegi, has attempted to divide this hymn into its component parts. From his treatment there result the following fragments: I. Indra, refusing to enter the world in the usual way, declares his intention of bursting through his mother’s side: iv. 18. 1: “This is the old and well-known path by which all the gods were born; by it shalt thou likewise be born when mature; thou mayest not, by other means, bring thy mother unto death.” (Indra speaks.) v. 2: “I will not go out thence, that is a dangerous way; right through the side will I burst; many things yet undone have I to do, to fight with this one, to be at friendship with that one.” v. 3 (Roth, 13): “He beholds his mother dying: ‘I will not yield, no, I will go through there;’ Indra drank in Tvastar’s house the Soma, of hundred-fold value, from the vessel of juice.” v. 4 (Roth, 3): “How should that one, whom his mother carried for a thousand months and for many years, undertake evil? Nowhere exists his equal, among the living or those that shall be born.” II. Indra, as a weakling, is exposed by his mother, according to v. 8 even thrown into the river Kusavā, but is saved and attains power and victory. Thus, v. 5 (Roth, 4): “Thinking Indra of no account, his mother hid him (Indra), who teemed with heroic strength; thereat he stood forth, wrapping about him his own garment, and though new-born, filled both worlds.” And v. 8 (Roth, 7): “Now the young mother throws thee aside, and now Kusavā swallows thee; and now the waters take pity upon the child, and now Indra stands forth in his might.” III. The newborn Indra displays forthwith his courage and strength: v. 10 (Roth, 9): “The young heifer brought forth a stout calf, an unconquerable, a brawny bull—Indra; she licks her calf, that it may walk, but it seeks of itself its own way.” v. 11 (Roth, 10): “The mother is concerned about the young hero: ‘My son, the gods abandon thee!’ And Indra, about to kill Vṛtra, spake: ‘Friend Viṣṇu, stand further away.’” IV. Indra kills his own father. Thus, v. 12 (Roth, 11): “Who is it

1 Roth reads āṛṣt ūtim for āṛṣṭham.
that has widowed thy mother? Who sought to smite thee when lying down, when running? What god was there that pitied thee? Since thou didst seize thy father by the foot and dash him in pieces.” Verses 6, 7, 9, and 13 have nothing to do with Indra’s birth.

It is not possible to discover any intimate connection between all the verses of this hymn. The Anukramanī, or list of hymns with authors, subjects, and metre, styles it a dialogue between Indra, the sage Vāmadeva, and Āditi. From this source doubtless Sāyana derived his explanation (which Hillebrandt, Aditi, p. 43, has adopted from him), that the first two verses refer to the birth of Vāmadeva, who in order to excuse his extraordinary whim recalls Indra’s deeds of violence. Roth’s translation and arrangement remove every doubt of the fragmentary and heterogeneous character of the hymn.

According to iii. 48, 2, 3, and vii. 98, 3, Indra at the moment of his birth invigorates himself with a draught of Soma. A curious feature of the Indra-myth is found twice in Book viii. Thus, in viii. 45, 4, 5: “The slayer of Vṛtra, as soon as he was born, seized his arrow; he asked of his mother, ‘Who are the mighty ones? What are they called?’ Then Čaṇva answered them: ‘He shall as it were fight with his forehead against a mountain, whoever desires to do battle with thee.’” And viii. 66, 1, 2: “As soon as he was born, the possessor of hundred-fold might asked of his mother, etc. Then Čaṇva named to him Āurnavālha and Ahicićva: ‘My child, these will be for thee unconquerable.’” While in the first passage Indra’s mother puts implicit faith in her son’s prowess, in the second she does not credit him with such courage and power as he afterward displays; but, as the following verse shows, her fears for him are ungrounded: “All these together the slayer of Vṛtra smote, as one beats spokes into the hub with a hammer; when full-grown, he became the slayer of the Dasyus.

Thus must we explain the episode, if we follow the authority of the pada-text for niṣṭurāḥ: i.e. = niṣ+ṭurā. But Aufrecht, differing from the pada and the Pet. Dict., explains niṣṭurāḥ as from ni+ṣṭar, i.e. ‘those that are to be cast down;’ and he translates: “My child, do thou cast these to earth” (Z. D. M. G., xxiv. 205). Grassmann follows Aufrecht;

1Ā bundāṁ vṛtrāḥ dade jatāḥ prchad vi mātāram: kā ugrāḥ kē ha çṛṇvire. práti tvā čaṇvaś vadad girāv āpso nā yodhiṣat: yās te çatrutvām əcakē.

2jajāno nū çatākratur vi prchad iti mātāram: kā ugrāḥ kē ha çṛṇvire. ād hin čaṇvaś ābravād āurṣavādabhām aḥiçvām: tē putra santa niṣṭurāḥ.

3sām it tān vṛtrāhākhiḍat khē arka īva khēdayā: právṛddha dasyu-hābbhavat.
Ludwig translates “O child, they must be mighty ones,” by which the line becomes extremely weak and insignificant. If Aufrecht’s view be correct (and the imper. santu certainly makes for him), there is no contradiction, but a close correspondence, between the two hymns. Compare again iv. 18.11, where Indra does not fear, though the other gods have abandoned him, but entreats Viṣṇu to leave him free scope.

A very human addition to the fable is the following, where the poet imagines the infant god surrounded by attendant women: x. 153. 1: “Busy women sat about the new-born Indra, rocking him, and instilling into him excellent strength.” In another passage, incorrectly incorporated in the Urvāci-hymn, Indra’s nurses are the celestial waters, in whose midst, in fact, according to the observation of nature, the god is born: x. 95. 7: “The divine women sat about the new-born one, and the exulting streams nursed him; when, O Loud-shouter (Indra), the gods nourished thee for mighty battle, and for the destruction of the demons.” The sudden change from the third person to the second, the person described being addressed, is not uncommon in the Veda.

3. Vague Statements concerning Indra’s Parents.—The third group comprises passages in which Indra’s parents are indeed alluded to, but not by name, and without any special characterization. Thus, x. 28. 6: “Many thousands do I cast to earth at once, for my father created me as an irresistible one” (cf. i. 129. 11); vii. 20. 5: “A giant begat the giant for battle, a heroine bore the hero;” x. 134. 1: “When thou, O Indra, like the dawn, didst fill both worlds, a divine mother had borne thee, the great ruler of great nations, a noble mother had borne thee.”

A curious reference to Indra’s childhood, for which I have not been able to find any satisfactory explanation (if indeed any deeper meaning underlies the text), is the following: viii. 58. 15: “While yet an immature boy, he mounted the new wagon, and roasted for father and mother a fierce bull.” Probably we have here only a fanciful description of the headstrong and mighty infant.

Further indistinct references to Indra’s mother are the

1 tākhāyatāṃ apasūrya indraṃ jātām āpāsate: bhajānāsaḥ suvṝryaṁ.
2 sāṁ asmin jāyamāna āsata gnā utēm avardhan nadyāḥ svāgūrīḥ: mahē yāt tvā puruṣavo rājasyārthayah dasyuḥātyaḥ devāḥ.
3 puruḥ saṅkarā ni ṣaṅkiṁ saṅkūṁ aṣṭrūṁ hi ma jānītā jāfāna.
4 Perhaps also ii. 17. 6; but in this passage pūrṇā is doubtless Tvāṣṭar, the father, i. e. the creator, of the thunderbolt.
5 ubhē yād indra rōdaśi aparāśtham iva: mahāntam tvā mahānām samrājan caḥ caḥpahāḥ devī jānītry ajījanad bhadrā jānītry ajījanad.
E. D. Perry,

following: x. 73. 1: "Thou wast born a mighty one unto destructive power, lovely, most powerful, threatening many; the Maruts cheered on Indra when his very swift mother taught him, the hero, to run;" and ii. 30. 2: "The mother announced unto the sage who it was that should rob Vṛtra of his possessions." More significant for the poet's caution than for Indra's parentage is x. 120. 1: "Among all creatures that was the noblest, from which the mighty one, he of imputuous strength, was born."

Finally we come to two very puzzling verses: vi. 59. 1:4 "Now at the Soma-feast I will proclaim your heroic deeds; your parents are slain, overpowered by the gods; but ye, Indra and Agni, remain alive." Ludwig translates "the pitar, hostile to the gods, were slain by you," which is an ungrammatical rendering of the Sanskrit; while Grassmann proposes pīyavah, 'slanderers,' for pitarah. Again, v. 2:4 "Ye had the same father, and ye are twins; your mothers were in different places." The mythical relations are here extremely obscure; it is even doubtful whether there be any real connection between the two verses. I will return later to v. 2, and proceed at once to the fourth and last group.

4. Conceptions of Indra's Origin which rest upon Speculation.—It is but rarely that the poets personified any ethical qualities, as for instance in viii. 58. 4, Indra is called sūnuh satyasya, 'son of truth.' In nearly every instance he is still the god of thunder and war, who does not belie his original character even in this abstract theogony. For instance, we read in x. 73. 10:6 "If any say 'he is sprung from a horse,' I believe him born also of might; he came forth from rage, and stands now in the houses; Indra knows from whence he is born." It must however be remarked that the verse is susceptible of another explanation, by which Agni instead of Indra becomes its subject: "From a horse (the sun) did he (Agni) proceed, from power, from fury; now he stands in (human) houses (i. e. as the fire on the hearth or the domestic altar); only Indra knows whence he (Agni) was born." Compare with this interpretation the

---

1 Jāniśṭhā ugrāḥ sāhase turāya mandrā ċiṣṭho bahulābhīmānaḥ: āvar-dhanaḥ īndram marūtaç cīḍ ātra mātā yād vīrāṁ dadhānād dhāniśṭhā.
2 yo vṛtṛāya śīśam ātr̥ābhāriyata pra τāṁ jāniśtī vidūṣa uvāca.
3 i. 155. 3, said in Anukr. to be directed to Īndra and Viṣṇu, really has reference to Viṣṇu only.
4 pra u vocā suṭēgu vām vṛtṛā yānī cakrāthuḥ: haṭaśoc vām pitaḥ de-vācātvarā Īndrāgūmi jīvatho yuvām.
5 samānā vām janitaḥ bhrātaḥ yuvāḥ yamāv ihēhamātārā.
6 ācṣād iṣṭasyati yād vādanty ċiṣṭaṁ jātām uta manya enaṃ: manyŏr iṣṭaya harṣyaṃ tathāvū yātaḥ praṣaṭtā Īndro asya veda.
verses (v. 2. 8; x. 32. 6) in which is related how Indra revealed the hiding-place of Agni, who had disappeared. Who in fact should understand the nature of the mysterious lightning better than the thunder-god?

With the last line of x. 73. 10 is to be compared what is said of the Maruta, the storm-winds; vii. 56. 2: "No one knows their birth, yet they among themselves well know their descent." I regard this as pointing toward Indra's original significance as god of the thunderstorm. As are the swiftly-passing storms, so is their supreme head—whence they come, or whither they go, who can say? "The wind bloweth where it listeth," etc.

Further, we have to consider the following passages. In viii. 81. 14, Indra is called putraḥ cauwasah; and in iv. 24. 1, cauwasah sīnuḥ—both signifying 'son of might:' cf. x. 153. 2: "Thou wast born of strength, Indra, of might, of power; thou, O Giant, art truly a giant." The epithet gosano napat, 'son of a cow-winner (i.e. of a cloud-winner),' in iv. 32. 22, proceeds no less than the foregoing from conscious speculation, as will be seen hereafter. In x. 90. 13 (the Puruṣahymn) we read that Indra and Agni sprang from Purusa's mouth. Likewise the already quoted verses viii. 45. 4 and 5, and 66. 1 and 2 belong in this connection; for cauvasī, 'Might,' used unmistakably in this place as a proper name (cf. dēvi taviṣi, i. 56. 4), is a mere personification of Indra's most prominent characteristic. When once the idea that Indra was the 'son of might' (cauwasah, gen. sing. neut.) had been thrown out, the transition to Ṛivasī (fem.), 'Might' personified, was natural and easy.

Finally, in x. 101. 12 we find Indra called Son of Niṣṭigri. The word niṣṭigri, which occurs in this passage only, still remains an etymological riddle. Sāyana's explanation is wholly unsatisfactory—he identifies Niṣṭigri with Aditi, and explains the word by niṣṭiṁ girati, i.e. 'Aditi swallows her rival Niṣṭi,' whom he makes identical with Diti — and it remains an open question whether Niṣṭigri be not, like the previously mentioned Cāvasī, a purely abstract character.

The more closely one examines these passages in detail and in their connection, the more hopeless seems the task of finding therein a fixed tradition, current in Vedic times, of Indra's descent. It is fair to suppose that the earliest conceptions made in Indra's case no exception to the rule which regarded Heaven and Earth as universal parents. That Dūn was viewed as his father is evident from iv. 17. 4 and iv. 18. 12,

1 tvām indra bālād ādhi sāhase jātā cauwasah: tvām vyraṇ vṛcjed aśa.
quoted above. Further, x. 54. 3 reads: "When thou didst produce from thine own body father and mother together," upon which Muir (Sanskrit Texts, v. 30) remarks "by which Heaven and Earth are clearly intended." Either such passages are mere outbreaks of boldest fancy, or else we must explain the word jan as in viii. 36. 4 (janītā dīvo janītā prthivyāḥ) where the ‘creation’ (jan) of Heaven and Earth means nothing more than the ‘holding’ or ‘supporting’ (dhāṛ), or the ‘fixing, fastening’ (skabha, stumbha), of other verses. Reference is therein made to Indra’s restorative activity, which gives back to earth and sky, when shattered and in confusion through the strife of the elements, their former quiet and order. The passage iv. 18. 10—grstiḥ surīvā etc. (with which cf. x. 111. 2, gārsteyo vrṣabhāḥ), could perhaps relate to the earth; but I prefer, in view of viii. 6. 19, 20 and ii. 11. 8, to refer grstiḥ to the rain-cloud. Still, the poets need not on all occasions have intended to express particular cosmogonic ideas by such words. The well-known penchant of Vedic sages for the cow-yard in their hymns may surely have led one poet to think of Indra and his mother as calf and cow, without conveying under the image of the ‘cow’ any deep mythical meaning.

The words aṇvāḍ iyāyati yad vadanti, in x. 73. 10, I can hardly explain otherwise (supposing them to refer to Indra at all) than that aṇvāḍ refers to the sun, as in i. 163. 2 the horse undoubtedly typifies the sun. Ludwig (R. V. Übersetzung, iii. 318) regards the horse as symbol of the sky, and quotes to sustain his position x. 68. 11: which verse however contains merely a very natural simile, in which a dark horse bedecked with jewels is compared to the nocturnal sky with its glittering stars, and which proves nothing. But the adoption of the sun as Indra’s father would involve us in insuperable difficulties. It is quite possible that the statement aṇvāḍ etc. is no less referable to conscious speculation than those contained in the following lines of the same stanza. The horse, as well as the bull, is often the symbol of strength and courage, and why should not a poet of bold fancy imagine Indra descended from such an animal? The word vrṣan, used innumerable times of Indra, might in fact be translated ‘stallion’ as well as ‘bull,’ provided one tastelessly insist upon rendering the word on all occasions by the name of some particular animal.

There is some temptation to draw from vi. 59. 2 ("Ye are twins, Indra and Agni, ye had the same father, your mother in different regions") a conclusion as to Indra’s parentage. In the verse x. 45. 8 Agni is son of Dyu; in iii. 3. 11 and 25. 1, and x. 1. 2, the son of Heaven and Earth. If now we are to

1 yān mātāram ca pītāram ca sākām ājanayathāṃ tanvāḥ svāyāḥ.
Indra in the Rig-Veda.

hold fast to vi. 59. 2, then Prthivi, the Earth, cannot be Indra's mother. However, the accounts of Agni's parentage are even more confused and contradictory than those of Indra's, and bear no credible witness.

No wonder then that the Indians soon had recourse to speculation to fill out the remarkable gap apparent in the myths of their favorite god. Thus only can I account for such theogonic ideas as those contained in group 4, above. From Indra's chief attributes of might and impetuosity arose the personification Cavasi, 'the mighty one' or 'might.' Compare with this dhanashā mata, 'the very swift mother,' a title which suits neither Aditi nor the Earth. Similarly, from the conception of his battles with the rain-stealing demons was derived the epithet gosana napāt. In mythological systems the son is accustomed to display his activity in the same field with his father. It was Indra, more than any other, who captured the cows, i.e. the rain-clouds; he may therefore well have been the son of a cow-capturer; and there is no necessity for a strained explanation of gosam as equivalent to the sky, or to anything else in particular. I prefer therefore to view these words also as merely the expression of a conscious deliberation, and adaptation of the legends concerning Indra.

III. Fields of Indra's Activity, and his Relations to other Divinities, and to his Worshippers.

Among all Indra's deeds celebrated in the Veda, most important are his coercion of the evil spirits of the air, who in Indian belief arrested the rain, so full of blessings for earth and mankind, and gathered them into compact clouds; and his deliverance of the heavenly streams from their power. No department of his activity is made so prominent, no act of his power related so often, in so many various forms, or with so many poetic embellishments; and the god is besought for no other manifestation of mercy with such fervor as for this: all of which is a further indication of his natural position and duties among Vedic divinities. He is above all the god of battle—of battle in the first instance against the demoniac rain-stealers, then further against all other demons and witches; and he finally becomes the ideal of a pugnacious unconquerable hero and warrior, who defends his Aryan worshippers in their battles not only with non-Aryans, but likewise with those of kindred race.

To a correct understanding of the passages which treat of this manifestation of Indra's might, two things are necessary. We must in the first place consider how immensely greater is the effect of the thunderstorm in India, particularly among the
gigantic mountains of Northern India, than with us—how sudden and overwhelming its approach, and yet how eagerly it is prayed for, and by what beneficial effects it is followed. In the second place, we must bear well in mind the peculiar Vedic conception of the rain, especially of the thunder-storm. This is as follows: The original source and home of the waters was thought to be the highest heaven, *paramāni vaman*, the region peculiarly sacred to Varuṇa; and it is this deity who sends forth the rain that it may descend upon the earth. So e.g. ii. 28. 4: "The creator let the streams flow; they run as Varuṇa directed; they fail not, nor become weary; they spread over the land like birds." (Compare Roth’s *Erläuter. zum Nirukta*, x. 4.) But the air-demons arrest and carry off the rain-streams, which the poets symbolize by the figure of cows, and imprison them in their caves in the cloud-mountains. Now Indra appears upon the scene, commissioned by the gods to set the waters free; he conquers the demons and liberates the streams, which thereafter continue undisturbed their journey to earth, led by Indra’s attendants (cf. x. 99. 4); sun, dawn, and sky emerge from the temporary obscurity of the battle, and the gods, who, terrified by the dreadful contest, had retreated to a place of safety, recover once more free scope and peaceful exercise of their influence through Indra’s victory. The evil spirits which disturbed the whole course of nature are pursued to the uttermost regions of darkness; quiet and order are completely restored.

About this conception of a natural phenomenon, as about a core, were gradually crystallized various fantastic creations of the Vedic bards; and their descriptions of this mighty event were interwoven with many single features, some of which had likewise reference to occurrences actually observed in nature, while others admitting of no such explanation must be considered rather as transferences of purely human experiences into superhuman spheres of action. In fact, we find Indra (and his opponents) conceived of and described much more like human beings than are any other divinities; for which doubtless the reason lay partly in the less morally sublime than fierce and overbearing nature of the thunder-god, partly in the particularly close relations subsisting between Indra as war-god and his worshippers, who were still engaged in bitter contests for empire with the aboriginal inhabitants of India whom they displaced.

---

2 In the Veda "water" and all corresponding terms, such as stream, river, torrent, ocean, etc., are used indiscriminately of the water upon the earth, and of the aqueous vapor in the sky or the rain in the air.
Indra in the Rig-Veda.

In the enumeration of passages belonging in this connection I will first give those which refer plainly to events in nature, then such as contain purely poetical embellishments. The very great number of such verses precludes the mention of any but the most important.

The arch-demon among the rain-stealers is Vṛtra, whose name is a plain enough indication of his nature. I prefer, notwithstanding Lindner’s mention (Altindische Nominalbildung, p. 82) of the difficulties offered by the unstrengthened root-vowel, the common derivation from 1 vr ‘cover, wrap, hem in, hinder, restrain’; for between the root proposed by Lindner, viz. vrī, and the word vṛtra, the connection of meaning is difficult to trace. The various meanings of the Sanskrit vṛtra, as of the Zend verethra, are to be classified as follows: vṛtra, first ‘hindrance, defence’ (Zdl. verethra); then ‘that which is to be hindered, warded off,’ concrete ‘enemy,’ as in Zend verethra-jan, ‘slayer of enemies’ (Yaṣṇa xlv. 16); finally, ‘the enemy sar’ ḍvṛṛṇ, the Indian demon Vṛtra.’ The etymon was still plainly felt by the poets. Passages like iii. 32. 6:8 ‘the impious one who enveloped the divine (waters)’ (lit.: ‘the goddesses’)—cf. vii. 21. 3:8 ‘the dragon who surrounded the waters’—rest upon a not very accurate play upon words, since, according to the development of meanings given above, vṛtra did not quite signify ‘the enveloper.’

In most verses Vṛtra is identical with ahi, ‘the dragon;’ i.e. he is thought of under the form of a dragon; and the descriptions of him correspond: so particularly in the fine hymn i. 32, and in the following verses: iv. 17. 7:8 “Straightway after thy birth, O Indra, thou didst put all nations to fright; thou, O generous one, didst hew in pieces with thy thunderbolt the dragon which lay upon the mountain-slope” (i.e. either upon the clouds or upon the actual mountains). With this verse compare the others of the same hymn, wherein the monster is called Vṛtra, and also x. 113. 3:8 “When thou, bearing thy weapons, didst come together with the dragon Vṛtra for battle, to win for thyself glory.” Also cf. vi. 72. 3, and 20. 2. In the following he is called a wild boar: i. 121. 11:8 “Thou mighty one with the thunderbolt didst sink Vṛtra, the boar that lay across the river-beds, in sleep”—i.e. the sleep of

---

1 vavrīvāṇasm pāri devṛ ādevam.
2 apāḥ pāriśthitā śīnā.
3 tvām ādha prathamāṁ jayamāṁ ‘me vīçvā adhithā indra kṛṣṭh : tvāṁ práti pravāda ṛṣṭāyaṇam āhīn vájreṇa māghavan ví vṛṣaḥ.
4 vṛṭrēṇa yād āhīnā bībhṛrad ṣuṣṭhā na śāṅkṣāṁ yuddhāye cāḥsam āñide.
5 tvām vṛtrāṁ ṛṣṭāyaṇam sirāśu māho vájreṇa siṣvapo varāhum.
death. But he is sometimes styled simply a wild beast, as in v. 32. 3: "Indra hurled with force his weapon against that great beast."

These different names for Vṛtra, like the large majority of the many and various appellations given to the lesser demons, are but different names for one and the same thing: namely, the cloud, which in its manifold forms presented itself most forcibly to the eye of the poet in the likeness now of this, now of that creature. And it was not alone as hostile and mischievous demons in human or animal form that the clouds were symbolized—we find them described as mountains, as in ii. 11. 7: "Still stood the mountain, which was about to move;" and 8: "the restless mountain sat there motionless"—or as forts belonging to the demons (ii. 20. 8), or their skilfully fortified dwellings, which Indra has to carry by assault (i. 55. 6); and in the caves where the evil spirits hide the stolen rain-cows, as well as in the cows themselves, which emit from their swelling udders the milk, i.e. the rain, we can discover only clouds. In short, in the ever-changing panorama of the thunderstorm the Indians saw represented their own encounters with wild beasts, assaults upon forts and ambuscades, recovery of stolen cattle, and many others of their earthly experiences.

Details of the battle which Indra fights with Vṛtra, as they were struck out from the fancy of different poets, may prove not uninteresting.

The dragon envelops himself in mist: ii. 30. 3: "He (Indra) stood on high in the air, and directed his missile against Vṛtra; when that one, wrapping himself in mist, rushed headlong upon him, Indra with sharp weapon conquered the enemy." That the subject of pāda c is Vṛtra, and not Indra, is shown by i. 52. 6: "When thou, O Indra, didst launch thy thunderbolt into the depths upon the cheeks of Vṛtra, who was hard to grasp, then fury fell upon him, his strength was aroused; wrapping the waters about him he lay at the bottom of the atmosphere."

The epithet miho napāt, ‘son of vapor,’ v. 32. 4, seems likewise to refer to Vṛtra (or Čusā). Cf. German Nibel-ung. According to x. 73. 5, he throws out mist to confuse his conqueror. He even seeks to defend himself with thunder, lightning, and hail (i. 32. 13), and by his rapid and...

---

1 tyāyā cā cān māhātā nir mrgāyā vādhar jaghāna tāvāṭhī bhrī indraḥ.
2 ārahata pārvatacit sarṣiyān.
3 ni pārvataḥ sādy aprayuchan.
4 ōrdhyo by āsthād ādy by antārikṣa ‘dhā vṛtrāya pra vadhāṁ jahbāra: mihām vāsāna āyā hām ađudro tigmāṇyudḥo ajayac chaṭrām indraḥ.
5 pārthī ghṛṣṇa carati titvāt śaśo ‘pō vṛtri rājasso būdhānām śaṣayat: vṛtrāyā yāt pravahā durgābhīṣhavo niṣghāṁ hānvor indra tanyatām.
violent movements to terrify his opponent: i. 80. 12:4 "Neither by his flapping (with his tail), nor with his thundering did \textit{Vṛtra} terrify \textit{Indra}; the brazen thousand-pointed thunderbolt flew at him."

\textit{Indra} takes the field against this monster at the command of the gods, who are themselves unable to withstand it: iv. 19. 1, 2; vi. 20. 2 (see under "\textit{Indra} and \textit{Viṣṇu}"); ii. 20. 8:4 "Unto \textit{Indra} the gods gave without reserve the chief command in the battle for the water-floods; when they had put the thunderbolt into his hands, having slain his enemies, he possessed himself of the brazen castles." Cf. iv. 17. 1; x. 28. 7:4 \textit{indra} (voc.) in pāda \textit{b} is certainly a mistake, since \textit{Indra} speaks the verse. Grassmann tries to elude the difficulty by assuming instead of \textit{indra} a vocative addressed to the poet—a procedure both violent and unnecessary. There is no objection to reading \textit{indram} (acc.)—that the nasal sometimes fails to make position is shown by iv. 41. 4: \textit{vadhīṣṭhau vajram}; thus it was easily lost. By reading \textit{indram} we reduce the verse to perfect order: "Thus have the gods made me, \textit{Indra}, in every work a strong, a mighty giant; I smote \textit{Vṛtra} lustily with the thunderbolt; I opened by my might the cowstall for the worshipper."

When \textit{Indra} begins the battle, the other gods abandon him for fright: iv. 18. 11; viii. 82. 14, 15; and especially viii. 85. 7:4 "Shrinking from the snorting of \textit{Vṛtra}, all the gods, thy companions, left thee in the lurch." But as soon as they see that \textit{Indra} nevertheless ventures the attack and remains victor their courage returns, and they sing to him songs of joy (x. 113. 8). So dreadful is the fight that heaven and earth and all creatures tremble (vii. 21. 3); the heavens shrink from \textit{Indra}'s lightnings (vi. 17. 9); and \textit{Tvaṣṭar}, though he had himself forged the thunderbolt, falls prostrate in terror at its dreadful effects (i. 80. 14). Perhaps even \textit{Indra} would not have been able to overcome his enemy, had he not beforehand imbibed with a copious draught of \textit{Soma} the requisite courage and strength; this however gives him power invincible (v. 29. 3, 7; iii. 43. 7; vi. 44. 14; ii. 19. 2). The other gods, so imagined one poet, found the same means efficacious for providing them with courage, or at least with forgetfulness

\begin{itemize}
\item[1] nā vēpasā nā tanyatāndram vṛtrō vi bīhāyat: abhy ānām vājra āyasāḥ sahāśrabhrātāryāyata.
\item[2] tāsmāl tavaṣyāṃ ānu dāyī satīndrāya devēdbhīr āpaṣtāya: prātīyād asa vājram bāhvrō dhūr hatdvī dāsyūn pāra āyasir nā tārta.
\item[3] evā hi māhī tavaṣāṃ jagūdrō ugrām kārman-kārman vīṣaṇam indra devāḥ: vādhīṃ vṛtrām vājraṃ mandaśānō 'pa vrajām mahinā dācuṣe vam.
\item[4] vṛtrāṣya tvā āṣasāthād Īṣamān vācve devā ajahur yē sākhāyaḥ.
\end{itemize}
of their danger: x. 113. 8:  "All the gods then cheered on thy heroic strength with soma-excited eloquence." Cf. vi. 18. 14. Likewise the goddesses, the now liberated waters, sing praises unto him: iv. 22. 7: "Then, O thou with sorrel steeds, did these divine sisters greet thee with joyful shouts, when thou didst free (them) the oppressed ones, that they might flow for long time." Cf. i. 61. 8.

Indra's weapon is either vaṭra, the thunderbolt, which Tvaṣṭar fashioned for him (v. 31. 4 et seq.), or adri, açman, purvata, a mere piece of rock or stone for hurling. Myriantheus (Die Aeqins, p. 145 ff.) refers the following passage likewise to the lightning: i. 84. 13: "With the bones of Dadhyaña the irresistible Indra smote the ninety-nine enemies dead"—an explanation doubtless quite satisfactory to the large class of mythologists who explain everything which cannot refer to the sun or the dawn by the lightning. (Comp. Pet. Diet. s. v. dadhyaña; and Zimmer, Alhind. Leben, p. 20.) Indra carries also bow and arrows (viii. 45. 4; 66. 6, 11; x. 103. 2, 3), and a spear, rati (i. 169. 3); but I have not noticed any instance of his using these weapons in battle against Vṛtra. But he hurls foam at the demon Namuci, perhaps to blind him (see the curious explanation for this devised by the author of Catapatha-brähmana, xii. 7. 3. 1 ff.; Muir's Sanskrit Texts, v. 94), and ice (snow or hail?) at Arbuda (viii. 32. 26); he also dashes clouds upon them.

At his approach he finds the dragon lying there careless (v. 32. 2), and even asleep (iv. 19. 3), for he (Vṛtra) considers himself invulnerable and immortal (v. 32. 3); but awakes him with the thunderbolt (i. 103. 7). The dragon seeks to defend himself with stratagems, but Indra is more cunning than he: v. 30. 6: "Indra overcame with craft the crafty, lurking dragon which lay upon the waters;" or his cunning is of no avail against the god's overwhelming power, as in x. 111. 6: "Thou, O Vṛtra-slayer, didst cast down Vṛtra with the thunderbolt, thou didst scatter the wiles of the mighty enemy of the gods; thou didst strike home with courage, O courageous one, thou wast then strong in thy arm, O generous giver." Indra strikes off Vṛtra's head with the hundred-jointed thunderbolt (viii. 6. 6), tears Vṛtra himself in pieces (v. 13), and casts him under his horses' feet (v. 16). Now he turns to the treasure of heaven, the waters imprisoned in the cloud-rock, açman (i. 130. 13); he hews asunder the clouds as a carpenter hews a tree (v. 4); he lets out the streams and they flow to earth. Hence it is said (viii. 12. 6): "Indra spreads abroad the rains

1 viṣṇe devaśo ādha viṣṇyāni té 'vardhayant somavatyaḥ vacasyāyaḥ.
of heaven.” The fight concluded, Indra hastens away with such speed that one would think an avenger of Vṛtra to be at his heels (i. 32. 14): i. e. the storm pursues its rapid journey, and the sky again becomes clear. As reward for this deed of valor, Indra receives the early oblation.

A list of the demons mentioned by name as opponents of Indra, with brief discussions of the principal ones, will be found in an appendix.

After the above description of the battle against the rain-stealing demons, any exhaustive treatment of the passages relating to the subjection of other demoniac creatures would be unnecessary. We should only have to emphasize the fact that Indra, just as he conquers the rain-hindering demons, likewise, and in most intimate connection with this victory, defeats the spirits who arrest the light, through his power as manifested in the battle of the storm. For the black storm-clouds envelop and conceal the light of heaven, and it is only after the god has driven them away, or, in Vedic parlance, has put to flight the spirits of darkness, that the heavenly radiance again-streams upon the earth. By a very natural extension of thought, Indra was then imagined as taking the field against spirits of darkness in general, and especially the nocturnal spirits who pursue their mischief in the gloom. Hence no further commentary is necessary upon verses like the following, according to which Indra appears as hostile to 1. enemies of the light of heaven; and 2. evil spirits in general, hobgoblins, spectres, etc.

1. i. 121. 10: 1 “Before the sun is caught by the darkness, O slinger, hurl thy missile against the cloud;” viii. 65. 4: 2 “It was Indra, the friend of the Maruts, by whom this light was won for the Soma-drinking” (cf. v. 40. 6); iii. 34. 4: 3 “Indra the light-winner, the creator of days, the patron, won with his friends the battle; he kindled for mankind the lamp of the day (i. e. the sun); he found the light, for a great joy.” Cf. i. 171. 5; ii. 12. 7; x. 27. 24.

2. Numerous passages, a selection from which I append, describe Indra as conqueror of other evil spirits. In vi. 22. 4, e. g., he is called asura-han, ‘demon-slayer;’ in x. 99. 3 he destroys the cīmadevān (Cf. Pet. Dict., s. v.; acc. to Grassmann, ‘demons with tails’), and in v. 10 araruṁ yaç catuspāt, ‘the four-footed monster.’ He kills the Dasyus (viii. 65. 11), the

---

1 purā yāt sūras tāmaso āpitēs tām adrivāḥ phaligāḥ hetum asya.
2 ayāṁ ha yēna vē idāh śvār marūtvata jītām: indreṣa sōmapitaye.
3 īndreṣa svarṣa jānyāmn āhāni jīga-yogīghbhīḥ pētaṇa abhiṣṭih: prāro-
cayan mānave ketum āhnām āvindaj āyotīr bhātē rāpāya.
Dāsas (vi. 47. 21), and the Rakshases (vi. 18. 10). The boldness of these demons is described for us in viii. 14. 14: "Thou, O Indra, didst shake off the demons which sought to creep up, to scale the heaven by stealth." According to x. 23. 5, he kills them merely by the sound of his frightful voice: cf. x. 48. 6; viii. 85. 9; i. 33. 7; viii. 12. 9.

The verse vii. 104. 22 shows what manifold shapes the Vedic poets imagined the demons to assume: "Destroy the fiend as great owl, as little owl, as dog, as cuckoo, as vulture; grind up, O Indra, the Rakṣas, as though with a millstone" (i.e. as thoroughly as with a millstone). i. 29. 5 mentions ass and vulture as among the animals to be destroyed, doubtless because they were viewed as incorporations of evil spirits; or perhaps the ass's braying disturbed the honest poet while he was "beholding" a beautiful hymn.

For the sake of completeness, I will introduce here a trio of verses relating to certain female demons: i. 133. 1-3: 1. "I purify both worlds as is right; I burn the great evil spirits (fem.) who do not acknowledge Indra," strangling them in the place where the enemies are lying, defeated and shattered, about the skulking-place. 2. Strangling them, O slinger, crush with thy armored foot, with thy mighty armored foot, the heads of the witches. 3. Dāsha, O generous giver, the whole crew of these witches upon the dust-heap in the great skulking-place." A witch Dhvaras (provided the word can be taken as nom. pr.) is mentioned in iv. 23. 7; and we read in ii. 20. 7 of dāṣaḥ kṛṣṇa-yoniḥ, 'black-lapped witches'—with which compare the expression in x. 155. 4, maṇḍūradhānikīḥ (Pet. Dict. cunni robigine [i.e. squalore] obiit).

The mythus of the robbery of the rain-cows by the Panis (lit. 'nigards;' here an appellation of certain water-stealing demons), and their recovery by Indra, received exceptional development. Indra, either accompanied by the Angirases, a

---

1 Dasyu and Dāṣa may be named applied to the non-Aryan inhabitants of India: compare Zimmer, Allindisches Leben.
2 māyābhir utsarpasata indra dyām arūrukṣataḥ: āva dāṣyṭar adhānunathah.
3 ǔḍukṣayātum ćuṇḍikṣayātum jahi ćvāyātum utā ṭokṣayātum: supar-ṇayātum utā gṛḍhrayatum ṛṣādeva prá mṛṣa rākṣa indra.
4 ubhe punāmi rōḍast rītāṇa dṛūho dahāmi sāṁ mahār anindrāḥ: abhivlāgya yātra hatā amitrā vāśādhanāṁ pāri tīṭhā āśeran. abhivlāgya cidad drīvāḥ cīrā yātumātinām: chindhī vaṭūriṇā pāda mahāvaṭūriṇā pāda. āvāsaṃ mhaṅavāh jahi cārdho yātumātinām: vāśādhanāke armakā mahāvāśādhanāte armakā.
5 anindrāḥ may mean simply 'godless, impious;' cf. Muir, Sanskrit Texts, v. 123.
mythical race of ancient singers, or for their benefit, sends his
female messenger Saramā (who in the Veda does not appear as
a bitch or otherwise in lower animal form) on ahead, to dis-
cover the cows hidden by the Panis. Saramā finds their tracks,
whereupon Indra appears, forces the passage into the cave of
the Panis, and liberates the imprisoned cattle. Thus, i. 83. 4:
"Then the Angiras received the greatest power, because they
diligently and faithfully kindled fires of sacrifice; the heroes
captured the whole possession of the Panis, the herds rich in
horses and in cows." Cf. viii. 14. 8; 52. 3. Again, i. 62. 3:
"By command of Indra and the Angiras, Saramā found susten-
ance for (our) posterity; Brhaspati split the rock, and found
the cattle; the heroes bellowed in company with the cows."
And iv. 16. 8: "When thou didst break open the rocks of the
waters, then appeared thy Saramā first (i. e. she led the way);
as our leader, open up unto us great booty, breaking open the
cattle-pen, urged on by the Angiras."

The richest and most dramatic development of this episode
is found in x. 108. The hymn is explained in the Siebenzig
Liedern of Geldner and Kaegi. The contents are briefly as
follows: Indra’s messenger Saramā finds the way to the Panis,
who have hidden the stolen cattle at the ends of the earth, and
demands them back. Boasting of their courage, the Panis will
not hear of a restitution. Upon Saramā’s representing their
destruction as inevitable, they declare to her that the flocks
and treasurers are not at hand, but hidden in the mountains;
and they attempt to induce the messenger to remain with
them. She rejects the offer and advises them to flee. The
last verse relates the accomplishment of what Saramā had
foretold.

This battle of Indra’s against the demons is, directly or indi-
rectly, the cause of his being associated with many other gods,
some belonging to his own, some to other spheres of nature.
I now proceed to discuss these associations, and will first treat

---

1 śadhāṃ prathamaṁ dadhīre vāya iddhāgnyaḥ čāmya yē sukṛt-
yāyaḥ: sārvam paṇēḥ sām avindanta bhōjanam āvāvantam gōmantam ā
paṇḍuḥ nāraḥ.

2 Ṛndasvāngirastāṁ caesādā vidāt sāramā tánayaḥ dāhaim: bhāspātir
bhīnād śadrnā vidād gāṁ sām usriyābhīr vāvaṇanta nāraḥ.

3 The presence of Brhaspati in these battles will be explained below, under
"Indra and Brhaspati." In x. 67. 7, Brhaspati appears alone as recoverer of the
stolen herds, although in the preceding verses Indra fills this part; in ii. 24. 6 he
is accompanied by allies, whose names however are not mentioned.

4 Vāc, properly ‘bellow, low,’ an expression less offensive, when expressing the
heroes’joyful shouts, to the Vedic poets than to us. I know of no suitable Eng-
lish word for this passage.
of those depending immediately upon the conception of Indra as a warrior against the demons who steal rain and light.

*Indra and Trita; Vīśvarūpa.*—A comparative view of all the passages of the Rig-Veda referring to Trita yields several results important for the relation in which he stands to Indra. We first discover that all the deeds accomplished by Trita are the same which otherwise Indra has to perform; and also that the two divinities do not appear as actual associates in their various acts and battles, and are not invoked, as are so many other gods, together. This might lead us to suppose Trita to be in fact nothing but a different name for Indra; for which would also speak the fact that Trita's name does not occur even once in Books iii., iv., or vii. Possibly “Trita” might be an epithet applied to Indra by poets of certain clans. But I will first illustrate these remarks by several quotations: i. 187. 1: “I will now praise heartily the draught, the preserver of strength (i. e. the Soma), through whose power Trita clove asunder Vṛtra, who showed no weak spots;” viii. 7. 24: “The Maruts cheered on the courage and zeal of the battling Trita, they encouraged Indra during the overcoming of Vṛtra.” In Book ix. (the Soma-book), many verses bring the Soma into very close connection with Trita; and the fingers of the Soma-pressers, the mill-stones for grinding the stalks of the plant, and the three localities of the Soma-offering, are called his. In x. 46. 3, Trita discovers the hidden Agni—“Trita Vāibhūvās, oft seeking, found him (at last) by the cow's head” (i. e. at the extremity of the cloud: Agni=the lightning); whereas in x. 32. 6 the same thing is related of Indra. In x. 120. 6 Indra receives the title āpīya, often applied to Trita.

From these passages alone, and from the circumstance that Indra and Trita are never invoked together, we should be almost justified in identifying Trita with Indra, in the latter's especial function as conqueror of the rain-stealers. Yet such an assumption would ill accord with other verses which allude to both gods as distinct. From the latter we should rather have to conclude that Trita and Indra are different persons; only they come into the closest possible contact in their prominent characteristics.

Moreover, whenever Trita appears with Indra he occupies a subordinate position: e. g. he offers Indra Soma, to infuse into

---

1 *pitūṁ nā stōṣam mahō dharmāṇaḥ tātvīṣm: yāsya trītō vy ċaśā vṛtrāṁ vīparvam arāyant.

2 *ānō trītāsya yūdhystaḥ cūśhnam āśann utā krātum: ānv indraḥ vṛtrṭīṣyā.

3 The fingers are *trītāsya yōjanāḥ, 'Trita's wife,' ix. 32. 2; 38. 2; the stones, *trītāsya pāṛyā or yōjanā, 102. 2, 3. Cf. also 34. 4; 37. 4; 86. 20.
him strength for the battle. So ii. 11. 20: "Indra, after he had refreshed himself with Trita's intoxicating draught, cast Arbuda to earth; the sun turned his wheel no longer [i.e. seemed to stand still—the same idea recurs on several occasions]; Indra with the Angiras broke open the cave;" viii. 12. 18: "When thou, O Indra, refreshest thyself with Soma in Visnu's, or in Trita's, or in the Maruts' presence." Again, Indra sends Trita into battle, and imparts to him courage and strength, as in the verses referring to the destruction of Viçvarûpa Tvâstra: viz. ii. 11. 19; x. 8. 7, 8; 99. 6. Or, finally, Indra captures the cattle for Trita, who then seems to have sunk to the level of a demigod or hero, and is in fact named together with such beings, as in x. 48. 2: "I Indra am defense and might of Atharvan; I got the cattle away from the dragon for Trita; I robbed the demons of their strength, and bestowed the herds upon Dadhyaça and Mâtariçvan." Such legends as these furnished the later collectors of the hymns occasion to assume a Rishi named Trita, who was then adduced as author of several hymns.

In some passages, Trita seems to hold the position of a semi-divine ancestor of the powerful Grtsamada clan. Thus, ii. 11. 19: "Thou didst once (tat) deliver Viçvarûpa the son of Tvâstra into our hands, into the hands of Trita (who was) of our race;" ii. 34. 14: "He (i.e. the yajamâna, 'the sacrificer') beseeches them (the Maruts) for a strong defense, for his salvation, and we too join in with this devotion; (the Maruts) whom with their wagon' he would bring near, unto his assistance, as Trita (brought) the five priests." According to x. 8. 7, 8, to be translated below, one might almost suppose Trita to have been Indra's son. In x. 46. 3, Trita is styled Vaibhûvasa, i.e. doubtless, 'son of Vibhûvasu'; vibhûvasu does not occur as nom. pr., but only as adjective, signifying 'possessing extensive wealth,' and is used of the thunderbolt (which is the instrument employed by Indra in winning the rain-cows, cattle being the chief wealth of the Indians at this period) in ix. 72. 7, and of Soma in ix. 86. 1. The epithet would suit Indra very well, and would speak for the explanation of x. 46. 3 just mentioned.

Unfortunately, all the 41 verses of the Rig-Veda which refer

 ahám indro rôdo vákço átharvâpas tritâya gâ ajanayam áher âdhi: ahám dasyuhhyah pâri nirmanâm â dade gotrâ ciksan dadhiçe mâtariçvana.

 1 samâbhyan tát tvâstrâm viçvarûpam árandhayaç sakhyaśya tritâya.

 2 tâ tiyânâ mâhí várttham útâya úpa ghêd ená námas grûmasi: tritô ná yân páloh hîtôn abhiçjyaya avavárâd ávarân oçkiydvâvase.

 3 cakriyâvase = cakriyā (Instr.) + avase.
to Trita afford no satisfactory picture of his nature, except in the points of contact with Indra. We know from the Avesta, however, that he is older than the specifically Indian mythological system. Compare on this point the essay by Roth, *Die Sage von Feridun* (Z. D. M. G. ii.), on p. 221 of which occur the following remarks: "The hymns do not present him in clear and lifelike form, as they do Indra, for instance, or the Aćvins. He is mentioned merely in cursory allusions. . . . . Trita Ąptya seems to be, in the stage of mythological development exhibited by the majority of the hymns, a divinity who has half sunk into oblivion." To this points in particular the idea that he dwells in the furthest distance, for which reason all evil is banished to his neighborhood (cf. viii. 47. 18-17), upon which Roth finely remarks: "the distant, perhaps for this reason only, that he had gradually become more and more obliterated from memory;" likewise the fact alluded to above, that he does not appear either in Books iii., iv., and vii. That he is unknown to, or at least unmentioned by, the authors of Book vii., is the more remarkable, as this book is not only one of the longest, but also one of the richest in mythical material, of the whole ten. In the somewhat mystical and obscure hymn i. 105, verse 9 reads: "Where those seven (i.e. many, countless) rays of light are, thither my origin goes back; Trita Ąptya knows it, he talks with my kindred." Likewise he appears as concerned in the mystical creation of the sun, in i. 163. 2, 3; and he is invoked together with other beings of obscure nature, e.g. with Ahi Budhnya, Aja Ekapād, in ii. 31. 6; he is called "the Trita of the sky" in v. 41. 4; in the three verses v. 41, 10; x. 46. 6; 115. 4, he seems identical with Agni; in viii. 41. 6, with Varuna; in v. 9. 5; 54. 2; ix. 86. 20; x. 64. 3, with Vāta.

For all these reasons, I consider Trita a god of the storm, older indeed than Indra, but driven into the background by the rapid growth of the Indra-cultus. If this be the correct view of his nature, then we must expect to find him standing in a relation to other gods similar to that in which Indra stands to them (cf. Hillebrandt, *Varuna und Mitra*, p. 94); yet these relations will be less clearly developed and treated with less completeness, because the figurative idea of every divinity is subject to gradual change, and because e. g. we cannot assume for a period when Trita, and not yet Indra, has to engage the demons, any so lofty or comprehensive conception of Varuna as we actually find at a time when Indra and Varuna stand side by side as fully developed gods. And so Trita

1 amī yē saptā raçaṁyās tātrā me nābhīṛ āṭataḥ: trītās tād vedāptayāṁ sa jāṃtvāya rebhāt.
Indra in the Rg-Veda.

displays great similarity to Vāyu (cf. Roth, loc. cit.), while in aftentimes, although later than the Mantra-period—to use Müller’s expression—Indra and Vāyu are identified; so also he stands in particular relations to Soma, as was shown above, of course for the same reason which later made Soma Indra’s inseparable companion: I mean the intoxicating, invigorating property of the beverage, which as we saw was Trita’s Soma. The Maruts, who encourage Indra and greet him with joyful acclamations after the happy termination of the battle, act similarly with regard to Trita: cf. the already quoted verse viii. 7. 24, which now acquires a much deeper significance. For the relations between Trita and Varuṇa I can adduce but two passages, in one of which, viii. 41. 6, he seems actually identified with Varuna, and in the other, ix. 95. 4, perhaps with Soma.¹ I would explain this paucity of reference to Trita and Varuṇa together by the supposition that Trita had lost much of his importance before the types of Varuṇa and Indra had gained marked fixity of outline.

A dim reminiscence of Trita’s vanished glory, and an allusion to his final subordination to Indra, seem to lurk in the following difficult verse, which I am at a loss to explain otherwise: ii. 34. 10: “One sees plainly, O Maruts, your brilliant flight (path), when the sons milk the udder of Pṛṣṇi (‘a speckled cow’; here = the rain-cloud), or when, O undeceptive companions of Rudra, (ye give over) Trita to the derision of the worshipper and the ruin of the feeble” (i. e. the ruin which befalls the feeble). In Book ii., Trita, although mentioned often enough, occupies quite an inferior position. In ii. 11. 19, he is called an ancestor of the Grātamada-clan, for whom Indra is said to have overcome Vṛtra; in the next following verse he hands Indra the Soma; in 31. 6 his name is merely mentioned; 34. 14 contains an allusion to the summoning of the five priests, an event not mentioned elsewhere. So much the more constant, on the other hand, is Indra’s praise, and more than one quarter of all the verses in this Book refer to him. Now it seems to me not impossible that the poet, to whom the earlier importance of Trita could not have been unknown, wished to allude to his displacement by Indra by making the Maruts, —Trita’s former companions, but in aftentimes joined with

¹ The identification with Varuṇa is explained by Roth from the circumstance that both are conceived as dwelling in the furthest heaven; by Hillebrandt, from the fact that both control the firmamental waters. The possible identification with Soma is of little or no significance.

² cītraṁ tād vo maruto yāṁ cekite pṛṣṇaṁ yād tādhār āpy āpāyo dhūhāḥ; yād va nidā navamānasasya rudriyāṁ tritāṁ járāya juraṭāṁ adābhyaḥ.
Indra—abandon their ancient leader. At the same time, I acknowledge the strained nature of such an interpretation as this.

It remains for us in this connection to notice the mythus relating to the killing of Viṣṇu. Viṣṇu, called Tvasṭār’s son, is a demon who steals the rain-clouds. He is killed by Tīrta, who is backed by Indra; in x. 8. 9, after in verses 7 and 8 Tīrta has been called his conqueror, Indra is said to have vanquished him. While, however, Indra slays many other demons, when no mention whatever is made of Tīrta, it is only in companionship with the latter that he is declared to have overcome Viṣṇu—a circumstance which shows clearly enough that in the original form of the mythus Tīrta alone endured this battle (which is shown also by the Persian Thraētōna-Feridun mythus); and that the addition of Indra to the original story is to be regarded as a consequence of the exchange in rank and importance which occurred between these two divinities.

From this point of view, the apparent contradiction in the Vedic description of the relations subsisting between Indra and Tvasṭār is not hard of explanation: a contradiction which the later authors of Brāhmaṇas sought to explain by attributing to Indra downright misdeeds. Tvasṭār is on the one hand a divine being friendly to gods and men, who fabricates for Indra the thunderbolt, the weapon employed against Vṛtra, and is consequently the friend of Indra; on the other hand he is father of the wicked demon Viṣṇu, whom Indra kills. Hence all the ancient Indian and most modern European exegetes have thought it necessary to conclude that enmity existed between Indra and Tvasṭār, by no means to the former’s credit, for which as further proof is adduced the circumstance that Indra drank up Tvasṭār’s Soma. This latter episode can be readily explained in quite another way, as will be shown in the section treating of Indra and Soma; and surely no further proof is necessary for the assertion that Indra kills Tvasṭār’s son merely because, in the Indian system, he is the successor of a more ancient divinity whose duty this was, so that no reasons for supposing any actual enmity between Indra and his armorer exist. The real difficulty is this: how did Tvasṭār, the trusty artificer of the gods, come to be called father of a demon hostile to gods and men alike? Which particular side of his character formed the starting-point for such a mythus?

Viṣṇu signifies ‘possessed of all forms.’ Let us compare the Vedic descriptions of him with the account of the demon said in Yāga ix. 8 to have been vanquished by Thraētōna.¹

¹ i. e. son of Thīrī; in the Avesta called Athēya, =Vedic ṣiptya.
We shall find the correspondences remarkably close. Viṣārūpa is called tričirṣaṇa, ‘three-headed,’ and saptarāṇaṁ, ‘seven-tongued’ (x. 8. 8); tričirṣaṇ again, and ślākṣa, ‘six-eyed’ (x. 99. 6). In the Yaśna passage the opponent of Thraētona is called thrisāṇana, ‘three-jawed,’ thrimāmeraṇa, ‘three-headed,’ khsvasaṁ, ‘six-eyed.’ The particulars are identical—with the exception of saptarāṇaṁ, which is perhaps better rendered as ‘many-tongued’—and the very name viṣārūpaḥ, ‘who can assume any form,’ corresponds in conception to the hāzaviryaokhasti, ‘thousand-fold flexible, changeable,’ of the Avesta. It now becomes evident that not merely the general idea of the conflict with a monster, but even the details of this monster’s appearance, as found in Veda and Avesta, rest upon a common basis. If this be so, we can discover in the proper name Viṣārūpa merely the petrifaction of an earlier epithet viṣārūpa. The figure of the demon is Aryan (i. e. Indo-Persian); only his current appellation Viṣārūpa is specifically Indian; and also the god Tvaṣṭar, as his father, is a specifically Indian addition. This circumstance excludes the possibility that the parental relation between Tvaṣṭar and Viṣārūpa, which we think existing according to the Veda, rests upon a purely mythical conception, and we must look about us for other reasons.

Tvaṣṭar is often said in the Veda to have created rūpā (rūpāṇaḥ), i. e. forms and figures. The Taṁtīrīya-Brāhmaṇa, at i. 4. 7, reads: ‘Tvaṣṭar rules over the forms.’ R. V. i. 188. 9: “Tvaṣṭar, since he is the lord of forms, created all animals;” viii. 91. 8: “In order that this one (Agni) be influential among us, as Tvaṣṭar among the forms which he has to fashion.” But most plainly speaks iii. 55. 19: “The god Tvaṣṭar, the life-giver who rules over all forms, caused posterity to grow up; he created them in sundry ways, and all these creatures belong to him.” The epithet viṣārūpa is also applied to him in i. 13. 10; x. 10. 15.

When, accordingly, such a Proteus-like creature as Viṣārūpa, and such an all-skilful creator as Tvaṣṭar, existed in Indian mythology, what was more natural than the conception which attributed to Tvaṣṭar the parentage of the monster, as though he had concentrated in it all his store of forms and figures? The mythological principle that the son’s nature corresponds closely to that of his parent is here as well exempli-
fied as in the application to Indra of the epithet *yoṣano naraḥ* which was explained above.

Only thus can I account for the fact that a later, specifically Indian divinity, friendly alike to gods and men, came to be regarded as father of the older, Aryan demon, hostile to both gods and men. But when the connection had once been established in the mind of an Indian bard, and recorded in song, his successors forgot at once the reasons and the justification of it and unconcernedly sang of enmity between Indra and Tvāṣṭar on account of the death of Viṣṇvarūpa, which however was not found in the older mythic nexus.¹

**Indra’s relations with the Adityas, and the development of the Indra-mythus.**—The relation in which Indra stands to the goddess Aditi, and to her sons the Adityas, has been discussed at considerable length by Alfred Hillebrandt, in his two works *Über die Göttin Aditi* (p. 42 ff.), and *Varuna und Mitra* (p. 97 ff.). It will be seen that my investigations have led me to conclusions quite different from those which he has reached.

In the first quoted passage, Hillebrandt assumes Aditi to have been regarded as the mother of Indra. The supposition is not new; it is found in the Brāhmaṇas, and Sāyaṇa advances it with all confidence; but it has not yet been conclusively proved correct. Hillebrandt’s arguments are as follows:

1. He refers above all to the hymn iv. 18, which I have quoted in part II. It was there shown that no unity of subject is extended throughout the whole hymn. In the Anukramaṇi it is styled a dialogue between Indra, Aditi, and Vāmadeva—the only support for Hillebrandt’s theory, since we are not informed how the verses are to be divided up among the speakers. Sāyaṇa, in his off-hand way, explains the poem very skilfully as a little episode of the family life of the Gāumata clan. The sage Vāmadeva, still in the womb but about to begin his earthly career, and experiencing a powerful aversion to the conventional manner of birth, determines to open for himself a Northwest Passage, as it were—he resolves to break through his mother’s side. Thereupon, according to Sāyaṇa (v. 1), Indra reminds him that not only men but likewise gods have always found the old-fashioned way good enough for them, and seeks to dissuade him from the venturesome attempt. Vāmadeva’s conscience, developed even at this tender age, reproaches him with the temerity of his plan, he looks about for examples of a similar violence with which to excuse himself. And suddenly it occurs to him that the mighty Indra himself has not always proved a model of virtue—that he

¹ For instances of such perpetuation of thoughts once struck out, see Aufrecht’s Introduction to his 2nd edition of the Rg-Veda, p. xii.
for instance regaled himself upon Soma in Tvāṣṭar's house, without so much as saying "by your leave" (vv. 2-4). But Aditi, by no means pleased by these reflections upon her son (Indra), attempts by counter-assertions to vindicate his honor (4e-7). Thereupon Vāmadeva again claims the floor, speaking, however, no longer of his own birth, but of various events in the life of Indra.

This ingenious and diverting exegesis—which, if it be Sāyaṇa's own, and not perchance derived from more ancient commentators, certainly does him great credit—finds unfortunately neither in the hymn itself nor in the Anukramaṇī any confirmation whatever. Sāyaṇa was able the more consistently to advance it, inasmuch as on several other occasions he regards Indra as an Ādītya; so, e. g., in x. 101. 12 (quoted in Part II.), where Indra is called "Son of Niṣṭigri," he identifies the latter with Aditi, for the word signifies 'she who swallows up Niṣṭi;' and Niṣṭi he identifies with Diti, the rival of Aditi. We who are less orthodox than Sāyaṇa in our views as to the meaning of Vedic passages find this explanation unsatisfactory when we discover the complete lack of unity existing in the hymn.

The facts of the heterogeneous nature of the hymn in question and of the almost total want of connection between the fragments which are its component parts being ascertained, any argument based upon it as a whole falls to the ground at once. Still, if there were elsewhere indications that Aditi was regarded as Indra's mother, of course Aditi might be meant by the unnamed mother of Indra in this passage. We shall search the Veda for such indications in vain.

2. Hillebrandt refers, furthermore, to the circumstance mentioned in iv. 18, that Indra kills his father and is abandoned by his mother; and he says: "The mention of his father or his mother refers in like manner to the heaven, which Indra after his birth envelops in clouds." And further on: "Indra kills his father in concealing the sun, which by its rays has gathered the clouds [!]; he is abandoned by his mother when the clear sky, from which he was born, disappears behind the veil of clouds." Here is admirable reasoning! At one moment Indra's father is the sky, at the next the sun; his mother is the sky, and again the imperishability of the daylight (for this, according to Hillebrandt's very improbable theory, is the conception underlying the personification Aditi); and the covering of the sky with clouds is ascribed as parricide to Indra, and as infanticide to his mother. To bring order into the tangled relations of this sanguinary family would be a task of considerable hopelessness, and I pass on accordingly to Hillebrandt's other proofs.
3. In verse 4 of the hymn vii. 85, addressed to Indra and Varuṇa, the Samhitā-text exhibits the vocative sing. āditya, for which the pada-text gives āditya, dual. Besides this passage, I know of but one other in the Rig-Veda where the word āditya could possibly refer to Indra: viz. Vāl. 4. 7. There we read: tuṁtyāditya ḫavamān ta īndriyām. The pada-text separates thus: tuṁtya ād-, while Roth (Pet. Dict., s. v. tuṁtya) proposes tuṁtyam ād-. The hymn bears plain indications of a very late origin: among others, the evident modeling after the preceding hymn—a fact which greatly lessens its value as a parallel to vii. 85. 4. Returning to the latter passage, we see from 84. 4 that when Indra and Varuṇa are invoked together, āditya refers to Varuṇa, just as in iv. 42. 4 Varuṇa boastfully styles himself Āditya in distinction from Indra. Now it is much more natural to suppose that the author of the pada-text put an incorrect interpretation upon the verse—and he is proved by many an instance to be anything but an infallible authority—than to suppose that a divinity of Indra’s prominence should receive only in this and the doubtful passage Vāl. 4. 7 an epithet so very significant for his whole nature as āditya, if the Vedic poets really regarded him as Āditi’s son. Possibly the vocative singular, occurring in a verse addressed to two gods, may have appeared harsh to the author of the pada-text, whence he gave the form in the resolved text as dual. Another consideration, by no means unimportant, is this: it is quite indifferent for the metre whether āditya or ādityā be read. Why then should the poet have said ādityā (sing.), when he meant ādityā (dual)? Even if we retain the dual, the expression is still no confirmation of Hillebrandt’s theory, since the transferral of an epithet properly applying only to one person of a pair mentioned or invoked together to the other of the pair belongs to the best-known peculiarities of Vedic diction.

4. Finally, Hillebrandt combines viii. 12. 14: 1 “Āditi composed a song of praise for Indra,” and vii. 98. 3: 2 “thy mother announced thy greatness,” with iv. 18. 4–7. But until we have proved Indra to be Āditi’s son according to iv. 18, this combination is worthless, since Indra is glorified by various gods and goddesses, not every one of whom is on that account necessarily his mother; and why not also by Āditi? Furthermore, the same idea of his glorification by his mother occurs in passages where any reference to Āditi is out of the question, as viii. 45. 4, 5, which were discussed in Part II. To combine the passages viii. 12. 14 and vii. 98. 3, and conclude from them

1 ādityā stōmam īndrāya ḫjanat.
2 prá te mātā mahimānām uvāca.
that Indra was son of Aditi, would be to imitate the character in "Pickwick Papers," who composed an essay on Chinese Metaphysics by reading up China in the Encyclopaedia under the letter C, and Metaphysics under M, and combining his information.

So much for Hillebrandt's arguments. What I have to object directly to the reception of Indra among the Ādityas (i.e. for Vedic times—in later ages he was often called an Āditya) is as follows.

In the first place, I agree with Muir when he says (Sanskrit Texts, v. 12): “Indra could not have been in the opinion of the author of the Brāhmaṇa, at least as expressed in this passage (Çat. Brāhm. xi. 6. 3. 5), one of the twelve Ādityas (as he was regarded at a later period), since he is separately specified as making up the number of the thirty-three gods.”

In i. 107. 2, Indra is mentioned by himself, then the Ādityas and Aditi together; so also in iv. 54. 6. In v. 51. 10 is said: “united with the Ādityas and Vasu, united with Indra and Vāyu, come hither” (addressed to Agni): cf. vii. 10. 4. And so in many other passages, with clearest distinction between Indra and beings of similar nature on the one hand, and the Ādityas, the real gods of light, on the other.

Finally, how could the circumstance that in the Veda such uncertainty prevails, and such speculation is indulged in, concerning Indra's descent, be reconciled with his adoption as an Āditya? There is no such meditation concerning Varuṇa, or Mitra, or the other Ādityas; why then upon Indra, if he was in Indian belief really an Āditya? In fact, his whole character, bold, impetuous, rough, ill consorts with the peculiarly ethical natures of the Ādityas, with their calm majesty and gracious benevolence. On the contrary, he stands to them, especially to Varuṇa, in a relation which Hillebrandt has well characterized as that between general and sovereign. Cf. viii. 82. 6 and 83. 9, and in particular the following; vi. 68. 3: "The one (Indra) smites the enemies with his thunderbolt, the other (Varuṇa), the sage, remains at home" (lit. 'among the communities').

The Ādityas, as supreme light- and sky-gods, are law-givers for gods and men, and all things stand under their dominion. Yet there are evil powers and wicked men that refuse submission to their just ordinances—demons of the air, who restrain the rains flowing from the highest heaven down to earth, who cover the bright firmament with dark clouds, and so threaten to precipitate the whole course of nature into confusion; and impious men, as well of Aryan as of non-Aryan race, who

---

1 vājreṇānyāḥ gāvasā hánti vṛitrāṁ sīṣakty anyó vṛjāneṣu vipraḥ.
oppose the faithful and ridicule their religion, and in many ways sin against the divine commands. In the natural as in the moral sphere, therefore, a defender of the laws is needed, for the Ādityas themselves are not of warlike nature—they dwell on high in the region of light, loftily distant from the strife and turmoil of the two worlds beneath them—and who should be chosen to this duty but the god of the raging thunderstorm, Indra the thunderer, irresistible by nature? Day by day with his faithful comrades he enters the battle against the goblins, they succumb to his lightnings, he regains water and light; and in like manner he assists his worshippers of Aryan blood, both when they strive with non-Aryan enemies, and when they punish the unbelievers of their own race. The following passages will plainly illustrate Indra's office as executor of punishment upon the outragers of moral law: x. 89. 8: "Thou, O Indra, a patient follower-up of evil, lewes falsehood in pieces as a knife (an axe) hews limbs; whenever men sin against the laws of Mitra and of Varuṇa, as against an allied friend." So too verse 9; cf. viii. 56. 8. Indra is also called vratapā devānām, 'the law-protector of the gods'—v. 2. 8; x. 32. 6. The particular reason for this belief is found in the conception of his victories over the demons of the air. There is a verse which represents the conquest of these beings and the restoration of order to the universe as taking place especially for Varuṇa's and Mitra's benefit: x. 113. 5: "Thereupon Indra mustered all his courage; he drove Heaven and Earth further apart; he hurled boldly the brazen thunderbolt, which was acceptable to Mitra, to Varuṇa, to his worshipper." From the protection of physical laws his functions were then, as is so often the case in mythological systems, transferred to the moral sphere.

As by the side of the almighty Varuṇa the other Ādityas everywhere retire into the background, so is this especially the case in their relations to Indra, whom we never find named with Bhaga, Aryaman, Ança, or Daksā, unless Varuṇa be of the company. But there is at least one passage which brings him into connection with Mitra, and one which mentions him together with Mitra and Viṣṇu: viii. 85. 6: "Let us praise him who created all these creatures on earth, which stand

---

1 tvāṁ ha tyāḍ ṛṣaya indra dhīro 'sir nā pārva vṛṣajñā ṛṇaśi: prá yē mitrāsya vāruṇasya dhāma yūjāḥ nā jāna minānti mitrām.

2 ād īndrāḥ satra tāviṣṭa āpatyata vāryo dyāvapṛthivi abādha: āvā- bharaṅ dṛṣṭi vājram āyasaṁ āvam mitrāya vāruṇasya dācitā.

3 tāṁ u ṛṣavaṁyā yā imā jājāna vīcū vājanyā ávāncyā asmāt: īndreṇa mitrān̄ dihiṣëma gīrbhir úpo nāmobhir vṛṣabhāṁ vīcëma.
under his dominion (Indra'); let us present Mitra, along with
Indra, with songs of praise; let us approach the hero with
reverence." And Vāl. 4. 3: "(Indra,) who receives the
praises for himself alone, who boldly drank the Soma, for
whom Viṣṇu took his three steps, according to the decrees
of Mitra." The addition of Viṣṇu in this passage makes it highly
probable that the connection of Mitra and Indra arose from the
fact that Viṣṇu, as sun-god, becomes a dispenser of rain. For
we find Viṣṇu mentioned as Indra's associate in the battle with
Vṛtra, where he represents the ever-advancing sun. There is
a doubtful passage, x. 22. 1, which Ludwig translates:
"Where does one hear of the celebrated Indra; among what
people to-day as of Mitra?" Similarly Hillebrandt. Better, I
think, is the following: "Where does one hear to-day of
the famous Indra? among what nation is he said to be, as a
friend?"

Let us now examine those passages in which Indra and
Varuṇa appear associated. The relation of defender of the
laws, in which our divinity was discovered to stand to the
Ādityas, is here equally prominent; but greater importance is
attached to the ethical character of Indra's services, in accord-
ance with the peculiar nature of Varuṇa. The verses vii.
28. 4 and 84. 2, both incorrectly explained by Hillebrandt, are
especially significant for this relation. Thus, vii. 84. 2: "The
heaven assists your mighty government, O ye who bind with
bonds which are not chains (i. e. who, without making use of
actual chains, yet hold the world in actual bondage, in moral
subjection); may Varuṇa's anger not descend upon us, may
Indra procure for us free scope." Here u lokam is not
'wide-spread dominion' (weite Herrschaft), as Hillebrandt ex-
plains it, but 'free scope' (freier Raum), i. e. liberation from
the restraint imposed by demons and enemies. Pādas c and d
are contrasted, and the further explanation of Hillebrandt is
wrong: "The wish underlying the words pari to vṛjyā can be
only this: to pardon faults committed, and not to punish sin
by suffering the enemies against whom Indra fights to gain
entrance. That we may understand the verse thus is shown
very plainly by vii. 28. 4"—which he thus explains: "Protect

1 The connection of the hymn forbids our referring pādas a and b to Mitra.

2 yā uktah kēvalā dādhe yāh sōman dhṛṣṭāpiḥ; yāsmāi viṣṇus trīṇi
padā vicakramā upa mitrāya dhārmabhīḥ.

3 kūhā ċruté indraḥ kāśmīn adyā jāne mitrō nā cṛṣṭaye.

4 yuvō rāṣṭrām bhād invati dyaṭīr yād sṛṣṭībhī sarajībāḥ sīṁhāḥ:
pārī no hēo vārahasya vṛjyā urūṁ nā indraḥ kṛṣṇaṁ u lokām.

5 odbhī na indraḥabhīr daṇḍasya durmītraṁ hi kṣitāyaḥ pāvante: práti
yāc cāṣṭe āṃtram anena āva dvīta vāruṇo māyāḥ naḥ sāt.
us in these days, O Indra; the hostile tribes stream hither with (weapon) flashing: may the wise Varuṇa doubly loosen us from the fault which the sinless one beholds." Now, this rendering of pavanat by mit (Waffen)glanz herbeströmen is utterly indefensible and ridiculous; and the 'doubly loosen' for dvītā equally so (cf. Pet. Dict., s. v.). I much prefer the translation of Geldner and Kaegi: "The wicked men shall certainly do penance; be gracious unto us in those days, O Indra; may the faultless one henceforth pardon us for the sin which Varuṇa has keenly perceived." This translation reveals Indra in a much clearer and more definite relation to Varuṇa.

One of the most important moments in the association of Indra and Varuṇa is however their common character as water divinities, from which are derived the majority of conceptions of their generosity, and their readiness to assist their worshippers and to bestow children. Yet we must never forget that, while they are both water-deities, they are such for quite different reasons: Varuṇa's abode is in the sky, he disposes of the heavenly streams and dismisses them to earth; Indra's realm, on the contrary, is the broad air, and he disposes of the waters simply because he has rescued them from the demons' power. But both are givers of rain, and hence of fruitfulness and prosperity in general.

Several passages illustrating their character as givers of water follow: vii. 82. 3: "Ye opened freely the wells of water by your power, ye led the brilliant sun up into the firmament; in the frenzy of the magic draught ye made the dried-up springs to gush anew; make our devotions to gush out." Again, vii. 85. 3: "The waters also, these goddesses brilliant in their abodes, placed Indra and Varuṇa among the gods"—i. e. the bestowal of rain was a truly divine deed(?). They also give the cow, the symbol of the cloud and of prosperity, and bestow wealth: i. 17. 3: "Satisfy us with riches, O Indra and Varuṇa, according to our wish; we invoke you first of all." And v. 6: "By the help of these two may we acquire and hoard up; yea, may there even be a surplus." cf. iii. 62. 1–3.

1 "Es sollen ja die bösen Menschen büssen; In diesen Tagen sei uns gnädig, Indra; Die Sünde, die Varuṇa sein erspühte, Mag fortan uns der fehlerlose schenken."
For pavanat, perhaps a still better translation would be 'are sifted out;' in these days the wicked are sifted out, i. e. are separated from the good. (Geldner.)

2 áṇvā spāṁ khāṇy atṛttam ājasā sūryām āśrayatam divī pabhūṁ: indṛvaruṇā māde asya māyāṁ 'pivātām apītaḥ pivātāṁ dhīyaḥ.

3 śaṇc cīḍ dhī svāyaçaśaḥ sādaśaḥ devīr indraṁ vāruṇaṁ devītā dhūḥ.

4 anukāmāṁ tarpeyīhāṁ indṛvaruṇā rāyā ā: tā vāṁ nēdiṣṭham imāhe.

5 tāyor īd āvasā vayāṁ sanēma nī ca dhīmahi: syād utā prarēcanam.
Further, vi. 68. 2: "By your zeal ye are the most excellent among the gods, the bravest of the brave, the most generous among the generous, of mighty courage, O ye who with your whole troop overcome the enemy as is right:" cf. also v. 5, and iv. 41. 3.

They are also often generous in the bestowal of offspring upon their worshippers, as e. g. in iv. 42. 8, 9, where Purukutānī receives for her prayers a son Trasadasyu, and in vii. 84. 5. They are petitioned with especial frequency for help in battle. Thus, iv. 41. 2:1 "The mortal who by his libations gains the two gods Indra and Varuṇa for his allies, to a league with him, that one slays enemies and opponents in battle; that one becomes celebrated through their mighty help:" cf. also v. 4, and vii. 82. 2, 9. Hymn 83 of Book vii. is a thank-offering for the help extended to the hard-pressed Sudās in the battle against the ten kings: vii. 85. 2:2 "Men display rivalry in invoking the gods, when among the banners the bolts are flying; with the arrow, O Indra and Varuṇa, drive the enemies away, (drive them) asunder in all directions."

Of much greater interest, and also of much greater importance for a correct understanding of the two deities, than their common traits, are the differences pervading their natures—a point upon which Hillebrandt has bestowed much careful attention. The pertinent passages follow: vii. 82. 2: "All-ruler the one is called, autocrat (Selbstherr) the other; ye are both great and rich, Indra and Varuṇa;" 5. "Since, O Indra and Varuṇa, ye fashioned all the creatures in the whole world, Mitra in peace worships Varuṇa; the other, the mighty one (Indra), goes into battle along with the Maruts;" 6. "All the power of Varuṇa is displayed for great praise, this one's (Indra's) for his own glory; the one smites the weapon-brandishing enemy, the other with few (helpers) keeps the enemy in check." Further, vii. 83. 9:3 "The one smites many more in battle, the other watches continually over the ordinances;" 85. 3:4 "The one keeps the unruly nations in order, the other smites the irresistible enemies." Similar to the idea in vii. 82. 6 is the conception displayed by x. 66. 2, where the Maruts are said to be īndraprasītās, varuṇapraśitās: perhaps 'led by Indra into battle, sent into the field by Varuṇa.'

These verses leave nothing to be desired in point of clear-

---

1.indra ha yó varuṇa oṣakrā āpī devān mātrās saṅgaṇayā práyaṅyūṃ: sā hanti vṛtrā satīthēṣu cádrūn āchobhir vā mahādhibhir sā pā śrūve.
2.spārdhante vā u devahyē ātra yēgu dhvajēṣu didyāvah pātanti: yuvām tāh indrāvarūṇāva śamitrān hatām pārcaḥ cárvā viścāyē.
3.vṛtrāṇy anyāḥ satīthēṣu jignate vṛstaty anyo' abhi rakṣate sādā.
4. kṛṣṭār anyō dhārāyaḥ prāvṛktā vṛtrāṇy anyō aparātā nanti.
ness. Upon the one side are majesty, dignity, repose, ethical sublimity, universal sway; on the other force, impetuosity, courage, delight in war, glory and command in battle. Hence it excites some surprise to find Hillebrandt’s sharp characterization of the differences in their natures followed by statements which seem almost to imply that their characters might have been identified (p. 102): “But in spite of the intimate connection of the two gods, their natures are not completely merged; both display activity in the same direction, yet their original characters are not quite obliterated, and here and there in the Indra-Varuna hymns we find indications that the poets were well acquainted with a difference resting upon the original characters of both gods.” Their natures could not be merged in one another: because, waiving the difference in their characters as ethical and non-ethical personifications, they belonged in the Veda to quite different realms of nature. What they have in common is by no means to be explained from any original similarity of character, but simply from the fact that their powers are directed to the same end, the preservation of order in the universe. Varuna is a god of light and of the sky; Indra is no sky-god (as Hillebrandt seems to suppose, to judge from the note on p. 68 of his work), but god of the thunderstorm and consequently of the air, in which, according to Vedic belief, the battle against the rain-stealers is fought out. How a god of the air could in ancient Indian (Vedic) belief be actually identified with a sky-god, be their connection ever so intimate, is to me inconceivable; but that, owing to external circumstances, such an atmospheric divinity could step into the place and usurp the functions of the other as supreme deity is not only inherently probable, but I think I can prove that this actually occurred.

It is now time to introduce the important hymn iv. 42, which I have reserved until the present moment because it offers a convenient transition to the question of the change in sovereignty. In the division of the hymn I follow Geldner and Kaegi. Verses 1–4 are spoken by Varuna, 5 and 6 by Indra, 7 by the poet; 8, 9, and 10 are later additions. Ludwig assigns v. 4 to Indra, by which Varuna and Indra, it is true, have each three verses to recite; but against this argues the fact that vv. 1 and 2 have the same refrain, which justifies the assumption of strophes of two verses each; besides, the second pāda of v. 4 is then no longer appropriate, since putro adisha (“Son of Aditi”) can only refer to the speaker, and Indra, as we saw above, has no right to this title. I adopt in verse 3 the reading indra (voc.) for indrah. Hillebrandt retains indrah, but his reasons are altogether inadequate. Varuna speaks: 1.

“The kingdom is mine, the warrior’s; all immortals are mine,
the all-enliveners; the gods follow Varuṇa's will; I rule over
the nations with their very bodies (upamasya vavreḥ, gen.,
‘the nearest, innermost covering;’ the skin: G. K.).” 2. “I
am the king, Varuṇa; mine are these heavenly powers even
from the beginning; the gods” etc. (as in v. 1). 3. “I am
Varuṇa. O Indra; mine are the wide, deep, firm-grounded
twin empires; a skilful creator, I formed all creatures and the
two worlds, and I preserve them.” 4. “I made the spouting
waters to stream forth, I fastened the heaven in the seat of
holiness; Aditi’s son, the holy one, spread out as was right the
threefold world.” Indra speaks. 5. “The heroes, skilled
horsemen, the hurrying champions invoke me in the battle; I,
the generous Indra, incite the battle and I stir up the dust, I
who am invincible in power.” 6. “All this I did; not the
power of the gods even restrains me the matchless one; when
draughts of Soma and hymns have intoxicated me, then do the
two boundless worlds tremble.” The poet speaks. 7. “All
creatures know thy deeds, as thou annoucnest them to Varuṇa,
O wise one; thou art celebrated as the slayer of enemies, O
Indra; thou didst set free the imprisoned waters.”

This hymn contrasts the characters of the two divinities most
sharply. And the manner in which the arguments are
advanced is no less significant than the dispute itself. Varuṇa
asserts in two verses his right to the supremacy, and adduces
valid reasons. Indra on the contrary seems to say: “That
concerns me not; I will be supreme, for I am the strongest.”
In verse 7 the poet seeks to appease the jealous and insolent
Indra by unreserved recognition of his power.

It is certainly true that, as Hillebrandt has remarked, the
hymn contains only a sharp definition of the provinces of the
two divinities; and no actual allusion to a transferral of sover-
eignty from one to the other is discoverable. But let us ask
ourselves: What induced the poet to make Varuṇa so strenuously
assert and defend his supremacy? What, if not the
observation of that which was going on about him? The sim-
ple fact that far more hymns and verses of the Rig-Veda have
reference to Indra than to any other god shows sufficiently
well that he had already, at the time when the collection was
formed, become the national and favorite deity of the Indians;
but there existed still the older tradition that Varuṇa was head
of the divine company. Here were two views, which, if not
flatly contradictory of each other, were yet hard to reconcile;
and I perceive in the hymn quoted an attempt by a thoughtful
mind to bring harmony out of the apparent discrepancy by the
sharpest possible definition of the contrasting natures of the
two divinities. Yet this difference of nature must have been
so well known to every intelligent Indian that I see no neces-
sity for drawing so fine a distinction, except for the reason that a falling away from the unconditional acknowledgment of Varuṇa as supreme ruler, and a leaning to the recognition of the younger and rising deity Indra as chief had already made considerable progress.

The original signification in nature of Indra and of Varuṇa in the Vedic theogony, and the final ascendancy of the former over the latter, cannot be too carefully separated. For the transition does not occur in this way, that the one god, Indra, steps into the place of another, earlier divinity, Varuṇa, who originally belonged to the same realm of nature but was gradually forgotten; but the change was made for reasons purely external. A warring nation will naturally invoke the war-gods before all others; and the more numerous and obstinate the battles which they have to endure, the greater will be the honor paid to the deity who stands by the heroes in the fight. Moreover, the more constantly and urgently men need the assistance of any deity, and the more complete their dependence upon him for happiness, so much the deeper will naturally be their reverence for him. Now let us picture to ourselves those tropical regions, where for days and weeks together under burning, rainless sunshine all nature gasps for refreshment, for the rain which after long beseeching Indra finally releases from the demons’ bondage; and let us further picture to ourselves the situation of the Vedic people—those times of ceaseless battle for existence with the aborigines whom they were slowly displacing; when, too, clans and families stood in life-long feud with one another for house and home, for land and people, and when the warlike Indra became the chief protector of the ever-warring Indians, their ideal of a mighty fighter—and we shall understand how he grew to be the favorite of all the nation; how his helping nature was able to throw Varuṇa’s lofty person into the shade, and his cultus, originally perhaps confined to a few clans, to thrust the old Aryan worship of Varuṇa into the background. These are all points to which Hillebrandt has given too little attention. The facts that entirely different provinces and spheres of action are attributed to Indra and Varuṇa, and that the Vedic poets distinguished most accurately between their characters, can never prove that Indra had not already, at some time during the period of composition of the Vedic hymns (the “Mantra-period”), stepped into Varuṇa’s place as supreme god. And this only do I maintain—for Indra never became a sky-god, nor god of light, nor a moral-ethical character; he was and he remained the warrior, the god of the thunderstorm in the air, the lord of the mighty battle on earth, the winner and bestower of booty, the peculiar champion of the Aryan Indians.
Indra in the Rig-Veda.

He never abandons his own province in nature for that of Varuna; but the changing fortunes of the Indian people brought it about that the war-god actually surpassed the sky-god and king of the world, Varuna, in importance. On the other hand, we must not attempt to prove too much from the Veda. Varuna is therein by no means sunk to the level of a mere water- and sea-god, to the shadowy divinity of later times; nor has Indra yet reached the position of undisputed sovereignty in which the great epics present him (see for instance Holtzmann’s able essay entitled Indra nach den Vorstellungen des Mahabharata, in Z. D. M. G., xxxii.). But the Veda offers, as I have attempted to show, the most conclusive proof that this change began in the period while the hymns were yet being composed, and was even far advanced at the time of their collection into one whole.

I now pass to the interesting hymn x. 124, which exhibits the transferral of supremacy from Varuna to Indra in a very peculiar light, and has been interpreted in various ways.Verse 1. “Come hither, Agni, to this our sacrifice, which is performed in five courses, to the threefold (sacrifice) with its seven threads; be the bearer of our offering, and our leader; long hast thou lain in the distant darkness.” Agni speaks. 2. “I the god, secretly stealing away from him that is no god, seek for myself a way to immortality; leaving, as an unfriendly one myself, my friend, I depart from my acquaintance to a strange clan.” 3. “Seeing him (Indra) as guest among another tribe, I establish (there) many sorts of worship; saying farewell to my father, the Asura (i. e. Varuna), I go over from a sacrificeless lot (sc. bhágát) to a share in the sacrifice.” 4. “Many years have I served that one, now I choose Indra for myself, and desert my father; Agni, Soma, Varuna—these are now sinking; the empire has changed its course, I help it along by coming hither.” Indra speaks. 5. “These Asuras (i. e. demons) are now become powerless; and do thou, O Varuna, if thou loveest me, enter (again) upon the supremacy over my kingdom, distinguishing right from wrong, O king.” 6. “Here now is light, and here fair weather; here the sky, and the broad air; in future let us two kill Vrtra; depart, O Soma, we will honor thee the libation with libations.” (7) The connection of the hymn seems to be at an end here; I add the

1 Cf. Roth, Z. D. M. G., vi. 73; Muir, Skt. Texts, v. 121 ff.
2 Cf. Pet. Dict., s. v. asura, for the different translations of this same word in this and the third verse.
3 tváh ca mā varaṇa kámáyase. The accent of the verb speaks against Grassmann’s translation: ‘And thou, O Varuna, must love me.’ See Whitney, Grammar, § 595 b.
other verses for the sake of completeness. 7. "The wise one in his wisdom gave to the sky its color; without trouble Varuna caused the streams to flow; the clear waters, delighting themselves there like women, impart to it (the sky) its aspect"—i.e. the clouds give the sky its ever-varying color and appearance." 8. "They obey the supreme power of Indra; he tarries among them which joyfully spout forth; choosing him for their sovereign, like communities of men, they turned away with horror from Vṛtra." 9. "Men say the companion of the heavenly waters is a crane, which roams in their company; but the wise men by their penetration discover in him the jubilant, hurrying Indra."

This curious hymn, although evidently composed of fragments, and in part very obscure, yet affords an excellent idea of the manner in which a boldly imaginative bard, from whose memory the ancient importance of Varuna had not yet been obliterated, sought to reconcile the dualism and dispute for supremacy which he found actually existent in the religious consciousness of his people, and to account for and illustrate most graphically the gradual subsidence of Varuna and rise of Indra's power. The argument is nearly as follows. Agni is no longer willing to serve Father Varuna, who has abdicated his ancient throne, because the honors formerly paid him are now rendered to Indra; and he, bitterly as he feels the change, must likewise go over to Indra's following. But Indra is not minded to take permanently upon himself the command bestowed upon him in the battle against the demons. After overcoming them in his capacity as general, after purifying the air and restoring peace to the world, he voluntarily invites Varuna to resume his supremacy in the now re-established empire.

It is very unlikely that the first six verses, as given in the text, were all of the original hymn; and it is quite certain that vv. 7-9 have nothing to do with the preceding ones, and perhaps little enough connection with each other. An article by Roth in the Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung, xxvi. 45 ff., contains some valuable suggestions on the subject of these composite hymns.

Indra and the Maruts.—Indra's most constant companions in his expeditions against the demons are the Maruts, the Storm-Gods. He is called in several verses marutvanta, 'accompanied by the Maruts,' marutzakhi, 'having the Maruts for his companions,' marudgana, 'having the troop of the Maruts about him;' and they are styled indravatah (x. 128. 2 et saepp.), indrajyestāh, 'having Indra as leader' (vi. 51. 15). In ii. 29. 3 is found the compound indramarutah (vocative).

Sometimes they merely encourage him in the battle, for the
mighty god needs no assistance; so in iii. 47. 4: "Drink the Soma, O generous giver, with the Marut-troop, who encouraged thee in the fight with Ahi, in the bitter contest with Čambara, and who now with spirited acclamations greet thee, O thou with sorrel steeds." Cf. x. 113. 8 (quoted on p. 137); v. 29. 2; i. 52. 4, 9, 10; iii. 32. 3. Also v. 30. 6: "These friendly Maruts sing praises unto thee; they press Soma for thee." In v. 29. 3 they are even called his priests, of course with reference to these services which they are supposed to render him. According to i. 101. 7 they instruct him in battle: "The sharp-witted one proceeds according to the instructions of the Rudras" (i.e. Maruts).

Their number, if given at all, is variously stated: viii. 85. 3: "Thrice sixty Maruts, worthy of sacrifice, followed thee joyfully;" i. 133. 6 mentions but twenty-seven. Their connection with Indra is of the closest: i. 100. 5: "With the Rudras, as with his sons, the bold one conquers his enemies in the battle of the heroes; may Indra the Marut-leader, undertaking expeditions with his firm allies, be helpful to us." In i. 170. 2 they are called his brothers.

As stated above (p. 137), the other gods, frightened by the violence of Vytra's resistance, withdraw; but the Maruts are thought bolder, for Indra is advised to rely upon their friendship, that he may win all battles.

Yet indications are not lacking that sometimes the harmonious relations between them and Indra were disturbed. Thus, i. 170. 2. The Maruts speak: "Why, O Indra, wouldst thou kill us? The Maruts are thy brothers; remain on good terms with them; kill us not in strife;" i. 171. 6: "Let thy rancor against the Maruts be stilled." There is a verse, viii. 7. 31, which perhaps contains the reason of Indra's anger against them: "What now? With whom were ye on good terms, that ye had abandoned Indra? Who can count upon your friendship?" It was either cowardice or treachery on the part of the Maruts, then, which broke the friendship between Indra and his companions; even his trustiest followers abandon him at times, when the fight gets thickest—conduct which Indra repays with scorn and derision in the fine hymn i. 165, translated in the Siebenzig Liedern. From Roth's annotations to it I derive the following summary. Indra, who commonly sets
out with the Maruts as his companions, starts this time alone. The Maruts inquire 'whither?' Indra answers evasively, 'to a sacrifice.' Thereupon they are quite ready to accompany him, but Indra answers derisively that they were not so eager to follow him when he took the field against Vṛtra—an accusation which the Maruts are powerless to repel. But proving their bravery and fidelity on many occasions, and making the fullest acknowledgments of Indra’s courage and prowess, they finally reconcile him to themselves.

Wilson’s supposition,¹ that these verses contain an allusion to a dispute between worshippers of Indra and those of the Maruts, rests upon too slight a basis to be of importance. Probably the legend had its origin in the humorous fancy of the poet.

*Indra and Vāyu.*—Muir, Sanskrit Texts v. 145, says: “It is remarkable that Vāyu is rarely connected with the Maruts or deities of the storm.” Our surprise will also be excited when we learn that Vāyu, though invoked in many passages together with Indra, is hardly ever mentioned as his companion in the fight with the demons. In fact, I have found only one passage—and that couched in very general terms—which points to such an association of the two: iv. 21. 4:² “(Indra) who conquers together with Vāyu in the battle for the herds?” after all, a very vague allusion. Yet the connection between Vāyu and Indra was very intimate, as we may gather from the numerous hymns dedicated to their joint praise, and from the fact that subsequently the two were identified, so that either of them without distinction is taken to represent the middle region of air with its divinities. Perhaps this striking peculiarity would be best explained by supposing the Indians to have made different personifications of the phenomena of the winds—incorporating on the one hand the storm-winds and gusts which accompany the thunder-storm in Rudra and the Maruts, and on the other imagining Vāyu either as the wind in general or else as the storm which is unaccompanied by thunder and lightning. With the latter conception the fine description of Vāta (who is surely one with Vāyu) in x. 168 would harmonize perfectly. The subsequent identification of Indra and Vāyu doubtless sprang from a confusion of their original significance in Nature, when only the consciousness remained that both exercised their influence chiefly in the intermediate region of air.

The majority of hymns in their honor consist of simple invi-

---

¹ Translation of Rig-Veda, vol. ii., Introd., p. vii.; and notes on pp. 145 and 160.

² yō vāyúnā jāyati gomatiṣṇu.
Indra in the Rig- Veda.

163
tations to the Soma-feast. The first draughts are theirs by right (i. 135. 4); and Vāyu even has precedence of Indra (iv. 46. 1). Both ride upon the same chariot (iv. 47. 3), and after swift horses (vājiniṇiṇāsi i. 2. 5); vii. 90. 5: "The steeds which think through their own intelligence, which are yoked at your very wish, draw you; libations accompany your, the rulers', car, which carries heroes." Both are called divisprṣ, "skirting the heavens," an adjective applied also to their car (i. 23. 2; iv. 46. 4); and the latter is called hiranyavandhura, 'with golden box' (iv. 46. 4), and niyutvatu, 'yoked with many horses' (i. 135. 4, 7; vii. 91. 6). The epithets manojuvā, 'swift as thought,' and sahasrākṣa, 'thousand-eyed,' are likewise applied to them (i. 23. 3).

As benefactors of mankind they are besought for wealth, children, and victory. Thus, i. 135. 8: "Ye drive lither to the offering of the sweet draught, to the Aśvattha-tub in which lie the victory-giving (libations); may they be for us victory-giving; forthwith the cows bring forth and the grain ripens; thy milk cows, O Vāyu, never go dry; thy milk cows never dry up." In v. 5 of the same hymn we find the two called vājadā, 'givers of strength or vigor.' Cf. vii. 90. 6; 91. 2.

Indra and Soma.—The relations between Indra and Soma are easy of explanation. The verses in which the intoxicating beverage appears personified utter in poetical form the same thought as those which mention the yet unpersonified Soma.

Although all the gods have a right to the draught of the noble juice, the most precious production of human hands, yet none possess this in such a degree as Indra. It is Soma wherewith his mother nourishes him on his natal day, and with which he strengthens his vigor and courage before the battle; Soma is indrasya ātmā, 'the soul of Indra,' and his hrdaya- sanīk, 'giver of courage' (ix. 58. 3; 61. 14).

Both Iranians and Indians were acquainted with the Soma-plant, and the peculiarly invigorating and intoxicating effects of its juice after fermentation, even previous to the separation of their languages (Skt. soma, Zd. buoma); and they perceived in it something of divinity. As they were engaged in almost continual battles with neighbors and strangers, it is readily seen how natural it was for them not only to put their knowledge of the plant to practical use, by having recourse to a draught of Soma before entering battle, in order to banish all fear and

1 té satyena mānasā dīdhyānāḥ svēna yuktāsāḥ kṛatunā vahanti: indravāyu vīravahānāḥ rāthah vām lañāyor abhi pṛkṣaḥ sacante.
2 ātāhā tād vaiṣhehe māhva śhutih yām aśvatthām upatiṣṭhanta jāyāvo 'umē té santu jāyāvah: sākham gavaḥ sūvate pacyate yāvo na te vāya ṯpa dasyantī dhenāvō nāpa dasyantī dhenāvah.
instil courage into their hearts, but also to ascribe to the warrior *par excellence*, the war-god Indra, the use of the same expedient.

The development of the conception of Soma as a personal being brought with it a more precise definition of his relations to Indra, and likewise an extension of his helping activity into other fields of Indra’s power than the war against the demons. So we find Soma exalted to a heroic, nay, divine personage; we find him associated with Indra in his battles against all sorts of adversaries; and he even shares in Indra’s cosmogonic labors. In brief, whatever Indra accomplishes, Soma accomplishes with him. In many passages, notably in the ninth Book, this glorification of Soma is carried to the extremest excess.

I append a selection of passages to illustrate the different stages of progress in the conceptions of Soma. Thus, ii. 11. 10: “After he had drunk of the pressed-out juice, he brought to naught the wiles of the wily demons.” So too x. 112. 5, and countless other passages where Soma is simply the intoxicating drink. But in the following it is personified: iv. 28. 1: “With thee, O Soma, for his ally, in union with thee, did Indra then make the streams to flow for mankind” (cf. the other verses of the hymn, and i. 176. 5); vi. 72. 1: “Indra and Soma, this power of yours is great; ye have performed the first of great deeds; ye found the sun, ye found light, ye defeated all darknesses and enemies.” 2. “Indra and Soma, ye made the dawn blaze up, ye led out the sun with his light; ye have fastened the sky with a support, and have spread out the mother earth.” 3. “Indra and Soma, ye slay the dragon Vrtra, who envelopes the waters, the heavens greet you with shouts; ye let out the floods of the streams, the water-floods spread themselves abroad.” 4. “Indra and Soma, ye did place in the raw bodies of the cows the ripe milk, ye held fast in these colored bodies the sweet milk unobstructed” (i. e. the milk which streams unhindered from the cow’s udder, without drying up). And ii. 30. 6: “Ye take away strength from whomsoever ye may purpose it, ye are encouragers of the upright offerers of sacrifice; Indra and Soma, ye have helped us already; procure for us free scope in this present strait.” Cf. further vii. 104, a prayer to Indra and Soma for the chasing away of all sorts of demons.

These and other passages, according to which Soma, when fully personified and associated with other gods, accomplishes all the acts usually performed by them, show conclusively that we have not here to deal with any original nature-myth, but with an unusually rich and detailed embellishment of an originally very simple thought.
Indra in the Rig-Veda.

It was said above that Indra, beyond all other divinities, was addicted to Soma-drinking. It will be interesting to observe what expression the Vedic poets gave to their conceptions of his facultas bibendi. Thus, ix. 99. 3: “We strain the intoxicating draught, which is drunk chiefly by Indra.” He is styled also dyukṣo madasya somyasya rūjā, ‘the brilliant king of the intoxicating Soma’ (vi. 37. 2); and is thus addressed in x. 167. 1: “Thou rulest over the tub of the pressed-out beverage.” As soon as he was born, Indra formed his habit of Soma-drinking (iii. 32. 9, 10; vii. 98. 3). According to iii. 48. 3 (quoted above, p. 128), he seems to have even preferred it to his mother’s milk. He concerns himself little about meum and huun when his favorite drink is in question, but overpowers Tvāṣṭar, and drinks up his Soma (iii. 48. 4 and iv. 18. 11).

He is invited to drink like a thirsty stag (ṛgyo na ṛṣyaṇaḥ: viii. 4. 10), like a bullock (v. 36. 1), or a thirsty buffalo (i. 16. 5); or as a very thirsty bull drinks a fountain dry (i. 130. 2). Nay, he drinks more than a buffalo (vii. 98. 1). His belly is compared to a pond, or even to a sea, in which there is room for the most enormous quantities of water (x. 43. 7). Soma, after he has drunk it, permeates all his limbs (iii. 51. 12; viii. 17. 5). Not only is he invited to satiate himself with Soma at men’s sacrifices, but this is carried aloft to him by a falcon, cyaṇa (i. 80. 2; 93. 6; iv. 26. 5; vi. 20. 6, et sequ.) Sometimes he indulges in more solid food at his drinking-bouts: in x. 27. 2, he consumes a roasted bull; in vi. 17. 11, a hundred of them; in v. 29. 7, three hundred; and his thirst then assumes such proportions that he drains three lakes of Soma. It was however still greater on another occasion, when he swallowed thirty lakes full of it, and that too in one draught (viii. 66. 4). He cannot wait until it is drawn for him, but gulps down cask and faucet and all (x. 116. 4). No wonder that after such exploits his Hercules-head is in a somewhat befogged condition, as described in the amusing hymn x. 119 (Geldner and Kaegi); or that he staggers about at the sacrificial feast, tottering like a boat in the water (ii. 16. 7), and receives the honorable title vihurō aśtar, ‘the reeling archer’ (viii. 85. 2).

Indra and Brahma (Brahmanaspati).—Indra’s union with Brahmanaspati, ‘the lord of prayer,’ furnishes an excellent parallel or companion-piece to his alliance with Soma, and is similarly explainable: i. e. not from any common features of original nature-myths, but as the product of conscious deliberation. Indra is joined with Soma for a purely physical, with Brahmanaspati for a purely moral reason. Since the latter union is of no significance for Indra’s nature, I content myself with quoting a paragraph from an essay by Roth entitled “Brahma and the Brahmanas,” in Z. D. M. G. i., which illustrates the
same development of ideas in the legends concerning Brahmanaspati which we found in the fables relating to Soma. "The request which occurs oftenest in the hymns (of the Rig-Veda), and is directed to Indra, is the prayer that he will oppose the machinations of the cloud-demon, who threatens to carry off the fruitful rains of heaven, or holds them already imprisoned in mountain-caves; that he will pour out the waters, fructify the earth, and bestow sustenance upon man and beast. If, as his name denotes, the nature of the god Brahmanaspati really expresses the victorious power of devotion, then we must find him in this myth-cyclos oftener than elsewhere. He actually appears by Indra's side in the battle against the wicked one; and in such a manner that to him is attributed a portion of the work which in the majority of other hymns devolves entirely upon Indra. And finally, in a few rare passages it is he alone who breaks open the caves of Bala, to bring to light the hidden treasures of the fructifying water: i.e. in the allegorical expression, the rich milk-cows." Roth then quotes ii. 24. 3, 4, according to which verses Bhaspati alone opens the caves by means of brahman, 'prayer,' just as Indra does with the thunderbolt.

The only entire hymn directed to Indra and Bhaspati, the 49th in Book iv., contains simply invocations of very general nature and invitations to the sacrifice, and offers little that is explanatory of the relations between the two deities. They are besought for wealth, especially for horses, and invited to get drunk, as is their favorite custom—a fine occupation for the "lord of prayer!" The verses of vii. 97 are mostly directed to one or the other of the two gods, but offer equally little. In v. 9 we read: "Help along our prayers, awake in us wisdom, make powerless our enemies and the evil-doings of our opponents." We find them called conquerors of human enemies in viii. 85, 15: "Indra with Bhaspati for his companion defeated the impious advancing nations." In i. 18. 4, Indra appears with his physical as well as his moral ally: "Whatever mortal Indra, Bhaspati, and Soma support, that hero receives no hurt."

Indra and Gandharva.—In view of the ideas contained in x. 139. 4, 6, I have preferred to discuss the relations between Indra and Gandharva at this point in my essay, although other views, almost diametrically opposed (found e.g. in viii. 1. 11; 66. 5; ix. 83. 4), might induce the belief that Gandharva should be classed with the enemies of Indra. Yet both sides of his character are easily explainable from one and the same ground-thought.

\[1 \text{viço ádevi śabhy kárantr bhāspātīṁ yujendraḥ sasāhe.}\]
Indra in the Rig-Veda.

Gandharva is not the rainbow, as Roth at first supposed, in which he was followed by Grassmann; but rather the genius of the moon, as the discussion of him in the Pet. Dict. plainly shows. He dwells in the sky, or in the broad air, and is guardian of the heavenly Soma, by which is signified as well the actual Soma, brought into mystical connection with the moon, as the heavenly waters typified by this figure. Since now Gandharva watches over the Soma, or rain, a twofold conception develope itself: either, as guardian of the waters, he holds them from mankind, and must therefore be brought to terms by Indra; or else it is Gandharva who protects the Soma, or rain, from capture by the demons, and reveals their hiding-place to Indra when the latter seeks them. The second of these conceptions is found e. g. in x. 189. 4. The third pada has either one or two syllables too many. Grassmann removes indraḥ; I prefer to reject āsāṃ, and to read indra in three syllables, as is frequently necessary. I would also read somagandharvām as a compound. "The waters, when they had perceived the Soma-Gandharva, in whose possession lies all wealth, flowed out then in the right channel (i.e. down to earth); when Indra, hastening toward them, discovered them, then he perceived the veil of the sun" (i.e. the halo around the sun); v. 6:2 "He (Gandharva) found the victorious (Indra) in the track of the streams; he opened the gates for those that were imprisoned in the rocks; Gandharva revealed their nectar (i.e. told Indra their whereabouts), and Indra made trial of the dragons' powers."

The opposite conception finds expression, as already stated, in viii. 1. 11; 66. 5; ix. 83. 4. Here Gandharva is guardian of the Soma, or rain, and Indra compels him to surrender it. Thus, viii. 1. 11:4 "(I invoke Indra) in order that he urge on the sun's steed and the two galloping winged horses of the wind; in order that he of hundred-fold courace may drive to Kutsa Arjuneya; in order that he may surprise the unconquered Gandharva;" 66. 5: Indra pierced Gandharva through in the fathomless air, to the joy of his worshippers;"

1 vićvāvasuḥ soma gandharvām āpo dadṛśuṣa tād ātēnā vy āyan: tād anvāvad indro rārahān āsāṃ pārī stṛyasya paridhīfr apācyat.
2 sāsām avindac cārane nañcām āpāvṛṇad dúro ścma Mravajānām: práśām gandharvō amśtānā vocad indro dákṣam pārī jānād aḥfām.
3 yāt tudāt sūra étācaṁ vanhā nañtāsya parāṅaṁ: vāhat kūtsam ārjuneyaṁ ātākṛatva tārād gandharvām āstṛtām.
4 abhi gandharvāṁ ātṛṣad abudhnāsu rājāhav 8: indro brhamābhya id vṛdhē.
ix. 83. 4: “Gandharva protects his (Soma’s) abode; invisible he guards the creatures of the gods; the holder of the net (Indra: cf. A. V. viii. 8. 5 ff.) catches the enemy (Gandharva) with his net; the most pious ones achieved the enjoyment of the sweet drink.” Although this last verse is susceptible of different explanations, the comparison with the others quoted seems to point to the interpretation here given.

**Indra and Agni.**—The hymns to Agni in the Rig-Veda are surpassed in number only by those to Indra; and no two divinities are so often associated. Yet the verses which thus combine them throw very little light on Indra’s nature.

Agni, as god of fire in general, naturally manifests himself in all the different appearances of that element—which being threefold, his nature is likewise threefold. He is god of the fiery element in the sky, and in this quality appears associated with Varuṇa, particularly as divider of day and night: i.e. he is the sun; as lightning, he presides over the fire in the atmosphere, and stands at Indra’s side in all exploits of the latter which belong in this sphere; and finally, he is god of the fire upon earth, preeminently of the sacrificial fire, and hence is chosen as the messenger to invite and conduct the gods to the sacrifice, or else to convey the offering to them on high.

In these conceptions of Agni’s character lay a double reason for associating him with Indra: a general reason, for which the messenger between men and gods exercises his functions oftenest for the most lauded and honored deity, Indra; and a more special one, according to which Agni, god of the lightning, the fiery element in the atmosphere, which is indispensable to Indra’s victory over Vṛtra, naturally stands as ally at Indra’s side. To the one or the other of these views nearly every conception of the alliance between Indra and Agni may be traced back. It is remarkable how Agni is everywhere subordinated to Indra; as in fact the other gods lose a great part of their import-

---

1 *gandharvā itthā padāṃ aṣṭā rākṣati pātī devāṅāṁ jānimāny ādbhutaṁ; gṛbhaṁ tāṁ ripūṁ nīdhaṁ nīdhapatiḥ suḥṣṭamā mādhuṁ bhakṣyām açata.*

2 The two verses vii. 6. 1—“I praise the deeds of him that is mighty as Indra”—and viii. 63. 10—“Thou Lord similar to Indra”—are really no contradiction of this statement; for other verses show conclusively that such glorifications of Agni spring merely from the poet’s fancy. In general, the Vedic poets seem to have regarded a comparison with Indra as the highest praise possible to be bestowed upon another divinity. Pāṇin is called *indro na sukraśuḥ*, vi. 48. 14; Manyu, *vijesakrd indra iva*, ‘victory-giving like Indra,’ x. 147. 5. Peta’s mighty horse is *cakrīyām indram iva*, ‘glorious as Indra,’ i. 119. 10. In x. 173. 2, the poet compares a king, in 166. 2 himself, to Indra. The Āśvin and Uṣas are styled *indramātuḥ*, generally rendered ‘most like Indra’ (i. 182. 2, vii. 79. 3); per-
Indra in the Rig-Veda. 169

ance when they appear in the society of the mighty thunderer; Varuna alone can claim anything like equal rank with Indra, and subsequently even he endures the comparison none too successfully.

Several passages relate that Indra created Agni: so e. g. ii. 12. 3, where we have to understand the use of the lightning in the battle with the demons, in the atmosphere between heaven and earth. The expression is then transferred, with mystical intent, to the birth of Agni upon earth: x. 45. 3: "In the sea (of air), in the waters, in the udder of the sky (i.e. in the cloud: cf. iii. 1. 9), did he who is friendly to men, who looks upon men (i.e. Indra: cf. passages quoted in Pet. Dict. s. v. nrmanas), produce thee." Grassmann's reference of this passage to the lightning is undoubtedly correct. This seems to contradict the statements of vi. 59. 2, as quoted in Part II., p. 130 ff. And in fact the two verses are hard to reconcile—which is the less wonderful, as the conceptions of Agni's origin are in the highest degree uncertain and wavering, and evidently formed to accord with the phenomena of his appearance under widely different circumstances. Agni as a power of Nature, and Agni as this or that form of fire, have very different origins.

Agni's character as a priest or messenger to the gods at the sacrifice (since the offerings were consumed by the fire) is illustrated by the following passages: v. 5. 3: "When honored, O Agni, bring hither the brilliant beloved Indra" (citram might also be construed as a predicate adjective, in the sense of 'visible'); iii. 53. 4: "As often as we press the Soma, may Agni run to thee as messenger." Likewise iii. 35. 9: "Drink the Soma, Indra, by means of Agni's tongue" (cf. v. 10). Agni's tongue is the flame, into which the Soma for Indra is poured, and which stretches itself toward the sky. So also v. 51. 2, et saepp. The verse viii. 38. 1, if taken literally, would present a view not found, so far as I know, in other passages: "Be the priests of this sacrifice, Indra and Agni, for ye are victorious in battle and in sacrifice." The meaning probably is: Ye are the real priests; men alone, without your help, have

hapse 'most rapid' were better (cf. above in Part I.); since in iv. 43. 3 the rapidity of the Aryan is likened to that of Indra. In fact, the word indratama may be an intentional pun.

1 yó ápmanor antár agniṁh jājāna.
2 samudrā dvā nṛmaṁ apav antār nṛcākṣa tāthe dīvō agna ādhan.
3 tītō agna ś vahéndram citrāṁ iha priyām.
4 yadā kac ca sunāvāma sōmaṁ agniṣ tvā dītō dhanvātī śoḥa.
5 yeṣāsya hi sthā ṛtvijā sāsanī vājaśu kārmasya: indrāgni tāsya bo-
dhatam.
no power whatever. Strictly taken, only Agni is the priest. But we have here doubtless still another instance of the extension of an attribute which really belongs to only one of a pair, so as to apply to the other as well. Other well-known examples of this poet’s license are pitarā and mātarā for the two parents, dyāvā for heaven and earth, etc.

The other side of Agni’s character, according to which he appears as the fire of lightning, explains at once his connection with Indra in the battle of the thunderstorm, and the circumstance that both are invoked together as general helpers in battle, more especially in battles against non-Aryans, and as bestowers of war-booty and all sorts of riches. The process of development is here quite the same which we discovered in the case of Indra-Soma, Indra-Bṛhaspati, etc.: so soon as, for any reason, any divinity is associated with Indra in his battle for the rain, the motive is furnished for connecting him with Indra in all manifestations of the latter’s activity.

Indra and Agni occupy the same chariot, especially when going to sacrifices on earth. Thus, i. 108. 1: “With your most splendid wagon, Indra and Agni, which looks upon all creatures, come hither together in the wagon, and drink of the pressed Soma;” v. 3: “Ye have united your friendly persons, ye are yourselves united, O ye Vṛtra-slayers; after seating yourselves in company, O Indra and Agni, pour down, O strong ones, the strong Soma.”

In verse 4 of i. 108, açvinā are invoked and besought to make the herbs palatable for the second pressing: “Ye açvinā (i. e. ‘horse-possessors’), with luck-bringing, skilful hands, rinse them (the herbs) and steep them in water with mead”(?)—i. e. that the herbs after being steeped in water may yield juice a second time. Myriantheus’s exegesis of this verse deserves notice for its extraordinary absurdity (Açvina, p. 147): “That the lightning was conceived as a being with a horse’s head, or as a horse, is seen from i. 109. 4 and vii. 1. 12, where Agni, the lightning, and Indra, are called açvinā, or Agni alone açvī, ‘furnished with horses’ or ‘horse-tamer.’” But ‘horse-guider’ is a perfectly satisfactory translation of the epithet used here; and Myriantheus’s conclusion of the “being with a horse’s head” is extremely strained and altogether unnecessary. Indra and Agni are called açvinā, not because they have lightning at their disposal, but simply because the

1 yā indrāgni citrātamo rátho vām abhi viśvānē bhūvanāni caṣṭe: tēnā yātan sarāthān tathīvānātā sōmasya pibatān sutāsya.
2 cakrāthe hi sadhrīyāṁ nāma bhadrāṁ sadhhrīcī nam vṛtraḥpā uti sthaḥ: tāv indrāgni sadhhrīyaṁ nisādyā vṛṣṇā sōmasya ṛṇāṇā ṛṇethāṁ.
3 tāv açvinā bhadrāhastā supāṇī ā dhāvatām mādhunā práktām aṣṇā.
poets imagined them as driving. Besides, it is not even certain that Indra and Agni are here intended by aqvinā. For in v. 3 the vṛṣanaḥ (the busy Soma-pressers) are mentioned as laboring for Indra and Agni; and in v. 4 the epithets bhadra-hastā and sūpāṇā, and the work they are exhorted to undertake, suit the pressers so well that only the dual number prevents our referring aqvinā to them, since the press-stones are often compared to steeds. Thus Grassmann ad loc. If then aqvinā here really refers to Indra and Agni, I can only explain the verse as follows: The gods for whose benefit the sacrifice is begun are besought to interfere in the process and watch over the details, that no mistake be made.

A few passages will suffice to illustrate the part played by Agni in the Vṛtra-battle. Thus, iii. 12. 6:1 "Indra and Agni, by one act ye shattered all at once the ninety demon-ruled ferds." Cf. i. 109. 7, 8 (purandarā, vajrāhastā, vajrabāhū). In i. 59. 6, Agni himself is called slayer of Čambra. Further, viii. 40. 5:2 "Arrange the prayers after Nabhāka's fashion for Indra and Agni, who opened the sea (in the air) with its seven bottoms, which was turned mouth downward."(t) Cf. also v. 8. In the following, Agni's subordinate position is emphasized: v. 29. 7:2 "The friendly Agni roasted gladly three hundred bullocks for his friend; Indra drank the Soma, pressed by mortals, in order to slay Vṛtra, three lakes full at once." Agni himself says in x. 52. 5:4 "I procure for you, O ye gods, immortality and an abundance of heroes, that I may present you with freedom; I will put this lightning into Indra's hands, and then he will win all these battles." And as Indra through his victory recovers light as well as rain, so we find Agni of assistance in this labor also: vi. 60. 2:5 "Win back for us now, O Indra and Agni, the cows, the light, the dawns that were led astray; thou, O Indra, yokest for thyself the quarters of heaven, the light, and the many-colored dawns; and thou, O Agni, the waters, the cows, as a team;" iii. 12. 9: "O Indra and Agni, ye have by the battle restored to order the light-regions of the sky."

A further extension of the functions of both gods makes of them demon-killers in general, exactly as was the case with

---

1 indraγnī navatām püro dāsāpatnir adhānutam: sākām ákene kārmaṇā.
2 prá brāhmāṇi nabākavād indraγnībhīyām irajyata: yā saptābudhnam āravāṇā jihmābāram aparṇutāḥ.
3 sākhā sākhya apacat tāyaṃ agnir asyā krātvā mahiṣā tri qaṭāni: tri sākām indro mānuṣāḥ sarāśi sutām pibād vṛtraḥātyāya sōmaṃ.
4 ā vo yakṣy āṃtāvāṃ suvīrāṃ yāthā vo devā várvāḥ kārāni: ā bāhvrō vājram indrasya dhreyām āthemā viṣvāḥ pātanā jayāti.
5 tā yodhiṣṭam abhi gā indra nūnām apāh svār uṣāyo agnā ujjāh: diçaḥ svār uṣāsa indra citrā apō gā agne yuvase niyūtvān.
Indra alone (i. 21. 5 ; iv. 28. 3), and they are supposed to render assistance against human enemies, and to bestow booty in war and all sorts of riches (vi. 60. 4, 5, 6; 59. 9; v. 86. 4; iii. 12. 4; i. 109. 1, 2, 5, 8; vii. 93. 2; viii. 40. 4).

The verses v. 2. 8 and x. 32. 6 contain fragments of a curious fable, for which I cannot find any parallel in the Rig-Veda, unless the 8th verse of v. 2—in which Agni is said to be kept prisoner by the wicked, and Atri's songs shall free him—may be combined with the 8th verse. The passages are as follows: v. 2. 8: 'In anger didst thou depart from me, the law-watcher of the gods revealed it to me; Indra knew, for he discovered thee; instructed by him, O Agni, I came hither;' x. 32. 6: 'The law-watcher of the gods revealed to me him who was hidden and concealed in the waters,' etc. (as in v. 2. 8). One at once thinks of the fable in Book x., according to which Agni, weary of his unending sacrificial duties, takes to flight, but is reinstated by the gods after Yama has discovered his hiding-place: cf. x. 51 and 52. According to Tāitt. S. ii. 6. 6' (see Muir S. T. v. 203), a fish betrayed Agni's place of concealment. The fish was evidently made the betrayer because the fugitive deity lay concealed in the waters. May not a similar conception have made Indra his discoverer? By "water" we may, in the Veda, generally understand either or both of two things, the waters of the atmosphere and those of the earth, which the poets intentionally confused time after time, for the purpose of imparting a mystical tone to their hymns, so that a distinction is often quite impossible. Accordingly, when we read that Agni hid himself in the water, by which one poet meant the terrestrial waters, and that a fish, as the animal which dwells in the water and hence is supposed to observe whatever goes on there, betrayed him, it is self-explanatory how another poet, who by "waters" meant those of the firmament, should have related that Agni was discovered and betrayed by Indra; for Indra was in the highest degree concerned about the heavenly streams. According to yet another version it was Yama who spied him out; the change of names shows that the person of the discoverer was a more or less arbitrary invention.

*Indra and Viṣṇu.*—Viṣṇu is the all-quickening, all-preserving sun-god. He strides with three steps over earth, atmosphere, and heaven; and where his highest step falls the gods dwell. He bestows prosperity and fruitfulness; and in order that nature may subsist in undisturbed regularity, he prop up

1 hr̥tyāmaṇo āpa hi mād ṛīveḥ prá me devānāḥ vrataṇā śvāca: indro vidvān ānu hi tvā ca cākṣa tēnāhām agne ānuṭīṣṭa āgām.

2 nidhyāmaṇam āpagūhīmaṃ aprā prá me devānām, etc.
firmly both heaven and earth. As god of fruitfulness he is associated with Ṭvaśṭar and Pūṣan. Yet, as we have seen already, the orderly progress of natural life is constantly threatened or even arrested by evil spirits, whom it is necessary to subdue, so that Viṣṇu must assume the character and functions of a demon-slayer. But other deities perform a similar office—Indra and the Aṣvinis exert themselves to ensure the eternal change of day and night, and the regular flow of rain upon earth; and naturally Viṣṇu is often associated with them. He is oftener mentioned in connection with Indra, the demon-slayer in chief; and in the same subordinate position in which we have hitherto discovered all the companions of the mighty thunderer. Viṣṇu offers Indra the Soma, or is sometimes sent by Indra into the fight alone, in which case the latter imparts to him the requisite strength and courage. Again, he stands side by side with Indra, who bids him withdraw somewhat, to give free room for brandishing the thunderbolt (iv. 18. 11; viii. 89. 12: differently explained by Müller, R. V. Transl., i. 85. 7, note 2).

How Indra and Viṣṇu fight in company for the preservation of order in the universe will be best seen from a few extracts. Thus, Vāl. 4. 3 (cf. above, p. 153): "(Indra,) who receives the prayers for himself alone; who boldly drinks the Soma; for whom Viṣṇu took his three steps, according to the decree of Mitra." In viii. 12. 27 Viṣṇu does this through Indra's might. Again, vi. 20. 2: "To thee the gods yielded as it were the whole dominion over the sky, when thou, O impetuous one, allied with Viṣṇu, didst slay the dragon Vṛtra, who enveloped the waters;" vii. 99. 4: "Ye procure free scope for the sacrifice, by making sun, dawn, and fire shine out; ye have brought to naught the wiles of the demon Viṣṇu-pārśva, O ye heroes;" v. 5: "Indra and Viṣṇu, ye have broken open the nine and ninety firm forts of Čambala, and have overwhelmingly beaten the hundred and the thousand warriors of the Aśura Varein all together." Viṣṇu uses the same specific to acquire courage which Indra employs: vi. 89. 2: "Indra and Viṣṇu, ye who evoke all prayers, ye two Soma-casks." In v. 6 they are styled "a sea" of Soma: cf. also v. 5.

The same extension of functions which we have already

---

1 dīvō nā tūbhyam āv indra satāsuryām devēbhīr dhāyi viṣvam: śāhīn yād vṛtrām apō vavrivāhānām hān焖 viṣvunā sakānāḥ.
2 urdhā yajāya sakrathur u lokāḥ janāyantā sūryam uṣāsam agnīm: dāsasya cido viṣṇu-pārśva māyā jaghāthu Narā pṛthāyāśu.
3 indravīṣṇu dhṛhitāḥ cāmarshasya nāvā pūrṇo navatīs ca cāṃmathāṁ: cāṭāṁ vīrvināḥ sahasrām ca sākāṁ batho apraty āšurasya vṛtān.
4 Cf. the German Aaltes Rīferfas, and Goethe's "Aaltes Weinsfas" (Faust).
often met with, when demon-slayers become general protectors and givers of wealth, is to be found here also. Indra and Viṣṇu are called abhīmatiṣāḥ, ‘conquerors of the attackers,’ vi. 69. 4. In i. 155. 2: “The Soma-drinker escapes the fierce conflict with you mighty ones; ye are they who turn aside from mortals the aimed arrow of the bow-stretching archer.” Cf. vi. 69. 1.

A curious reference is made to Indra and Viṣṇu in vi. 69. 8, according to which they “divided the thousand-fold into three parts.” I can find no explanation for this, unless by the “thousand-fold” the universe be signified, which Indra and Viṣṇu might be said to have divided into three parts, i. e. heaven, atmosphere and earth, by restoring order to the disturbed course of nature.

Another difficult allusion occurs in i. 61. 7. Grassmann translates thus: “As soon as strengthened by the juices of his mother, when he had gulped down the drink, the noble food, he, energetic and victorious, stole the bright-flamed, and hit the boar, shooting over the rocks.” What Grassmann understands by “the bright-flamed” he does not say; in his dictionary he takes pacatam much more correctly as neuter, ‘cooked food.’ The words mātuḥ savaneṣu sadyo are, according to him, equivalent to “while he yet subsisted on mother’s milk;” and viṣṇuḥ is an adj., ‘energetic,’ and referring to Indra. On this point he agrees with Benfey, who renders the verse as follows (Orient and Occident, i. 583): “Hardly had the strongest hero gulped down the drink and the excellent food at the sacrifice, when he stole from the workman that which was to be made glowing, and smote the boar, piercing him through with the bolt.” In a note Benfey adds this remarkable explanation: “According to my notion the sense is: Hardly had Indra refreshed himself upon the sacrificial offering, when he stole the thunderbolt made by the celestial workman, and smote Vṛtra. We receive here a new moment for the mythical conception of Indra, by which he links himself with the lightning-stealing Prometheus (cf. Kuhn, Herabkunft des Feuers, p. 17); pacatam, Vedic part. fut. pass. : lit’ly, ‘that is to be set boiling,’ i. e. the thunderbolt, which must be made glowing hot before use.” Against this speak several considerations. 1. The syntactical union of mātuḥ-mahāḥ-pacatam is very bold, on account of the order of words. 2. The accent of mātuḥ is an obstacle, since the word, if a genitive or ablative from mātar, ‘carpenter,’ would be necessarily accented on

1 asayed u mātuḥ savaṇeṣu sadyo mahāḥ pitum papvād cāry ānāḥ: muṣṣayād viṣṇuḥ pacatāṁ sāhīyaṁ vidhyad varahāṁ tirc ādṛm āstā.
the first syllable. 3. The meaning ‘that is to be made hot’ for pacatam is quite indefensible, first on account of the form of the word, and secondly because pac does not mean simply ‘heat,’ but specifically ‘cook over the fire,’ and is used of food only. A “cooked” thunderbolt would have rendered Indra invaluable assistance in the conflict with Vṛtra, who showed no vulnerable parts!

Possibly viii. 66. 10 may instruct us how to render pacatam. In this verse, indra (i.e. indrah) is certainly a mistake; tvēṣitah (=tva+isitah) shows that the vocative indra must originally have stood here, which is also indicated by the fact (acknowledged by Grassmann) that vv. 10 and 11 form a separate fragment, originally addressed to Indra. The collector or editor took exception to the inconsistent deviation from sandhi-rules in the case of the voc. indra—a deviation which was justified by the Vedic usage of metrical pronunciation—and corrected to indra, in the pada-text indrah. Grassmann translates as though he had likewise read indra, but makes no mention of it in the notes. The meaning would then be as follows: “All this the far-stepping Viṣṇu, sent out by thee, brought back—a hundred bullocks, a porridge cooked with milk, and a destructive boar, O Indra:” odina here =pacata.

In i. 61. 7, the words savaneṣu to annā, inclusive, seem to form a parenthesis, and we might translate as follows: “After he had swifly and with joy drunk the draught and (eaten) the acceptable food at the Śoma-feast, Viṣṇu, who was superior in strength, stole from that one’s mother the porridge; he smote the boar, hurling the stone through him.” Still, this neither explains the verse completely nor interprets the myths. Unfortunately the story does not recur in the Rig-Veda. Both verses lack all connection with the others of their respective hymns, unless perhaps in viii. 66 the verses 10 and 11 form a strophe. From these two passages alone the original form and signification of the myths are quite unrecognizable.

Indra and Tvaṣṭar.—The Rig-Veda offers the following for the relations between Indra and Tvaṣṭar. 1. Tvaṣṭar, the general workman and artist among the gods, prepares the thunderbolt for Indra: i. 52. 7: “Tvaṣṭar increased the power which resided in thee, he forged the thunderbolt of overwhelming

---

1 Pet. Dict. s. v. mātā: “The reference might be to Vṛtra’s mother.”
2 vṛjvēt tā Viṣṇur āharaṇa urukramās tvēṣitah: qatām māhīṣān kṣira-pākām odaneḥ varāhāṃ indra emuṣām.
3 tvēṣita cīte yūyam vāyudhe qāvas tatākṣa vājram abhisbhuṭyocasam.
force;” vi. 17. 10:1 “Then, O mighty one, did Tvāṣṭar turn out for thee swiftly the thousand-pointed, hundred-edged thunderbolt, the eager, obedient (thunderbolt), wherewith, O impetuous one, thou didst crush the bellowing dragon.” Cf. x. 48. 3; i. 61. 6. For the doubtful verse i. 61. 7, see the preceding section.

2. Indra overpowers Tvāṣṭar and drinks up his Soma: iv. 18. 3:2 “In Tvāṣṭar’s house Indra drank from the vessels the pressed Soma, of the value of a hundred (cattle?);” iii. 48. 4:3 “Mighty, rapidly conquering, of overpowering might, Indra changed his person as he would; after as was his wont he had overcome Tvāṣṭar, he seized the Soma and drank it out of the vessels.”

Myriantheus, who never abandons the unfortunate belief that each and every fable concerning a god is explainable as a natural mythus, i.e. referable to some event in nature, explains this violent proceeding in the following not less violent manner (Aevis, p. 146): “Tvāṣṭar is creator of heaven and earth and of all creatures, and in his house, as we read, was the Soma, which Indra drank after Tvāṣṭar had been overcome. This Soma can not but be identical with madhu, as indeed Soma is often called madhu (see x. 49. 10, and Kuhn’s Herakunft etc., p. 155 ff.). From this, and from what was proved above concerning the meaning of madhu, the Soma which Indra drank in the house of Tvāṣṭar, creator of all things, can only be the rain, which he takes from Tvāṣṭar’s dwelling and sends down to his worshippers.”

But we can not spring so lightly over such real difficulties. Let us observe the two passages more carefully. Neither has a word about sending the Soma down to the worshippers: on the contrary, Indra drinks it solely for his own pleasure. Moreover, in the first half of iv. 18. 3 reference is made to Indra’s violence toward his mother; and if we allow any connection between the two halves of the verse, we are constrained to admit that the similar nature of the actions mentioned respectively in both was the reason for their combination in

---

1 ádīna tvaṣṭaṁ te mahā ugra vājaṁ sahārabṛṣṭiṁ vavṛtaḥ chatāśram:
2 niśām man arāmāpasanāṁ yēṇa nāvaṁāṁ śaṁ sām pīṣag jīśiṁ.
3 tvaṣṭur grīhe apibat sōmāṁ indraṁ çatahanyāṁ caṁvoh sutāsyā.
4 Ludwig translates as follows (Die philosoph. u. relig. Anschnauungen d. Veda, p. 31): “He looks upon his dying mother: ‘I will not refuse to yield to him, I will follow him;’ [Indra now breaks into Tvāṣṭar’s house, to procure Soma for his dying mother, and kills Tvāṣṭar’s son] in Tvāṣṭar’s house Indra drank Soma of hundred-fold value, from the two vessels of juice.” I confess my inability to comprehend this.

5 ugrās turāṣṭā abhibhūtyoṣṭi yathāvaçāṁ tanvāṁ cakṛa eṣāḥ: tvaṣṭaṁ
6 ram indro jandabhīhīhūyāmāsyā yōmām apibac caṁvoh.
one stanza. Now comparing iii. 48. 4, we perceive that the appropriation of Tvāṣṭar’s Soma was an act of pure violence, as is indicated by the occurrence of abhi-bhū twice. This accords well with the whole hymn iii. 48, which treats of Indra’s extraordinary fondness for the Soma, and his dependence upon it for his strength, so that he seizes upon it greedily the very moment after his birth. In every verse except the 5th, which consists merely of invocations, mention is made of his Soma-drinking, and no reason exists for taking the word soma in vv. 1–3 in any but the usual sense: why then all at once in v. 5 in the signification of “rain?” Similarly iv. 18, as far as its unity extends, consists largely of references to Indra’s violent and headstrong nature. For this reason doubtless the collectors placed the 3rd verse among the others, well knowing that no deed of especial friendliness to mankind was commemorated by it.

Myriantheus’s theory moreover involves him in a contradiction. What has Tvāṣṭar to do with the rain? If Indra robs him of the waters, to bestow them upon mankind, then Tvāṣṭar must have detained them by force, which would make him an enemy of gods and men—a conception of his nature utterly at variance with that otherwise entertained. For Tvāṣṭar fashions the thunderbolt for Indra, that he may conquer the rain-stealing demons. It is undoubtedly true that madhu often signifies the sweet Soma, and is often metaphorically transferred to the rain; but in iii. 48. 4 madhu does not occur, and we have no right to explain soma there of the rain. Besides, the verse x. 49. 10, which Myriantheus quotes to sustain his position, proves nothing for him, since madhu there refers not to Soma or the rain at all, but to plain earthly cow’s milk. Indra is boasting of his own deeds. Among them was this: “I put into the cows the white milk, which not even Tvāṣṭar put into them; into the udders and bodies of the cows the precious, sweet, delicious milk, for mixing’ the Soma.”

3. Indra causes the death of Tvāṣṭar’s son Viśvarūpa. This has been discussed in the section “Indra and Tṛiṭa.”

Indra and the Rbhus.—The Rbhus bear nearly the same relation as Tvāṣṭar to Indra, being engaged as skilful artisans on his behalf. In most cases no distinction is made between the three, Rbhukṣan, Vāja, and Vībhvan. But iv. 33. 9 gives a more detailed account: “Vāja acted as artisan for (all) the gods, Rbhukṣan for Indra, Vībhvan for Varuna.” They build Indra’s chariot and fashion his steeds: i. 111. 1: “They, work-

1 āśīram, infin. from ā + ār = ā + ārī: cf. viii. 6. 19.
2 tākṣan rátham suvīṣṭam vīmanāpasaś tākṣan hārī indravēdā rījan-

vṛṣṇaḥ.
ing with intelligence, built for Indra the well-wheeled chariot, they fashioned the steeds which pull Indra and bring with them great riches." The same characteristic of care in their work is emphasized in i. 20. 2: "Those who with right understanding created for Indra the steeds which harness themselves at the word, received for their exertions a sacrifice"—i. e. they were deemed worthy of divine honors; before this, so the story runs, they had not been considered as actual divinities. We read in v. 31. 4: "The Anus prepared the chariot for thy steed." Anu, an appellation of a non-Aryan race; seems to indicate that the Rbhus were especially honored by this people, or that the Anus had developed unusual skill in wagon-building.

These relations between Indra and his artificers were the basis of further connections. In iv. 35. 7 we read: "O guider of sorrel steeds, thou hast drunk (alone) in the early morning, and the midday pressing belonged likewise to thee alone; drink now (i. e. at evening) with the wealth-bestowing Rbhus, with whom thou hast entered into friendship, by reason of their skill." Cf. iii. 52. 6. Indra himself is styled rhuksan in i. 111. 4; vii. 37. 4; x. 74. 5; and in iv. 37. 5 Rbhu's strength is compared to Indra's.

Indra as Chief of the Vasus.—The character of the Vasus is so vague, so little developed and individualized, that we shall hardly discover any internal reason for their union with Indra as their chief. Certain passages seem to indicate that the gods were divided into three classes, Ādityas, Rudras, and Vasus; so e. g. ii. 31. 1: "Help our chariot, O Mitra and Varuṇa, joined with the Ādityas, the Rudras, the Vasus." In x. 48. 11 Indra says of himself: "I break not the laws of the gods, of the Ādityas, the Vasus, the Rudras." And x. 66. 3: "May Indra with the Vasus guard our dwelling, Aditi with the Ādityas afford us protection, the god Rudra with the Rudras show us mercy, and Tvāṣṭar with the goddesses help us to prosperity."

I know of but one verse which justifies any conclusion as to the real nature of the Vasus: vii. 47. 2: "Ye waters, may the son of the waters (Agni) protect your sweet waves, with which Indra together with the Vasus refreshes himself—these (waves)

---

1 yá indrśya vacrayúja tataśur mánasā hárti: čāmbhir yajñām áśata.
2 ánvasas te rátham ácāyāya takṣan.
4 Perhaps both. The word ánus is not wholly clear, and perhaps in this passage is used quite appellatively of the Rbhu.
5 tám tūrmín āpo mádhumātaman vo 'paḥ nāpād avatāv ācuhémā: yásmin indro vásubhir mádāyate tám aśyāma devayánto vo adyā.
may we receive to-day from you.” We might suppose from this that the Vasus were imagined to have played a part in the recapture of the waters; yet other indications of such an idea are lacking. Perhaps the connection between them and Indra is but the product of later schematizing; as Varuna was placed at the head of the Adityas, and Rudra over the Rudras, so also, in lack of a chief for the Vasus, the most prominent among the remaining divinities was chosen. Vasupati, used often of Indra, may signify either ‘Lord of the Vasus’ or ‘Lord of Riches’—in most cases doubtless the latter; and perhaps the name, at first used in the latter sense, gave rise by its very ambiguity to the idea that Indra stood in near relations to the Vasus.

**Indra’s battles with human enemies.**—It was so natural for Indra, the mighty warrior of the atmosphere, the doughty conqueror of demons, the fighter *par excellence* and ideal of a warlike hero among the gods, to advance to the position of the war-god, that the mere quotation of several significant passages will render unnecessary any more detailed comments. The verses which I shall here adduce might be classified with equal right with those which yield information concerning Indra’s relations with his worshippers; but I have preferred to introduce them here, that we may have the portrait of Indra as a warrior complete before our eyes, ere turning to the results of his battles, in which he appears as a cosmogonic power, a god of benevolence, etc.

The most general conceptions offer themselves in such passages as ii. 30. 10.: “Together with our warlike heroes, O hero, perform what deeds thou hast to perform; long have (the enemies) been puffed up; smite them and bring us their possessions;” iv. 16. 17.: “In the moment when the sharp weapons of men are flying about, when the dreadful shock occurs, then, O faithful hero, then be thou protector of our bodies.” Cf. also the other verses of the same hymn, and vii. 31. 3, 6.

But Indra enters into yet closer alliance with mankind—he becomes, like other gods, especially Agni and the Agvis, the especial guardian of the Aryan races, who regard him as their exclusive national property, and their champion against the aboriginal inhabitants of the Indian country which they overrun. These aborigines seem often to have been viewed rather as devils than as men; they are styled *dasyu* and *dasa* (see Zimmer, p. 109 ff.). Muir, S. T. v. 113, has collected the

---

1 *āsmākebhīḥ sātvabhīḥ *ōṛa ्qūrā ्qūrāṁ *vīryāh kṛdhi yāni te kārtvāni: jyōg abhūvann āndudūpātāḥ hatvī tēṣām ā bharā no vāstūni.

2 *tīgāṁ ṣyād antār āṣāṇiḥ pāṭāti kāśmīḥ cic chūra mukhā jānānām: ghoreḥ yād aryā sāṃtir bhāvāy ādhaṁ śāṁ tanvō bodhi gopāḥ.*
verses most significant for this side of Indra's character. Thus
i. 103. 3: "Bearing the thunderbolt (ô thus Sáy.), and con-
dent in his strength, he strode on ahead, breaking down the
hostile (dáśáh, fr. dása, 'demoniac') forts; O thunderbolt
bearer, hurl thy weapon with skill against the Dasyu, augment
the strength and glory of the Aryans, O Indra." Cf. i. 130. 5
iv. 26. 2; vi. 18. 3; viii. 14. 15; 24. 27; x. 49. 2. In the fol-
lowing verse Indra's assistance is very significantly alluded to
i. 131. 5: "They praised this thy deed of valor, O giant, the
thou in thy drunkenness didst help the suppliants, didst hel
those who sought after alliance with thee; for them thou didst
make (i. e. didst inspire them with) a battle-song, to the
victory in the battle; they that were on the march gained on
stream after another" (saníṣṇata, intens., expressing a repet-
tion of the action).

The verse is of peculiar interest, in that it mentions the
assistance lent by Indra to the Aryans during their wandering
through the Penjáb toward the south and east, and the gradual
occupation of the peninsula. The grávasyántah are those
engaged in the migration. The Vedic Indians led a life half
nomadic, half settled, and the older parts of the Veda dat
from the time of their slow progress to and across the Indus
valley, and into the interior of Hindustan.

Jealousy and enmity between neighboring tribes of the sam
race was a very ancient trait of Indo-European character, which
in many instances has remained undiminished to the present
day. The Greeks presented, in spite of their close relation
ship, an example of the most constant quarreling; and in late
times Germanic tribes offer the same spectacle. That the
Indians were not only not free from such a "particularism,
but even infected with it to the greatest extent, is evident from
the post-Vedic history of the Indian peninsula, where no unit
of Indian rule ever grew up, the land being split up after the
fashion of Germany and Italy into countless little sovereignties
and duodecimo principalities. Tribe fought against tribe, clan
against clan, community against community; and in all such
contests each party sought to gain Indra's help for itself, and
was at great pains to allure the god by enticing promises from
an alliance with others to their own. See particularly the

1 Sá játóbharmá çráddádhá na ójáh púru vibhindán acarad ví dáśáh
vidván vajrín dáṣyave hetum asyáryah sáho vardhaya dyumnam Indra.
2 Ád it te asyá vtryáhy a carkíran mádeśu vṛṣān uçjó yád śvitha sa
khyáta yád śvitha: cakártha kārām ebhyáh pñtanāsu právantave: t
anyám-anyáh nedyáh saníṣṇata grávasyántah saníṣṇata.
3 This passage speaks strongly against Grassmann's explanation of grávasyántah see his Dict.
hymn iv. 24. I quote some passages in illustration: iv. 30. 18 (Geldner and Kaegi): “Thou didst smite the Aryans from the Sarayu, Arna and Citraratha, both in one day;” vi. 22. 10: “Bring hither to us, O Indra, that we may conquer our enemies, that great never-ceasing assistance, whereby, O thunderer, thou didst put to flight barbarian and Aryan enemies and the neighboring clans.” Cf. vi. 33. 3; 46. 8; viii. 52. 7.

We have in the different allusions to Kutsa and his relations with Indra a most instructive example of these quarrels. Kutsa Arjuneya, a celebrated rṣi of ancient times, stood on terms of the closest intimacy with Indra. They ride upon the same chariot (vi. 20. 5), with the steeds of the wind (i. 174. 5; 175. 4); and Indra kills the demon Cūṣṇa as an especial mark of favor to Kutsa, and steals, again for him, one wheel from the sun’s chariot (i. 175. 4; iv. 30. 4); or, as v. 29. 4 relates more circumstantially, takes away one wheel indeed, but leaves the other in place, that the sun’s progress may not be altogether arrested. By far the greater number of passages exhibit this view. But in others we discover a conception exactly opposed to this. Thus, i. 58. 10: “Thou, O Indra, didst give Kutsa, Atithiva, and Āyu into the hand of the great young king (Suṣrava);” and similarly Indra deserts him according to ii. 14. 7; iv. 26. 1; vi. 18. 3; and even kills him (Vāl. 5. 2). The verse x. 38. 5 contains a curiously worded prayer: “Break loose from Kutsa, and come hither; why sits one of thy greatness as though bound fast by the testicles?” In like manner Indra, who usually takes sides with the (non-Aryan?) heroes Turvaṣa and Yadu, is in vii. 19. 8 entreated to kill them. Such differences are easily explained, when we consider how many scores of authors have left memorials of themselves in the Veda, from the fact of continual petty warfare between tribes of kindred race, who nevertheless presented upon occasion a solid front to the alien foe.

Indra and Parvata.—On account of the prayers which they contain, I introduce the following verses here. Parvata is doubtless, as Roth supposes, a genius of the mountains, and at the same time ruler of the clouds. Further than this, his character can hardly be determined with certainty. Thus, i. 122. 3: “May the wanderer, the early battler, make us rejoice; may the wind, which accompanies the waters, make us rejoice; Indra and Parvata, bestow presents upon us; may all

1  śaṁsyatam indra pah svastāṁ çatruñārya bhṛtaṁ ānūdhrāṁ: yāya dāśanī āryāni vṛtrā kāro vajraṁ sutākā nāhusunā.
2 Doubtless a proverbial expression.
3 mamātāṁ nāḥ pāriṁ vacarāh mamātāṁ vāto apāṁ vṛṣṭavān: qoṭtāṁ indrāparvataṁ yuvaṁ naś tāṁ nā viṣve varivasyantu devāh.

VOL. XI. 24
the gods grant us free room;" i. 132. 6: "As champions, O Indra and Parvata, thrust aside every one that would conquer us, thrust him aside with the thunderbolt;" iii. 53. 1: "Indra and Parvata, bring hither in the lofty wagon the wished-for, the hero-strengthening refreshment; graciously accept at the sacrifice the proffered gifts; delight yourselves with the hymns, intoxicating yourselves with the beverage."

Indra's Cosmogonic Labors.—In the passages of the Rig-Veda which have now to engage our attention, Indra's activity reaches far beyond his original sphere in nature. He rises from a god who manifests himself in the thunderstorm to the level of a creator and preserver of the universe, to a cosmogonic power whose activity makes that of the other deities, at least in this field, seem almost superfluous. Yet the development of ideas which here presents itself is perfectly logical and intelligible. Indra's cosmogonic activity is after all nothing but an ideal generalization of his labors in his own province of nature. The intermediate steps in the development of these ideas I suppose to have been as follows:

1. Indra restores to the various regions of the universe, which have been shaken and confused by the battle of the elements, their pristine order.

2. He who does this must in the first place have arranged and fixed the spaces of the universe.

3. Their arranger must also have been their creator.

Such seem to have been the successive stages of thought. In the case of particular verses it is often difficult, if not impossible, to say upon what step of development the ideas contained in them stand; when taken in their totality, however, they indicate with tolerable certainty such a gradation.

1 After the battle of the elements, Índra restores order to the universe. Thus, i. 56. 5: "When thou hadst fastened the atmosphere above the unshakable earth in the frame of the sky, by thy power; when thou, O Indra, in intoxication, in impatient excitement, hadst slain the enemy, then didst thou let loose the water-floods" (cf. v. 6); x. 113. 4: "As soon as he was born, the hero crowded his enemies apart; he looked about

1 yuváh tám indráparvatá puroyódhá yó naḥ pṛtanyád āpa tám-tam ēd dhataḥ vágreṣa tám-tam ēd dhataṁ.

2 indráparvatá bhätá ráthena vámír īṣa śa vahatāḥ suvṛṭhāḥ; vátám havyáyā adhvarásu devā várthethām ghrbir śayā madántā.

3 vi yát tiro dhariṇam ácyutam rájó 'tiśhitho divá átásu barhápā: svármihé yán médá indra hárasyáhan vṛtráh nír apám áhujo árpaśvám.

4 jajáhá evá vy ábhāhato śrónāḥ prásapoṣad vité abhi pācásvant rūṣām: ávṛṣead ádtrim áva sasyádaḥ sajad ástabhnanm nákaṁ svapasyáyā pṛthúm.
him for heroic deeds and for battle (cf. viii. 45. 4; 66. 1); he broke open the rock, he poured out the water-floods, he fastened with skill the broad heaven.” Cf. i. 62. 5; vi. 30. 3; viii. 78. 5; x. 111. 5.

2. Indra fixes the universe and maintains order in general. Thus, ii. 12. 2: “Who fastened the tottering earth, who bade the quivering mountains stand fast, who gave the air its boundaries and the heaven its supports—that, O ye nations, is Indra;” ii. 13. 10: “Thou hast fastened the six directions (i.e. the four cardinal points of the compass, and toward the zenith and nadir), five (of which) are visible (i.e. the first five: the sixth is invisible, owing to the intervention of the earth); and all this hast thou encompassed;” viii. 15. 2: “The great god whose mighty power, by reason of his strength, held fast both worlds, the mountains, the fields, the waters, the light;” x. 89. 4: “He who by his power fastened apart Heaven and Earth, as (one fastens) wheels with an axle;” cf. further v. 1 of the same hymn, and i. 62. 7; 121. 2; ii. 15. 2; 17. 5; iii. 30. 9; v. 29. 4; vi. 17. 7; viii. 14. 9. Especially important in this connection is Vâl. 3. 8: “After he, who through his power won the water-skin (i.e. the cloud) by crushing Çuspa with blows, had fastened the sky firmly, spreading it out, then first was born the earth-dweller (i.e. man).”

The step from this stage of development in the conception of Indra’s cosmogonic activity to the next, i.e. to the belief that he actually created all that he afterward restored to order and preserved, was very small and easy. Just here it is often extremely hard to decide in which group particular passages belong; hence I will quote only very plain ones.

3. Índra actually created the world: x. 54. 3: “Since thou didst create out of thine own person father and mother (i.e. Heaven and Earth) at once.” In viii. 36. 4, Índra is called janitā dīvo janitā prthivyāḥ, ‘creator of Heaven, creator of earth.’

In a perfectly analogous manner was developed the conception of his relations to the sun and the other heavenly bodies. Índra frees the sun from the veil of darkness which the thunderstorm spreads around it, and makes it revolve in freedom;

1 sās̄i astabhna viṣṭáraḥ pānca saṁdṛṣṭaḥ pä́r̥ paró abhavaḥ saśay uk-  

2 yāṣya dvibhārāso bṛhat sā ho dādharā rōdasi: girān ajrān apāt svār vṛṣṭa- 

3 yo ákṣaṇe vācāryaḥ ca caḥbhīr viśvāk təstāmbha protvīvim utā dyām.  

4 prá yo nasaṣe abhy ājas krīvīm vadhāṁ ṭuṣanāḥ nīghoṣāyaṇam:  

5 yadē ṣtambhāt prathāyān smāṁ dīvam ād įj janjīṣa prthivāḥ.  

6 yān mātāraḥ ca pītāraḥ ca sākām ājanayathās tanvāḥ svāyāḥ.
he directs its course in general, and guides its daily journey about the earth; finally he created it to begin with.

1. Indra frees the obscured sun, and the other celestial lights as well: v. 40. 6: "When thou, O Indra, hadst brought to naught the enchantments of Svarbhānu, which were going on in the sky, then did Atri, by the fourth prayer, 2 again recover the sun, which was enveloped in impious darkness;” i. 51. 4: "When thou, O Indra, hadst by thy might slain the dragon Vṛtra, thou didst make the sun climb the sky, that it might become visible.” Cf. iv. 30. 6; vi. 17. 5; ii. 13. 5; also several of the passages cited in the section treating of Vṛtra; and vi. 72. 1, addressed to Indra and Soma (p. 164).

2. Indra regulates in general the courses of the sun and the other celestial bodies: iv. 16. 4: “When the sun became visible, beautiful to behold with its rays, when they (the rays) streamed out a great light in the early morning;” then did the hero in his graciousness turn the dim confused gloom into sight for the heroes” (i. e. made it possible for men to see); iii. 30. 13: “At the departure of night men see with joy the great many-colored appearance of the brightening dawn; when she (the dawn) approaches in glory, all know that Indra’s many works are well done.” Cf. vi. 30. 2; iii. 30. 12: “The sun mistakes not the appointed courses which from day to day are marked out for him by the driver of sorrel steeds; when he has run through his journey, he halts with his horses; and that is his (i. e. Indra’s) doing;” v. 31. 11: “He brought forward again the wagon of the sun, which in the darkness had run backward” (i. e. he made the sun, which during the night had returned from west to east, rise again in the east); i. 102. 2: “Sun and moon go by for us in turn, O Indra, that we may

1 svārbhānu ádha yād indra māyā avó dīvō vártamānā svāhān: guhām sūryān tāmasāpavratena turīyaṇa brāhmaṇāvindad ātriḥ.
2 Perhaps: not until the fourth prayer had been said; i. e. after long beseeching.
3 vṛtraṁ yād indra cávasāvadhir áhīm ād it sūryān dīvy ārohayo dṛće.
4 svār yād vēdi sudṛjītakam arkāir māhi jyotī rurucur yād dha vāstōḥ:
andhā tāmānāi dūdhītā vīcākṣe nābhyaṇa cakāra nātamo abhīṣtān.
5 I follow Grassmann’s rendering: the lack of accent on rūwang is, however, then irregular.
6 dīḍṛkṣanta uṣēo yāmān aktōr vivāsvatyām māhī citrām ánīkam: vícve jānanti mahānā yād āgād indrasya kāṁya śūktā purūṇā.
7 dīcēḥ sūryo nā miniśi prādiśa dīvē śīve hārīcāvaprasātēḥ: sā yād ānāl ādhvana ād ād ścviś āvīrmācanaṁ kṛṇute tāt tv āsya.
8 sūraṇ cid rátham pārītakmyāyām pūrvam karad ūparam jātuvāhās.
9 asmē sūryācandramāsābhikāśe cṛddhē kāṁ indra carato vilarturām.
see, and may put our trust in thee;” x. 138. 6: “Thou hast
determined the rules for the moons in the sky; the father
(Heaven) bears a disk marked off by thee.” Cf. also i. 121. 13;
iv. 28. 2; vi. 72. 2; x. 171. 4.

Possibly the Pedu-myth belongs in this connection. Pedu
receives from the Agvins a white horse, which in i. 118. 9 is
called indrajūta, ‘driven on by Indra.’ If Pedu be really
the sun, as Myrianteus maintains (Agvins, p. 102 ff.), this is
then a further indication of Indra’s labors as a director of the
sun’s course.

3. Indra actually created the sun and the heavenly lights:
viii. 12. 30: “When thou didst place in the sky the sun, a
great light, then,” etc.; 87. 2: “Thou, O Indra, art almighty,
thou madest the sun to shine; thou art all-active, all-divine,
 thou art great;” ii. 12. 7: “Who created the sun and the
dawn.” Cf. iii. 31. 15; 32. 8; vi. 17. 5; 30. 5; 39. 3. 4.

The process by which Indra is made the creator of plants,
trees, etc., is much shorter; for vegetable growths of all sorts
depend for their sustenance upon the bestower of water and
light. Thus, ii. 13. 6;": “Thou, who givest nourishment and
riches, who didst milk from the moist (rain and dew) the dry
and sweet” (i.e. plants, particularly the Soma): v. 7: “Thou
who didst scatter over the fields the blossoms and fruits accord-
ing to the law (of nature?), who didst also distribute the
brooks;” iii. 34. 10: “Indra bestowed plants and days, be-
stowed trees and the air.” Cf. x. 138. 2.

In correspondence with all these various ideas, we find in
the Veda many passages which actually call Indra creator and
director of the entire universe. Some of these I quote here,
while others I reserve for the section treating of Indra’s great-
ness, in Part IV. In ii. 30. 1 we find Indra called “The
divine ruler who established order.” Further, x. 54. 5:
“Thou art, O Indra, the arranger and the giver;” iv. 30. 22:
“Thou who didst fatally wound Vṛtra, thou who directest the

1 māsāṁ vidhānān adādhi ādhi dyāvī tvāyā vibhinānām bharati prā-
dhim pītā.
2 yadā sūryam amāṁ divi ṣukrāṁ jyotir ādhārayaḥ: ād it etc.
3 tvāṁ indrabhīḥḥār asī tvāṁ sūryam arocayaḥ: viṣvākarmā viṣvā-
dvo mahāṁ asi.
4 yāḥ bhājanath ca dáyase ca várdhanam ádrād ā çūṣkam mádhumad
dudóhitā.
5 yāḥ puspāya ca prasvāya ca dhārmanādhi dāne vy ávānir ádhārayaḥ.
6 indra ēṣadhīr asanad āhāṁ vánapátiḥ asanad antārīkṣam.
7 riṁ devāṁ kṛṣṇānt saavitā.
8 tvāṁ rūḍatā tvāṁ indrāśī dātā.
whole world, thou art the shepherd of all;" i. 52. 14:1 "Thou whose greatness not Heaven and Earth, whose ends not the streams of the atmosphere reached, when thou in thy intoxication didst battle with the rain-hinderer—thou alone didst create all other things in turn;" viii. 85. 6:2 "Let us praise (Indra), who created all these creatures, which are under him."

Conceptions of a deity could hardly be more exalted. Such hyperbolical thoughts as these led earlier scholars to consider Indra as originally the supreme god of the Vedic pantheon. I trust the foregoing may have shown the erroneousness of this view.

Indra's Benevolence, and his relations with his Worshipers.—The consideration of the different fields in which Indra displays his potent energy will have made unnecessary a detailed explanation of the prayers addressed to him. It is evident that the god of the thunderstorm, who conquers the stealers of rain and light, the mightiest of all warriors, is invoked that he may grant water and light, may banish all demons, and extend protection in the struggle with aliens and opponents of Aryan blood. But from the conception of the heroic deeds which he performs, of his bounteoussness in bestowing rain, light, and active assistance upon his devotees, arose the idea that he granted wealth and prosperity in all their varieties; and in this sense many prayers are directed to him.

By "wealth" the Indian of Vedic times understood before all else abundance of cattle for his bodily sustenance, and of children—i.e. a large family which should be able to defend itself against hostile aggression—and a safe estate which would easily support its owners. It is but a very natural consequence of the desire for children which prompts the poet in his naïveté to ask for women. A few verses will suffice for illustration of these points. Thus, iv. 32. 17: "We beseech Indra for a thousand yoke of horses, for a thousand measures of Soma." 18. "We shake down from thee a hundred thousand cows; may thy gifts come unto us." 19. "Ten jars of gold have we received from thee; thou art a rich giver, O slayer of Vṛtra." 20. "Thou abundant giver, give an abundance; bring hither for us not a little, but much; certainly thou wilt give abundance, O Indra." 21. "For thou art everywhere known as an abundant giver, O hero, Vṛtra-slayer; let us share in thy gifts."

Malthusian doctrines had not begun to be promulgated in Vedic times: vi. 18. 6: "In the acquisition of children and

---

1 ná yásya dyávāpṛthiḥ śānu vyáśco ná sāndhavo rájaso ántam ánaçūḥ:
   nóta śvávṛśāṁ máde asya yúdhaya éko anyáco ca kṛṣe vīçvam ánuśāk.

2 tám u śāvāmā yá ímá jaññāna vīçvā játtāny ávarāny asmāt.
grand-children one must invoke the thunderer;” 19. 7.
“When thou, O Indra, hast a right vigorous drunkenness, that
gives victory in battle, bring it hither, that we may by its
means consider ourselves victorious in our struggles for children
and grand-children;” iv. 17. 6: “When wishing women, we
draw from the woman-giver, as from a well with a pitcher.”
Verse 13 of the same hymn exhibits Indra as the deity who
renders assistance to men in the search for dwelling-places and
in their settlements.

The value of cattle for an Indian family in Vedic times can
hardly be overestimated. Cows furnished the milk upon
which the family mainly subsisted, and which was indispensa-
ble in the preparation of butter and suet, both of which played
an important part in the sacrifice. Cattle, moreover, served as
a medium of exchange, for which reason we find such frequent
mention of the price of “a hundred” or “a thousand cows”
in iv. 24. 10 a priest offers to lend his image of Indra for ten
cows). For instance, i. 33. 1: “Will not the invulnerable one
grant us riches and cattle, our highest desire?” (rāyo and ga-
vām are properly objective genitives after kētam). Hence it
was a particularly great and noble deed when Indra put into
the cows, which the poet thought of as “raw,” the nourishing
milk, which the poet in his childish simplicity imagined already
“cooked,” since it was fit to be used as food without previous
preparation. So, e. g. i. 62. 9: “Thou didst place in the raw
cows, the black and the red ones, the white cooked milk;”
iii. 30. 14; 39. 6; viii. 78. 7; et saepp. (Cf. Aufrecht, Introd.
to Rig-Veda, 2nd ed., p. xvii.) How much this redounded to
Indra’s credit may be seen from the fact that even Tvasṭar, the
skilled artificer of the gods, could not perform this feat, as
Indra says in his own praise, x. 49. 10. Likewise only Indra
is able to coax milk from the bewitched barren cattle (iv. 19. 7).
The manner in which the requests are preferred is of quite
as much interest as the requests themselves. In the following
chapter, where we shall have to notice the Vedic descriptions
of Indra’s personal character, we shall find the humanizing of
his nature, and so to speak the popularization of his person,
carried to an extent unparalleled in the accounts of any other
Vedic deity whatever. The poet talks with Indra as a man
with a man; often too as a poor wretch with a rich and power-
ful lord; and from such hymns speaks forth often a crouching
pusillanimous spirit, and the fear of his violence, rather than

1 yās te mādaḥ pṛtanāśāy āmṛdhra indra tāṁ na ā bhara uṣṇavānasm: yēna tokāsyā tāṇyasya āṭtā maṇāmāṁ jīvavānas tvātāṁ.  
2 anāmṛtaḥ kuval ṣā yasyā rōyō gāvāṁ kētam pēram śvājate naḥ.  
3 Amaho cīd dedhīye pakvāṁ antāṁ pāyaḥ kṛṇāsāṁ rocaḥ rōhipāsū.
reverential awe for his magnificent and sublime nature. Often such prayers degenerate into whining entreaties. Yet other poets greet the god with a hail-fellow-well-met! and in such cases no too great respect is paid to Indra's divinity; while often, again, the coarsest, broadest popular humor breaks through. Compare, for example, the already quoted verse x. 38. 5, on p. 181. Especially when the subject is a Soma-drinking-bout do we find Indra described as a very human character. But through all the hymns runs an unswerving devotion and fidelity toward the national deity, a firm belief in his existence, in spite of all godless blasphemers, and a touching reliance upon his goodness. Muir, S. T., v. 108 ff., has collected a large number of passages which throw abundant light upon these points. I follow his arrangement.

Men must not doubt Indra's existence (ii. 12. 5; vi. 18. 3; viii. 89. 3, 4), but cherish a firm belief in him (i. 102. 2; 108. 6; vi. 28. 5; ix. 113. 2); for he alone is an everpresent helper (i. 84. 19; vii. 23. 5), a liberator and an advocate (viii. 85. 20), a wall of defense, a castle (viii. 69. 7). His friend never meets with disaster (x. 152. 1), for he is helper of the upright (viii. 69. 3). He is an old friend of the poets (vi. 18. 5; 21. 5, 8), even a brother (iii. 53. 5), or a father, and that too the best of all fathers (iv. 17. 17); the bard clasps him as a son clasps his father (iii. 53. 2), or as women embrace their husbands (i. 62. 11; 186. 7; x. 43. 1). But often the poet becomes impatient, and then he addresses the god with words which are none too respectful, as for example in iv. 32, and iv. 21. 9: "I would do better than thou, were I only Indra," says the author of vii. 32; "I would bestow upon my worshippers cows and other property every day," "Be not like a lazy priest, thou lord of possessions"—thus in viii. 81. 30. Indra must not waste any time in the dwellings of other worshippers (ii. 18. 3; iii. 25. 5; x. 38. 5), but spring over the barriers with which they attempt to hold him in captivity (iii. 45. 1).

The description of these intimate relations between the mighty and generous deity and his worshippers in general will receive greater completeness from a few examples, celebrated particularly often in the Veda, of his care for certain eminent chiefs among his devotees.

Kutsa, of whom mention has already been made, seems to have held the highest place among Indra's favorites. The god condescends to take him upon his own chariot, and kills for him the demon Čusna. He even arrests the progress of the sun through the sky, that the night may not interrupt the battle in which Kutsa is engaged before he shall prove victorious. Thus namely is to be explained the fact that Indra takes away a wheel from the sun's chariot for Kutsa's benefit:
v. 29. 10: "One wheel of the sun didst thou pull off for Kutsa; the other thou didst leave in place, that it (the sun) might yet advance." Compare iv. 30. 4 in Geldner and Kaegi's translation, and their comments.

Turvaça and Yadu were two non-Aryans (viii. 10. 5), who could not swim (āśnātr, ii. 15. 5; iv. 30. 17), and who received assistance from Indra while crossing a river on an expedition into a strange country: vi. 45. 1: "The young Indra who with faithful guidance brought hither Turvaça and Yadu out of the distant land, is our friend;" v. 31. 8: "Thou didst stay the deep-flowing waters near the shore for Turvaça and Yadu."

It was perhaps on the same occasion that Indra showed a similar favor to Turviti and Vayya, for they are named with Turvaça and Yadu in i. 54. 6, as recipients of his kindness; and we read in ii. 13. 12: "For Turviti and Vayya didst thou stay the current of the flowing waters, that they might cross."

Sudās, the oft-mentioned king of the Trtūsas, was a devoted worshipper of Indra, who manifested his graciousness in the assistance and preservation of Sudās in the latter's struggle against the allied power of ten hostile princes. Cf. vii. 19. 3; 20. 2; 32. 10, 11; and the entire hymn vii. 88, which makes Indra and Varuna to have been Sudās's helpers. The sacredotal family of the Vasiṣṭhas stood in high favor at Sudās's court, and not the least part of the credit for his victory is said to have been due to their prayers (cf. vii. 33. 1 ff.). The details are described with an elaboration unusual in the Veda, yet they are sometimes far from clear (vii. 18). But this much is certain, that the whole episode of Sudās rests upon a historical basis, and points to the struggles of an ambitious and warlike dynasty.

Mudgala and his spouse Mudgalāṇī, who stood under Indra's protection, entered into battle riding upon a chariot drawn by a bull and a stallion. Indra imparted strength to the bull, who proceeded with all deliberation in mediās res; and Mudgala won the fight (x. 102).

Not only in war, but in peace as well, do we find Indra playing an active and helping part in the affairs of mankind. He provided a young wife for the aged Kaṅśivat: i. 51. 13: "Upon the tottering old man Kaṅśivat, because he pressed Soma, thou didst bestow the young Vṛcayā." He rejuvenates

---

1 prāṇyāc caśrām avṛhaḥ śūryasya kūtsañyāya vārīvo yātave 'khaḥ.
2 yā śānumat parāśvātāḥ sūnātī turvāṃśaḥ yādum: indraḥ śa no yāva sākhaḥ.
3 tvām apō yādave turvācāyaśramayaḥ sudāghaḥ pāra indra.
4 śramayaḥ sārapasas tārīya kāhī turvātaye ca vayākyā ca arutim.
old maids: iv. 19. 7: "He made the unwedded maidens, who observed the rites, to be juicy like spouting flowing springs." His arm helped the blind and the lame (iv. 30. 19; ii. 13. 12; 15. 7; iv. 19. 9). He rescues from certain death the child of the maiden, which its mother in shame had made away with—or, according to one version, had thrown upon an ant-hill: ii. 15. 7: "He knows the girls' hiding-place (i.e. where they secrete their illegitimate children); coming to light, the child that was exposed came forth." cf. 13. 12: iv. 30. 16; and 19. 9: "Thou master of sorrel steeds didst draw forth from the place of concealment the maiden's child, which the ants were gnawing." This anecdote reminds one of the stories told of Indra's own childhood, as in iv. 18. Whether or no such current fables concerning Indra gave rise to the view that he was an especial protector of exposed children is not likely to be proved.

**Indra and Pūṣan.**—It seems strange at first sight to discover by the side of the mighty war-god, whose whole energy is so often devoted to the annihilation of his enemies and of the Soma-offerings, a deity of so contrasted a nature as is Pūṣan. That the Vedic poets fully realized the strangeness of the combination is plainly apparent from their humorous descriptions of Pūṣan. We read e.g. in vi. 57. 2: "The one sits himself in order to drink the pressed juice from the goblet; the other demands porridge;" 3: "Two goats draw the one, two compact (strong) sorrel steeds the other; with these two (gods) together one defeats his enemies."

Yet there must have been points of agreement between the natures of both gods, since the unions of deities which we find in the Veda are not, except in general invocations, by any means arbitrary. Pūṣan, as is evident from the hymns referring to him, was a personification of the fructifying sun and its beneficent influence, indicated also by the epithet aghrni, 'glowing,' applied to him iii. 62. 7 et saepp., and the allusions to his sister Sūryā vi. 55. 4, 5; 58. 4; and from the stories of his eating porridge (which started the fable of his "rotten teeth," karudutin, iv. 30. 4), and of his driving behind goats and carrying a goad (astra, vi. 58. 2), we may reasonably conclude that he was originally a deity of the shepherds. Above all, however, he provides for fruitfulness of flocks and herds,

---

1 prāgrūvo nabhanvō nā vákvā dhvāsrā splinvaṅ yuvatī prajñāh.
2 aśa vidvān apagohām kaśnām āvir bhāvann ud atiṣṭhat parāvāk.
3 sāmam anyā ṣūṣadat pātavo camvōh sutām: karambhām anyā ichati.
5 ajā anyāsya váhnavo hārti anyāsya sāmbhṛtā: tāḥhyāṃ vṛtrāṃ jīghnāte.
Indra in the Rig-Veda.

upon which Grassmann (Wibeh., s. v. Pusana) well remarks: "The prosperity which he bestows is not (as in the case of Indra, Parjanya, the Maruts, etc.) dependent upon the rain, but upon the light, particularly the sunlight." He is protector of cattle, of mankind, and of all beings. In x. 17. 3 he is called anastapacur bhuvanasya gopah, "The shepherd of the world, whose flock receives no hurt."

Pusan's junction with Indra, then, rests upon a double basis. As givers of prosperity in general they are praised in the following verses: ii. 40. 2: "Indra, together with Soma and Pusan, these two, created in the raw cows the cooked milk" (see above, p. 187); iii. 57. 2: "Skilful are the heroes, Indra and Pusan; the dearly-loved (waters) stream almost without ceasing from the sky; may I, O ye good ones (plural), receive this favor, that all gods may delight themselves on earth" (dhumyam to be supplied for asyam ?). The following passage from a hymn addressed to various rural deities exhibits plainly their activity in sending prosperity to their worshippers: iv. 57. 7: "May Indra sink the furrow, Pusan give it its direction; may it produce bounteously for us throughout each future year."

Upon the other of the two principal sides of Pusan's nature, which shows him as a protector in all needs (i. 42; vi. 53, 54), seems to rest his union with Indra in the following passages: vi. 56. 2: "Indra, the captain of the army, the best charioteer, defeats the enemies, in the company of his ally (Pusan)" (cf. pada c of vi. 57. 3, quoted above). And similarly, Pusan's character as a protector brought him into Indra's company in the fight with the demons: vi. 57. 4: "When Indra, best of heroes, took away with him the great dispersing waters, there was Pusan in his company." Geldner conjectures vrtah, 'imprisoned,' for ritah.

Pusan and Visnu act as encouragers of Indra during the Vrtra-battle. Thus, vi. 17. 11: "For thee, whom all the Maruts with one accord cheered on, (Agni) roasted a hundred

1 abhyam indra pakvam amasav antah somapushabhyah janad usiyasan.
2 indra sa pusat visha suhastiv divo na pritaq qacyath dudhure: vichve yad asyah raqayanta deva pra vtra vasava sumnam acyam.
3 indra afteni grihato tam pusatnu yschatu: sa naq payasati duham tittham-uttarah samam.
4 uta qha sa rathitama sakhya sipatir yuja: indro vtrahpi jihvate.
5 yad indra anayad rito mahir apo vishantah: tatra pusahhvat saca.
6 vardhah yadh vichve maritaq sajosaq paccac chatam mahisah indra tabhym: pusat viqnu trphni sarahsi dhavan vtrahapan maradim anqam asma.
bulls, O Indra; Pūşan and Viṣṇu caused to flow for thee three ponds full of enemy-slaying, intoxicating Soma” (i).

Indra and the Aśvins.—The number of passages in the Rig-Veda which bring the Aśvins into direct connection with Indra is very small. I append all such that I have found.

i. 116. 21: “On one and the same morning, O Aśvins, ye did help Vaṣṇa, to his great joy, so that he won thousand-fold booty; united with Indra, O ye heroes, ye did both drive off the hostile spectre from Prīthuṣravas.” In i. 182. 2 the Aśvins are called indratama. See above, p. 124. In viii. 9. 12 and 35. 1, they are invited along with Indra and the other gods to the sacrifice; and the compound indrānāsatya (voc.) occurs in 26. 8. Thus, x. 73. 4: “Together with these come in haste to the sacrifice, bring the Nāsatya (Aśvins) hither to an alliance; in thy treasure-house, O Indra, thou keepest many (treasures); the Aśvins brought gifts unto thee, O hero;” 131. 4: “Ye Aśvins, lords of the rapid flight, after ye had drunk the well-intoxicating Soma, did help Indra in his deeds (i. e. the battle) against the demon Namuci;” 5: “As parents help a son, so did both Aśvins with prudence and skill help thee, O Indra.”

The Aśvins are also found in Indra’s company at the creation of Pedu’s horse. See above, p. 185.

We see from these verses that the union between Indra and the Aśvins is a very loose one. I am therefore inclined to seek the origin of their association in a mere coincidence of certain later developed phases of their character. Starting from different observations of natural phenomena, the conceptions of their natures run parallel for a time in the course of their development. We have learned that Indra was originally a god of the thunderstorm, who overcame the rain-stealing demons; and Myriantheus has proved conclusively that the Aśvins were above all else gods who recovered and bestowed light. And whereas the similarity of these conceptions in their primitive form is complete, so we find it diminished in the course of their development from their original nuclei.

---

1 Ṛķasyā vāstāḥ āvatāh raṇāya vācaṁ aśvinā sanāye sahāśā: nīr āhataṁ duc'hāṁ āindrāvantaḥ prīthuṣravasāo vṛṣavaṁ āraṁ.
2 samanāṁ tāmṛrū purā yāsi yajñām ā nāsatāṁ sahāśāvya vakṣā: vaśāvyaṁ āmāndukāya sahāśāaṁ aśvinā gūra dadaṁr maghaṁ.
3 yuvāmah surāmah aśvinā namucav āsurāe sācā: vipīmaṁ ābhāsaṁ patī āṁtanāṁ āvatāṁ.
4 Myriantheus: “In the sacrificial ceremonies against the evil spirit Namuci”(f).
The translation given here is but an attempt. Grassmann conjectures cīpāpañā. See in Appendix, s. v. Namuci.
5 putṛm īva pitārav aśvinobhāindrāvaṁhūkā ṛṣavyāṁ danaṁabhiḥ.
Like Indra, the Aṇvins are besought to destroy all demons; as Indra's help is then implored against non-Aryan enemies, so we find the Aṇvins treated for the same favor; Indra's efforts, like those of the Aṇvins, are directed toward the restoration of the natural order of things, which suffers daily interruption. And just at this point the conceptions of the two war-gods on the one hand, and of the one war-god on the other, overlap each other, so that we find the Aṇvins praised as recoverers of rain, and Indra celebrated as restorer of light—a complete exchange of their original functions. A step further, and we discover the Aṇvins and Indra alike as gods of prosperity and fruitfulness in general; hence, as also from the intimate relations between them and their worshippers, they become benevolent and healing deities—a trait of character much more elaborately amplified in the case of the Aṇvins than in that of Indra.

It is somewhat curious that, in spite of these many points of contact between Aṇvin-myths and Indra-myths, so few passages occur in which they are mentioned together; and it is also remarkable that of any rivalry between the Thunderer and the Horsemen there are discoverable no indications whatever.

IV. Descriptions of Indra's Person.

In the three previous Parts I have endeavored to determine Indra's original position in the Vedic pantheon, to illustrate, and, where possible, to harmonize the fables of his origin, and to define and describe not only his activity in the field of natural phenomena, but also his concern with the most various circumstances of human life. In the fourth and last Part I shall attempt to reproduce that picture of Indra's person which Indian fancy painted for itself.

In the case of no other Vedic divinity do we find so pronounced an anthropomorphism, so plastic a figure, as in that of Indra—a circumstance readily explainable from his position as war-god and national favorite of the Indian people. The poets never weary of describing his greatness, his huge size, his impetuous vigor, his craftiness and shrewdness, the riches at his disposal and his generosity in distributing them, the mighty horses and the strong chariot with which he travels, the fearful unerring weapons which he carries. And so it happens that the Indra-hymns afford us not only a remarkably detailed portraiture of this divinity, as it was developed in the Indian mind, but also not less faithful indications of Indian character and life, from which many particulars were unconsciously transferred to the likeness of Indra.

Indra is lord of might (i. 11. 2), the first among highest ones
E. D. Perry,

(viii. 50. 2), the mightiest of the gods, who concentrated in him all their manly vigor, power, and wisdom (i. 80. 15), and are far from being his equals (vi. 21. 10; vii. 21. 7). Neither youth nor grown man attains an equal greatness with him, for he filled the universe with his person, and crowded out the lights of heaven (i. 81. 5); neither men nor gods, nor the heavenly waters, ever reached the limit of his might (i. 100. 15; 54. 1; ii. 16. 3; vi. 29. 5), for he is immeasurable (i. 102. 7; iv. 16. 5). He takes the great heavens upon his head (ii. 17. 2), even the remotest regions of ether are for him not distant (iii. 30. 2). Earth cannot confine him (i. 55. 1; iii. 36. 4); Heaven and Earth together do not suffice for his girdle (i. 73. 6); he grows beyond them when intoxicated with Soma (i. 100. 14; iii. 36. 6; vi. 21. 2; viii. 6. 15; 12. 24; 77. 5; 87. 5; 89. 4); nay, he is even greater than Heaven, Earth, and Atmosphere combined (i. 10. 8; iii. 46. 3). The half of him alone is more than both worlds together (vi. 30. 1); he covers the earth with one thigh (iii. 32. 11). Of his might one part is on earth, the other in the sky; it is concentrated in the midst, like the light (i. 103. 1). “Were the earth ten times as great, and though men live for ever, yet thy greatness would still be celebrated day after day” (i. 52. 11). Both worlds and the mountains tremble at his breath (ii. 12. 1—he is the thunderstorm!), even the god-like tree bends before him; everything upon earth is shaken, both worlds bow before him like an obedient woman. He is king of the heavenly race and of all nations upon earth (i. 100. 1; iii. 31. 8; 46. 2; vi. 22. 9; 36. 4; vii. 27. 3; viii. 37. 3; 84. 3), the lord of flowing and of standing water, and of Soma (vi. 44. 21; viii. 53. 3), and he knows them all thoroughly (viii. 46. 12). Even the savage wolf abides by his decrees (viii. 55. 8), for his will determines all things (50. 4). He holds the tribes of men in his hand (vi. 31. 1); both boundless worlds are to him but a handful when he grasps them (iii. 30. 5). The smallest deed of such a divinity is at once bruited abroad throughout the whole world (viii. 45. 32). Unto him the high mountains are plains, he finds a ford in the deepest water (vi. 24. 8). He rages and roars when going on his expeditions, loudly shouting (ii. 20. 3; cf. the epithet pururavas in x. 95. 7, which, as already remarked above, p. 129, is doubtless to be applied to Indra); snorting and fuming, raising the dust to the sky, he hurries through the air (iii. 51. 2; iv. 16. 5; v. 34. 5; vi. 18. 2), and dashes everything in pieces (ii. 21. 2); he is unrestrainable, irresistible (i. 84. 2, 7). After the feast he turns his course hither and thither, like a beast of prey, dreadful as a horned bull, like a raging whirlwind (iv. 32. 2; vii. 19. 1; viii. 33. 8). His path is inaccessible as the sun’s (i. 100. 2), and both worlds
cannot then hold him fast (i. 10. 8). He finds no evenly-matched opponent; none cast him to earth, all are cast to earth by him (i. 33. 2; 129. 4); for he coerces all (v. 34. 6; 35. 4; vi. 17. 4; 18. 1, 2; 20. 3; 25. 5; 44. 4; vii. 20.*3), and no one who has provoked him can long endure his wrath (v. 34. 7; vii. 31. 12); he cannot be humbled. He sees and hears all things*(viii. 67. 5), and when he roars even the deaf may hear and tremble (x. 27. 5). Not even the gods can arrest Indra (iv. 17. 19; 30. 3, 5); and whenever he slays a man, he fears not the vengeance of relatives (v. 34. 4). Thus invincible was he ever, thus will he ever be; no one will ever stand in his way, it matters not what he may undertake (iv. 30. 23).

Indra possesses all the treasures of the world (i. 30. 10; 174. 1; vi. 45. 8) in his treasure-house (viii. 1. 22); he rules over the abodes of men and the stalls of cattle (iv. 20. 8); all paths to riches unite in him, as streams in the ocean (vi. 19. 5). All herds round about are his, and he watches them with the eye of the sun (vii. 98. 6). He is a flowing stream of possessions (viii. 32. 13), a spring of gold (50. 6), a depository of riches, as vast as four oceans (x. 47. 2). From this he makes generous presents to men; neither god nor man, nor rocks nor fortresses, can restrain his generosity (viii. 14. 4; 70. 3; 77. 3). He is the most generous of all givers, he gives without hesitation from full hands (i. 30. 1; iv. 31. 7). His assistance is everlasting. He keeps not back the flocks, when he has heard the song of praise; he is a bull for him that wishes bulls, a horse for the seeker after horses (vi. 24. 1; 45. 23, 26); he never refuses (vii. 27. 4), but assists in obtaining still greater riches (viii. 16. 10). Even a hundred envious meddlers can restrain his gifts as little as they can frustrate his plans (iv. 31. 9). "We cannot grasp thy whole greatness, O Indra," says the author of vi. 27, “nor thy generosity, O generous one, nor all thy ever new gifts; no one has fathomed thy power.” The magnitude of his bounty is not to be comprehended; for his gifts, like the light, spread abroad over the whole earth (viii. 24. 21); there exists no one who can say: “He has not given,” but it is said: “Indra alone is the active dispenser of gifts, his many acts of mercy follow one another swiftly” (vii. 26. 4), they spring up side by side like shoots of trees (vi. 24. 3).

The god’s youth and vigor are as unfailing as his gifts to mortals. He grows not old, nor is he subject to death (iii. 32. 7; vi. 19. 2); he makes others grow old, while he himself remains eternally young (ii. 16. 1); neither months nor years consume him, days do not waste him away (iii. 46. 1; vi. 24. 7; x. 48. 5). When the mighty prince says to himself: “I shall not die,” then even this thought is realized (viii. 82. 5). In x.
86. 11 we read: “Among all women, Indrāni (Indra’s wife) is most happy, for her husband shall never die of old age.”

And Indra is also wise and prudent (i. 61. 14; 62. 12). In his belly he carries Soma, in his limbs wondrous power, in his hand the thunderbolt, and in his head wisdom (ii. 16. 2; viii. 85. 3). He is called most sagacious of the wise (x. 112. 9), and his wisdom is unapproachable (ii. 21. 4). He is an enchanter, understands all stratagems (vi. 22. 1; 44. 14), yet he is faithful and not treacherous (viii. 51. 12); he is considered sinless (i. 129. 5). Among the Angirases he is the best Angiras, among heroes a hero, among friends a friend; he rejoices with them that rejoice, the most skilled of them all in song (i. 100. 4). He has assumed the inspiration of prophets (iii. 36. 5), he is Brahman and Rṣi in one. He is proud (i. 62. 10), and his mind firmly bent upon its objects (i. 102. 5).

Corresponding to his bold and warlike character, Indra appears to the eye of his worshipper’s imagination with gigantic body. His frame is full of vigor, mighty his neck, brawny his back; he possesses irresistible strength in his body, it rests in his limbs as water rests in hidden springs (i. 55. 8; iv. 17. 8; v. 37. 1; viii. 1. 28; 17. 8; 67. 7). His figure is well calculated for drinking-bouts. His belly holds whole lakes of Soma, it swells like a sea (i. 8. 7; 11. 1; 30. 3; 104. 9; iii. 36. 8); his mouth is huge, like a great body of water (vi. 41. 2). His arms are sleek, his hands thick and firm, both right and left well formed; his strength lies in them, they accomplish noble works, they win the flocks and herds (i. 80. 8; 102. 6; iv. 21. 9; vi. 19. 3; viii. 32. 10; 33. 5; 50. 18; 70. 1). He has a golden beard, which he shakes with satisfaction at his approach and after the draughts of Soma (ii. 11. 17; viii. 33. 6; x. 23. 1, 4), and handsome cheeks or lips, which he puffs out on such occasions (iii. 32. 1). In several hymns the word hari, ‘golden, sorrel,’ is made the subject of endless punning, so that Indra is called “gold-cheeked” (haricīpra), “golden-haired” (harīkeṇa), “golden-bearded” (hariṁcaṇāru), “golden-formed” (harīvarpaḥ); similarly hiranyāya, ‘golden,’ and hiranyabāhu, ‘golden-armed.’ From his firmness and strength he is called āyasa, ‘of metal, brazen’ (i. 7. 2; vii. 34. 4; viii. 55. 3; x. 96. 4, 5, 8, 9, 12). His whole appearance is brilliant, wonderful, splendid, like the sun in glory (i. 53. 3; 173. 4; iii. 45. 5; iv. 16. 14; 21. 2; v. 37. 1). He is adorned like the dawn (i. 57. 3), he hangs the fleecy cloud about him for an ornament (iv. 22. 2). But he can also assume any form whatever at will, through his magic powers (iii. 53. 8; vi. 47. 18).

Two passages of the Rik seem to refer to images of Indra, of some sort or other: iv. 24. 10: “Who will offer me ten cows for this my Indra here?” When he has killed his enemies,
he must bring him back to me;" viii. 1. 5: "Not even for a
great price would I sell thee, O slinger, not for a hundred nor
a thousand nor ten thousand (cattle), O thou thunderbolt-bearer
who receivest hundreds of libations." One may well imagine
what hideous objects such images must have been in Vedic
times; and that the bahulā yadnātī and the urvir ōpo na
kakud were most successfully portrayed.

Indra rides to battle or to the sacrifice on a golden wagon or
chariot, which the Rbhus built for him. It runs easily, has a
good frame and good hubs, and speeds through the air swifter
than thought (i. 16. 2; 102. 3; vi. 29. 2; 37. 3; x. 44. 2).
Indra urges on his steeds with a golden whip (viii. 33. 11).
As a rule he drives two sorrels (ii. 15. 6 calls them mares; cf.
iii. 44. 3); but often this number is too small for the enthusi-
astic poet, who with the well-known Indian fondness for play-
ning with numbers multiplies them without stint (ii. 18. 4, 7;
iv. 46. 3; vii. 47. 18). They snort and neigh, they prance and
rear during the journey, as though they were drunk like their
driver (i. 81. 3; iii. 43. 6; i. 30. 16). Even Indra shrinks,
tired and anxious, when after many vain efforts he has finally
yoked them for his drive (x. 105. 3). They have golden manes
(viii. 32. 29), straight backs (viii. 1. 25; 6. 42; iii. 35. 4), tails
like peacocks (iii. 45. 1; viii. 1. 25), noble limbs (iii. 43. 4), are
well groomed (v. 6); their eyes are bright as the sun, they them-
inselves are like sunbeams (i. 16. 1; ii. 11. 16). They receive warm
fodder (iii. 53. 3); well-fed, they fill out their girths (i. 10. 3).
The god is carried by them as an eagle by his wings (viii. 34. 9);
they are always ready for a journey, be it morning or evening
when Indra would start on his rounds (i. 104. 1), they convey
him to the sacrifice in a trice (x. 32. 2). They are yoked
through the power of prayer, that the god may appear among
his worshippers (ii. 18. 3; iii. 35. 4; viii. 1. 24; 45. 39; 87. 9).
Indra received them from Heaven (i. 121. 8), or from the
Rbhus (i. 111. 1). But he also travels with the horses of the
wind (Vāyu) or of the sun (Agni) (i. 51. 10; 121. 12; x. 22.
5; Val. 2. 8; x. 49. 7).

Indra's usual weapon is the thunderbolt, which Tvaṣṭar
made for him. This is described as golden (i. 57. 2; 85. 9;
viii. 57. 3), or brazen (i. 81. 4; viii. 85. 3; x. 48. 3); easily
victorius (i. 100. 13), intended to be hurled (i. 84. 11); and is
called Indra's companion (sacābhū, i. 131. 3). It is three or
four-edged (i. 121. 4; iv. 22. 2), hundred-edged (vi. 17. 10),
with a hundred knots or joints (i. 80. 6), or a thousand points
(v. 34. 2). Indra whets it as a bull his horns (i. 55. 1). An-

1 mahē cānā tvām aṛivāḥ pāra čulka-yā deyām: nā sahaśrāya nayū-
tāya vajrīno nā cātāya cātamagha.
other weapon, camba, perhaps a staff or club, is mentioned in x. 42. 7. According to x. 60. 3, he carries a goad (paviravat); in i. 32. 12, and x. 180. 2, a lance; and in several passages bow and arrows (viii. 45. 4; 66. 7, 11; x. 103. 2, 3). He is often called adrivat, ‘armed with stones’—referring doubtless to rough pieces of loose rock suitable for throwing. He also has a hook, with which he secures riches for the Soma-presser (viii. 17. 10; x. 44. 9). In some passages the word cipra, generally rendered ‘cheek’ or ‘chin,’ seems to mean ‘helmet,’ so perhaps in hiricira, vi. 29. 6. Cf. the remarks on the word in Muir’s Skt. Texts, v. 149. According to ix. 83. 4 (see above, p. 168), Indra was armed with a net, doubtless for the purpose of entangling his opponents, as was done by the Roman retiarii.

Finally, the poets ascribed to Indra a household, in which he took his ease in the society of his wife Indrāni: cf. iii. 53, 4–6; vii. 18. 2; x. 99. 5. As he is about to take the field against his enemies, Indrāni calls him back to get his accustomed draught of Soma. A satirical description of his domestic life is contained in the curious and very corrupt hymn x. 86, which is instructive as a possibly not unfaithful picture of the mores of those times. A conjugal quarrel has broken out between Indra and his spouse, the cause of which was Indra’s pet monkey Vṛṣākapī, who, besides making a nuisance of himself in many other ways, disturbed the people’s sleep (v. 22), and meddled with the secrets of his mistress’s toilet (v. 5). Indrāni complains of Indra’s lack of consideration for her, and declares her intention of killing the monkey—she who could boast of the greatest female charms (v. 6). Indra will not abandon his pet, which has shown itself useful on other occasions (v. 12. 18). The quarrel ends with the reconciliation of the pair, and the monkey is reduced to order.

1 Indrāni, a fem. formed from the masc. indra, is in the Rig-Veda hardly more than a name, without any personal characteristics; she is mentioned but five or six times. Varunāni is an equally rudimentary personage.

2 Hardly, as Grassmann supposed, son of Indra and Indrāni.
APPENDIX.

DEMONS MENTIONED BY NAME, WITH WHOM INDRA FIGHTS.

The allusions to many of these demoniac beings are so vague that one is often in doubt as to what class they belong—whether they be rain-stealers or personifications of other influences destructive to mankind.

Anarçâni: mentioned only in viii. 32. 2, without nearer description. Its etymology is obscure. If from a priv. and $\sqrt{ærc}$ (=$\text{riç}$), it would signify ‘not-harmful.’

Arnava is not necessarily the name of a demon, as the Pet. Dict. and Grassmann assume for the three passages x. 66. 11; 67. 12; 111. 14. In the first passage the context is best suited by rendering the word ‘Air.’ or ‘Cloud-sea;’ in 67. 12, arnapa seems to belong as adjective to arbudasya; and 111. 4 is probably best translated thus: “Indra, praised by the Angirases, broke the dominion (of the demons) over the mighty waves” (objective genitive).

Arbudá: i. 51. 6: “Thou didst tread down with thy foot the great Arbuda.” In the same verse Čuṣṇa and Čambara are named. The adj. arnapa, used of Arbuda in x. 67. 12, is ‘surging, waving, undulating;’ i. e. Arbuda is imagined in serpentine form. Indra cuts off his head. The Pet. Dict. in both passages renders ‘serpent.’ This Arbuda is doubtless identical with Arbuda, mentioned in ii. 11. 20: “When he had refreshed himself with Trita’s intoxicating draught, he cast Arbuda to earth.” In ii. 14. 4, Arbuda is mentioned with Uraṇa. According to viii. 32. 26, he is smitten by Indra with snow or ice—kimenâvidhyad arbudam. In v. 3 we read: “Cast down the height, the pate of the great Arbuda;” viii. 3. 19: “Thou didst drive out the cows from the mountain of Arbuda, of the treacherous Mrgaya.”

Ahi, ‘Serpent, Dragon’ (“Wurm” of German mythology), designates both a demon and a mysterious being, Ahi Budhnya, ‘the dragon of the depths.’ In most cases, however, Ahi is the demon, identified with Vṛtra—cf. e. g. i. 51. 4; iv. 17. 7 ff.; vi. 72. 3; x. 113. 3; and the whole hymn i. 32—by which is signified the long outstretched cloud, or else such clouds as seem to have been rolled or coiled up. The root is ahi, in the signification ‘squeeze.’ The reference is probably to snakes of the constrictor kind.

Ahiçvava, mentioned in viii. 32. 2 together with Sṛbinda, Anarçâni, and Pîpru. In v. 26 occur the words āurnavâbham ahiçvânam, which Grassmann translates “the spider-brood Ahirvava;” so also 86. 2. x. 144. 3: “Carelessly the bull among his females watches the busy falcon” (which brings the Soma to Indra; after

1 ghṛṣuḥ ārya kṛtvā āsa svāsu vānsayaḥ: āva didhehi ahiçvavaḥ.
the draught of which the god will overcome Ahīṣuva and deprive him of the cows). On this verse Grassmann remarks: "According to the hymn, Ahīṣuva is doubtless identical with the astā kṛṣṭuṣa ['the bow-stretching archer'] in iv. 27. 3." The translation which I have given, if correct, proves this conjecture wrong. No wonder need be felt that the demon is called Vāṁṣaṅga. He is among his "cows," the clouds, and so is naturally enough styled "the bull" of the flock.

The word āurnavābhā occurs without ahīṣuva only in ii. 11. 18: āurnavābhāṁ dānum. The rendering 'spider-brood' is quite satisfactory; cf. Curtius, Grundzüge, No. 406 b. The spider was not unnaturally classed with animals under whose forms demons were thought to exist, since in hot countries spiders are not only very large and disgusting, but positively dangerous. Nor is it improbable that the poets saw a considerable degree of resemblance between certain cloud-formations and spiders' webs.

Āṇa ('greedy'), name of a demon in ii. 14. 5, and in ii. 20. 5:1 "The mighty (Indra), stealing away the dawns by means of the sun, destroyed the old hiding-places of Āṇa;" vi. 4. 3:2 "The radiant one who grows not old, who scares away (demons—Agni is meant), destroyed" etc. Who was this "greedy creature?" Indra destroys his retreats by making the sun rise; Agni does the same by his rays; so that Āṇa, although mentioned among rain-stealers in ii. 14. 5, was doubtless in the first instance a demon of darkness.

Ilīṭa I find mentioned only in i. 33. 12: "Indra cast down the strongholds of Ilīṭa." Yāska, Nir. vi. 19, makes the word equivalent to ilābiloṣaṇa 'lying in front of the door of refreshment' (i. e. of the water). The commentator adds: "He blocks up the openings by which the refreshments, the waters, flow out, and lies in front of them. It is a name for cloud." Yāska's idea may be correct; his etymology is of a sort with most of his others.

Uraṇa, mentioned only ii. 14. 4: "Uraṇa, who stretched out ninety-nine arms." The meaning for uraṇa, 'ram,' given in Pet. Dict. for the later literature, would suit the clouds very well, as they often have a woolly appearance; hence also the "ninety-nine arms," referring to their fringe-like edges.

Āurnavābha. See Ahīṣuva.

Karaiṇa: named in i. 53. 8 along with Parnaṣya, in x. 48 with Parnaṣya and Vṛtra. Both are conquered by Indra with Athīṅga's assistance, "by means of the wheel," i. e. chariots. Athīṅga is a surname of Divodāsa, for whom Indra also kills Camba. Parnaṣya is plainly enough 'the winged one;' karaiṇa I can only explain as derived from ka + raṇja, 'of uncertain color,' i. e. dark, obscure. Benfey, Or. u. Occ. i. 413, supposes the word to be connected in some way with karu, 'hail.'

1 muṇāṇaṁ uṣāsaṁ sūryaṁ tattavān āṇasaya cic chīṇathat pūrvyāpi.
2 vi yā inōty ajāraḥ pāvakā 'cnasaya cic etc.
Kuyava. Although kuyava is generally taken as an adjective qualifying Čuma (which see below), yet the word sometimes appears to be an independent name, as e.g. in i. 103. 8: where the order of words forbids our taking ċumaṁ and kuyavam together. To be sure, kuyavam might here belong with vrtram, but I know no other instance of Vṛtra's receiving this epithet. The verse i. 104. 3 mentions two wives of Kuyava: "Kuyava's wives bathe in the stream of milk (i.e. rain); let them be dashed to pieces in the cataract of Čihā" (Grassmann); i.e. they revel in the possession of what rightly belongs to mankind, but by the renewed flowing of the Čihā they are to be destroyed. Grassmann's explanation of pīρāṁ as name of a river is doubtless correct.

[Kuyavāc is mentioned only in i. 174. 7. Pet. Dict. and Grassmann derive the word from kuyā (=kū) + vāc; hence, 'slanderer.' There is no further authority for making kuyā equivalent to ku; but the meaning 'slanderer' suits the context, as the hymn mentions only earthly enemies, and particularly slanders.

Kālitarā: see Čambāra: iv. 50, 14.

Krivi, 'leather bag, or bottle' (άσκνός), i.e. the rain-cloud. In i. 17. 6 and 22. 2, and Vāl. 3. 8 it seems to be used as name of a demon.

Cumuri: generally in the company of Dhuni ('the roarer'). Indra put them both to sleep, and so killed them, as a favor to Dabhiti. In vi. 26. 6, we find Cumuri alone, and Dhuni is not alluded to at all in the hymn; in all other passages they are mentioned together.

[Dānavā: v. 29. 4: "Indra, bidding the swallowyer (i.e. him who sought to swallow him up) retire, struck down the snorting Dānavā"—where it is indifferent whether we take dānavam as name or not; prasānt is applied to Vṛtra in i. 61. 10 et sāepp. In v. 32. 1 dānavā appears to refer to Ahi, i.e. Vṛtra (cf. the other verses); so also ii. 11. 10. It is evidently unnecessary to consider the word, formed as a patronymic from dānu, ' demon,' as a name.]

Dṛbhika: only ii. 14. 3. It perhaps signifies 'he who bunches clouds together.' The root dārbh occurs, according to Pet. Dict., only in the Brāhmaṇas. For the form cf. vṛdhika, 'helper,' and Whitney, Gr., § 1186.

Dhuni, see Cumuri.

Namuci is explained by Pāṇini as from na+muci, i.e. 'he who does not let (the rain) free;' cf. K. Z. viii. 80. In the following verse the relations between the Aχvinś and Namuci still await satisfactory explanation: x. 131. 4: "Ye Aχvins, lords of the

1 ċūmam pịṇraḥ kzyćavam vrtrāṁ indra yadāvahār vī pṛuraḥ čām-
barṣya.
2 jīgarṇīm indro apṣaṭgraṇāḥ prāti qvasāntam āva dānavāṁ han.
3 yuvāṁ surāmām aχvinśa nāmucaḥ āsurē sācaḥ: vṛhipāṇa qubhas puti
indraḥ kārmasv āvatam.
rapid flight, after ye had drunk the intoxicating draught in the company of the demon Namuci, helped Indra in his deeds." Elsewhere Namuci is always a rain-stealer. Indra strikes off his head in v. 30. 7, 8 and vi. 20. 6, or crushes it with the foam of water, v. 30. 9; viii. 14. 13. See the curious explanation of this by the commentator on V. 8. x. 33, in Muir, S. T. v. 94.

_Navavāstvam_, 'he who has a new dwelling-place.' In i. 36. 18 and vi. 20. 11 the word is plainly name of a man: in the first passage, a favorite of Agni; in the second, son of Uṣanā, a favorite of Indra. In i. 36. 18 he is also called _bhadratha_, 'having a great chariot; so also in x. 49. 6, where Indra says of himself: 'It was I, the slayer of Vṛtra, who hewed in pieces Navavāstva, even as I hewed Vṛtra' (_vṛṭreṇa = vṛtram iva_). Hence it seems unnecessary to make _navavāstvam_ name of a demon.

_Nārmara_: only ii. 13. 8. The text has nārmaram _sahavanum_, generally translated 'Nārmara with all his possessions.' Śiśyā takes _sahavanu_ as name of an Asura; _nārmara_ would then be patronymic from _nṛmara_ ('causing death to the heroes'), which need not signify a demon.

_Padgrbhi_, 'who seizes by the foot;' only x. 49. 5. _Savya_, into whose hands Indra delivers Padgrbhi, is not mentioned elsewhere.

_Parnaya_. See under _Kuruñjī._

_Pipru_. The word is plainly derived from _āpar_. If from _par_, the meaning would be 'the overcomer, compeller;' if from 2. _par_, 'he who satiates himself' (i.e. with the stolen waters). For the form, cf. _siṃu-, jī-gu-, _etc._ (Whitney, Gr., § 1178 c); the accent raises difficulties. In i. 101. 2, Pipru is called _avvāta_, 'disobedient to the laws.' By the 'laws' we have doubtless to understand Varuna's ordinance that the rain shall descend upon the earth. In iv. 16. 13 he is styled _mrgayāṁ gīgurvāsam_, 'a mighty monster,' and Indra kills him. He appears mostly in the company of Časna and Čambara, and like them is possessed of castles and strongholds, by which again clouds are meant.

_Piṣāci_: only in i. 133. 5. The whole hymn is a prayer for the banishment of demons. Grassmann's derivation, from _pȋga_+ _ac_, is doubtless correct; Piṣāci would then be the will-o'-the-wisp.

_Makha_ appears in two passages as an enemy of the gods: ix. 101. 13: 'Drive off the greedy dog, as the Bhrigu drove off Makha' (_hātā, 2nd plur., addressed to the gods, or to the other priests); x. 171. 2: 'Thou didst rend the head of the wild Makha from his body, and enter the Soma-presser's house.' In the first passage Grassmann translates _mukha_ by 'enemy;' in the second, by 'warrior.'

_Mrga_, 'wild beast,' designates in i. 80. 7 Vṛtra, who, as is

1. _āhāṁ sā yā navavāstvam bhadrathāṁ sām vṛṭreṇa dāsāṁ vṛṭrahārujam.
2. _āspa ṛvanām arādhāsam hatā makhāṁ nā bhṛgavah.
3. _tvām makhāsya dōdhaṁ cīrō 'va tvacō bharaṁ: āgachāḥ somaṁo gṛhāṃ.
Indra in the Rig-Veda.

203

apparent from the rest of the hymn, is here thought of in animal form. So also v. 29. 4; 32. 3; 34. 2; viii. 82. 14. (Pet. Dict.) So also

Mravya, used iv. 16. 13 of Pipru, viii. 3. 19 of Arbuda. In x. 49. 5 perhaps proper name.

Rudhikra: only ii. 14. 5. Grassmann, ‘shedder of blood,’ from rudhi (=rudhira) and kra (from √kira): cf. dadhikra. Yet here Rudhikra stands among rain-stealers, and why all at once a ‘blood-shedder?’

Rāuhina is mentioned in Naigh. i. 10 as equivalent to megha, ‘cloud.’ In i. 103. 2, he is killed together with the rain-stealers Ahi and Vyaña; in ii. 12. 12 he is called dyām ārohant, ‘the stormer (assaulter) of the sky’—the Indian counterpart of the Titans. In agreement with ii. 12. 12, the root ruh, ‘climb,’ seems to underlie the word; Grassmann derives it from rohini, ‘bay mare.’

Vaijrya: only in i. 53. 8, where Indra and Ririṣvan destroy his hundred castles. Grassmann separates vaijryā-an.

Vaircein: mentioned four times—i. 14. 6; iv. 30. 15; vi. 47. 21; vii. 99. 5—each time in connection with Čambara. He leads 100,000 men against Indra, but is killed. Grassmann assumes for the word a root vare, ‘glisten,’ and compares varcas and vreivat. Roth, in a private lecture, hinted at a connection with the later word varcas, ‘dung, filth.’

Vala signifies originally ‘cave;’ and by this seems to have been signified at first the cloud-cave which concealed the stolen rain-cows, and then, by a transition to a person, the demon who had his abode therein. The first meaning is exemplified in vi. 39. 2: ‘Indra tore open the untorn roof of the cave, he conquered the Panis by his words (alone):’ cf. x. 62. 2; 138. 1; ii. 12. 3. The second we find in x. 68. 6: “When Bṛhaspati with fiery glowing lightning-flashes split open the hiding-place of Vala who jeered at him:” cf. vi. 18. 5; viii. 14. 8. But in most cases a distinction between these two meanings is quite impossible, and there are extremely few verses in which vāla is necessarily a proper name.

Vṛkadhvaras: only in ii. 30. 4; apparently an epithet of Vṛtra. Roth and Grassmann conjecture vṛkadhvaras, ‘as harmful as a wolf.’

Vṛṣaçipra, ‘having lips like a bull.’ Spoken of in vii. 99. 4 as conquered by Indra and Vira: “O heroes, ye destroyed in battle the stratagem of the demon Vṛṣaçipra.” Still, the word might be merely an adjective.

Vyaña. The word signifies literally ‘with broad (or ‘crooked’) shoulders.’ According to iv. 18. 9, he wounds Indra. He is mentioned in some half-dozen verses, together with Pipru, Čuṣṇa,

1 rujād ārugam vī valāsya sānum pápār vásocbhīr abhī yodhad in-draḥ.
2 yadā valāsya phyaṭo jāsum bhād bṛhaspātīr agultapbhīr arkaḥ.
Namuci, and others; but it is impossible to determine his character more nearly. Cf. i. 101. 2; 103. 2; ii. 14. 5; iii. 34. 3; in i. 32. 5 vṛatāsā may be an adjective qualifying Vṛtra.

Çandikā: only in ii. 30. 8, in plur. Probably demons rather than men. Sāyana refers it to the descendants of Çanda, who appears in V. S. as leader of the Asuras.

Çambara appears very often, and as one of the most dangerous among Indra's opponents. The word is of secondary formation, from ċamba, which in x. 42. 7 designates a weapon used by Indra, and is explained in Naigh. and Nir. by vajrā. If the word ċambara as name of a demon retains its appellative force, then this is the only case known from the R. V. in which a demon carries the weapon peculiar to Indra. Still, the word nivividhvān, used of Vyānaśa in iv. 18. 9, seems to point to a regular weapon carried by the demons. Roth, Zur. Lit. u. Gesch. d. Wēda, p. 116, and Zimmer, Altind. Leben, p. 126, suppose ċambara to have been originally a designation of some non-Aryan tribe, which was afterward transferred to certain demons.

For Çambara the following passages are of importance: vi. 47. 21: "In the abiding-place of the waters the hero slew the two haggling demons Varcin and Çambara." In ii. 12. 11 Çambara is called parvatesu ksīyantī, 'dwelling on the mountains,' where 'the mountains' may be either those upon earth, or the thus imaginatively described clouds in the sky. In vii. 18. 20: "Thou hast killed the Çambara, who thought himself a little god; thou didst hurl him down from the heights"—čambara plainly designates a hostile, non-Aryan tribe; cf. the other verses of the hymn, and vi. 26. 5.

The clouds are called Çambara's castles. Indra is said to have destroyed ninety-nine of them, or a hundred (ix. 61. 1, 2; ii. 14. 6); and in the latter case, ninety-nine during the day and the hundredth at evening (iv. 26. 3), as an especial favor to Divodāsa. According to ii. 12. 11, Indra found Çambara only in the fortieth year: i. e. it was long before the storm broke—the drought was of long duration. In iv. 30. 14, Çambara is called kālītāra ('with a numerous family?).

Çuṇa is, after Vṛtra, Indra's most dangerous enemy. He is a demon of drought and bad harvest, and with his destruction fertility and prosperity return to the earth. Thus, v. 32. 4: "Him who revelled at will in these waters, the son of mist who delights to roam in the darkness, the demon's rage and Çuṇa himself, did Indra, the thunderer, who receives the powerful libations, destroy with the thunderbolt." The most significant of the epithets

1 āhan dāsā vṛṣabhō vasnayántdávraje varcinām čambaram ca.
2 dévakaṁ cin mānyamānāṁ jaghantāhva tmānā bṛhatāḥ čambaram bhāte.
3 tvaṁ cid esāṁ svadhāya mádantam mihō nāpataṁ suvīdhaṁ tamogām: vṛṣaprabhāṁ dānavaśya bhāmaṁ vājreṇa vajrī ni jaghāna čuṇ-ṇam.
applied to Çusna is kuyava, ‘causing bad harvests.’ (For Kuyava as an independent personification see above.) Again, x. 22. 14: ‘That the earth, though without hand or foot, might nevertheless prosper through the help of the glorious ones, thou didst cast down Çusna upon the right hand, to the gain of the whole world;’ cf. Val. 3. 8. Çusna is furthermore called açusa (probably with an intentional pun upon his name), ‘greedy,’ a word used only of him and once (i. 174. 8) of Agni; māyin, ‘wily’ (as also Vṛtra); ēṛṅgīn, ‘horned;’ amānusa, ‘hostile to mankind;’ and vṛandīn, ‘enervating,’ which of course refers to the enervating, exhausting influence of the drought upon all living things (i. 33. 12; x. 22. 7; i. 54. 5). His cloud-castles, which wander restlessly about (cariṃsu pur), are mentioned in i. 103. 8 and viii. 1. 28. Indra is besought to destroy his whole progeny, viii. 40. 10, 11. The act of killing him was an especial favor to Kutsa Arjuneya: i. 63. 3: ‘For the joyful youth Kutsa thou didst smite Çusna with his wagon in his fort;’ cf. iv. 16. 12; vi. 26. 3; iii. 3; vii. 19. 2.

The Pet. Dict. derives the word from √pus=puṣa, ‘hiss;’ Grassmann, from √pus, ‘dry up, wither,’ which is found once in the Rig-Veda in composition with prati, and often in the Atharvan with other prepositions. For Roth’s view speaks the adjective puṣasaṇa, ‘snorting,’ in i. 54. 5; yet Grassmann’s derivation seems to correspond better with the general conception of this demon. Perhaps even the Indians forgot at a very early date the real derivation of the word.

Svarbhaṇu (‘he who has the sunlight in his power’?) appears only in v. 40, as a demon who obscures the sun, but is slain by Indra for Atri.

1 hastā yād apātī vārdhata kathā śacibhir vedyānām: qūṣam pāri pradakṣiṇḥ viśvāyave ni qūṣathaḥ.

2 tvām qūṣam vṛjāne prīṣe śca śca yūne kūṭsāya dyumāte sācāhan.

VOL. XI. 27
## INDEX TO PASSAGES TRANSLATED OR EXPLAINED.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>R. V.</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th>R. V.</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th>R. V.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>i. 6 3</td>
<td>126</td>
<td>ii. 12. 2</td>
<td>183</td>
<td>iv. 24. 10</td>
<td>196 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13. 10</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>185</td>
<td>28. 1</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17. 3</td>
<td>154</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>121</td>
<td>30. 18</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>154</td>
<td>13. 6</td>
<td>186</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18. 4</td>
<td>166</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>185</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20. 2</td>
<td>178</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>189</td>
<td>33. 9</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33. 1</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>14. 2</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>35. 7</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>51. 4</td>
<td>184</td>
<td>15. 2</td>
<td>122</td>
<td>41. 2</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>199</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>190</td>
<td>42. 1-10</td>
<td>186 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>189</td>
<td>20. 5</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52. 6</td>
<td>136</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>57. 1</td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>175</td>
<td>28. 4</td>
<td>134</td>
<td>v. 2. 8</td>
<td>152, 172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>194</td>
<td>13. 1</td>
<td>185</td>
<td>5. 3</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>186</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53. 10</td>
<td>181</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>136</td>
<td>29. 4</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>54. 1</td>
<td>121</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>55. 1</td>
<td>121</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>30. 6</td>
<td>138, 181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56. 4</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>14. 1</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>31. 4</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>122, 182</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61. 7</td>
<td>174</td>
<td>40. 2</td>
<td>191</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62. 3</td>
<td>141</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>138</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>iii. 12. 6</td>
<td>171</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>63. 3</td>
<td>205</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>171</td>
<td>101</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50. 12</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>30. 12</td>
<td>184</td>
<td>40. 6</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>83. 4</td>
<td>141</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>184</td>
<td>61. 10</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>84. 13</td>
<td>138</td>
<td>32. 6</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>vii. 4. 3</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100. 5</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>34. 4</td>
<td>139</td>
<td>17. 10</td>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>101. 7</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>185</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>191 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>102. 2</td>
<td>184 f.</td>
<td>35. 9</td>
<td>169</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103. 3</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>47. 4</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>186 f.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>104. 3</td>
<td>201</td>
<td>48. 4</td>
<td>176</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105. 9</td>
<td>144</td>
<td>53. 1</td>
<td>182</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>106. 1</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>169</td>
<td>19. 7</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>55. 19</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>22. 10</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>109. 4</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>57. 2</td>
<td>191</td>
<td>27. 3</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111. 1</td>
<td>177 f.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>31. 2</td>
<td>121</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>116. 21</td>
<td>192</td>
<td>iv. 16. 4</td>
<td>184</td>
<td>37. 2</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>121. 10</td>
<td>139</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>141</td>
<td>39. 2</td>
<td>203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>45. 1</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>122. 3</td>
<td>181</td>
<td>17. 2</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>47. 21</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>131. 5</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>56. 2</td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>132. 6</td>
<td>182</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>57. 2-4</td>
<td>190 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>133. 1-3</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>59. 1</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>135. 8</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>138, 133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>155. 2</td>
<td>174</td>
<td>18. 1-5</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>60. 2</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>170. 2</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>176</td>
<td>68. 2</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>171. 6</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>187. 1</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>10-12</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>69. 2</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>188. 9</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>19. 7</td>
<td>190</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii. 11. 7, 8</td>
<td>136</td>
<td>21. 4</td>
<td>162</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>22. 4</td>
<td>126</td>
<td>vii. 6. 1</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>138</td>
<td>18. 20</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>143, 199</td>
<td>24. 1</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>20. 5</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Indra in the Rig Veda.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>R. V.</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th>R. V.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>vii. 21.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>viii. 40.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>195</td>
<td>45.</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>163 f.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32. 18</td>
<td>188</td>
<td>58.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>188</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>129</td>
<td>66.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47. 2</td>
<td>178</td>
<td>59.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56. 2</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>63. 10</td>
<td>168</td>
<td>73.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>79. 3</td>
<td>168</td>
<td>65.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>82. 2</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>66.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>1-3</td>
<td>128</td>
<td>86. 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>167</td>
<td>89. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>175</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>83. 9</td>
<td>155</td>
<td>81. 14</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>92. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>84. 2</td>
<td>153</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>188</td>
<td>95. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>85. 2</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>82. 5</td>
<td>195</td>
<td>101. 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>164 f.</td>
<td>85. 3</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>111. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>152, 186</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>90. 5</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>97. 9</td>
<td>166</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>166</td>
<td>113. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>98. 3</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>87. 2</td>
<td>185</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>99. 3</td>
<td>124</td>
<td>91. 8</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>173, 203</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>173</td>
<td>ix. 83.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>104. 22</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>86.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105</td>
<td>99. 3</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>124. 1-9</td>
<td>159 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii. 1. 5</td>
<td>197</td>
<td>101. 13</td>
<td>202</td>
<td>131. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>167</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>192</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. 19</td>
<td>199</td>
<td>x. 10. 15</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>134. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. 28-30</td>
<td>126</td>
<td>17. 3</td>
<td>191</td>
<td>138. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. 24</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>22. 1</td>
<td>153</td>
<td>139. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>205</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. 6</td>
<td>138</td>
<td>28. 6</td>
<td>129</td>
<td>144. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>153. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>32. 6</td>
<td>172</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>185</td>
<td>38. 5</td>
<td>181</td>
<td>167. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14. 14</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>45. 3</td>
<td>169</td>
<td>171. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15. 2</td>
<td>183</td>
<td>46. 3</td>
<td>142 f.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32. 3</td>
<td>199</td>
<td>48. 2</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>Val. 3. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36. 4</td>
<td>183</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>178</td>
<td>4. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38. 1</td>
<td>169</td>
<td>49. 6</td>
<td>202</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Errata.

p. 138, l. 42: for 130. 13 read 130. 3.
151, 33-4: for viii. 82. 6 read vii. 82. 6.
199, 10: for 111. 14 read 111. 4.
SYNOPSIS OF THE FOREGOING ARTICLE.

| I. Introduction; Indra's Significance in Nature | 117 |
| II. Indra's Origin | 124 |
| Physical Conceptions | 125 |
| Anthropomorphic Conceptions | 127 |
| Vague Statements concerning Indra’s Parents | 129 |
| Conceptions of Indra’s Origin which rest upon Speculation | 130 |
| III. Fields of Indra’s Activity, and his Relations to other Divinities and to his Worshippers | 133 |
| Battles with Superhuman Enemies, particularly with Demons who steal Water and Light | 133 |
| Saramā, the Angirases, and the Papis | 140 |
| Indra and Trita, Viśvarūpa | 142 |
| Indra’s Relations with the Adityas, and the development of the Indra-mythos | 148 |
| Indra and the Maruts | 160 |
| Indra and Vāyu | 162 |
| Indra and Soma | 163 |
| Indra and Brhaspati (Brahmaṇaspati) | 165 |
| Indra and Gandharva | 166 |
| Indra and Agni | 168 |
| Indra and Vasu, | 172 |
| Indra and Tvaṣṭar | 175 |
| Indra and the Rubhus | 177 |
| Indra as Chief of the Vasus | 178 |
| Indra’s Battles with Human Enemies | 179 |
| Indra and Parvata | 181 |
| Indra’s Cosmogonic Labors | 182 |
| Indra’s Benevolence, and his Relations with his Worshippers | 186 |
| Indra and Puṣan | 190 |
| Indra and the Acvins | 192 |
| IV. Descriptions of Indra’s Person | 193 |
| APPENDIX: Demons mentioned by name, with whom Indra fights | 199 |
| INDEX to Passages translated or explained | 206 |
ARTICLE VI.

THE CYPRIOTE INSCRIPTIONS

OF THE

CESNOLA COLLECTION IN NEW YORK.

BY PROF. ISAAC H. HALL,

OF NEW YORK CITY.

Presented to the Society May 7th, 1884.

The object of this paper is to present the results of a fresh study of the inscriptions, and especially to correct sundry current mistakes. It has especial reference to the last general re-working of the subject of the Cypriote inscriptions, which appears as Heft I. of Dr. Hermann Collitz’s Sammlung der Griechischen Dialekt-Inschriften, under the title of Die Griechisch-Kyprosischen Inschriften in Epichorischer Schrift, by Dr. Wilhelm Deecke (Göttingen, 1883).

In essaying to offer emendations, I shall not generally stop to explain the source of error, nor to correct the (few) false references and clerical errors.

Dr. Deecke’s work, in general, displays a marked advance in deciphering and interpretation, and is characterized throughout by learning and ingenuity. He gives the inscriptions in a Roman transliteration, line for line, followed by the Greek reading, in which also the line is marked. In the Roman syllables, he prints in Italic type those which he considers plain and correct on the monuments, but those that he regards as defaced or needing emendation he gives in Roman letters. The Greek that corresponds to the latter he prints in type with scratched faces.

This distinction would be a very desirable one, if it could be always made; but I have not found it generally to conform to fact, since Deecke frequently uses the Roman letters where
Italic ought to be, and sometimes vice versa. Accordingly, I shall make no thorough attempt to revise his representations in that respect, nor shall I follow his plan myself. There is, furthermore, a difficulty, sometimes, in determining whether a syllable should on that plan be printed in Roman or in Italic; and the judgment of different eyes or interpreters would greatly vary.

For convenience, and for the sake of avoiding a multiplication of references, I shall follow Deecke’s order and numbers. References to “Hall” denote my own numbers in Jour. Amer. Or. Soc., vol. x.

Where the readings here given differ from those previously published by me, it is to be understood, of course, that the present ones are the result of better knowledge, and to be preferred to the former ones. In many cases the stones, after ten or twelve years’ exposure to the upper air, show their characteristics much better than when fresh from the ground. In some cases cleaning an object has brought to light an inscription; in others, it has made the inscription more legible.

INScriptions FROM KYTHREA.

1. Deecke is mistaken in speaking of “das sonderbar geformte vierte Zeichen der zweiten Zeile.” The character is plain, and of the usual form; though a crack in the stone may have deformed the squeeze which primarily supplied Deecke’s authority. I should put none of the syllables in Roman letters, since all are unmistakable. The inscription is on one side of a stone box, of a sort of which quite a number of specimens appear in the Cesnola collection, some of them smoked inside, and probably intended for coals and incense. Characters ⅔ to ¾ inch high. Three lines. It reads:

1. po ro to ti no e mi ta se pa pi a se to e e.
2. re wo se ka se mi ku te te ke ta i.
3. po pi a i a po ro ti ta i.

Πρωτοτίμω ημι, τάς Παφίας τά ἱερός, κας μι κατέ-
Σχέ τάτι | Παφία Αφροδίται.

‘I am [the offering] of Prototimos, the priest of the Paphian, and he laid me up to the Paphian Aphrodite.’

The μι in line 2 may be either (epigraphically) dialectic for με, or for μι(ν). The latter seems to follow the analogy of No. 45.

2. In the first line, Deecke romanizes te o ta. The te is gone; enough of the o is left to show the character in the connection; but the ta is quite plain, and should not be romanized. Otherwise Deecke is right.

The inscription is on a fragment of a box like the preceding. Characters ⅔ to ¾ inch high. Three lines.
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Cesnola Collection. 211

1. ta. se. [te.] o. ta. se. pa. . . .
2. a. u. ta. ra. mi. ka. te. . . .
3. o. na. si. te. mi. se. . . .

Τάς [Σε]δό τάς Παφίας ημι] αυτάρ μι κατι[Σηκε] |
Ονασί[Σεμε] . . .

‘Of the goddess the Pa[phian am I;] but Onasithemis [laid] me up . . .’

3. In line 1, the second se. is certain, though the last stroke (the long one) is broken away. Deecke's romanized u. in line 2 is a plain i. on the stone; but Deecke is probably right in emending it, though it may have been phonetically correct to the stoncutter. (In the East the u-sound, as well as the a-sound, continually degenerates into the i-sound in colloquial use.) On an object like the last, but in four lines, instead of three as Deecke gives it.

Characters 1/4 to 1/8 inch high.

1. ta. se. te. o. | ta. se. . . .
2. a. i. ta. ra. e (or, me.?) . . .
3. te. mi. . . .
4. pi. . . .

Τάς Σεδό τάς [Παφίας ημι] αυτάρ με (or, αυτάρ έμε) [κα- 

‘Of the goddess the [Paphian am I; but Onas]ithemis [set me up to the Pa]phian Aphrodite.’

4. Deecke is right in his identification. Cesnola's copy (Cyprus, Plate 8, no. 53) is bad; but Pierides is right. The se. at the beginning should have been romanized on Deecke's principles, since only one stroke of the character remains. Of the inscription, however, nothing is “sehr schwach” but the e. Half of the mi. at the end is broken away, and the character should have been romanized; but of these matters Deecke was, of course, not aware.

Inscription on a fragment of like description with the preceding.

Characters 1/4 to 1/8 inch high. One fragmentary line.

. . . se. pa. pi. a. se. | e. mi. . . .

[Tάς Παφίας ημι . . .

‘Of the Paphian am I . . .’

5. The point “hinter se.” is plainly a division-mark, contrary to Deecke's opinion. Another division-mark appears also at the beginning of the inscription, i.e., before ta. Also a clear fragment of a se. ends the line; of which fact no hint is given by Deecke.

Inscription on object like the last. One fragmentary line.

Characters 1/4 to 1/8 inch high.

. . . | ta. se. | pa. pi. a. se. . . .

. . . τάς Παφίας . . .

‘. . . of the Paphian . . .’

6. Deecke's first romanized se. is pretty certainly wrong. The character is fragmentary, but pretty plainly mo., followed by
a division-mark. A division-mark occurs also after the last character.

Inscription on object like the last. One fragmentary line. Characters \( \frac{1}{2} \) to \( \frac{3}{8} \) inch high.

\[ \ldots \text{mo.} \mid \text{pa. pi. a. se.} \mid \]
\[ \ldots \text{[? Πρωτοτι]μω Παφιας} \ldots \]
\[ \ldots \text{Of Prototimos (?) Paphia’s...} \]

Still, it is possible that the reading was \( \ldots \tau \dot{α} \) Παφιας \ldots

7. Deecke is right, even in tacitly noting that we have here the beginning of an inscription.

On a fragment of a large bowl or jar of red earthenware. Inscription in characters \( \frac{2}{3} \) to 1 inch high.

\[ \text{τα. se. pa. pi.} \ldots \]
\[ \text{Τας Παφιας...} \]
\[ \text{‘Of the Paphian...’} \]

8. There is nothing in the collection to answer to this inscription. I presume it is Pierides’s first or second copy of Deecke’s No. 4, above, when the fainter \( e. \) \( m i. \) at the end escaped his attention. I had from Gen. di Cesnola squeezes of this whole lot of Kythrea inscriptions, made at the time of their discovery, and given to me at the same time that Pierides saw them; and this was not among them. It also makes one more (and, with No. 14, two more) than the number of them as then stated by Gen. di Cesnola, or than the number which I have known ever since. Consequently, I consider that this inscription is to be counted as non-existent, and to be erased.

9. Deecke is wrong in some comparatively minor matters. The first character is \( \tau a. \), not \( se. \); and the \( a. \) is the end of the original inscription. Deecke’s comment is all wrong.

Inscription on the side of a flat-bottomed basin of red pottery. One (end of a) line. Characters \( 1 \frac{1}{4} \) to \( 1 \frac{3}{4} \) inch high.

\[ \ldots \text{ta. pa. pi. } a. \]
\[ \ldots \tau a \text{ Παφιας (i.e. τα Παφια).} \]
\[ \ldots \text{to the Paphian.} \]

The absence of the \( iota \) adscript is easily explained on the supposition that the epithet was preceded by \( \tau a t \) Αφροδιται.

10. Deecke is right in his comment. The \( pi. \) has been made an \( o. \) by a superfluous line. But, contrary to Deecke’s indication, we have here the end of the original inscription.

Inscription on fragment of an incense box of soft stone, like Nos. 1–6. One (end of a) fragmentary line. Characters \( \frac{3}{8} \) to \( \frac{1}{2} \) inch high.

\[ \ldots \text{pa. pi. a. se.} \]
\[ \ldots \text{Παφιας.} \]
\[ \ldots \text{of Paphia.} \]

11. Deecke is wrong in several respects; but it is probable that his identification of this with \( " \text{Pier. Trans. V., p. 96, n. 11 f.}" \) is correct.
The inscription is in two lines, fragmentary, but probably the beginning of the second line is present. There is no reason for reading from left to right, as Deecke does. Nor is there any point between "pt. [which I read o.] and a.", but the "Anfang eines Striches unter pt." is really there (not a chance scratch), and makes it an o.

Inscription on a fragment of like nature with the last. Two fragmentary lines. Characters $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high.

1. . . . se. te.
2. a. o. . . .
   . . . τα[ ]ς θ[ω . . .] | α o . . .
   'of the goddess . . . . . . (?)

12. All the characters in this inscription should have been romanized on Deecke’s method, for they are all broken on the lower side.

On an object like the last. One fragmentary line. Characters $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high.

.. pa. pi. a.
   . . . Παφία[?]
   ' . . . (or, perhaps, to) Paphia.

13. Deecke is all wrong, except in the two last characters.

Inscription on a large fragment of calcareous stone, in one fragmentary line, 1 foot 8 inches long. Characters 4 to 6 inches high, deeply cut, but the first three much worn.

.. se. ke. te. ke. a.
   . . . ε χα θιχε 'A . . .
   ' . . . and — set me up to A[pollo?] (or Aphrodite?) . . .

14. Deecke’s remarks about the variance between the “Zeichnung,” the “Text,” and the “Umschreibung” are just enough; but the fact is that the “Zeichnung” in Pierides’s Plate “A-5,” is altogether wrong, and represents an inscription quite different from any of these Kythrea inscriptions. Whether the mistake is Pierides’s own or that of the editor of the Journal, is uncertain. (See foot-note, p. 96, Jour. Soc. Bibl. Archæol., vol. v.) The “Text” is palpably misprinted. What Pierides’s “11 a” is, is not so certain; but Deecke’s 5, 6, for which he does not cite Pierides, certainly represent two of Pierides’s numbers.

To make the matter clearer, I will state that the group of small Kythrea inscriptions found by Gen. di Cesnola in 1876 are eleven in number, three longer, and six mere fragments, on stone, and two on pottery. I have known all these inscriptions ever since their discovery, and they are the same that Pierides describes, though it is difficult to identify each of those he has grouped under his No. 11, even with the stones to help. This group does not include Deecke’s No. 13, which, though from Kythrea, was found at another time, and is on a large stone. We have to reject Deecke’s Nos. 8 and 14, as non-existent.

For presenting the matter more clearly, I append the following
tabular statement of agreement between Deecke and Pierides, as the result of the most careful examination I could make.

Deecke 1  =  Pierides No. 8.
2  =  9.
3  =  10.
4  =  11 d.
5  =  11 a.
6  =  11 b.
7  =  12 b.
8  =  11 d., repeated, and therefore to be erased.)
9  =  12 a.
10  =  11 c.
11  =  11 f.
12  =  11 e.
(13 is not of this group.)
(14  =  11 a., repeated, and therefore to be erased.)

Kûkliä, or Palæo-Paphos.

37. (Hall, No. 24.) In respect to this inscription, I now agree with Deecke in the reading of the second character in line 1. Inscription on the (calcareous stone) base of a statue, with feet still remaining. Divisions between the words are not marked with points or lines, but indicated by spaces. Three lines. Characters about 4 inch high.

1. e. po. to. se.  ka. te. se. ta. se.  to. i.
2. ti. o. i.  ta. pi. te. ki. si. o. i.
3. i. tu. ka. i.  a. za. ta. i.

"Ephodas  naktištase  tōi | bhiōi  tápiδείωi | i(ν)  τύχαι
aคำābi.

'Ephodos erected [this statue] to the auspicious god, in good fortune.'

This rendering, which seems the only proper one, and which avoids more difficulties than any other, assumes either that the engraver omitted a short stroke in the fourth character of line 2, thus leaving it τα., instead of making it το.; or else that τα. πi. in Cypriote is equivalent to τα. ἔπι in ordinary Greek (to read it τα(.i) πίδείωi, and consider the divinity feminine, seems forbidden by the τωi in line 1—unless that is a mistake, and the offering is to Aphrodite). In the former case, ταπιδείωi is to be corrected to ταπιδείωi. Another view, which is apparently Deecke's, takes this group of characters as equivalent to τα ἔπι δεξιοφ [μέρει]; in which case the translation would be: 'Ephodos erected to the god the objects on (at? in?) the right hand [portion]:' namely, of the temple.

114. This number is here inserted, out of its order, as it is out of place in Deecke. The inscription is on a block of calcareous
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Cernola Collection.

stone, from Paleo-Paphos, where I first saw it. The inscription is in three lines (not two, as Deecke gives it), each 6 inches long; and perhaps is complete, though another line, or at least a character or two more, seems to be required by the sense. Characters 1½ to 1¼ inch high; plain, except that the last two in line 2, and the first two and the last one in line 3, are damaged.

1. ki. si. ka. se. Κίσσικας (or Ξίγας, or Ξίγας)
2. o. ti. no. to. ro. ὁ Τιμοδόρῳ
3. a. po. se. ia. . . . αφοσία. . . .

‘Kissikas (or Xichaas, or Xigas) the son of Timodoros, for expiation . . .’

CURIUM AND VICINITY.

43. (Hall, No. 33.) In the years that have elapsed since my first (necessarily hurried) reading of this inscription, the inscription has become plainer, by drying more thoroughly; and I have to change my former reading. The inscription is on the base of a statuette of calcareous stone, from the temple of Apollo Hylates, near Curium. Inscription 4½ inches long. Characters ½ inch high, all plain, except that the first and last are somewhat faint, and the plainly cut character that is here read as te. may be ni. or pu. Reads from left to right.

pa. i. na. le. o. te. se.

Φαίναλέωτης (or -οτης).

Proper name, probably genitive of the offerer, ‘Phainaleote.’ But it may be read as nominative, ‘Phainaleotes.’ Also, as Φαίναλέωνις or Φαίναλέοντας.

44. (Hall, No. 34.) Like the last, on the base of a statuette from the temple of Apollo Hylates, near Curium. Inscription now 2½ inches long, but must have been an inch longer toward the left, and included one character more toward the right. Characters ½ inch high; all plain, except that from the varying depth of the strokes it is doubtful whether the second character from the left is a division-mark or the character to. Reading from left to right (as most of the legible inscriptions from this place do), the characters are:

. . . i. | (or to.) va. re. pa. li. se. . . .

For which [Ἀτόλλωνι Σιω]: Εἴρησαλίνης is as good a conjecture as I can offer.

45. (Hall, No. 32.) On a pedestal of calcareous stone. Inscription in 4 lines, each one foot long, except the last, which is ¾ inches. Characters ¾ to 1¼ inches high; nearly all in the first line somewhat obscure, and the lower part of the last three in line 4 broken away. Otherwise plain, and the reading certain. My former reading of this inscription has to be corrected in sundry points. The stop at the end is a circle, not a straight mark.

1. a. ri. si. to. ko. ne. to. o. na. si. ri.
2. u. e. u. ka. sa. me. no. se. pe. ri. pa.
3. i. ti. to. i. pe. re. se. u. ku. i. u. ne. le.
4. ke. i. tu. ka. i.
With Voigt, I am inclined to think that the first 
and the last 
in line 3, should be corrected to 
, since they
lack only a lower stroke to make the latter reading. Without
this correction, the reading is:

'Αριστόγων τῶν Ὀνασίρι | ἐνεκάμενος περὶ πατὶ - | διὶ τῶν
Περσευτᾶται ἐν Ἑθῆ | κε (or ὑν Ἑθῆ - | κε) ἵ(ν) τυχαι.

'Aristogon, having vowed in company with [and] for his son
Persutas, in company with him offered [this] to Onasiris in good
fortune.'

With the emendation, the reading is:

'Αριστόγων τῶν Ὀνασίρι | μι(ν) ἐνεκάμενος περὶ πατὶ - | διὶ
tῶν Περσευτᾶται μι(ν) Ἑθῆ | κε ἵ(ν) τυχαι.

'Aristogon having vowed me concerning his son Perseutas
offered me to Onasiris in good fortune.'

Here μι or μιν is the acc. sing. of the first personal pronoun,
as in some of the Kythrea inscriptions.
The dative o. na. si. ri. occurs on two other Ceanola inscriptions,
and is shown to be an epithet of Apollo.

46 and 47. The votive armlets of Etevander, from the treasure
of Curium. The two inscriptions read the same, but one is 4
inches long, with characters $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high; the other is 3$\frac{1}{4}$ inches
long, with characters $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high. The characters are as plain
and fresh as when first cut—with a hammer and small chisel.
It is also plain that some false strokes made in cutting some of the
characters were hammered out by the engraver. On one of the
armlets, the character for se is turned in a direction opposite to
that in which it appears on the other. In one, the perpendicular
stroke of the character pa, goes from top to bottom, crossing the
horizontal strokes. On the other armlet the perpendicular stroke
appears only above the upper, and below the lower, horizontal
line, not crossing them, but leaving the space between them clear.

Read from left to right:

e. te. va. to. ro | to. pa. po. pa. si. le. vo. se.

'Ετεβά(ν)δρω τῶν Πάφω βασιλέως.

'Of Etevandros, king of Paphos.'

It may be further remarked that this Etevander king of Paphos
was one of those who sent his submission to the Assyrian Esarhaddon;
that these two armlets are of very fine gold, hammered
out from solid ingots, and show no wear on the inside, as they
would if they had been worn. They were doubtless votive
offerings only. Their weight is just two pounds avoirdupois.

48. On a fragment of calcareous stone. Inscription in 3 (not
2, as Deecke) fragmentary lines. Characters $4\frac{1}{4}$ to $3\frac{1}{4}$ inches
high, deeply cut, and plain, though the surface is much damaged.

1. ku.e. to. . . .
2. me. ki. . . .
3. pa (or, to.) . . .

Perhaps the lines are also fragmentary at the beginning.
Deecke's reading is all wrong except the first and last characters
of line 1. Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily.
49. Here Deecke is nearly all wrong. The inscription is in one fragmentary line, on a fragment of pedestal of calcareous stone, deeply cut. Characters 2 to 3 inches high, a little worn, but plain. Reads probably from left to right.

\[ \ldots pa.ti.sa.to.ro \ldots \]

(There are no division-marks, as Deecke represents.) Probably the genitive of a proper name ending in -\(\dot{\alpha}v\dot{\delta}p\omega\); but there is not enough to go farther with certainty.

50. This is, in all probability, on the base of one of several statuettes which bear a Cypriote inscription. They are all from the temple of Apollo Hylates; and consequently this would be out of its place here according to Deecke’s arrangement. The one which seems to me nearest this one is in one line, about half of it gone, but the remnant 2 inches long. Characters \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high, generally hard to read, and might easily get into the shape in which Deecke (after Siegismund) gives it. Reads from left to right.

\[ \ldots ke.to.te.a.po.lo.ni.\ldots \]
\[ \ldots \alpha\nu\varepsilon\eta[\underline{x}]e\ \tau\dot{o}(v)\delta\epsilon^{'}\\Lambda\pi\dot{o}(\lambda)\lambda\omega\nu\ldots \]
\[ \ldots offered this to Apollo.\ldots \]

51. This gem, which I first saw in Cyprus in 1875, is still a puzzle to me. Deecke’s reading:

\[ te.\ | sa.? \ | te.? \ | lo.ti. \ | mu. \ |

is wrong in putting in the first division-mark.

The “sa.” I am in doubt about. It may be nothing but a division-mark; but the division-mark and the “sa.” are not both there. Otherwise I cannot absolutely disagree with Deecke, except that I do not feel sure that it reads in the direction he takes it. Also, the character he calls “ti.” may be something else; \(ko\), or \(ka\), or even \(su\), for instance. The inscription is on a gem which is best figured in Cesnola’s “Cyprus,” Plate XLI. (XI. \(a\) of Cypriote gems); but there the first “?” of Deecke’s reading is poorly figured, giving undue prominence to the lower strokes, which can hardly be seen on the stone. The character may be \(ta\)., or \(to\). I have a strong feeling that the reading is

\[ te.ke.to.te.a.mu.ko.lo.\ |

where Deecke’s “sa.” becomes an imperfect \(ke\). (changing the position of reading), and letting his \(lo\). and \(mu\). exchange readings, as may easily be done in the case of characters in their position (which is +, and which \(\chi\), is doubtful). Then the reading would be:

\[ \eta[\underline{x}]e\ \tau\dot{o}(v)\delta\epsilon^{'}\ \Lambda\mu\nu\kappa\lambda\omega\; \]

but so much is doubtful that I dare not venture this with confidence. The \(\alpha\). here may be a Phoenician letter, which would partly agree with King’s conjecture (Cesnola’s “Cyprus,” p. 389). But I am not at all satisfied that King is thoroughly right in supposing the characters to be more like Numidian Punic than Cypriote.
52. On a terra-cotta tile, or rather, washing-board, such as is used in Cyprus to-day. Inscription made by the finger while the clay was soft. Near one end are the two characters, $3\frac{1}{2}$ and $5\frac{1}{2}$ inches high, respectively. Deecke is hardly right in the reading. Much rather it is ti. ko., though the last syllable may possibly be po.

Near the middle is also the character we. (neglected by Deecke), $1\frac{1}{2}$ inch high. Initials, or maker's marks, probably. (At this point, see also no. 79.)

**Amatus.**

55. This inscription I cannot certainly identify, but from all the reasons which I can bring to bear, I must conclude either that it is lost, or that it has been confounded with one from Golgoi, to be hereafter mentioned. If it is really from Amathus, and lost, I can do no better than confirm Deecke's reading:

... mi. pi.? ... 

the last (third) character wholly uncertain. It is to be noted, also, that the copy (in C. E. S. L. M. O. S. L. O. S. 8, no. 60) on which Deecke relies, and the only one extant, was made before the inscriptions could be read.

**Maroni (Marium ?).**

56. (Hall, No. 30.) On the alabaster vase (or other utensil), which has been figured in various places. Deecke's reading is right, correcting sundry previous mistakes. Especially it is to be noted that he is right about the syllable za. in line 2, which was read differently by others, myself included. All the strokes are there to make the character perfect. Characters in fine strokes, $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ inch high, plain. Reading from left to right.

1. pa. po. i. ke.
2. e. u. za. we. i. te.

Παφοι γε | εβάσφειτε.
‘Live well, ye Paphians.’

Probably the Paphians are worshipers of Paphia, rather than actual inhabitants of Paphos.

It should be stated that the so-called vase has no bottom, but that the article is carved with sides quite thin at the base, as if a horn or trumpet were aimed at.

**Golgoi.**

66. (Hall, No. 4) Bilingual. On a large block of calcareous stone.

Greek, one line, ΘΕΜΙΑΤ:

i.e., 'Of Themias.'

Cypriote portion: 3 lines, each $5\frac{1}{2}$ inches long, broken off at the ends. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ to $1\frac{1}{2}$ inch high.

1. ne. a. te. ro. wo. o....
2. ka. to. ti. (or si?), o. —?
3. to. i. pa. se. o. —? —?
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Cesnola Collection.

Too fragmentary to render with satisfaction; but Deecke is wrong in a number of points, as will appear on comparison. (The notation —? denotes a character of which traces are left, but undistinguishable.)

67. (Hall, No. 3.) On a large block of calcareous stone. Bilingual. Greek:
1. \textit{TIMODOPOU} \textit{AEIOU}
2. \textit{APIMOKIA} \textit{ARI}
3. \textit{EIPIATOIZ}

Which seems to mean that Timodorus bought for Drimokia (a local deity, apparently) offerings whose numbers or quantities are expressed in the characters at the end of the lines. The character at the end of the first word in the first line is a Cypriote \textit{se}. (=Σ final). The character at the end of line 2 is a Cypriote \textit{to}.; and that at the end of line 3 is a Cypriote \textit{we}., or else a Greek \textit{Z}.

Cypriote portion: two fragmentary lines. Characters 1 to 2 inches high; plain, except where they are broken away.
1. \textit{te.re}...
2. \textit{ta.pi.} (or \textit{o.})...

Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily.

Deecke is quite right, except that he has an \textit{ω} for \textit{o} in the first Greek line.

68. (Hall, No. 13.) This is the longest of the Cesnola inscriptions. Four lines, \(12\frac{3}{4}, 11\frac{3}{4}, 11\frac{1}{4},\) and \(12\frac{4}{4}\) inches long, respectively. Characters \(\frac{4}{8}\) to \(\frac{6}{8}\) inches high. Better cleaning has shown that the figure above the group, which was sometimes supposed to be a sphinx, sometimes an eagle, is a chariot (with wheel gone), drawn by four winged horses. This, unlike the lower parts of the sculpture, is not only in relief, but a relief so high as to possess a top, front, and rear view. The four horses' heads are seen from their front (the right-hand side of the sculpture), their backs and the hollow box of the chariot from above, and their hind-quarters, with the rear opening of the chariot, from their rear (the left-hand side of the sculpture). During the long time that has elapsed since this stone was exhumed, matters have become clearer; time bringing out the characters, like those of a palimpsest. Every character is now plain, except that (what I still consider) the last \(i\). in line 2 is partly broken away, so that there is room for Deecke's conjecture that it is \(\omega\). But it seems to me to be a plain \(i\);. it cannot be \(\textit{ke}\).

Deecke's \textit{po.}, in various places is an arbitrary reading. He may be right, but the character is everywhere an unmistakable \textit{po.}, as the engraver made it. Also, Deecke is wrong in supposing that there is no division-mark between the first \(ti\). and the following \(\textit{wa.}\) in line 1. In the last line, what I formerly read \(\textit{po.ro.po.} | o.i.\) I now see to be \(\textit{po.ro.ne.o.i.}\); what I took for a division-mark being only part of the \textit{ne}. Also, the first \(i\). in line 3 is not \(\textit{te.}\), as I once thought. The following is the inscription:
I. H. Hall,

1. ka. i. re. te. | ka. ra. si. ti. | wa. na. xe. | ka. po. ti. | we. po. me. ka. | me. po. te. sce. i. se. se. |
2. te. o. i. se. | po. ro. a. ta. na. to. i. se. | e. re. ra. me. na. | pa. ta. ko. ra. i. to. se. |
3. o. wo. ka. re. ti. | e. pi. si. ta. i. se. | a. to. ro. po. | te. o. i. | a. le. tu. ka. ke. re. |
4. te. o. i. | ku. me. re. na. i. pa. ta. | ta. a. to. ro. po. i. | po. ro. ne. o. i. | ka. i. re. te. |

I cannot see that Deecke's hexameters are clear, according to this, the true reading.

There is great latitude in the possibilities of transliteration and interpretation, but I do not yet find any result that is entirely satisfactory; nor can I agree with Deecke's forcing the reading of some of the characters, as I might do if his results were perfectly self-commending.

I can hardly help agreeing with Deecke's Καρστι-γάνας, in line 1, with the meaning he has explained of 'Lord of Cyprus,' but I would write it either Καρστι-γάνας, or the same (i.e., in two words) with the hyphen omitted. But there is a temptation to read it in other ways, as Χαράς ιθί, γανας ("For joy's sake come, O Lord!"); and then, instead of ποτι in the same line, to read ψωτι ('and to man let me speak a great thing,' etc. However, the following is a provisional rendering:

1. Χαίρετε Καρστι-γάνας κα ποτι, εἴπω μέγα μη ποι' ενίσθη.
2. Θεοίς πρό αθανάτοις ἐφεραμένα πά(ν)τα χώραι δῶς·
3. οὐ γάρ τι εἰπταῖς α(ν)θρώπω(ν) θεωί, ἀλλ' ἔνυχ' ἀν κηρ.
4. Θεωὶ κυμερήναι πά(ν)τα τὰ α(ν)θρώποι φρονεώι. Χαίρετε.

'Hail! Prince of Cyprus and Lord, I speak a great thing: Do not thou on an equality give to the country all things that are dear to the gods [who] before [it were] immortal; for in nothing of men (or, of man) mayest thou set thyself over the divinity, but to the divinity Fate has allotted to control all things that men think.'

The sentiment in the last two lines, and the relative position of Fate and Divinity, have a close parallel in Plato, Laws, 704, b. (this was pointed out to me by Prof. A. C. Merriam).

I forbear to give further renderings, which have more or less satisfactoriness. The main thing I wish here to insist on is the correctness of the syllables as above given. Even the broken place in line 2 is now clear, being shown, among other things, by the color which, originally spread over all the stone, is now preserved in the strokes of the letters, where the surrounding surface of the stone is worn down, and the surrounding color thus obliterated.

69. (Hall, No. 2.) In this inscription Deecke is right in reading the 13th character as "ke.," but it may be written ke., on his principles. Inscription on a pedestal (not altar) of calcareous
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Csenola Collection. 221

stone, such as abound in Cypriote remains, and are abundantly proved to be mere pedestals. Characters $\frac{1}{2}$ to $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high. Inscription in one line.

\textit{ti. mo. ta. ti. pa. to. \mid ti. ma. o. pa. pi. ia. ke. ti. mo. o. i. se.}

I see no reason for disagreeing with Deecke’s rendering, which is very happy, and deserves the thanks of all decipherers.

\textit{Τιμώ τα(ν) διφατο(ν) διμα(ν) Παφία(ν) γε διμα(ο)ίς.}

‘I honor the double-named, double-mothered Paphia with double songs.’

(For explanation of the new words, see Deecke, \textit{Nachträge zur Lesung d. epichor. Kyprisch. Inschrift.}, in Bezzenberger’s \textit{Beiträge zur Kunde d. indogerm. Sprachen}, vol. vi., p. 146, 147.)

70. (Hall, No. 14.) On the fragment (sawed-off top) of a pedestal of calcareous stone. Inscription in one line. Characters $1\frac{1}{4}$ to $1\frac{1}{2}$ inch high; very plainly cut, but the first one not easy to identify. I cannot believe that the inscription (from Golgoi) reads from left to right, nor that Deecke is right in calling the first character (his last) ‘vo.’ It seems to me to read

\textit{re. za. ti.}

\textit{ρέζαθι}

‘Do sacrifice.’

71. (Hall, No. 31.) On the lintel (pediment) of a tomb, not of marble, as I once thought (Trans. Amer. Or. Soc., vol. x., p. 215), but of the calcareous stone of the island. Inscription in one line, 3 feet 1$\frac{1}{4}$ inches long. Characters $\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 inch high; mostly plain, but some near the beginning obscured. One is broken away entirely, but it can be supplied with certainty. What I formerly read as \textit{u.}, and strongly insisted on, I now find, as the inscription comes out clearer by the effect of air and time, to be \textit{mi.\hspace{1em}}, as suggested by others. Also, just before the break in the stone, the ‘ne.’ of Deecke is plain; though perhaps I should not have seen it had he not indicated it.

\textit{e. ko. \mid e. mi. \mid a. ri. si. to. ke. re. te. se. \mid ka. me. ne. se. ta. ne. \mid ka. \mid si. ke. ne. to. i. \mid me. ma. na. me. no. i. \mid e. u. we. re. ke. si. a. se. \mid ta. sa. pa. i. \mid e. u. po. te. \mid e. we. re. xa. \mid}

\textit{’Εγώ ημὶ ’Αριστοκρῆς, κὰ μὲν ἔστασαν [καὶ] οἱ ἐνεργοὶ μεμνημένοι εὐπρεπείᾳ τάς παί ἐν ποτὲ ἐφερέσα.}

‘I am personal pronoun μὲν, in the accusative, is here to be especially noted.

72. (Hall, No. 1.) This is another inscription which has become perfectly legible in the lapse of time; with, also, the help of Deecke’s deciphering of some of the engraver’s faulty representations. Deecke is, however, wrong on several points, as the following will show. Inscription in two lines, on a piece of calcareous stone, with sculptured relief above it. One broken place is supplied in brackets. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{3}$ inch high.
1. to. o. na. si. ri. to. te. | to. na. [o. ne.] o. ne. te. ke. o. na. si. ti. mo. se. to. i.
2. te. o. i. | to. i. a. po. lo. ni. | ia. ra. | i. te. me. no. se. | i. tu. ka. i. ||

Τῶν Ὀνασίρι τὸ(v)δὲ τὸ(v) να[ον] ὁνίθηξε Ὀνασίτιμος τῶι | θεῶι τῶι Ἀπο(λ)λωνι ἰαρά i(v) τίμενος ἰ(ν) τίχαι ||

'To Onasiris Onasitimos offered this shrine; to the god Apollo he consecrated to the precinct in good fortune 3 [offerings].'

Here again occurs the dative o. na. si. ri., as an epithet of Apollo.

73. (Hall, No. 29.) On a sculptured fragment of calcareous stone, like the edge of a window. Characters deeply cut, ⅓ to 1 inch high. All plain. Inscription in 3 lines.
1. to. ti. o. se. to. wo. i.
2. no. a. i. sa.
3. e. ti. | θ | ||

Τῶν Δίου τῷ τοι- | νωι αἴσα | ἐτι ... 3.

'Zeus's portion of the wine, yet 3 measures.'

The kind of measure denoted by the character before the numeral, and combined with the latter's first stroke, is still unknown.

74. (Hall, No. 9.) On a piece of calcareous stone, with figures in relief. Inscription in 3 lines. Characters ⅔ to ⅔ inch high, all plain.
1. ti. ia. i. te. mi. | to. i. te. o.
2. to. a. po. lo. ni. | o. ne. te. ke.
3. u. tu. ka. i.

Assuming that the u. in line 3 was intended for mi., the last stroke being omitted by the engraver, the rendering is:

Διαϊθησίμε[ν] τῶι θεῶι | τῶι Ἀπο(λ)λωνι ονίθηξε | μι' i(v) τίχαι.

'Diayathemis offered me to the god Apollo in [good] fortune.'

Here the final s (as often a final or non-final n) is omitted in the proper name in line 1. Deecke takes the u. in line 3 as ι', i. e., σιν.

75. (Hall, No. 23.) On a fragment of calcareous stone, with a head and other portions of a human body in relief. Inscription in 3 lines, incomplete at the ends. Characters ⅔ to ⅔ inch high, all plain except at the broken end. Deecke's Roman type are not called for; nor is his dotted division line in line 2, which is not on the stone.
1. o. na. si. o. ro. | a. te (or, mi.) ... .
2. o. ne. te. ke. to. i. ti. ... .
3. to. a. po. lo. ni. | i. ... .

Ὀνασίωρο[φ] Ἀθη (or, Ἀμι) ... | ονίθηξε τῶι θε[ι] | τῶι Ἀπο(λ)λωνι i(v) τίχαι.

'Onasiorus [son of?] Αθη ... (or, Ami ...) offered to the god Apollo in [good fortune].'
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Cesnola Collection. 223

Deecke’s conjecture that the last character in line 1 may be ni, is in all probability wrong.

76. On the fragment of a base of calcareous stone, on which still remain the great toe and the next toe to it (with a sandal-strap between), of the left foot of a statue of about life size. The previous descriptions of this fragment are all wrong.

Inscription in two lines, imperfect at the ends. Characters ⅜ to 1¼ inch high, deeply cut; all plain, except some near the broken end; but all are certain. Deecke’s remark that te. occurs twice without the lower stroke is wrong. It occurs thus only once: namely, in the second line.

1. e.te. t. III a.ne.te.ke. . . .
2. ta.ve.i. ko.ne.ta.te.ne.a.po. . . .

The observing of the last character present in line 2, makes the reading differ somewhat from those previously given.

Ἔτει III ἀνέθηκε . . . | τα(ν) νεικόνα τα(ν)δε'ν Ἀπό[(λ)]-λωνι (or -νε). . . .

‘In the year 3 . . . offered this image to Apollo . . .’

The ne, in line 2 I feel obliged to consider as final ν of ἰν, with the i elided. The construction is paralleled in the Bronze Tablet; but it is not certain whether the case following should be the dative or accusative.

77. The vase with this inscription was in England in 1872, but it has not appeared since, and it never reached the New York Museum. I have to depend on two sources for this reading: one a manuscript book of Gen. di Cesnola’s, made in Cyprus, where it occurs with the note “Vaso di alabastro e sopra un piedestallo in pietra trovato nel Tempio a Golgos.” The other is in a like manuscript book, with photographs (taken by Gen. di Cesnola personally in Cyprus), likewise made by him, and in the possession of Mr. Hiram Hitchcock. This last is probably the original from which the copy in Cesnola’s Cyprus was taken. In this latter book the object is figured, and appears to be a cylindrical box, 1¼ inch high, and 1½ inch in diameter, with plain mouldings at the top. Inscription around the box, at about the middle of its height. Characters apparently ⅛ inch high.


Perhaps the first character, ka., is an error in the copy for τι. Deecke’s supplying an additional α. in his reading, and his leaving us to suppose that the copy is incomplete, are mistakes. Whether the copy is all right or not, the whole inscription (a complete one) is represented in the copy.

Τιμαλκος (or, Γαμαλκος) Ζωτης[ς] ἀνέθηκε Ἀπό[(λ)]λωνι.

‘Timakeos Zotes (?) offered [this] to Apollo.’

78. (Hall, No. 5.) Also 99, 115; for Deecke gives this inscription three times, as if it were three different inscriptions. Schmidt (Sammlung, xii. 5; xvii. 4) likewise gives this inscription twice, as two different ones, in his plates, but only once in his text. In
the second (above-cited) place he puts it upside down, as Deecke also does in his No. 99. In his No. 115 he was misled by a faulty copy.

Inscription on fragment of calcareous stone, in one fragmentary line. Characters 1 inch high, all but one of them partly broken away, but all of them certain.

... po. lo. mi. | te. o...
...  'A] πο(λ)λωρι Σεω...
... 'to the god Apollo...'

79. The gem here noted is figured in Cesnola's "Cyprus," p. 327 (Plate XXVI), as if from Curium, and found among the temple treasure, though no record of it otherwise is made in the book. From this representation it is copied in Perrot and Chipiez's Histoire de l'Art dans l'Antiquité, as if from Curium. The origin of Deecke's account is Pierides's article in Trans. Soc. Bibl. Archæol., vol. v., p. 92, no. 7 (in Schmidt it is xxi. 9, not xxi. 8, as Deecke cites it), and probably Pierides is correct. If so, the copy in Cesnola's "Cyprus" was made from a drawing in Cesnola's possession, and is put where it is by oversight. Further, if Pierides is correct, the stone was never owned by di Cesnola, but was found near Golgoi, and came into the hands of Mr. Stini Cristofoli, of Larnaca, who sold it to Mr. Hoffman, of Paris. I have not yet been able to discover the facts accurately; and this statement must stand till further correspondence and light. Inscription on a red jasper seal in gold setting; intaglio, with figure of a mare suckling a colt. Reads from right to left, but the impression would read from left to right. Characters 1/4 inch high.

ku. pa. ra. ko. ra. o.
Kupragoros.

'Of Kupragoras.'
Owner's name.

80. On a fragment of a pedestal (probably) of calcareous stone. Inscription in one line. Characters 1 to 1 1/2 inch high; all plain but the first, which is somewhat damaged, and might be mistaken for an o. Deecke's note following his reading of the inscription is all wrong.

me. no. to. ro. se.
Mnrodoros.

'Menodorus.'

81. (Hall, No. 25.) On a terra-cotta disk, with grooved edge, colored red. Inscription in two lines; characters 1/2 to 1 inch high.

1. pa. tu. si. o.
2. :: ::

Φα(τ)ρασίω | 4.

'Of Phantasios, 4.'
Probably a counter or check.

82. (Hall, No. 26.) On a votive tablet of calcareous stone, with
many figures in relief. Inscription covered only a small space, but it is now all obliterated except two characters, each \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high.

... o. pa. ...

Too fragmentary to render.

83. (Hall, No. 27.) On a fragment of calcareous stone, with figures in relief. Inscription formerly contained at least two lines, of which the upper one is broken away, so as to leave only illegible portions. Characters \( \frac{3}{8} \) to \( \frac{1}{2} \) inch high; plain.

\( \alpha. ti. pa. mo. o. ta. o. pa. \ldots \)

\( ' M(v) \tau i\varphi \alpha \mu \omega(v) \circ \Delta \alpha \circ \varphi \alpha \ldots \)

'Antiphamon the son of Daophia...'

Deecke is wrong in considering the so. "sicher," or the pa. at the end "unsicher."

84. On a block of calcareous stone, probably the fragment of a pedestal (no "relief fragment," apparently, as Deecke styles it). Two fragmentary lines. Characters 1 to \( 1 \frac{1}{4} \) inch high, somewhat obscured, but quite legible.

1. ... to. o. na. si. ri. —?...

2. ... \( \tau \omega. \) Oasipri... | ... \( \alpha \ldots \)

"... to Onasiris."

The character which Deecke denotes by an interrogation point is so far gone (beginning just at the break of the stone) as to be wholly irrecoverable. It may have been \( ka.\), \( ti.\), \( to.\), or one of several others. Only a hint at a stroke at the top is perceptible.

85. (Hall, No. 12.) On a square block of calcareous stone, probably the pedestal of a small statuette, around the hollow for which is the inscription, on three sides. The fourth side never contained any part of the inscription; and the inscription is, to all appearance, complete, though Deecke thinks it possibly otherwise. Characters \( \frac{1}{2} \) to 1 inch high. I feel doubt only about the reading of the first character.

\( si. ta. mu. ko. i. | a. o. ma. mo. | pa. to. re. \)

\( \Sigma i i a \mu \chi \varphi \iota a \circ \mu \mu \mu \mu \omega \pi \alpha \tau \omega r. \)

'His grandmother's heir [offers, or thanks] to the secret goddess.'

86. On a thin piece of calcareous stone, formerly not found by me, but now both found and familiar. Inscription in 6 (not 5, as Deecke gives it) lines, of which only lower portions of the first—with a few of its characters complete—remain. Characters of fine strokes; \( \frac{1}{4} \) to \( \frac{3}{8} \) inch high. All the lines incomplete at the end.

1. \( ke. \alpha. \alpha. \circ. \omega o ? ne. ? \bullet \bullet ta ? mo. \bullet ta ? mo. \ldots \)

2. \( ta. po. ro. \circ. re. mo. se. ta. mo. se. ta. mo. \ldots \)

3. \( tu. ra. \omega o. ne. o. to. \alpha. sa. ta. mo. se. ta. mo. \ldots \)

4. \( va. la. ka. ni. o. e. ko. — o. na. mo. \ldots \)

5. \( u. po. ro. ti. si. o. se. e. ko. \circ \bullet \bullet \circ o. na. mo. \ldots \)

6. \( a(\circ i \circ). ta. no. e. ko. \circ \bullet \bullet \circ o. na. mo. \bullet po. ta. sa. \ldots \)

vol. xi. 29
Evidently a list of allotments and contributions; but not enough remains to permit a certain interpretation. The following is only provisional:

1. Ἔνα δᾶμος δᾶμος...  
2. Τάφρων τέρπεις δᾶμος δᾶμος...  
3. Θορμόν οὐδεὶς δᾶμος δᾶμος...  
4. Αὐλαχάνιος ἔσω — ὁνά μω...  
5. Ἀφροδίσιος ἔσω ||| ||| ὁνά μω...  
6. Ἀδάφος ἔσω ||| ||| ὁνά μω ναὶ βιώτας...

'Land for religious uses (?) (or, of the lifeless (?) [which] the district, district...

The foundation of the trenches, which the district, district...

The ways of the doors, which the district, district...

I Valcanios 10 my purchase...

I Aphrodiosis 6 my purchase...

I Athanou 6 my purchase [and?] herdsman...

But many other renderings are possible in various portions; the o. na. mo. may be ὁνά ὁμο(ν).

Several of Deecke’s suppositions are wrong; but a comparison will show them sufficiently.

87. (Hall, No. 11.) This inscription, after much study, I consider quite despair; it is so worn where the characters are not plain. It is known to be on a fragment of calcareous stone, with a relief of a created serpent and a dolphin, but it is not generally known that the fragment is a piece of a huge vase, or purifying vessel. Characters ¼ to ⅜ inch high. Inscription in 5 lines.

1. ku. ne. mo. o. se. ia. to. te.  
2. e. e? a? me( or a?) se. ti.  
3. * * * * * a? * ne? to. i.  
4. se. ti. ni? | ne. ro. * * * te. pa.  
5. te? se? * se. ke. to. (or ta?) to.

The vase was doubtless an offering to Apollo; but I dare not venture farther in interpretation than the first line, which seems to mean Κυνέμος [?] (or Κυνέμος[ν]) οὔχι μόνον (or τάξις τάξις (or τάξις τάξις). That is either 'Cunemos' or 'Cunemon' or 'My wife consecrated this.'

88. This inscription, and the alabaster vase on which it occurs, reached England in 1872, but have been traced no farther. A copy of the inscription is to be seen (and the authority therefor) in Schmidt’s Sammlung, xvii. 5. The authority for the copy here given is the manuscript book by di Cesnola, made in Cyprus in 1870, and now owned by Mr. Hiram Hitchcock. The vase is figured in that book, with part of the inscription on it. The vase has a very broad rim, flaring downwards, two small solid ears, and a single line of round moulding about the middle. Just above and below this line, respectively, are the two lines of the inscription, which run quite around the vase. Each line apparently about 5 inches long. Characters apparently ¼ inch high. It is not certain where the lines begin, but I give them as in di Cesnola’s copy:
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Cesnola Collection. 227

1. te.li.me.to.yo. ko.o.ta.to.pe.wa.sa.
   || to.po.ra.
2. xe.lo.ro.se.lo.li.to.pe.pa.ma. ka.te.ti.po.si.ro.ko.to.o.
   pe.wa.ni or e.?) a. ke.

I also give (Birch's) copy from Schmidt (l. c.):
1. to.li.me.to.yo.to.ko.a.te.yo.te.se.ko.o.ta.te.pe.wa.se.
   || to.po.ro.
2. xe.lo.ro.se.lo.li.to.pe.pa.zu. ka.te.ti.po.si.ra.ko.to.o.
   wo.ni.e.ko.

It should be added that di Cesnola's figure of the alabastron
shows also a possibility that the first (and even the second) ko.
in line 1 may be either ii., or xa., or zu.; and that perhaps the
me. should be read as e. There is also a doubt whether the pe.
should not be read ne., in each case; and possibly, also, whether
the lo. should not be read as pa.

But, as Deecke suggests, a comparison with the original is
greatly to be desired.

89. (Hall, No. 21.) On a fragment of calcareous stone, with
relief of figures in procession. Inscription in two fragmentary
lines, 2 3/4 and 3 1/2 inches long, respectively. Characters 1/3 inch
high; those at the two ends of the upper line, with those in the
middle and at the left end of the lower line, somewhat obscure.
1. . . . te.na.pa.sa.re.se.i. ka.a. . . .
2. . . . o.to.ro (or i.).to (or ta.).po.te.wa.o.i. . . .

Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily. Deecke's interroga-
tion-point in line 1 is a mistake. No character was ever there.

90. 112. (Hall, No. 8.) This inscription Deecke gives twice
(under the above numbers), as if two different inscriptions. It
was formerly a great puzzle, but I have been able to make it all
out except where the stone is actually broken away. Inscription
in one line around three sides of a marble (not alabaster) pedes-
tal; portions on the sides 1 3/4, 2 1/4, and 1 1/4 inches long, respectively.
Characters 1/4 inch high, in all stages of legibility. The division
marks here added show the ends of the first two sides.

   a.na.su.se.a. * * * * to. | te.pa.to.a. ia.ro.se.ma.te.ka.
   ne.to. | a.po.lo.ni. || | ||
   'Anássas 'A. . . . τόδε παντο(ν)τω(ν) ἀ ἰκραν'σήμα Ἡ ἤθαν
   τῷ Ἀπόλλωνι || | ||

   'Of the lady A—— this token of all things which they con-
secrated, they laid up to Apollo, 8 [in number].'

91. On a fragment of calcareous stone, with figures in relief.
Inscription in two lines, fragmentary at each end. Characters 1/4
to 3/8 inch high, much worn, but legible.
1. . . . pa.ro.te.ta.wo.to. . . .
2. . . . a.o. || na.mi. . . .

The numeral in the second line appears to me unmistakable;
not zo. or no., as Deecke suggests.

Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily.
92. On a small fragment of calcareous stone; probably a piece of an incense-box. Inscription in two fragmentary lines, 1¼ and 1½ inch long, respectively. Characters ½ to ⅛ inch high, mostly damaged, but quite legible.

1. . . . o.ta.te.o . . .
2. . . . pu.ta.a.pi (or o.) . . .

Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily.

93. On a fragment of a pedestal of calcareous stone. Inscription in two fragmentary lines, the longer 9 inches in length, the shorter with only one character. Characters ½ to ⅛ inch high.

1. . . . sa.ta.si.ta.mo.se,e.mi.se.i.se . . .
2. . . . ka.

. . . Στασιδάμος ἦμι . . . (the rest is too fragmentary to render.)

‘. . . Stasidamos am I . . .’

Deecke’s representation of Schmidt’s error is correct. But the first line is incomplete at each end, and Deecke’s second proper name is wrong for another reason than that which he mentions. Two more characters than he gives are legible in the first line.

94. I find nothing in the collection that corresponds to this, nor have I ever seen anything like it. It is probably some inscription which I have looked at otherwise, or else one that is lost.

95. (Hall, No. 22.) On a disk of calcareous stone, most likely the foot of a vase. Inscription in a circle. Characters ¼ to ⅛ inches high, plainly but carelessly cut; two of them partially broken away, and the others not easy to identify.

e.a? a.ia.so.ve.lo. Perhaps: ε showDialog α αιδ σα φελων(y).

‘Having taken what provisions are thine, have done.’

96. (Hall, No. 18.) On the broken-off handle of a prafericulum, of calcareous stone. Inscription in one line, 3½ inches long. Characters ¼ inch high, much worn and almost illegible, but the reading, formerly so puzzling, is now certain; the difference being made by exposure to the air.

e.ro.se | te.ke.to.a.po.lo.ni.

’Ερως Ζηκε τῶ Ἀπόλλωνος.

‘Eros (or Heros) offered [it] to Apollo.’

97. (Hall, No. 20.) On a small helmeted head of calcareous stone. Inscription in one line, around the helmet (or cap), 4 inches long. Characters ¼ to ⅛ inches high. In my former publication I inadvertently omitted the division-mark. The lines in that representation show the folds or joinings of the cap or helmet.

a.ra.a | na.o.

’Αρα α Ναος.

‘The vow of Naos.’ Or, disregarding the division-mark (which Deecke puts in the wrong place), ’Αρα Ἀράω, “The vow of Anao.”
98. (Hall, No. 10.) On a small pedestal of calcareous stone, with sculptured relief on two sides. Inscription in one line, 4\frac{1}{2} inches long. Characters \frac{1}{4} inch high.

\textit{Lo} \textit{ti} \textit{pa} \textit{ia} \textit{po} \textit{i} \textit{i} \textit{na} \textit{te} \textit{to}.

\textit{Λω(ν)τι βατιν ποιν αδερο.}

'To a willing one it is pleasant to do small favors.'

99. This is the same as No. 78.

100. To the authorities cited by Deecke for this, add: Cесnola's "Cyprus," plate 3, No. 12.

On the rounded side of a pedestal of calcareous stone. Inscription in one fragmentary line, 10 inches long, fragmentary at the end. Characters \frac{3}{4} to 1\frac{1}{4} inches high; all plain except the fifth, seventh, and eighth, which are somewhat obscured.

\textit{ti} \textit{ae} \textit{mi} \textit{se} \textit{va} \textit{ta} \textit{ki} . . .

\textit{Διαςεµµυ} . . . (the rest is uncertain).

Deecke's remark about "einige zufällige Ritze" is all a mistake.

101. On a block of calcareous stone. Inscription above two rude representations of altars; in two fragmentary lines, much defaced. Lines (as they now are) 9\frac{3}{4} and 2\frac{1}{4} inches long, respectively. Characters \frac{1}{4} to \frac{3}{4} inch high.

1 . . . \textit{te} \textit{p} \textit{e} \textit{i} \textit{p} \textit{e} \textit{e} \textit{u} \textit{a} \textit{te} \textit{mo} \textit{to} \textit{te} \textit{se} . . . \textit{te} \textit{ke} \textit{p} \textit{i} \textit{tu} \textit{ka}.

2 . . . \textit{ma} . . . \textit{e} \textit{mi} \textit{te} \textit{sa} . . .


' . . . to the god Eudamodotes offered . . . in good fortune . . . ' (the rest is uncertain).

102. This object went to England and was copied there, but seems never to have reached America. It is here copied from Gen. di Cесnola's manuscript note-book. Inscription in one line, on a cylindrical alabastron (or alabaster vase), which has a downward-flaring rim and small solid ears. Vase 11\frac{1}{4} inches high. Inscription in one vertical line, below one of the ears; apparently 2\frac{1}{4} inches long. Characters apparently \frac{1}{8} inch high.

\textit{ti} \textit{pa} \textit{se} \textit{i} \textit{ti} (or \textit{nu}) \textit{to} \textit{te}.

A copy in Schmidt's \\textit{Sammlung} (Taf. xix. 4), there attributed to Dr. Birch, omits the second \textit{ti}., and reads

\textit{ti} \textit{pa} \textit{se} \textit{p} \textit{a} \textit{to} \textit{te},

which Deecke follows. The character here given as \textit{se} is a little doubtful, since in one of di Cесnola's manuscript copies it looks much like a mutilated \textit{i}. Yet in his other copy it is a plain \textit{se}. In the circumstances, the reading is a little uncertain. But it seems to be

\textit{Διφασθείτι τόδε (or, τό(ν)δε).} 'This [is an offering] to the serpent-formed;' or else it may be considered a present to a human person whose proper name is \textit{Διφαςθείης}, or the like.

103. (Hall, No. 7.) On the lobe of a votive ear of calcareous
stone (not terra-cotta, as I formerly thought), colored red. This ear (as well as the next number) is a right ear. It is much smaller, also, than the next. Inscription $\frac{1}{4}$ inch long. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{3}{4}$ inches high; the strokes pretty plain, but the shapes of some of the characters a little obscure.

ko (or po.). i. to. ta. ko (or po.).

Meaning uncertain.

104. (Hall, No. 6.) On the lobe of a votive ear (right ear) much larger than the preceding, of calcareous stone, colored red. Inscription $\frac{1}{2}$ inch long. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{3}{4}$ inch high, quite plain.

to. po. to. e.

Meaning uncertain.

105. On a fragment of calcareous stone, with bas-relief, with horses’ legs remaining. Inscription in two fragmentary lines, showing the ends only. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high; plain.

1. ... wa.
2. ... lo. te. ta.

Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily.

106, 116. (Hall, No. 28.) This inscription also Deecke has given twice, as if two inscriptions. On a fragment of calcareous stone, with relief of woman and child. Inscription an end-fragment, $1\frac{1}{4}$ inches long. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high; the last one plain, the others broken, but pretty certain.

... a$\ddot{e}$. te. na.

Too fragmentary to render.

107. On a sculptured fragment of calcareous stone, with portion (the bow?) of a boat, and two sailors. Inscription in two fragmentary lines. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high.

1. ... ti. to. me.
2. ... ke.

Too fragmentary to render. Deecke’s reading is wrong in every character.

108. On a piece of calcareous stone, from the base of a statue. Inscription in one line, 8 inches long, apparently complete. Characters $2\frac{1}{4}$ to $2\frac{1}{2}$ inches high, all plain.

to. no. ke.

Purport uncertain.

109. (Hall, No. 15.) On a fragment of a heavy vase of calcareous stone. Inscription in one fragmentary line, 6 inches long. Characters 1 inch high.

... to. u. zo. mo. ko (or po.).

Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily. Deecke’s remark about my having published this upside down was taken from my own discovery and note of the fact. Every one else had taken it in the same way.

110, 111. These I have not found; but I suspect they are other copies of inscriptions which appear elsewhere herein.
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Cesnola Collection. 231

112. This is the same as No. 90, which see.

113. This, like others already mentioned, seems never to have come from England to America. I copy from Gen. di Cesnola's MS. book, above-mentioned. Inscription on fragment of little vase of calcareous stone, from Golgoi (not of uncertain locality, as Deecke thinks). Two lines. Measurement not known.
1. ti.te.ro (or ra.). ro.se.o. — ? — ?
2. se? le .pa. — ? — ?
Uncertain whether the lines are fragmentary; and too fragmentary to render.

114. See above, among inscriptions from Paleó-Paphos.

115. Same as No. 78, which see.

116. Same as No. 106, which see.

117-119. These are inscriptions on lamps, already sufficiently published by me as to their form. As to the reading, I purpose to give them, with others of a similar sort, at some future time. By themselves alone, these three would present only a fragmentary view; and they need all the others for their elucidation.

Pyla.

121. On the convex side of a fragment of a great vessel of calcareous stone. Inscription in two lines, 11 and 2 inches long, respectively; the end of the first and the beginning of the second being broken away. Perhaps the two lines are parts of an original single line that surrounded the vessel, with the ends lapping, like a spiral. Characters \( \frac{1}{2} \) to 1\( \frac{1}{2} \) inch high; all plain, except that two at each broken end are damaged.
1. ti.mo.to.re.te.se.to.ma. ki.ri.o.se. o.ne...
2. ... se.se. ||

Dyce's reading and transliteration have several mistakes. His note on the appearance of the characters and their possible meanings, with its other matter, is all wrong.

‘Τιμοδορητῆς τῷ Μαγιρίῳ ὁν[Σηκε . . . ] καὶ σης . . .’
Timodoretetes to Magirios (or, the son of Magirius?) offered . . . 4.’

Other inscriptions, Greek and Cypriote, seem to show that the insertion of the second se. in line 1 is a mistake of the engraver. Magirios, Mageiros, or Mageirios (i.e. cook) was an epithet of Apollo.

Karpass (or Karpasso).

142. (Hall, No. 17.) On the edge of a lamp of red terra-cotta, with figure of Silenus (?) or Bes (?). Inscription 2 inches long. Characters \( \frac{1}{2} \) to \( \frac{3}{4} \) inch high; all very plain; made while the clay was soft.

pi.lo. ti.mo.

Φιλοτιμος.

‘Of Philotimos.’
Owner's name.
The above list, I believe, finishes the New York inscriptions treated by Deecke. The following are inscriptions in the diCesnola Collection in New York which I believe are hitherto unpublished. The numbers here given are only provisional.

GOLGOI.

1. On the top of a seat, or foot-stool, of calcareous stone, which is figured in a cut on p. 159 of Cesnola’s “Cyprus.” On the side of the stool is a Chimera, between two large rosettes. Looking at the cut just referred to, the inscription, if represented, would be on the top, and upside down to the spectator. Inscription in eleven lines, cut with the characters inclosed in irregular or imperfect squares, formed by the crossing of horizontal and perpendicular incised lines. Characters \( \frac{1}{4} \) to \( \frac{3}{8} \) inch high, in all stages of preservation and defacement. Space occupied by the inscription, \( 7 \times 9 \) inches.

The first three rows from the top have each seven squares or characters; the rest, six each. There are a number of empty squares on the left. A crack across the stone (the stool is hollow, as if formed of three slabs, though it is in one piece) has damaged some of the characters. As here given, the inscription is supposed, like the rest of the Golgoi inscriptions, to read from right to left.

| 1. | ki. | lo(or ke?) | za. | ma. | po. | si? | si. |
| 2. | pi. | le. | wo. | ka. | la(or mi?). | i. | —? |
| 3. | le. | e(or tu?). | ti. | ku. | ne. | —? | —? |
| 4. | * | o. | mi. | pa. | se. | * |
| 5. | it | a? | ki(or la?). | a. | le. | so. |
| 7. | —? | ka? | i. | ta. | wa. | —? |
| 8. | it | * | ma. | pa(or lo?). | ni. | mo. |
| 9. | ia? | * | —? | le? | i. | ma(or ku?). |
| 10. | si(or ka?). | mo. | ka. | ma. | ia? | mo. |
| 11. | po. | re. | a. | ku(or ma?). | * | mo. |

Stars (as elsewhere) are used to mark places where the character is wholly obliterated; a dash, with interrogation point (—?), to denote that there are undistinguishable remains of a character. The simple interrogation point expresses doubt, merely.

Too uncertain and fragmentary to render.

2. On the right shoulder of a statue of calcareous stone, with cup in one hand and a dove in the other, figured in Cesnola’s “Cyprus,” on page 132. Inscription in one curved line, \( 2 \times 1 \) inches long; the beginning perhaps wanting. Characters \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high, all of them nearly obliterated, except two, of which one is partially defaced.

ta.se, pa.pi. a.se.
Tās Ἰαρπίας.
"Of Paphia."
3. On the arm of a statue of calcareous stone, figured (heliotyped) in vol. i., plate III., No. 5, of the "Descriptive Atlas of Cypriote Antiquities in the Cesnola Collection." Inscription in one line, 4½ inches long. Characters ⅛ to ¼ inch high; somewhat obscured, but perfectly legible.


'Εγώ Ταμιγόρας ἦμι'.

'I am of Tamigoras.' Probably the engraver made a mistake in the spelling, and the name should read Τιμαγόρας, or 'of Timagoras.'

Probably a votive inscription; else, but not so likely, either the artist's name, or the name of the original of the statue.

4. On a block of calcareous stone; perhaps part of a pedestal. Inscription in one line, 5½ inches long; uncertain whether complete or not. Characters ¼ to ½ inch high, not easily identified. No reading thus far obtained is satisfactory. It is thought better to subjoin a cut to attempt Roman syllables.

5. On the edge of the fragment of a disk of calcareous stone, on whose front was carved a human face. One character, 1½ inch long.

α.

Purport uncertain.

6. On the curved border of an ornamented block of calcareous stone, apparently a fragment of a sarcophagus. Inscription 3 inches long, fragmentary at both ends. Characters ¼ inch high.

... e.ι.ζ.π.ε.τε... ...

Too fragmentary to render satisfactorily.

I have some reason for supposing that this inscription has been supposed to come from Amathus, and that it is really the one represented by Deecke as No. 55.

CURIUM.

7. On the base of a crouching statuette of calcareous stone, from the temple of Apollo Hylates, near Curium. Inscription in one line, all round the base of the object; obliterated in two places; 9 inches in entire length. Characters ⅛ to ¼ inch high; generally quite legible. Reads from left to right.

* * * * * * to.τε.α.πο.λο.μι.τε.ο.* * * * o (or mo., or pi.).

i.a. (or possibly ku., or ma.).τε.σι.πα.τε.λο.ωνε (or pa.).ια (or ra.).ι.πι. (or possibly o.).σε.πα.τε. *

... το(ν)δε Απολ(λ)ωνι Σελήνη (the remaining characters thus far offer no satisfactory reading).

(At this point see Deecke's No. 50, above.)
8. On the base of a crouching statuette, of calcareous stone, from the same place as the last. Inscription all gone but one character, \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high.

\[ \ldots \text{i} (or, perhaps, a mutilated \( \text{ka} \)). \]

Doubtless fragment of a votive inscription to Apollo.

9. On the neck of a pitcher of red terra-cotta. Inscription incised after baking; \( 1\frac{1}{4} \) inch long; all plain, except that one character is a little obscured, but yet quite legible. Characters about \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high. Reads from left to right.

\[ \text{iα. le. pe. mo.} \]

\[ \text{\'Ιαλεπήμως} \]

'Of lalephemos.'

Owner's name.

10. On a cylinder of hematite, \( \frac{1}{6} \) inch high and \( \frac{7}{16} \) inch diameter, with a hole through it lengthwise, in the usual fashion of cylinder seals. Inscription in 6 characters, \( \frac{3}{8} \) to \( \frac{5}{8} \) inch high, around a part of the cylinder, near the upper end. A cut is given of the inscription, which shows the uncertainty that attaches to the reading of the first two characters. The first one is immediately below the second, following the space available, as sometimes appears in other inscriptions. The figures on the cylinder are the following: Directly below the inscription is a dog, running at full speed, with open mouth and extended tongue; and tail curved up forwards above his back. But he is running down the length of the cylinder, and thus seeming, when the cylinder is held so as to read the inscription, as if hanging head downwards. He is following a human figure, who stands next to the right, facing to the right. This figure, like the other standing figures, is \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high, as high, nearly, as the length of the cylinder allows. He is apparently bearded, his arms are little more than stumps, and his dress is a very short frock, and hardly distinguishable. His head is in profile, and the feet are turned to the right, but the body generally appears in a front view. The next figure, facing the right, is seen wholly in profile; it is a human figure, slender, with apparently an animal's head (dog's?) a hint at a very small curled tail, the arms hanging in front of the body, and the hands carrying some indistinguishable object that has the shape of an S, with the top curve interrupted on its side. Next (to the right) is a human figure much like the first, but no beard (apparently), his body seen in front view, but head in profile and turned to the left, and his feet also turned to the left. His arm on the left (that is, left considering the order of objects on the cylinder, but the figure's right arm) is merely indicated by a stump; but the other arm bends horizontally at the elbow, and the hand holds an antelope, or chamois-horned animal, suspended by the hind legs, with its back towards the human figure that holds it. Next is a fat, flying bird, whose body, tail, and neck stretch lengthwise of the cylinder, as if we were looking at its back. Its (large) head is turned to the right. Its wings are small, its tail large and out-
spread. That completes the round of the cylinder. The inscription is above the dog, bird, and antelope. It seems as if the interpretation of the scene were that the man with the antelope is returning from a hunt, while the others are meeting him; the dog following the latter, and the bird flying away. The inscription is as follows:

that is, either *we.ko.na.e.ro.ti.*, or *ta.xe.na.e.ro.ti.*

The difficulty in the first reading is that the upper stroke of the first character is disjoined, and seems to belong to the next character, and improperly to be taken as a part of the first. Also, the position of the character is at right angles to that which we should expect. Also, no rendering appears satisfactory. The easiest one suggested is *φων* ὁ Ἐρωτή, 'Willing in things which belong to Love.'

The difficulty in the other reading is that the character *xe* wants its middle stroke, for which there would hardly be space, and which is sometimes almost vanishing. We do not, in this reading, avoid having two characters at right angles with the rest, but they turn the corner properly, which is not the case with the other reading. I therefore incline to the latter reading; and the best I can do with it is the following, which comes easily from the syllables:

*Τὰ ἔινα Ἐρωτή*, 'Things strange to Love;' or *Τὰ ἔινα ἐπρο(ν)τί*, 'Things strange to a wanderer.'

This cylinder is quite unique, as no other is known with a Cypriote inscription of more than a detached character or two.

A few other cylinders of hematite, found with the one just described, have one or more Cypriote characters upon them, as follows:

11. Hematite cylinder, 1 inch long, ½ inch diameter. Figures: a standing robed figure, shoulders and arms in front view; head, robe from the waist down, and feet in profile, turned to the right, forearms bent up from the elbows; above the left (or right from the spectator's point of view) hand, the Phœnician ball and crescent. Head of this figure furnished with abundant hair, and a quene turning up behind. In front, or to the right, of this figure, at the top, an antelope, with head down as if to graze; below, a rude lion; and between them, above the lion's back and below the antelope's hind legs, the Phœnician ornamental star or sun, composed of one larger ball, and eleven smaller balls or dots around it. To the right of these figures a running antelope, running lengthwise of the cylinder, downwards, its back towards the lion and first-mentioned antelope, and its head turned to look back. Horns very conspicuous. Between the haunch and the neck is the Cypriote character *pa*., ½ inch high. Purport uncertain.
12. Hematite cylinder, \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch long, \( \frac{1}{8} \) inch diameter. Figures as follows: Robed human figure, with wings stretched up, stumps for arms, face obscure, but apparently faced to the right. At the left of this figure is the head (and horns) of an antelope, as if the animal were lying on the ground, with its body concealed behind the human figure. (At the left of this figure is the inscription.) Next to the right, at top, a buffalo, running; below, an antelope standing, with neck and head stretched up, as if looking at the bull and the next figure to be mentioned. The next figure is a winged quadruped, with head and neck more like a peacock's than anything else. The body seems, on comparison with the figures on other cylinders, to be that of a lion. Above this two ornaments, each like Hogarth's line of beauty with spirals added at the ends. Between this figure and the first mentioned are the Cypriote characters, as follows:

At top, to the left of the figure first mentioned, and to the right of the upper one of the ornaments last mentioned, is the character \( \text{ta.} \), \( \frac{3}{4} \) inch high. But the recurrence of this character as an ornament on objects lately found in Greece, where it cannot be writing, makes me suspect its meaning here. Below, just in front of the beak of the winged quadruped last mentioned, and above the horns of the antelope's head first mentioned, is the character \( \text{lo.} \), \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high.

At the bottom, between the fore-feet of the winged quadruped and the antelope's head, the character \( \text{pu.}. \), \( \frac{1}{2} \) inch high.

13. On the fragment of a silver bowl, with designs and figures in repoussé work, from the temple-treasure of Curium. Two inscriptions, one which may be either Phoenician or ancient Greek, letters indented from the outside, and to be read therefore on both sides, \( \text{K} \text{i}' \text{A} \text{T} \) or \( \text{K} \text{i}' \text{A} \text{T} \). In Cypriote, incised or indented on the inside, in characters about \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high,

\( \text{ko. ta. po. ro. pe. i.} \),

in which the \( \text{ta.} \) is doubtful; and doubtful also whether the reading is from right to left, as here given, or from left to right, like most of the inscriptions that belong to the locality. I have not had sufficient opportunity to study the fragment to be more certain. It is still in process of cleaning, and has to be handled with great care.

Citium.

14. On the convex side of a pitcher, or vase with handle, of red terra-cotta. Inscription, incised after baking, \( 1\frac{3}{4} \) inch long. Characters \( 4 \) to \( 6 \) inch high; plain.

\( \text{ta. le. se.} \), \( \text{\( \Theta \alpha \lambda \o\) or \( \Theta \alpha \lambda \o\).} \)

'Of Thale,' or 'Of Thaile.' Less probably, 'Thales.'

Owner's name.

15. On a cylindrical amphora-stopper, of light blue pottery. Characters \( \frac{1}{2} \) inch high; one on the end, and one on the side, of the cylinder.
Cypriote Inscriptions of the Cernola Collection.

On the end, ia.
On the side, lo.
Proprietary mark or label, probably.

Maroni (Marium?).

16–19. Single characters on the bottoms of tall, slim vases of red terra-cotta. The character, or inscription, not stamped, but marked or impressed while the clay was soft. Characters $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{2}{3}$ inch high, very sharp and distinct, and of the western style.
   16. to.
   17. sa., or ko., as it can be read either side up.
   18. we.
   19. ti.
Initial characters, probably; either the owner’s name or the maker’s mark.

20–23. Inscriptions on the handles of long-necked flattish bottles, like flat aryballoi, of red terra-cotta. Characters made while the clay was soft; sharp and plain; $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{3}{4}$ inch high.
   20. ka.
   21. lo.
   22. (like the algebraic sign of equality. Is it we. ? or an unknown character?)
   23. ko.
Initials, probably; either owner’s name or maker’s mark.

24. On the handles of a large terra-cotta jar or vase, pear-shaped, with narrow base and the large part above; handles at the top, joining on a false mouth at the center of the top, the real mouth being a little to one side; jar 1 foot 3 inches high, and 1 foot in greatest diameter. Characters made apparently with a file, after the baking. On one handle, two characters, one a plain pa., $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high; the other doubtful, but probably to., $\frac{2}{3}$ inch high. On the other handle, a doubtful character, $1\frac{1}{2}$ inch high, probably me. or te. Private marks, or initials, probably.

25. Cut, as with a diamond, in the side of (a fragment of) a glass vessel about the shape and size of a finger-bowl. The glass is now much decayed, and beautifully iridescent. One character, $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high.
   to.
Initial letter, probably.

Soll.

26. On a fragment of a female figure in terra-cotta. One character on the throat, just above the chest; $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high; made while the clay was soft; very sharp and distinct.
   ti. Of unknown purport.
288

I. H. Hall.

Locality Unknown.

27. On the bottom of a red terra-cotta vase with handle. This is now packed away among the objects not on exhibition in the Museum; and it is therefore inaccessible at present, so that its locality cannot be certainly affirmed; but its place can be told from its mark, whenever it is brought out. I have seen and copied it, and take the reading from a squeeze of my own. Inscription in a circle, 1½ inch in outside diameter. Characters ¼ to ½ inch high, in rather fine strokes; all plain.

τε· τε· μα· νο· το· τα· κο.

Τηλεφάνω τό· Τάγω (or, Δακω).

‘Of Telephanos the son of Tagos’ (or Dakos, or the like).

Owner’s or maker’s name.

28. On the bottom of a thin rectangular plaque of fine, hard sandstone, from a tomb whose locality is not remembered. The edges of the bottom are beveled. On the top are two long, shallow, polished depressions, as if to hold a couple of objects like cigars. Inscriptions formerly in several lines, running the whole length of the flat bottom; but at present all that remains is the end of one line, ⅜ inch in length. Characters ⅛ inch high, of fine strokes, easily legible.

... o ii i ti.

Too fragmentary to render.

29.—31. Legends on silver coins. The three are silver coins of Euelthon, king of Salamis, sixth century B.C., each made with a different die. Device and legend, however, the same on all. Two of the coins are ⅝ inch in diameter, and the remaining one ¼ inch. Characters on all, ⅛ inch high. The device on the reverse is a ram lying down. Above and below the ram is the king’s name, in two lines. The second line is very obscure on all, but traces of it remain.

29. 1. e· u· u· e·.
2. [t· e· tó· tó· tó· s· e·]
30. 1. e· u· u· e·.
2. [t· e· tó· tó· tó· s· e·]
31. 1. e· u· u· e·.
2. [t· e· tó· tó· tó· s· e·]

For all: Εὐευληθὸς or Εὐευλήθαρκος.

The character denoted as “to?” above, I have always thought to be no.; but I defer to other decipherers.

Besides these coins are a few others whose Cypriote legends are now undecipherable, but which can readily be recognized as of Evelthon and of Evagoras.

The number of lamps in the collection with characters like those formerly published by me is not far from a dozen; but, as said above, I think they require to be treated by themselves.
ARTICLE VII.

ON THE PROFESSSED QUOTATIONS FROM MANU FOUND IN THE MAHĀBHĀRATA.

BY EDWARD W. HOPKINS,
INSTRUCTOR IN COLUMBIA COLLEGE, NEW YORK CITY.

Presented to the Society October 25th, 1883.

Before proceeding to a discussion of the Epic Manu, a few words in regard to Manu’s position in the older literature will be useful.

It has been suggested that Manu is not especially a Hindu creation, but may be considered as part of the Indo-European Pantheon. In this connection it will suffice to call attention to the position held by Mino* among the Grecian deities, and to the fact that Tacitus relates of the Germans that they have songs which proclaim Tuisto, an autochthonous deity, and his son Mannus, to be the founders of their race.

In the Veda I will refer only to the exhaustive article of Muir in the first volume of his Sanskrit Texts, and to the essay of Roth in the sixth volume of the German Oriental Journal, to show that in their ancient literature the Hindus regarded Manu as the father of their race, that they often looked upon him as upon a Prometheus who first gave them fire, and that the idea they seem to have formed of this personage (whom Roth proves to have been a myth) was that of a semi-divine seer, occasionally regarded as primeval man, occasionally as the originator (after the flood) of a new race, occasionally as a divine and superhuman being.

In the Brāhmaṇas we have stories related of Manu, such as his dividing his inheritance and the like, with some attempt at furnishing him with a family, but without any of the later
thought which presented him as a law-giver—this I think having originated from the circumstance that his reputed acts (such as the division of property) were first quoted as authoritative precedent; and then, with the growth of legal literature, the primeval man, whose acts were thus quoted, grew into a personal authority on legal points, whose words on law (of course invented) attained the influence which citations from such an eminent authority would naturally induce.

The law-Sūtras (keeping 'law' as the most general, and at times most fitting translation for dharma) were those earliest attempts at collecting the rules on duty of every sort, which in their prose form were the base of the later metrical gāstra. It does not appear to be the case that all sūtra literature developed into the metrical form at the same time, nor does it seem probable that the development into the later metrical form in any way suppressed the technical and too concise abbreviations of law and duty which for the sake of convenience were put originally into the short prose rules of the Sūtras. They may have existed side by side.

**Quotations from Manu in the Sūtras.**

The following contains all the matter quoted directly from Manu in four of the oldest Sūtras:

1. In Gautama, the oldest dharmaśūtra we possess (so far as the matter it contains goes), we find one reference to Manu as a seer of Vedic hymns (RV. viii. 27–21). Of Manu as law-giver there is but one mention, xxi. 7, in which the mere name “Manu” is put at the end of a list of inexpiable crimes, to indicate that he is regarded as authority for the statement—which, in fact, agrees with the sentiment of the Manu-treatise in xi. 90–92, 104–105, although no direct quotation is intended. It is to be remarked, however, that while the Mānava-treatise, by imposing a penalty resulting in death, implies that there is no expiation, it makes a formal statement to this effect only in the case of one of the three crimes, that of killing a Brahman.

2. In Baudhāyana’s law-treatise we have one reference (ii. 3. 2) to Manu taken out of the Brāhmaṇical literature: “Manu divided his property among his children” (Taitt. Saṁh. iii. 1. 9’); where Manu is not quoted as a law-giver, but as a sage whose act is worthy of imitation. Besides this reference, we find two quotations from Manu as an authority, the first in iv. 1. 13, where it is said Manu declared (that the father incurs) a mortal sin at each appearance of the menses (if he does not give his daughter in marriage at the right time). This might be the construction of Vas. xvii. 71, or of Yaj. i. 64, where it is said that the father incurs thereby the guilt of slaughtering an embryo; but in our Mānava-treatise it is only said that the father is blamable (vācyā). Gautama also in the parallel passage (xviii. 22) says
merely that the father is faulty (dosi). The second quotation says that Manu declared the aghamsana penance as effectual in removing sin as a horse-sacrifice—which, in effect, is so stated to be the case in our Manava-treatise, xi. 260-261, a quotation copied by Vasiṣṭha as from Manu, but by the older Gautama declared without authority for the statement (xxiv. 10).

3. In Apastamba's work we find also only a reference to Manu dividing his property (ii. 14. 11), in a passage controverting the view advanced by Baudhāyana in regard to dividing an estate; and (in ii. 16. 1) a statement that Manu revealed the ceremony for the dead (prāddha).

4. In Vasiṣṭha, the last of these, on the other hand, we have several references to Manu, some of which agree only in sentiment, some verbally, with our Manava-treatise. Now it appears to me that there is an interesting difference in the way in which his quotations are made. I notice that whenever we have a citation from Manu introduced by the words "Manu said," there can be found no verse in our Manava-treatise exactly corresponding to it, but only either a complete variation in sense or a merely general agreement with the sense of our Manava-treatise—except in one instance (iv. 8), where the verse ending "Manu said" is itself incorporated (together with the "Manu said") into our text; on the other hand, whenever Vasiṣṭha gives a quotation which answers exactly to some verse in our present Manava-treatise, he always introduces it with the words "now they relate on this point a Manavan verse" (mānavain ca 'tra plokaṁ udāharanti). Let us examine the citations in detail. To begin with those of the first sort, we find the following: In i. 17, Vasiṣṭha declares that "Manu said" the (peculiar) laws of country, caste, and family may be followed on points where there is no revealed text to decide the case (Gaut. xi. 20; Ap. ii. 15). The words here used (abruvin Manuh) are only authorized by the sense of the Manava-treatise in vii. 203; viii. 41, 46: "Let (the king) make authoritative the laws of those (he has conquered) as declared;" "A king who knows the right should cause his law to be established, after inspecting the laws of the (different) castes and country-folks, and the laws of guilds and families;" "Whatever is practiced by good and virtuous Brahmans let the king ordain (as law, if) not opposed to (the laws of) districts, families, and castes."

In xi. 23 we find, among several verses which Vasiṣṭha quotes from general hearsay, one "Manu said" verse (immediately after a "Yama said" verse), in respect to the disposal of food left over at a grāddha, something like M. iii. 245-6; and on comparing it with our Manava-treatise, we find it not the same exactly, though resembling it in form: in fact, the point at issue, the disposal of the food, is quite different. We note too that while our treatise ends with "they say," Vasiṣṭha also has iti sthitih, though the whole is given from Manu.

In xii. 16, after the rule "by water and hand let him cleanse the vessel" (udakapāniḥbhām parimṣyāt kamandalum), we
have the statement, "Manu Prajāpati calls this (way of cleansing) encircling with fire," in which this statement is only part of a quotation, without more authority than is implied by the words "they repeat (these verses)." This might answer to the purification by hand or water enjoined in our treatise v. 116, but there is no such appellation as "encircling with fire" given to this means of cleansing, such as is here said to be the definition of Manu (parjñākarṣanaṁ by etan Manur āha Prajāpatiḥ).

In xxiii. 43, we find the statement that Manu, chief among the supporters of the law, invented the cīpuktócchra ("child's penance"), which is then described, but in our Manu-treatise the penance by this name is not the same; for Vasiṣṭha's penance seems compounded of (M. xi. 220) the Mānav-treatise's "child-penance" and "Prajāpati-penance" (M. xi. 212). Sufficient for us is the fact that nothing in our treatise answers to this statement.

In xxvi. 8, we have a verse like Baudh. iv. 2. 15, quoted above, in regard to the aghamarṣana (M. xi. 260–261), which, being a "Manu said" verse, would seem to contradict the rule. This quotation, however, is in a chapter of which Prof. Bühler says "its genuineness is not above suspicion" (Introduct. Vas. p. xvi.); so that it is to be regarded as doubtful.

In iv. 6 is the one apparent exception noted above, but explained by the fact that the verse, just as it stands in Vasiṣṭha, occurs in our Mānav-treatise also as quoted from Manu (v. 41). It is found in a passage which, all taken together, is not an exception, but an example of the practice I have noted as occurring whenever the verses given correspond exactly to our treatise; for this verse is only part of the quotation Vasiṣṭha gives. The quotation begins with the second formula, māṇava, "a Manava passage is now given;" and this, according to the usage I have indicated, ought to contain words found in our text. Accordingly, we find verse 6=M. v. 41, verse 7=M. v. 48, while verses 5 and 8, with which the quotation begins and ends, are in prose, not in metrical form like verses 6 and 7: or, in other words, as Prof. Bühler points out, a veritable remnant of the old Mānavasūtra in its prose form, before it became metrified. This then is the first example of a true quotation (according to the standard of our text) from the Mānav-treatise, and it is introduced as a whole, not by "Manu said," but by māṇava.

The next quotation of this sort is in iii. 2 (mānavain ca 'tru gokam udāharantī), "they relate this Manavan verse;" and then follows a verse which we have in our Mānav-treatise at l. 168.

The next (xiii. 16) is introduced in the same way (mānavain ca 'tra gokam udāharanti), and reads as follows: phalāṇy āpas titān bhakṣāṁ yac ca 'nyac chṛddhikam 'havet: pṛatiṣṭhāyā ʼpy anādiyāyā pāpyāyā brāhmaṇāḥ smṛtāḥ. This is the verse which, with some var. loc., we find in our text at iv. 117, the verse being evidently the same, loosely quoted, with the substitution of a
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

general for a particular enumeration in the first part. There is here no difference of substance.

The next verse (xix. 37) has the same formula at the beginning (mānavam etc.), but is in the triṣṭubh metre, a metre in which probably a good many of the Manavān verses were originally written; so that it would be impossible to find the same verse in our treatise, which is composed in another and shorter metre; all that we can expect is a verse like it; and this we find in x. 120, although, in shortening the verse to adapt it to its present metre, part of the original has been omitted.

The next verse (xx. 18) has this formula also, and equals xi. 152 of our text. Now, counting out the suspicious verse xxvi. 8, we find that there are five quotations introduced as mānavā, and that they all correspond with verses in our Mānava-treatise, the correspondence being in three of them verbatim, and the other two being exact in so far as the sense of one verse in our treatise answers precisely to each one given by Vasiṣṭha; while the difference of form in one of the two is explained by a change of metre, and the difference of form of the other, though considerable, does not alter the sense, the whole answering to one verse in our treatise. On the other hand, we find that there are five quotations introduced by "Manu said," and that none of them corresponds to any one verse of our Mānava-treatise; the lack of correspondence consisting in this: that one of them (xii. 16) has nothing like it in our treatise; that another of them (xxiii. 43) describes a penance mentioned in our treatise, but as something different from the one called by the same name in our treatise; that the third (xi. 23) is like in form to one of the verses in our treatise, but decides the point differently; that the fourth (i. 17) only expresses the combined sentiment of three verses of our treatise, and then adds something not in our text: while the fifth "quotation from Manu" (iv. 6) is properly only a portion of a longer mānavā quotation in which the same verse occurs as that still preserved in our Mānava-treatise as a "Manu said" verse.

The significance of this difference I shall remark upon at the end of this paper.

Quotations from Manu in the Inscriptions.

In the interesting grant of land under Dhruvasena I., where we find that a Vaiṣṇava king has a niece who founds a Buddhist monastery, we read this inscription: "He who steals land is guilty of the five great sins and the minor sins; and on this point there is a verse by Vyāsa, saying, 'He who steals land etc. incurs the guilt of the killer of one hundred thousand cows.'" Before this we find the following description of King Dronasimha: mānudātiprātanītavidhīvidhānadharmā dharmarāja iva: i.e., 'He followed the rules laid down by Manu and others.' This inscription dates back to the middle of the sixth century A.D., (Gupta) saṁvat 207 (Ind. Antiq. iv. pp. 104, 105). In a Cera grant (Ind. Ant. v. p. 133) of 513 A.D., we find api cā 'tra
Manugitakañcukah (‘there is a verse sung by Manu’); and this verse says that he who steals land passes 6,000 years in “horrible darkness.” A Pallava inscription (ib. p. 154) gives the usual versions as “verses of the seers” (āryādā ślokāh). In the three Vallabhib grants (ib. p. 205), sūryavat 207, grantee a student of the Atharva-Veda, we have atra Vyāsagitoḥ śloko bhavati (‘there is a verse byVyāsa’); and this also gives 6,000 years of hell to him who deprives one of land or consents thereto (sacchetā, anumantā), while the giver lives as long in heaven. Vyāsa is also the reputed author in the Gujarāt grant, caṇ. 380 (Ind. Ant. v. p. 109). The Pallava grant of the fifth century (ib. p. 50-51) has a more legal look, in that it says the thief deserves corporal punishment (fourth Plate); the rest is like the Cera grant: yāc ce dam asmacchāsanam atīkrīmet sa pāpaś caśūrādaṇḍam arhati; api cāḥiśī ṣlokaḥ: bhūmīdaṇīdā pariṁ dānam na bhūtānam na bhaviyati, tasvai teḥ sa hariṇapāpān na bhūtānam na bhaviyati; svadattāṃ (etc.)...garāmī śatāhārasya hantuḥ pibati dusktāṃ. In the Dhruvasena grant first quoted, it will be noticed that there is a slight difference (hantuḥ prāpnoti kilbānaṃ), while the words are there given to Vyāsa. This verse on land-stealing was then common property, always the same in general tendency, but varying in particulars. For instance (in Ind. Ant. iv. p. 327), we have a very late one giving the usual verses as to the 6,000 years in ordure for the land-thief, and ending “as many particles of dust as a Brahman’s tears gather up when he is deprived of property, so many years the kings who take it will pass in the pot-cooking hell” (kumbhīpāka: both the general tenor and the hell are known in the Manu-treatise; other names occur, as rauram in vi. 56). A Cālukya inscription (ib. viii. p. 27), of the early part of the seventh century A.D., gives the verse “by many has the earth been enjoyed” etc. (something like this at the end of the Cera grant quoted above, “earth enjoyed by Sagara and others”) thus: Manugitakañcukah udaharantāḥ, ‘they relate a verse sung by Manu.’ It is not Manu alone, nor Vyāsa alone; even Brahmā (Pallava grant, viii. p. 168) gives utterance to these verses. The Vyāsa verse has sometimes the expression “born in ordure”—as e.g., Dyn. Rastrakūṭa, caṇ. 675 (ib. xi. p. 109), or the Cālukya inscription (iii. p. 305) of 566 A.D. The latter is as follows:

bahubhir vasudhā dattā bahubhiḥ cā‘nu-pālitā:  
yasya yasya yadā bhūmīs tasya tasya tadā phalam.  
svadattāṃ paraśattān vā yutnād rakṣa Yudhiṣṭhirā:  
mahī mahākṣitāṃ preṣṭham dānāc chreya ‘nupālanaṃ:  
svadattāṃ paraśattān vā yo hareta vasvādharām:  
vaivṛtāhāyāṃ kṛmrī bhūtā pārthīśī suha majjati.  
Vyāsagitoḥ ślokaḥ.—(cf. Ins. in ii. 158).

Now this long quotation from the epic Vyāsa is oddly enough in that inscription of the Cālukyas which describes the king Mangaliyara as born in the family of Grievamiprādānanahyātānām Mānaviṣṇugotrāṇāṃ Hiṁshiputrāṇānām Cālkyānānām (cf.
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

vii. p. 161 ff., the inscription which says the Cālikyas, the same who are also called Cālukyas, or Cālykas, are Māṇavya-sagotraḥ Hariśṭā-putraḥ, and conversant with the following works: Māṇava-Purāṇa-Rāmāyaṇa-Bhāratetihāsa, a grant made anterior to the separation of the East and West Cālukyas, a little after 500 caeka-era, or toward the end of the sixth century A. D., ending “and it is declared in the dharma-pātra that the earth was enjoyed by many, etc.,” and declaring Byhaspati to be the model knower of nīti, or kingly policy). It is to be noticed that the quotation is not made here from any Māṇava code, and that the latter is not appealed to at all, though the Cālukyas especially speak of themselves as adherents of the laws given by “Manu and others.” For instance, in a Cālukya grant of about 688 A. D., the King Viṣṇuvardhana is described as Manvādi-pra-nitadharma-pātrapracaritasarvalokāgrayah (‘the refuge of all the world, as has been inculcated by the dharma-pātra laid down by Manu and others’). Compare the inscription (Ind. Ant. vi. 85 ff.) of the West Cālukyas, and that (ib. vii. 902) of the year 694–5 A. D. These quotations are not unique, and might be multiplied. A quotation from Manu as long as any meets us in the grant on the Nāgamangala plate of king Kongani for a Jain temple:

api ca 'tra Manu-gītāḥ plokāḥ:
svadattāṁ paradattāṁ vā yo hareta vaunḍharāṁ:
saśīva varṣasaharsrāṁ viśṭhāyāṁ jāyate kṛmiḥ.
svāṁ dātuṁ (?) su mahāc chakyaṁ duhkham anyasya pālanam:
ādīnaṁ vā pālanam ve 'ti dāne cchreyo 'nupālanam.
baḥubhir vaunḍhā bhuktā rājabhiḥ Sagarādibhiḥ:
yasya yasya yadā bhumis tasya tasya tatpālanam.
devasvam tu viśaṁ ghoraṁ na viśaṁ viśaṁ ucyate:
viśaṁ ekākināṁ hanti devasvam putraputrakam.

The date of this grant is 777 A. D. (Ind. Ant. ii. 159). The similarity with the like verses of Vyāsa is apparent. We find such verses as these on nearly all the grants. The form and order varies, and sometimes the words—as in the Cera grant quoted above we have instead of viśṭhāyāṁ etc. the words ghore tamasi, or the ending changes entirely into another formula:

abhidattāṁ tribhīr bhuktām saḍbhīc ca pratipālanam:
etāṁ na nirvarṇanti pūrvarājakṛtvāṁ ca.

Preceding these we generally have the statement that he who steals land is guilty of the five great sins. The connection of the (East) Cālukyas was not merely the connection with the Māṇavya (this we find quite often, e. g. in Pl. I. of the Kṛṣṇa district grant, Ind. Ant. ii. 175), but they also claim that the first king of the Solar race was the “Māṇava, born of the Self-existent,” who was saved in an ark at the time of the deluge (ib. Pl. III.). The Vallabhi grants generally quote Vyāsa (see above, and compare Ind. Ant. vii. 70 and other cases), and he is quoted in the Dhruva-sena grant alluded to above; so that, although we often have these
verses given without any authority for them, it is perhaps he was intended by the “Smritikāra” alluded to in the Morbi cop plates (Ind. Ant. ii. 257), of the sixth century (saśvataḥ 58). “Reflecting on the declaration of Vyāsa and others about five great sins, one should recall the word of Smritikāra;” this “word” is the same as that which occurs often under name (Upāchāda etc. . . kantaḥ prāyatna) kilīṣam), although the granting it are “given to the study of the Maitrāyanīya” school. In the very late inscription from Gadāk (Ind. Ant. ii. 300) which, according to Fleet, “about four hundred years old,” we find after the verses svaḥaśca etc. the statement whoever injure land given to another—

so labhā Prajñāsāh pāçaih kṣipyate pāyapote;
and kulāni tārayet kartā sapta sapta ca sapta ca:
adho ‘dhāraṇā pāyayē dhārā sapta ca sapta ca;
and the remark that “there would be expiation for one who slays a cow or a Brahman, even at the holy watering-places, but there would be no expiation for men who should steal the property of gods or Brahmans.” The authority given is “the great seer Manu and others.” This is utterly opposed to our Manu-treatise.

Now in our Māṇava-treatise there is only one verse remotely suggested by all these quotations. In xi. 26 we read: “The evil-minded man lives in the next world on a vulture’s leavings, who through greed injures the possessions of gods or Brahmans; the gist of it all is in the Brahmā (gūḍha) verses found in the Mahābhārata xii. 136. 2: “The property of those accustomed to sacrifice should never be taken away, nor the property of the gods; (but) a Kṣatriya has a right (arhati) to take from Daśa and from those without sacrifices.” These are general rules in regard to property. Of land our treatise says (viii. 99): “A witness on speaking an untruth regarding land destroys everything;” and (xi. 58) “Theft of land is called equal to theft of gold.” In other words, nothing from the Māṇava-treatise as now possesse it could have given rise to these lengthy quotations from Manu; and the fact that they are often ascribed to Vyāsa as well as to Manu points to the real worth of this Father Manu. The (prose) Sūtra of Gautama (xiii. 17) says of stealing land that “Hell is the punishment for a theft of land;” and Baudhāyaṇa (ii. 1. 2. 26) makes him who sells sesameum be “born again as worm and plunged in dogs’ ordure.” The tone, then, of the quotation is antique; but I fancy it never was in the Māṇava treatise. In these inscriptions, dating probably centuries after the Sūtra we have quoted above, we first find the Māṇava-treatise attaining a prominence (in being placed at the head of the list of treatises referred to) which is as conspicuous as the inaccuracy of the quotations from the individual Manu.
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

Manu in the Mahābhārata.

When Medhātithi, the oldest existing commentator on Manu, declares that a verse in the law-book contradictory to other verses is "not a verse of Manu,"* and in another place (iv. 103) suggests that the mention of Manu as author of a verse is merely to add weight to its utterance, while it is really nothing but "an old verse," he shows a sagacity seldom equaled by Hindu commentators. His acumen was not at fault. It is only a pity that he did not exercise it more often. His words I take as the text to the following discussion, which has for its object the laws ascribed to Manu by the compilers of the Mahābhārata. It is the personal Manu referred to in the epic which comes here into consideration—not the quotations from our Māṇava-dharma-Śāstra, but those verses which are declared to be from Manu by the addition of the endorsement "Manu said so," or "Manu, son of the Self-existent, said so."†

To these citations from Manu are prefixed a few introductory remarks regarding the sources of all law as professedly held by the Mahābhārata.

First, in regard to the frequent terms dharma and āśram: dharma, which the writer in his translation of Manu prefers to render 'a rule of right,' is used for each and both of these ideas; it is a rule of action, a law, right, a spiritual right, a spiritual gain, a duty, the rule of righteous action, jus, lex, privilegium; āśram is the treatise; containing a discussion of right, rights, etc., it is a dharma-aśram.

In the Mahābhārata, as in the Māṇava-treatise, the idea of dharma is generally that of a rule of right conformable to usage and based on it (actirasambhavo dharmaḥ: iii. 150. 28): that is to say, on such usage as is sanctioned by the good (santakāh), who are distinguished on the one hand from such home-bred sinners as "hold the Vedas to be of no account," "slight the treatises" (āśra-ṛṣya abhilārgahām), and talk merely "to murder" these treatises (vadhīya: xiii. 37, passim); and, on the other hand, from such base foreigners as the Vāhikas, the shameless habits of whose women are severely censured (viii. 44. 10 ff.), and the laxity of whose caste-order reaches such a pitch that even barbers become Brahmans (ib. 45. 3 ff.); or as the Madras people, whose "virtues" are said to be "all vices" (ib. 45. 29); for the knowledge of the Hindus had now extended over "many countries rife with varied laws" (ib. 3), probably including many people even more remote than the mixed Greeks (Yavanās), who are described as "all-knowing and particularly brave" (ib. 36). Dharma is briefly sketched (xii. 260. 16 ff.) in these words: "Remembered

* amāṇava 'yaiḥ āśram: ix. 93.
† Manu abravīt; Manuḥ svāyambhūvo 'bravīt.
usage is eternal law (not all usage; for) if bad usages are introduced, law becomes mere quatch; the only law to follow is that long ago enjoined by the seers, (for) in following all sorts of usages there can only result a lack of close attention to usage in general” (anaikāgyram). Along with the seers, the dharma “declared by the Veda,” or “the authority of the Veda” (vedoktaḥ, pratiṣṭhamānaḥ), is often referred to; but it is nevertheless a variable and uncertain thing in many particulars, as declared by different experts (piṣṭah), being subject to change according to the customs of different districts, and multiform as the castes, guilds, and families which have established it (jāti, gṛṇi, kula, xii. 36. 19; deṣajātekulānāṁ dharmaṇāh, xii. 54. 20). It is enveloped in much uncertainty, if we judge by its being so often called “subtile” (sūkṣma), or spoken of in like language. For instance: “dharma is subtile, its course we know not,” i. 195. 29; “because of the subtlety of dharma,” ib. 196. 11; see other remarks of the same sort in ii. 37. 3; ib. 67. 38; v. 36. 71; ii. 69. 14; ib. 73. 4. It is “hard to understand” (iii. 208. 41; cf. v. 198. 44 and 42); nevertheless, when it is known it is not to be doubted, for “as a Čātra departs from the Veda, so does one depart from the world if he question a rule of right” (iii. 31. 8). Other quotations will be found on this point in the Indian Antiquary, vi. 269 (J. Muir). The rule (iii. 52. 16) “not to destroy the paths of dharma” (mā dharmaṇyān nīnaśaḥ pathaḥ: cf. pātra-pathayukta) is enlarged by the juxtaposition of the three aims of life, right, wealth, and desire, the first of which is to be especially cultivated (iii. 33. 40, pātra-krto vidhiḥ). The paramount authority is the rule of the seers, the fathers of old whose custom have become law (āryam prāmaṇam, iii. 31. 22: cf. 23, and 24: “dharma is a ship, the only one for those embarked like merchants in search of the highest gain”). If any further local habitation is given this dharma, it is in the Ārya-āstra (iii. 30. 41); and, though it has its mysteries (dharma-rahasya, xii. 37. 7), they can nevertheless be learned, as well as its commentary (dharmaṁ savaiyākhyam prōptavān, ib. 10).*

Even with this understanding of dharma, we find that there is no great unanimity in regard to deciding what set of rules is to be followed. Some, it is said (xii. 142. 7 ff.), “regard as binding only the ordinary practices of the world (lokayāti); this, they say, is dharma;” “a declaration of dharma is given neither by the voice nor by the understanding;” with these words the Blessed himself proclaimed the law (viz: the Bṛhaspatyaṁ jātānam): “one should modify the law inculcated by the good;” “the law for a king is not laid down by the law contained in any one treatise (nai kāṣṭhena dharmaṇaṁ rījau dharma vidhiyate);”

*Dharma as personified Genius of Right holds his ordinary position in the pantheon of the Mahābhārata, though he is sometimes shamefully treated: e.g. cursed and born as a Čātra (i. 63. 96; cf. 108. 15).
† āketa: not as used in Viśu xxi. 2 (mantras āketa), of a mere formal change of mantras to suit a ceremonial need.
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

249

cf. ib. 14 (pari munanti pāstrāṇi pāstradosīnudarciṇah), and iii. 312. 18 (pratayo viśbhāṇā naś ko munir yasya matam prāmāṇam, etc.). So (in iii. 307. 15), a usage is not settled by appeal to any standard of laws, but is the "natural condition" (svabhāva esa lokānām); and again, we read in regard to a certain act, "some call it the rule given by revelation, some say no; we do not demur, for all is not settled" (na hi sarvaṁ vidhiyate: xii. 109. 13). The general result is important: one must act as well as he can in accordance with old customs, but at the present time there is no one paramount authority recognized.

Where then are the individual law-makers? What position does Manu hold? We find many authorities cited by name, but none of these are decisive utterances; the law-givers appear at intervals with a verse or two, which gives additional force to a law perhaps just laid down; or their opinions are divergent, and are quoted against each other; nay, even the speaker has a sentiment of his own, which he flings into the mass of quotations he has been giving from the old law-makers, with a defiant "but I think so and so," "but my opinion is this." When the law-treatises are formally quoted, there is apparently no one of them thought of as supreme, and these treatises are mentioned chiefly in the later books. A quotation is made (xii. 291. 14) by Parāśara from those who know and declare the utterances of the Veda (brahmacāitrāya, brahmavādān); and he then adds his own opinion, with a "but I," and gives it in full (brahmacāstra is in 287. 41 brahmaśadharma); "the twice-born verses in revelation declare the Vaidehaka to be a Čūdra, (but) I see" etc. (xii. 296. 28); "a Čūdra woman (is not a legal wife, but) may be a mistress; other men say no to this" (xiii. 44. 12). Absolute alone is family law (kuladharma), and not to be violated. The "subtle dharma-treatises" (v. 140. 7) may be all based on rules maintaining the "usage practiced by the ancients" (pūrvair uccarito jānaiḥ, iii. 5. 97), but the laws of the family take precedence over all others. Like the expression used above of family law is that in iv. 5. 33; and in i. 113. 11, where a king who has just demanded (contrary to the Manu-treatise) a price for his daughter exclaims, "our highest authority is the law of the family;" and again, ib. 9, "I am unable to alter what has been established in this family, be it bad or good." Such laws are eternal, and "hell is the portion of men who have set aside the laws of the family" (utsan-nakuladharmānām manusyaṁāḥ... narake niyataṁ viśo bhavati 'ty anucūrūma: vi. 25. 40). We know better than the later Hindus how much family or clan law had to do with the making of the law-treatises; but it is well to note the deference paid to it, in distinction from any legal "code," at the time of compilation of the epic.

Without prejudice, I can perceive no especial distinction awarded to any one explainer of dharma among the many whose works have made the various treatises. Manu sometimes heads the list, as if pre-eminent, but sometimes not, as if not. There is

vol. xi. 32
certainly no tendency whatever to refer to a code of Manu as to an ultimate authority, although that authority is, together with that of others, recognized. Were we to compare the authorities deduced by the Mahābhārata with those referred to by the Manu-treatise, it would seem in general that we have no further advancement in the former than is represented by the standpoint of the latter. In most cases we are simply referred to “rules declared by devotees” (e. g. iii. 208. 14), to “the ordinances of the old” (iii. 209. 2), or to “a decision among the dharmas” (v. 178. 81); still more precisely, but vague, “the old explainers of decisions” (niṣcitadarṣinah, v. 63. 9). These are the “authorities” which settle the “subtile course of law which has many branches and no end” (bahuṣākhā . . . anantikā). The Manu-treatise has a whole chapter on the duties of a king; but in the long discourse on that subject in the epic, Manu is mentioned only three or four times, and there are no more quotations attributed to him than to other law-givers. The king should follow the treatises on polity or the polity of punishment (i. 145. 21; iii. 150. 30, et passim); but the “rules of the skilled,” “the dharmas joined to rule,” the “custom of good men,” etc., etc., sum up most of the cases where any authority is deferred to (cf. iii. 207. 62 ff.). It may be said, however, that this is the general custom; and for this reason I attempt no argumentum a silentio based on the vast number of verses identical with those in the Manu-treatise but not referred to it, or sometimes referred elsewhere. Still, in bringing forward those actually quoted from Manu, it is necessary to speak of this point, lest one forget what a small portion of the verses apparently taken from the Māṇava-treatise is accredited to Manu. There was in these portions of the work no Vaiṣṇavio influence at work (as in Viṣṇu), suppressing the name of Manu entirely, or it would have been carried out to the end as there. It seems to me, too, when we see so many verses containing the gist of Māṇava verses, but altered in form to such an extent that the whole verse-structure has been inverted, that an unbiased observer would naturally conclude that neither verse is the result of an attempt to reproduce the other, but that legal saws and maxims were couched in such general language and in such plastic swinging verse-form as to be handed down merely as a whole, while the various texts were due to the idiosyncracies of the reciter, who changed the form of the text as it happened to come to his mind. Čātra-language is not sūtra-language. I fancy they did not lay much stress on exactness of word-arrangement in these epic rehearsals. In fact, there are plenty of instances where the same verse appears in the Mahābhārata under several different forms, although all pretend to be quotations from one original version. They did not quote, they paraphrased. The form of a Manu-verse found in the epic may, therefore, be as old as that preserved for us by the (much later) earliest commentator to Manu; the verses of the latter often appear as tristubh metre in the epic.
 Those who fancy that a Mānava-code (even an older recension) was in any way a paramount authority at the time of the Mahābhārata may explain as they can the following passages opposed to text and spirit of the Mānava-treatise now existing. In i. 29. 18 ff.: vibhāgam bahavo mohat (!) kartum ichchanti . . . . (but as division weakens force) tasmad vibhāgam bhṛtrāṇām na praṣaṇ-santi sudhavah— an irreverent way of alluding to M. viii. 111. In i. 113. 12, Bhīṣma says that to give marriage-money is no sin, but is, on the contrary, a law declared by the Self-existent. In v. 34. 49, we are told that the chief food of the rich is meat. In it. 56. 36, it is declared that the ancient laws used to conduct business by gambling, and it was no sin. In i. 122. 3–9 we read: “the law now observed among the Kurus in the north regarding adultery has been but recently established (na cirān māryāde 'yam . . . . sthāpita), and before this it was the eternal law for women to be in the same position as cattle, and not secluded at all” (see the whole adhyā). Polyandry (bahūnām ekapatnita) is “eternal law” (i. 197, end).

I come now to Manu himself. God, creator, demi-god, king, and law-maker—these are his rōles. In detail: 1. As purely mythical and mystic form of the god Agni, in iii. 221. 4: Agnīc ca 'pi Manu-nāma prajāpatyam akāraṇaḥ; and (ib. 8) tapas ca Manum putram bhānum ca 'py Angraha sarjat (9) bhadbhānum tu tam prāhuḥ; in verse 17, his second son is Viṣṇu-patī. 2. As demi-god, along with deities and sages, in ix. 45. 17, with Pulasṭya, Pulaha, Atri, etc. (cf. M. i. 35), we find a Manu (10) accompanying the gods as they assembled at a consecration and gave gifts.

In connection with the periods (manvantara), in xii. 349. 42: tena bhūnās tadā medā Manoh svāyambhūve 'nare; in 56 bhavisyati Manur mahānā; (in 56) tasmin manvantāre Manuvā diganapārvakāh. These periods of the Manus have protecting influence: “May the wives of the gods, the daughters of the gods, the mothers of the gods, and the Manu-periods . . . . protect thee” (xiii. 14. 38–40). The Harivaṃśa has more of this (200–400). 3. As god and creator, Manu appears in i. 75. 14 and preceding: “Manu is the originator of the race, therefore man is so called.” He has sons, and, more particularly, the Brahmans, Kṣatriyas, and others were born of him (the German Mannus has likewise three sons assigned him, clan-names of peoples). Yama is the brother of Manu; and, from v. 117. 8 ff., Sarasvatī is his wife: “The king-seer lived as happily with his wife as Agastya with the Vaidarbhī, Brhaspati with Tārā, Manu with Sarasvatī, Duṣyanta with Čakuntalā, Nala with Damayanti.” Secondary creators, the eight prakṛtayāh, include Manu (as above, under demi-god); here (xii. 340. 34) the list runs Marīci, Angirās, Atri, Pulastya, Pulaha, Kratu, Vasīṣṭha, Manu Svāyambhuva—where the last takes perhaps the place of Bṛgūru in the Manu-treatise. In a scene where punishment is personified as an active power,
we have various synonyms of Danda (‘rod, punishment’), among which are Asi (‘sword’: v. below), and Manur jyesṭhaḥ, the oldest mortal or Manu. The origin of Danda also brings in Manu (xii. 122. 38 ff.) as half divinity, but concerned with penal laws; and it is interesting in furnishing a line of succession different from the ordinary: “Mahādeva gave the rod, the guardian of law (dandaṁ dharmasya goptorām), to Viṣṇu; he, to Angiras; he, to Indra and Marici (dual); Marici gave it to Bhrigu, who gave it to the seers; these gave it to the world-protectors, and these again to Kuśa; “now Kuśa gave it to Manu” (Kuśas tu Manavo prādād ādityatanayāya ca). If this is an attempt to trace the course of penal law, it puts Manu after Bhrigu; elsewhere Kuśa, here brought into close connection with Manu, is father of Manu’s descendant, Ikṣvāku. We may compare with this account that in xii. 166. 28 ff.: “When the demons disregarded the barrier of the law (dharmaścetu) given by God, the Lord produced the sword and subdued them; then he gave the sword, the guardian of law (asvin dharmasya goptorām) to Viṣṇu; he, to Marici; he, to the great seers; they, to Vāsava, and Mahendra to the world-protectors; they, to Manu Sūryaputra (‘Sun’s son’), addressing him thus: ‘Thou art lord of mortals; protect thy descendants by the sword (of proper punishment) which is born of dharma (asvinī dharmagarbhena).’ Manu afterwards gave it to his son, Kuśa; he gave it to Ikṣvāku, etc. etc.’ (In 84 the eight mystic names of the Sword are given, and in 82 the Pleiads are said to be its constellation, and Agni its divinity: cf. above, where Manu is Agni, and see BR. s. kṛttikā.) The same list of Manus as given above is in this section found (16) in a modified form as sons of God, with the Manu omitted. The law which the demons disregarded prior to Manu’s appearance was the Veda-given law promulgated by the world’s grandfather (vedapathito dharmal); in it rest the gods, demigods, Bhrigu, Atri, Angiras, ... Vasīṣṭha, Gautama, Agastya, Nārada, and others (21, 22). Cf. xiii. 26. 4, Atri, Vasīṣṭha, Bhrigu, etc. In xiii. 166 we find a list of seers in which Manu Prajāpati comes almost at the end, after Bhrigu, Angiras, Gautama, Atri, Vasīṣṭha, and many others. Cf. also xiii. 14. 397: “Seven Manus ... and Bhrigu, Dakṣa, etc., preceded by Marici etc.” We must not forget that, in spite of their divine nature, Vasīṣṭha, Atri, Angiras (?), Gautama, Nārada, were veritable law-givers, and the treatises bearing their names are standard works. It may be remarked that the history of creation related in this chapter from 1 ff. bears a certain resemblance to the spurious five verses that stand at the beginning of our Mānava-treatise (though of course not referred to it); and another account (xii. 182. 8) refers the relation to Bhrigu, who tells it to Bharadvāja, beginning much in the style of the opening verses in the Manu-treatise (Bhriguvī bhiṅgataṁ āṇām). The family of this divine Manu seems to be a little mixed. I have already noticed his wife Sarvasvatī, his son Kuśa, and his grandson Ikṣvāku. The last was one of those who obeyed the
laws of his grandfather respecting food, abstained from eating meat, and went to heaven for his goodness (xiii. 115). In xiii. 2.5, he is the son of Manu Prajapati, and has a hundred sons himself. In the passage quoted above from i. 75, we find that, though Manu gives his name to mankind, he is not the first originator of beings, as he is the son of Mārtaṇḍa; but after noting the Mānavas (men) in the race of Manu (Manor vaṁśe māṇavāḥ: cf. ii. 19. 6, māṇava vaṁga) as coming from him in general, we have Veda, Dhṛṣṭu, Nāriyantanta, Nābhāga, Ikṣāku, Kārūsa, Cāryāti, Iļā, Prashthra, Nāṭhāgriṅa, as his ten special children, along with “fifty others, who, as we hear, all went to destruction by mutual slaughter” (anyonyayabheda). According to the Purāṇas, this Iļā was a son and a daughter, time and time about. A somewhat altered list, with a fuller account of these sons, is found in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, iv. 1. The name of the tenth son is variously spelled.

In xiv. 4.2, Kṣuṇa is the grandson, and two generations intervene between Manu and Ikṣāku: "There was in the Kṛta age (the Golden age) a Manu Dandadbara Prabhu, and his son was Prassandhi, father of Kṣuṇa, and his great-grandson was Ikṣāku, who had one hundred sons, the eldest of whom was Viṣṇu, father of Viṣṇuāṇa, etc. (Viṣṇuāṇa putraḥ kalyāṇo Viṣṇuāṇa nāma; not son of Ikṣāku, as in BR.); while, according to xii. 348. 51, Vivasvant gave dharma to Manu at the beginning of the Tretā age (Brazen age), and Manu gave it to his son Ikṣāku. According to xiii. 147. 23 ff., we find Govinda in the family of Manu; and the latter’s descendants are given for seven generations, beginning with Anga (Manoḥ putraḥ), through Antardhāman, Hāvirdhāman, Prācīnabharī, down to the ten Pracetasas, Daksā Pracetasas (they are given in i. 75, before the account of Manu noted above), and through him and the Daksāyaniyād Adityāḥ, Manu (Adityātāḥ) and (the personification of) Iļā as Manu’s daughter (Manoḥ ca vaṁgojā Iļī), although some of these are elsewhere subject to different relationships. This Manu too appears to be regarded as identical with the law-giver, from the phrase at the beginning of the list (22), Prajitāpatye śubhe mārge, mānave dharmaśvinkte. In the same book (149. 15), as a form of Viṣṇu is found Viṣvāvarma Manuś Tvāṣṭā (cf. xiii. 16. 22, where Manu is distinct from the creator, while in xiii. 14. 408 he is identical with Kṛṣṇa), and (in 17. 117) the song in praise of Viṣṇu is declared by Bhāravā (Taṇḍīḥ) to Gantama, and by him to Manu the son of Vivasvant, who is intended in the above genealogy. In vi. 9. 5, Bhāratam priyam Indraśya devaśya, Manor Vaivasvataśya ca, Manu the son of Vivasvanta interchanges with son of the Self-existent, as he does even in the law-books. The family of Manu goes back in part to much later (Bṛhaṇa, Nirukta, Sātra) literature.

This mass of rubbish, chiefly from the latest book of the epic, has little worth or interest, except as showing from the very fact of its position in the whole work that the chief mythology concerning this many-sided Manu is a late product. He is god,
demi-god, and primeval man. In this last rôle, the great fish story (mātseyakam purāṇam), relating the cartam Manor Vasuvasūrya, needs only to be referred to (iii. 187. 57). It is a popular version of the old Brahmanic account of the flood, where Manu is Noah. Parallel passages will be found in Muir, vol. i. of Sanskrit Texts.

Passages are not wanting where Manu ceases to have any individuality, and becomes a mere type of the divinity in general, as he is of Agni in the first quotation above: cf. ii. 19. 10: aparī-kāryā meghānām Māgadhā Manunā krutā, ‘(the Supreme) Manu made them inseparable.’ Thus in the philosophical section, xiii. 334. 27 ff., Manu as a Prajāpati is beneath Self (ātman).

This particular passage is interesting, although the tales representing Manu as originator of laws are so shadowy as to be of slight value. “Nārada spoke to God, saying: ‘Day after day men sacrifice to the universal father, mother, and teacher, to Thee, thou who art multiform! But we know not to what God or to what father thou makest sacrifice.’ Then God answered: ‘Self (soul) it is, or the knower of things (ksetrajña), imperceptible, eternal; it was by Self’s command that sacrifice was made to gods and manes; the twenty-one forefathers honor this law, as do Brahmā, Sthānu, Manu, Dakṣa, Bhṛgū, etc.’”

In xii. 335. 28 ff., there is an indefinite notice of the laws of Manu, where we are on the verge of finding him more law-giver than god: “A treatise embracing lokadharma (‘world-laws,’ of this time) was declared by the seven seers; the creator extolled it (it contained 100,000 verses) as his own (madanupiṣaṇanam), and the chief authority of the world; through this shall Manu, son of the Self-existent, declare laws, and Ucānas and Bṛhaspati, when they are born, shall declare a treatise upheld by your (this) opinion, in the svetāmbaraṇaḥ dharmaṇaḥ, and in the treatise of Ucānas and the Bṛhaspati-matam.” Accordingly we find the seers’ treatise bestowed first on Bṛhaspati (along with its branches and Upaniṣads): which reminds us of the Bṛhaspatyam (xii. 59. 80 ff.), where Čankara, who first grasped dandaṇi, reduced it to a mahāstrāma of 10,000 adhy.1, which Indra subsequently cut down to 5,000, and Bṛhaspati to 2,000; after which Kāvyā diminished it to 1,000 (cf. the similar account in the introductory part of Nārada’s law-book). The above is nothing but a puff of the Pāñcarātra sect. It is worth noting, however, that the work of Manu is not here alluded to as a treatise, but as “the laws.” Such indefinite allusion occurs again, xii. 267. 36: “Manu, son of the Self-existent, out of pity for his creatures, declared the law, that the great fruit thereof might not perish;” and in xii. 348. 36: “To lay the foundation of dharmā, Brahmā instructed Manu Svāroṣīsa, through love for the good of the worlds (cf. M. i. 62, first of the seven).” In xiii. 14. 280, we read again of the “Manus beginning with Svāyambhuva,” and the “seers beginning with Bhṛgū.” A fragment in xii. 36. 1 ff. might almost seem to have served as a model for the (late) introductory verses of our Mānava-
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

4. A quaint tale, in which Manu figures as an ancient king on earth elected by a discontented democracy, will form a connecting link between the two characters (of divine being and legislator) which he sometimes bears as distinct in each, but more often unites in one. It is found in xii. 67. 17 ff.: "We have heard that a people without a king (arājakāh prajāḥ) was perishing, devouring each other like fishes. They therefore came together and made an agreement: to wit, that a voice-hero (brawler), a bully, an adulterer, and a thief should be deserted (made outcast); all the members of all the castes without exception (were to be punished thus). After they had made this agreement, they abode by it, but were, nevertheless, soon overcome by distress; and on this account they came to the grandfather (God), and cried out for a king, (saying) 'without a king we perish; show us a king whom we may honor, who may protect us.' He indicated Manu, but Manu did not give them a kind reception, and said, 'I am afraid of the evil deed; it is hard work to govern men, especially when they are wicked.' But the people answered, 'Fear not, the guilt shall rest on the criminals; we will agree to give thee one tenth of our income in grain, and one fiftieth in cattle and gold, a maid to wed (kanyām pulke!), and escorts to accompany thee, like the gods Indra and Kubera; thou shalt have one fourth of all the religious merit gained by thy people when they are protected by thee.' Manu thereupon accepted the kingdom, and ruled, destroying enemies and confining the people to their proper occupations. Therefore men who want increase should put a king at their head," etc. It is to be observed of this tale that the offer made to Manu by the democratic people was not munificent from a financial point of view, but very liberal as respects the religious gain; and Manu might have told them, according to his own law-book (vii. 130), he had a right to claim a tax of one sixth on grain, or one eighth, or one twelfth; but that one tenth was not the amount designated by his law; he might too have said that he was entitled to only one sixth of their religious merit (according to M. viii. 305), and could not avoid receiving a share of demerit when sinners did wrong through his kingly negligence! (One sixth is antique: cf. Vas. i. 44.)

5. Before giving the quotations from Manu as law-giver, I group here three or four allusions to him as a mystic being. In i. 170. 43, he imparts to Soma the science of seeing (cākṣuṣṭi viśyāni). In xiii. 48. 89, he runs away to heaven; and amid some
verses on women, like those in M. v. 55 ff. (none of them being here assigned to Manu), we read: "(When) Manu (was) desirous of going to heaven, he bestowed women upon men: (women who are) weak, jealous, etc." The verb is used of giving in marriage; possibly the "anxious to go to heaven" \( (jigamitum diavam) \) explains the cause of the action. A conversation of very modern tone is spoken of in xiii. 98. 64, between Bali and Ćukra, and told by Manu, son of the Self-existent, to Suvaśa, and by him to Nārada. Such conversations make of Manu a mere \( deus ex ma-\) china. Another conversation will be found in xii. 201–206, in regard to metaphysical and physical subjects; the speakers being the "best of creatures" \( (preśṭhāḥ prajānām: i.e., Manu Praji- \) pati) and the great seer Brhaspati. Occasionally, in such passa-
ges, a line reminds us of the Manavan-text (as 204. 4, \( yena yena \) carireṇa yad yat karma karoty ayam etc.).

In i. 52, "Manu" has been explained as equal to Mantra (as, e.g., in Hārīta, Dh. Ćaś. Sang.), though it is not clear if this be the case (Manvādi-Bhāratāś kecid . . . . adhitaye).

Many of the quotations given above have, aside from their own character, the stamp of late origin upon them. Most of them are from the latest portion of the epic, and not a few from that book which no one can read in conjunction with the rest without being impressed by its distinctively modern tone, aside from the fact that it seems historically to be later than the time when the work was transported to Bali. Now in the quotations I give below, it is interesting to find that a similar ratio of old and new exists, according as the citations are found in the earlier or later books. What follows are the direct ut-
terances of Manu as quoted in the Mahābhārata. I subjoin these in groups: as they are found in the earlier books, in the twelfth book, and in the remainder of the work. The twelfth book, from its especial attention to dharmaçāstra, deserves a particular division, being also earlier than the thirteenth, but not so early as the preceding books. Another division groups these quotations according as they are or are not found in our present Manu-treatise.

A. From the early books: quotations not found in our present Maṇava-treatise.

1. Daśaprotiyagamam rājā, ity evam Manur abraūit (i. 41. 31), 'Manu said, a king is equal to ten (Brahmans) learned in revelation.' No such statement is made in our text, while the compar-
ison actually extant ('the teacher is equal to ten learned in revelation') will be found in Mbh. xii. 108. 10, although not attributed to Manu.

2. In v. 37. 1 ff., "Manu Svāyambhuva said that these seventeen men smite with their fists at air, and those divinities who carry fetters in their hands lead these men to hell: (the seventeen are)
1. one instructing another who ought not to be instructed; 2. he who satisfies, or 3. pleases an enemy; 4. one who protecting women seeks enjoyment; 5. one who asks what ought not to be asked; 6. one who says what ought not to be said; 7. one high-born who does what ought not to be done; 8. one who, being weak, hates strongly; 9. one who speaks to an unbeliever; 10. one who loves what ought not to be loved; 11. one who, being a father-in-law, fools with (his son’s) wife, or 12. desires honor from her; 13. one who commits adultery; 14. one who reviles women; 15. one who takes without thanks; 16. one who gives and tells of it; 17. one who initiates the bad to a (sattva) religious ceremony.

We find nowhere in our text such a specific list, although some of these sinners are mentioned and condemned in a general way; but there is nothing apparently to warrant the words saptadaśe 'mān... Manaḥ... abraśī.

3. In iii. 35. 21: "Hast thou heard the royal laws, as Manu declared them—cruel, deceitful," etc. (aprouśis tvāṁ rājadharmanāṁ yathā vai Manur abraśī: kṛṇāṁ nīkṛṣisyapanaṁ vihiṁ tān acamāntmākāṁ). No objection could perhaps be taken to this passage, put in the mouth of Bhīma, were it not for the word "deceitful," but in the very rules quoted, the practice of deceit is forbidden, and all such practices as those Bhīma is urging are especially condemned (as they are elsewhere in the epic: cf. ib. 52. 22, and 12. 7, "he who acts deceitfully goes to hell."). The act urged is not one where deceitful ministers are employed, but is directed against a fair enemy (cf. 20, gṛnī brahmaṇarūpośi; "but in the Kṣatriya caste cruel-minded men are born").

4. In v. 40. 10 and 11: ajokā (Comm., ajena sahitā ukeśā) candanaṁ vinā ādārco mahāsarpiśī: viśam audumbaraiś ca con-khāh svarnanābhō tha rocamś cahe śhāpyotiṣayāni dhanyāni Manur abraśī: deva brahmaṇapājīrthām atithinām ca... That is, a formal list of things which Manu declared should be placed in every house, for the sake of honoring the gods, Brahmins, and guests. Compare in contrast to this the simple command (for no such list exists in our text) of the Māṇava-treatise, that grass, earth, water, and kind words should not be wanting (M. iii. 101).

5. In i. 73. 8 ff., the eight traditional marriages legally allowed (dharmataṁ smṛtāḥ) are given (as in M. iii. 21); and then occur these words: teśāṁ dharmāṁ yathāpūrvarm Manuḥ svāyambhavo 'braśī ('Manu said that the merit obtained by these was in accordance with the position of each in the list'). This cannot be inferred from the order given in our Māṇava-text, where we find (iii. 38) the iva form represented as being only one-half as beneficial as the prājāpatya; yet the Manu-treatise (ib. 36) also ascribes this order to Manu! The quotation says further: "the four first are approved for a Brahman, six in order are for a Kṣatriya;" now the Manu-treatise says (employing in iii. 24 ff. the same word prācāstha, 'approved') "the singers know four are for a Brahman;" but in verse 23 the sad ānapūrṇaḥ ('six first in order') are for a Brahman, and the four last are for a Kṣatriya; and, moreover,
the law-treatise says explicitly that four of these only bring good fruit, whereas the epic would permit the gāndharva form as "that best for a Kṣatriya" (27); so that it would seem scarcely possible to suppose that we here have any allusion to such a "Manu" as we now possess, although the last remark is made by Čakuntalā's father from interested motives. Furthermore, in verse 19, the king contracts a gāndharva marriage by "taking her hands according to rule and living with her," though the Māṇava-treatise (loc. cit., verse 43) says that this ceremony of joining hands is to be performed only when the two are of the same caste, while these here concerned are respectively of Kṣatriya and Brahmaṇ caste. It is further interesting that the verses placed between those quoted above, although agreeing with our Manu-text, are designated as "remembered" only. Now, although the Māṇava-text is a little uncertain in regard to the "best" marriage for each caste, so that the implied quotation may have once been in conformity with a Māṇava-treatise, there is no question as to the one decisive and formal quotation; it is not in our text, and is contradicted by it. In spite of the fact that the passage occurs in a story, it is improbable that, had the Manu-treatise existed as we now have it at that time, such a quotation could have been made from it. In a later passage (xiii. 44. 9 ff) the account is more like the law-book.

6. In i. 74. 99, we find a passage on sons (which may be compared in general with M. ix. 158 ff.), which reads as follows: svapativiprabhāvān puṇaḥ labdhāḥ kṛtān vivardhātān: kṛtān anyāsa co 'prannān putrān vai Manur abhravī; although in i. 120. 32 ff. there are twelve sons given, agreeing in the main with the list of twelve in the Māṇava-treatise, and preceded by ime vai bandhūyādāḥ sat putrā dharmadāpane: sad eva 'bandhūyādāḥ putrāḥ. But if this Dharmadāpane be the Māṇava-treatise, it is an incorrect quotation; and moreover, some of the sons are not the same as those in the Māṇava-treatise; there is besides a change in the order. The most interesting part of this quotation is that Manu claims this arrangement of sons as his own, while in Baudhāyana (ii. 2. 33) the sons and heirship is especially restricted to the legitimate son, by a quotation from Aupajandhāni.

B. FROM THE EARLY BOOKS: QUOTATIONS FOUND IN OUR PRESENT MĀṆAVA-TREATISE.

In verse 36 of the last extract (i. 120), there is a verse ascribed in one set of words to Manu (apatyai crestham ātmāśkrūd api Manuḥ svāyambhūvo 'bravīd), which, although not just so expressed, is found in sense in the Māṇava-treatise (cf. M. ix. 166); so that we may include this, as correct in thought, under B.

1. i. 120. 36: like in thought (though not an exact quotation) to M. ix. 166.

2. In iii. 180. 35: ("The life of a Brahman proves he is a Brahman; but") īvāc chūdrosamā hy esa yīnād vede na jīvate: taṃściva evam matidvaidhe Manuḥ svāyambhūvo 'braviḍ: M. ii. 172.
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

It is odd that we should find but two quotations in all these early books capable of being verified in our present Māṇava-text. In iii. 32. 39 we have one quotation which has no special significance, one way or the other: kartavyam eva karne 'si Manor esa viniscayāḥ. The words occur in a philosophic section, where the doctrine of karma (meaning here energetic action) is urged, as opposed to passively receiving what fate may bring (and the moral is drawn [b] ekāntena hy anihō 'yam parābhavatī pāruṣaḥ). M. ix. 300 (omitted by Medhātithi) is something like it.

C. From the Twelfth Book: Quotations Not Found in Our Present Māṇava-Treatise.

1 and 2. In xii. 57. 48: The rāja-dharma of Manu noticed above are introduced again: prāctasena Manunā plokau ce 'māv udāśītav rājadharmaṃ... These two verses (this is the first time we find a definite verse-quotation) are verses 44 and 45 (compare Indische Sprache 6608, given here and in Book V.), and neither of them is to be found in our Māṇava-text:

44. evātān puruṣo jahyād bhinnāṁ nāvam inā 'rnave:
apravaktāram ācāryam anadhiyānam tvejām.
45. arakṣitāraṁ rājānam bhāryāṁ ca 'priyavādāminim:
graṇakāmnān ca gopālān vanakāmaṁ ca nāpītaṃ.

The only place where the barber (nāpita) is mentioned in our Māṇava-text is at iv. 253, where permission is given to the Brahman to eat his food; and there is nothing that resembles “these two verses declared by Manu in his rules for kings.”

3. In xii. 112. 17. . . budhimāmaṁ tu vijayaṁ Manur abra-vit; and, again, in verse 19 (said of the four kinds of acts, those of intelligence, arm, foot, and bearing burdens): rājaṁ tiṣṭhati dakṣasya saṁghīte 'nādriyaśya ca: uryasya budhimulān hi vija-yam Manur abra-vit. Our text contains no such pithy remark as this.

4. In xii. 139. 108: The “seven qualities of a king,” as here explained, are unknown to our present Māṇava-treatise, although the verse says that Manu proclaimed them: mātā pitā gurur gopta
vañhir Vaiśravoṇa Yamaṁ: satpa rājno gunān etān Manur āha prajāpatiḥ. These are explained in the following verses: the king is like a father when he is compassionate; a mother, when he nourishes the wretched; a fire, when he consumes his enemies; Yama, when he restrains the wicked (yamayann aṣato Yamaḥ); Kubera, when he offers sacrifice; a Guru, when he gives instruction; a protector, when he protects (his people). The passages in M. vii. 4, ix. 308–311 will be at once recalled; but if we examine the two lists, it will be found that the epic category as compared with the legal one is both redundant and defective, while in the Māṇava-treatise the king is nowhere compared to a mother or to a Guru (in this way, guruv āyathā of the king in vii. 175 is another thing); still less is there such a group as this given.

5. In xii. 121. 8–12: Manu appears as the spokesman of
Brahmá, in the personification of punishment; he is the very danda (punishment), in whom all has its support; vyavahāra is established as a reckoning in dharma (dharmaśanikhyā ... vyavahāra iti āyate); and then follows: ity evam vyavahāraśya vyavahāratvam āyate: api cet tat purā rījan Manunā praktaṁ ādītaḥ (10). suprapitītaṇa dāndena priyāpriyaasamūtmanāḥ: praṣūt rakṣāte yah sanyagy dharmā eva sa kevalaḥ (11). yatho 'ktam etad vacanam prāgay eva Manunā purā: yan mayo 'ktam ... Brahmano vacanam muhāt (12). prāg idaṁ vacanam praktaṁ atah prāgvacanam viduḥ: vyavahāraśya cā "khyānūd vyavahāra ṣho 'cyate (13). (Comm.: "Verse 11, uttered by Manu, is thus the utterance of Brahman, heard from the mouth of Manu."")

It needs scarcely to be said that neither the definition of vyavahāra nor the verbatim quotation (verse 11: 'He is the very dharma who protects the people with well-directed punishment, he of whom the essence is indifference to pleasant or unpleasant things') is found in our text of the Māṇava-treatise.

6. In xii. 152. 14 (this remark is not found in our present Māṇava-text, although the nearest approach to it is found in M. v. 108 and vi. 96, where one is said to obtain heaven after "removing sin by giving up the world"): tyāgaśharmah, pavitṛāṇah sannyāsam Manuv abraviḥ (Comm.: "Among all the five means of purification, the meritorious act of giving is very important, but giving up the world is most important; so Manu said it was even more important than that."). The tyāga here is really gifts: cf. M. xi. 6, but note that even this verse is not in Medhātithi.

(7. See below, D. 2, one verse ascribed to Manu, and not in our text.)

D. FROM THE TWELFTH BOOK: QUOTATIONS FOUND IN OUR PRESENT MĀṆAVA-TREATISE.

1. xii. 55. 19: Bhīṣma begins his long discourse by referring to Manu Svāyambhuvya, to support the idea that the king who strews the earth with blood, killing even the Guru in battle, does well; for, āhutenā rane nityaṁ yoddhanyāṁ kartrapandhunā: dharmanis svargaṁ lokyan ca yudham hi Manuv abraviḥ. The general thought is identical with M. vii. 88–89, so that I place it among the extant quotations, although the Māṇava-treatise we possess never applies the adjective lokya to any thing, and never says that battle is svarga ('conducive to heaven'), while in the Māṇava-text this adjective is curiously enough applied with a negative to prāṇivadha ('the destruction of animate creatures is not conducive to heaven')—where, however, slaughter of animals is intended (M. v. 48).

2. The following quotations are (from the standpoint of our present Māṇava-text) half-wrong and half-right; xii. 56. 23 introduces them thus:

Manunā caś va ... gītāu gīkau mahātmanā dharmesu svesu ('these two verses are sung by magnanimous Manu in his laws'). The first is then given, verse 24—M. ix. 321 (repeated in v. 16. 34
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

as an original remark by Agni); the second is not found in our present Mānava-text:

(25) ayo hanti yadā 'jnānam agninā vāri hanyate: brahma ca kṣatariyo doṣeti tadā sidantii te trayāḥ (repeated with v. l., and not as a quotation, in xii. 78. 22–23).

Two verses follow close on these, declared to be “from Uṣānas.” One of them is the saying found in Manu viii. 351 (manyus tam manyum rochati etc.); the other inculcates the Manavān doctrine that even a Brahman learned in revelation may be slain in battle. It means a great deal, when we thus find one verse attributed to Manu which is not in our text, and immediately following one in our text referred to “Uṣānas.” In 34. 19, the latter is “from the Veda.”

3. Of xii. 78. 31, the general sense only is found in our present text: “Manu said that those who subdue the haters of Brahmins go to heaven, etc., purified as by bathing in a sacrificial stream.” What is meant is that even Brahmins may fight in battle to subdue their enemies, and that those who do so go to heaven (brahmadvisa nīyacchantaḥ . . . brahmalokajitāḥ svargyān virānā śiṣyā Manur abhavā).

4. If the “son of the Self-existent” is always Manu, the following general quotation (xii. 94. 14) may be classed with the above as correct in sentiment: dharmena yoddhavyam, for “so said the son of the Self-existent?” a short rule inculcating honorable fighting, which follows after detailed advice of the same sort, like the satāṁ dharmāḥ of M. vii. 90–93.

5. As to the efficacy of the aghanarṣana, we have a quotation (xii. 152. 30) which is like the present text: api eṣa 'puro nimaj-jeta japānīs trir aghanarṣanām: yathā āvasthūbhavābhyas tathā tan Manur abhavā. If we compare this with M. xi. 260–261, and again with xi. 83, we may possibly accept it as a combination of two statements: one, that a man is released from all sin by repeating the aghanarṣana and taking the bath, because this text releases from all sin just as a horse-sacrifice does; and the other, that even a Brahman-slayer is purified by a bath at a horse-sacrifice. Baudh. iv. 2. 15 ascribes a like remark to Manu: cf. Gaut. xxiv. 10.

6. The same Manu as that in C. 1 and 2 is credited, along with others, with praising “protection”—a remark so general that it might be applied to any Hindu law-book; but I insert it here as “verified,” not wishing to strain my argument by excluding doubtful evidence. It will be noticed that we here have the rāja-pātram of Manu spoken of, and that Manu is not the foremost authority. Thus, xii. 58. 1 ff.: “The essence of the king’s duty is to protect, for the Lord Bṛhaspati praises it, (as do also) Viśālakṣaṇa, Kāvyya, Mahendra, Pracetasa Manu, Bharadvāja, and Gaurāgirasa—all these deducers of rāja-pātra praise protection (rāja-pāstrapranaśāna brahmarṣyā brahmañavādināḥ: rākṣam eva prapaśsanto dharmam).

7. A general quotation, the first words of which are the same
as M. iv. 2, and the spirit of which agrees with the Māṇava-
treatise throughout, is xii. 21. 11 and 12: adrohaṇaṁ 'va bhūta-
nāṁ yadhaṁ sa satāṁ mātraḥ: adrohaṁ satyavacanam sam-
vibhadgō dayā domāḥ. prajanaṁ svēsu dāresu mārdavam hīr
acāpalam: evaṁ dharmam pradhaneṣṭam Manuḥ svāyambhuvo
bravi.

8. The next quotation I doubtfully place in this division. Bhāma
says that all those who by their evil deeds do injury to
their fellows should be officially taken in hand and restrained,
adding (xii. 88. 16) “this ordinance was made of old by Manu”
(na kenaçid yācitavanah kućcit kiñcīd anāpadi: iti vyavasthā
bhūtānāṁ purastān Manunā kṛtā). The Calcutta edition (=3317)
hast kasyānācid āpadi; and I see no resemblance to any passage
we have in our present text, especially as the commentator speaks
of kiñcīd as dattam ṛṇaṁ karaṇ vā; but as Manu says a
Brahman should not ask alms of bad men, it may pass as a half-
supported quotation from our text, though it seems here to refer
to the king’s levying a tax. It is in form more like that spurious
verse found in one of the Paris MSS. of Kulāka, after iii. 250
in our Māṇava-treatise, and evidently stolen from Viṣṇu lxiii. 30
(mā ca yāciṣma khaṇcana etc.).

I have already referred to the fact that the Self-existent is
sometimes the enunciator of laws which seem (by the wording of
the same being like Manu-verses) to imply his “son,” as in xii.
121. 12 (see above), where Manu is formally spoken of as the
spokesman of Brahmā, a sort of popular mouthpiece for the com-
mands of the Divine Being. Such remarks, however, as that in
xii. 167. 46, where the Blessed Self-existent declares that no
release is obtainable except by perfect disunion with birth, age,
etc., or “the rule as created by the Self-existent” (viz. that war-
rriors are cruel), v. 132. 7, cannot be taken as implying a quotation
from Manu, since there are various interpreters beside Manu of
the divine sayings. For this reason I make no attempt to group
the “laws of the Self-existent” with those “declared by Manu;”
though I cannot refrain from remarking that no universality
attained by the Manavān law-treatise ever results in the Mahā-
bhārata’s condemning to hell those who despise it. If a sacred
and universal law-authority is sought, we must go back of Manu,
to his “father”—in other words, the epic appeals not to Manu,
but, as the Māṇava-treatise itself does, to the Self-existent only,
when it would give the weight of the highest authority to its
words: “Those who break the ordinances of the Self-existent
sink into hell” (xii. 321. 30 ff.); but never is this said of those
who break the ordinances of Manu. Yet the Self-existent is at
times made responsible for a verse so very like that of his son’s
treatise, that we are tempted to believe the quota quoted from
the latter, intending to imply that he was spokesman. One such
case will answer: xii. 59. 60: “There are said to be ten vices
produced by anger and lust, and the teachers say that (four
vices) declared by the Self-existent are produced by lust.” Com-
Manu in the Mahabharata.

pare with this M. vii. 47 and 50. These four are the worst of ten vices produced by lust, and there are eight produced by anger, with three of them regarded as "worst," making a new group of seven worst vices (cf. Mbh. ii. 68. 20; xii. 140. 28: the epic admits the yuktyā doctrine, like the later Nitisāra, i. 48). If this grouping of vices is meant as a quotation from Manu, it is incorrect, according to our text to-day.

In all these quotations from the earlier and from the twelfth book, we have heard nothing of Manu's Dharmaśāstra; when his laws are mentioned, they are spoken of as the laws (dharma) alone, or the Royal-treatise (rājā-pātra) of Manu. In the thirteenth book we find the Dharmaśāstra for the first time.

R. FROM THE THIRTEENTH BOOK: QUOTATIONS NOT FOUND IN OUR PRESENT MĀNAVA-TREATISE.

The first quotation shows again the same odd fact: that, amid many verses which are not attributed to Manu, but are actually found in our Mānava-treatise, there is one attributed to him but not found in our text.

1. xiii. 88. 3 = M. iii. 267; ib. 5 = M. ib. 268, and so on for several verses; while, between these, verse 4 in the epic passage, although not in our present Mānava-text at all, is given as a quotation from Manu: vārdhamānatilān ārddham aksayam mānur abravīt (and therefore tila is mentioned before all edibles). A little further on (11): "Songs sung by manes are sung, which the Blessed Sanatkumāra told me (Bhīṣma)"; and this song proves to be compounded of M. iii. 273-4-5.*

2. In praise of the holy pools (tīrtha), we are told (xiii. 65. 3) that Manu said: "the highest gift of gifts is something to drink, and therefore one should dig pools, ponds, etc." This is not in our Mānava-text, which has no praise for the later tīrtha; on the contrary, a gift of water is not spoken of with much admiration (compare M. iii. 202, "even a gift of water fits one for immor-

* In connection with these rules for ārddha, it is interesting to note that no notion of their origin being due to Manu is found in the Mahābhārata, although that idea is expressed in the law-Sūtras. On the contrary, in xiii. 91, we find the ārddha ceremony ascribed to Nimi. Yudhishthira asks (1 ff.) by whom the ārddha was ordained, and at what time, and of what sort it was: was it, he asks, discovered in the time of Bṛha and Angiras (Bṛhāngirāske kāle), or by what devotee? Bhīṣma responds: Atri, son of the Self-existent, had a descendant Datiārāya; he had a son Nimi, who became awakened (prabuddha) after losing his son. He thought out the ārddha-kalpa, and what fruits and roots best fit it; then he bade priests, and gave them gifts on the first day of the moon. But he afterward reflected: 'Why have I done this thing, never done by sages of old?' Then Atri came and comforted him, telling him that this sacrifice to the manes was a law of old, seen (invented) by Bṛhā himself, and that it was agreeable to the Self-existent, etc. As Atri is called the son of the Self-existent, it is plain that this epithet does not designate Manu in all cases: but that it generally does, when used alone, I think is without doubt. To whom, however, does this refer, in xii. 293. 11: "A Vaśya should make gain, honoring the only son of the creator (Dhātā) who was born of the Self-existent (svayambhā ... aṛjat ... dhātāram ... dhāta ervaḥ putram ekam, tuṁ arocayitā vaśyāḥ, etc.)?"
tality," but only because it is rendered sacred by the prāddha; while "water-giver" comes at the beginning of a list of those whose gifts are mentioned in ascending value; and, ib. 267, water is a subordinate gift. Should any great stress be laid on the fact that Manu occasionally comes first in a list of law-givers, it would be well to note that in this passage he is preceded by Atri (piṭā-mahasūta) and Hariṇandra (manuṇendra), with their several gifts on desirable verses (cf. below, xiii. 115. 12).

3. In xiii. 61. 34 is discussed a rather abstruse point in regard to the proportion of religious merit or demerit obtained by a king as a result of protecting or neglecting his people. After stigmatizing the king who does not protect his people as a rājakauli, the speaker says (35): "The king incurs one fourth of all the sin committed by his people when they are not protected; now some say the whole (sin) comes upon the king, (or) moreover, a half. This is their decision; but our opinion is that (the sin incurred by the king) is one fourth (of the whole), having heard the ordinance of Manu." (caturtham matam asmākam Manoḥ grutvā 'nuṣṭanam). Cf. above in the tale of Manu as king (xii. 67. 17 ff.), and xii. 75. 6, 7; 88. 18–20, here given as pruti. Our present text awards this proportion of the sin only in case of incorrect decisions at court, where there are more than two parties to divide the sin among (M. viii. 18): but in the case at hand it emphatically says that the proportion is one sixth, or all, if the tax taken by the king (to insure protection) amounts to one sixth (viii. 304–308); while Yājñavalkya’s law-treatise sets it at one half. The good obtained by a king who protects well is in the same proportion: according to our Mānavata-text being one sixth, according to the Manus of the Mahābhārata being one fourth.

F. FROM THE THIRTEENTH BOOK: QUOTATIONS FOUND IN OUR PRESENT MĀNAVA-TREATISE.

1. xiii. 47. 35 et circs.: There is a great difference in what one calls a Brahman’s "wives;" the wife of the Brahman caste is best and highest; she alone waits upon him, etc. "Even in the treatise laid down by Manu this is perceived to be the eternal rule of right." (Mānuṇaḥ bhihitaṁ pāstrāṇ yān ca'pi . . . . tatrā 'py ese . . . . drṣṭo dharmaṁ sanātanaḥ). Compare with this M. ix. 85. Another quotation in this same chapter, agreeing with the laws of our Mānavata-treatise, is attributed not to Manu, but to the Self-existent (ib. 58): "The eldest has the best share, the pick of the property; this is the rule of partition formerly declared by the Self-existent (dīyavadhiḥ pūrvaṁ uktah svayamānāvah)."

2 and 3. xiii. 44: Contains two quotations strictly Manavan. In verse 18: "A man should marry a girl who is not a Sapinda on the mother’s or of the same family on the father’s side (asapindā mitur asagotṛā pītuḥ). Manu declared this law (taiḥ dharmān Manuṇaḥ abhūvit)." Compare M. iii. 5. In verse 23: "Manu does not approve of cohabitation with one who has no desire" (na hy akāminā svayāvahom Manuṇa evam praśanāt).” Compare M. iii. 10 ff.: A curious passage in regard to the eating of
meat, which begins with the statement that the seers had discussed the subject very thoroughly, and had all agreed that (10) if one firm in his vows should sacrifice month by month with a horse-sacrifice, or, again, should abstain from eating honey and meat, the reward in each case would be equal (a slight variation of verse 16, below); then follow the opinions of some of the ancients:

Verse 12: na bhakṣayati yo mūsām na ca hanyān na ghṛtayet: tam mitraṁ sarvodbhūtanām Manuḥ svayambhuno 'brahvit. Compare M. v. 50, where the first clause only is given, with the result sa loke priyataṁ yāti, etc.

Verse 14 gives M. v. 52 a verbatim, and in b ascribes the words to Nārada (Nāradaḥ prāha dharmātmā niyataṁ so 'vaśīdati).

Verse 15: Bṛhaspati declares that by abstaining (niṣṭrītyā) from honey and meat one in effect makes gifts, sacrifices, becomes devout. Compare M. vi. 14. In M. v. 56 it is said that abstinence in eating meat and drinking intoxicating liquors brings great reward, although no fault exists in the practice. The same antithesis of pravrūti and niṣtrūti is found Mbh. xiii. 115. 85.

Verse 16 is in a the same as M. v. 53 a, except māsi māsi for varṣe varṣe; in b it is declared to be the speaker's opinion (na khādati ca yo mūsām sanam etan matam mama). Bṛhma assumes the responsibility for this statement, though the remark is above, verse 10, accredited to the sages in general.

In 116. 11 a, we find 115. 14 a repeated, but not ascribed to Nārada; b adds that such a sinner is a very mean and harmful man, as does Manu.

5. In xiii. 115. 53 we are told, after a description of the meat proper for a pure sacrifice, that Manu declared other kinds sinful (ato 'nyathā vrthámūsāṁ abhakṣyām Manur abravati: asavṛgyum ayaṁ ca rakṣovat...). Similarly in 116. 18, we find rāksasau vidhiḥ, but only ucyate, 'it is said'.

The sentiment of the first portion of this our Māṇava-text also assigns to Manu, in saying that cattle may be slaughtered, but only at a sacrifice, and on no other occasion, "said Manu" (M. v. 41); the comparison of the second part is given in M. v. 50 (pipācavat), and previously in v. 31. On this same point I notice that the words of M. v. 39 are in Mbh. xiii. 116. 14, given as a pruti.

The general result of this passage for our inquiry is this: that the whole accords with our present text in the Māṇava-treatise, inasmuch as the latter permits meat-eating only at a sacrifice. But, in particular, one fourth only of the verse here ascribed to Manu is found in our present Māṇava-text; while half a verse extant there is here ascribed to Nārada, another half-verse (except for a small v. l.) is claimed as the speaker's opinion, and a general sentiment in the same connection like one found in the Māṇava-text is quoted from Bṛhaspati. Another curious thing is that in the rāksasau vidhiḥ quotation (cf. M. v. 31), where the words are almost identical with those in our Māṇava-text, it is not noted as a quotation from it; but where the words vary,
introducing a new element not in the corresponding verse of our present Māṇava-text, then it is assigned to Manu!

6. Although Dakṣa is called Prācetas, I think it is probably to Manu that this epithet refers in xiii. 46. 1 (we have had already the same epithet twice applied to Manu): "The sages of old repeat the word of Prācetas (which is), 'it is not a sale if the relatives of a woman do not receive anything; for (2) it is an honor shown to the girl'" (like M. iii. 64). The commentator refers the authority to Dakṣa. The meaning is, that valuables given by the bridegroom at a marriage, if the relatives of the bride do not take them, are not to be regarded as constituting a sale of the girl; they are a token of respect to the girl herself.

7. A doubtful quotation occurs xiii. 68. 31: "Manu, the knower of dharma, has declared (prāha) that the spiritual merit (dharma) is endless (akṣaya), both of the man who gives a present when abiding firmly in the right, and of him (who is of similar sort) to whom (the former) gives (the present)." The gist of this is in M. iv. 235, although no such quotation is actually extant in our text; and the Manu-treatise says about the same regarding presents from a king in vii. 86 (cf. 82, 83, akṣaya nidhiḥ), although only half the idea is here expressed. We may perhaps assume that it is a quotation made from the general idea, and based on what we find in our present text.

The statistical result obtained by grouping these quotations is as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Quotations found in Mbh., books</th>
<th>Verified (in our Māṇava-text)</th>
<th>Unverified.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>i.—xi.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xiii.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>17</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Those "unverified" are not to be found in our present Māṇava-treatise, either in word or thought. Those "verified" are of two sorts: a, where the words quoted correspond to the words found in our text; b, where the sentiment only can be verified in our text. It may sometimes be open to question whether a quotation I mark as verified in sentiment (b) is not really meant to be a direct quotation in words, and therefore strictly unverified. As this is impossible to settle, I have in each case given the benefit of the doubt, which I think is also more in harmony with the Hindu method of making quotations. Such a subdivision of the verified quotations gives us: i.—xi., a. 1, b. 1; xii., a. 2, b. 6; xiii., a. 2, b. 5. The quotation from iii. 32. 39 I have not reckoned in either group. If we discriminate between precise verbal quotations and general ones of the thought only, we shall have:

- Verified verbal quotations .............. 5
- Verified general quotations ............. 13
- Unverified quotations ................... 16
- Not counted ................................ 1

Total ........................................ 35
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

There is, however, a great difference in the correctness of the quotations from the early books (speaking of course always from the standard of our Māṇava-text). The twelfth book, with its numerous chapters on law, forms as it were a bridge between the other two sets. But take books i.–xi. as a type of the earlier, book xiii. as a type of the later literature. In the former we find six quotations ascribed to Manu, and not found in our present Māṇava-text, against two verified by our text; in the latter, only three not found in the present text, against seven verified. The proportion is almost reversed.

An objection may perhaps be presented against this division, to the effect that one has no right to separate the parts of one work so sharply into different classes, there being much that is modern encaised in what belongs to the older part of the epic. Though this is true, I think that in general the separation holds good, and quite enough so for the use I have made of it. The quotations from i.–xi. come in general from the earlier portion of the work; no one can doubt the late origin of the thirteenth book, who reads it in connection with the first portions or with book twelve.

The explanation usually accepted for verses such as the unverified quotations I have given above is, that the older recension of the Māṇava-treatise differed greatly from the present, was much longer, and contained probably those verses which have since dropped out of the text; so that, as quotations from “Manu,” thése citations in the Mahābhārata may have been really drawn from an older recension of the Māṇava-treatise (Cātra); or, if not from that, from the still older Dharmasūtra which grew into the Cātra, passing out of prose into metre, becoming popularized, and resulting in a different work altogether.

This easy and sweeping explanation accounts for everything, and is therefore eagerly accepted. To me it is unsatisfactory. Is it probable that the Dharmacāstram ever was larger than now? I think not. The Hindus say so, but that proves nothing. Their Brhad- was identical with their Vṛddha-Māṇu, and meant no more than “the great,” not necessarily implying a vaco bhātaram. The law books grow, not dwindle, with the years. Kullūka accredits more verses to Manu than Medhātithi did, and the latter is but a few hundred years earlier than the former. In the more modern Nandini version, still more verses have crept in. Have they not done so always? Again, in the Śūtra, granting that there were verses not preserved in the change to Cātra, what still shall we say of verses pretending to be from Manu and contradicted in the present Māṇava-treatise? Is it probable that these were the rules which lay back of the metrical recension? Did the latter develop into opposition to the Śūtra?

My own view is different, so different that I present it with some hesitation; but it seems to me more reasonable. I have endeavored in this essay to point out the position held respectively by Manu and by the Māṇava-treatise. They were quite different.
Manu was an ancient demigod, sage, authority on various matters; his words were decisive. But the treatise of Manu was a work seldom quoted, and that chiefly in the modern portion of the epic. Not more than half the remarks ascribed to Manu are found in the present Māṇava-treatise which the Hindus call the Manu-treatise; but, the further on we come toward modern times, the more often the quotations from Manu fit to our present Māṇava-text. From these data I draw the conclusion that the Čāstram was in great part collated between the time when the bulk of the epic was composed and its final completion; that, previous to its collation, there had existed a vast number of sententious remarks, proverbial wisdom, rules for morality, etc., which were ascribed, not to this "treatise of Manu" at all, but to the ancient hero Manu as a type of godly wisdom. These I conceive to have floated about in the mouths of the people, not brought together, but all loosely quoted as laws or sayings of Manu; and these sayings were afterwards welded into one with the laws of a particular text called the Māṇavas—a union natural enough, as the two bodies of law would then bear the same title, although the sect had no connection with Manu except in name. I fancy this sect built up their āśvāra ("usages") and kuladharma ("family law") out of their own heads, not ascribing them to Manu; then, seizing this distinct mass of "Manu's sayings," they appropriated them, and the two became one; but that most of them were taken in at a much later date than that when their dharmaśūtra passed into a metrical pātra. It is thus easy to see why we should find in the Māṇava-dharma-pātra such a number of verses ending with "so said Manu." If Manu says all, why emphasize a few? If all are from the Māṇava sect, why insert here and there a Manu-verse? According to my theory, these Manu-verses found in the Māṇava-treatise were simply caught up and drawn from the hearsay of the whole Brahman world, keeping their form after incorporation with the Māṇavas' text. This was especially valuable, because every time a fraud was intended, they could invent a verse and insert it in the old text. They had so many "Manu says," that it would be difficult to dispute a new one. Another point is explained by this; for I find that the "Manu said" verses in the Māṇava-treatise are often just those which are undoubtedly cases of later and fraudulent additions. Take the two verses in ix. 182, 183 ending in "Manu said"—the oldest commentator does not have them; take the verse on "written agreements," stolen from the later Narada—it ends with "Manu said." Make a wide application, look at other law-books (for other law-books beside the Māṇavas' have caught up or invented these quotations from Manu, and it is unwarranted to assume that the Manu-quotations in the Dharmaśūtra of Vasiṣṭha, Gautama, etc. are from the Māṇavas' Dharmaśūtra, although some may coincide). Doctrines utterly at variance with the Māṇava-treatise are palmed off upon us with a "Manu said:" doctrines of which we are able to say that they never existed either in the Māṇava-
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

(metrical) treatise or in the (prose) Sūtra. Take for example the Vyavahāra Mayūraka-quotations under the head of division of property (p. 46, ed. Mandalik). The writer, quoting from Nārada on the proper division of acknowledged goods, and stating what should be done when there is a suspicion of goods having been secreted in order to escape division, says: "dvayamāna vibhajyante, kośam gūdhe 'bravin manuh, 'things visible are divided; Manu said the ordeal by sacred libation (should be applied) in a (case where goods are) concealed.' Now this form of ordeal is not only not in our Mānavatext of to-day, but, the further we go back, the more impossible is it that it ever could have been there; for it represents a time posterior to that described by the Mānavatext, even as we have it now—the time of subsequent law-books, where this kind of ordeal is first described. Of course it could not then have been in the still older Sūtra. In short, it is a modern forgery, endorsed with Manu's name to give it respectability. We find an ever increasing preponderance of quotations more and more doubtful as we come on toward the later literature. That mass of rubbish contained in the Dharmagāstraśaṅgraha, most of which does not deserve the name of Dharmagāstra, has instances enough to prove this.

Such was undoubtedly the Hindu custom. A most interesting case has recently come to my notice, in comparatively modern literature. Among the Notes on Buddhist Law recently published in India are (iii. p. 25: Māvoo-wonana-dhammath) some chapters on marriage and divorce. Here we find two sections (20–21), the last of which is the only one in all the passages given (pages 1–33) which is referred to Manu, and this not only does not occur in the Mānavatreatise, but is taken directly out of the Buddhist Anganastutta of the Sutta Pitakam; while the many passages plainly from the Mānavatreatise are not ascribed to Manu; and in the corresponding section of the Menu-khyai we often find in the same way sentences not in the Mānavatreatise but attributed to Manu ("from ignorance or design," says the editor). The best example in this series of dhammathats is found in the Wagaru-dhammathat, iv. pages 1–5, where, out of thirty-two verses, eleven injunctions are ascribed to Manu, and none of these are found in our Mānavatext; while the passages taken directly from our Mānavatext are not ascribed to any one. Thus, on marriage, verses 4 and 6 are ascribed to Manu, while verse 5 is not; but verse 5 is in our Mānavatext, while verses 4 and 6 are not. Prof. Forchhammer observes, page 3 of his introduction, that Manu is frequently made to endorse the precepts of the Vinaya Pitakam, (by adding) "thus Manu has decided." I do not quote the acts of the Buddhists to prove those of the Brahmans, but I give this as a good example of a custom I believe from other grounds to have been long current among Hindu law-makers. For the earlier law-books I claim, therefore, that a quotation from Manu not verified in the present Mānavatext does not indicate at all that it ever was there. The older the
Sūtra, the more likely that the Manus-quotations are one like those
"Manu divided his property among his sons," "whatever Manu
said is curative," quotations found through the Brāhmaṇa literature,
and referring only to the divine or semi-divine being—while at
the same time it may happen that a quotation given in one Sūtra
from Manu may be found in the Mānava- (metrical) treatise, and
have once been in the Mānava- (prose) Sūtra, being current prop-
erty among the Sūtra-kāras. The kinds of quotations attributed
to Manu then in Sūtra, Čātra, and epic, are of motive and sub-
stance; the motive may be to inculcate some new strange doctrine,
in which case the quotation is deliberate forgery; or it may be to
remind the hearer of some old saying in harmony with what the
writer wishes to inculcate, and so calculated to strengthen his
assertion—in which case he probably quotes from some of the
"sayings of Manu" familiar to the popular ear. The substance
of these quotations is either wholly general, proverbial moral
teachings etc., or they are special, and bearing on some precise
point of law or custom. The last are least in number, till we
come to the very modern law-compilations and digests; where, in
my opinion, there is more intentionally fraudulent quotation than
correct citation, some texts quoting from one authority and
others the same from Manu, who is evidently a mere deus ex
machina in a great many cases; and the quotation from him does
not imply that it ever was really taken out of any law-treatise.
The Mahābhārata remarks, iii. 313. 110: pāthakāḥ and pāthakāḥ
and other pāstracintakāḥ are sarve vyasārino mārkāḥ. In my
opinion, the devotees of the legal Čātra were more knaves than
fools.

It is difficult to realize, without examining the matter in
detail, what a mere trifle the quotations given in this paper
from Manu are, when compared with the vast number of verses
Corresponding to those in the Mānava-text, but not referred to
it or to Manu: most of these latter being given without any
authority, some of them being marked as cūti, and others
attributed to entirely other sources. Another fact must be
borne in mind, lest, seeing so much of Manu, we fancy he is
par excellence the law-maker referred to. He is not. Others
share the honor with him. Among these he is sometimes
placed in the most conspicuous position, sometimes not. The
late inscriptions are prone to place Manu, who at that time was
as vague a personage as now, at the head of their lists of law-
givers, and, in Hindu parlance, as the primary maker of Dharm-
ācāstra, though it is not the Mānava-laws, but the laws of
Manu, they quote; and yet they had their Mānava-dharma-
sūtra, and probably by this time their Mānava-dharma-ācāstra.
In most cases, I think we shall find that the laws of Manu
are much later than the Mānava-laws: though some saying
ings of Manu" may go back beyond the time of the Mānava-
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

It seems to me at any rate certain that to refer "Manu said" verses out of the Sūtra and later literature to what may have been lost from the text-book of the Mānava sect is indefensible.

I have touched above upon two points which I wish to elucidate here more fully, by way of supplement to the discussion already given. They are: 1. the quotations from Manu in the late digests of law; 2. the quotations from Manu in the Mānava-treatise itself.

1. I have already spoken of the trial by sacred libation which is accredited to Manu, and shown that it was in reality a later product. It occurs first in Yājñavalkya's list, and is given in full by Nārada. The Manu-treatise has but three kinds of ordeal; and it is unlikely that a Sūtra would have contained what was only known to later times (see on this point Schlagintweit's Gottesurtheile). I append other improbable quotations from the Vyavahāra-Mayūkha.

On page 77 of Mandlik's text, we read: "he who receives what ought not to be given and he who gives it shall both be punished like thieves, and be made to pay the highest fine, (said) Manu." Other texts also refer this to Manu. It is not in our treatise. On pages 50 and 51, we have close together these two verses: "If any common property is discovered after partition, that partition should not be recognized; it should be made again, (said) Manu;" and, "when there is a doubt of partition among co-heirs, the partition must be made again, even if (the heirs) have taken separate abodes, (said) Manu." Neither of these is in our treatise, though here and elsewhere (Mādhava etc.), they are attributed to Manu. On page 61, we find a quotation subsequently attributed to Bhāspati given to Manu (Kull. to M. ix. 192). On page 85 (sa eva means Manu), Manu is credited with saying, "As they have been enjoyed, reckoning from the time of entry, a house, door, shop, etc., shall be possessed and not removed." This is not in our treatise; and by other late works it is given to Bhāspati (Vir., Kām., Mādhava).

Bṛhan-Manu is mentioned once in the Vyav. Mayūkha. It is an instructive passage. We find in our treatise, at ix. 142, a verse respecting the relationship of adopted sons to their natural fathers; now a verse with this is quoted in the Dattaka Mīmāṃsā from Bṛhan-Manu as a genuine verse, while the Vyav. Mayūkha quotes it only to say of it "we know of no foundation for this quotation" (tasya mādaṁ na vṛdamāḥ: page 45). In the Mitakṣarā (ii. 5. 6), we find another difference with our Mānava-text (v. 60) attributed to Bṛhan-Manu. Shall we say that this is an old verse lost in our text, or also that "we know of no foundation for it?" Two quotations occur in the Vyav. May. from Vṛddha-Manu (so in Viramitrodaya); both are simple additions to our text, on the subject of the responsibility of servants, and the obligation to pay them "half wages" if they are engaged and dis-
missed before the expiration of the time of the agreement. Vīramitrodaya gives them to Brhan-Manu.

That Brhan-Manu and Vṛddha-Manu are one is proved by the fact that e.g. the Dāya-bhāga, xi. 1. 7 (Stokes, page 305), attributes to Brhan-Manu a verse on the behavior of the widow of a childless man (wherein she is the sole inheritor), which in the Mitākṣarā is given to Vṛddha-Manu (ii. 1. 6).

Other texts than the Mitākṣarā and Vyavahāra Mayūkha give late quotations from these two. The Dāya-bhāga, ix. 17 (Stokes, page 294), has one which says: "The sons of the Brāhmaṇa shall take the land which was received as a pious gift; but all the sons of the twice-born castes shall take the house, as well as the field which has come down from ancestors." This is opposed to the Mānava-law, and is plainly a late verse, in the interests of Brāhmaṇhood. I do not think it profitable to go with any fullness into these modern texts, but will quote two or three to show their uniformly late appearance. Dāya-bhāga, ii. 23 (Stokes, page 204):

"The support of persons to be maintained is the approved means of gaining heaven; but hell is a man's portion if they suffer; therefore let one carefully maintain them.—Manu." This is carried over from the relation of king to priest. Dattaka-mānasī, i. 9 (Stokes, page 533), quotes from Manu, "a son of any description must be anxiously adopted, for the sake of the funeral cake etc." This is opposed; for our treatise limits in kind the adopted son. It is also ascribed to Manu in another late treatise, the Dattaka-Candrikā. These two texts both ascribe the following to Manu (D. M. v. 45; D. C. vi. 3; Stokes, pages 595-602): "He who adopts a son without observing the rules ordained should make him a participator of the rites of marriage, but not a sharer of the wealth." This is also not Manavan in its sentiment. Let us also remember that the earliest law knew nothing of adopting sons (Sūtra of Gautama) with such distinctions; therefore it cannot be antique.

"Joint property cannot be given," is a quotation given to Manu by the commentators to Dāya-bhāga; most authorities ascribe it to Brhaspati (D. B. ii. 27; Stokes, page 208). So a passage of Brhaspati according to Dāya-bhāga ii. 43 (Stokes, page 212) is really in M. ix. 156.

From these random quotations the theory I have advanced seems strengthened. Manu-quotations are mostly very modern in tone, and do not prove old verses lost from our text. As to Brhat or Vṛddha-Manu, I think he was an invention, and probably as worthless an addition to legal literature as the many other Brhats and Vṛddhas which have been preserved to show how late and spurious such works on the face of them are. Vṛddha does not mean 'old,' but 'bulky,' I think.

2. Unverified quotations from Manu in the Mānava-dharma-cāstra. By this (to a Hindu) somewhat paradoxical title I mean those verses in our present Mānava-treatise which are quoted as coming from Manu by the usual stamp at the end, a "Manu said
so,” or a “this is the ordinance of Manu.” Prajápati, though usually interpreted as equivalent to Manu, I do not include here, or in other quotations. This is the last point of view from which I shall attempt to investigate these quotations, for I have gone carefully through all those contained in the later Smṛtis of the Dharmśāstrasāngraha published in Calcutta, and do not think them worth alluding to, although they support my position. Even the few verses of Nārada quoting Manu I omit, though here too the searcher will find ground for my argument. The Mānava-treatise is clearly the most difficult portion of the investigation, as the whole treatise in which the Manu-verses are found is attributed by the Hindus to Manu. I do not want to strain the argument, and I admit frankly that there are verses stamped in this manner which I cannot prove to be modern additions to the whole work. It is sufficient for my purpose, however, to show what I am convinced is the case—that since the Mānava-treatise was completed, spurious verses have crept in; and that, in most of the cases where we find verses ending with “Manu said,” there are signs of their being later additions when they are found in the late portions of the work, signs given by text-criticism, and entirely apart from the fact that they bear this formula. According to the theory I have advanced, such verses ought to be found most frequently in the portion of the work latest developed and most enlarged. Now, not giving credence to Dr. Burnell’s theory that the treatise was composed for a king as a guide to his administration (a theory which, as he has boldly stated it, seems to me at variance with the historical development), and accepting the generally received opinion that the Mānava law-book is a normal growth out of the Mānava (prose) Sūtra, it will be probable at the outset that the chapters on civil and criminal law will contain most of these unverified, i. e. surreptitiously inserted, verses, since these chapters (viii. and ix.) have probably suffered most enlargement since the days of the original Sūtra.

In the Mānava-treatise, after deducting the references to Manu as maker of the treatise (i. 1, 102, 118, 119; xii. 117; inferred, i. 4, 33, 34, 58, 60, 61, 79; as in general the Supreme, ix. 327; xii. 129), and after the general authorization of the work (ii. 7), which says that all laws proclaimed by Manu are directed in the Veda, we find twenty-two quotations referred emphatically to Manu. Of these, nine are in the portions of the work devoted to domestic and ceremonial rules and general laws of conduct, which we can call in general the part most nearly corresponding to the original form (Lectures iii.—vi., x., last part; none in ii., vii., xi.); while thirteen are in the portion devoted to civil and criminal law, a part that in the Sūtra literature holds a subordinate position, but keeps ever expanding (Lectures viii., ix.). It is in the latter portion that we should expect to find doubtful quotations.

In detail they are as follows.
A. FIRST GROUP:

1. iii. 36. Certain qualities have been declared by Manu for each marriage. The matter is old. The corresponding verses in Mahābhārata, while differing in detail, show that its authority as a Manu-verse was general, although the epic quotation is incorrect.

2. iii. 150. Manu declared a Brahmanic thief, eunuch, or infidel as unworthy of hānya and kavya.

3. iii. 222. Manu declared that a son or grandson might partake of the Črāddha, when the father was dead.

4. iv. 103. Manu declared a suspension of study on certain occasions. Medhatithi says this is an "old verse," and by some regarded as opposed to verse 102, but it is supported by the Sūtras.

5. v. 41. Manu said cattle should be slain at sacrifice only. This is contained in Vasistha, and was probably in the Mānava-Sūtra.

6. v. 131. Manu said that beasts killed by dogs, Čaṇḍālas, and (other) Dasyus were pure.

7. vi. 54. Manu Śvāyambhuva said that the vessels fit for ascetics were gourd, bowl, pot, rattan. Doubtful; not in Medhatithi’s commentary; alābu (gourd) occurs nowhere else; subject a disputed one.

8. x. 63. Manu declared a condensed rule of duty for the four castes.

9. x. 77, 78. Manu Prajāpati said that some of the duties of the Brahman cease with the Kṣatriya and Vaiṣya.

There is no reason for questioning the antiquity of any of these verses excepting the seventh, which is doubtful.

B. SECOND GROUP.

1. viii. 124. Manu Śvāyambhuva declared ten places where punishment may be administered.

2. viii. 139. Ordinance of Manu regarding fine for debtor. This contradicts verse 58, and, according to Nārāyaṇa, is wanting in some MSS. (cf. verse 51).

3. viii. 168. Manu said that what was written by force was illegal. Jolly says this is stolen from Nārada iv. 55; it is the only distinct recognition of writing in the work, and is clearly interpolated.

4. viii. 204. Manu said that a suitor on a certain occasion might take two girls "at the same price." This contradicts the older law, where sale was not allowed, and contradicts the older sentiment of the treatise itself (iii. 51–54; ix. 98), where this implied purchase of wives is denounced.

5. viii. 242. Manu said that a cow with calf, bulls, cattle of gods, with or without keeper, should not be fined for injury. Vās., Baudh., Āp., Gaut., have nothing like this. Yāj. (ii. 103) omits the cattle of gods in a like list, and says the law holds only when there is no keeper. Gaut. in general says a cow is to be
Manu in the Mahābhārata.

fined (xii. 22). Viṣṇu gives the rule only for bulls and cows with young (v. 150); if this refers to the sacred bulls of the gods (as in Viṣṇu lxxxvi.), it is quite late (cf. Jolly to Viṣṇu).

6. viii. 279. Ordinance of Manu: the limb of a low-caste man is to be cut off, if he injure a high-caste man therewith.

7. viii. 292. Manu says there is no penalty for a driver when straps, girth, etc. break. In verse 290 we have a general ahūkā (‘they say’); the first part is not in Medhātithi’s gloss; the matter is late.

8. viii. 339. Manu said it was no theft to steal fruits and roots of large trees, fire-wood, or grass to feed cows with. This rule is ascribed by Ap. (1. 28. 2 ff.) to Vārṣāyana, though here to Manu; it appears to be a late restriction on verse 331.

9. ix. 17. Manu ordained certain traits for women (probably Prajāpati, the creator, is meant).

10. ix. 158. Manu Svāyambhūva declared that six were sons and heirs; six, sons and not heirs. Only the later law knows the twelve kinds of sons. The parallel verses in the Mahābhārata contradict the arrangements of the sons. The fact of its reference to Manu is nullified by the lateness of the matter.

11, 12. ix. 182, 183. Manu said that all brothers became fathers by one son; and that all wives became mothers by one son. These are not in the oldest commentator (Medh.); their matter and juxtaposition alone make them suspicious; verse 182 first crops out in the Mitākṣara.

13. ix. 239. A curse on sinners as “ordainment of Manu,” very late in matter and suspicious in form; unexampled in early literature. In this group, only 1, 6, and 9 are of an antiquity not open to reasonable question; 5, 7, 8, 10, and 13 are of doubtful antiquity; and of the remainder, or 2, 3, 4, 11, and 12, there is every reason for suspecting the character.

To sum up: there is then in most of the nine cases in group A. (so far as the text-criticism goes) no reason to doubt the ancient character of the verses.

There is in group B. no reason for doubt on this point in three of the thirteen quotations, but some reason in five of them; while in the remaining five there is every reason to suspect their antiquity, and consequently to regard them as forgeries. The proportion is again significant. Even in the “treatise of Manu” itself we find the tendency to interpolation increasing in the later portions, and the “Manu” verses most frequent and most suspicious are in the most modern chapters. We have learned that the “treatise of the Mānas” did not, as the Hindus think, come from Manu. It seems probable also that the “verses of Manu” do not, as European scholars assume, necessarily come from the Mānas-treatise.

Note: To the matter of the introductory remarks add Manu = mantra in xiii. 7.

18. The fulness of quotations in book xiii. contrasts with the lack of any in books xiv.–xviii., which in form are earlier. Even the Upaniṣads foreshadow the above process: x. 63 has five original and six added verses (Grassmann); in one of the latter we find Manu spoken of for the first time in the hymn (6. Manu-bhava), unless the word be here better taken as an adjective.
ARTICLE VIII.

THE ARABIC BIBLE

OF

DRS. ELI SMITH AND CORNELIUS V. A. VAN DYCK.

BY PROF. ISAAC H. HALL,
OF NEW YORK CITY.

Presented to the Society, October 25th, 1883.

The sources of this account are, 1. personal inquiries and investigations, made both in this country and at Beirut; and 2. an account written by Dr. Van Dyck himself, and kindly transmitted to me in May, 1883.

Though several persons are no longer living who would have been able to add a number of interesting, if not important particulars, and to supply facts now recoverable only by inference, yet perhaps a little more might still be learned at Beirut by oral inquiry than I am now able to accomplish by letter. Several persons who are still living, both native and foreign resident, would readily supply desirable facts in oral communication, from whom nothing is to be hoped in the way of correspondence.

But all such inquiries, when made, except from people who were actually engaged in work upon the Arabic Bible, have, at most, resulted in the discovery of some extraneous incident, or in putting me on the scent of some fact for which I had to go again to headquarters. Different persons (innocently, of course) have given different accounts of the same matter. I have had abundant occasion to see that the history of the production of the American Arabic Bible has never been much studied or much known, even in Beirut; and that there was little use in taking a current story without sifting it to the bottom. Many an inquiry, also, both oral and written, has
been answered by a reference to this or that printed book; which latter has generally proved, on examination, to contain no more explicit or particular information than was suitable for the ordinary readers of the popular publications of the religious and benevolent societies. Besides, I have found many mistakes in the popular publications.

When in Beirût, I inspected the working library of the translators (gathered through the knowledge and efforts of Dr. Eli Smith), besides a specimen selection of the correspondence had by Dr. Van Dyck with various scholars during the progress of the translation. This specimen correspondence included a great variety of documents, in various languages, of various grades of value, and was quite a rare and curious collection. These—and the whole mission library, in fact—are now deposited in the library of the theological seminary of the Syrian Protestant College. They were, when I was there, in the Mission Rooms at the building of the American Press.

The records of the Mission and of the American Press give dates of certain votes, and of the presentation to the mission of this or that edition of the Bible or of some part thereof: and the papers and records of the American Press would probably enable one to give statistics of the number and kind of the editions issued. But of the real internal history of the production of this Bible, not much is to be learned from such sources. Official accounts of work of the sort generally steer clear of the internal history. The statement that at such a time it seemed proper to do such or such a work gives no hint of the toil, struggle, discussion, persuasion, that may have been necessary before that result was reached.

Many of my inquiries elsewhere, and results thus obtained, coincide exactly with Dr. Van Dyck's own account; and I therefore forbear to duplicate those portions. It seems best, moreover, to give Dr. Van Dyck's account first, and to add such supplementary matter as I have obtained from other quarters.

1. DR. VAN DYCK'S ACCOUNT.

"The earliest Arabic version of the Scriptures, as far as I know, is that made under John, Bishop of Seville, about 750 A.D., from the Vulgate. According to the Jesuit Mariana, the whole Bible was translated, but was never printed. A number of manuscript copies of it have been found in Syria, but it was never [generally] known in the East.

"Rabbi Saad Ghidgaon, commonly known as Saadia of the Babylonian School, translated the whole of the Old Testament from Hebrew into Arabic in the ninth century, for the use of the Arabic-speaking Jews, of whom there were several tribes or families in Arabia. The Pentateuch of this version was pub
lished at Constantinople in 1546, in Hebrew characters, then at Paris in 1645, in Arabic characters, and at London in 1657.

"An edition of an Arabic translation of the Samaritan Pentateuch was edited by Juynboll, of Leyden, a few years before his death. . . . I had this version, among others, before me while making my translation. I now recall the name: 'Abu Said the Samaritan'; date unknown—between the tenth and thirteenth centuries. A few copies have been found in Syria.

"An unknown Jew of North Africa made an Arabic translation of the Pentateuch in the thirteenth century, which was printed in Europe in 1622.

"A translation of the prophetic books from the Septuagint by a Jew of Alexandria, in the tenth century—latter part—was printed at Paris, 1645, and at London, 1567.

"There are extant parts of the historical books translated from the Syriac in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. Some have been printed in Europe. We find occasional fragments of these in convents.

"The version of the Psalms used by the Papal Greeks is a translation from the LXX. by Abdallah Ibn el-Fadl, in the twelfth century; printed at Aleppo, 1706, and at London, 1725. Another version was printed at Genoa, 1516, and at Rome, 1614; and a third, from the Syriac apparently, was printed at Shuweir, Mt. Lebanon, in 1610.

"Little is known of Arabic versions of the New Testament. The Gospels seem to have been in Arabic since the seventh century, and the other books since the ninth and tenth. Several versions of parts of the New Testament are in existence; some from the Syriac, some from the Greek, and some from the Coptic. The Four Gospels were first printed at Rome in 1591, and the whole New Testament in Holland, 1618, and at Paris, 1645, and at London, 1657.

"In the early part of the seventeenth century, Sarkis er-Rizz, a Maronite bishop of Damascus, got permission from the pope to gather and compare copies of the Arabic Scriptures, and make a new version; and he began the work in 1620, reducing all to the Vulgate: i.e., taking the version printed at Rome, and comparing with other Arabic versions and the Greek, but giving the preference to the Latin in most cases, as is evident from the version itself. This version was printed at Rome (about 1671), in three folio volumes, with the Apocrypha. It was (without the Apocrypha) adopted by the British and Foreign Bible Society, and printed by them, and circulated in the East by all missionaries, until the new version was made.

"It is said that the Sultan Muhammad II. ordered a translation of the Old Testament to be made from the Greek into the Arabic, but it is not known whether the work was ever executed. Probably not, or some trace of it would have been found.

"Between 1840 and 1850, Fares es-Shidiak and Professor Lee, under the auspices of the Church Propagation Society, made a
version of the Scriptures in Arabic. In this the mistakes of King James's English version are copied. It seems that Shidiak translated from the English, and Prof. Lee was supposed to reduce it to agreement with the Hebrew. This version never came into use. It was printed between 1851 and 1857 at London.

"As far back as 1837, the mission of the A. B. C. F. M. in Syria was considering the idea of making a new Arabic version of the Scriptures. The means for printing it when made were defective; and Dr. Eli Smith began his labors on Arabic type mostly with the printing of the Bible in view. His punches and matrices and fonts of type were ready by 1843, but ill-health and domestic affliction prevented his actually beginning the work till 1848, when he commenced, with the help of Muallim Butrus el-Bistani, a good Syriac scholar, who first studied Hebrew with Dr. Smith. He made the first draught, and Dr. Smith carefully reviewed and compared it with the original. As soon as a form was ready, it was put into type, and a copy sent to each missionary in the entire Arabic field, and also to any other Arabic scholars near enough at hand. These proofs, with any suggestions, emendations, corrections, or objections, were sent back to Dr. Smith, who carefully reviewed each, and adopted what he thought proper.

"Having begun on the Old Testament, and proceeded but a little way, Dr. Smith thought best to leave the Old Testament and proceed with the New Testament. He left a basis of the entire New Testament, but nothing was put in type. Dr. Smith adopted no known text of the Greek, but selected from Tischendorf, Lachmann, Tregelles, and Alford, as he thought fit. He had gone on far with the New Testament when Alford was published; and he stopped until he could go back and compare what he had done with Alford. On his death-bed, he said he 'would be responsible only for what had been printed:' viz., Genesis, and Exodus with the exception of the last chapter. I edited the last chapter of Exodus after he died.

"Dr. Smith died in 1857, January; but for the last year or more of his life he was able to do nothing at the translation. In the fall of the same year, I removed to Beirût [from Sidon], and assumed the care of the Press, and continued the translation of the Scriptures. It was then found out that Dr. Smith had followed no [one] Greek text of the New Testament, and this the Bible Society could not allow; wherefore the whole New Testament had to be done over. I was directed to begin on it, and to finish it before turning to the Old Testament. I followed the Received Text, with permission from the Bible Society to put in as many various readings in the foot-notes as seemed desirable, especially where the text differed from the Syriac or any known version in Arabic; and I availed myself largely of this permission.

"I followed the same plan as Dr. Smith, in sending out proofs, and re-reading and comparing all that were returned to me.
Some of the more difficult parts of the Old and New Testaments were kept in type for several months, till I could get the criticisms of Rödiger and Fleischer, from Halle and Leipzig. I have still their criticisms on the Song of Deborah and other difficult passages. The translation was finished August 23, 1864; and the printing of the first edition, 29 March, 1865. The New Testament had been finished and printed in 1860. Thirty copies of every form were struck off and distributed as above mentioned, and thus the work became the result of the labor of a large number of scholars. As Arabic scholars, Dr. Smith associated with him Sheikh Nasif el-Yazigi and M[ualim] B[utrus el-] Bistani, both Christians. I had with me Sheikh Yusuf el-Asfir, a Muslim, and a graduate of the college of the great Mosque of El-Azhar in Cairo. I preferred a Muslim to a Christian, as coming to the work with no preconceived ideas of what a passage ought to mean, and as being more extensively read in Arabic.

"The Jesuits have issued a translation, made by them with the assistance of Ibrahim el-Yazigi, son of Dr. Smith’s former assistant, and printed in three large octavo volumes. It is a fair translation generally, and only differs in very slight particulars from mine (so far as I have traced it)—and that only for the sake of differing from the Protestant Version.

"The first printed of the New Version was the New Testament, 12mo, reference. That was followed by the entire Bible, 8vo, reference; then 12mo voweled New Testament, and 16mo New Testament without vowels. I then went to New York, and in the Bible House got out electrotype plates of a plain Bible, 8vo. These plates are still in use, and show very little wear. I am now at work reviewing them for correcting such little breakages as may have taken place in printing so many editions from them.

"After two years, I returned to Beirut with Mr. S. Hallock, and we made here electrotype plates of four sizes of the entire Bible, one voweled entire; three sizes of the New Testament, one voweled; and one set of voweled Psalms, 12mo: in all, between 10,000 and 11,000 plates. Some of these were made after I left the Press, and by oversight of proof-reader were not compared with the standard copy which I had left there for that purpose. By this means some slight discrepancies between the editions have crept in; and I am now re-reading proofs of all the plates, to reduce all to the same reading, and to correct any errors of broken letters or vowel-points which may have occurred. The British and Foreign Bible Society have also electrotyped two editions of the New Version (entire Bible), and several parts of the Scriptures."
The American Arabic Bible.

To Dr. Van Dyck's account, some few things may be added.*

During the preparation of the plates in New York, sundry minor revisions in the translation were made, such as in the renderings of the words for hades and gehenna in the New Testament. These may be seen by comparing the former with the later editions.

The first edition of the whole Bible shows plainly where Dr. Smith's printing closed and Dr. Van Dyck's began, by the arrangement of the sheets. The last chapter of Exodus, except the title (which is on the preceding leaf), occupies one leaf by itself.

The Butrus el-Bistani mentioned by Dr. Van Dyck is the same who compiled the Mohut el-Mohit, which is for the Arabic language what Webster's or Worcester's dictionary is for the English. He also wrote the Miftah, or 'Key,' an Arabic grammar which is in common use, and highly esteemed by every one. At his death, which occurred quite recently, he was engaged in compiling an Encyclopaedia in Arabic, of which several large 8vo volumes were already issued; but I do not know how far down the alphabet he had reached. He also edited three periodicals, a daily, a weekly, and a monthly. He spoke English well, had a flourishing school, and was an esteemed and respected citizen of Beirūt.

Fares es-Shidiāk was the author of the common Arabic grammar that goes by the name of "Faris' Arabic Grammar," published by Quaritch. He was a brother of Assaad es-Shidiāk, who was famous as a martyr among the Protestants, and as a heretic among the Lebanon Maronites. (He was imprisoned for his faith by the officials of the Lebanon native Christians, and never let out alive. Stories differed greatly as to his actual fate. His jailors declared that he fell sick and died, but others told a very different story. Many a native told me the story as he believed it; and they all agreed that he had been either starved or murdered.)

The Sheikh Nasīf el Yazigy, who assisted Dr. Eli Smith, was the author of several books published by the American Press at Beirūt; none of them, perhaps, more noted than his commentary on the Arabic grammar of Ibn Akīl. His poems are still for sale at the Press.

It will be observed that in general Dr. Van Dyck's account of former Arabic versions, though brief, is more complete than

---

* At the reading of this paper were exhibited copies of the editio princeps of the N. T., 12mo, the second, 16mo; the first pocket Arabic N. T. (the copy exhibited having been printed from movable types, before the plates were made); the editio princeps of the entire Bible, and a 12mo reference Bible. Prof. Edwin R. Lewis, M.D., then lately returned from Beirūt, passed round a fine cabinet photograph of Dr. Van Dyck.

VOL. XL. 86
those found in easily accessible works; but it is scarcely within
the scope of this paper to supplement it by a fuller bibliogra-
phical list; especially, as the issues of which he makes no
mention were little more than later repetitions. The technical
student will easily recognize the works which Dr. Van Dyck
mentions so briefly. Perhaps it should be mentioned that the
Arabic Pentateuch was published in quarto at Leyden in 1629;
and that the publications referred to as "Paris, 1645" and
"London, 1657" are in, or part of, the Paris Polyglott and the
London (Walton's) Polyglott, respectively. Also, that the
Arabic Gospels published at Rome in 1591 appeared in two
forms: one Arabic, with interlinear Latin, illustrated with
numerous elegant engravings, and probably issued in 1680;
while the other, which answers more exactly to Dr. Van
Dyck's description, lacked the interlinear version, and appeared
in 1591.

The version of the Psalms printed at Genoa in the year 1516
is the famous Octuple Genoa Psalter, in Hebrew, Greek, Latin,
and Chaldee, with a Latin translation of each, and the Vulgate,
in parallel columns, and "Scholia" along the margins where
possible. It is believed to be the second printed book in which
Arabic type was used. It is best known in America for its
famous note on the nineteenth Psalm, recording certain discov-
eries of Christopher Columbus not easily met with elsewhere.

From various sources I have learned that the New Testa-
ment translation of Dr. Eli Smith was actually not used by
Dr. Van Dyck: principally, I understand, because its following
an eclectic text would make it at least a little confusing to one
who was under orders to follow the Greek textus receptus. But
I also heard, and am inclined to believe, that the manuscript
was burned (I never could learn by whom), and that the few
printed sheets or proofs were destroyed. At all events, Dr.
Smith's translation of the New Testament was not adopted (or,
we may say, it was rejected) by the Bible Society, on account
of its underlying text; and I could find no trace of the manu-
script copy in Beirut. Nothing would be more natural, in
view of the ideas that then prevailed respecting the New Testa-
ment text, than for some one to destroy it in holy horror, or as
a well-intended but misguided work; for Dr. Smith was much
ahead of his times, though apparently not a New Testament
critic. I am inclined to think, on the whole, that it was
destroyed as if useless, with tacit acquiescence of all concerned,
as one would destroy a first draught after a fair copy was
produced.

Here I may say that Dr. Van Dyck informed me orally that
the particular variety of the textus receptus which he used, by
direction, was that of Mill: I think, in some of its English
reprints. (Of course the professed reprints vary very much. The Oxford edition of 1836, with its repetitions, is almost the only one that is accurate—correcting Mill's misprints.)

Dr. Smith's work, to judge from the little that is left (Genesis, and Exodus all but the last chapter), is an exceedingly nice piece of work as a translation, and shows, as its strongest mark, the effect of file and finish. His chief difficulty as a translator, as I have been told by those who knew about his habits of work, was in deciding between a number of synonyms in rendering a word. Some of the missionaries who believe in rapid work have said to me that he was therein a prey to indecision; but to that I cannot agree. His work shows abundant discrimination and positiveness. But his (unfinished) Old Testament manuscript, as I have been told by those who saw it, often had a column of synonyms six or seven deep and high, above and below nearly every important word in the line.

To Dr. Eli Smith, however, belong especially two, if not three, uncommon deserts of praise. I pass by the bringing of a printing press to Beirut in 1840, which some say was due entirely to him, while others contradict. A press and printing establishment of the A. B. C. F. M. were already in operation at Smyrna; and doubtless it required some effort on the part of the more sensible and active missionaries to overcome the home prejudice, and show them that a press for a Greek population, with an Armenian and Turkish mixture, could not supply the wants of an Arabic-speaking people, the better part of a thousand miles away.

I pass by, too, the question whether, as some who ought to know allege, Dr. Smith was the first to assert, and the one finally to maintain, that a new Arabic translation of the Bible was indispensable, and that the success of American missions and the spread of the truth demanded the work. (In those days the American Bible Society innocently circulated De Sacy's French Bible, and other versions with additions not altogether countenanced now; and the missionaries generally were not eminent above their brethren at home in textual knowledge.) But I have heard repeated, and I can scarcely help believing, as the result of all I know, that it is fact; and that Dr. Eli Smith had a battle to fight, both at home and abroad (as Dr. Schaufler had abroad, at least, for his Turkish translation), for the nascent idea and the future existence of the new Arabic translation. But in all such matters, the final result is the act, if not the work, of the mission and the home Board; and the latter has never been willing to yield its glory, nor too ready to admit that it has been taught by its servants abroad. The records of the councils of war are usually withheld, even if individual merit suffer obscurity thereby.
But for the collecting of such books as were necessary in order even moderately to furnish the Bible translator, it is the universal testimony that the work was planned and executed by Dr. Smith—except so far as continued after his death. I do not refer to the Arabic books, for in that respect Dr. Van Dyck's gatherings were much superior; but to the critical and linguistic apparatus, such as are needed and appreciated in the better libraries of Europe and America, but are scarcely valued, or even understood, by the average missionary or clergyman at home. Such a collection, and yet quite moderate in extent, was brought together chiefly by the influence and efforts of Dr. Smith; though how he justified it as a necessity to those who could not see the use of such costly tools of trade, is one of the questions which had better remain unasked. The simplest expression of the fact is that Dr. Smith is the father and original cause of that fostering of Christian learning which has been so conspicuous in the progress of the Syrian mission. Here, too, it should be said that, whatever may be decided as to the bringing of the first American printing-press to Beirût, Dr. Smith was the hand and spirit of the work of the "American Press" as long as he lived.

The other service of Dr. Smith, to which reference was made above, was his bringing into existence the beautiful style of Arabic type in which the Bibles are printed at Beirût, and which is now preferred all over the world—with only the one exception that in Arabic journalism, and in other matters which demand rapid printing and easy type-setting, the ornamental ligatures are more and more being laid aside.

The history of these types is something like this: In Constantinople, once, between the years 1830 and 1840, Dr. Smith fell upon a set of specimens of Arabic calligraphy, in letters from an inch to an inch and a quarter in size. He secured them, and used them as his models for drawing larger ones, two and a quarter inches in size. He made a copy, as perfect as possible, of every letter, with all the variations; and these he used as (enlarged) patterns for the punch-cutters. In Leipzig he had the punches and matrices made, but he came back from Germany to Beirût, because the work in Germany was taking too much time. Mr. Homan Hallock, the director of the A. B. C. F. M.'s printing establishment in Smyrna, undertook to cut the punches; and he went to Boston or near there, and there finished the work.

The original calligraphic models which Dr. Smith purchased in Constantinople have been lost (a story says that they were stolen at his death), but his own outline drawings of them are believed to be in existence. Mr. Homan Hallock had a set of them; and of these the Bible Society had copies made by a
draughtsman. One set of these last is said to be in the Bible House at New York, another in the rooms of the A. B. C. F. M. at Boston, and another in Beirut.

Dr. Smith had three sizes of the type made; a first, second, and third size; now numbered, respectively, the first, second, and third font. After his death, Mr. Hallock made another, No. 4; also a set larger than No. 1, called "small caption." Also, from 1864–1867, large capitals, for various display purposes, were made at the expense of the Bible Society.

The selection of Dr. Van Dyck to succeed Dr. Smith was as inevitable and necessary as it was happy. He had been Dr. Smith's favorite scholar, and the only writer in Arabic whose works were suffered to pass into or out of the American Press without Dr. Smith's personal corrections. Dr. Van Dyck had already published a number of works in Arabic, which are standards to this day among the natives; amongst them, works on algebra, geometry, trigonometry, astronomy, and Arabic prosody—in which, of all things, a native Arabic speaker is the last to give credit to a foreigner. As a native poet told me, "Dr. Van Dyck had Arabic at his tongue's and fingers' ends" before he began to translate the Bible. But among the natives, no foreigners seem to have anything like the repute of these two Bible translators for Arabic scholarship. Of the Bible itself there is little need to speak further here. Its circulation and success among the natives are enormous. The variety of styles in which it is issued, and of the editions, and the numbers of each, can best be seen by consulting the lists and reports of the American and the British Societies, and the book-catalogues of the American Press at Beirut, for the last twenty years. The estimate of the Bible in the native mind may perhaps best be gathered from some cross remarks made by two natives in my hearing. One praised the elegance and excellence of the work, and its fine Arabic, and remarked that it was a wonder that Dr. Van Dyck could translate like that. The other replied "A wonder? He couldn't translate it in any other way!" I should add that our English Bible was their only standard by which to judge of its correctness.

From Edward Van Dyck, now in Egypt, second son of Dr. Van Dyck, I learned many minor circumstances which I can hardly detail here. Edward, himself "to the manner born" in Arabic, generally copied the sheets of the translation for the press, in large hand, after his father had corrected the proof from the criticisms of scholars to whom duplicates had been sent; which large-hand copy his father again carefully corrected; and it was then finally ready for the press. Edward also assisted at putting the references into shape for the Old Testament part of the reference editions.
He also gave me an oral account of events on the day of his father's finishing the translation (August 23, 1864), of which I have not a full memorandum. His father remained at work long after the hour for going to dinner—a rarity for his regular habit then—while Edward was waiting below, and busying himself as one who waits. All at once he heard his father's step upon the balcony, and, all very quietly: "Edward, it is finished. Thank God! What a load is off me! I never thought I was going to live to finish this work."

And they went home to dinner, leaving the last words of Malachi in Arabic, just finished, behind them.

Since the above article was printed, a note has been received from the author, as follows:

The report that the manuscript translation of Dr. Smith was destroyed, and not used by Dr. Van Dyck, is now contradicted, and seems likely to be proved untrue; and an early opportunity will be taken to publish the matter correctly, as soon as a complete statement on that point arrives from Dr. Van Dyck. It is the belief of those in charge of the mission archives that all Dr. Smith's manuscripts, of all the work he did, are preserved in tin boxes in the library of the mission. The present aspect of the matter is that the story of the destruction of his manuscript translation of the New Testament rests upon the fact that all that was printed of the New Testament under his direction, viz. Matthew i. to end of xvi., was destroyed, for the reason that it did not follow the textus receptus. It may be added that some valuable additional reports on the subject of the Arabic Bible by Dr. Smith have recently come to my knowledge, which throw light on the subject, and deserve to be printed in full.
ARTICLE IX.

ON A MANUSCRIPT SYRIAC LECTIONARY.

BY PROF. ISAAC H. HALL, OF NEW YORK CITY.

Presented to the Society October 28th, 1880.

This manuscript was given me in 1877, by Dr. C. V. A. Van Dyck of Beirut, the well-known translator of the Bible into Arabic, who had obtained it a number of years before from the papal Jacobite monastery in Damascus. For a Syriac manuscript, its contents are not at all common. They consist, first, of an Evangelistarion or Lectionary; that is, the ordinary Gospel lessons for the fasts, feasts, Sundays, and Saturdays of the ecclesiastical year, arranged after the ancient Greek order, and not at all like the Syrian; and second, of a Menology, or table of lessons for the saints' days or feasts, for every day in the civil year, according (as the manuscript itself says) to the Greek arrangement or taxis.

Externally, the manuscript appears to be in the original binding: thick wooden boards covered with leather, the latter browned with tanning and age. On one side are the marks of five circular, scallop-edged, metallic ornaments, arranged in oblong quincunx, each of which is $\frac{1}{9}$ inch in diameter, and was once fastened by a central nail. There are also marks of two clasps, each of which had been attached by leather straps (thrust through three holes in the cover), instead of nails. On the other side of the cover are the marks of four large metallic ornaments, each two inches in diameter, and each originally fastened by four nails. In the center was also a Maltese cross, about three inches in extent each way. On the edge of this, the right hand cover, still remain the two stout brass pins on which the clasps caught, projecting $\frac{1}{9}$ of an inch. The whole book is $10 \times 7 \times 1\frac{1}{9}$ inches in dimension; and each cover is $\frac{1}{2}$
inch thick. On one side of the cover are scribbled some Arabic numerical computations; also the (Italian or) Latin words, in rather modern writing, Santa Maria Carissima; and also four words in Syriac, of which two are faded and illegible; the other two reading ‘Our Father who art in heaven.’

The manuscript consists of 95 leaves of ancient, tough cotton paper (charta Damascena), glazed after the fashion of the better Syriac and Arabic paper MSS., and somewhat worm-eaten, especially at the two ends. Many leaves show an ancient mending, either on the margin within, to keep them in place, or on the outer margins, to repair a break. The manuscript consisted originally of 13 quires of 4 folios or 8 leaves each (quaternions); except that two of them had 5 folios or 10 leaves (quiniones). Each quire has its number, or signature, at beginning and end, in the lower margin, with some slight ornamentation, after the Syrian fashion. Besides this, a much later hand has repeated this numbering in Arabic words (as ‘quire eight,’ or the like); writing, however, in a style older than the current Arabic script of to-day.

More definitely, the following statement shows how much of the original manuscript is now present:

Quire 1 had 4 folios or 8 leaves; leaves 1, 2, 3, and 6 are missing.
Quires 2–7 had each 4 folios; all still complete.
Quire 8 had 5 folios or 10 leaves; leaves 6 and 7 are missing.
Quire 9 had 5 folios, and is complete.
Quire 10 had 4 folios, and is complete.
Quire 11 had 4 folios; leaves 1, 2, 7, 8, or the two outer folios are missing.
Quire 12 had 4 folios; leaf 1 is missing.
Quire 13 had 4 folios; leaves 7 and 8 are missing.

The manuscript therefore consisted originally of 108 leaves, of which 13 are now missing. In nearly every case where a leaf is gone, a little stump is left, besides the other plain evidences. The first and last leaves now present are somewhat worn by rather recent friction against the (now) bare wood of the cover. But neither this nor the worm-holes interfere seriously with the reading. The only difficult portions are those where water has damaged and blurred the upper half of the first twenty leaves, with a few smaller spots elsewhere. In a few places, scarcely half a dozen lines in all, a second hand has retraced the letters where the reading had been destroyed along with the glazing.

The writing is in two columns to the page, 34 lines to the column. At the end of each principal division of the subject-matter is usually an ornament, occupying the space of from one to four lines; but otherwise there is scarcely a break. In one,
or perhaps two places, a space left for a rubric has remained unhilled; and sometimes a blank is left in a line when the end of the paragraph is reached before that of the line. The height of the columns is 7 to 7½ inches, the width of the inner column 2¼ inches, of the outer 2½, though the latter sometimes expands to 2¾. The width of the space between the columns is ¾ of an inch.

The style of writing is a mixture of the later Estrangelo with the Jacobite, or that current in the West; but it is by no means of a very recent pattern. The letters shin, beth, gomalt, qoph, mim keep generally the most ancient type, with a slight leaning to the Jacobite; while the dolath and rish incline more to the Nestorian. Ornamental initials generally conform to the old Estrangelo, except the olaph, which occurs in the greatest variety of shapes. In the text it occurs in both the Estrangelo form and another which is really ancient, though commonly esteemed later; but never in the marked Nestorian form. In one or two places where tau appears to be written by mistake (but this is not certain) for olaph, this MS. may have had an olaph of the Nestorian form to copy from. On the whole, the character is such as to be read with ease by one familiar with the Estrangelo, but not without a deal of study by one who knows only the common printed varieties.

There may have been two scribes; for the handwriting grows bolder in the latter portions, and becomes free from a few constant clerical errors of the former part. For example, in the first portion, the word for 'Friday' (אָשָׂו) in the lesson notes has constantly a pe in place of its beth; but this is corrected in the later portion. In both portions, lamed olaph is combined in the ancient style; but in the latter portion, when used to express the numeral 81, it is sometimes written crosswise, in the fashion which is common enough in Arabic, but less so in Syriac.

In both the two divisions of the MS., lectionary and menology, an auxiliary lesson note occurs here and there in poor Arabic, as if written by a foreigner; but these are only fourteen in all. They are written in the older Nesbhi, but are not so early as the transition from Cufic. Some of them appear to mark the name of a lesson after the Syrian order. In one place direct mention is made of a coincidence with the Syrian lesson for a saint's day.

The contents of the manuscript, it will be observed, appear to throw back the date nearly or quite to the 12th century. On the other hand, the paper material and the style of writing seem barely to admit the 12th, but to point to the 13th, or possibly to the 14th. Some time in the early portion of the 13th century, therefore, seems the most probable date.
In the rendering of ecclesiastical terms, personal epithets, and the like, the genius of the MS. inclines to the Syriac rather than to the Greek; though here and there a Greek genitive seems to be transferred. Such words as Chrysostom, Theologus, Stylites, Theotokos, are translated into their Syriac equivalents; generally employing a phrase to render a single word. The transliteration of foreign words, also, with all the other small peculiarities which give any clue to the linguistic genius of the codex, show that it does not come very near to the times, or else to the people, in which Greek was understood by the Syrian ecclesiastics. It is, so to speak, at the opposite pole from the Syriac and Armenian palimpsest described by Tischendorf on p. 13 of his *Anecdota Sacra et Profana*. In spelling proper names, *goph* sometimes replaces *γ* as well as *x*; *yud* stands for either *v*, *t*, or *γ*; and *waw* for *ο*, *ω*, or *υ*, as well as sometimes, apparently, for the Roman *o* and *u*.

The Lectionary portion agrees almost precisely with the Greek lessons as given in Scrivener's Plain Introduction, 2d edition, pp. 68-79, and in Smith's Dictionary of Christian Antiquities, pp. 955 ff., except that it commonly gives only the lessons for Saturdays and Sundays, with the more important fast and feast days. Week-day lessons are given from Easter to Pentecost, and through the Holy Week; as well as in some other places to be noted further on. The Menology gives the saint's day lessons for every day in the year; and agrees, rather often than it disagrees, with that given in Scrivener's Plain Introduction, 2d edition, pp. 81 ff., and with his extracts from the Jerusalem Syriac on pp. 291, 292.

In both Lectionary and Menology the scribe has frequently committed the error of writing the abbreviation for 'pentecost' in place of that for 'passover.' Here and there, too, he has given a wrong name for the Evangelist from whom a lesson is taken; but the correction of such errors is obvious. In the Menology the scribe has often put the sign of the plural over words where it does not belong. This is most frequent over the word for 'chief priest' (I do not forget that plural points are sometimes employed with the second element of the compound noun). In referring to places where a lesson is written in full, the scribe has left doubtful, in a very few instances, whether the lesson referred to is that of a Saturday or the next Sunday; but the defect is in general easy to be supplied.

I have collated the Scripture readings with the text of Leusden and Schaaf (ed. of 1708), and compared with other editions. The grammatically diacritic points in the MS. are few, and rarely cause a real variant. They are confined chiefly to the signs of the plural and those which mark the different offices of the pronoun. The collation shows that this MS., though full
of slight clerical errors, has a text more nearly like the bulk of Syriac MSS. than like the "edited" editions, especially those in England, which have been made to conform so often to the common Greek text. In Luke xxiv. 32 it reads 'heavy' for 'burning;' and in general it follows Peshitto peculiarities.

The church lessons themselves, after the notes, most commonly begin with an introductory phrase: such as, 'At that time,' 'Our Lord said to the Jews,' or 'Our Lord said to his disciples.' Sometimes they transpose the opening words, or add a word or more from the context, in order to make the meaning clear. Thus, it often has 'Jesus said,' or 'Jesus came,' for 'he said,' or 'he came.' Cases where the lesson commences in the ipseisima verba of the Gospel are the uncommon exception.

The rubricated portions of the notes are mingled with black, apparently with no other rule than to aid the eye. Abbreviations are very common in the lesson notes; but not so in the Scripture text; and then they are of the most obvious sort.

As the manuscript now is, it commences in the midst of the lesson for Tuesday after Easter. The whole lesson, according to the Greek order, is Luke xxiv. 12-35. The MS. begins in verse 18, and has the rest of the lesson. At the beginning, therefore, the codex lacks the title, with the lessons for Easter Sunday and Monday. The following is the lesson list. In translating the lesson notes, English names are given for the days of the week. Lessons, which in the MS. are denoted by reference merely, have their contents here indicated in brackets. Those which are written out in full in the MS. have their contents here indicated without brackets. In translating, an effort has been made to show the abbreviations, except in the names of the days of the week, which would be almost impossible.

**LECTIONARY.**

**Fol. 1 a 1.** Luke xxiv. 18-35. (Fragment of lesson for Tuesday after Easter, which is Luke xxiv. 12-35.)

**Fol. 1 b 1.** Wednesday of Rest. Gospel of priestly ministration, from John: John i. 35-51. (Between vv. 42 and 43 is inserted a rubricated word now all obliterated except the first and last letters, lomad and tau.)

**Fol. 2 a 1.** Thursday of Rest; called Feast of the apostles James and John. Gospel, from John: John iii. 1-15.

**Fol. 2 a 2.** Friday of Rest. Gospel, from John: John ii. 12-22.

**Fol. 2 b 1.** Saturday of Rest. Gospel, from John: John iii. 22-28. (The lesson extended to vs. 33, but it here breaks off with the end of the leaf, the next leaf being gone. The next leaf now present commences with)

**Fol. 3 a 1.** John iii. 16-21. (In lesson for Tuesday of second week after passover.)
Fol. 3. a. 2. Thursday 2 after passover. Gospel, from John: John v. 24-30.
Fol. 3. b. 2. Friday 2 after passover. Gospel, from John: John v. 30-vi. 2.


Fol. 5. a. 2. Tuesday 3 after passover. Gospel, from John: John vi. 27-33.
Fol. 5. b. 2. Thursday 3 after passover. Gospel, from John: John vi. 40-44.
Friday 3 after passover. Gospel, from John: John vi. 47-54.
Fol. 6. a. 1. Saturday 3 after passover. Gospel, from John. (Note in Arabic:) And this Gospel shall be read for [the feast of] all the martyrs. John xv. 16-xvi. 2.


* This Arabic note seems to mark a lesson of the Syrian order. The rest of the lesson, Mark xvi. 1-8, is, as the note seems to intend to state, the second of the eleven Resurrection Gospels.
A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 8 b. 2. Friday 4 after pass. Gospel, from John: John viii. 21-30.

Fol. 9 a. 1. Saturday 4 after pass. Gospel, from John: John viii. 31-42.


Fol. 11 a. 1. Tuesday 5 of pente. [error for after passover]. Gospel from John: John viii. 51-59.

Fol. 11 b. 1. Wednesday 5 of pente. [error for after passover]. Gospel, from John: John vi. 5-14.

Fol. 11 b. 2. Thursday 5 of pente. [error for after passover]. Gospel, from John: John ix. 39-x. 9.


Fol. 12 b. 1. Saturday 5 after pente. [error for after passover]. Gospel, from John: John x. 27-38.


Fol. 14 a. 2. Tuesday 6 after passover.* Gospel, from John: John xii. 19-36.

Fol. 14 b. 2. Wednesday 6 after pass. Gospel, from John: John xii. 38-47.

Fol. 15 a. 2. Thursday 6 after passover. It is the feast of the ascension of our Lord in the body to heaven. Psalm before the Evangel of matins: God is gone up with a shout, and the Lord with the sound of a trumpet [Psa. xlvii. 5]. Section (or, Verse): O clap your hands, all ye peoples [Psa. xlvii. 1]. Gospel of matins, from Mark: And very early in the morning of the first day of the week [Mark xvi. 2]. See in [lesson for] Sunday 3 of the Resurrection [Mark xvi. 1-8]. And in the priestly ministration, from Luke: Luke xxiv. 36-53.

Fol. 15 b. 2. Friday 6 after pass. Gospel, from John: John xiv. 1-11.


Fol. 16 a. 2. Sunday 7 after passover. Commemoration of the fathers [i.e., the 318 of Nicaea]. Gospel of matins, from John, 10 of the Resurrection [John xxi. 1-14].

* Before the word 'passover,' $\Delta$ is written by mistake.
Fol. 17. b. 2. Thursday 7 after pass. Gospel, from John: John xvi. 23–33.

Fol. 19. a. 1. Great Sunday of pente. At matins they have no custom to read the gospel; but if one will read, let him say the Psalm in liturgy 4: Thy spirit is good [Psa. cxiii. (cxlii.) 10]. Section (or, Verse): Hear my prayer, O Lord (Psa. ib. 1). Gospel of matins, from John: Then the same day at evening, to, Whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained [John xx. 19–23]. See in [lesson for] New Sunday.† Gospel of priestly ministration, from John: John vii. 37–52; viii. 12. (The Pericope de Adultera is not in the Syriac versions.)
Fol. 20. b. 2. Thursday after pente. Gospel, from John [error for Matthew]: Matt. v. 27–32.

* "Pente." here is not an error. The meaning is, Saturday 7 after passover, which is the eve of pentecost. This is shown by citations of this lesson in the Menology.
† This note seems to mark a Syrian lesson. 'New Sunday' is a Syrian term for Low Sunday.
Fol. 29. b. 2. Saturday 16 after pente. Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. xxiv. 34-44.
Fol. 30. a. 2. Sunday 16 after pente. Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. xxv. 14-29, with xi. 15 (or xiii. 43) added at the end.
Fol. 30. b. 2. Saturday 17 after pente. Lesson for Euphemia. (Then, note in Arabic:) And it shall also be read for all holy women (or, female saints). Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. xxv. 1-13.
Fol. 31. a. 1. Sunday 17 after pente. Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. xv. 21-28. (At the end of the lesson is added this note in Arabic:) Finished are the lessons for Sundays and Saturdays from Matthew the preacher of the gospel.
Fol. 34. a. 2. Sunday 5. Gospel, from Luke: xvi. 19-30 (or 31).* (Note in margin, in corrupt Arabic:) And thou shalt suppress it until thou read it six days before salutation (?) in Tishrin 2 (or, it may be, simply, until thou read it before the sixth day of Tishrin 2).

* An error of the scribe (homoioiteleuton) makes it doubtful whether the lesson ends with vs. 30 or vs. 31. The ordinary Greek lesson includes vs. 31.
† This Arabic note tells merely the place of this lesson in the Syrian order.
A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 37. a. 1. Sunday 9. Gospel, from Luke: Luke xii. 16–21. (After the lesson is added:) And when he had said these things he cried and said, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Fol. 37. a. 2. Saturday 10, from Luke. (Note in very corrupt Arabic:) Shall be read for the apostles, the seventy, and for any one of the seventy (?): Luke x. 16–21.


Fol. 43. b. 1. The Monday that is the first day of the great fast (Lent). At vespers, Gospel, from Luke: Our Lord said, Take heed that ye be not deceived. Written, Saturday of Flesh. [Luke xxi. 8, 9, 25–27, 33–36.]

Fol. 44. a. 1. Friday 1 of the fast. At vespers, Gospel, from John: Our Lord said to his disciples, I am the true vine, to, Ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you [John xv. 1–7]. Written, Monday of Week 7 after pente. [error for passover] [John xiv. 27–xv. 7].

Saturday 1 of the fast. Commemoration of the martyr Theodorus. Gospel, from Mark: Mark ii. 23–iii. 5.

Fol. 44. b. 1. Sunday 1 of the fast. Commemoration of Moses and of Aaron and of the rest. Gospel from John: At that time Jesus would go away to Galilee. Written Wednesday of the week of rest [John i. 35–51], latter portion.

Saturday 2. Gospel, from Mark: Mark i. 35–44.

Fol. 44. b. 2. Sunday 2 of the great fast. Gospel, from Mark: Mark ii. 1–12.


Fol. 46. b. 1. Sunday 5 of the great fast. Gospel, from Mark: Mark x. 32–45.


* This is the lesson for the day after the Syrian order. It is not the usual one of the Greek.
† This is the latter portion of the regular Greek λαζέ for the day.
A Syriac Lectionary.


Fol. 56. b. 2. Thursday of secrets (or, mysteries), at matins. Gospel, from Luke: Luke xxii. 1–39. (Then the note in Syriac, Fol. 57. b. 1.): There belong to this Thursday of secrets (then in Arabic:) Evangel of the washing. Gospel, from John: John xiii. 1–8. [Here the lesson breaks off at the end of the leaf, as the next two leaves are missing. The lesson is part of the Syrian; viz. John xiii. 1–30, which included more than the Greek. The next leaf now present (Fol. 58) begins in the midst of a lesson, probably vespers of this Thursday after the Greek order. The fragmentary lesson is:) Matt. xxvi. 44–xxvii. 2.

Fol. 59. a. 1. Gospel 1 of the twelve gospels of the night of Friday of Passion. (Then in Arabic:) And it is the Gospel of the commandment (or, Mandata, Maundy): John xiii. 31–xviii. 1. (At xiv. 15 [Fol. 59. b. 1] is an Arabic note in the margin:) From here shall be read at the adoration, first day of pentecost.* (And again just before the last clause of xiv. 31, in [Fol. 60. a. 1.] Arabic:) As far as here shall be read for the adoration.

Fol. 64. a. 1. Gospel 4, from John: John xviii. 28–xix. 16.
Gospel 5, from Matthew: Matt. xxvii. 3–32.
Fol. 65. b. 2. Gospel 6, from Mark: Mark xv. 16–32.
Fol. 67. b. 2. Gospel 10, from Mark: Mark xv. 43–47.
Gospel 11, from John: John xix. 38–42.
Fol. 68. a. 1. Gospel 12, from Matthew. (Note in Arabic:) And it shall also be read on Great Saturday. (Then in Syriac:) Great Saturday, at matins. Matt. xxvii. 62–66.

Fol. 68. a. 2. There follows the gospel of the day time of Great Friday (Good Friday), at the sixth hour, gathered in

*These Arabic notes mark a Syrian lesson, which, however, is not quite coincident with that given here, as it extended from John xiv. 15 to xv. 7; or several verses beyond this one.
I. H. Hall,

Fol. 68. a. 2. congregation, to the church, and praying the prayers of the sixth hour; and after that, commencing according to the toxis, in regular succession; and reading the Gospel from Matthew: At that time, when Judas saw that he was condemned, to, Him they compelled to bear the cross [Matt. xxvii. 3–33].* Written, Gospel of the night 5, of the night of Friday [Matt. xxvii. 3–32].* Joined with it, latter Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. xxvii. 33–56.

Fol. 69. a. 1. Gospel 2, from Mark: Then the soldiers took, to, Come down now from the cross [Mark xvi. 16–32]. Written, in Great Friday, of the night, Gospel 6. Joined [with it], latter, from Mark: Mark xvi. 32–41.†

Fol. 69. a. 2. Gospel 3, from Luke: Then there were led with Jesus, two, to, Women who had come from Galilee, and beheld [Luke xxiii. 33–49].‡ See in Great Friday, of the night, Gospel 8.

Fol. 69. b. 1. Gospel 4, from John: Then they brought Jesus from Caiaphas, to, Gave him to them that they might crucify him [John xviii. 28–xix. 16]. Written, in Great Friday, Gospel 4. Latter Gospel, from John: John xix. 23–37.§


Fol. 72. b. 2. (Note in Arabic:) Finished is the holy Evangel; and

* The first of these two lessons is the Syrian for matins, but nearly the Greek for the first hour. The second together with the following “latter gospel” nearly agree with the Greek first vigil. Separately they partly agree with the Greek “liturgy” lessons. With these day-time gospels, nothing in the Greek or Syrian order exactly corresponds.

† This corresponds with part of the Greek “liturgy” for 3d hour.

‡ This corresponds with part of the Greek for 6th hour.

§ This corresponds with part of the Greek for 9th hour.

¶ These vesper gospels agree exactly with the lessons of the Greek “liturgy” for Good Friday.
from God is the help (i.e., by God's help). May God pardon its writer, also him who had a share (or, care) in it. Amen. And there follow the Gospels of the Resurrection, and the vigils. And the praise be to God, forever and ever.

Again we write Gospel 1, called of the resurrection. At matins, Gospel 1, from Matthew: Then the eleven disciples, to, Unto the end of the world. Written, Great Saturday, at matins, latter portion [Matt. xxviii. 16–20].

Gospel 2, from Mark: When the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, to, For they were afraid [Mark xvi. 1–8]. Written, at Sunday 3 after passover, latter portion.

Sunday 5. From Luke: Simon then rose and ran to the sepulchre, to, When he broke bread [Luke xxiv. 12–35]. See Tuesday of Rest. [The lesson here referred to is the fragment at the beginning of the MS.]


Gospel 11. From John: Then Jesus appeared to his disciples when he arose from the dead. He said to Simon, to, Contain the books which should be written [John xxi. 14–25].Written, Saturday of Pentecost.

(Note in Arabic: Finished is the holy Gospel. And there follow the vigils; and from God is the help. (A late marginal note in Arabic at the top of the page reads:) Seek for the eleventh [Gospel] at the Saturday of Pentecost. (Part of one word is obliterated.)

* The Greek order omits vs. 53.
† The space for the rubric "From John" is left blank.
‡ At Pentecost this lesson is referred to as John xx. 19–23; which also agrees with the Greek for this 9th resurrection Gospel. In a blank space in the line, a much later hand has added in Arabic what is probably meant for "Absolution for the day," but which really reads: The loosening (forgiving?) of Thomas—except that the first word is unintelligible.
§ The Greek order has vs. 15–25.
Before passing on to the Menology, it may be remarked that the chief deviations in the foregoing Evangelistarium from the Greek lessons occur in the week-days of the first week in Lent, in the lessons for Palm Sunday, and in those for the daytime of Good Friday. The main lesson for Palm Sunday coincides here with the Syrian; while those for the daytime of Good Friday coincide with neither the Greek nor the Syrian. The other deviations from the Greek are trivial; and they are comprehended in the following list, except as already marked in the foot notes: 3d Wednesday after passover coincides with the MS. cited by Scrivener as Gale O. 4. 22; but the ordinary Greek gives it for the following Friday, and gives that which is in the MS. for Friday, for this Wednesday. For Friday, in the same week, however, the Gale MS. has vss. 48-54. Saturday 8, the Greek ends at vs. 1. Friday 6, the Greek ended at vs. 10; but MS. Gale is same as here. Sunday 7, the Greek has vss. 2-13. After pentecost, Tuesday, the Greek ends at v. 11; Wednesday, the Greek has vss. 20-30; Thursday, the Greek has 31-41; Friday, the Greek has chap. vii. 9-18; Saturday 1, the Greek has 42-48; Sunday 1, the Greek omits vs. 39; Sunday 3, the Greek has vss. 22, 23, and puts the rest of the lesson in Monday of 2d week; Saturday 10, the Greek ends at chap. xviii. 1; Sunday 15, the Greek ends at vs. 40; Saturday 16, the Greek ends at vs. 30. After the Cross, or Saturday 1 in Luke, the Greek extends to vs. 46; Sunday 6 in Luke, the Greek omits vss. 36, 37; Saturday 8, the Greek has vss. 37-48; Saturday 10, the Greek has vss. 19-21; Saturday 14, the Greek has vs. 19-21; Saturday 18, where the MS. gives no lesson, the Greek has Luke xv. 1-10. For Wednesday of Passion Week, the Greek has John xi. 47-53, or xii. 17-47.

In translating the Menology, a few things have given some little trouble; chiefly the proper names. The Syriac spelling is such as to defy uniform transliteration. The familiar forms, where manifest, I have retained; and as to the rest, I have tried to be guided by common sense. There are two words in the MS. for 'commemoration' of a saint or event, but it has proved inconvenient to attempt to render them by different words. The Greek word for 'Gospel' I have rendered by 'evangel,' the Syriac by 'gospel.' There are two words for 'saint: one meaning 'holy,' the other 'pious.' I have kept 'saint' for the first, and 'pious' for the last; as the last was sometimes used in Syriac [and apparently a few times in this MS.] as a euphemism for 'bishop.' The expression rendered 'mother of God' is more strictly Theotokos or Deipara. The exact Syriac expression for 'mother of God' does occur once or twice; but I could not well draw the distinction. The word
for 'apostle' occurs with a very wide signification; but to render it by 'missionary' would be false in most cases.

The following is a translation of the Menology, omitting the lessons except by indication. Those written out in full are unbracketed, but those which are merely referred to are enclosed in brackets. It would have been interesting to note the coincidences with the Greek Menology given in Scrivener’s Plain Introduction, 2d ed., pp. 81, 82, and with the Jerusalem Syriac as given ib. p. 292, 293; but it could not be done without a sacrifice of space altogether disproportionate to the importance of the matter. It has not been convenient to keep the abbreviations of the original in translating.

**Menology.**

**Fol. 75. a. 1.** Again we write the *taxis* (i.e. order) of feasts of the whole year, according to the Greek. At the beginning of the year is the month ḫāl (September). Days 30. Daytime, hours, 12; and of the night, hours 12. 1. Feast of pious Mar Simeon Stylites (lit. of the top of the pillar), and of the forty saints, and of the beginning of the year, and commemoration of the mother of God. Psalm: Thy name shall be remembered in all generations [Psa. xlv. (16) 17]. Section (or, Verse): Hearken, O daughter, and see, and incline thine ear [Psa. xlv. (9) 10]. And this Psalm is to be said at all the feasts of the mother of God at matins before the evangels; and if a man is prepared at the feast of Mar Simeon in his church, and will that the evangels be read, Gospel in 5 of Canṭān 1 (December) [Matt. xi. 27–30], that which is of Mar Saba. And in priestly ministration, read the Gospel from Luke: Luke iv. 16–22.

**Fol. 75. a. 2.** 2. Feast of chief priests, John Sīmā [Faster] and Paul the younger; and the martyr Mama. Gospel of the martyr, written at Friday of the first week of the great fast, at vespers [John xv. 1–7]. For the chief priests, Gospel from Matthew: Matt. v. 14–19.


**Fol. 76. a. 2.** 5. Martyr Zechariah the prophet and of the martyr Thutiel.* Gospel, from Luke: The multitudes wondered at the gracious words. See 14 of Heziran (June) [Luke iv. 22–30]. Gospel, from Matthew, and for Zechariah: Woe unto you, Scribes and Phari-

*Perhaps error for “Joel,” *olaph* being mistaken for *tau* by the scribe.
Fol. 76 a. 2. sees, to, That all these things may come upon this generation [Matt. xxiii. 29–36]. Written, Tuesday of Passion, in the Gospel of matins, latter portion.


Fol. 76 b. 1. 7. Of the martyr Sozontos, and the pious Abraham that was a robber. See in 20 of this month [hiat MS. at that place, but probably Luke xxii. 12–16 is intended.]


10. Feast of saint Barisaba and saint Saurianus, and adoration of the cross. Gospel, from John: And there were gathered together the chief priests and Pharisees, and they said. See Monday 6 of pente. [error for passover] [John xi. 47–54]. For the adoration of the cross. Gospel, from Matthew: Our Lord said, He that loveth father or mother. See Saturday 7 [Matt. x. 37–xi. 1].

Fol. 77 a. 2. 11. Celebration of Saint Theodora, and adoration of the precious cross. For the martyr, from Mark: Great multitudes thronged Jesus. See in 4 of Caen 1 (December) [Mark v. 24–28]. For the adoration of the cross, from John. See Tuesday 2 after passover [John iii. 16–21].

12. Feast of Saint Corito (Choritus?) and Autonomus, and Cornelius the centurion. Read from Matthew: He that loveth father or mother. See Saturday 7 [Matt. x. 37–xi. 1]. And the Gospel to be read this Saturday before the feast of the cross, lesson from John. Written, Monday in week 6 after passover [John xi. 47–54].

Sunday before the feast of the cross. Gospel, from John: John iii. 13–17.

Fol. 77 b. 1. 13. Dedication of the temple of the rebuilding in Jerusalem, and adoration of the cross. Lesson from John: Our Lord said, He that loveth his life shall lose it, to. For this cause came I unto this hour. See Tuesday of week 6 of pente. [error for passover], from the middle of the lesson onward [John xii.
25–27]. Lesson of the adoration, see Tuesday 6 of pente. [error for passover] [John xii. 19–36].

Fol. 78 a. 2. Saturday after the feast of the cross, from John, Friday 4 of pente. [error for passover] [John viii. 21–30]. Sunday after the feast of the cross. Written, in Sunday 3 of the fast [Mark viii. 34–ix. 1].
15. Feast of the martyr and priest Acachius (Achaisus?) metropolitan of Melitene, and the martyr Nicaeta (or Niceta). And on this day the receiving of sight of Paul, and celebration of the six holy councils. Gospel, in 20 of this month. [Probably Luke xxi. 12–19; but hiat MS. at that place]. Gospel for the martyr, from Matthew: Matt. x. 16–22.
16. Feast of the martyr Euphemia. Gospel, from Luke: Luke vii. 36–48. [The lesson breaks off at the end of the leaf, the next leaf being missing; but it probably extended to vs. 50. The next leaf present begins in the midst of the note at the beginning of the next month.]

Fol. 79 a. 1. [Fragment of note at beginning of Tishrin 1, or October.] Hanania of Damascus, of the 72; and of Peter, bishop. See 2 in Itul (September) [Matt. v. 14–19]. Latter, from Luke. Written in Saturday 11 [Luke xii. 32–40].
2. Chief priest Cyprianus, and Justina (Justinia?) the virgin. Gospel, written in 3 in Itul [John x. 9–16].

Fol. 79 a. 2. 4. Martyrdom of Peter the priest and Bartholomew the disciple of Paul. Gospel, 4 in Itul [Luke x. 1–12].
6. Crowned of martyrs Mar Thomas, one of the twelve. Gospel, New Sunday [John xx. 19–23 (or 31)].
7. Crowned of martyrs Sergius and Bacchus. Psalm before the evangel of matins, in liturgy 4: Wonderful, O God. Section: Bless the Lord God. Gospel of matins, see Sunday 1 after pentecost [Matt. x. 32,

9. Feast of James the apostle, and Saints Stratonicus and Selencus. Gospel 8, from Luke [Luke x. 25–37; or ix. 37–43; according to whether Sunday 8, or Saturday 9 is meant. But if 8 of this month is meant, then Luke xiii. 10–17].

10. Martyrdom of John Dulmia (or Dilmia, or Dilmites, or, the Elamite). Gospel 10, from Luke [Luke xiii. 10–17; or x. 16–21].


12. Martyr Aprobus, and Trachys (or Trachon), and Andronicus, and Domininus, and Zenarius. See 20 in Ilul [Hist. MS. at that place, but probably Luke xxii. 12–19].

13. Feast of the martyrs Carpious and Paplius (or Poplius) and his fellows. See 15 in Ilul [Matt. x. 16–22].

14. Feast of Marcius (or Marcion) and Nazarius (or Nazareus). See Wednesday after passover. [John i. 35–51].

15. Of the presbyter Lucianus from Antioch. See 3 in this month [Matt. xiii. 45–54].


17. Martyr Mamutus and his fellows. See in 2 in Ilul [Matt. v. 14–19].


20. Of Artimius and the crowned Cozma, and Damianus. See in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].


24. Commemoration of chief priests Proclus and his

Fol. 80. a. 2. 26. Feast of the martyr Demetrius, and finding of the head of John Baptist, 2d time, and commemoration of the great earthquake that took place. Psalm before the evangel at matins: Wonderful, O God. Section (or, Verse): Bless ye the Lord. Gospel of matins, from John: I am the true vine. See Monday of week 7 of pente. [error for passover] [John xiv. 27-xv. 7].
Gospel of the earthquake, from Matthew: Matt. viii. 23-27 (Fol. 80. b. 1.) For the martyr, see Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].

Fol. 80. b. 1. 27. Feast of Artemidorus and Theodorus and the rest who were with them. Gospel, 15 in Ilul [Matt. x. 16-22].
30. Feast of Saint Cyriacus and the chief priests. Gospel, 3 in Ilul [John x. 9-16].

Tishrin 2 (November). Days 30. Daytime, hours 10; and night time, hours 14.
1. Of the prodigals Cozma and Damianus, who were laid to rest. Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. x. 1-8.

Fol. 80. b. 2. 2. Feast of Aphonios and his fellows. Gospel, in 5 of Canūn 1 [Matt. xi. 27-30].
5. Of the martyr Galactinos and Apistion his wife, from Homs; and of the pious Joan(n)e (or Junia?). See 21 in Tishrin 1 [Luke vi. 17-23].
6. Martyrdom of the chief priest Constantinus (or, Constantius), and Paul the confessor. Gospel, in 25 Tishrin 1 [Luke xii. 2-12].
7. Martyrdom of the 33 martyrs from Melatine (or Melitene). Gospel, that of yesterday [Luke xii. 2-12].
8. Of the archangel Michael. Psalm before Gospel of matins: Bless, ye heavens and angels of the Lord,
the Lord [Psa. cxlviii. 1]. Section (or, Verse): Bless, ye waters that are above the heavens [Psa. cxlviii. 4]. Gospel of matins, Saturday 10 from Luke [Luke xiii. 10–17]. And in priestly ministration, from John. See Sunday 4 of pente. [error for after passover (John v. 1–15); or else "John" is error for Matthew (Matt. viii. 5–13)].

9. Commemoration of the martyr Christophorus. See Monday 7 of pente. [error for passover, John xiv. 27–xv. 7]; latter part of the Gospel.


11. Holy Mina and Victor (written Biktor) and Vicentius (written Bikentios). Gospel, in Saturday 8 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].


14. Apostle Philip. Gospel, Wednesday in week of rest; half of the lesson [John i. 35–51].

15. Of the confessors Simona and Goria (or, Gauria) and Habib, martyrs of Orrha (i.e. Edessa). Gospel, in 2 in Itål [Matt. v. 14–19].

16. Of Matthew the apostle and evangelist, and Saint Barlam, he in whose hand fire was put because sacrifices were to be made to the idol, and he would not. Gospel, Saturday 5, from Matthew [Matt. ix. 9–13].

17. Chief priest Gregorius, Wonder-worker (Thaumaturgus). Gospel, in day 1 of this month [Matt. x. 1–8].


19. Of the holy martyrs Basius (Vasius ?) and Neophytius, and their fellows. Gospel, Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].


21. Going up of the mother of God to the temple. Psalm: Thy name shall be remembered to all generations [Psa. xlv. 17]. Section (or, Verse): Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children [Psa. xlv. 16]. See Gospel of matins and of priestly ministration, 8 in Itål [Luke i. 39–58; and x. 38–42; xi. 27, 28].


23. Peter the pious, of the chief priests of Conia [Iconium], and Anaphilistius and Alexander. Saturday 11, from Luke [Luke xii. 32–40].

24. Gregorius, and of the martyrdom of Matrinus (or Metrinus). See 3 in Itål [John x. 9–16].
A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 81. a. 3. 25. Of the chief priest and martyr Clementus, pope of Rome, and Peter of Alexandria. Gospel, Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].

Fol. 81. b. 1. 29. Pious Theodulus. See 5 in Canûn 1 [Matt. xi. 27–30].
30. Apostle Andrew; from 12th Gospel from John: Then John was standing, and two of. See Wednesday in week of rest [John i. 35–51]. From the beginning of the lesson to the middle.

Canûn 1 [December]. Days in it, 31. Daytime, hours 9; and night time, hours 15.

Fol. 81. b. 2. 5. [6 is written first in outline, by mistake, but left unrubricated.] Feast of pious Mar Saba of Jerusalem. Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. xi. 27–30.

7. The pious and chief priest Ambrosius. Gospel, 3 in Ilûl [John x. 9–16].
I. H. Hall,

Fol. 83 a. 1. 12. Chief priest Esipridon (or, Spiridon). Gospel, in 3 in Ilūl [John x. 9-16].
13. Of the five martyr soldiers. Gospel, in 20 in Ilūl [Atat MS. at that place].

Fol. 83 a. 2. 17. The pious and confessor John, chief priest, and Daniel the prophet, and the three children. Gospel, in Sunday 1 after pentecost [Matt. x. 32, 33; xix. 27-36].

There follows Saturday 1 of the fathers, before the nativity. Gospel, Saturday 11, from Luke [Luke xii. 32-40].
Sunday 2 of the fathers, that is before the nativity. Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. i. 1-25.
[Here the lesson breaks off at the end of a leaf, and the next four leaves are missing.]

Fol. 84 a. 1. Matt. xi. 27-30. [Fragment of lesson for 3 of Cantu 2].


Fol. 84 a. 1. 7. Right hand of John the Baptist. Gospel, Saturday of Rest [John iii. 22-28]. Gospel for Mar John, from John: John i. 29-34.


A Syriac Lectionary.


Fol. 85. b. 1. 12. Feast of Astenus (or Stenus, or Astunios), who caused water to gush forth from the well, and Saint Tathedas (?). Gospel, in 5 in Canûn 1 [Matt. xi. 27–30].

13. Martyrs Armilius and Astratius (or Stratius). Seek in 20 in Itul [Itul MS. at that place].

14. The fathers who were slain in Mt. Sinai. Gospel 11, from Luke [either Luke xiv. 16–24 (Sunday 11), or xii. 32–40 (Saturday 11)].


16. Adoration of the precious chain that fell off from the feet of Peter. Psalm before Gospel of matins: Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children [Psa. xlv. 16]. Section (or, Verse): My heart is inditing a good matter [Psa. xlv. 1]. Gospel of matins, from John. Written, Wednesday in week of Rest [John i. 35–51], part 1. And in priestly ministration, from John: Simeon, son of Jona, loveth thou me [John xxi. 17]. Written, Saturday of pentecost [i. e., before pentecost: John xxi. 15–25].


26. Martyr Asterius and his fellows. See in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].
27. John Chrysostom and Mar Simeon Stylites. Gospel, in 20 in Itul, latter [Aiat MS. at that place]. For John, 3 in Itul [John, x. 9–16].
[Fol. 86. a. 2.] Latter, in the order of the Greeks. Written in 5 in Canun 1 [Matt. xi. 27–30].
29. Saint Æginetius. Seek 5 in Canun 1 [Matt. xi. 27–30].
30. Xenophon and his sons. Seek Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].
31. Cyrus and John. Seek 1 in Tishrin 2 [Matt. x. 1–6].

Shobat [February]. Days in it, 28. Daytime, hours 11; and night time, hours 13.

Fol. 86. b. 3.
3. Feast of Simeon and Hanna the prophetess. Seek that of yesterday, latter portion [Luke ii. 22–40].
8. Martyr Theodorus the soldier. Seek Saturday 1 of the fast [Mark ii. 23–iii. 5]. See 18 in Tishrin 1 [Luke x. 16–21].

Fol. 87. a. 1.
9. Saint Pelagius. Seek Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].
10. Of the martyr Nicephorus. Seek 20 from Itul [Aiat MS. at that place].
A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 87 a. 1. 14. Pious Euxentius (or, Auxentius?). Seek in beginning of Tishrin 2 [Matt. x. 1-8].
Saint Pamphilus and his fellows. Seek in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
21. Chief priests Timotheus and his fellows. Seek in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
22. Chief priest Thomas of Constantinople, and Elisabeth the nun. Seek in 5 in Canfn 1 [Matt. xi. 27-30].
23. Of the martyr and chief priest Polycarp. Seek in 23 in Canfn 2 [John xii. 24-36].


26. Saint Porphyrius, bishop. Seek in 21 in Itul [hiat MS. at that place].
27. Martyr Papias, and the rest. Seek 20 in Itul [hiat MS. at that place].

Month Adar [March]. Days in it 31. Hours of daytime 12, and hours of night time 12.
2. Feast of the martyr Eutropius and his fellows. See Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].

Fol. 87 b. 2. 5. Of the pious Gerasinus and Conon. Seek 25 in Tishrin 1 [Luke xii. 2-12].
6. Feast of the forty and two martyrs. Seek 9 in this month [Matt. xx. 1-16].
7. Of the pious Archidinus and Therius [error for Thaddeus?] and his fellows. See in 20 in Itul [hiat MS. at that place].

VOL. XL. 40
8. Feast of the pious Theophiletus, chief priest of Nico-
media. Seek 2 in Itul [Matt. v. 14-19].
9. Feast of the forty holy martyrs. Gospel, from
Matthew: Matt. xx. 1-16.
10. Feast of pious Sophronius, chief priest of Jerusa-
lem. 2 in Itul [Matt. v. 14-19].

11. Feast of the priest and martyr Aphorion and
Quadratus and his fellows. See Sunday 10, from Luke
[Luke xiii. 10-17].
12. Siuma (Faster) pious Theophanus. Gospel, 27 in
Tishrin 1 [Matt. x. 16-22].
13. Feast of Saint Nicephor. See 3 in Itul [John x.
9-16].
14. Feast of Saint Nicodemus, and Christophorus, and
2-12].
15. Holy feast of Anitius (or Anetius) and our father
Amon. See 27 in Tishrin 1 [Matt. x. 16-22].
16. Feast of the pious Euxius, and Saint Sabinus. See
25 in Tishrin 1 [Luke xii. 2-12].
17. Feast of the man of God, Alexius, and of the earth-
quake that occurred in the days of Theodosius. See
in Sunday 3 of the fast [Mark viii. 34-ix. 1].
18. Feast of pious Cyrilrus, chief priest of Jerusalem.
Seek 2 in Itul [Matt. v. 14-19].
19. Feast of Chrysanthus and Nazadria, and the
fathers who were strangled in the smoke in the con-
vent of Mar Saba. See in Saturday 3 after passover
[John xv. 17-xvi. 2]. For the fathers, in Saturday 17,

20. Feast of Saint Maraia and pious Marcus. Seek 5
in Canun 1 [Matt. xi. 27-30].
21. Feast of pious Hanania, and Cyrilrus, bishop. See
3 in Itul [John x. 9-16].
22. Feast of the pious and chief priest Thomas, patri-
arch of Constantinople. See 3 in Itul [John x. 9-16].
23. Feast of the (female) martyr Christine, and Nicon
the monk. Seek in Saturday 17 from Matthew [Matt.
xxv. 1-13].
24. Feast of Alexander and his fel low s, and Saint
Artemonius, and feast preceding the Annunciation.
Seek 21 in Tishrin 1 [Luke vi. 17-23].
25. Feast of the Annunciation. Gospel of matins, 8

26. Feast of pious Isaac and the archangel Gabriel.
Seek Saturday 10, from Luke [Luke x. 16-21].
27. Of pious Metronis. Seek Sunday 10, from Luke
[Luke xiii. 10-17].
28. Of the priest and martyr Basilia. Seek in Satur-
day 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
A Syriac Lectionary.

30. Our pious father Climus. Seek 5 in Canûn 1 [Matt. xi. 27-30].
31. Feast of the martyr Mannadrus and Anapitus and Theophilus. See 20 in Ilûl [hiat MS. at that place].

Month Nisan [April]. Days in it 30. Daytime, hours 13; and night time, hours 11.
1. Feast of Miriam the Egyptian. Gospel, 4 in Canûn 1 [Mark v. 24-28].
2. Feast of Saints Epiphanius and Darius, and of Stephen the companion. See 4 in Ilûl [Luke x. 1-12].
4. Feast of the martyr Theodulus, and Agatha and Pius. Seek 20 in Ilûl [hiat MS. at that place].

Fol. 89 a. 2. 5. Feast of the martyrdom of Epomius. See 4 in Canûn 1 [Mark v. 24-28].
6. Feast of Saint Euthysis, monk of Constantinople, and feast of the hundred and twenty martyrs in the region of the city of Pera. See in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
7. Feast of the chief priest and martyr Georgius, and Callopius. See 20 in Ilûl [hiat MS. at that place].
8. Feast of apostle Appira (or Eppira) and Doionos (or, and of Junius), of the seventy, and pious Celestius pope of Rome. See 6 in Ilûl [Luke x. 16-21; or xviii. 18-27].
10. Feast of the martyr Terentius and his fellows. Seek 20 in Ilûl [hiat MS. at that place].
11. Feast of the martyr and chief priests Antipas the pure and Trophonius. Seek in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
13. Feast of the martyr Theodosius. Seek in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
14. Feast of pious Simeon and James, chief priests of Antioch. See 2 in Ilûl [Matt. v. 14-19].
15. Feast of the martyr Launidoger (or Leonidoger) and his fellows, and Aristarchus of the seventy. See in Sunday 1, from Matthew [Matt. x. 32, 33, 37-39; xix. 27-30].

Fol. 89 b. 1. 16. Feast of the martyr Eirenichas and Caunia. See in Saturday 17, from Matthew [Matt. xxv. 1-13].
17. Feast of Saint Simeon and his fellows, and Saint Gapitus (i.e. Agapetus) pope of Rome. Gospel, 2 in Ilûl [Matt. v. 14-19].
18. Saint James and his fellows, servant of Georgius. See in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].
19. Feast of the martyr Longinus and Aphrodisius. Seek 15 in Ilul, that is of the martyr Niceta (or Niceta) [Matt. x. 16–22].
20. Feast of the martyrs Athanatius and Nainulus and their sons, and Saint Papontus (or, Pepontos). See 20 in Ilul [hiat MS. at that place].
22. Of pious Theodorus the companion. See 23 in Canun 2 [John xii. 24–36].
23. Martyr Georgius. Psalm before Gospel of matins, in liturgy 4: Wonderful is God in his holiness. Section (or; Verse): Bless ye the Lord. Gospel from John: I am the true vine [John xv. 1]. See Monday 7, of pentecost [or, after passover (?)] [John xiv. 27–xv. 7]. Gospel of priestly ministration, Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].
24. Pious Mar Saba the soldier, and pious Timotheus. See 20 in Canun 2 [Matt. xi. 27–30].
26. Priest and martyr Basilius. See in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].
28. Of the apostle Saint Anasonus (error for Jason, probably, in one letter of the name). Gospel, 20 in Ilul [hiat MS. at that place].

Month Iyyar [May]. Days in it 31. Daytime, hours 14; and night time, hours 10.
1. Prophet Jeremiah. See lesson 20 in Heziran, that of priestly ministration [Matt. xvi. 13–19].
3. Martyr Timotheus and Moras his sister. Seek 20 in Tshrin 1 [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].
4. Martyr Phrodisius (i.e. Aphrodisius) and those with him. See 20 in Ilul [hiat MS. at that place].
5. Martyr Anaupitus (probably error, in one letter, for Japetus), and Agananus, and Saint Pelagia, and Barbarus martyr. Seek 15 in Ilul [Matt. x. 16–22].
A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 89 b. 2. 6. Feast of Jamtria (or Emetria, or Demetria?) and Job the Just. See 9 in Adar [Matt. xx. 1–16].

Fol. 90 a. 1. 7. Democius martyr, and his revelation (vision) of the cross in the sky in Jerusalem. See Monday in week 6 of pentecost [error for after passover: John xi. 47–54].


9. Of Isaiah the prophet and the martyr Christophorus. Gospel, Wednesday of week 6 after passover [John xii. 36–47].

Fol. 90 a. 2. 10. Apostle Simeon of the 12. Seek day 1 in Tishrin 2 [Matt. x. 1–8].

11. Feast of Democius (or, of Myocius). Seek day 2 in Tishrin 1 [John x. 9–16].


17. Feast of the martyr Solinus, and Dionysus, and Andrew and Paul. Lesson, 20 in Itul [hiat MS. at that place].


I. H. Hall,


25. Of pious Sozontos, and the finding of the head of Mar John the Baptist, 3d time. Seek in 2 in Itál, that of John Siuma (i. e. Faster) [John xv. 1–17; or Matt. v. 14–19; probably the latter].


27. Of the pious Corquantus, and Judas son of Joseph, and the martyr Addimus (Didymus?). Seek in 20 in Itál [aion MS. at that place].


Fol. 90 b. 2. 29. Feast of the holy martyr Theodosia. Seek in Saturday 17, from Matthew [Matt. xv. 21–28].

30. Athletics (or Miseries, or Struggles) of the holy (saints), those in Nicomedia, and Mar Aisibus. Seek 25 Canán 1 [aion MS. at that place].


Month Heziran [June]. Days in it 30. Daytime, hours 15; and night time, hours 9.

1. Feast of saint Justinus. Seek Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xvi. 2].


4. Of the chief priest Metrophanus. Seek 2 in Itál [Matt. v. 14–19].


6. Feast of pious Vesarinus (written Besarinus), and the archangel Michael, and the [female] martyr Sebastianis. See in 4 in Canán 1 [Mark v. 24–28].

7. Feast of the priest and martyr Dorotheus, patriarch of Tyre. Seek 3 in Itál [John x. 19–18].

8. Feast of Theodorus the soldier, who is usually celebrated in the fast, who was martyred in the days of Lucianus. Seek in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 7–xvi. 2].

A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 91. a. 1. 10. Feast of the priest and martyr Timotheus, and Melethus and his fellows, 11 thousand. See lesson in Saturday 7, from Luke [Luke ix. 1–16].


12. Feast of pious Eunphorius Cita (circuit-maker); he, moreover, that traveled about; and saint Lulin. Seek 5 in Canûn 1 [Matt. xi. 27–30].


17. Feast of saint Manuel and his fellows. See 20 in Iûl [Abût MS. at that place].

18. Feast of the martyr Leontius of Tripolis. Seek in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17–xxxvi. 2].


[21 is omitted, probably by the scribe's oversight.]


Fol. 92. a. 1. 25. Feast of the martyr Fabronia (Fevronia?) the Syrian, from Nisibûn. Seek in Saturday 17, from Matthew [Matt. xxv. 1–13].


I. H. Hall,


30. 12 Apostles. Their lesson is written in the first day of Tishrin 2 [Matt. x. 1–8].


1. Feast of the physicians Cozma and Damianus. See Gospel, 1 in Tishrin 2 [Matt. x. 1–8].


3. Feast of Mar Thomas the apostle, and Hyacinthus (written Jyacinthus) martyr. See 25 in Iitul [hiat MS. at that place].

4. Feast of Saint Andrew of Cretes. Gospel, Thursday of week 5 after passover [John ix. 39–x. 9].

5. Feast of pious Stephen Girolampadius, and Martha the pious, mother of Mar Simeon the fearing (or, that swore). Gospel, 5 in Canun 1 [Matt. xi. 27–30].


9. Dedication of the temple of the three children, Hanania and Azariah and Mishael, and Patrimuthius. And in this day appeared the mother of God at the gushing of the water in the mountain of Daphne. For she appeared there to the apostles and John, when they wandered by the Holy Spirit from Sion mother of the church, and established there the first born of Antioch, the Syrian city, having obtained mercy in God. Its consecutive (akolouthia), 8 in Iitul [Luke i. 39–56; or, x. 38–42; xi. 27, 28]. And dedication of the temple of the three children, 13 in Iitul [John xii. 25–27], that is of the rebuilding.

Fol. 93. a. 2. 10. Feast of the forty and five martyrs that suffered in Nicopolis. Gospel, 9 in Adar [Matt. xx. 1–16].

A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 28. a. 2. 12. Feast of the Martyrs Proculus and Eiladion [or, Ailadion], and Andrew the soldier, and the martyrs their fellows. See Gospel, 20 in Ikūl [hiat MS at that place].
14. Feast of Acola the apostle, and Saint Joseph who was tortured because of the image. Consecutive (akolouthia), that of yesterday [Luke x. 16–21; or Matt. x. 1–8; or Luke xiii. 10–17].

17. Feast of the martyr Marinas. See in Saturday 17, from Matthew [Matt. xxv. 1–13].
18. Feast of the martyr Melanus, and John the metropolitan. Gospel, Tuesday 3 after passover [John vi. 27–33].
21. Of the feast of pious Joanne, and Simeon, he who was despised because of the Messiah. Gospel, 5 in Cantùn 1 [Matt. xi. 27–30].
23. Feast of the martyr Trophimus and his fellows 13, and Mary Magdalene. See 15 in Ikūl [Matt. x. 16–22].

VOL. XI.
27. Feast of the martyr Panteleemon. Consecutive (akolouthia) of matins, that of Mar Georgius. [See 23 Nisan, also 7 Nisan]. And of priestly ministration, lesson, Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
31. Feast of the martyr Gelasius, and dedication ευχαρία of the temple of the mother of God. Gospel, in Saturday 5 after passover [John x. 27-38], latter half. For the martyr, see in Saturday 17, from Luke [Luke xx. 46-xxi. 4].

Month Ab [August]. Days in it, 31.
1. Feast of the Maccabees, Shemoth and her seven sons. Gospel, 15 in Itul [Matt. x. 16-22].
2. Translation of the body of the chief of deacons and martyr Stephen, and Maria of the washing. Gospel, 20 in Itul [hiat MS. at that place].
7. Feast of Saint Domitianus?, martyr and monk. Seek in Sunday 3 of the fast [Mark viii. 34-ix. 1].
8. Feast of chief priest Constantinius [sic], and, again, Cosinus, and Moses in the wilderness. See 2 in Itul [Matt. v. 14-19].
A Syriac Lectionary.

Fol. 94. s. 1. 11. Feast of the martyr Apolopolitus and the rest of his. Gospel, 20 in Itul [hiat MS. at that place].
15. Feast of the mother of God. Consecutive (ako-
louthia) of matins, and of priestly ministration, 8 in Itul [Luke i. 39-56; and x. 38-42; xi. 27, 28].
16. Feast of pious Dimidius that was a monk in Constantinople; and with them the earthquake. Gospel, 23 in Canun 2 [John xii. 24-36]. Latter, Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
19. Feast of the martyr soldiers, Andrew and his fellows, 2 thousand and nine hundred and ninety and five. Gospel, 20 in Itul [hiat MS. at that place].
22. Feast of the martyr Gathunicus (i.e. Agathonicus) and his fellows. Gospel, in Saturday 3 after passover [John xv. 17-xvi. 2].
23. Feast of the martyr Lupus and the martyr Callini-
cicus. Gospel, 15 in Itul [Matt. x. 16-22].
Fol. 95. s. 1. 24. Feast of Saint Euthusimus, disciple of John the apostle. Gospel, 15 in Itul [Matt. x. 16-22].
26. Feast of the martyrs Andrianus and Datulia his wife, and his fellows. Gospel, 2 in Itul [Matt. v. 14-19].
27. Feast of pious Mar Saba in 'Anthel and Abapumln. And in this day, the usually celebrated Syrian [lesson] for Mar Simeon Stylites. Gospel, 5 in Canun 1 [Matt. xi. 27-30].
29. Beheading of Mar John the Baptist. Stichon before Gospel of matins: I would fly, I would rest far away, I would fly, and I would dwell in the wilderness [Psa. lv. 6, 7]. Section [or, Verse]: Give ear to
my prayer, O God, and hide not thyself from my supplication [Psa. lv. 1]. Gospel, from Matthew: Matt. xiv. 1-12. [Fol. 95. a. 2.] And in priestly ministration, Gospel from Mark: Mark vi. 14-27. [Here the lesson breaks off at the end of the leaf; the last two leaves of the MS. being missing.]

The lessons missing from the manuscript in its present state are the following:

In the Lectionary: from the beginning, the lessons for Easter and the day following, and five verses of the third day; the last four verses from first Saturday after Easter; all of the following Sunday; matter from the lessons of the eve of Good Friday occupying two leaves, probably Matt. xxvi. 21-39; Luke xxii. 43, 44; Matt. xxvi. 40-43. The Lectionary is thus nearly complete.

In the Menology the gaps are more noticeable, and not easy to supply. They are: Ilul (Sept.) 17 to latter portion of Tishrin 2 (Oct.) 1; latter portion of 1 Canun (Dec.) 18 to latter portion of 2 Canun (Jan.) 3; Heziran (June) 21, by error of the scribe; Ab (August), latter part of 29 to the end. Lessons, or parts of lessons, are missing for 36 days of the Menology.

The Scripture passages now present in the MS., except the catch-words inserted for reference, are the following:

Matthew i. 1-25; iii. 13-17; iv. 1-25; v. 1-48; vi. 1-33; vii. 1-11, 24-29; viii. 1-34; ix. 1-13, 18-35; x. 1-8, 16-22, 32, 33, 37-42; xi. 1-15, 27-30; xii. 30-37; xiii. 45-54; xiv. 1-12, 14-34; xv. 21-39; xvi. 19-20; xvii. 1-27; xviii. 1-4; 10-20, 29-35; xix. 3-12, 16-30; xx. 1-16, 29-34; xxi. 1-11, 15-43; xxii. 1-48; xxiii. 1-39; xxiv. 1-51; xxv. 1-40; xxvi. 1-2, 6-16, 44-75; xxvii. 1-66; xxviii. 1-15.

Mark i. 9-11, 35-44; ii. 1-12, 14-17, 23-45; iii. 1-5; v. 24-28; vi. 14-27; vii. 31-37; viii. 27-31, 34-38; ix. 1, 17-31; x. 32-45; xi. 1-11, 22-26; xv. 16-41, 43-47; xvi. 1-20.

Luke i. 1-68, 76-80; ii. 22-40; iii. 1-22; iv. 1-13, 16-41; v. 1-11, 17-32; vi. 1-10, 17-23, 31-36; vii. 1-23, 36-48; viii. 5-21, 26-39, 41-56; ix. 1-6, 28-43, 57-62; x. 1-12, 16-21, 25-42; xi. 27, 28; xii. 2-12, 16-21, 32-40; xiii. 10-17, 19-29; xiv. 1-11, 16-24; xv. 2-32; xvi. 10-31; xvii. 3-10, 12-19; xviii. 9-14, 18-27, 35-43; xix. 1-10, 28-40; xx. 1-8, 46, 47; xxi. 1-4, 8, 9, 25-27, 33-36; xxii. 1-39; xxiii. 32-49; xxiv. 1-12, 18-53.

John i. 29-51; iii. 1-28; iv. 46-54; v. 1-15, 17-47; vi. 1, 2, 5-33, 35-44, 47-59; vii. 1-30, 37-52; viii. 12-59; ix. 1-41; x. 1-9, 17-42; xi. 1-45, 47-54; xii. 1-50; xiii. 1-8, 31-38; xiv. 1-31; xv. 1-27; xvi. 1-33; xvii. 1-26; xviii. 1-40; xix. 1-42; xx. 1-18; xxi. 1-25.

The following passages occur twice: Matt. vii. 8; viii. 23; ix. 1; x. 37-39; xi. 15; xvii. 14-19; xxi. 33-42; xxii. 2-46; xxiii. 1-12; xxiv. 1-13, 34-44; xxv. 1-29, 31-46; xxvi. 57-75; xxvii. 3-56; Mark xv. 43-47. Luke i. 24, 25; iv. 22; xx. 1-8; xxi. 1-4; xxiii. 39-43. John iii. 13-17; v. 30; vi. 14, 27; viii. 12, 42-51; x. 27;
A Syriac Lectionary.

28; xi. 53; xii. 17, 18, 19–23, 37–47; xiv. 1–21, 27–31; xv. 1–7, 17–
27; xvi. 1–13, 15–33; xvii. 1–13, 18–20; xviii. 1, 28; xix. 6–16, 23–
25; xxi. 14, 24.

The following passages occur three times: Matt. xxii. 15–22,

The following passages occur four times: John xii. 37; xix.
31–37.
ARTICLE X.

THE UNAUGMENTED VERB-FORMS
OF THE RIG- AND ATHARVA-VEDAS.

BY JOHN AVERY,
PROFESSOR IN BOWDOIN COLLEGE, BRUNSWICK, ME.

Presented to the Society May 7th, 1884.

It is well known that the most ancient form of Sanskrit speech, like the earliest dialect of Greek, often omitted the augment in the past tenses of the verb. This usage is most common in the Rig-Veda; is less so in the Atharva-Veda; is rare in the Brāhmaṇas; and has disappeared from the later language, except in some aorist-forms after the prohibitive mā, and in a few other sporadic instances. It appears, moreover, that these abbreviated forms have in great part undergone a change in sense; that, while some retain the proper signification of their several tenses, a large number have in some way come to have a, for the most part, indefinite present or "tenseless" meaning—being often coordinate with true present-indicative forms—or have acquired a modal sense, and are employed in all situations where a true subjunctive, optative, or imperative form might have occurred.

So far as I am aware, no one has hitherto collected all occurrences of these forms and classified them according to their several uses. This is the task which is set for the following pages—one which can be brought to only an approximately certain conclusion, as will presently be explained. The search has been limited to the Rig- and Atharva-Vedas, since in these works the great body of such forms occur. I have looked through the text of the former, checking my results by Grass-
mann's Glossary; and have used for the latter Professor Whitney's Index Verborum.

The inquiry will relate to the following points:—1. What is the relative frequency of augmentless forms in the different tense-systems; 2. How many have a non-modal sense, and what is the actual tense-use—present, preterit, or aorist—of these; 3. Of forms having a modal sense, how many are used subjunctively and how many optatively.

I shall thus confine myself to a statement of the actual use of these forms, so far as that is discoverable, leaving for the present almost untouched the more difficult question, how this use came about.

Before taking up the main theme of the paper, one or two preliminary remarks will be in place. First, on account of the fragmentary condition in which some verbs have survived in the oldest texts, there is a certain number of forms which it is impossible to assign with entire confidence to a particular tense. This is especially true where the formal distinction between tenses is slight and not in every case consistently maintained. Such closely allied formations are the root-aorist and the root-class of the present-system, the a-aorist and the accented d-class, and the reduplicated stems of the present, perfect, and aorist systems. Since this difficulty has been referred to, with illustrative examples, by Delbrück in his Das Altindische Verbum, it is unnecessary to dwell on it here, only to say that I have followed Whitney's grammar in distributing doubtful forms among the several tenses; and further, that, considering our scanty, and for the most part conjectural, knowledge of the earliest history of the Old-Indian verb, the distinction of preterit and aorist must in case of some verbs be provisional, and founded on general analogies of structure rather than on actual difference of signification. It seems, indeed, a priori not unreasonable to suppose that in texts like the ones under consideration, whose material must have slowly grown up during many centuries, and at a period in Aryan society when the formative processes of the language were especially active, the same verbal form may represent more than one stage of development—that adāti, for example, might stand in an early hymn for an indefinite past or "imperfect," in contrast with a real or hypothetical present dāti, and in a later hymn for a past near at hand, or "aorist," in contrast with a later developed adadāti. It may not be possible to make the case out clearly, on account of the difficulty of fixing the chronological order of the hymns; but, unless some such state of things exists, I cannot understand the frequent inconsistencies of the poets in the choice of tenses. This suggests the importance of judging of the tense-use of each verbal form from its immediate context
rather than from its assumed relation to a general system of
tense-significations.

Secondly, a similar doubt may arise in connection with mode-
forms. This occurs when the mode-sign of the subjunctive
disappears in a long root- or stem-vowel, as in the 2d and 3d
sing. act. of the nā-class; so in the root-aorist, if sthāti, dāti,
and the like, are true subjunctives with primary endings, can
we be sure that sthāt and dāt were not regarded as the same
with secondary endings, even though asthāt and adāt occur?
It appears, indeed, that final radical ə is sometimes dropped
before the modal a, leaving dada, dadha, etc., as the subjunc-
tive stem; still, such forms as ades, adu, adanta are not want-
ing. Thirdly, some augmentless forms of the a-aorist are not
clearly distinguishable from true subjunctives of the root-aorist.
A prominent example is bhūvan etc.; so, too, āranta might be
true subjunctive to ārata, 3 pl. of the root-form, or augmentless
indicative after the pattern of stems like āran of the ð-form, if
regard were had to structure alone. Fourthly, there are a few
so-called pluperfect stems ending in a, which, when augment-
less, are not to be distinguished from true perfect subjunctives.
Finally, a part of the imperative inflection is identical with
augmentless preteritive forms; though here the accent some-
times furnishes a probable ground for discrimination.

Besides these classes of forms, there are others of a more
exceptional character, which likewise cause perplexity. Such
are: ēpam etc., whose initial ə gives no evidence of the presen-
tce or absence of the augment; adat, from ad, whose ultimate
a may be a mode-sign, or an insertion, as allowed by the gram-
arians, to preserve the ending; asan, whose last a may be
modal or a part of the ending, as in āsan; and ēpata, 3d sing.,
which occurs only after mā or mākis. Professor Whitney cites
it as a true subjunctive, and would make it the only instance,
perhaps, of such a form with the prohibitive particle. Rather
than assume this exception, I have preferred to regard it as one
of the not infrequent cases of transfer from the root- to the a-
class, and have therefore admitted it as an augmentless form.

These remarks are enough to show that the number of forms
which should be considered augmentless cannot be stated with
absolute precision; but, happily, the doubtful cases are a small
minority of the whole, and cannot materially affect the result.
Moreover, the number is considerably diminished, 1st, by the
fact that when such occur after the prohibitive mā it may be
fairly assumed that they are not true subjunctives; and, 2d,
by coordination with a verb in the indicative mode, or by the
general requirements of the sense.

We may now proceed to the first point of our inquiry, which
relates to the relative frequency of augmentless forms in the sev-
eral tense-systems. The whole number of such forms which I have noted in the two Vedas is 2511, of which 2036 occur in the Rik and 475 in the Atharvan. The total occurrences of augmented forms in the Rig-Veda, as stated in my *History of Verb-Inflection in Sanskrit*, are about 3800, of which 2085 are counted with the imperfect, and 1194 with the aorists. In the Atharva-Veda, augmented forms occur about 1447 times; so that, comparing the latter with the former statements, we find that in the Rig-Veda unaugmented forms are to augmented ones about as 1 to 1.62 and in the Atharva-Veda as 1 to 3.05—a marked decrease in frequency for the later text. Of augmentless forms in RV., 870, or about 42.7 per cent. of the whole, are found in the present system (counting both primitive and derivative conjugations); 28, or 1.4 per cent., are classed more or less confidently with the perfect-system; and 1138, or 55.9 per cent., are distributed among the several stems of the aorist. Not only does the aorist as a whole claim more than half of the augmentless forms, but the root-aorist stands foremost, with 487, or 42.8 per cent. of the occurrences. Next comes the υ-aorist, with 222, or 28.3 per cent.; the υε-aorist, with 164, or 14.4 per cent.; the reduplicated aorist, with 119, or 10.5 per cent.; the ς-aorist, with 37, or 3.2 per cent.; and the ςς-aorist, with 9, or .8 per cent. The σις-aorist is unrepresented in the Rig-Veda. The case is quite different in the Atharva-Veda; for, while in RV. nearly half of the augmentless forms occur in the present-system, in AV. there is a marked tendency to confine them to the aorist, where they stand to those in the present-system numerically as 4 to 1—a fact prophetic of the later usage. The specifications are as follows: the present-system has 92 occurrences, or 19.4 per cent. of the whole number; the perfect-system has 1 instance; and the aorist has the remaining 382 cases, or 80.6 per cent. of all. In the distribution of these forms among the aorist-stems, AV. does not differ markedly from RV. The root-form leads off, with 135, or 35.3 per cent. of aorist occurrences. The υ-form draws a little nearer, with 95 occurrences, or 24.9 per cent. Next follow in order the υς form with 68 instances, the ς-form with 41, the reduplicated form with 22, the σις-form with 14, and the ςς-form with 7.

The second part of our task was to separate augmentless forms into two grand divisions: the first to include those having a non-modal (indicative) sense, and the second those having a modal (subjunctive or optative) sense. We were further to inquire into the actual tense-use of those grouped in the first division. Here we are confronted at the outset with the question of interpretation. We hardly need to be reminded that there are still many dark verses that baffle the translators, in these ancient texts; and further, that the employment of mode and tense presents so many irregularities that one is often puzzled to know what rational principle governed their choice. One needs only to compare at random pages of the two complete translations of the Rig-Veda to appreciate the difficulty. I have constantly had before me the
renderings of Grassmann and Ludwig; though I have followed neither exclusively, but have endeavored to form an independent judgment, aided by the best light obtainable. Of course I do not expect that everyone will accept my understanding of each of the more than twenty-five hundred cases under consideration; but I trust that the difference of opinion will not be so great as to prevent substantial agreement in the results. At any rate, the whole material is spread before the reader, and he can modify the conclusions to suit his own views.

Turning first to the Rig-Veda, we find, as I think, that, as regards signification, the augmentless forms are divided about equally between a non-modal and a modal use. The figures are, 1027 to the former and 1009 to the latter. Of the former, a little more than half, or 554 instances, occur in the present-system, 17 in the perfect-system, and the remaining 456 in the aorist, of which 351 (235 + 116) occur in the simple-aorist, to 105 for all the forms of the sibilant-aorist.

The loss of so important a factor of tense-expression as the augment naturally led to inexactness of tense-use; and we find, in fact, that the great body of non-modally-used forms are divided, as to time, between an indefinite present and an indefinite past. I have reckoned 368 instances with the former, and 567 with the latter. These are distributed among the tense-systems in about the usual proportion. A past near at hand, or aorist, has been observed 92 times only, of which about five-sixths occur in the aorist-system. The distinction between the aorist and the imperfect sense cannot be certainly applied in every case, and there are passages where either would about equally suit the connection. The indefinite present is employed in the statement of general facts unrestricted as to time—such as the attributes of deities, their personal appearance, or their oft-recurring exploits. A true present indicative often occurs coördinated with such forms. A few examples, out of a large number, will illustrate this usage: RV. viii. 68. 2. “He clothes (ahby ārṇot) the naked, heals (bhīṣākhi) the wounded; the blind sees (prā khyat), the lame goes about (nir bhut);” x. 10. 2. “Thy friend desires (vaṣṭi) not that friendship . . . ; the sons of the great Asura, the heroes who support Heaven, see far around (pārī khyan),” x. 80. 1. “Agni gives (dadīti) the booty-winning steed . . . ; Agni wanders (carat) here and there adorning the two worlds;” Vāl. 2. 8. “Thy chariot-horses . . . with which thou dost strike down (nighosdyae) the enemy of man, with which thou dost ride around (pārī yase) the heavens;” ix. 74. 1. “When born in the wood, he cries out (cakradat) like an infant, when he, the ruddy steed, is striving to reach (sīqūati) the light.” One may see, further, RV. i. 87. 3; 132. 5; 152. 3; 169. 3; 175. 3. ii. 19. 4. iii. 16. 2. vii. 32. 21. viii. 2. 39. x. 4. 5; 80. 2; 123. 1.

The use of augmentless forms in a historical sense would call for no special remark, were it not for the tendency to obliterate the distinction of imperfect and aorist. In the following pas-
sages the latter stands for the former, being in most coördinated
with that or the perfect: RV. ii. 20. 8. iii. 31. 12. iv. 28. 1. v.
29. 4; 31. 8. viii. 55. 16. x. 46. 2; 73. 2; 128. 4.

As we turn, next, to the Atharva-Veda, we are not surprised to
find that the lapse of time has developed still more the tendency
of the language to confine the augmentless forms to a modal use;
for, instead of a nearly equal division between a non-modal and a
modal use, which obtains in the Rik, we find in the Atharvan
only 42 instances of the former to 433 of the latter—a ratio of 1
to 10, nearly. Only 13 belong to the present-system; 23 are
found in the simple-aorist; and 6 in the sibilant-aorist.

The third, and last, point of our inquiry referred to the second
grand division of augmentless forms, or those used in a modal
sense. I have attempted to separate subjunctively-used from
optatively-used forms, and under the latter head have separately
designated forms with mā. Under subjunctive uses are placed
dependent clauses of purpose or condition, expressions of will (1st
person), questions of doubt, and certain occurrences with na
which seem to approach the future in sense and are best rendered
by “shall not” or “cannot.” The optative use, including forms
with mā, expresses a wish, which in the Veda frequently
approaches a demand. Since these forms possess no mode-sign,
their non-modal or modal sense can only be determined by the
context—a coördinate verb or the general sense of the passage;
and there are not a few cases where an indicative or a subjunc-
tive, an indicative or an optative would make about equally good
sense.

We have seen that augmentless forms occur in a modal sense
1009 times in the Rig-Veda. Of these, 202 are counted with the
subjunctive, and 807 with the optative—491 without and 316 with
mā. The former occurs with about equal frequency in the present-
and aorist-systems. The latter use, without mā, is more
common in the aorist, in about the ratio of 1.51 to 1; and with
mā the ratio increases to 2.20 to 1. As we have so often noted,
the simple-aorist, especially the root-form of it, claims the largest
number of occurrences.

Examples of the optative use, with and without mā, are too
common to need citation. They may occur coördinated with
two subjunctives, optatives, or imperatives. The following are a
few of the passages where the subjunctive sense occurs in the
relations mentioned above: RV. ii. 19. 2. iv. 27. 3. viii. 91. 8. x.
22. 14 (purpose); i. 165. 10. vii. 64. 4; 93. 3. x. 87. 13 (condition);
ii. 18. 3. vi. 32. 1. x. 27. 2; 86. 5 (will); iv. 31. 1. vii. 80. 2. x. 28.
5 (question); i. 164. 18. ii. 30. 7. viii. 47. 1; 60. 4 (w. na).

Finally, in the Atharva-Veda, 19 of the 433 cases of modally-
used augmentless forms have a subjunctive sense, 73 are used
optatively without mā, and 341 have the same sense with mā.
Of the last, 48 only are counted with the present-system, and the
remaining 293 are found with the aorist. This ratio of about 8
to 1 in favor of the aorist is striking, when we compare it with
the corresponding usage in the Rig-Veda.
It only remains to say a few words in explanation of the following List of Forms and Occurrences, in which will be found in detail the facts which have been summarized in the foregoing pages. Under the head "non-modal," occurrences having a present sense are left without special mark; those having a preterite or aorist sense are followed by "p" or "a" respectively. So, under the head "modal," an occurrence having a subjunctive sense is followed by "s;" one having an optative sense, by "o." Passages containing mā are preceded by "w. mā."

LIST OF FORMS AND OCCURRENCES.

PRESENT SYSTEM.

ACTIVE.

non-modal.

w'aj: ajat
añj: ańjan RV. 3. 38. 3. p. 7. 2. 5.
ad: adat AV. 10. 8. 22.
av: ávas
avatam RV. 7. 83. 1. p.
 difíc: áçnavavam
i: es
ayan RV. 4. 2. 16. p.
yan RV. 3. 4. 5.
insaks: inaksat
21s: ichas
ubh: ubhānas RV. 1. 63. 4. p.
unap (3 s.) RV. 2. 13. 9. p.
uq: ógas
țvan RV. 1. 69. 10. 7. 1. 2. p.; 5. 6. p.
țs: ārasat
ikṣ: kṛṣnavam RV. 10. 49. 1.
kṣ: kāṣat RV. 10. 28. 10. 11.
krand: krāndat RV. 1. 36. 8. p. 10.
44. 8. p.
AV. 20. 136. 5. p. (msa. kradat).
kṣam: kṣāmat (krā-?)
ksar: kṣārat RV. 9. 86. 20. a. AV.
5. 1. 3.

modal.

AV. 3. 8. 4. 0.
RV. 1. 121. 12. a.
AV. 19. 55. 6. 0.
w. mā AV. 5. 22. 11.
RV. 1. 132. 6. 8.
w. mā AV. 10. 1. 7.
RV. 1. 175. 3. 0.
RV. 1. 30. 14. 0. 15. 0. 9. 102. 8. 0.
RV. 1. 173. 2. 0.
RV. 7. 43. 1. 0.
RV. 9. 107. 15. 0. AV. 10. 4. 1. 0.
RV. 1. 173. 3. 0. 10. 95. 13. 8.
AV. 7. 63. 1. 0.
RV. 9. 109. 8. 0.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

**non-modal.**

\(\text{vırki}: \text{kṣáyas}\)
\(\text{ksáyat RV. 7. 20. 6.}\)
\(\text{ksá}: \text{ksápam}\)
\(\text{ksép}: \text{ksépá}\)
\(\text{khid}: \text{khidat RV. 4. 28. 2.p.}\)
\(\text{śga}: \text{śgát RV. 9. 71. 5.}\)
\(\text{śga}: \text{śgáat}\)
\(\text{guh}: \text{gūhas}\)
\(\text{grabh}: \text{grābhás}\)
\(\text{caks}: \text{cakṣus RV. 10. 92. 15. p.}\)
\(\text{car}: \text{caraas}\)
\(\text{carat RV. 3. 44. 3. 10. 80. 1; 123. 5.}\)
\(\text{AV. 13. 2. 40. p.}\)
\(\text{carata}\)
\(\text{cárán RV. 5. 48. 3.}\)
\(\text{cit}: \text{cetat RV. 8. 57. 18.}\)
\(\text{cud}: \text{codat}\)
\(\text{cyu}: \text{cyávam}\)
\(\text{ján}: \text{janat RV. 2. 21. 4. p.; 40. 2. p.}\)
\(\text{ji}: \text{jáyat}\)
\(\text{jinv}: \text{jinvan RV. 1. 71. 1. p.}\)
\(\text{juq}: \text{jóqat}\)
\(\text{taks}: \text{takṣam}\)
\(\text{tákṣat RV. 1. 51. 10. p.; 61. 6. p.; 121. 3. p.; 158. 5. p. 9. 97. 22. p. 10. 99. 1. p.}\)
\(\text{tákṣáma RV. 5. 73. 10. a.}\)
\(\text{tákṣan RV. 1. 20. 3. p.; 111. 1. 4. p.}\)
\(\text{5. 31. 4. p.}\)
\(\text{tand}: \text{tandat}\)
\(\text{tap}: \text{tápas}\)
\(\text{tapat}\)
\(\text{tud}: \text{tudat RV. 8. 1. 11. p. 10. 96. 4. p.}\)
\(\text{tr}: \text{tiráa}\)
\(\text{tárat RV. 9. 58. 1. 1.p. 2. p. 3. p. 4. p.}\)
\(\text{tsar}: \text{tasárat RV. 1. 71. 5 p. 8. 1. 11. p.}\)
\(\text{dabh}: \text{dabhát}\)

\(\text{dabhán RV. 1. 148. 5.}\)

\(\text{dah}: \text{dahas}\)
\(\text{rđá}: \text{dadás}\)
\(\text{dádas RV. 8. 59. 14. p.}\)
\(\text{dadát}\)

**modal.**

\(\text{RV. 3. 8. 1. a. 8. 53. 4. 0.}\)
\(\text{RV. 8. 58. 11. 0. 16. 106. 7. 0.}\)
\(\text{RV. 10. 27. 4. 8.}\)
\(\text{RV. 4. 27. 3. 8. 10. 182. 1-3. 0.}\)

\(\text{RV. 1. 167. 6. 8. 173. 1. 0.}\)
\(\text{w. mā RV. 7. 100. 6. 10. 27. 24.}\)
\(\text{RV. 3. 30. 5. a.}\)

\(\text{RV. 8. 1. 28. 0.}\)
\(\text{RV. 1. 173. 3. 0.}\)
\(\text{w. mā RV. 10. 34. 14.}\)

\(\text{RV. 1. 164. 16. 8. AV. 9. 9. 15. a.}\)
\(\text{RV. 7. 27. 3. 0. AV. 19. 5. 1. 0.}\)
\(\text{RV. 1. 165. 10. 8.}\)
\(\text{RV. 4. 40. 2. 0.}\)
\(\text{RV. 10. 43. 5. 8.}\)

\(\text{RV. 1. 167. 5. a. 10. 81. 7. 0.}\)
\(\text{RV. 6. 32. 1. a.}\)

\(\text{RV. 7. 64. 4. 8.}\)

\(\text{RV. 2. 30. 7. 8. (w. na).}\)
\(\text{w. mā AV. 18. 2. 35. a.}\)
\(\text{w. mā RV. 1. 162. 20.}\)

\(\text{RV. 3. 40. 3. 0.}\)
\(\text{RV. 9. 107. 15. 0.}\)

\(\text{RV. 1. 178. 2. a. 7. 56. 15. 8. 10. 108. 4. 8.}\)
\(\text{w. mā RV. 1. 84. 20. 2. 32. 2. 6. 44.}\)
\(\text{12. 8. 45. 23. 10. 87. 9. 120. 4.}\)
\(\text{AV. 4. 7. 7. 5. 2. 4. a. 8. 3. 9. 6.}\)
\(\text{25. 13. 2. 5. 17. 8. 19. 27. 5. 6.}\)
\(\text{46. 2.}\)
\(\text{w. mā RV. 10. 16. 1. AV. 18. 2. 4.}\)
\(\text{w. mā AV. 12. 4. 52.}\)

\(\text{AV. 11. 1. 27. 0.}\)
non-modal.

1 da: dāsat RV. 5. 61. 10. p. 7. 75. 7.
2. 4³. p.
da q: dāqat RV. 2. 19. 4. 6. 16. 20.

dās: dāsat
rāt: dīyat
didet
dī v: dīvyas
duh: dugdham

duhūs RV. 2. 34. 10. p. 9. 108. 11.
dhr: drḥat RV. 2. 17. 5. p.
dhāv: dhāvan RV. 1. 135. 9.
rāh: rāhad RV. 1. 71. 3. p.
dhi: didhyas
dhūs RV. Vāl. 7. 5. p.
nakṣ: nakṣat RV. 1. 121. 3. p. 6.
63. 6. p.

nam: namas
1 na q: naṣat
nāqan
2na q: nāqat RV. 7. 32. 21. 8. 19. 6.

naqan

nīd(nīnd): nindat
4. 6. p.
pāt: patat RV. 4. 27. 4. p.
pāq: pāqyat AV. 2. 1. 1. p.
pā q: pībat RV. 5. 29. 7. p.
pī v: pīvata RV. 9. 68. 3. p.
8. 1. 28. p.
pīc: prīnak (3 a) RV. 6. 20. 6. p.
pīc: prīcat
pīṣa(pīṣ): pīpyas
pipes

modal.

RV. 7. 32. 5. 8.
RV. 1. 70. 5. 8.; 158. 2. 8.; 4. 2. 9. 8.
7. 100. 1. 8.; 8. 19. 14. 8.; 92. 4. 8. 10.
61. 25. 0.; 65. 6. 0.; 91. 11. 2.

RV. 6. 5. 4. 8.
RV. 1. 180. 1. 8.

RV. 2. 2. 8. 0.
w. mā RV. 10. 34. 13.
w. mā RV. 1. 158. 4.

RV. 9. 72. 2. 8.

RV. 6. 34. 4. 8.

w. mā AV. 8. 1. 9.

RV. 1. 173. 3. 0.; 7. 39. 6. 0.

AV. 6. 131. 2. 0.; 7. 56. 4. 0.

AV. 20. 136. 12. 0. (not mss.)

RV. 9. 79. 1. 0.

RV. 1. 41. 5. 0.; 164. 22. 8.; 2. 41. 11.
4. 23. 4. 8.; 6. 2. 5. 8.; 8. 20. 16.
0.; 31. 17. 8.; 47. 1. 8.; 50. 12. 8.; 57.
8. 8.; 59. 3. 8. AV. 9. 9. 21. 8.
RV. 2. 35. 6. 8. w. mā RV. 2. 23. 8;
27. 14.

w. mā RV. 4. 5. 2.

RV. 1. 36. 18. 0.; 8. 17. 15. 0.

RV. 1. 164. 16. 8. AV. 9. 9. 15. 8.

RV. 8. 2. 23. 0.

AV. 7. 57. 1. 0.

RV. 2. 63. 8. 0.

RV. 4. 16. 21. 0.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

non-modal.

\( \nu \) p \( \text{y} \) \( \text{a} \) (p) \( \text{i} \): p\( \text{p} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{y} \)\( \text{a} \) t

p\( \text{p} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{y} \)\( \text{a} \)n

pr\( \text{o} \)\( \text{c} \)\( \text{h} \): pr\( \text{c} \)\( \text{h} \)\( \text{a} \)t RV. 8. 45. 4. p.; 66. i. p.

pr\( \text{u} \)\( \text{t} \): pr\( \text{h} \)\( \text{a} \)t RV. 7. 3. 2.

br\( \text{u} \)\( \text{t} \): b\( \text{r} \)\( \text{u} \)\( \text{t} \)\( \text{a} \)n AV. 4. 8. 2.

bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{s} \): bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{t} \)\( \text{a} \)t RV. 6. 3. 4.

bh\( \text{i} \)\( \text{d} \): bh\( \text{i} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{t} \) (2 a.) RV. 1. 54. 4. p.; 130. 7. p.; 174. 8. p.

bh\( \text{i} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{t} \) (3 a.) RV. 1. 52. 5. p.; 62. 3. p. 2. 11. 20. p.; 15. 8. p. 4. 17. 3. p. 8. 32. 25. p.; 58. 14. p. 10. 68. 11. p.

bh\( \text{i} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{s} \): b\( \text{i} \)\( \text{b} \)\( \text{h} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{a} \)

bib\( \text{h} \)\( \text{t} \)\( \text{i} \)\( \text{a} \)

bib\( \text{h} \)\( \text{i} \)\( \text{t} \)\( \text{a} \)n\( \text{a} \)

bh\( \text{u} \)j\( \text{t} \): bh\( \text{u} \)\( \text{j} \)\( \text{a} \)t RV. 1. 100. 14.

bh\( \text{u} \)\( \text{t} \): bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{v} \)\( \text{a} \)t

bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{v} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{n} \)

bh\( \text{u} \)\( \text{s} \): bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{s} \)an

bh\( \text{r} \): bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{r} \)\( \text{a} \)s RV. 6. 26. 4. 10. 171. 2.

bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{r} \)\( \text{a} \)t RV. 1. 60. 1. p.; 121. 13. p. 2. 20. 6. p. 4. 26. 4–6. p. 5. 44. 13. p. 9. 48. 3. p.; 4. p.; 97. 24.

bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{r} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{s} \): b\( \text{h} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{r} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{s} \) RV. 10. 13. 2. p. AV. 18. 3. 36°. p.

bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{r} \)\( \text{a} \)q: bh\( \text{a} \)\( \text{r} \)\( \text{a} \)q\( \text{a} \)t

m\( \text{a} \)\( \text{d} \): m\( \text{a} \)\( \text{d} \)as

madat


m\( \text{a} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{d} \): m\( \text{a} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{d} \)an

\( \text{m} \)\( \text{i} \): m\( \text{i} \)\( \text{n} \)\( \text{v} \)\( \text{a} \)n RV. 3. 31. 12. p.

\( \text{m} \)\( \text{i} \): m\( \text{i} \)\( \text{n} \)at

m\( \text{i} \)\( \text{n} \)t

m\( \text{i} \)\( \text{n} \)an

\( \text{m} \)\( \text{r} \) (\( \text{m} \)\( \text{r} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{p} \)): m\( \text{r} \)\( \text{p} \)at

y\( \text{a} \)\( \text{m} \): y\( \text{a} \)\( \text{m} \)\( \text{a} \)\( \text{m} \) RV. 10. 49. 3. p.

y\( \text{a} \)\( \text{m} \)as

y\( \text{a} \)\( \text{m} \)at AV. 6. 56. 1. 10. 4. 8.

y\( \text{a} \)\( \text{m} \)an

y\( \text{a} \)t

modal.

RV. 1. 77. 5. 0. 3. 57. 6. a. 8. 1. 19. 0. 9. 6. 7. a. 10. 133. 7. 8.

RV. 1. 152. 6. 0. 7. 65. 2. 8.

RV. 4. 15. 7. 8.

RV. 6. 14. 1. 0.

RV. 8. 1. 8. 8.

w. m\( \text{a} \) AV. 2. 15. 1–6. 5. 30. 8. 8. 2. 23. 24.

w. m\( \text{a} \) AV. 7. 60. 1.

w. m\( \text{a} \) RV. 8. 55. 15. AV. 7. 60. 4. 6. 18. 3. 64.

AV. 10. 8. 22. 0. 14. 2. 24. 0.

AV. 20. 130. 19. 0.

RV. 1. 151. 3. 0.

RV. 1. 173. 3. 0. 2. 19. 5. 8. 9. 52. 1. 0.; 106. 3. 0.

AV. 20. 153. 6. 0.

w. m\( \text{a} \) AV. 8. 1. 7.

AV. 20. 49. 2. 0.

RV. 10. 89. 16. 8.

RV. 4. 30. 23. 8. 7. 32. 5. 8. 8. 28. 4. 8.

w. m\( \text{a} \) AV. 6. 110. 3.

RV. 9. 61. 27. 8.

AV. 9. 2. 14. 0.

RV. 10. 134. 6. 0.

RV. 5. 34. 2. 8.; 46. 5. 0. 8. 11. 7. 0.; 33. 8. 8.; 81. 3. 0. 9. 44. 5. 0. 10. 14. 14. 0. AV. 6. 35. 3. 0.

w. m\( \text{a} \) RV. 3. 45. 1. 4. 44. 5. 7. 69. 6. 8. 81. 31. AV. 7. 117. 1°.

RV. 9. 52. 2. 0.
J. Avery,

**non-modal.**

\( \text{v'y\dot{a}} : \text{yitam} \)
\( \text{y\dot{a}}ta \)
\( \text{2yu} : \text{yuyoma} \)
\( \text{rad} : \text{r\acute{a}dat RV. 7. 87. 1. p.} \)
\( \text{ran} : \text{r\acute{a}pat} \)
\( \text{r\acute{a}jan RV. 4. 33. 7. p.} \)
\( \text{rap} : \text{r\acute{a}pat} \)

\( \text{r\acute{a}j} : \text{r\acute{a}j (3 s.) RV. 6. 12. 5.} \)
\( \text{r\acute{a}dh} : \text{r\acute{a}dhat} \)
\( \text{ric} : \text{r\acute{i}k\acute{a} (3 s.) RV. 2. 15. 8. p.; 19. 5.} \)
\( \text{ribh} : \text{r\grave{e}bh\acute{a}t RV. 10. 92. 15. p.} \)
\( \text{ri\acute{g}} : \text{r\grave{e}g\acute{a}t RV. 7. 20. 6.} \)
\( \text{ri} : \text{r\grave{a}nas} \)
\( \text{r\dot{a}jan RV. 8. 7. 28. p. 10. 138. 1. p.} \)
\( \text{ru\acute{u}} : \text{ruv\acute{a}t} \)
\( \text{ru\acute{j}} : \text{ruj\acute{a}s RV. 6. 22. 6. p.} \)
\( \text{ruj\acute{a}t RV. 6. 32. 2. p.; 39. 2. p. 7. 75. 7.} \)
\( \text{rujan RV. 1. 71. 2. p.} \)
\( \text{rud} : \text{rudan} \)
\( \text{ru\acute{d}h} : \text{ru\acute{d}hat RV. 1. 67. 10.} \)
\( \text{re\acute{j}} : \text{rej\acute{a}t RV. 4. 17. 2. p.} \)
\( \text{likh} : \text{likhat} \)
\( \text{va\acute{d}} : \text{v\acute{a}dat RV. 1. 119. 9. p.} \)
\( \text{van} : \text{v\acute{a}nas} \)
\( \text{van\acute{a}van} \)
\( \text{va\acute{p}} : \text{v\acute{a}pas RV. 4. 16. 13. p.} \)
\( \text{va\acute{m}} : \text{v\acute{a}man RV. 10. 108. 8. p.} \)
\( \text{i\acute{v}as} : \text{uch\acute{a}t} \)
\( \text{uch\acute{a}nn RV. 7. 90. 4.} \)
\( \text{3\acute{v}as} : \text{vas\acute{a}s} \)
\( \text{vah} : \text{v\acute{a}hat RV. 8. 1. 11. p.} \)
\( \text{i\acute{v}id} : \text{v\acute{e}t (3 s.) RV. 10. 53. 9. p.} \)
\( \text{2\acute{v}id} : \text{v\acute{e}nd\acute{a}s RV. 10. 104. 8. p.} \)
\( \text{v\acute{a}ndat RV. 6. 44. 23. p.} \)
\( \text{v\acute{a}ndan RV. 1. 72. 2. p. 4. 1. 16. p.} \)
\( \text{vid\acute{h}} : \text{vidh\acute{a}t RV. 8. 5. 22. p.} \)
\( \text{vidh\acute{a}n} \)
\( \text{vi\acute{q}} : \text{vi\acute{q}at RV. 9. 103. 4.; 107. 10.} \)
\( \text{2vi\acute{q}} : \text{vi\acute{v}\acute{e}s (2 s.) RV. 1. 69. 8. p. 10. 147. 1. p.} \)
\( \text{vi\acute{v}\acute{e}s (3 s.) RV. 10. 76. 3. p.} \)
\( \text{2vi\acute{q}} : \text{v\acute{e}s (2 s.)} \)

**modal.**

\( \text{w. mā AV. 11. 2. 1.} \)
\( \text{w. mā AV. 6. 73. 3.} \)
\( \text{w. mā AV. 7. 68. 3.} \)
\( \text{RV. 8. 82. 20. 8.} \)
\( \text{RV. 5. 53. 16. 0. 10. 25. 1. 0.} \)
\( \text{RV. 1. 174. 7. 0. 10. 11. 2. 0. AV. 18. 1. 19'. 0.} \)
\( \text{RV. 1. 120. 1. 8.} \)

\( \text{AV. 20 135. 11. 0.} \)
\( \text{RV. 1. 173. 3. 0. 4. 56. 1. 8.} \)
\( \text{w. mā AV. 8. 1. 19.} \)

\( \text{AV. 20. 132. 8. a.} \)
\( \text{AV. 3. 3. 7. a.} \)
\( \text{w. mā RV. 8. 45. 23.} \)
\( \text{RV. 7. 48. 3. o.} \)
\( \text{RV. 8. 85. 9. o.} \)
\( \text{AV. 7. 8. 5. 0.} \)
\( \text{AV. 1. 8. 1. 0.} \)
\( \text{RV. 1. 149. 1. 0.} \)
\( \text{RV. 1. 65. 2. 8. 6. 15. 14. 8. w. mā} \)
\( \text{RV. 4. 3. 13.} \)
\( \text{RV. 1. 77. 2. 8.} \)
\( \text{w. mā RV. 8. 86. 7'.} \)
non-modal.

\(\sqrt{\text{vṛj}}\) : vṛpak (3 a) RV. 6. 18. 8. p. 7.
\(\sqrt{\text{vṛt}}\) : varat RV. 1. 121. 4. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{vṛdh}}\) : vārdhas
  vārdhat
  vārdhan
  vṛḥ : vṛhas
  vṛhat RV. 1. 130. 9. p.
  vṛn : vrenas

venatam

\(\sqrt{\text{vyac}}\) : vívyak (3 a) RV. 7. 21. 6.
\(\sqrt{\text{vyadh}}\) : vídhyat RV. 1. 61. 7. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{vraço}}\) : vṛcchas RV. 4. 17. 7. p.
  vṛcçat RV. 1. 61. 10. p. 2. 19. 2. p.
  3. 33. 7. p. 5. 29. 6. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{cāḥ}}\) : cāṣata
\(\sqrt{\text{cak}}\) : cikṣam
  cikṣas
\(\sqrt{\text{cārdh}}\) : cārdhat
  cāyat RV. 1. 130. 4. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{cās(qi)}}\) : cāças (2 a) RV. 1. 80. 1. p.
  cāsas RV. 10. 32. 4.
\(\sqrt{\text{qcō}}\) :QCOCAS
\(\sqrt{\text{qcam}}\) : QCAMNAN
\(\sqrt{\text{qrath}}\) : grathnās RV. 10. 171. 3. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{sād}}\) : sādas RV. 6. 5. 3. a.
  sādat RV. 5. 11. 2. p. 6. 16. 23. 10.
  46. 6. p. 61. 9. p. 123. 5.

  sādan RV. 1. 65. 2. 72. 5. p. 85. 7. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{sacō}}\) : sāçcat RV. 2. 22. 1. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{sadh}}\) : sādhat RV. 2. 19. 3. p.
  sādhan RV. 1. 96. 1. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{sico}}\) : sīcām
\(\sqrt{\text{su}}\) : suñota
\(\sqrt{\text{sṛj}}\) : sṛjas RV. 2. 11. 2. p. 4. 17. 1. p.
  5. 32. 1. p. 10. 111. 9. p.
\(\sqrt{\text{sṛjat}}\) : sṛjat RV. 1. 55. 6. p. 71. 5. p.
  4. 27. 3. p. 9. 64. 10. 10. 113. 4. p.
  124. 7. p.

\(\sqrt{\text{sṛp}}\) : sarpas RV. 10. 79. 3. 99. 12.

modal.

RV. 1. 71. 6. 0.
RV. 6. 38. 3. 0. 7. 68. 9. 0. 10. 61. 26. 0.
RV. 6. 51. 11. 0.
w. mā RV. 6. 48. 17.

RV. 1. 43. 9. 0. w. mā RV. 5. 31. 2;
  36. 4. 6. 44. 10. AV. 4. 8. 2.
w. mā RV. 5. 75. 7; 78. 1.

w. mā RV. 8. 1. 1.
RV. 10. 27. 1. 8.
RV. Val. 4. 8. 2.
RV. 7. 21. 5. 0.

w. mā RV. 10. 16. 1.
RV. 1. 104. 2. 0.

RV. 7. 30. 3. 0. 8. 61. 2. 0. 10. 12. 1. 8;
  46. 1. 0. 61. 4. 8. 99. 8. 8. AV. 18.
  1. 20'. 8.

RV. 10. 27. 2. 8.
RV. 4. 43. 6. 0.
w. mā RV. 2. 30. 7.

w. mā RV. 1. 189. 5.

RV. 1. 174. 4. 0. 7. 104. 20. 0. AV.
  8. 4. 20'. 0.
non-modal.

\textit{v\'st\'an}: st\'an (3 s.) RV. 10. 92. 8.
\textit{st\'u}: st\'u\'t RV. 7. 42. 6. a.
\textit{st\'h\'a}: ti\'\'stham RV. 8. 34. 18. p.
\textit{ti\'\'sthas}

\begin{align*}
\text{ti\'\'sthat RV. 1. 118. 5. a.} & \quad 4. 1. 17. p. \\
\text{5. 73. 5.} & \quad 8. 20. 4. 5. 8. 15. p. \quad 10. 132. 7. \\
\text{ti\'\'stham RV. 10. 123. 3.}
\end{align*}

\textit{sp\'r\'dh}: sp\'\'urdh\'an
\textit{sp\'\'h\'ur}: sp\'h\'ur\'at
\textit{sr\'\'d\'h}: sre\'dh\'a\'ta

\textit{sv\'\'aj}: sv\'\'a\'j RV. 6. 60. 10.
\textit{han}: h\'an (2 s.) RV. 5. 32. 1. p. \quad 6. \\
\begin{align*}
\text{18. 5. p.;} & \quad 20. 2. p., 10. p.; \quad 26. 5. p. \quad 10. \\
\text{22. 7. p.}
\end{align*}
\textit{han} (3 s.) RV. 5. 39. 2. p., 4. p. \quad 6. \\
\begin{align*}
\text{27. 5. p.;} & \quad 47. 2. p. \quad 7. 9. 6. p. \quad 10. 99. \\
\text{6. p.}
\end{align*}
\textit{hat\'am RV. 7. 83. 1. p.}
\textit{zh\'\'a}: jah\'t\'am
\textit{h\'i\'n\'v}: hin\'van RV. 10. 96. 7. p.
\textit{h\'v\'a(h\'a)}: huv\'vat

modal.

\textit{w. m\'a AV. 8. 1. 9.} \quad 10. 1. 26.

\textit{RV. 6. 67. 9. a.}
\textit{RV. 1. 84. 8. a.}
\textit{w. m\'a RV. 7. 32. 9.}

\textit{RV. 10. 182. 1-3. 0.}

\textit{w. m\'a AV. 7. 53. 2.}

\textit{RV. 8. 26. 16. 0.}

MIDDLE.

\textit{af\'j}: a\'f\'j\'ata (3 pl.) RV. 8. 7. 25. p.
\textit{am}: \'am\'anta
\textit{ir\'d\'h}: ir\'d\'h\'anta RV. 1. 129. 2.
\textit{i\'s}: i\'\'s\'anta
\textit{\'i\'s\'a}: ich\'\'anta RV. 1. 68. 8. p.
\textit{i\'d}: i\'\'d\'ata (3 p.)
\textit{i\'q}: i\'\'q\'ata (3 s.)

\textit{\'i\'s\'anta RV. 8. 85. 3.}
\textit{\'r}: r\'u\'nt\'a RV. 5. 45. 6. p.
\textit{i\'k\'r}: kur\'uth\'as

\begin{align*}
\text{ki\'\'k\'uta RV. 10. 31. 8. 10. p.;} & \quad 48. 9. p. \\
\text{ki\'\'k\'ota}
\end{align*}
\textit{ki\'\'k\'\'v\'a\'t\'a RV. 1. 72. 5. p.} \quad 4. 24. 3.
\textit{guh}: gu\'\'h\'ath\'as
\textit{gr}: gr\'\'anta RV. 8. 3. 7. p.
\textit{gr\'\'a\'b\'h}: gr\'\'a\'b\'h\'ita (3 a.)
\textit{gr\'\'a\'b\'h\'a\'ta RV. 9. 14. 7.}
\textit{ca\'k\'\'s}: ca\'k\'\'s\'ata (3 s.) RV. 1. 121. 2. p.
\textit{\'a\'r}: ca\'r\'a\'nt\'a RV. 3. 4. 5.
\textit{cit}: cit\'\'ka\'ta

\textit{w. m\'a AV. 5. 22. 11.}
\textit{RV. 7. 34. 12. 0.}
\textit{RV. 1. 100. 7. 0.}
\textit{w. m\'a AV. 4. 20. 5.}
\textit{RV. 9. 106. 3. 0.}
\textit{RV. 9. 102. 4. 8. 10. 26. 2. 0.}
Uneaugmented Verb Forms in the Veda.

non-modal.

\text{cyu}: \text{cyavanta RV. 1. 48. 2.}

\text{jan}: \text{jayathās RV. 3. 48. 2. p. 8. 78. 5. p.}

\text{janata RV. 10. 123. 7. p.}

\text{jayata RV. 1. 128. 1. p. 4. 111. p.}

\text{jananta RV. 2. 18. 2. 7. 7. 4. p. 9. 23. 2. p.}

\text{jayanta RV. 1. 168. 2.}

\text{ja}: \text{jujata}

\text{jujanta RV. 1. 68. 3. p. 9. p.; 167. 4. 7. 5. 6. p.; 11. 4. p. 8. 13. 29. p. 10. 8. 3.}

RV. 1. 25. 18. 0. 5. 13. 3. 0. 7. 15. 6. 0.

RV. 1. 3. 9. 0.; 127. 6. 0.; 148. 2. 0. 2. 27. 2. 0.; 40. 2. 0.; 5. 41. 2. 0.; 46. 2. 0.; 6. 16. 8. 0.; 53. 11. 0. 7. 34. 25. 0.; 35. 14. 0.; 52. 3. 0.; 56. 20. 8.; 58. 6. 0.; 64. 1. o. 8. 13. 6. 8. 9. 81. 5. 0.; 102. 5. 8. 10. 70. 8. 0.

\text{ji}: \text{jananta RV. 10. 31. 7. a.}

\text{ja}: \text{janata (3 p.) RV. 1. 68. 8. p. 8. 61. 14.}

\text{tak}: \text{takṣata (3 p.) RV. 3. 38. 2. p.}

\text{tan}: \text{tanuḥtha}

\text{tṛ}: \text{tṛtāta}

\text{tirānta RV. 7. 7. 6.}

\text{day}: \text{dāyaṇta RV. 7. 16. 7.}

\text{dīṣ}: \text{dīṣṭa RV. 10. 93. 15. 8.}

\text{dṛṇ}: \text{drṇhaṇa RV. 5. 45. 2.}

\text{dhi}: \text{dhiḥthās}

\text{nak}: \text{nakṣata RV. 1. 33. 14. p. 10. 74. 2.}

\text{nākṣanta RV. 7. 52. 3. p. 10. 88. 17. p.}

\text{nām}: \text{namanta RV. 10. 30. 6.}

\text{naq}: \text{naqanta}

\text{naq}: \text{naqanta RV. 1. 123. 11. a. 10. 115. 4.}

\text{nās}: \text{nāsanta RV. 4. 58. 8. 8. 61. 14. 9. 89. 3.; 92. 5.}

\text{nīṣ}: \text{nīṣata RV. 10. 74. 2.}

\text{nī}: \text{nīyanta RV. 10. 4. 5.}

\text{nū}: \text{nūvanta RV. 1. 66. 10.; 69. 10. 4. 3. 11. p. 5. 45. 8. p. 6. 7. 2. p. 10. 176. 1. AV. 9. 9. 3.}

\text{nū}: \text{nūvanta RV. 10. 22. 9.}

\text{nūd}: \text{nūdanta RV. 1. 167. 4.}

\text{pa}: \text{pāmanta RV. 2. 4. 5. p. 10. 74. 4.}

RV. 1. 186. 7. 0.

w. mā RV. 7. 122.

RV. 1. 186. 7. 0.

w. mā RV. 7. 122.

RV. 1. 186. 7. 0.

w. mā RV. 7. 122.

RV. 1. 186. 7. 0.

w. mā RV. 7. 122.
non-modal

\textit{vyin}: pínvanta RV. 7. 34. 3.
\textit{pyā(p1):} pīpayánta RV. 1. 73. 6 p.
\textit{prat}: prathanta RV. 9. 94. 2 p.
\textit{pru:} pravanta RV. 4. 58. 8.
\textit{bad}: bādhathās
\textit{bāj}: bhājanta RV. 8. 4. 21\textsuperscript{1}, p. 10.
\textit{15. 3. AV. 18. 1. 45*.
\textit{bhan}: bhananta RV. 4. 18. 7. 7. 18. 7 p.
\textit{bhik}: bhikṣanta RV. 3. 56. 7.
\textit{bhur}: bhuránta RV. 5. 6. 7.
\textit{bhṛ}: bharata RV. 10. 40. 6 p.
\textit{bhāranta RV. 1. 70. 10. 2. 13. 2. 5. 73. 8. 8. 6. 2. p.
\textit{man:} manyathās
\textit{mananta RV. 10. 67. 2. p.
\textit{manvata RV. 4. 1. 16. p. 8. 29. 10. p.
\textit{myā:} myāta RV. 1. 140. 2.
\textit{yak}: yakṣanta RV. 1. 132. 5.
\textit{yu}: yuvanta
\textit{yu}: yuyothās
\textit{yuyota}
\textit{yuvanta}
\textit{ran:} raṇanta
\textit{raṇa}: RV. 1. 61. 11. p. 7. 39. 3 p.
\textit{rabh}: rabhathās
\textit{ra}: rathās
\textit{ruo}: rocata RV. 4. 1. 17. p. 10. 5. 6.
\textit{5. 60. 3. p.
\textit{rejata RV. 8. 92. 3.
\textit{vap}: vapanta RV. 7. 56. 3.
\textit{vasa}: vasta RV. 1. 25. 13.
\textit{vasata (3 p.) RV. 5. 52. 9; 63. 6; 85. 4.
\textit{viv}: vividha
\textit{iv}: ivāranta RV. 2. 24. 5. 3. 32.
\textit{9. 16. 4. 6. 6. 5. 55. 7.
\textit{iv}: ivāranta
\textit{vṛdh}: vārdhata
\textit{vardhanta
\textit{vṛdh}: vṛādhanta RV. 5. 6. 7.

modal.

\textit{RV. 1. 153. 4. 0.; 169. 4. 0.; 181. 5. 0.,}
\textit{6. 0. 5. 34. 9. 0.
\textit{w. mā RV. 10. 18. 11. AV. 18. 3. 50*.
\textit{RV. 1. 68. 4. 0. 5. 79. 7. 8. 10. 108. 8. a.
\textit{RV. 1. 70. 9. 0. w. mā RV. 1. 126. 7.
\textit{RV. 1. 174. 4. 0.
\textit{RV. 8. 60. 4. a.
\textit{w. mā RV. 2. 33. 1.
\textit{w. mā RV. 8. 60. 8.
\textit{RV. 5. 2. 5. 8.
\textit{RV. 7. 57. 5. 0.
\textit{w. mā AV. 8. 2. 7.
\textit{w. mā RV. 6. 44. 11.
\textit{RV. 3. 3. 1. 0.
\textit{RV. 1. 121. 15. 0.
\textit{RV. 1. 140. 15. 0.
\textit{RV. 10. 25. 10. 0.; 22. 14. 8.
\textit{RV. 5. 19. 3. 0.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

non-modal.

\[ \text{v\text{c}\text{\a}\text{(\text{\i})}}: \text{\ci\text{\c\i\t\a}} (3. a.) RV. 6. 3. 5.} \]
\[ \text{\q\text{\u\o}: \text{\q\text{\c\a\nt\a}}} \]
\[ \text{s\text{\a\c}: \text{\s\c\a\nt\a} RV. 4. 5. 9. p.} \]
\[ \text{\s\c\a\d\h\m\a\m} \]
\[ \text{\s\c\a\nt\a RV. 1. 73. 4.; 156. 4.; 164.} \]
\[ \text{50. p. 2. 5. 5. 3. 1. 14. p. 5. 17. 5.;} \]
\[ \text{43. 15. 10. 90. 16. p.; 172. 1. AV.} \]
\[ \text{7. 5. 1. p.} \]
\[ \text{\s\a\p: \text{\s\a\p\a\nt\a} RV. 5. 3. 4. p.} \]
\[ \text{\s\a\q\c: \text{\s\a\c\a\nt\a} (3 p.) RV. 7. 90. 3.} \]
\[ \text{s\d\a\h: \text{s\d\a\h\a\nt\a} RV. 5. 45. 3. p.} \]
\[ \text{s\d\a\h\a\nt\a} \]
\[ \text{s\u: \text{s\u\a\nt\a} RV. 10. 31. 10. p.; 61. 20.} \]
\[ \text{s\r\j: \text{s\r\j\a\nt\a}} \]
\[ \text{s\s\j\a\nt\a RV. 10. 62. 7. p.} \]
\[ \text{s\t\u: \text{s\t\a\v\a\nt\a} RV. 4. 22. 7. p. 7. 30. 4.} \]
\[ \text{s\t\h\a: \text{s\t\a\h\a\nt\a} RV. 1. 135. 8. 10. 117. 5.} \]
\[ \text{s\m\a: \text{s\m\a\a\nt\a} RV. 1. 168. 8.} \]
\[ \text{s\h\a: \text{s\h\a\a\nt\a} RV. 1. 37. 7. 5. 43. 3. p.} \]
\[ \text{s\h\a: \text{s\h\a\a\nt\a} w. m\a AV. 12. 3. 46.} \]

Perfect System.

Active.

\[ \text{\i\k\r\p: \text{\c\a\k\r\a\m\a\nt\a} RV. 4. 42. 6. p.} \]
\[ \text{\k\r\a\n\d: \text{\c\a\k\r\a\d\a\as\a\nt\a} RV. 9. 107. 22.} \]
\[ \text{\c\a\k\r\a\d\a\nt\a RV. 8. 7. 26. p. 9. 7. 3.;} \]
\[ \text{74. 1.; 86. 31.} \]
\[ \text{\c\i\t: \text{\c\i\k\e\t\a\m\a}} \]
\[ \text{\d\a\h\a: \text{\d\a\d\h\a\nt\a} RV. 10. 73. 1. p.} \]
\[ \text{\d\h\a\r\a\s\t: \text{\d\h\a\r\a\s\t\a\nt\a}} \]
\[ \text{\n\a\m: \text{\n\a\m\a\a\nt\a} RV. 1. 174. 8. p.} \]
\[ \text{\v\a\y\a\c: \text{\v\a\y\a\c\a\nt\a} RV. 10. 96. 4. p.} \]
\[ \text{\s\t\a\b\h: \text{\s\t\a\b\h\a\nt\a} RV. 1. 121. 3. p.} \]
\[ \text{\s\a\v\a\r: \text{\s\a\v\a\s\v\a\r\a\nt\a} RV. 1. 83. 5. p.} \]
\[ \text{\h\i\h\a\s: \text{\j\h\i\h\a\s\a\nt\a} w. m\a AV. 12. 3. 18.} \]
\[ \text{\h\v\e: \text{\j\h\u\r\u\r\a\s\a\nt\a} w. m\a RV. 7. 4. 4.} \]

Middle.

\[ \text{k\r\a\p: \text{\c\a\k\r\p\a\nt\a} RV. 4. 1. 14. p.} \]
\[ \text{k\r\a\m: \text{\c\a\k\r\a\m\a\nt\a} RV. 4. 22. 6. p.} \]
\[ \text{\v\r\d\h: \text{\v\a\v\r\d\h\a\nt\a} RV. 5. 52. 7. 6.} \]
\[ \text{66. 2. p. 10. 93. 12. 8.} \]
\[ \text{\v\a\y\a\c: \text{\v\a\y\a\c\a\nt\a} RV. 8. 6. 15.} \]
\[ \text{\h\v\e: \text{\j\h\u\r\h\a\r\h\a\s\a\nt\a} w. m\a RV. 7. 1. 19.} \]
\[ \text{\j\h\u\r\u\r\a\s\a: \text{\j\h\u\r\u\r\a\nt\a} w. m\a RV. 1. 43. 3. 55. 2.} \]
J. Avery,

Aorist Systems.

1. Root-Aorist.

active.

non-modal.


kar (2 a.) RV. 1. 63. 7. p. 5. 29. 5. p. 6. 26. 5. p. 7. 21. 3. p.

kár (3 a.) RV. 1. 61. 11. p.; 71. 5. p.; 72. 1.; 174. 7. p. 3. 5. 7. 31. 6. p. 4. 28. 1. p. 5. 29. 4. p. 6. 20. 5. p.; 23. 5. a. 9. 92. 5. 10. 10. 5. p. AV. 18. 1. 5. p.

kártam

karma RV. 1. 173. 4. a.

kran

kran: kran (2 a.) RV. 7. 5. 7.

kramus

gám: gamam

gan (3 a.) AV. 3. 4. 1. a.

ganma

gánta RV. 1. 38. 2.

gantana

gmán RV. 1. 65. 1. 3. 38. 2 a.; 39. 5. p. 4. 43. 6. 6. 1. 2. 3. 10. 29. 5.; 46. 2. p.; 123. 4. p.

igá: gám

gás RV. 10. 1. 2.

gát RV. 1. 104. 5. p. 2. 38. 8. 3. 31. 1. p. 6. p. 21. p. 5. 45. 1. a. 2. 7. 67. 8. 69. 4. 10. 5. 6. p. AV. 5. 1. 6. p.

modal.

RV. 1. 161. 49. 0. 6. 44. 18. 0. AV. 7. 10. 1. 0.—w. mā RV. 2. 18. 4. 3. 33. 8. 7. 22. 6; 43. 3; 75. 8. 8. 45. 31.

RV. 1. 186. 5. o. 4. 21. 10. 0.—w. mā 4. 18. i.

w. mā AV. 11. 2. 2.

RV. 2. 23. 12. 0.—w. mā RV. 6. 51. 7. 7. 52. 2; 60. 8.

AV. 14. 1. 32. o. 19. 20. 4. 0.—w. mā AV. 7. 82. 3. 8. 6. 25.

w. mā RV. 7. 32. 27.

w. mā RV. 7. 89. 1.

w. mā RV. 7. 50. 1.

w. mā RV. 2. 25. 7. 6. 61. 14.

w. mā RV. 7. 59. 5.

RV. 3. 54. 14. 0. 4. 34. 5. 0. 5. 33. 10. 0.; 49. 4. 0.

w. mā RV. 10. 128. 4. AV. 5. 3. 4.

RV. 1. 67. 6. o. 4. 16. 9. o. 7. 62. 2. o. 10. 56. 3. o.—w. mā RV. 3. 53. 2. 4. 3. 13. 10. 108. 9. AV. 5. 30. 12. 6.; 19. 9. 8. 1. 7. 10; 2. 1. 12. 2. 10. 19. 27. 8.

RV. 1. 38. 5. 0.; 164. 4. 8.; 167. 5. 0. 2. 33. 14. 0.; 38. 11. 0. 7. 3. 9. 8. AV. 9. 9. 9. 8.—w. mā RV. 8. 5. 39. 10. 18. 4. AV. 5. 30. 14. 7. 53. 4. 8. 1. 7. 18. 12. 2. 23; 3. 46. 16. 4. 3.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

non-modal.

\( \psi \ \text{i} \ \text{g} \ \text{a}: \text{g} \ \text{a} \ \text{t} \ \text{a} \ \text{m} \)

\( \text{g} \ \text{a} \ \text{t} \ \text{a} \ \text{m} \)

\( \text{g} \ \text{a} \ \text{m} \)

\( \text{g} \ \text{a} \ \text{t} \)

gus RV. I. 65. 3; 104. 2. 3. 7. 7. 5.

45. 1. a. 10. 12. 3. AV. 18. 1.32

modal.

w. ma AV. 3. 11. 6.

w. ma AV. 12. 3. 14.

w. ma RV. 10. 57. 1. AV. 13. 1. 59.

w. ma RV. 10. 19. 1. AV. 7. 60. 7.

RV. 4. 37. 2. o. 7. 93. 3 a. AV. 5.

1. 4. a.—w. ma RV. I. 120. 8. 7.

21. 5. AV. 5. 8. 3. 18. 3. 62. 19.

15. 2.

w. ma RV. 10. 95. 15.

w. ma RV. I. 109. 3.

w. ma RV. I. 178. 1. 6. 61. 14.

w. ma RV. II. 21. 7. 1. 21.

w. ma RV. I. 183. 4.

w. ma RV. 7. 56. 21.

RV. 10. 61. 20. 8.

ghus: kṣan

chid: chedma

dah: dahā (2 s.)

dhak (3 s.)

dhaktam

dagha

dan: dan

drabh: dabhūs RV. 3. 16. 2. 6. 46.

10.

idā: dām RV. 10. 49. 1.

dās RV. I. 121. 4. 6. 20. 7. p.


102. 7. 45. 2. 8. 39; 32. 15.

dās RV. I. 127. 4. 5. 49. 5. 8. 3.

21. 8.


20. 10. p.

dārt (3 a.) RV. 6. 37. 5. p.

dṛṇa: dṛṇām

idā: dām AV. 7. 97. 8. a.

dās RV. I. 63. 1. p.; 72. 7. p. 3.

30. 3. p. 5. 32. 5. p. 8. 85. 16. p.

RV. I. 169. 4. o. 2. 2. 74. o.; 4. 8. o.

3. 24. 5. o. 5. 33. 6. o. 6. 13. 6. 0;

19. 6. 0.; 26. 1. 0.; 33. 1. 0.; 35. 1. 8.

7. 1. 5. 0.; 100. 2. 0. 9. 97. 25. 0.

10. 30. 4. 0.; 47. 1–8. 0.; 85. 38. 0;

148. 4. 0. AV. 2. 6. 5. 0.; 17. 1–7. 0;

18. 1–5. 0. 3. 12. 5. 0. 14. 1. 37. 0;

2. 1. 0.—w. ma RV. I. 104. 5. 7. 8;

189. 5. 7. 1. 19; 46. 4. 8. 2. 15;

48. 8; 60. 7. 10. 59. 4; 128. 5.

AV. 5. 3. 8.

RV. I. 24. 1. 8. 2. o. 5. 3. 12. 8. 7.

97. 4. 0. 9. 97. 52. 0. 10. 17. 7. 0;

80. 4. o. AV. 18. 1. 41. 0.

RV. I. 161. 4. o. AV. 6. 111. 45. 0.

RV. I. 25. 18. o.

RV. I. 26. 10. 0; 48. 12. 0; 54. 11. 0;

61. 16. 0.; 171. 5. 0. 2. 4. 9. 0.

3. 8. 3. 0.; 17. 5. 0.; 24. 1. 0.; 28. 5.

0.; 29. 8. 0.; 31. 19. 0.; 36. 1. 0.; 10.

0.; 51. 6. 0.; 56. 6. 0. 4. 6. 11. 0;

17. 18. 0.; 32. 12. 0. 5. 79. 0.; 36.
non-modal.

\[ \psi \ i \ d h a: \ dhat \ RV. \ 1. \ 63. \ 2 ; \ 67. \ 3 ; \ 71. \]
5. p. 6. 3. 5; 19. 2; 30. 2; 10. 132. 5.

\[ dhatam \]
dha\(\dot{a}\) RV. 1. 73. 7. a. 2. 4. 3. a. 20. 8. p. 3. 38. 3. p. 4. 33. 11. a. 5. 58. 7. 7. 40. 4. a. 85. 3. 10. 46. 5; 49. 2. a. 74. 1.

\[ znaq: \ nak \ (3 \ a.) \]

\[ nat \ (3 \ a.) \]
nat ur\(\dot{a}\)s RV. 5. 52. 12. a.

\[ rpay: \ pat \]
2p\(\dot{a}\): pas

\[ pra: \ pr\(\dot{a}\)s RV. 6. 46. 5. a. \]
bhi\(\dot{d}\): bh\(\dot{a}\)t (2 a.) RV. 7. 18. 20. p.
bh\(\dot{a}\)t (3 a.) RV. 1. 59. 6. p. 10. 68. 6. p.

\[ bh\(\dot{i}\): bhema \]
bh\(\dot{u}\): bh\(\dot{a}\)j\(\dot{a}\)
bh\(\dot{h}\)a: bh\(\dot{a}\)s RV. 1. 52. 13; 91. 2; 189. 7. 6. 1. 5; 20. 11. p; 64. 5. 7. 21. 6.
AV. 6. 98. 2.

\[ bh\(\dot{a}\)t RV. 1. 71. 4. p; 73. 2; 77. 3; 100. 4; 116. 6; 173. 8; 2. 4. 1; 5; 18. 1; 19. 4. 3. 32. 11. p; 12. p; 36. 1. 4. 17. 4. p; 19. 9. p; 25. 7; 43. 4. a. 6. 4. 2; 18. 8. 13; 19. 1; 29. 4; 30. 2; 34. 2; 61. 10. 12. 7. 20. 2; 62. 1; 68. 6. p; 100. 6. p. 8. 2. 37; 60. 11. 68. 2. 10. 23. 1; 29. 3; 48. 9; 99. 3. 11. p; 100. 6; 105. 10. p.

modal.

\[ RV. \ 1. \ 107. \ 3. \ 0; \ 3. 31. \ 13. 8; \ 54. 12. \]
o. 4. 17. 13. 0; 24. 2. 0; 6. 4. 2. 0; 40. 4. 0; 49. 7. 0; 14. 0; 10. 30. 12. 0; 68. 12. 0. AV. 2. 10. 3. 0; 29. 1. 0. 6. 61. 1. 0; 13. 1. 10. 0; 16. 9. 2. 0; 18. 3. 63. 0; 4. 54. 0. — w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 5. 41. 16; 42. 16; 43. 15.
7. 34. 17; 38. 3.

w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 1. 120. 8.

\[ RV. \ 4. 6. 6. 8; \ 5. 41. 6. 0; \ 7. 34. 18. \]
o. 36. 9. 0.

w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 1. 18. 3; 2. 23. 12; 7. 56. 9; 94. 8.

w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 7. 104. 23. AV. 8. 4. 23.

\[ RV. \ 4. 55. 5. 0; \ 8. 31. 2. 0. \]

RV. 4. 20. 4. 0.

w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 1. 104. 8².

w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 1. 11. 2. 8. 4. 7.

w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 2. 25. 9.

\[ RV. \ 1. 178. 5. 0; \ 6. 15. 3. 0; 14. 8; 33. 4. 0; \ 7. 19. 10. 0; 10. 46. 5. 0. — w. m\(\dot{a}\) RV. 1. 33. 3. 10. 11. 9. AV. 18. 1. 25º.

\[ RV. \ 1. 63. 6. 0. ; \ 178. 3. 8. 4. 0. \ 3. \]
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

non-modal.

\[ \nu' \beta \hbar \alpha : \text{bhūma} \]

bhūta
bhūtāna
bhūvān RV. 6. 66. 1.

\[ \text{yam} : \text{yamus RV. 5. 61. 3. a.} \]

\[ \text{yuj} : \text{yujam} \]

\[ \text{in} : \text{vam RV. 10. 28. 7. p.} \]

\[ \text{vār} (2 s.) RV. 1. 62. 5. p. 5. 32. 1. p. \]

\[ \text{vār} (3 s.) RV. 1. 121. 4. p. 2. 14. 3. p. \]

\[ \text{vṛān RV. 4. 2. 16. p.; 55. 6. a. 5. 29. 12. AV. 18. 3. 21^* p.} \]

\[ \text{vṛj} : \text{vārk (2 s.) RV. 1. 63. 7. p. 6. 26. 3. p.} \]

\[ \text{vārk (3 s.) RV. 10. 8. 9. p.} \]

\[ \text{vārkam} \]

\[ \text{gṛi} : \text{gret RV. 1. 174. 7. p.} \]

\[ \text{sā : sāt RV. 5. 45. 2.} \]

\[ \text{skand} : \text{skān (3 s.) RV. 10. 61. 7. p.} \]

\[ \text{str} : \text{star (2 s.)} \]

\[ \text{sthā : sthām} \]

\[ \text{sthās RV. 4. 30. 12. p.} \]

\[ \text{sthāt RV. 1. 68. 1. p. 2. 15. 7. p. 7. 87. 6. a.} \]

\[ \text{sthātām} \]

\[ \text{sthātā} \]

\[ \text{sthūs RV. 1. 24. 7; 167. 9. 5. 15. 3. 7. 18. 3. a.} \]

\[ \text{spṛj : svar} \]

\[ \text{hva(hñ) : homa RV. 1. 9. 9.} \]

modal.

\[ 53. 3. 0. 5. 41. 16. 0. 6. 67. 8. a \]

\[ 10. 3. 2. 8.; 4. 7. 0.; 105. 9. 8. — w. \]

\[ \text{mā RV. 1. 138. 5. 2. 29. 4. 7. 104. 7. AV. 5. 11. 7. 7. 35. 3.; 108. 1. 8. 1. 7.; 4. 7^*.} \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 1. 105. 3. 7. 19. 7.; 46. 4.; 57. 4.; 62. 4. 8. 1. 13. 10. 37. 6. AV. 7. 20. 3. w. mā RV. 4. 35. 1. w. mā RV. 7. 59. 10. w. mā RV. 1. 139. 8. 10. 22. 12. RV. 2. 18. 3. 8.} \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 8. 64. 12. w. mā RV. 1. 183. 4. 6. 59. 7. RV. 7. 28. 4. 0.} \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 8. 3. 2. w. mā RV. 2. 27. 17. RV. 6. 24. 9. 0.—w. mā AV. 5. 7. 1. RV. 2. 3. 10. 0.—w. mā RV. 3. 15. 6.; 36. 9. 5. 53. 9. w. mā RV. 10. 106. 2. w. mā RV. 5. 53. 8. 8. 20. 1. AV. 5. 13. 5. w. mā RV. 10. 57. 1. AV. 7. 52. 2. 13. 1. 59. RV. 9. 70. 10. 0.} \]

MIDDLE.

\[ \text{iaq : aṣṭa} \]

\[ \text{r : arta RV. 4. 1. 17. p. 5. 25. 8.; 52. 6. a.} \]

\[ \text{rkṣ : krṣa RV. 9. 69. 5.} \]

\[ \text{gam : gānvaḥ} \]

\[ \text{igṣ : gṝta RV. 1. 173. 2.} \]

\[ \text{ghas : gḍha (3 s.) RV. 1. 158. 5. p.} \]

\[ \text{chid : chithās} \]

VOL. XI. 44
### non-modal

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>vṛdhṛ: dhṛthās</td>
<td>RV. 6. 17.5 p.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nūd: nutthās</td>
<td>RV. 6. 17.5 p.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pad: pathās</td>
<td>RV. 3. 6.2 p.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mṛ: mṛthās</td>
<td>RV. 5. 52.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mṛṣa: mṛṣṭhās</td>
<td>RV. 3. 61.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yuj: yujata (3 p)</td>
<td>RV. 5. 52.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rīc: rīkthās</td>
<td>RV. 5. 52.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>van: vanta</td>
<td>RV. 5. 52.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vij: vikta</td>
<td>RV. 5. 52.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2vr: vṛta</td>
<td>RV. 5. 52.8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### modal

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>w. mā AV. 3. 25.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w. mā AV. 8. 1.4, 10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w. mā RV. 10. 95.15, AV. 3. 31.8, 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. 30.17, 19. 27.8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w. mā AV. 8. 2.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w. mā RV. 3. 33.8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RV. 1. 139.10.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w. mā RV. 1. 162.15</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RV. 9. 101.13.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Passive—3 a

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ghus: ghōśi</td>
<td>RV. 4. 4.8 o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cīt: cēti RV. 1. 131.12; 93.4; 119</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. p. 3. 12.9; 4. 16.14; 37.4; 43.6; 55.4 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chīd: chēdi</td>
<td>RV. 4. 4.8 o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jān: jāni RV. 1. 141.1 p.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jāni RV. 8. 7.36 p.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tr: tārī RV. 1. 119.6 p. 10. 144.5 p. 6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rd: dāyī RV. 1. 61.15; 2. 20.8 p. 6. 25.8 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rd: dāyī RV. 1. 61.15; 2. 20.8 p. 6. 25.8 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drq: dārqi RV. 3. 56.2; 10.123.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rdḥa: dhāysi RV. 1. 141.1 a; 145</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. 158.3 p; 171.2 a; 190.8 a 4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. 1 a; 7. 1 p; 28.2 p; 36.7 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. 3.3 a; 56.7 a; 66.2 p; 6. 20</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. p; 5. p; 29. 5 a; 7. 4. 4 a; 5. 2 a 8. 52. 12 a; 59. 2 p; 81. 29 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.45.7 a; 46.1; 96.4 p; 115.2 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vāl. 2. 3 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2naq: nāqa RV. 6. 51.12 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pad: pādī RV. 6. 20.5 p</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bhr: bhārī RV. 9. 97.23</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>muc: moci</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yuj: yujī RV. 2. 18.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rīc: rīci RV. 4. 16.5 p</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ruc: rucī RV. 1. 131.6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

347

non-modal.

/sv/ a: svāci RV. 7. 58. 6. a.  
vaṇd: vandl RV. 10. 61. 16.  
viḥ: varhi

qaṇaś: qaṇi RV. 2. 4. 8. a. 10. 148.  
4. a.

ciṣṭ: cēṣī

ci: cāi


73. 2. a.

ṣṛj: sarjī RV. 9. 69. 1; 92. 1. a.

zhā: hāyi

modal.

w. mā RV. 3. 53. 17.

w. mā AV. 11. 9. 13.

w. mā AV. 2. 28. 5. 3. 53. 17. 6. 54. 7.

w. mā AV. 18. 3. 9.

2. A-ORIST.

ACTIVE.

2as: asan RV. 4. 3. 11. p.

āp: āpat

āpan

ṛ: āram RV. 4. 15. 7. a.

aratam

aratām

arāma

arāṇa

kṛṇaṇ: kṛadas

kṛudha: kṛudhas

kṣudha: kṣudhat

khyaś: khyaṃ

khyaś

khyaś RV. 8. 68. 2. 10. 53. 2. a.

khyaṭam

khyaś RV. 3. 31. 12. p. 10. 10. 2.  "AV. 18. 1. 2."


gṛdh: grdhas

gṛdhat

tan: tamat

tam: tamat

tṛp: tṛpāt

tṛṣṭ: tṛṣṭat


das: dasat

dṛṇ: dṛṇan

w. mā AV. 1. 30. 1. 11. 1. 22. 14. 2.  
69. 17. 29. 19. 20. 4.

w. mā AV. 17. 28.

w. mā RV. 6. 35. 5.

w. mā RV. 8. 5. 3.

w. mā RV. 3. 33. 13. AV. 14. 2. 16.  

w. mā RV. 7. 56. 21. 8. 21. 16. AV.  
11. 2. 17.

w. mā RV. 1. 125. 7. 5. 31. 13.

RV. 9. 97. 18. 0., 28. 0.

w. mā AV. 11. 2. 19. 20.

w. mā AV. 2. 29. 4.

RV. 7. 56. 2. 8.

RV. 1. 51. 9. 0. 6. 15. 15. 0.; 48. 19. 0.  
8. 54. 9. 0.—w. mā RV. 1. 4. 3.

w. mā RV. 7. 36. 7.

w. mā RV. 5. 65. 6. 8. 22. 14.; 62. 15.

w. mā AV. 1. 162. 1. 7. 93. 8.

w. mā AV. 11. 2. 21.

w. mā AV. 8. 6. 1.

w. mā RV. 1. 91. 23.

RV. 2. 30. 7. 8.

RV. 7. 56. 10. 8.

w. mā AV. 2. 29. 4.

w. mā RV. 1. 121. 15.; 139. 5. AV. 5. 30. 15.

non-modal

ψ드루: 듀한

druh: duhas
druhan


bů: bhuvam RV. 10. 48. 1; 49. 1,
4. p.; 119. 8.

bhůvat RV. 1. 52. 1; 69. 2. 4.
19. 2. 6. 22. 9. 8. 23. 18. p.; 51. 7;
64. 3. 10. 4. 1; 8. 5. 6; 50. 4. 3. AV.
6. 106. 3.

bhůvan

bhraq: bhraçat

math; māthat

muc: mucas RV. 4. 22. 7. p.
mucāt

radh: radham

radhāma

riś: riśam

riśat AV. 19. 39. 2-4.

riśāma

riśan

modal

w. mā AV. 9. 5. 4.
w. mā RV. 1. 5. 10.
RV. 10. 128. 6. 0. AV. 5. 3. 2'. 0.; 13.
2. 0.—w. mā RV. 6. 54. 7.

RV. 10. 86. 5. 8.

rv. 1. 138. 4. 0. 4. 2. 6. 0.; 16. 18'. 0.
5. 12. 3. 8. 19. 5. 0. 7. 8. 5. 0.; 32.
11. 8. 8. 1. 28. 8. 55. 6. 0. AV. 3.
17. 8. 8. 18. 3. 60. 0.—w. mā RV.
8. 81. 30.

RV. 1. 5. 3. 0.; 23. 6. 0.; 52. 11. 8.; 60.
4. 0.; 76. 1. 8.; 119. 7. 0. 2. 22. 4. 0.
3. 62. 9. 0. 4. 9. 2. 0.; 16. 10. 0.; 23.
4. 0.; 31. 1. 8. 5. 9. 7. 0. 6. 16. 18. 0.
48. 2'. 0. 7. 31. 8. 0.; 32. 13. 8.; 50.
2. 8. 8. 46. 13. 0. 60. 15. 0.; 71. 3.
0.; 82. 7. 0.; 91. 8. 8.; 34. 4. 1. 0.
47. 3. 0.; 92. 3. 0.; 102. 1. 0. 10. 26.
9. 0. AV. 1. 22. 2. 3. 20. 6. 8. 10.
8. 11. 8.—w. mā AV. 5. 30. 14.

RV. 1. 186. 2. 8. 5. 46. 6. 0. 6. 35. 1.
8. 7. 31. 9. 0. 8. 27. 4. 0. 10. 51.
7. 0.; 112. 7. 0.

w. mā RV. 10. 173. 1. AV. 6. 87. 1'.

AV. 7. 50. 5. 8.

w. mā AV. 9. 3. 26.

RV. 8. 24. 27. 0.

w. mā RV. 1. 50. 13. AV. 17. 6. 24.

w. mā RV. 10. 128. 5. AV. 5. 3. 7.

w. mā RV. 10. 18. 13. AV. 18. 3. 58'.

AV. 19. 49. 10. 8.—w. mā RV. 6. 54.

7. 8. 54. 10; 56. 11. 10. 62. 11; 97.

w. mā RV. 1. 94. 1-14. 4. 12. 5. 6.

44. 11. 10. 178. 2. AV. 3. 15. 8. 13.
2. 37. 14. 2. 50. 19. 55. 1. 2.

w. mā RV. 8. 92. 13. AV. 2. 6. 2. 3.
12. 6. 11. 1. 25. 32. 20. 127. 13.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.
non-modal.

√25u: çrāvāt RV. 1. 127. 3.
sad: sadas

sadat RV. 10. 99. 3.
sadāma
sadān RV. 4. 3. 11. p.

san: sanam RV. 8. 57. 17. a.
sānas
sānāt RV. 1. 100. 18th. p.; 126. 3. p.

sic: sicas

10. 61. 8.
sārān RV. 4. 17. 3. p.

ṣṛṇ: sṛṇas
ṣṛṇ: sṛṇas

srīdh: srīdhath

modal.

RV. 3. 24. 3. o. 8. 17. 1. o.; 64. 1. o.
9. 2. 2. o.; 55. 2. o.; 106. 7. o. 10.
43. 2. o.

RV. 1. 128. 1. o. 3. 13. 1. o. 8. 13.
24. o. AV. 20. 49. 3. o. (not max.).
w. mā RV. 7. 1. 11.; 4. 6. 8. 21. 15.
RV. 8. 52. 2. 0.

RV. 2. 6. 5th. o.
RV. 1. 100. 6. o. 5. 61. 5. o.
w. mā RV. 9. 81. 3.

RV. 10. 61. 23. 8.
w. mā AV. 8. 6. 3rd.
w. mā AV. 6. 134. 2. 12. 1. 46.
w. mā RV. 7. 34. 17.

MIDDLE.

ṛ: arāmahi
9. 73. 1. a. 10. 73. 2. p.

ṛkṛ: krānta RV. 1. 141. 3. p.

grabh: grhāmahi

budh: budhānta RV. 7. 9. 4. a.; 78.
5. a. 10. 61. 12. p.
mṛṣ: mṛṣantā RV. 7. 18. 21.
voc: vocanta RV. 1. 127. 7. 5. 52.

15th.

ızvīd: ızdē
tidata


vvī Ś(vī): vyāta RV. 2. 17. 2. p. 9.
69. 5. a.; 70. 2.; 86. 32.

qās: qāṣamahi

RV. 8. 24. 1. o.

3. REDUPLICATED AORIST.

ACTIVE.

am: āmamat

ṛ: arṣaṣam

krānd: cikrādas
cikrāt RV. Vāl. 3. 4. p.

krudh: cukrudham
cukrudham

kṣʾp: cikṣʾpas
cikṣʾpan

w. mā RV. 9. 114. 4. 10. 59. 8-10.
AV. 6. 57. 3. 10. 5. 23.
w. mā AV. 12. 1. 35.
RV. 9. 90. 4. 0.
w. mā RV. 8. 1. 20.
w. mā RV. 2. 33. 4. 10. 142. 3.
w. mā RV. 10. 16. 1. AV. 18. 2. 4th.
w. mā AV. 18. 4. 12. 15.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

\[ \text{non-modal.} \]

\[ \text{modal.} \]

\[ \approx \text{cacy ava} \]

\[ \text{jan: stjanam RV. 7. 15. 4. a.} \]

\[ \text{stjanam RV. 1. 120. 11\textsuperscript{h} p.} \]

\[ 4. 16. 3. p. \]

\[ 8. 12. 14. p. \]

\[ 10. 115. 1. a. \]

\[ \text{stjanan RV. 1. 151. 1. p.} \]

\[ 4. 6. 8. a. \]

\[ 10. 11. 3. p. \]

\[ \text{AV. 18. 1. 20\textsuperscript{c}. p.} \]

\[ \text{ju: jyu va} \]

\[ \text{tu: titos RV. 6. 26. 4. p.} \]

\[ \text{tutot RV. 2. 20. 5. p.; 7. p.} \]

\[ \text{dāq: dādāca} \]

\[ \text{dādāca} \]

\[ \text{dāq: dādipas} \]

\[ \text{duq: diduṣat RV. 3. 3. 1.} \]

\[ \text{dyut: didyutas RV. 5. 30. 4. p.} \]

\[ \text{dhā: didhhot RV. 7. 21. 4. p.} \]

\[ 10. 26. 7. \]

\[ \text{dhāry: didharam RV. 9. 105. 4. a.} \]

\[ \text{didhara (2 a)} \]

\[ \text{RV. 6. 17. 6. p.; 67. 4. p.} \]

\[ \text{didhara} \]

\[ \text{didhara RV. 3. 2. 10.} \]

\[ \text{dhāry: didhārṣat} \]

\[ \text{nam: nāmās} \]

\[ \text{naq: ninaqās} \]

\[ \text{nu: nūnāt RV. 6. 3. 7.} \]

\[ \text{pat: paptam} \]

\[ \text{paptas} \]

\[ \text{paptat} \]

\[ \text{pápata RV. 2. 31. 1.} \]

\[ 6. 63. 6. p. \]

\[ \text{pāp: pīpara} \]

\[ \text{pāp: pīparas} \]

\[ \text{pīparat} \]

\[ \text{bhā: bhāhyat RV. 1. 80. 12. p.} \]

\[ \text{mā: mīmayat RV. 10. 27. 22.} \]

\[ \text{mrṣ: mṛmaṣas} \]

\[ \text{yū: yūyot} \]

\[ \text{radh: rīradhas} \]

\[ \text{rīradhat} \]

\[ \text{rīradhatam} \]

\[ \text{rīradhatā} \]

\[ \text{rām: rīramat RV. 4. 17. 14.} \]

\[ 10. 92. 8. \]

\[ \text{rīraman} \]

\[ \text{rīṣ: rīśas} \]

\[ \text{RV. 2. 41. 10. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 2. 31. 4. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 1. 94. 15. 8.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 1. 91. 20. 8.} \]

\[ 5. 37. 5. 8. \]

\[ 6. 5. 5. 8. \]

\[ 7. 20. 8. \]

\[ 10. 77. 7. 8. \]

\[ \text{RV. 8. 48. 6. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 2. 2. 7. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 8. 89. 1. 8.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 8. 57. 19. 8.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 2. 41. 8. 8.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 8. 24. 27. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 6. 48. 17. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 2. 20. 4. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 1. 136. 2. 8.} \]

\[ 4. 2. 8. 0. \]

\[ \text{RV. 1. 46. 6. 8.} \]

\[ 3. 32. 1. 8. \]

\[ 5. 77. 4. \]

\[ 0. \text{ AV. 19. 40. 4. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 1. 31. 16. 0.} \]

\[ \text{AV. 3. 15. 4. 0.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 10. 95. 12. 8.} \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 1. 25. 2.} \]

\[ 2. 32. 2. \]

\[ 3. 16. 5. \]

\[ 8. 49. 8. \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 2. 33. 5.} \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 7. 94. 3.} \]

\[ 8. 8. 13. \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 6. 51. 6.} \]

\[ \text{RV. 7. 32. 10. 8.—w. mā RV. 5. 53. 9.} \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 2. 18. 3.} \]

\[ 3. 35. 5. \]

\[ 7. 32. 1. \]

\[ 10. 160. 1. \]

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 1. 104. 6; 114. 7. 8.} \]

\[ 7. 46 \]
J. Avery,
**Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>non-modal</th>
<th>modal</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \sqrt{bh} ): bhāgata</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā AV. 10. 9. 7.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( bh ): bhār (3 s.) RV. 1. 128. 2. p.</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā AV. 6. 123. 4.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( 2y ): yuṣam</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā RV. 2. 32. 2.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( yāus )</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā RV. 8. 75. 1. 10. 85. 42. AV. 14. 1. 22.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( yāusṭam )</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( yāusṭa )</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā AV. 3. 30. 5.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( yāusus )</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā RV. 10. 23. 7.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( vah ): vākṣīt</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā AV. 5. 8. 3.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( qr ): qarīṣa</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā AV. 12. 3. 18.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( srj ): srīś (2 s.)</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā AV. 11. 2. 19. 26.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( srāṣṭam )</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā AV. 11. 2. 1.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( stu ): stoṣam</td>
<td>( \text{RV. 1. 187. 1. 8.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( 2hā ): hāsa</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā RV. 3. 53. 20.} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( hāsas )</td>
<td>( w. \text{ mā RV. 8. 64. 8.} )</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**MIDDLE.**

| \( ıkṣi \): kṣeṣṭa             | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 4. 34. 8.} \) |
| \( 2gā \): gāsī                | \( \text{RV. 5. 25. 1. 8. 27. 2. 8.} \) |
| \( 2yus \): cyuṣṭhas           | \( w. \text{ mā RV. 10. 173. 2. AV. 6. 87. 2.} \) |
| \( niṣ : nǐkṣi \)              | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 10. 5. 15–21. AV. 16. 1. 4.} \) |
| \( rnu : nūṣata (3 p.) \) RV. 9. 103. 3. |   |
| \( pad : patai \)              | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 6. 120. 2.} \) |
| \( 2pā : pāsta \)              | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 12. 3–43.} \) |
| \( bhaj : bhakṣi \)            | \( \text{RV. 7. 41. 2. 0. AV. 3. 16. 2. 0.} \) |
| \( mad : matṣasta (3 p.) \)    | \( w. \text{ mā RV. 9. 85. 1.} \) |
| \( man : mānis \)              | \( \text{RV. 7. 88. 2. 8.} \) |
| \( maṇṭhās \)                  | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 9. 5. 4.} \) |
| \( maṇṭa \)                    | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 8. 1. 12.} \) |
| \( māṅṣta \)                   | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 11. 2. 8.} \) |
| \( 2i : meṣi \)                | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 16. 4. 5.} \) |
| \( meṣṭhas \)                  | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 8. 1. 5; 2. 1.} \) |
| \( meṣṭa \)                    | \( w. \text{ mā AV. 12. 1. 33.} \) |
| \( muc : mukṣata (3 p.) \)     | \( w. \text{ mā RV. 10. 87. 19. AV. 5. 29. 11.} \) |
| \( ya : yakṣi \)                | \( \text{RV. 6. 16. 8. 10. 4. 1. 8; 52. 5. 8.} \) |
| \( yam : yamsi RV. 1. 61. 2. \) | \( \text{w. mā AV. 7. 52. 2.} \) |
| \( yudh : yutamahi \)          | \( \text{w. mā AV. 14. 2. 19.} \) |
| \( ram : ranṭhās \)             | \( \text{RV. 1. 46. 6. 0.} \) |
| \( ra : rāṣṭhām \)             | \( \text{RV. 5. 70. 1. 0.} \) |
| \( van : vāṃśi \)              | \( \text{w. mā RV. 1. 27. 13.} \) |
| \( vrj : vṛkṣi \)               | \( \text{w. mā RV. 10. 128. 5. AV. 5. 3. 7.} \) |
| \( sac : sakṣata RV. 8. 13. 28. \) | \( \text{w. mā AV. 18. 3. 73.} \) |
| \( sah : sākṣi RV. 10. 49. 1. \) | \( \text{w. mā AV. 18. 2. 24.} \) |
| \( 1hā : hāṃṣaīh \)            |                                         |
| \( 2hā : hāṣṭhās \)            |                                         |
| \( hāṣṭa \)                    |                                         |
5. Ιγ-ΑΟΙΡΙΣΤ.

ACTIVE.

modal.

RV. 6. 25. 1. 0.
RV. 7. 34. 14. 0.
RV. 8. 5. 13. 8.
w. mā RV. 10. 87. 17. AV. 8. 3. 17′.
w. mā AV. 12. 2. 18.
w. mā RV. 5. 40. 7.
w. mā RV. 2. 29. 5.
w. mā RV. 7. 25. 1.

w. mā AV. 5. 13. 4.
w. mā AV. 10. 5. 25-35. 16. 7. 13.
w. mā AV. 9. 2. 10.
w. mā RV. 1. 125. 7.; 129. 81.
RV. 6. 8. 7. 0.; 25. 2. 0. 8. 48. 4. 0.; 7.
0.—w. mā RV. 10. 54. 5.

RV. 1. 73. 1. 0. 8. 68. 6. 0.—w. mā
RV. 6. 47. 9. 9. 114. 4.
w. mā AV. 2. 7. 4.
w. mā RV. 7. 1. 21.

w. mā RV. 1. 127. 11. 0.
w. mā AV. 19. 40. 2.
w. mā RV. 1. 24. 11.; 104. 8. AV. 7.
99. 1. 8. 2. 17.
w. mā RV. 4. 20. 10.
w. mā RV. 7. 73. 4.; 74. 3.
RV. 1. 129. 3. 0. 8. 68. 4. 0.
RV. 10. 120. 3. 0. AV. 5. 2. 3; 0.
w. mā AV. 5. 7. 1.

w. mā RV. 7. 31. 5.
RV. 2. 36. 3. 0.
RV. 10. 86. 5. 8.
w. mā AV. 6. 118. 3.

w. mā RV. 1. 104. 8.; 114. 7. 8.; 170. 2.
7. 46. 4. 8. 45. 34.; 68. 8. AV. 7. 11.
1; 8′ 5; 25. 10. 1. 29.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

non-modal.

\( v\text{adh} : \text{vadhīt} \quad \text{RV.} \ 4. \ 17. \ 3. \ p. \ 5. \\
44. 12. \ 6. \ 27. \ 5. \ p. \ 8. \ 32. \ 2. \ p. \)

\( \text{vadhīṣṭa} \)
\( \text{vadhīṣṭana} \)
\( \text{vadhīṣus} \)
\( vīq: \text{veṣṭ} \)
\( qāṇās: \text{qāṇāṣam} \)

\( q\text{nath}: \text{qanathītam} \quad \text{RV.} \ 7. \ 99. \ 5. \ p. \\
q\text{ram}: \text{qramśa} \)
\( sīdh: \text{sedhī} \)
\( rāt: \text{sāvī} \quad \text{AV.} \ 7. \ 14. \ 3. \ p. \\
\text{stabh}: \text{stāmbhit} \quad \text{RV.} \ 1. \ 121. \ 2. \ p. \\
\text{spur}: \text{spāris} \)
\( \text{savan}: \text{sāvānt} \quad \text{RV.} \ 2. \ 4. \ 6. \\
\text{hiṅs}: \text{hiṅaśī} \)

\( \text{hiṅast} \)
\( \text{hiṅiṣṭam} \)
\( \text{hiṅiṣṭa} \)
\( \text{hiṅiṣṣu} \)

modal.

\( w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 1. \ 38. \ 6. \ 2. \ 42. \ 2. \ 8. \ 56. \\
20; 64. 9. \quad \text{AV.} \ 6. \ 56. \ 1; 110. \ 3; 112. \ 1; 142. \ 1. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 8. \ 90. \ 15. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 5. \ 55. \ 9. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 2. \ 28. \ 3. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 8. \ 49. \ 20. \\
\text{RV.} \ 6. \ 48. \ 1. \ 8; 16. \ 8. \ 8. \ 45. \ 28. \ 8. \ 10. \ 44. \ 5. \ 8; 96. \ 1. \ 8. \\
\)

\( w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 2. \ 29. \ 4. \ 8. \ 4. \ 7. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 10. \ 27. \ 20. \\
\text{RV.} \ 2. \ 28. \ 9. \ 0. \ 5. \ 82. \ 4. \ 0. \ 6. \ 71. \ 6. \ 0. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 6. \ 61. \ 14. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 9. \ 3. \ 16. \ 10. \ 9. \ 11. \ 11. \ 2. \ 20. \ 29. \ 12. \ 1. \ 34. \ 18. \ 4. \ 30. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 10. \ 121. \ 9. \ 165. \ 3. \quad \text{AV.} \ 3. \ 28. \ 5. \ 6. \ 6. \ 27. \ 3. \ 7. \ 54. \ 2. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 5. \ 9. \ 8. \ 6. \ 140. \ 2. \ 3. \ 11. \ 2. \ 1. \ 14. \ 1. \ 63. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 10. \ 15. \ 6. \quad \text{AV.} \ 18. \ 1. \ 52. \ 19. \ 40. \ 5. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 2. \ 28. \ 1. \ 7. \ 102. \ 1. \ 14. \ 2. \ 9. \\
\)

MIDDLE.

\( a\text{v}: \text{āviṣṭa} \)
\( k\text{ram}: \text{kramśa} \quad \text{RV.} \ 1. \ 155. \ 4. \ p. \ 8. \ 52. \ 9. \ p. \)
\( k\text{sàn}: \text{kṣapīṣṭā} \)
\( j\text{an}: \text{jāniṣṭha} \quad \text{RV.} \ 1. \ 68. \ 4. \ p. \ 5. \ 30. \\
5. \ p. \ 7. \ 28. \ 2. \ 10. \ 73. \ 1. \ 4. \\
\text{jāniṣṭha} \quad \text{RV.} \ 5. \ 1. \ 5. \ p.; \ 9. \ 3. \ a. \ 7. \ 3. \\
9. \ a. \ 9. \ 98. \ 9. \ a. \ 10. \ 31. \ 10. \ p.; \ 40. \ 9. \ p.; \ 95. \ 10. \ p. \quad \text{Vāl.} \ 3. \ 4. \ p. \ 8. \ p. \)
\( \text{AV.} \ 4. \ 1. \ 5. \ p. \)
\( n\text{ud}: \text{nuṇiṣṭha} \)
\( p\text{an}: \text{pāniṣṭha} \)
\( p\text{t}: \text{pāviṣṭa} \quad \text{RV.} \ 9. \ 64. \ 10. \ a.; \ 109. \ 13. \ a. \)
\( p\text{rat}: \text{prātiṣṭha} \quad \text{RV.} \ 5. \ 58. \ 7. \\
\text{bādh}: \text{bādiṣṭa} \quad \text{RV.} \ 7. \ 23. \ 3. \ p. \\
\text{mānd}: \text{māṇiṣṭha} \quad \text{RV.} \ 1. \ 51. \ 11. \ a. \\
m\text{rush}: \text{marṣiṣṭha} \)
\( y\text{am}: \text{yāmiṣṭa} \quad \text{RV.} \ 5. \ 32. \ 7. \ p. \\
r\text{adh}: \text{rādiṣṭa} \quad \text{RV.} \ 7. \ 34. \ 12. \ 0. \\
\)
\( w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 10. \ 1. \ 16. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 12. \ 2. \ 32. \\
\text{RV.} \ 7. \ 45. \ 2. \ 0. \\
\)
\( w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 18. \ 2. \ 25. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{RV.} \ 1. \ 71. \ 10. \\
w. \text{mā} \quad \text{AV.} \ 1. \ 1. \ 4. \ 3. \ 29. \ 8. \)
non-modal.

\[ \text{\textit{va}v\textit{as}: vasiṣṭa RV. 2.36.1 a. 9.2.} \]

vyaṭh: vyāthīṣṭhas

vyāthīṣṭham

vyāthīṣṭāna

vyāthīṣṭa

vyaṭh: vyāthīṣṭhas

vyāthīṣṭham

vyāthīṣṭa

vyāthīṣṭa

\[ \text{w. mā AV. 12.3.23. 14.1.48. 19.} \]

33-5.

w. mā RV. 12.1.28.


ḥāṭ: ḫāṭ

ḥāṭṣām

ḥāṭṣāṃ

ḥāṭṣa

ḥāṭṣa

\[ \text{w. mā AV. 2.28.3. 7.53.4. 8.1.15.} \]

13.1.12. 16.4.3.

w. mā AV. 16.4.5.

w. mā AV. 16.2.5; 3.2-4.

w. mā AV. 9.4.24.

w. mā AV. 6.41.3. 8.2.26.

7. Sa-aorist.

active.

duh: dukṣās

dukṣān
dhukṣan

dviṣ: dvikṣat

mṛkṣa

ruh: rukṣas

\[ \text{w. mā RV. 7.4.7.} \]

RV. 1.121.8.8.

RV. 8.1.17.0.

w. mā AV. 3.30.3.

RV. 8.56.9.0.

AV. 17.8.0.

middle.

duh: dukṣāta RV. 1.160.3.p.
dhukṣāta RV. 6.48.12.a,13.a.
dhukṣānta RV. 8.7.3.p.
dviṣ: dvikṣata

\[ \text{w. mā AV. 12.1.18,23-5; 2.33.} \]

derivative conjugations.

I. Passive: Pres. system.

ac: acyanta RV. 5.54.12.


II. Intensive: Pres. system.

active.

diṣ: dēḍiṣam

dy: dāḍar (2 s.) RV. 1.63.7.p. 4.


dāḍar (3 s.) RV. 7.18.13.p.
dyaṭ: dāvyāṭot RV. 6.3.8.10.95.

10.p.

ru: nāvinot RV. 6.3.7. 7.87.2.
mṛṣ: mṛṣa RV. 3.18.4.a.

skand: kāniṣṭhāna

RV. 7.103.4.a.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

MIDDLE.

non-modal.


vṛṣṇī: vṛṣṇīṛṣanta RV. 1. 62. 3. p. 7.

75-7.

san: saniṇḍata RV. 1. 131. 5th. p.

III. DESIDERATIVE.

Pres. System: Active.

ghas: jighatsas w. mā AV. 5. 18. 1.

citr: cikīta RV. 4. 16. 10. 0.

dub: dādūksan RV. 10. 61. 10. p. RV. 10. 74. 4. 8.

bhīd: bhīhītsan RV. 10. 61. 13.

MIDDLE.

āp: āpsanta RV. 1. 100. 8.

dha: dādīṣanta RV. 1. 132. 5.

sah: sākṣanta RV. 7. 60. 11.

Iṣ-AORIST: Active.

ṛdh: ēṛta RV. 5. 7. 6.

IV. CAUSATIVE.

Pres. System: Active.

īkṣ: īkṣāyat RV. 1. 132. 5. 8.

īr: īrayam RV. 10. 89. 4. 8; 116. 9. 8.

īrayat RV. 8. 68. 6. 0.

rō: arsaya RV. 1. 132. 5.


5. 2. p.


ku: kappayat RV. 1. 54. 4. p.

kappayat RV. 10. 44. 8. p.

ūnp: úṇapayat RV. 5. 9. 7. 0.


āt: ātayat RV. 1. 180. 8. 8.

ātayat RV. 4. 1. 9.

caud: caudāyas RV. 1. 175. 3. 6. 26.


caudāyat RV. 10. 80. 2; 123. 1.

chand: chadāya RV. 6. 49. 5.


janāyat RV. 1. 171. 8. 8. 10. 45. 8.

Janayat RV. 10. 66. 9. p.; 57. 1. 4.


dabha: damḥāyas RV. 1. 54. 6. p. RV. 10. 32. 11. p.
non-modal.

\( \sqrt{dabh} \): dambhayat RV. 6.18.10 p.

dip: dipaya


dhan: dhanayat RV. 1. 71.3. p.

dhy: dhurayam RV. 4. 42.3. p. 4.


dhurayas RV. 9. 22.7. p.; 107.23.

p. 10. 73.4.

dhurayat RV. 1. 103.2. p. 2. 15.


10. p.

dhurayan RV. 1. 96.1-7. p. 2. 27.8.

dhva: dhvasayat RV. 10. 73.6. p.

pat: pataya RV. 1. 152.5. 10. 40.


pan: panaya RV. 4. 33.5. p.

pu: poṣaya

prath: prathayat RV. 4. 42.4. p.


mah: mahayam

mahayan RV. 7. 42.3.

mrj: marjayan RV. 10. 122.5. p.

yu: yaya

rad: randhayam RV. 10. 49.4. p.,

5. p.

randhayas RV. 6. 43.1. p.


ran: raṇayan

ram: rāmaRV. 1. 121.13. p.

rāmaRV. 1. 56.3. p.

ru: rocaya RV. 3. 2.2. p. 6. 39.


7. p. 10. 156.4. p.

rohayat RV. 1. 7.3. p.

rej: rejaya RV. 4. 22.3. p. 5. 87.

5. 10. 61.16. p.


ivas: ivasyas

vṛt: vartaya RV. 1. 121.9. p.

vartaya RV. 10. 95.12. a

vṛt: vṛtayam RV. 5. 48.3.


vṛṣ: vṛṣayat RV. 5. 63.6.

ṣam: ṣamaya

RV. 6.35.1. a.

AV. 6. 52.3. 0.
Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Veda.

non-modal.

vr̥̄gr̥dh: vgr̥dhāyat
qn̥th: qn̥thayān RV. 10. 95. 5.
suv̥: suv̥āyat RV. 1. 71. 8. a.
svaṇ: svaṇāyan RV. 10. 3. 6.
hṛṣ: hariṣaṇ RV. 9. 111. 3.

modal.

RV. 8. 13. 6. a.

MIDDLE.

s̥naṇ: śn̥ṇayānta RV. 2. 2. 11. 7. 87. 3. RV. 1. 77. 4. 8.
tr̥: tr̥̄rayanta RV. 8. 7. 3. p.
auk̥ṣ: aukṣayānta RV. 6. 17. 4. 0.
cit: citayānta RV. 2. 34. 2. 10. 95. 3
jan: janayānta RV. 1. 95. 4. p.
jan̥yānta RV. 1. 95. 2. p.; 141. 2.
. 3. 2. 3. p.; 31. 2; 49. 1. p. 6. 7.
. 10. 91. 6. p.
RV. 5. 49. 3. 0. 10. 66. 2. 0.; 87. 13. 8.
AV. 8. 3. 12a. 8.
RV. 1. 85. 11. 0.
RV. 10. 148. 5. 0.
RV. 1. 167. 2. 8.
RV. 1. 18. p.; 42. 2. 5. 15. 2; 29. 1. p. 7.
66. 2.
nad: nadāyanta RV. 1. 166. 5.
pāt: pātayanta RV. 1. 169. 7.
pān: pānāyanta RV. 1. 87. 3. 71. 10.
maḥ: mahayanta RV. 3. 6. 7. 8.
marj: marjayanta RV. 5. 3. 3. 7. 39.
. 3. p.; 3. 5. 9. 68. 6. p.
RV. 1. 61. 2. 0. 8. 73. 8. 0. 9. 93. 1. 0.
ran: raṇayanta RV. 3. 57. 2. 6.
. 1. 4. p. 10. 148. 3.
RV. 1. 147. 1. 8. 4. 7. 7. 8.
RV. 7. 56. 16.
qn̥th: qn̥thayanta (qn̥th-7) RV. 8. 88. 6.
q̥r̥: q̥r̥hayanta RV. 5. 54. 10;
25. 4.
sv̥d: svādayanta RV. 9. 105. 1. 0.
ṛḥ̥: ṛḥayanta RV. 4. 37. 2. 0.
hṛṣ: hariṣayanta RV. 4. 37. 2. 0.

REDUP. AORIST.

bhī: bhībhīṣṭās w. mā RV. 8. 68. 8.

īṣ-AORIST.

dhvan: dhvanayānt RV. 1. 162. 15.
vyath: vyathayānt w. mā RV. 5. 7. 2.
V. DENOMINATIVE.

Pres. System: Active.

non-modal.

v'asāy: asāyas RV. 6. 33. 2.

irasā: irasayas

isaṣ: isapaṣ


urasaṣṭ: uruṣyat RV. 3. 5. 8. 10. 80.

3. p.

turasaṣṭ: turāṣya RV. 10. 61. 11. p.

damasā: damāṣyāt RV. 10. 99.


namasaṣṭ: namāṣyaṇ RV. 1. 72. 5. p.

pruṣaṣṭ: pruṣāṣyat RV. 1. 121. 2. p.

pruṣyaṇ RV. 1. 180. 1. 4. 43. 5.


musāṣṭ: musāṣyaṇ RV. 4. 30. 4. 6.

31. 3. p.


risaṣṭ: risaṣyaṇas

risaṣyaṇaṭa

ruvaṣṭ: ruvaṣyaṇas


sapaṣṭ: sapāṣyaṇ RV. 1. 70. 10.

skabhāṣṭ: skabhāṣyat RV. 5. 29. 4.

p. 6. 44. 24. p.


stabhāṣyat RV. 4. 5. 1; 62.

Middle.

aṣāy: aṣāṣyaṇa RV. 10. 92. 1.

irasā: iraṣyaṇa RV. 7. 23. 2. p.

isaṣṭ: isapaṇta RV. 4. 23. 9.

isaṣṣṭ: isaṃṣyaṇa RV. 10. 67. 8.


ṛtāṣṭ: ṛtāṣyanta

kṛpaṇa: kṛpāṇa RV. 1. 74. 3.

tarua: taruṣanta RV. 1. 132. 5.

dhunay: dhunayaṇa RV. 2. 25. 5.

panaṣṭ: panaṣyaṇa RV. 6. 75. 6.

pruṣaṣṭ: pruṣāṣyanta

bhuraja: bhurāṣyaṇa RV. 4. 43. 5.

rucaṣṭ: rucaṣyaṇa RV. 3. 67.

suṣaṣṭ: suṣāṣyaṇa RV. 7. 36. 6.

Aorist Passive.

Jāraya: Jārayāyi

RV. 6. 12. 4. 0.

Is- Aorist.

Aṣnaṇā: Aṣnaṇās

w. mā RV. 1. 53. 3.
**Summary of Occurrences.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>non-modal.</th>
<th>modal.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>pres.</td>
<td>pret.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present System:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>act.</td>
<td>mid.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>root-aor.</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s-aor.</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-aor.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aorist System:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>root-aor.</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s-aor.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-aor.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>redup. aor.</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s-aor.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deriv. Conjugations:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Passive</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Intensive:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pres.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Desiderative:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s-aor.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causative:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pres.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>redup. aor. act.</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s-aor. act.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Denominative:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pres.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>root-aor.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s-aor. aor.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Totals: 368,567, 95, 14, 2, 32, 491, 316, 19, 69, 341, 2567
ARTICLE XI.

THE NORTHERN BARBARIANS IN ANCIENT CHINA.

BY W. A. P. MARTIN,

PRESIDENT OF TUNGOWEN COLLEGE, PEKING, NORTH CHINA.

Presented to the Society May 7th, 1884.

The Great Wall which forms the northern boundary of China proper tells of a conflict of races. Extending for fifteen hundred miles along the verge of the Mongolian plateau, it presents itself to the mind as a geographical feature boldly marked on the surface of the globe. Winding like a huge serpent over the crests of the mountains, it seems, in the words of Emerson, as if

"The sky
Bent over it with kindred eye,
And granted it an equal date
With Andes and with Ararat."

It divides two stages of civilization to-day, as it did two thousand years ago. On one side are vast plains unbroken by the plough, and occupied only by tribes of wandering nomads; on the other are fields and gardens, rich with the products of agricultural industry. Between the two, a state of perpetual hostility is inevitable, unless restrained by the power of some overshadowing government. This natural antagonism has never failed to show itself at every point of contact, the world over. Schiller hints—not in his poems, but in a course of historical lectures—that this endless strife of shepherd and cultivator was foreshadowed in the conflict of Cain and Abel. History, unhappily, supplies us with an abundance of illustrations. Egypt fell a prey to the shepherd kings; and in Asia as in Europe, the inhospitable north has always been ready to disgorge its predatory hordes on lands more favored by the sun.

The Chinese of the border provinces were in the earlier ages
compelled to divide their time between war and work, under pain of losing the fruits of their labors. Like the pioneers of the Western continent, they never allowed themselves to be parted from their defensive weapons, and enjoyed life itself only at the price of perpetual vigilance. Experience proved that a line of military posts, no matter how closely they might be linked together, afforded no adequate security against the incursions of homeless wanderers. The Great Wall was built, not as a substitute for such posts, but as a supplement to them. That it served its end there can be no reasonable doubt. So effectually indeed did it protect the peaceful tillers of the soil, that an ancient saying describes it as the ruin of one generation and the salvation of thousands.

From time to time, however, the spirit of rapine, swelling into the lust of conquest, has swept over the huge barrier, as an earthquake wave sweeps over the artificial defenses of a seaport. It was not intended or expected to guarantee the whole empire against the occurrence of such emergencies. Twice has the whole of China succumbed to a flood of extramural invaders: the Mongols under Genghis Khan having been aided in passing the Great Wall in the province of Shansi by the treachery of Alakush, a Tartar chief whose duty it was to defend it; and the Manchus, who are now in possession of the throne, having entered at its eastern extremity, on the invitation of Wu San-kwei, a Chinese general, who sought their aid against the rebel Li Tsze-ch'eng.

Besides the three and a half centuries of Tartar* domination under these two great dynasties, we find, prior to the first of them, three periods of partial conquest. From 907 A. D. to 1234, a large portion of the northern belt of provinces passed successively under the sway of the Ch'itan and Nuchens† Tartars; and, from 886 to 532, an extensive region was subjected to the Tartar hordes of Topa, under the dynastic title of Peiwei. How or where these invaders passed the barrier, it is not worth while to pause to enquire; the foregoing examples being sufficient to show that, in a time of anarchy, some friend or ally can always be found to open the gates. Chung‡ che ch'eng ch'eng, says the Chinese proverb, 'Union is the best bulwark.' Without exaggerating the strength of the Great Wall, which through a large part of its extent is far from being the impos-

* The name Tartar is incapable of very precise definition. Throughout this paper it is applied in a general sense to all the wandering tribes of the North and West.

† 女真 女直, Nuchen or Juchih—also called Kin Tartars. The Manchus claim them as their ancestors, the reigning house having Aisin = kin 'gold' for its family name.

‡ 穷志成城, 'United hearts form the best of bulwarks.'
ing structure which we see in the vicinity of Peking, we still affirm, in the light of history, that had it been backed by forces untainted by treason and unweakened by faction, might have proved sufficient to shield the country from conquest. Wanting these conditions, the wall was powerless for defense; and notwithstanding its towns and garrisons, were before us the astounding fact that the Chinese of these northern provinces have passed seven out of the last ten centuries under the yoke of Tartar conquerors.

Ascending the stream of history to the dynasty of which ruled China from 202 B.C. to 220 A.D., i.e. for more than four centuries—we find ourselves in presence of the conflict. The names of the opposing parties are changed, the parties remain, and the war goes on. The empire conquered by the foreign foe, but it is kept in a state of perpetual terror, by an assemblage of powerful tribes which the collective name of Hiongnu. Breitinger says: "The Mongols nomine mutato;" but Howorth, in his History of the Mongols, pronounces them Turks, or more properly Turcomans, the ancestors of the present occupants of Khiva, Bokhara, and Constantinople. From the renaming of this name to Hunni, they were formerly supposed to be the progenitors of the Magyars. So strong indeed was the conviction that a good many years ago, we had the sight of a follower of Louis Kossuth coming to China in search of his "kindred according to the flesh." Actuated apparently with the hope of inducing them to repeat the invasion of Europe and deliver their brethren from the yoke of the Hapsburgs.

The numerous tribes occupying the vast region extended from lake Balkash to the mouth of the Amoor—differing in language, but similar in nomadic habits—were in the early period combined under the hegemony of the Hiongnu, for a confederation, or an empire, rather than a single state. The chief was styled in his own language Shanyu, a word which the Chinese historians explain as equivalent to Hwangti. There can be no doubt that the haughty emperors of the house of Han were compelled to accord the sacred title to their barous rivals. In recent times, their successors (more precisely successors of the Shanyu) have hesitated to concede it as sovereign of at least one European empire. During the termination of the Austro-Hungarian treaty, the Chinese minister objected so strenuously to the assumption of Hwangti, that the heir to a long line of Kaisers had to content himself with the first syllable of the title, on the principle that "half a loaf better than no bread." Had his minister been well versed in Chinese history, what an advantage he might have gained! He would have required no other argument than the fact
the full title had been given to the chief of the Hiongnu to
insure its extension to the lord of their modern representatives.
For in China a precedent is good for more than two thousand
years; and the supposed connection, though not admitted by
ethnology, is or was sufficiently reliable for the purposes of
diplomacy.

During the Han and succeeding dynasties, the Hiongnu were
held in check mostly by force of arms; but the weaker em-
perors, like those of Rome, were accustomed to send their sis-
ters and daughters across the frontier, instead of generals;
flattering the vanity of the barbarians, and replacing military
armaments by the sentimentalities of family alliance. The
incidents connected with these transactions have supplied rich
materials for poetry and romance. For instance, a popular
tragedy is founded on the fortunes of Cheo-keun, one of the
many fair ladies who were offered as victims to preserve the
peace of the borders. The khan of Tartary, hearing of her
beauty, demanded her in marriage. The emperor refused to
surrender the chief jewel of his harem; so the Khan invaded
China with an overwhelming force; but he retired to his own
dominions when the lady was sent to his camp. Arrived at
the banks of the Amoor, she threw herself into its dark waters,
rather than endure a life of exile at a barbarian court. The
wars of those times would furnish materials for a thrilling hi-
story. The battle-ground was sometimes on the south of the
Great Wall, but generally in the steppes and deserts beyond.

As illustrations of the varying fortunes attending the wars
of the Hans and the Hiongnu, we may mention the names of
Li-kwang, Li-ling, Sze-ma Ts'ien, and Su-wu. The first of these
led the armies of his sovereign against the Hiongnu for many
years in the latter part of the second century B.C. He had,
it is said, come off victorious in seventy battles, when in a final
conflict, disappointed in his expectation of capturing the Khan,
he committed suicide on the field of battle—though, if we may
believe the record, that battle was also a victory. This gives
us a glimpse of the style of Hiongnu warfare. They were like
the Parthians, “most to be dreaded when in flight.” That a
general contending with such a foe should destroy himself from
chagrin at the results of his seventy-first victory, affords us a
fair criterion for estimating the value of the other seventy.

Li-ling, the second of the four whose names I have cited,
was son* of the ill-fated Li-kwang, and appears to have been
born under still less auspicious stars. Appointed to succeed
his father, he suffered himself to pursue the flying enemy too
hotly, when, falling into an ambuscade, his vanguard, consist-

*Mayers says grandson.
ing of a division of five thousand men, was cut to pieces before the main body could come to the rescue. Li-ling, with a few survivors, surrendered at discretion. His life was spared; but to take his own description, contained in some of his letters which are still preserved, it was little better than a living death. In addition to the privations incident to a state of captivity among savage foes, he had the bitter reflection that, on account of his supposed treachery, his nearer relations had all been put to death; and that a noble friend who had guaranteed his fidelity had been subjected to an ignominious punishment.

That noble friend was no other than the great historian, Szemas Tsin. Required by a cruel decree to pay the forfeit of Li-ling's alleged treachery, the historian chose to submit to a disgraceful mutilation, rather than lose his life; not, as he himself says, that he held life dear or feared death, but solely to gain a few years for the completion of his life task, the payment of a debt which he owed to posterity. He lived to place the last stone on his own imperishable monument; and for twenty centuries he has had among his countrymen a name "better than that of sons and daughters."

Su-wu, the last of the four unfortunates, was a diplomatic envoy. Having, while at the court of the Grand Khan, attempted by undiplomatic means to compass the destruction of an enemy, he was thrown into prison, and detained in captivity for nineteen years. Two tender poems are extant, which he and his wife exchanged with each other on parting, at the commencement of his perilous mission. Whether she survived to welcome his return we are not informed; but in that case she must have died with grief, to see him accompanied by a Turkish wife.

We cannot pause longer among the romantic episodes so thickly scattered through the literature of the Hans. We must travel back another thousand years, to arrive at the last and the principal division of our subject—the Northern Barbarians in Ancient China.

We find ourselves at the rise of the third dynasty, the famous dynasty of Cheo (Chow), which occupied the throne for over eight hundred years (B. C. 1122 to B. C. 255). We are at the dawn of letters; at the dividing line which separates the legendary from the historical period. The Great Wall has no existence, but the hostile tribes are there: not Manchou or Mongol, not Hiongnu, Hweku, or T'ukuih; but the ancestors of all of them, under different names, hovering, like birds of prey, on the unprotected frontiers of a rich and tempting

---

* He had become a father prior to this disgrace.
country. At this epoch, the Chinese people, who had originated somewhere in Central Asia, were few in number, and occupied a territory of comparatively limited extent. They were distinguished from their neighbors chiefly by a knowledge of letters, and by the possession of a higher civilization. This incipient culture gave them an immense advantage over the barbarous tribes who surrounded them on every side and opposed their progress. These tribes are grouped under several comprehensive terms: those on the east are called Yi; those on the north, Tih; those on the west, Jung or Ch'iang; and those on the south, Man. The original sense of these names seems to be as follows: the Yi were famous archers, and were so-called from their "great bows." The northerners used dogs in hunting and herding, and depended on fire to temper the cold of their rigorous winters; "dog" and "fire" are therefore combined in the ideograph by which the Tih are designated. The Jung were armed with spears, and this their weapon furnished the symbol for their ideograph. The ideograph Ch'iang is made up of the head of a goat and the legs of a man, and so denotes to the Chinese imagination hideous monsters, and at the same time means 'goat-man,' 'goat-herds,' or 'shepherds,' and identifies them essentially with the Tih or nomads of the north. The character for Man combines those for 'worm' and 'silk,' and imports that the barbarians of the south, even at that early day, were not ignorant of silk-culture.

These names and characters all became more or less expressive of contempt, but were without doubt less offensive in their original sense. Marco Polo, who followed the Tartar usage, applies this word Man, in the form Manzi, to the whole of the Chinese people. They were so called as being 'southrons' with respect to the people of Mongolia, and at the same time objects of contempt to their conquerors.

All the tribes of the south and the east, i.e. the Man and the Yi, save certain aborigines called Miao-tsze, were conquered and gradually absorbed and assimilated by the vigorous race whose progeny peoples modern China proper. The Miao-tsze have been able to retain their independence to the present day by taking refuge in the inaccessible fastnesses of mountain chains.

The barbarous tribes of the north and west, however, the Tih and the Ch'iang, were never permanently subdued. This was simply because their lands never invited conquest. Their storm-swept pastures offered the Chinese no adequate compensation for the toil and danger involved in such an undertaking. On the contrary, as we have seen, it was the wealth and fertility of the North China plains and valleys that tempted con-
stantly throughout the eight hundred years of the Cheo dynasty the fierce and hungry tribes of the north and west to make their overwhelming incursions. These are the quarters from which the conquering armies have once and again risen up, like the sands of their own deserts, to overwhelm parts or the whole of the empire. For our purposes, both sets of tribes may be described as barbarians of the north, and it is only on the northwest that the Jung and the Ch'iang have been a source of trouble and danger. The ideograph for Ch'iang, consisting of the head of a goat and the legs of a man, reverse the Greek conception of Pan and the satyrs, and the imagination of the Chinese doubtless pictured their rude enemies as hideous misshapen monsters. The character probably contains, however, a further significance; for, taking the two parts together, it reads simply 'sheep-men,' i.e. 'shepherd,' and this description makes them essentially one with the Tih or dog-using herdsmen and nomads of the north. To repel the aggressions of these troublesome neighbors was the chief occupation of the Chinese armies in the earliest times, as it has continued to be down through all the ages. The oldest extant Chinese poetry, older than any history, shows us the Chinese warrior, like the magic horseman of Granada, with the head of his steed and the point of his lance directed always towards the north as the source of danger. History shows that the princes who were employed to hold these enemies in check generally held in their hands the destinies of the empire. And in this way the northern tribes have exercised for centuries, throughout the third or Cheo dynasty, an indirect, but important, political influence.

To give only two examples, both from the most ancient period of authentic history: The house of Cheo, the most illustrious of the twenty-two dynasties, rose from a small warlike principality in the mountains of the north-west; they were strong by conflict with their savage enemies, and their chief was regarded as the bulwark of the nation. Si-po,* the lord of the west, or Wen-wang, as he is now called, excited by his growing power the jealousy of his suzerain, the last emperor of the second or Shang dynasty, and was thrown into prison by the tyrant, who did not dare, however, to put him to death. In the panic caused by a sudden irruption of the northmen, Wen-wang was set free, and invested with even greater power than he had ever possessed before. To the day of his death he remained loyal; but his son, Cheo-fa, or Wu-wang, employed his trained forces, like a double-edged sword, not only to protect the frontier and drive back the invaders, but

---

* Mencius says that Tai-wang, the grandfather of Si-po, paid tribute to the Tartara.
also to overturn the throne of his master, the last Shang emperor.

After the lapse of over eight hundred years, the house of Cheo was replaced by the house of Chin, which had been cradled among the same mountains and made strong by conflict with the same enemies. During the Cheo period (B.C. 1122 to B.C. 255), the barbarians never cease to be a factor in the politics of the empire; not merely making forays and retiring with their booty, but driving the Chinese before them; occupying their lands, and planting themselves in the shape of independent or feudal States, as the Goths and Vandals did within the bounds of the Roman empire. The analogy does not stop here. Like the Roman empire, China had, in the early part of the Cheo period, two capitals: one in the west, near Singan fu (about one hundred miles southwest of the great bend of the Hoang ho), in Shensi; and another in the east, near the present Kaifung fu, in Honan. The former was sacked by the Tartars in 781 B.C., just as Rome was by the Goths in 410 A.D. The story as given by Chinese writers is as follows: The emperor Yiu Wang had a young consort on whom he doted. One day it came into his head to give a false alarm to the armies surrounding the capital, merely to afford her an amusing spectacle. Beacon fires, the signal of imminent danger, were lighted on all the hills. The nobles came rushing to the rescue, each at the head of his retainers. Finding there was no real danger, they dispersed in a state of high indignation. The young empress had her laugh; but they laugh best who laugh last, as the proverb has it. Not long after this, the Tartars made a sudden attack. The beacon fires were again lighted; but the nobles, having once been deceived, took care not to respond to the call, lest they should again be making a woman's holiday. The city was taken, and the silly sovereign and his fair enchantress both perished in the flames. However much of the legendary there may be in this narrative, the one stern fact that lies at the bottom of it is the presence of a ferocious enemy whom we call by the general name of Tartars.

After this calamity the heir to the throne removed his court to the eastern capital, leaving the tombs of his fathers in the hands of the barbarians. In the heart of the central plain, and surrounded by a cordon of feudal States, the imperial throne was thought to be secure. But the irrepressible foe was forcing his way to the south and east, with the slow but resistless motion of a mountain glacier. A hundred and thirty years later (about 650 B.C.), we have the spectacle of a barbarian horde in actual possession of the eastern capital, and the emperor a refugee, pleading for reinstatement at the hands
of his vassals. As might be expected, the blame of the catastrophe is again charged on a woman. That woman was a barbarian; and the fact throws a strong light on the position of the contending parties. Her tribe had established itself in the rich alluvial region on the southern bend of the Hoang ho or Yellow river. As enemies they were a standing menace to the capital; as friends they might serve as its janizaries. In order to win their favor and secure their fidelity, the emperor took one of their princesses into his harem. Captivated by her charms, he subsequently raised her to be the partner of his throne. An ambitious kinsman, desirous of supplanting the emperor on the throne, began by supplanting him in the affections of his barbarian wife. Her infidelity being discovered, she was sent back to her kindred, where she was joined by her paramour, who stirred up the powerful clan to avenge an insult done to them in her person. The emperor was easily put to flight; but, wanting the support of the nobles, the usurper's tenure of the capital was of short duration.

Subsequently the barbarians menaced the capital frequently, if not constantly; and the Son of Heaven was more than once compelled to appeal to his vassals for succor. On one occasion his envoys even turned against him, and went over to the enemy, apparently deeming it better to serve a growing than a decaying power. About forty years earlier than the flight of the emperor above mentioned, another barbarian beauty, named Li-ki, played a conspicuous and mischievous role at the court of Tsin, the greatest chief of the vassal States. Taken in battle, she captivated her princely captor, and maintained by her talents the ascendancy which she at first owed to her personal attractions. She induced the prince to change the order of succession in favor of her offspring, thus sowing the seeds of a family feud that brought the princely house to the verge of destruction. Thus, by the cupidity of the Tartars, the treachery of his own envoys, the intrigues of his empress, the throne of one Cheo emperor after another was menaced and shaken, until the dynasty was brought to fall.

Of these immigrant Tartar tribes, no fewer than five or six are mentioned in the Confucian annals as having succeeded in establishing themselves in the interior of China. Two of them (called Red and White—probably, like the Neri and Bianchi of Florence, from the color of their clothing, or of their banners) were settled within the bounds of the present province of Shansi; one in Honan; one in Chili; and two in Shantung. How they effected a settlement is not difficult to understand. In an age of anarchy, when rival States were contending for the hegemony, the great barons found it to their interest to secure the aid of troops of hardy horsemen from
the northern plains, rewarding their service by grants of land. The emperor sought in the same way to strengthen himself against his unruly vassals. And so, at last, by too great dependence on foreign auxiliaries, the empire became unable to shake off its helpers.

How deeply seated was the antagonism between them and the Chinese may be inferred from one or two examples. The emperor being about to despatch a body of those hired auxiliaries to chastise a disobedient subject, one of his ministers warned him against a measure which would be sure to alienate his friends, and strengthen the hands of the common enemy.

"If," said the minister, "the prince finds his moral influence insufficient to secure order, his next resort is to make the most of the ties of blood. But let him beware of throwing himself into the arms of a foreign invader." This counsel reminds us of the remonstrance of Lord Chatham against the employment of savages, in the conflict with the American colonies. We may add that India and China both came under the sway of their present rulers through the mistaken policy of depending on foreign auxiliaries.

With the Chinese it was a practical maxim that no faith was to be kept with those invaders; and a terrible vengeance was sometimes taken for the insults and perfidy to which they were subjected.* When one of the barbarian States desired to enter into an alliance with Tsin, doing homage as a vassal, the king at first objected, exclaiming, "the Jung and the Tih have no ties or principles in common with us. We must treat them as our natural enemies." He yielded, with reluctance, when one of his ministers had shown him five good reasons for a contrary course.

Another fact may be cited, which shows at once the power of the barbarians and the horror in which they were held. In the sixth century B.C., the rising civilization of China was on the point of being overwhelmed by them, when a deliverer was raised up in the person of Duke Hwan of Ch'i, who turned the tide at the critical moment, as Theodoric did the onslaught of the Huns under Attila. How imminent was the peril of the empire, and how eminent the merit of the victor, is apparent from a reply of Confucius to some one who supposed that he had spoken disparagingly of Duke Hwan. "How could I disparage Duke Hwan?" he exclaimed; "but for him we should all have been buttoning our coats on the left side," i.e. have been subject to the Tartars.

*大國不可欺. 'A great State is not trifled with,' is the warning given by a barbarian chief to the prince of Tsin.
CONCLUSION.

Thus far we have occupied ourselves with what we may call an outline of the political relations of the Chinese with the northern tribes in war and in peace. The ethnography of those tribes now claims our attention, if only to show the impossibility of arriving at any satisfactory conclusion. The doubts expressed by the best authorities as to the ethnological relations of the Hiongnu have already been referred to. Conspicuous as they are in history for many centuries about the commencement of the Christian era, it has been much disputed whether they were Turks, Mongols, or Huns. How much greater is the difficulty of identification as we travel back to a period where the torch of history sheds but a feeble ray, or disappears in the vague obscurity of legendary tradition.

In those remote ages the guiding clue of philology fails us. And while a few names that appear in the less ancient literature, such as Hwe-ku and T'u-kuih,* suggest the identity of the tribes that bore them with the Ouigours and Turks, there is absolutely nothing to be made out of the names that meet us most frequently in the earlier records. The vague terms of Jung and Tih, under which were grouped peoples as diverse as the tribes of North American Indians, are always accompanied by some mark of contempt; the character for dog-being prefixed to the one, and incorporated with the other. Hien-yuen, another name of frequent occurrence, has the dog-radical in both its parts, and appears intended to confound the people who bore it with a tribe of apes. It would hardly be expected that writers who deny their neighbors the attributes of humanity should take an interest in depicting their manners or studying their language. Accordingly we search in vain in the earlier Chinese literature for any such precious fragments of those northern tongues as Plautus in one of his plays has preserved of the Carthaginian. They themselves possessed no written speech; and had they possessed it, they have left us no such imperishable monuments or relics of handicraft, as at this day are throwing fresh light on the origin of the Etruscans.

A vast amount of undigested information is to be found in the pages of Matoanlin, relating to the border tribes of the middle ages. But outside the circle of the classics, the only descriptive geography that has reached us from the Cheo period is the Shanhaiking, a kind of Chinese Gulliver, which peoples the world with monsters of every form and fashion.

* Hiongnu, Tukuih, Hweku, Hienyuen, Huen-yu, Pei Hu, Tah-tah or Tata = Tartar. These are only some of the names that are given in a way more or less vague to the nomads of the North and West.
The older writers, in confounding numerous tribes under one or a few terms, were no doubt influenced by the fact that to them they all appeared under one aspect, that of wandering hunters or shepherds, equally rude and equally ferocious.

No one who gives attention to such subjects can fail to be struck with a two-fold process that takes place in the life of all nations, and most of all in that of nomadic tribes. The first is what we may call the stage of differentiation, through which they pass when, small and weak, they keep themselves isolated from their neighbors, and even their languages diverge in a short time to such a degree as to be mutually unintelligible. The second is the stage of assimilation, when, brought into the collisions of war or the intercourse of trade, each gives and receives impressions that make them approximate to a common type. Thus the barbarians on the north of China present in the earlier ages a boundless variety, which tends with the lapse of time to give place to uniformity of manners, and even of physical features.

Rolling over the plains, as the waves over the sea, their blood has been commingled; and though their names have often changed, their physical type has probably remained unaltered. It is natural to raise the question, What was that physical type? It has not been handed down either in painting or sculpture, and yet I think it is possible for us to recover it. It stands before us to-day, stamped on their descendants of the one hundredth generation. As the Manchu and Mongol are to-day, such were the Jung and the Tih, coeval with Assyria and Babylon. The beautiful Aleuta, the hapless consort of the late emperor, was a Mongol; and more than two thousand years ago, other princes were captivated by the beauty of the daughters of the desert. The barbarians of those times were probably not inferior to the Chinese, in form, feature, or natural intelligence, as their descendants are not inferior in any of these respects. Indeed Chinese, Manchus, and Mongols, as we see them in the city of Peking, are not distinguishable, except by some peculiarity of costume.

Were they originally of one mould, or have the lines of distinction become gradually effaced by the intercourse of ages? The latter is we think the correct hypothesis. The primitive Chinese type, that imported by the immigrants who founded the civilization of China, is, we believe, no longer to be discerned. In the southern and central regions, it has everywhere been modified by combination with the aboriginal inhabitants, leading to provincial characteristics, which the practiced eye can easily recognize. It has undergone, we think, a similar modification in the northern belt. It met here with tribes akin to those of Mongolia, and gradually absorbed them.
This process was going on in prehistoric times. History at its earliest dawn shows us the unassimilated fragments of those tribes; and at the same time discloses a vast movement southward all along the line—checked for a time by the Great Wall, only to be renewed on a more stupendous scale. We have seen how small bodies infiltrated through every channel; we have also seen how, organized into great States, they established in China a dominion enduring for centuries. We are inclined to believe that they have stamped their impress on the people of this region, as thoroughly as the Saxons have theirs on the people of England, or the Vandals theirs on that part of Spain which still bears their name in the form of Andalusia. If you inquire for the influences to which the invaders have in their turn been subjected, we answer that, in all ages, they have exchanged barbarism for such civilization as they found among the more cultivated race.
ARTICLE XII.

ON THE

POSITION OF THE VĀITĀNA-SŪTRA

IN THE

LITERATURE OF THE ATHARVA-VEDA.

BY MAURICE BLOOMFIELD,

PROFESSOR IN THE JOHNS HOPKINS UNIVERSITY, BALTIMORE, MD.

Presented to the Society October 30th, 1884.

The following pages contain an attempt to define more exactly than has as yet been done the position of the Vāitāna-sūtra in the literature of the Atharva-Veda. It is based upon a pretty thorough, though not exhaustive, comparison of the Vāitāna-sūtra with the Kāauçika-sūtra and its commentary by Dārila. On several interesting points I was enlightened by the Atharvanîya-paddhati, a second paddhati to the house-ritual of the Atharva-Veda, two modern copies of which, in the possession of the Royal Library at Berlin, I had the privilege of using for my forthcoming edition of the Kāauçika. As this paddhati presents some special points of interest, I give here for the first time a short notice of it.

It differs from the Daça karmāni, of which I presented a short sketch at the meeting of the Society in October, 1883,* in that it not merely paraphrases the description of certain sections of the ritual as given in the Kāauçika, but also comments upon them somewhat independently, occasionally differing from Dārila. After a short introduction, it turns to the paribhāṣā-sūtras at the beginning of the Kāauçika,† then continues with the ājyā-

* See the Proceedings of that meeting—where may be found also a short notice of the commentary of Dārila.
† The much more important and interesting paribhāṣās which are contained in chapters 7 and 8 of the Kāauçika it does not treat in any way.
tantra (here called brhatkućandikā: cf. the word kućandika in Weber’s catalogue of MSS., No. 1253), with its appendix the uttaratantra; then it treats the following sāṅkāyās: garbhādhāna, punāsvana, sāmāntavāpya, jātakarman, nāmakarana, nirnaya, annaprāya, godāna, cādakarana, upanaya (with vedaprata, kalpaprata, mṛgāvaratā, viśāhīvaratā*), samāvartana, vivāha with madhuparka inserted (as in the Daśa karmā, Kāthaka-grhya and Mānava-grhya),† caturthikarman with the madhugṛhamaniprāyaṣcita† as appendix, laghupūlakarman, brahmacālākaran, pīṇtyudaka, sampākāma-karman, pustikāma-karman, abhīcāra-karman, vṛddhiṣṭudiḥka, dahanāvīdhi (with asthisamācayana), pīṇāvīdhi, sūdākopacāra, and yṛgotsarga.

The text quotes the usual Atharvan literature: Gopatha Bṛhmaṇa, Viśāntasūtra, Naksatrabalpa, Angirasabalpa, and the pariṣṭhas; also such stock-books as Manu and the Karmapradipa.§ It also cites Dārila, and two other commentators, Bhadra and Rudra, both of whom are elsewhere unknown.‖ It mentions further a paddhati-kāra by the name of Keśava; an acārya Upavāraṇa as author of mīmāṃsā;¶ a work called the Paṇcapatalikā (cf. Böthingk’s lexicon), and finally Pāṭhāṇasi. The latter is cited frequently and familiarly by Dārila; and it seems possible that the smṛti of Pāṭhāṇasi may go back to a dharmasūtra belonging to the Atharva-Veda. Often as this text is cited, no MS. of it has as yet come to light, as I learn from Büher and Jolly; it would be interesting to find the Sūtra-ritual of the Atharva-Veda completed by a dharmasūtra, or some smṛti going back to a dharmasūtra. The name of a teacher Mausulputra Pāṭhāṇasi occurs also in Ath. Pariṣ. 4. 3 and 17. 13.

Indian tradition is unanimous in presenting the ritual literature immediately attaching itself to the Atharva-Veda as consisting of five kalpas. The Caranaṇavṛtha (Ath. Pariṣ. 49) presents them in the following order, and under the following names: naksatrabalpa, vīśāntasūtra, sāṃhitākalpa, angirasabalpa, and pīṇīkāla. The larger Caranaṇavṛtha, the fifth pariṣṭha of the White Yajur-veda, counts naksatrabalpa, vīśāntasūtra, sāṃhitākalpa (with the variant sāṃhītavidhi), vīśāntasūtra (with the variant abhīcārabalpa), and pīṇīkāla. The Devipūrana (cited by Weber, Ind. Stud. iii. 279) counts naksatrabalpa, viśānta, sāṃhitāvidhi, angirasā, and pīṇī. The Viṣṇupūrana (iii. 6; vol. iii. p. 63 of Hall’s edition of Wilson’s translation)** knows these kalpas by the same name and in the same order as the Ath. Pariṣṭha. The

* Cf. A.V. xvii. 1-5.
† See Proceedings A. O. S., loc. cit.; Jolly, Das Dharmasūtra des Viṣṇu und das Kāthakagṛhyasūtra, Proceedings of the Munich Academy, June, 1879, p. 76.
‡ Cf. Atharva-pariṣṭha 37. 9 (MS. or. fol. 973 in the Royal Library at Berlin); cf. Ind. Stud. v. 494.
§ Cited as often under the name of chandogoparivaśa of Kātyāyana.
‖ Cf. Rđravadhrdrāna ca trasas te bhāyakirāk.
¶ Cf. Colebrooke, Miscellaneous Essays, ii. 322.
** Cf. Gopatha Bṛhmaṇa, ed. by Rūjendralālamitra, Introduction, p. 5.
Ātharvaniya-paddhati also follows the Ath. Puriṣṭa, but substitutes the name abhicāra-kalpa for āngira-saṅkalpa, and cites the guarantee of the mānāśa-teacher Upavarsa that these are prati, and that there are other kalpas which are smṛti.* The Vāyu-
purāṇa (61; p. 526 of the edition in the Bibliotheca Indica) reads: naksatrakalpo vātānas triyāh saṃhitāvidhiḥ: caturtho "āngira" kalpaḥ pāṇi-kalpaḥ ca pañcamah. In the Mahābhā-
rata, xii. 13258, the five kalpas of the Atharva-Veda are men-
tioned, but their names are not given. In the Bhāgavata-purāṇa xii. 7. 1,† the kalpas occur as: naksatralkalpaḥ pāṇiṣṭ ca kācyāp-
pāṇīgrahādayah (i). In the Mahābhāṣya, there occur together several times the kalpas of Kācyapa and Kaučika (Ind. Stud. xiii. 417, 419, 436, 445, 455). Weber (ibid. 436 and 445) is disposed to see in this Kaučika and in the derivative Kaučikin the repre-
sentatives of a Yajus-school; but this passage from the Bhāga-
vata-purāṇa shows clearly that the Kaučika of the Atharva-Veda is meant. But who is Kācyapa among the kalpas? Can there be any nexus between him and the otherwise authorless Vātāna-sūtra?‡ The commentary to the Atharva-Veda by Sāyana, which Shankar Pandurang Pandit announced in the London Academy of June 5th, 1880, in the Introduction refers the ritual of the Atharva-Veda to five kalpas: kaučika, vātāna, naksatra, āngira, and pāṇi. It adds the interesting statement that these ritual books belong to four of the nine pākhās or bhedas into which tradition unanimously divides the Atharva-Veda: namely, the Čāṇakīyas, the Aksals, the Jaladas, and the Brahmavādas. I find essentially the same statement in the introduction to the Atharva-paddhati: atharvavedasya nava bhedā bhavanti: tatra caturṣya pākhāna caunakādhiṣa kaučike yaih saṃhitāvidhiḥ. A negative corroboration of this statement is to be derived from the relation of the Kaučika and Vātāna sūtras to the one other branch of the Atharva-Veda which has come to light, the Kaśmir-recension, which calls itself the Pāpiplāda; we know that the sūtras do not belong to this pākhā, from the technical fact that they cite the mantras of the Pāpiplāda in full instead of citing the pratikas.§ And once the Kaučika implicitly confesses itself as āṃnakīya, in 85. 8. 7, where the opinions of the Čāṇakins and Devadargins about measurements are confronted; the opinion of the Čāṇakins is given last, and is therefore, in accordance with the usual method of the Kaučika, to be considered as the

---

* "mānāśaḥ yāṁ: smṛtīpade kalpasūtrādhih kāryaṃ naksatrakalpo vātānakalpaḥ triyāh saṁhitāvidhiḥ: caturtho "āngira" kalpaḥ pāṇi-kalpaḥ ca pañcamah: ekāpi veda-tulyaḥ hi 'tā bhagavān (i) upanāścārāyaṃ pratipaditaṃ: anye kalpaḥ smṛtihūyāḥ.
‡ The word vātāna itself is occasionally personified: see Gop. Br., Introduction, p. 4; in the Ath. Paddh. to Kauč. 1. 6, the Vātāna is cited as āṃnakīya-sūtra.
§ So Kauč. 72, 91, 107, 115; Vākt. 10. 17; 14. 1; 24. 1: cf. Roth, Der Atharvaveda in Kaschmir; and Garbe, in the Introduction to the Vātāna (text), p. vii.
accepted one.* The prevalence of this canon of five kalpas is furthermore attested by the compound pānca-kalpaḥ in the Mahābhāṣya; pānca-kalpaḥ is probably not to be understood (with Weber, Ind. Stud. xiii. 455) as one studying five different kalpas, i.e. grūta-sūtras, but means an Atharvavedin who is familiar with these five kalpas.

The gist of these traditions is therefore as follows: There are five ritual books regarded as gruti, and they are (if we disregard the crooked order in which they are usually presented): I. The Kāuçika-sūtra, known also under the name of Saṁhitā-kalpa, or Saṁhitā-vidhi.
II. The Viñāna-kalpa, or Viñāna-sūtra.
III. The Naksatralkalpa.
IV. The Čanti-kalpa.
V. The Angirasa-kalpa, known also as Abhicūra-kalpa or Viñāna-kalpa.

Accordingly the statement of Weber, Indische Literaturgeschichte, p. 169, is to be corrected. He says, speaking of the Kāuçika-sūtra: "Zu diesem sūtra gehören noch fünf sogenannte kalpa: naksattra, āṅti, viñāna [which he does not identify with the Viñāna, mentioned on the preceding page], saṁhitākalpa [which is itself the Kāuçika], und abhicūrakalpa." So much for the Hindu juxtaposition of the kalpas. To the western student of Indian literature, these co-ordinated five texts are of very different value. To begin with, the Angirasa- or Abhicūrakalpa has, so far as I know, not as yet turned up in Europe. From the character of the references to it, one can safely guess that it is essentially nothing more than a paricīṣṭa of the Atharva-Veda, treating mainly abhicūra, or witchcraft; and it would probably be of some value in elucidating the sixth book of the Kāuçika. That the Naksatralkalpa and Čanti-kalpa are paricīṣṭas appears from their titles: e.g. Ch. 110 (Weber's Catalogue, p. 89), brahmavedaparicīṣṭam naksatralkalpābhidhānam. In a modern codex of the Ath. Paricīṣṭas, which Bühler presented

*A still more incisive difference between the various pāthās of the Atharva-Veda is reported in Atharvaparicīṣṭa 2. 3. 4. The passage describes the rules for choosing the purohita. Not only is an adherent of the three remaining Vedas excluded, but even within the Atharvan itself those belonging to the Mānda and Jalada pāthās are rejected, while Pāippalādas and Čauṣakyas are considered desirable: na haviḥ pratṛtyaḥantai devatāḥ pitāro dvajāḥ: tasya bhūmipatayasya gṛhe na 'athavārd gṛuh, samāktāngopratyaśāvyavādyātyānyāvyāntvam: pāippalādān gṛuhā kṣaṭṭi pirśāvāyavāyavāvānāvānām: tathā ānviśānānān ca 'yā devamāntra-viṣānti: . . . bahircro hasti vī réstram advayur mācyay mādān: chandego dhanānām nīcyay laśmīd 'atharvaṇo gṛuh: ajaḥānād vā pramāndād vā syād bahircro gṛuh: dévātsprapūrāmātyānāyās tasya na saṁśayak, yadi vā 'dvaya-van vai nīṣāntakī purohikām: castrāṇa badhyate kṣerampi kārīprārthavānān. yadā sa pṛṇeva adhino iṣṭi ca 'dhaññanān: evam chandoguvanum rūt viśānti sa gacchati, pūrṇaḥ jalado yānya mādu vā syāt kathān caṇa: abād dācaḥyā mābābhya rūstrīkāraṇacām sa gacchati. Cf. also Yajñavalkya i. 312. On the pāthās of the Atharva-Veda cf. in general Indische Studien, i. 296; iii. 277–8; Weber, Omina und Portenta, p. 413; Roth, Der Atharva-Veda in Kāśmir, p. 24 fg; Weber, Indische Literaturgeschichte, p. 166; Rajendralal Mitra in the Introduction to the Gopatha Brahmaṇa, p. 5.
to the Royal Library at Berlin (MS. Or. fol. 973), the Nakṣatrakaḷpa actually stands at the head, and is counted as the first paripūṭa. Of the Berlin codex of the Čāntikalpa I possess a copy, but there is to be found in it nothing of great intrinsic interest; nor does the text add anything to the elucidation of either the Kāuḍika or the Vāitāna. The Nakṣatrakaḷpa in some of its last sections bears upon a few points in the Kāuḍika. A short summary of both texts is to be found in Weber’s Nakṣatra II. p. 392 fg.

The two remaining texts contain ritual sūtras, but their relation to one another and to the Atharva-saṁhitā is in many respects different from that of corresponding texts in the pākhās of the other Vedas. The doubtful canonicity of the Atharva-Veda (which gains expression in the prevailing designation of the Vedas as a trāvidyam or trāyī vidyā), or at least the patent fact that the hymns of the Atharva-Veda are not well-fitted for employment in the prārta-ritual, has left its stamp on the prārta-literature. This is both secondary and scarce; its only brāhmaṇa, the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa, and its prārta-sūtra, the Vāitāna, no doubt belong to the latest products of their respective kinds of literature. They are perhaps merely imitations of the literary conditions in vogue in the caranas of the other Vedas. On the other hand, the private life and the private performances of one who adhered to the Veda of incantation and exorcisms naturally were very extensive, bringing in much which was unknown in other Vedic schools; and to this the largest and most important ritual text of the Atharva-Veda, the Kāuḍika-sūtra, owes its peculiarly prominent position among the Atharvan books.

As a rule, the grhya-sūtras are dependent upon the prārta-sūtras; the former refer to the latter familiarly, and do not describe a second time performances which have been treated in the prārta-sūtra. So Pārask. i. 1.4 and i. 18.1 refers to Kāyṭ. Čr., with the expression pūrvavat, ‘as above.’* In the collection of the sūtra-carana of Āpastambha, in which all religious sūtras are united into one work, the prārta-sūtra precedes the grhya. Stenzler, in the preface to his edition of the Āṣv. Čr., p. iii., remarks: “The chief obstacle in the way of a correct understanding of the grhya-sūtras lies in the fact that they appear as appendices to the prārta-rules, and presuppose an acquaintance with the prārta-performances.”†

Nothing corresponding to this is to be found in the correlation of the Kāuḍika and the Vāitāna. There is no point in which the Kāuḍika depends upon the Vāitāna; on the other hand, the dependence of the Vāitāna upon the Kāuḍika is apparent at almost every step, where the difference of the subject-matter, and the difference between Vedic ceremonial and house ceremonial, allow it. The position of the Vāitāna may therefore perhaps be described as follows: it is not the product of practices in Vedic ceremonies which have slowly and gradually developed in a cer-

---

* Pāraskara’s sūtra is called outright Kātyya-sūtra, or Pāraskara’s Kātyya-sūtra.
† Cf. e.g. Āṣv. Čr. i. 5.1; iv. 1.16; 4. 6.
tain school, but probably a somewhat conscious product, made at a time when Atharvavedins, in the course of their polemics with the priests of the other Vedas, began to feel the need of a manual for Vedic practices which should be distinctly Atharvane. That the Atharvan is poorly fitted for serving as foundation to a Vedic ritual can be seen from the fact that very little that distinctly belongs to its proper sphere (carmina, devotiones), and at the same time is not borrowed, or does not at least occur in the Kāṇḍika, is found in the Vāitāna. On the other hand, it contains numerous verses and formulas from the Yajus-saṁhitās; and in the description of the ritual it follows very closely Kātyāyanâ's Āraṇyā-sūtra. In Vāit. i. 1. 8, devatā havir daksinā yajurvedāt, 'the authority for the divinities, the sacrificial material, and the sacrificial reward, is from the Yajur-Veda,' we seem to find formal recognition of this fact. And perhaps it may be taken as a sign of intimacy between the Vāitāna and Kātyāyana, that the commentary to the latter cites the Vāitāna quite frequently, under the names of Vāitāna-sūtra, Atharvaṇa, and Atharva-sūtra (cf. Garbe, preface to text, p. vi.). On the other hand, the relation of the Vāitāna to the Kāṇḍika almost may be described by saying that the Vāitāna treats the Kāṇḍika almost as though it were another saṁhitā, taking for granted that the ritual of the Kāṇḍika, and the mantras which it quotes from other sources than the vulgata, are understood and known by its readers.

The Vāitāna-sūtra we possess in an excellent edition and translation by Richard Garbe (text, London, 1878; translation, Strassburg, 1878). Before bringing detailed evidence for the statements made, we may collect here a few addenda and corrigenda, most of which come from sources which were inaccessible to Garbe.

Vāit. 1. 19: jīvābhīr is translated by 'mit jīvīwasser.' Dārila to Kaṇḍ. 3. 4 explains jīvābhīr by jīvā the ti catasvabhī: i.e. 'with the jīvā-verses.' (AV. xix. 69. 1–4).

Vāit. 10. 5: gandhapravādābhīr is translated 'mit Stoffen welche als wolviehend zu bezeichnen sind.' According to the Daśa karmāṇi to Kaṇḍ. 54. 4, the gandhapravādā reas are AV. xii. 1. 23–25, all beginning with the words yas te gandhāh.

Vāit. 24. 3: apāṁ sūktāṁ. The hymns to the waters are given as follows by Dārila to Kaṇḍ. 7. 14: ambayo yantī, gambhiṃayobhū, hiranyavarnādayah, kṛṣṇai niyānai, sasrurī, hīmavatāḥ pra sravantī, vāyoh pūḍa ity apāṁ sūktāṁ (AV. i. 4. 1; 5. 1; 6. 1; 33. 1; vi. 22. 1; 23. 1; 24. 1; 51. 1).

Vāit. 37. 23: utthāpanībhīr, 'mit den utthāpani-Versen.' According to the Antyeṣṭikarman (a paddhati on the burial-ceremonies) to Kaṇḍ. 81. 31, these verses are AV. xviii. 3. 8, 9; 2. 48; 1. 61; 2. 53; 4. 44.

Vāit. 37. 24: harinībhīr, 'mit den harinī-Versen.' According to the Antyeṣṭikarman (ibid.), they are AV. xviii. 2. 11–18.

The passage Vāit. 5. 10, treating of the preparation of the pīntyudaka, the only one in the text which Garbe finds himself
compelled to leave untranslated, will be explained below, in another connection.

Several of the praśākas cited, whose origin was unknown to Garbe,* can be found in the vulgata by the aid of Whitney’s Index Verborum: thus, Vāt. 3. 17, indra gīrbhīḥ, is AV. vii. 110. 3; Vāt. 9. 4, pūrṇā darve, is AV. iii. 10. 7; Vāt. 8. 6, indrāgni asmān, is AV. x. 1. 21.64; Vāt. 28. 32, kṛte yonā, is AV. iii. 17. 2. The praśāka in Vāt. 16. 1, pūrṇam adhvaryo pra bharā, and the following verse, which is referred to in sūtra 2, are probably a modification of AV. iii. 12. 8. 9: pūrṇam nāri pra bharā.†

The quantity of material in the Vātāña which is characteristically Atharvanic is quite small, if we exclude what is shared with it by the Kāṇḍika. In Vāt. 1. 1, the demand is made that the supervising priest, the brahman, shall be a brahmavedavid. The expression brahmaveda does not occur in the Kāṇḍika; in its place Kāu. 63. 3 and 94. 3, and the Vātāña itself in 1. 5, have the more archaic bhrvangaṇvirovīd; and Vāt. 11. 2 still further exhibits the expression athavāṅgirovidam brahmāṇam. In the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa and the pariṣṭas, also, the expression bhrvangaṇvirovīd prevails;‡ brahmavedavid’s probably belongs to a later period. On several occasions, the Vātāña takes it upon itself directly or indirectly to express the superiority of the Atharva-Veda and its priests. In 11. 2, it does so by giving precedence to the athavāṅgirovid who shall be chosen as brahman (in the technical sense) over the udgātar, hotar, and adhvaryu. This precedence of the Atharvan appears in a more valuable form, because impliedly, in the mantra-passage Vāt. 6. 1: the fire compared to a steed is addressed with tam tvā ‘dadhir brahmaṇe bhāgam agre atharvāṇaḥ sānveda yajūṣi: rghbih pātam prajāpatir atharvane ‘svam prathamain nināya. In the mantra-passage Vāt. 37. 2, the brahman carries on a petty polemic against the other priests participating in the sacrifice, saying: “You are not a guardian of the sacrifice higher than I; you are not better, more excellent, do not stand above me; you do indeed speak instructively, but you must not place yourself on a level with me.” This accords again with the polemical tone of the later Atharvan-literature, especially the pariṣṭas (cf. the extract from Ath. Pariṣ. 2. 3. 4 above), in which all possible effort, and sometimes virulent language, is expended upon the

* See text, p. 81.
† I have noted the following errata: in the preface to the text, p. vi., read abhicarere etc. 2. 10, instead of ... 2. 12; text 1. 18, vṛg for vṛg; 2. 1, brahmāṇa for brahyan; 25. 1, oṣadhīr for oṣaṣṭṛ; 28. 11, pāṅgata for pāṅga; 28. 12, bhājāli for bhājāli. In the translation, 34. 11, uccaveghahāsa for -gosa.
‡ See Gop. Br. i. 2. 24; 3. 1; and, for the pariṣṭas, Weber, Omina und Portenta, p. 349.
§ It is indeed quite obvious that the original brahman in Vedic sacrifices was not connected with the Atharva-Veda at all, but was supposed to know the three other Vedas, in distinction from the hotar, udgātar, and adhvaryu, who each knew only one. Thus the brahman is fitted for his office of supervisor of the sacrifice, in which he would receive but little aid from a knowledge of the Atharvan: cf. Haug, Brahma und die Brahmanen, p. 10; Müller, in the Journal of the German Oriental Society, vol. ix., p. xlvii.
task of showing the dignity of the brahman-priest and his Veda. Curiously enough, this effort is not restricted to Atharvan-writings; e. g. in the Mahābhāṣya the Atharvan consistently receives the first position among the Vedas (Ind. Stud. xiii. 433 fg.); Yājñāvalkya, i. 312, demands that the purohita shall be acquainted with the Atharvāṅgiras; and even in the gṛhya-sūtras of the Rig-Veda (Cāṇkh. iv. 10. 9; Cāmbavargṛhya, Ind. Stud. xv. 159; Aṣṭ. iii. 4. 4), on the occasion of the tārpanam, the Atharva-ṛṣis Sumantu, whom tradition unanimously designates as the first source of Atharvan-lore,* is honored with the first place in the list of sages. In addition, there is very little Atharvan-material which belongs especially to the Vāitāṇa: thus, 2. 10, āśūdītesu hauhīṣu ‘ktān purastāddhamān juhoti: abhicāresv abhicārikān, and 43. 25, pāunakayañjō bhihārkāmasya, bring in abhicōra in an independent way — moreover, the pāunaka-sacrifice is unknown elsewhere. The passage describing the pāntyudaka, which will be translated below, also contains a special contribution of the Vāitāṇa to Atharvan-practices; and Vāit. 1. 3 contains an interesting paribhūṣa-sūtra, in which are given the dictates of several Atharvan teachers concerning the expedients which are to be resorted to when no mantra is prescribed for an oblation. Further, the Vāitāṇa quotes independently and in full three hymns of the Kashmir-branch, the Pāppalāda (in 10. 17; 14. 1; 24. 1), just as the Kāṇḍika and Gopatha Brāhmaṇa quote hymns and verses of the same version: see Roth, Der Atharva-Veda in Kashmir, p. 23. That the hymns of the vulgata are cited largely, and only with their prātikas, proves nothing for the archaic character of the work; the author of a ārota-sūtra to any Vedic collection, at any period whatever, would observe this practice and the technicalities attached thereto.

As indicated above, the few points mentioned are far from exhausting the materials in the Vāitāṇa which are characteristically Atharvane. But those remaining cannot be adduced as testimony in favor of the originality and age of the text, because the Vāitāṇa shares them with the Kāṇḍika.

The points of contact between these two texts in general are very numerous. In the matter of external form, it may be worth noting that the Vāitāṇa-sūtra proper, which is divided into eight adhyāyas, is frequently found extended to fourteen adhyāyas by the addition of prāyacitā-sūtras. So in one of the manuscripts which Garbe used in his edition, and in a codex presented to the Royal Library at Berlin by Prof. Eggeling (M. S. or. oct. 343). This may have been done in deference to the fourteen adhyāyas of the Kāṇḍika. The Vāitāṇa as well as the Kāṇḍika frequently begins a chapter with a long mantra-passage which belongs to the action of the preceding chapter: so Vāit. 6, 12, 14, 24; and Kāu. 2, 3, 4, 5, 70, 88, etc. etc. I have not noticed in the Vāitāṇa the

---

* Vīśṇupurāṇa iii. 6; Vāyup. 60; Bhāgavatap. xii. 7. 1; cf. Roth, Der Atharva-Veda in Kashmir, p. 26.
† So also Gop. Br. i. 3. 22.
practice, common in the Kāuḍika, of disregarding hiatus produced by sandhi: so Kāuḍ. 6. 17, patnyāñjalu = patnyū(ḥ) anjalu; 6. 34, dāiṅvati = dāiṅvata(y) iti; 17. 3, taḻpūṟaṇham = taḻpa(y) āṟaṇham; cf. also the seven cases mentioned by Weber in his Omins und Portenta, p. 390, note 3. But both texts (Vāit. 7. 15; 28. 26: Kāuḍ. 87. 23; 88. 29, etc.) have a case of peculiar sandhi in the words pītrypavita and pītrypavītin.* Each text has once a nominative plur. in -ayās employed as accusative: Vāit. 11. 24, angusthaprabhṛtyayas tirsa uchrayet, he shall lift up the first three fingers beginning with the thumb; Kāuḍ. 8. 19, trayo-dacṣyādayas tiryo dadhimadhuni vāsāyitvā badhnāti, he ties on the amulet after having kept it in a mixture of sour milk and honey during the three nights beginning with the night of the thirteenth. The parallelism between prabhṛtyayas tirsa and -ādayas tirsa is hardly accidental. Both texts frequently introduce gloka-passages describing or complementing in metrical form what has been previously described or indicated in śūtras. So Vāit. 4. 23 and 9. 12 are introduced by tat api glokār vadatāḥ; 19. 20 and 20. 4 and 11 by tatra glokaḥ; 31. 15 by tat etac chikko bhāvadati; and Kāuḍ. 6. 34 by athā 'pi glokāu bhavatāḥ; 68. 35 by tatra glokāu; 74. 10 by tat api gloko vadatā. Both texts occasionally refer to the Brāhmaṇa with the phrase brāhmaṇoktam or iti brāhmaṇam; the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa is not the text referred to. So Vāit. 7. 25, brāhmaṇoktam agnypasthānam, 'the approach of the fire is described in the Brāhmaṇa;' 17. 11, brāhmaṇoktā iti anubrāhmaṇinaḥ, which Garbe translates, hesitatingly, 'the Anubrāhmaṇin employ the things prescribed in the Brāhmaṇa;' 31. 1, ... sattram upayanto brāhmaṇoktena dikṣeran, 'those entering upon a sattra shall consecrate themselves in the way described in the Brāhmaṇa;' so also the word brāhmaṇa in 49. 45. In the same way Kāuḍ. 6. 22, nā 'daksinain haviḥ kurvita: yah kurute kṛtyam atmanah kuruta iti brāhmaṇam; 80. 2, dahanidhānadege parivṛtiṇī nidhanakāla iti brāhmaṇoktam.† So also brāhmaṇoktam in 58. 3. The Vāitāṇa lapses into the broad brāhmaṇa-style at the end (43. 46): ya śnāt kalpāv adhīre ya u cāi iva veda tena sarvāṇi kṛtapāḥ śītan bhavati sarvāṇi ca kāman āṇoti. This occurs quite frequently in the Kāuḍika: e. g. the long passage 6. 23–28, 67. 3; and especially 73. 28. Both texts employ very frequently the expression mantrōtta, 'the person or thing mentioned in the mantra whose praśīka is cited.' So Vāit. 1. 14, śiṣṇvāli prāṅṣṭuka iti mantrōktāṃ, 'with the verse "O Śiṣṇvāli with the broad braids" he addresses the divinity mentioned in the mantra;' 5. 7, agnim acravatad ētī ... mantrōkte arañi gṛhnantān vācyatī. So also 11. 15; 30. 27; 31. 4. Very much more frequently this occurs in the Kāuḍika: e. g. yad yat kṛṣṇa iti mantrōktam, 'with the verse "whatever is black" he does what is stated in

* So also Gop. Br. i. 3. 12.
† Ātharvāṇiya-paddhāti: dahanasthāne vṛkṣavarjīte deṣe nidhanakāla iti brāhmaṇoktam.
the mantra,' i.e. he polishes the mortar and pestle. So also Kāṇṣ. 21. 11; 23. 14; 26. 14; 31. 17, 21; 32. 5, etc. Worthy of note also is the frequent employment of the solemn exclamation janañ in addition to bhūs, bhūvas, evār. According to the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa i. 1. 8, this is symbolic of the āṅgirasā, i.e. the Atharva-Veda. So Vāït. 1. 3, 18; 2. 1; 8. 3; 17. 4; 18. 17; 30. 15: Kāṇṣ. 3. 4; 55. 1; 69. 22; 70. 6; 90. 18; 91. 9, etc. Furthermore, the two texts share many technical terms, which are entirely restricted to the Atharvan-ritual or occur preponderatingly in it. So the purasūndhama and samsthitahama, an introductory and a final obliteration of melted butter, are peculiar to the Atharva-Veda. They occur also in the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa. The terms sarāpavatā, 'a cow with a calf of the same color as herself,' and its derivative sarāpavatām, 'milk from such a cow,' occur very frequently in the Kāṇṣika; the latter occurs also once in Vāït. 12. 14. The terms sampūta, 'dregs or residue of an offering,' and sampūtavant, though not restricted to the Atharva-Veda ritual—they occur also in Gobhila, and are explained in the Grhyasāṅgirāha i. 113—occur with especial frequency in the Kāṇṣika; in the Vāïtāna, 12. 14, we have once sampūtavant; sampūta occurs twice: 31. 25; 32. 7.* The term ṛtrīloṣṭa, 'natural lump of mud,'† occurs once in Vāït. 5. 12; it occurs very frequently in the Kāṇṣika, as will be seen below. The cāntyudaka occurs once (5. 10) in the Vāïtāna, but very frequently in the Kāṇṣika; the latter gives in the 9th chapter a full description of its preparation, which is expanded still further by the parāhatis.‡ The peculiar abstract rasaprāṇā, 'eating of broth,' occurs twice in the Vāïtāna (21. 20; 30. 6); once also in the Kāṇṣika (21. 19). The word purodāsa-saṇivartha in the sense of purodāsa-pinda occurs once in each text (Vāït. 22. 22: Kāṇṣ. 30. 17). Each text has once the dvandva yānasāravata (Vāït. 37. 26: Kāṇṣ. 83. 16). Further, the teachers mentioned in the Vāïtāna occur in the Kāṇṣika, and the designations of ganas, 'strings of hymns,' as also of single hymns of prominent character and wide application, and groups of verses, are essentially the same: the cāṇavāni, apāni sūktāni, gumbhunayobhā, and āpārdīya hymns, the gandhāpravādā, jīva, utdāpani verses occur in both texts: see below, p. 386. Finally, there are about sixty passages in the Vāïtāna, in which the ritual described shows a more or less close resemblance to performances in the Kāṇṣika; the resemblance sometimes amounts to absolute identity, and from that shades off to mere similarity in the arrangement of certain details, in the employment of hymns, etc.§

† Ṛtrīloṣṭa fol. 42r, l. 10 (to Kāṇṣ. 8. 10): ṛtrīloṣṭah keśtraloṣṭah.
‡ Cf. also Gop. Br. i. 2. 18.
§ The following is a concordance of these passages:
It would certainly be going too far to suppose that the Vālīnā has drawn upon the Kāṇḍikā for all these numerous correspondences; it is very probable that many of the Atharvan specialties of both texts were simply current in Atharvan-schools, in such a way that they would be at the bidding of the compiler of a religious manual at any time. So there are at present, as far as I know, no means of deciding whether or not the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa is anterior to the Vālīnā, in spite of the many correspondences, which in a number of places rise to absolute identity: Vātī. 2. 15 = 2. 15; Vātī. 3. 10 = 3. 10; Vātī. 3. 12: Gop. Br. i. 5. 21; Vātī. 3. 20: Gop. Br. ii. 1. 7; Vātī. 5. 10: Gop. Br. i. 2. 18; Vātī. 5. 18: Gop. Br. i. 2. 18; Vātī. 11. 1: Gop. Br. ii. 1. 16; Vātī. 12. 1: Gop. Br. i. 3. 22; Vātī. 16. 15: Gop. Br. i. 2. 12, etc. But in looking over the parallels between the Vālīnā and the Kāṇḍikā, it is found that the Vālīnā frequently exhibits a certain fact or series of facts in a fragmentary way, merely presenting sundry features of a group of facts, which the Kāṇḍikā exhibits apparently in full. This occurs in so marked a manner that the lesser bulk of the Vālīnā does not suffice to explain it away. The Vālīnā, for example, mentions teachers here and there: Kāṇḍikā, Yuven Kāṇḍikā, Bhāgali, Māthara, Čāunaka. There occurs in addition only the expression dārdyāh (1. 3; 5. 13; 7. 16), which Garbe, following a suggestion of Bühler’s, regards
as pluralis majestaticus, and translates by ‘my teacher.’ The
taça has all of these excepting the acaryā, and in addition
knows the following worthy: Garuḍa, Pārthastra, Kāṁka-
yana, Pārībhāvya, Jātiśākyā, Kārūrāthi, Gāṇapati and Deva-
ṛatana. The same superiority of the Kāṇḍika is exhibited in the
employment of gaṇas (hymn-lists) and verse-lists. The Vaiśāṇa
knows the following list of designations, which is approximately
exhaustive: the cūtāna, māṛṇāma, and vāstospatiya gaṇas, the
apāṁ sūktāni, the sampāta-hymns; the gāmbhīrayobhū-hymns,
the madhu-sūktā, the ūpapātiya-hymn, the sahasrabhū-hymn;
the jīva, the gāndhapravīda, the usthūpaṁ, and the ṛāṇi-verses.
The Kāṇḍika has all of these, excepting the designations madhu-
sūktā, sampāta, and sahasrabhū-sūktā; and in addition the
bṛhat and laṭhupāṇi-gaṇas, the salita-gaṇa, the abhaya-gaṇa,
the mṛgāra-sūktāni, the sūmanasayāṇi, sāṅgrāmikāni, and vār-
casyāṇi sūktāni; the caṇitīttā-hymn, the pumbhāni-hymn, the saṁ-
nati-verses, the anholingā-verses, the two verses called dig-yukte,
etc. etc. The parībhāṣā-sūtras for the Kāṇḍika proper are con-
tained in chapters 7 and 8; the first six chapters, treating the
darśapurāṇamāsa-ceremonies, I think can be proved to be of later
origin: or, at least, their conjunction with the parts following has
taken place after the bulk of the text was fixed. These parībhā-
śās find but little application in the Vaiśāṇa; but we have two of
the rules practically employed in 10.2 and 3: aratiyor iti yuvān
vyāsyamānan anvanyutrayate (Kāṇḍa. 8.12: aratiyor iti takṣati);
yat tvā chikva iti prakṣālyamānum (Kāṇḍa. 8.13: yat tvā chikva iti
prakṣālayati). The term ākṛtiolōta occurs but once in the Vai-
śāṇa; in the Kāṇḍika it occurs frequently (8.10; 21.2; 25.7;
37.8; 60.15; 89.11, etc.), and plays a prominent part in its prac-
tices, occurring frequently in connection with vālmiṅkaḷoṣṭa or vāl-
miṅkaṇvāpa, ‘lump of mud with ants,’ both of these are mentioned
in the parībhāṣā-sūtra 8.16 as pīnta, ‘holy.’ The pīntyudaka,
‘holy water,’ occurs once (8.10) in the Vaiśāṇa, in a passage
which in part refers to the Kāṇḍika; the latter devotes the ninth
chapter to a description of its preparation, and its application is
very common in the performances of the personal sacraments
(the saṁskāras). Again, both texts have the upavatayadḥakta,
‘fast-day-food, eaten on the day preceding solemn sacrifices;’ the
Kāṇḍika, 1.32, defines it as ‘diet from which honey, salt, meat,
and beans are excluded.’ And the sporadic occurrence in the
Vaiśāṇa of the terms sārāpavatasa and sampāta, which are so
characteristic of the Kāṇḍika, testifies to the fact that they are
taken from the ritual of that text.

There is, however, stronger evidence than this for the depend-
ence of the Vaiśāṇa upon the Kāṇḍika. In several passages, one
of which is especially important, the Vaiśāṇa refers to ritual
described in detail in the Kāṇḍika, indicating merely the first and
last traits of the performance: thus, Vaiś. 1.19, jīvāḥkīr ācanye
tyādviprapadanāntam, ‘he performs the rite at the beginning of
which he rinses his mouth, accompanying the act with utterance
of the jīvā-verse, and which ends with the propad-formula;" Kāññika 3. 4, jīvābhār ācāmyo potthāya vedaprapadbhī vi propadyo mata om propadye bhūvah propadye svah propadye janat propadya iti.* Again, Vāit. 11. 14: daksinena gniṁ kaśycetvādiśīraṇāntam, 'south of the fire he performs the rite which commences with the spreading of the cushion and ends with contemplation.' This refers to quite a long passage from the Kāññika, 24. 26–31. And in the same manner Vāit. 24. 3, apiṁ sūtār ityādypaṇpapānāntam, 'he performs the ceremony which begins with bathing, accompanied by the recitation of the hymns to the waters, and which ends with the touching of the water,' refers to Kāñ. 7. 14 and 140. 17. And Vāit. 24. 7, vi mūcāmityāmadarjānāntam, 'he performs the act which begins with the recital of the mantra vi mūcāmī and ends with the act of drying (the face),' refers to Kāñ. 6. 11–13.†

Sound as this evidence seems to be at first sight, I confess that I cannot regard it as a final proof that the Vāitäna has in such cases actually borrowed from the Kāññika. It might well be possible that we have here ritualistic acts common and familiar in the Atharvan schools reported independently by the two texts, and that it is due merely to difference of style and method that the Kāññika reports them in full, while the Vāitäna only sketches their outline. And it is worth noting that the Vāitäna never mentions the Kāññika as the source from which these outlines may be filled in. The much stronger evidence which the passage describing the pāntyudaka (5. 10) furnishes is therefore welcome. The passage reads: uṣasi pāntyudakam karoti cityādhibhir atharvanibhik kapurviparvavārodkāvṛkāvṛtāvānānānānāndahantibhir āngirasiḥ ca. Garbe finds himself unable to translate it, and remarks in the critical notes: "For this incurably corrupt passage the unanimous reading of all MSS. is given, as no explanation can be obtained from the Atharvanukramāṇi, out of which I have prepared an index of ṛṣis and devatas." Garbe is misled by the supposition that the words cityādhibhir atharvanibhik, and the corresponding passage ending with āngirasiḥ, refer to certain kinds of hymns. The meaning of the passage becomes clear in the light of the parībhasā-sūtra Kāñ. 8. 16: cīt-prāyaścitti-cāmi-}

* In the same manner the Vāitäna refers to practices which have been described in its own preceding chapters. So 15. 15, ācāmanādīvīkaṇāntam, 'he performs the rite which begins with the rinsing of the mouth and ends with the act of contemplation.' This refers back to Vāit. 1. 19.

† Noteworthy are three other passages, in which ritualistic practices are sketched in the same manner, by giving their initial and final traits; neither Garbe nor myself have found anything in other Vāitäna or Kāññika which fills in the outline. They are Vāit. 5. 12, aṅgirāśi tamātyāyā cānhānāntam; 10. 14, pācau ānayāśi tamātyāyā cānhānāntam; 16. 15, havir upavāraṇa ityādityāpano 'gnaśtoṇa ityāpanoḥ. Were there ever other ritualistic śūtra-collections in the Atharvan schools?

‡ Besides comments upon these words as follows: cīt-prāyaścitti śucaḥ prāyaścitti dānīvadah takhyam saśvavādāh khetadāh virājanāma śūtraśāntasūtrasūtraśāntadāh; metra prāyaścittiśceti; triṃśi triṃśi sāvāṇi parvanā śūḥ śalamejākara. I give the text without emending even the most obvious errors.
čamakā-savāṇā-śāmyavākā-tālācā-palāca-vācā-ciñcapā-śīmbula-śipuna-darbhā-"pāmūrgā"-kṛtiroṣa-valmiṅkavapā-dūrvīprāntavṛ-ḥi-yavāḥ pāṇīḥ. This is a list of articles, largely plants, which are considered as holy, and are therefore employed in the preparation of the āṃtyudaka, ‘the holy water.’ In the Vāitāna they are called āṭharaṇa, and are contrasted with the list following, which is called āṃgirasa. This does not occur in the Kāuḍika. In this case there can be no doubt that the Vāitāna, in abbreviating the first list, which does occur in the Kāuḍika, so as to say ‘with the articles citī etc.,’ and in giving in full the second list, which does not occur in the Kāuḍika,* confesses itself directly dependent on and later than the Kāuḍika.

We have finally a technical proof. Both texts follow the usual practice of citing the hymns belonging to the canon of their own school by their pratīkas. The Kāuḍika moreover follows the current method of giving in full any hymns or formules solennes which come from another pākhā of the same Veda, as well as from the other Vedas. The Vāitāna in general follows the same practice, with one very noticeable exception. Any hymn or formula which occurs in the Kāuḍika as well as in the Vāitāna is cited with the pratīka only, it matters not whether the hymn in question occur also in some other saṃhitā, or is, as seems often the case, the special property of the Kāuḍika, not to be found in any of the existing saṃhitās. An example or two may illustrate this statement.

The Taśṭṭirlīya-saṃhitā, iii. 2. 4. 4, has the formula: ahe dādhiśaṅayo ’d atas tistha ’nyasya sudane sida yo ’smat pākatarah. This is cited in full in the grānta-sūtra of the White Yajur Veda, Kāty. ii. 1. 22. So also Kauḍ. 3. 5; but Vaiṭ. 1. 20 has only the pratīka: ahe dādhisavaṇya.

Kauḍ. 6. 11 has a mantra, which Dūrīla designates as kalpaṇa, and which I have not been able to trace in any saṃhitā: vi muṇ-cāmi brahmaṇaḥ jātavedasan agnim hotuṁ ajarāṁ rathasmrtyam, etc. Vaiṭ. 24. 7 cites only the pratīka: vi muṇcāmi.

* One may venture to state that the āṃgirasa kalpa would bring some explanation of these obscure terms. Compare also Gop. Br. i. 2. 18.
ARTICLE XIII.

THE GREEK STAMPS

ON THE

HANDLES OF RHODIAN AMPHORÆ,
FOUND IN CYPRUS, AND NOW IN THE METROPOLITAN
MUSEUM OF NEW YORK.

BY PROF. ISAAC H. HALL,
OF NEW YORK CITY.

Presented to the Society May 8th, 1885.

Near an ancient artificial hill called Bamboula,* just outside
of Larnaka, in Cyprus, close to the ancient eastern port of
Citium, used to be found a number of handles of Rhodian
amphorae, with Greek stamps. Gen. di Cesnola found elsewhere
in Cyprus some thirty complete amphorae of the sort, all with
stamps on the handles; besides a number of handles that were
broken off. It is well known that such amphorae, from Rhodes,
Cnidus, and a few other places, were chiefly used as packing
cases; and they are often called "Rhodian casks," as those
from Cnidus are called "Cnidian casks." The height of these
Rhodian amphorae is about 2 feet 6 to 8 inches, and the largest
diameter from a foot to fifteen inches. They come nearly to a
point at the base; but instead of a point they end in a stout
cylinder, an inch or an inch and a half in diameter. The
handles are about ten inches high, and extend the whole length
of the neck. The mouth is about five inches in diameter.

In their present state, these amphorae could not hold water;
as it trickles through, after the manner of the unglazed coolers
of hot climates. They might hold oil, or wine, if coated on the
inside with pitch. But remains of figs and other fruit have
been found in them, and sometimes salt.

* The hill has recently been leveled to fill up a marsh, for sanitary purposes.
The stamps on the handles vary somewhat in their purport. Sometimes they have the name of the eponym, the name of the (Doric) month, the name of the manufacturer or owner, and an emblem; but they vary so much in the character of their legends that each amphora or handle must be taken by itself. The stamps on the New York objects are either circular or rectangular, but others occur of oval shape. As the general subject has been treated of in various works, I forbear lengthy comment, and give merely the inscriptions, with other special particulars. Where the stamps are impressed so that both can be read as right side up in one position, it is possible to speak of one handle as “right” and the other as “left;” but more frequently, when one is right side up to the spectator, the other is wrong side up. The handles bend above, at an angle either right or slightly acute; and on the top, at each side of the neck, are the stamps.

These stamps are sometimes quite easy to read, but generally somewhat difficult. The salmon-colored pottery of which they are made breaks with a conchoïdal or flint-like fracture; so that where a line or letter has been broken off (they are always in relief), its trace is generally left in the surface. The following are the stamps; designating the amphora by their present numbers in the Metropolitan Museum of Art.

No. 5055. Rectangular stamps. Raised straight lines between the lines of characters. Right hand stamp, \( \frac{1}{4} \times \frac{1}{4} \) inch. Letters, \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high; in 3 lines.

\[ \begin{align*}
\text{ΑΝΔΡΩΒΟΥ} & | \text{ΛΟΥ} | \text{ΕΠΙ} \ \Theta \varepsilon | \text{ΡΣΑΝΔΡΟΥ}
\end{align*} \]

Name of maker or owner, and eponym.

Left hand: stamp of same dimensions. Letters, \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high; in 2 lines. At end of second line is a little square with diagonals.

\[ \begin{align*}
\text{TAKIN} & | \Theta \Iota \text{T} \quad \text{Name of Doric month.}
\end{align*} \]

All the nouns are in the genitive; that of the eponym, after \( \iota \nu \iota \).

No. 5047. Rectangular stamps; no proper right or left.

a. Stamp \( \frac{1}{4} \times \frac{1}{4} \) inch. Letters, \( \frac{1}{4} \) to \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high; in 3 lines.

\[ \begin{align*}
\text{ΕΠΙ ΧΡΥΣ} | \text{ΣΑΟΝΟΣ ΤΑΚ} | \text{ΙΟΗΙΟΙ} \quad \text{Eponym, and name of Doric month. Here, as in most cases, the } \Theta \text{ has a dot for the cross-bar. One } \Lambda \text{ has a straight cross-bar; the other, one of V-form. Where not otherwise indicated, the spaces between the words are of my own making. Where dots are printed between the words, they are present on the stamp.}
\end{align*} \]

b. Stamp \( \frac{3}{4} \times \frac{1}{4} \) inch. Symbol that is probably the prow of a ship. Letters, \( \frac{3}{4} \) to \( \frac{3}{4} \) inch high; in 2 lines.

\[ \begin{align*}
\Delta \Lambda \ \Delta \text{ΙΟΤΡΕΦ} | \text{ΟΤΣ} \quad \text{Maker’s or exporter’s name, in genitive after } \delta \iota \alpha \
\end{align*} \]

No. 5050. Rectangular stamps; no right or left.

a. Stamp \( \frac{1}{4} \times \frac{1}{4} \) inch. Letters, \( \frac{1}{4} \) inch high; in 2 lines, faint and difficult.
Greek Stamps on Rhodian Amphora.

ΕΠΙ ΦΙΑΛΑΡΧΟΤ | ΠΕΔΑΙΓΕΙΝΙΟΤ
Eponym, and name of Doric month.

b. Stamp 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) \(\times\) \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 1 line; thick and strong.

ΔΗΜΑΡ[ΧΟΤ] Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5045. Rectangular stamps.
Right: 1\(\frac{3}{4}\) \(\times\) \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{2}\) inch high; in 2 lines.
ΜΕΝΕΣΘΕΝΣ | ΣΜΙΝΘΙΟΤ Name of maker, and of Doric month.
Left: 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) \(\times\) \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch. One line of letters, \(\frac{1}{2}\) inch high.
ΕΠΙ ΑΑΜΑΙΝΕΤΟΤ Εponym.
In top right-hand corner, a symbol that was probably a bull's head; but it may have been a bird.

No. 5046. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.

a. 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) \(\times\) \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 1 line. Below, an anchor for symbol.

ΔΡΑΚΟΝΤΙΔΑ Owner's or maker's name.

b. 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) \(\times\) \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{2}\) to \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 2 lines.
At the top on the right, the clay was disturbed after stamping, obscuring part of the line. Also, the stamp was either moved or applied twice, making other portions difficult. In the name of the month the N is reversed.

[ΕΠΙ] ΑΡΧΕΜ | ΗΡΟΤΟΤ | ΠΑΝΑΜΟΤ
Eponym, and name of Doric month.

No. 5051. Rectangular stamps.
Right: 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) \(\times\) \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) to \(\frac{1}{2}\) inch high; confused and obscured; in 3 lines.
ΕΠΙ ΕΛΑΧΕ | ΙΝΟΤ ΠΥΝ | ΤΟΜΑ
Eponym, with name of Doric month. In line 2 the Α is upside down, and line 3 is turned boustrphedon.
Left: 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) \(\times\) \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch. Letters, thick, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 1 line.
ΑΡΤΙΜΑ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5041. Circular stamps. No right or left.

a. 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) inch outer diameter. Letters, \(\frac{1}{2}\) inch high; in circle. In the centre, the conventional symbolic rose.
ΠΠΟΚΡΑΤΕΤΣ Owner's or maker's name.

b. 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) inch outer diameter. Letters, in circle; \(\frac{1}{2}\) inch high.
Conventional rose in the centre.
ΕΠΙ ΕΝΩΟΝΑΝΤΟΤ ΑΡΤΑΜΙΙΟΤ
Eponym, with name of Doric month.

No. 5060. Circular stamps, each 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) inch in outer diameter. No right or left. Inside of each, the conventional rose. Letters, in circles; \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high.

a. ΠΠΟΚΡΑΤΕΤΣ Owner's or maker's name.
b. ΕΠΙ ΘΕΑΙΔΗΝΟΤ ΠΑΝΑΜΟΤ
Eponym, with Doric month.
No. 5058. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.

a. $1\frac{3}{4} \times 1\frac{1}{4}$ inch. Emblem, a long spit or obelus, with an object at the point like an uncial or manuscript omega, probably a double hook (flesh-hook or grapple?), and a lapidary Σ at the handle. Below, 1 line of letters, $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high, confused by applying the stamp more than once.

ΔΡΑΚΩΝΙΑΔΑ Owner's or maker's name.

ς δ. $1\frac{3}{8} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. Three lines of letters; letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high. Of last line, only the tops of the letters are impressed.

ΕΠΙ ΑΠΙΣΤ | ΠΑΧΟΥ | ΣΜΙΝΘΙΟΥ
Eponym, with Doric month. In line 2, the P and A are transposed, as here copied.

No. 5052. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.

a. $1\frac{3}{4} \times 1$ inch. Letters in two lines; $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high.

ΕΠΙ ΑΙΣΧΙΝΑ | ΑΡΤΑΜΙΤΙΟΥ
Eponym, and name of Doric month.

ς δ. $1\frac{1}{4} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. One line of letters; above, a thyrsus for the symbol.

ΣΤΑΣΙΚΑΤΣΕ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5061. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.

a. $1\frac{3}{4} \times \frac{3}{4}$ inch. Letters in 2 lines, $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high. At end of line 2, emblem, probably a pomegranate and its twig.

ΠΟΛΤΑΡΑ | ΤΟΥ Owner's or maker's name.

ς δ. $1\frac{3}{8} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. Three lines; letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high. Part of line 1 obliterated.

ΕΠΙ . . . ΔΑΤ | ΕΡΩΤΙΔΑΣ | ΠΑΝΑΜΟΥ
Eponym, probably with patronymic, and name of Doric month.

No. 5057. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.

a. $1\frac{3}{4} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. Letters in 3 lines; $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high; a little confused by stamping more than once.

ΕΠΙ ΑΠΙΣΤΑ | ΝΟΤ | ΤΑΙΝΘΙΟΥ
Eponym, and name of Doric month.

ς δ. $1\frac{3}{4} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. Letters in 1 line; $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high. Below, emblem of a thyrsus.

ΕΤΚΑΙΤΙΟΥ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5039. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.

a. $1\frac{3}{4} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. Letters in 3 lines; $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high.

ΕΠΙ ΤΙΜΑ | ΤΟΠΑ | ΔΑΙΙΟΥ
Eponym, and name of Doric month.

ς δ. $1\frac{3}{4} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. Letters in 2 lines; $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high. Below, a symbol, probably the prow of a ship.

ΝΟΜΑΡΙ | ΟΤ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5063. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.

a. $1\frac{3}{4} \times \frac{3}{8}$ inch. Letters, 1 line; $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high. Below, emblem of thyrsus; and bunch of grapes, with leaves.

ΜΙΑΔΑ Owner's or maker's name.

ς δ. $1\frac{1}{4} \times \frac{3}{4}$ inch. Letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high; in 2 lines. Emblem
difficult to make out, but most like a thick amphora pierced by a feathered arrow.

ΕΠΙ ΑΡΙΣΤΟ | ΓΕΝΕΤ Eponym. As the whole stamp is not impressed, it would seem that a third line contained the name of the month.

No. 5043. Rectangular stamps.
Right: 1\(\frac{3}{4}\) x \(\frac{1}{2}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) to \(\frac{1}{8}\) inch high; in 3 lines, the last very poorly impressed.
ΕΠΙ ΕΡΜΟΥΣ | ΑΛΕΞΙΔΑ | ΑΓΡΙΑΝΙΟΥ Eponym, with patronymic, and name of Doric month.
Left: same stamp as No. 5058, a.

No. 5065. Rectangular stamps.
Right: 1\(\frac{1}{2}\) x \(\frac{3}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{8}\) to \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; 2 lines, emblem of a trident.
ΗΦΑΙΣΤΗ | ΩΝΟΣ Owner's or maker's name.
Left: 1\(\frac{3}{4}\) x \(\frac{3}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 4 lines.
ΕΠΙ ΑΝΘΟΠΟΙΟ | ΝΕΤΣ | ΔΕΥΤΕΡΟΥ | ΠΑΝΑΜΟΥ Eponym, with name of Doric (intercalary) month.

No. 5044. Rectangular stamps.
Right: 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) x \(\frac{1}{2}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) to \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 3 lines.
ΕΠΙ ΔΑΜΑΙ | ΝΕΜΟΥ | ΑΓΡΙΑΝΙΟΥ Eponym, and name of Doric month.
Left: 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) x \(\frac{1}{8}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; one line. Above, emblem of thyrsus.

ΙΜΑ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5053. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.
a. Same stamp as No. 5063, a.
b. 1\(\frac{3}{4}\) x \(\frac{1}{8}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 3 lines.
ΕΠΙ ΑΡΙΣΤΟ | ΓΕΝΕΤΣ | ΠΑΝΑΜΟΥ Eponym, with name of Doric month.

No. 5067. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.
a. 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) x \(\frac{1}{8}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) to \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 3 lines.
ΕΠΙ ΣΩΣΙ | ΚΛΕΥΣ | ΠΑΝΑΜΟΥ Eponym, and name of Doric month.
b. 1\(\frac{3}{4}\) x \(\frac{1}{8}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) to \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 1 line. Below, a thyrsus for emblem.
ΣΤΑΣΙΟΚΟΥ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5054. Rectangular stamps. No right or left.
a. Same as No. 5063, a.
b. 1\(\frac{3}{4}\) x \(\frac{1}{8}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in 3 lines.
ΕΠΙ ΑΡΙΣ | ΤΟΚΛΕΟΥΣ | ΑΡΤΑΜΙΤΙΟΥ Eponym, with name of Doric month.

No. 5066. Rectangular stamps.
Right: 1\(\frac{1}{4}\) x \(\frac{3}{4}\) inch. Letters, \(\frac{1}{4}\) inch high; in one line. At end, a wreath, apparently of olive.

ΑΜΥΝΤΑ Owner's or maker's name.
I. II. Hall,

Left: 1\frac{1}{4} \times \frac{3}{4} inch. Letters, \frac{1}{2} to \frac{3}{8} inch high; in 3 lines.

EΠΠ ΕΝΟΣ | οςΤΟC | ΤΑΚΙΝΘΙΟΤ
Eponym, and name of Doric month. The omega and sigma in line 2 are of uncial form.

No. 5050. Circular stamps, poorly impressed, and circumference not on the clay. Conventional rose in centre of each. Letters, \frac{1}{8} inch high.

a. EΠΠ AMπΙΑΟΧΟΤ (but instead of AO it is almost as easy to read AP). Eponym. Part of the stamp is illegible.
b. Only Δ*ΜΑΡ is visible, and that not certain.

No. 5062. Rectangular stamps.
Right: 1\frac{1}{4} \times \frac{3}{8} inch. Letters, \frac{1}{8} to \frac{3}{16} inch high; in 3 lines, partly illegible.

EΠΠ . . . . . Α | ΘΙ . . . ΔΕΤΕΡΟΥ | ΠΑΝΑΜΟΥ
Eponym, with name of Doric (intercalary) month.
Left: 1\frac{5}{8} \times \frac{1}{8} inch. Letters, \frac{1}{8} to \frac{1}{4} inch high; in one line. Also, emblem, probably a ship's prow.

ΚΑΛΛΙΟΝΟΣ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5042. Circular stamps, each 1\frac{1}{4} inch in diameter; with conventional rose in the centre. Letters, \frac{1}{8} inch high.

a. EΠΠ ΤΙΜΑΣΑΓΟΡΑ ΠΑΝΑΜΟΥ
Eponym, with Doric month.
b. EΠΠ ΦΙΑΟΚΡΑΤΕΤΣ
Also an eponym, in form.

Not numbered, 1. Circular stamps; one all gone except some unintelligible traces. The other too faint to do more with than read the name in the circle (whose diameter cannot be determined).

EΠΠ ΦΙΑΟΚΡΑΤΕΤΣ
(Nothing but a point or boss in the centre.)
Eponym. The epsilon has the uncial form.

Not numbered, 2. Circular stamps, each 1\frac{1}{4} inch in diameter, and with conventional rose in centre. Letters, \frac{1}{8} inch high.

a. ΑΝΓΟΞΠΙΠΙΙΙΑ Owner's or maker's name.
b. EΠΠ ΛΕΟΝΤΙΑ ΑΑΜΟΚΑ
Eponym, with perhaps the father's name added.

No. 5049. Rectangular stamps, each 1\frac{1}{4} \times \frac{3}{4} inch.
Right: Letters, \frac{1}{8} to \frac{3}{8} inch high; in 2 lines. Upper line only partly impressed; and ends of the lines obscure.
AΠΙΑΙΝΟΥ | EΠΠ ΦΙΑΟΔΑΜ[Α]
Eponym, with name of Doric month preceding.
Left: ΦΙΑΙΝΙΟΤ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5048. Circular stamps, almost like those of No. 5050.

a. Rose in centre; letters illegible.
b. EΠΠ AMΦΙΑΟΧΟΤ Eponym. The name of the month was probably there, but is now illegible. Letters of the uncial type.
Greek Stamps on Rhodian Amphoroe.

No. 5059. Rectangular stamps.
Left: $\frac{1}{2} \times \frac{3}{4}$ inch. Letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high; in 3 lines.
Stamp impressed more than once, making the reading difficult.
$\text{ΑΤΤΩΚΡΑ | ΤΕΥΣ | ΤΑΚΙΝΘΙΟΣ}$ (or perhaps the last letter is $\Upsilon$, but $\Sigma$ is the apparent reading in the present confusion).
Eponym, with name of Doric month; and the latter in the nominative, if the apparent reading is correct.
Right: $1\frac{1}{8} \times 1\frac{1}{4}$ inch. Letters, $\frac{1}{2}$ inch high; in one line; with emblem, a bunch of grapes (or ear of grain?).
$\text{ΣΤΑΧΥΟΣ}$ Owner's or maker's name.

No. 5040. Rectangular stamps, each $1\frac{1}{2} \times \frac{5}{8}$ inch.
Right: Letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high; in one line; beginning destroyed by disturbance of the clay before baking. Emblem, a dolphin and a pomegranate.
$[\text{ΗΙΓ}|\text{ΗΕΙΠΠΟΣ}$ Owner's or maker's name, in the nominative.
Left: Letters, $\frac{1}{6}$ inch high; in 3 lines.
$\text{ΕΠΙ ΦΙΛΑΣΩ | ΓΟΡΑ | ΠΑΝΑΜΟΤ}$
Eponym, with name of Doric month.

Those that follow are upon broken-off handles.
1. Circular, $1\frac{1}{4}$ inch in diameter. Rose in centre. Letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high.
$\text{ΕΠΙ ΖΕΝΟΠΑΝΤΟΤ ΣΜΙΝΘΙΟΤ}$
Eponym, and Doric month.
On the side of the handle is a small square stamp with the letter $\text{Β}$, $\frac{1}{16}$ inch high, made with straight lines and angles, instead of curves.

2. Rectangular, $1\frac{5}{8} \times \frac{1}{4}$ inch. Symbol at one end, a double cornucopia, or else the double pileus of the Dioscuri. Below, a bipennis. Letters, $\frac{1}{4}$ inch high; in one line.
$\text{ΜΙΝΟΘΕΜΙΟΣ}$ Owner's or maker's name.

3. Rectangular, $2 \times \frac{1}{4}$ inch. Symbol like the fluke of a modern anchor. Letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{3}{8}$ inch high; in 2 lines.
$\text{ΗΡΑΚΛΕ | οΝΟΣ}$ Owner's or maker's name.
The $\text{omeg}$ is of the uncial form, but upside down.

4. Circular, $1\frac{1}{4}$ inch in diameter, with conventional rose within.
Letters, $\frac{1}{8}$ inch high.
$\text{ΔΑΜΟΚΡΑΤΕΣ}$ Owner's or maker's name.

5. Circular, $\frac{3}{8}$ inch in diameter; only a point or boss in centre. Uncial characters. Probably the same stamp as the first of the non-numbered amphorae preceding.
$\text{ΕΠΙ ΦΙΛΟΚΡΑΤΕΣ}$
Eponym.

The style of the letters on the stamps is not modern, nor extremely ancient. More commonly the ends of the strokes have cross-pieces, like our ordinary capitals. Uncial and lapidary forms occur together; frequently on the same stamp. One in-
stance above has a specimen of boustrophedon; but that is no indication of antiquity when on a stamp. The letters are generally of elegant form. In the case of the alpha, the straight and the V-shaped cross-bar occur in the same stamp.

The Doric genitive in -α appears frequent; and the termination in -ευς appears also as a genitive.

A majority of the twelve (or thirteen) Doric month-names appear on these stamps. The same maker's or owner's name, and the same stamp, appear in conjunction with different eponyms, on different amphorae. As to age, I can scarcely conjecture; but it would seem that most of the amphorae were neighbors, both in age and in place of manufacture.
AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY.

Proceedings at New Haven, October 23d, 1878.

The autumn meeting was held, as usual, in the Library of the Divinity School, the President in the chair. The Recording Secretary being absent, his duties were performed by the Librarian and Treasurer.

On the recommendation of the Directors, the following persons were elected Corporate Members of the Society:

Mr. Henry Johnson, of Brunswick, Me.;
Mr. William O. Sproul, of Cincinnati, O.

Communications were presented as follows:
1. On certain Sepulchral Monuments of Southern India, by Prof. John Avery, of Brunswick, Me.

There are found in various parts of Europe, in northern Africa, and in western Asia, certain ancient stone monuments of peculiar construction. They are built of enormous slabs or boulders of uncut stone, weighing in some instances hundreds of tons, and poised upon one another with incredible labor. There is an almost complete absence of inscriptions or other marks upon them by which their builders might be identified. That they were designed to mark the resting places of the dead, and were not temples of the Druids, as many early observers supposed, is not doubtful. In the silence of history, and of all but the faintest tradition regarding their age and the men who raised them, our best evidence is their contents. These are, besides burnt and unburnt human remains, pottery—mostly of a rude pattern—stone, flint, and iron implements, and in a few cases coins of Roman emperors. The latter, if not secondary deposits, prove the comparatively recent construction of some of the monuments.

As we go eastward from Syria and Carchemish these megalithic remains abruptly cease, and are replaced in the broad tract between Arabia and Eastern Iran by microlithic structures. When, however, we reach the valley of the Culub, the western forms reappear; and if we cross the Indus, and pass to the south of the Vindhya range, we come upon a region where all the principal varieties of megalithic remains occurring in Europe may be counted by hundreds. The resemblance is not merely general, but embraces small details of form and contents. Besides the question of their age and builders, this unexpected and striking coincidence raises the inquiry whether the men who built the Indian monuments were kindred to those who constructed similar tombs in the West. In reply to the first question it may be said that the Aryan Indians did not build them, for no remains of the sort are found in the region longest occupied by them. We must conclude, then, either that the present natives of southern India are the descendants of the dolmen-builders, or that the credit of their construction belongs to some prior population which has since disappeared. But as there is no evidence from other sources of such an earlier settlement, we regard the first supposition as more probable. In confirmation of this view, it appears that some of the rude tribes among the mountains at the present day, not only connect their funeral rites with the ancient monuments but construct new ones of the patterns which are believed to be the latest-developed of the series, namely, the open dolmen and the stone
circles. In some instances a long stone placed in the dolmen suffices to represent the deceased. In regard to age, if these examples are a genuine survival of a wide-spread custom, we must believe that the monuments represent an unbroken series running back from the present to a past of which we cannot assign a limit. Whether there is any family connection between the builders of these monuments and those of the West cannot be confidently decided, but the indications of it deserve attention. The agreement in peculiar details of construction and mode of burial, which could hardly have been accidental; the probable immigration of the Dravidians from central Asia and the existence of similar remains in the Kabul valley; the affinity of the south-Indian languages to those of the Turanian family; and the hints that members of this family settled Europe before the arrival of the Aryans, are suggestions of a connection which future researches may develop into certainty.

Dr. Ward added remarks on similar monuments in Palestine.

2. On Tentative Linguistic Forms, by Prof. C. R. Lanman, of Baltimore, Md.

Professor Lanman pointed out that a schematic or tabled statement of the inflective forms of a language generally represents all forms as equally common and definite. In fact, however, some cases are of exceedingly infrequent occurrence. Thus, the dative plural neuter of the Sanskrit å-declension occurs but once in the whole Rig-Veda, while the nominative singular masculine occurs over 10,000 times.

A systematic collection of all the forms of noun-infection in the Rikasamhita shows that in the most rarely occurring cases there is often a corresponding uncertainty respecting the form. In some instances, where a very unfamiliar form is required by the circumstances, or by the needs of grammatical concord, the difficulty is evaded outright, by making, for example, a masculine adjective agree with a neuter noun. In other instances, we see attempts to make the form in accordance with one or another analogy of the language; but one poet makes it in one way, and another in another.

These phenomena of uncertain and wavering linguistic usage may be properly termed tentative linguistic forms. Thus, there is occasion for the use of the nominative-accusative singular neuter of stems in æ about nine times in the Rig-Veda; and, as it would seem, there are three and perhaps four different forms, or attempts to make case-forms to meet the emergency. Each of these trial-forms was equally well adapted for the expression of the relation intended; each was doubtless equally well understood; and each is the result of an individual act of human attribution. As time went on, one form became generally accepted, to the exclusion of the others. Here then we see an illustration of the fact that language is as it is "by convention" rather than "by nature," as well in the domain of infection as in that of name-giving.

3. On Female Education and the Legal Position of Women in China, with a translation of a Chinese primer for girls, by Prof. S. Wells Williams, of New Haven.

This communication was designed to show that the highest education which could be obtained had always been as open among the Chinese for girls as for boys, and that the laws of the land had distinctly defined the legal rights of women. It gave an extract from Luhchau, a modern writer on female education, describing the plan adopted in the twelfth century before Christ for teaching the ladies in the palace their lessons; and introduced several references from the Book of Odes, indicating the condition of women in those periods of Chinese history. One of these extracts showed their equality with their husbands; another their privilege in time of harvest to glean in the fields; and a third the refusal of a lady of high rank to fulfill a betrothal, because her fiance had not sent all the required presents and paid her all the respect that etiquette required.

From these scattered notices it could be seen that the legal standing of women, especially their marital rights as now defined in the Ta Tsing Liu-hii or Statutes of the present Manchu dynasty, was greatly owing to the teachings of those early
times. Stress was laid on the equal position of the wife and mother in the ancestral worship as tending to maintain their rights in society in those relations; and a synopsis of those rights was given, taken from chapters 100 to 117 inclusive. These chapters contain rules to be observed in contracting and completing a marriage, reasons for divorces, list of marriages which are per se null, and penalties for false or forced marriages.

The existence of many works specially designed for teaching women was referred to, and an extended notice of one authoress given. This was Pan Hwuipan, sister of Pan Ku, historian of the Early Han dynasty, whose unfinished annals she completed about A.D. 60, after his death. Her treatise on female education was written for the young empress, whom the emperor Ho espoused and committed to her training. It has been the model and incentive for after writers, both male and female, who have extended the range and number of works specially designed for the benefit of young ladies. One of these writers, named Luhchau, was prefect of Canton, and in his Female Instructor, written in 1712, he pays a high compliment to the Lady Pan's treatise. One mode of honoring the memory of distinguished women common among the Chinese—that of erecting honorary gateways of carved stone and placing them in thoroughfares and cities, with suitable inscriptions—was adverted to as a proof of the regard paid to the sex.

These remarks were preliminary to the main part of the paper, which was a translation of the primer entitled the Nü-yüeh Yü, or Words for Women and Girls. It was printed anonymously in 1838, and without any preface, by a book-store called the Evening Incense Arbor, well-known perhaps to those who are conversant with Chinese publishers; but no town is mentioned. It has 228 lines, evenly in tetrameters, containing 267 characters; and as many of them are repeated, the labor of memorizing the whole primer is not very great, and is much aided by the rhetorical form. Its instruction is chiefly moral, beginning with household duties, and proceeding thence to advice concerning frugality, hospitality, and the respect due to seniors and a husband's relatives. The obedience due to him and his parents is insisted on, and then directions follow as to the proper mode of governing a family, the nurture of children, and conduct towards neighbors and friends. The little book closes with a comparison between the discreet, courteous, and educated mother and wife, and the slatternly gad-about, who is disliked and despised by everybody.

4. On the Dispersion of the Semitic Peoples, by Prof. T. C. Murray, of Baltimore, Md.

The object of the paper was to present the philological evidence as to the home and the dispersion of the Semitic peoples. 1. North Semitic. The dialects of the North Semitic peoples seemed to point to a common place of departure—the lower Euphrates valley, in whose neighborhood they for a time dwelt together. Their successive emigrations, as reflected in their dialects, were discussed at some length. 2. South Semitic. The philological evidence of the South Semitic, sifted in a similar manner, was found to indicate that northern Arabia was their common centre. 3. The comparison of the two branches of the language was minutely traced up, and it was concluded that the linguistic evidence gives us ground to believe that Arabia was the immediate home of this family of languages, and that in the classical Arabic we have, on the whole, the fairest representative of the original Semitic speech.

5. On the Relation in the Rig-Veda between the Palatal and Labial Vowels (i, I, u, u) and their corresponding Semivowels (y, v), by Mr. A. H. Edgren, of New Haven.

Dr. Edgren began with pointing out the difference between the Vedic dialect and the classical Sanskrit in regard to the treatment and occurrence before dissimilar vowels of i, u or y, v: the semivowels being alone found (by conversion or otherwise) in the classical language, but the two vowels being of very frequent occurrence, as proved by metrical evidence, in the Veda. There seems to be, at first glance, a great confusion and lawlessness in the use of either in the Rig-Veda, but a careful examination of the whole field shows beyond doubt that,
whatever share arbitrary usage and corruption of the texts may have in the varied occurrence of vowel or semivowel, it is in the main of organic nature, and gives additional support to the theory that the semivowels in question are only later developments of the more primitive vowels i and u, and that we meet in the Rig-Veda with a transitional state. Dr. Edgeree then tried to demonstrate by an exhaustive statistical account of all cases in the Rig-Veda in which i, t, u, & or y, u occur before vowels, that the more primitive sounds had been retained as a rule, or prevailingly, wherever they occurred at the end of a word or stem, and thus helped to preserve the individuality of the word; and, on the other hand, that the semivowels are found to prevail in all combinations the original independence and significance of which were dimmed and forgotten (as in derivative and especially inflectional suffixes, and in radical elements). The whole subject was considered under three different heads: 1. The treatment of final i, t, u, ū of words or themes before dissimilar vowels; 2. the occurrence of i or y, u or v in formative elements; and 3. their occurrence in the radical part of the word.

1. In the collocation of words in sentences, i and u are retained almost without exception. In 1294 verses chosen from all the Manadhas, i and u occur together 391 times, y and u only 6 times (in pāti, āwe, adhāhe). An examination of a number of other passages confirmed the fact that only a few such less independent words as prepositions have begun to show a tendency to convert into a semivowel the final i or u before a dissimilar vowel. In compounds the case is nearly the same. Final i and u occur altogether in 553 instances, but their corresponding semivowels only 52 times; and it is especially the prepositions aśi, abhi which convert their vowels. Two words (gāyati, rājya) occur not less than 39 times of the 52, but at least the former of them (gāyati) is of doubtful formation. In noun-stems ending in ā, ē, ū or ū, the i (i) is retained in 392 instances, but consonantized in 240 instances; and the u (a) is retained 286 times, but consonantized 241 times (chiefly, or 110 times, in the two forms mādhas, vācās). If each stem alone be considered, the difference in the occurrence of vowel or semivowel is much more marked, the vowel (i or u) being found then about twice as often as the semivowel. In both cases, the final long vowel is preserved more tenaciously than the short: the ã-stems, indeed, never consonantizing û before a vowel-ending; and further, thematic i (i) is found to occur mostly after a long, and y after a short syllable. In verb-roots the final i- and u-vowels are generally combined with the following vowel through the medium of guṇa-strengthening or the insertion of a semivowel, less frequently by conversion of the final. The vowel i is retained in 51 instances, the vowel u never.

2. Of the formative elements, the derivative suffixes were taken up first; and of them the suffix -i(-ya) is by far the most frequent. The form -i occurs 2033 times, and -ya 1628 times. There are 47 words which are found in different passages with both forms, -i and -ya, but as a rule these show very prevailingly one of the forms (in two thirds of the cases it is -i), and the exceptionally used termination is in one half of the instances a ārāj kesabhavn. In connection with these statistics were considered certain attendant phenomena helping to prove that the occurrence of -i or -ya is not arbitrary, but depends on the organism of the word. Thus -i is found with very few exceptions wherever the suffix has the circumflex. Further, a long syllable is followed in 189 simple words (in 41 of which the suffix has the circumflex) by -i, and in only 37 simple words (all without the circumflex) by -ya. A short syllable is followed in 85 simple words (in 45 of which the suffix has the circumflex) by -i, and in 98 simple words (in 12 of which the suffix has the circumflex) by -ya. Finally, in regard to their derivation, words clearly derived from a theme in -a (as gāni from gāna) take almost invariably the suffix-form -i. Of 110 such derivatives, there are only 8 absolute exceptions to the rule. Next in order, all the other formative suffixes containing an i or y or u or v were considered, and it was shown that the concurrent phenomena of a preceding long or short syllable and a subsequent vowel or semivowel respectively is clearly traceable everywhere, more absolutely so in regard to u, v than in regard to ē, y. In decisiunl endings the vowel i is found altogether 128 times, and the semivowel y nearly 4800 times. Even here the preservative influence of a preceding long syllable seems traceable, the vowel occurring in 123 instances (out of 128) after a long
syllable. In verb-infection, the semivowels are found almost exclusively, the exceptions being: ts as a class-sign 5 times, as a tense-sign once, in optatives 96 times; s(a) in a class-sign 8 times, in a personal ending 12 times, and in various forms of the root dhau (perhaps as a class-sign) 14 times.

Finally, the occurrence of the vowels or semivowels in question in roots or in the radical part of words was considered; and it was shown that the semivowels are found with comparatively few exceptions (chiefly tua- and siar) in the great mass of such words. The exceptions are: ts in verb-roots 27 times, in pronominal roots 29 times, in more uncertain combinations 11 times; s once doubtfully in the verb-root man, in pronominals several hundred times, owing to the frequency of the form tua-, in more uncertain combinations 244 times, mainly in the word siar (233 times) and its compounds.

6. On the Vedic Compounds having an apparent Genitive as prior member; by Mr. Maurice Bloomfield, of Baltimore, Md.; presented by Prof. Lanman.

There are in the Rig-Veda seven compound nouns, the second part of which is the noun pātī: namely, gnd'a-pātī with its feminine gnd'a-pāntī, jdt'a-pātī with the abstract jānapayī, br'has-pātī, rūhās-pātī, viṇās-pātī, gubhās-pātī, sīdas-pātī. It is seen that in every case the first part of the compound ends in s, and that they have double accent. By looking at the connections and surroundings of these compounds, it will likewise appear that they are old formations. For instance, gubhās-pātī occurs 17 times in five books, always as epithet of the Arvī, viṇās-pātī is not only used to designate 'tree,' but also has the meaning of 'sacrificial post,' 'pole of a wagon,' in dual 'mortar and pestle,' etc., which can only be explained by assuming that the meanings of the component parts had quite faded out when the words were thus used. Gnd'a-pātī and gnd'a-pāntī are evidently old; they occur only in connection with Tvashtar, and such a feminine as gnd'a-pāntī would be impossible from a newly-coined word. These compounds have been most commonly explained by regarding some of them as genitive compounds and the rest as formed with s by false analogy. This is not satisfactory; for there are no genitive compounds in the Veda, and it would be hard to assume such with pātī alone. Besides, that would not account for the double accent. Other explanations are still less to be approved. I suggest hesitatingly: 1. that the s before pātī as well as the difficult s of desēnēx and desēnoi, which I would connect with gnd'a-pātī and gnd'a-pāntī, be explained as a trace of pada, a more ancient form of the root pd; 2. that the double accent be regarded as an attempt on the part of the compilers of the Veda to account for the s. In connection with this it will be well to remember that the compilers have constantly mistaken stokē for u and lokē, even where this division would place the enclitic at the beginning of a pada; also the very faint traces which are found of the fuller form of the root kara, namely, sār. Besides this, the assumption of the root pada as an older form of pd would furnish us with the simple root from which pada is formed by the root-determinative k, like dark (drē) from dar. To this the meaning of pd is also favorable, if we simplify the common signification of protect' into overlook,' 'oversee.' It would also account for the fact that two roots pd, often coinciding in form, have meanings so hard to bring together as 'drink' and 'protect.'

After the reading of these communications, the Society adjourned.
American Oriental Society:

Proceedings at Boston, May 21st, 1879.

The Society assembled as usual, in the American Academy's library, Dr. N. G. Clark, Vice-President, in the chair.

The Treasurer reported the receipts and expenditures of the year to be as follows:

**RECEIPTS.**

Balance on hand, May 29th, 1878, - - - - - $1,502.19
Annual assessments paid in, - - - - - $430.00
Sale of the Journal, - - - - - 18.75
Interest on deposit in Savings bank, - - - - - 74.03
Total receipts of the year, - - - - - $2,024.97

**EXPENDITURES.**

Printing of Journal and Proceedings, - - - - - $655.87
Paper, - - - - - 151.90
Current expenses of Library and Correspondence, - - - - - 19.60
Total expenditures of the year, - - - - - $827.27
Balance on hand, May 21st, 1879, - - - - - 1,197.70
$2,024.97

The Librarian reported the receipt of 41 volumes, 38 parts of volumes, and 33 pamphlets, besides a parcel of over 300 volumes of missionary publications from the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. The whole number of titles of printed works now in the Library was 3580; of manuscripts, 144.

The Committee of Publication announced that the completion of volume X of the Journal was still delayed by the unexpected length of the concluding article, now and for some time past in the hands of the printers, but that some progress had already meantime been made in the printing of the first part of volume XI.

The Directors gave notice that the autumn meeting would be held in New Haven in October next. Also, that they had voted to levy no assessment on the members for the ensuing year. On their proposal and recommendation, were duly elected as Corporate Members,

Prof. C. A. Briggs, of New York;
Prof. S. I. Curtiss, Jr., of Chicago;
Mr. J. G. Larkin, of Boston;
Mr. Bernadotte Perrin, of Hartford.

In the absence of the Corresponding Secretary, Mr. Van Name, his substitute, read some extracts from letters received during the past half year.

Prof. Isaac H. Hall writes from Philadelphia, May, 1879:

"With regard to the account of a Syriac manuscript of the New Testament, discovered by me at Beirût [see Proceedings for October, 1877: Journal, vol. x., p. cxxvi.], Dr. Ceriani has written me from Milan in correction of my report of his statement 'that some of the Church-lesson notes in the MS. were only found else-
where in the Ambrosian Peshito codex. I find now on looking at his former letter that I had not read it rightly. He had written, speaking of the dividing of Paul's epistles continuously into sections as one book: 'Eadem notam sectionum non vidi in aliiis libris editis; sed eadem occurrit in MS. Bibl. Ambrosiani.' This I faultily read as 'eadem notam sectionum . . . sed eadem occurrent,' etc., and took it to refer to the Church-lesson notes. The fault was wholly mine, and I avail myself of this first opportunity to correct it."

The Secretary further communicated the names of members deceased since the last annual meeting, speaking briefly of the character and services of each. They were as follows:

the Corporate Members,

Mr. Elihu Burritt, of New Britain, Conn.;
Prof. T. C. Murray, of Baltimore, Md.;

the Corresponding Member,

Dr. Otto Blau, of Odessa, Russia;

and the Honorary Member,

Prof. Garcin de Tassy, of Paris.

Mr. A. W. Tyler, lately librarian of Johns Hopkins University, being present, was invited to speak of his colleague, Professor Murray, with whom he was personally intimate, and paid an appropriate tribute to his character as a man, his scholarly enthusiasm, and his remarkable attainments as a student of the Semitic languages.

The election of officers for 1879-80 being next in order, the following persons, proposed by a Nominating Committee, were balloted for, and chosen without dissent:

President, Prof. E. E. Salisbury, LL.D., of New Haven.
Vice-Presidents, Rev. N. G. Clark, D.D., of Boston; Hon. Peter Parker, M.D., of Washington; Rev. T. D. Woolsey, LL.D., of New Haven.
Recording Secretary, Prof. Ezra Abbot, LL.D., of Cambridge.
Corresponding Secretary, Prof. W. D. Whitney, Ph.D., of New Haven.
Secretary of the Classical Section, Prof. W. W. Goodwin, Ph.D., of Cambridge.
Treasurer and Librarian, Mr. Addison Van Name, of New Haven.


Communications were now called for.

1. On the Elision of initial a after final e and o in the Vedas, by Prof. John Avery, of Brunswick, Me.

The phonetic law of the classical Sanskrit which requires the dropping of initial a after final e and o does not hold for the ancient language. In regard to the Rig-Veda, a careful examination of the text gives the following results: Of the 4467 instances where the letters named occur in the position stated, the a is not
American Oriental Society:

elided in 3451, or about 77 per cent. With 16 exceptions (I.62.7; II.2.7; III.9.4; 33.2; 38.8; vii.21.8; 70.4; 72.3; 103.3; 104.15; viii.9.15; ix.39.5; 81.5; x.79.1) these cases are found within a pdda, or at the beginning of the second half-verse, in which latter position \( \dot{a} \) is never elided. Of the 1006 instances of the loss of \( \dot{a} \) from the text, 865 occur at the beginning of a pdda; and this may be any pdda excepting the first one of each half-verse. The remaining 351 cases are found within a pdda—a situation where \( \dot{a} \) is usually retained. In 181 of these (351) instances \( \dot{a} \) is followed by \( v \). Though as a rule \( \dot{a} \) is lost when followed by \( v \), there are some exceptions. It is never lost within the pdda when followed by \( v \). The semi-vowel \( y \) does not seem to especially cause the elision of \( \dot{a} \), as stated by Benfey. Though initial \( \dot{a} \) is dropped from the text 1006 times, it was evidently pronounced in nearly every case when the hymns were composed, as is shown by the metre. In 71 cases only is the line complete without the restoration of the \( \dot{a} \). In 31 of these instances the lost \( \dot{a} \) is the augment, and in all but 4 the word stands within the pdda. The verses are: I.24.8; 30.16; 33.13; 61.35; 82.9; 59.23; 79.11; 85.7; 103.7; 118.7; 162.7; 186.8; II.23.16; 26.6; III.29.3; iv.1.12; 10.7; 16.18; 55.1; v.29.10; 30.13; 31.3; 61.9; 83.10; vi.22.4; 26.3; 27.5; 44.19; 47.22; 50.10; vii.1.19; 33.11; 57.5; 66.5; 71.5; 86.4; viii.2.40; 13.10; 27.22; 50.8; ix.59.4; 86.9; x.7.5; 53.1; 66.3; 76.2; 79.6; 85.17; 90.312; 92.11; 95.6; 97.23; 99.7; 103.1; 109.1; 116.6; 126.3; 127.1; 129.3; 146.6; 161.5; 166.3.4; 190.1: Vâl. 3.10; 10.3. Hence, in the Rik, in only about 1.6 per cent. of the cases where initial \( \dot{a} \) follows \( e \) or \( o \) is the former really lost. The following table shows the loss by books:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I.</th>
<th>II.</th>
<th>III.</th>
<th>IV.</th>
<th>V.</th>
<th>VI.</th>
<th>VII.</th>
<th>VIII.</th>
<th>IX.</th>
<th>X.</th>
<th>Total.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Total. | 14 | 2 | 1 | 4 | 9 | 3 | 6 | 4 | 2 | 26 | 71 |

Though the augment is often dropped in the Vedas, there are many instances where it is retained even after \( e \) or \( o \). The Sàma-Veda gives nearly the same facts as the Rik. Of the 600 occurrences, \( \dot{a} \) is elided 144 times—119 times at the beginning of a pdda, and 25 times within it. In 15 of which \( \dot{a} \) is followed by \( n \). In three instances only is \( \dot{a} \) really dropped—all within a pdda (2.6.1.2.2; 2.7.2.4.2; 2.9.3.1.1). The proportion of real to apparent loss of \( \dot{a} \) is in the Rik 1: 13, in the Sàman 1: 47. In the White Yajur-Veda, taking that part which is composed in the seven usual Vedic metres, the proportion of real to apparent loss of \( \dot{a} \) is 1: 4. The proportion for this Veda as a whole is much greater if we count the syllables according to the metrical scheme applied to prose as well as poetry by the schools of the Brâhmaṇic age. In the metrical parts of the Atharva-Veda, as has been shown by Prof. Whitney (Ath. Prân. iii.54 note), the ratio of real to apparent loss is 1: 24; that of real loss to real retention is 1: 44.

The usage in the Vedas as a whole may be summarized as follows: 1. \( \dot{a} \) after \( e \) or \( o \) is regularly, and with few exceptions, dropped in writing at the beginning of a pdda, when that is not at the head of a half-verse; 2. it is regularly retained within a pdda, though exceptions are not infrequent, especially when it is followed by \( v \), but never when the \( v \) is followed by \( y \), unless at the beginning of a pdda; 3. elided \( \dot{a} \) is generally to be restored in reading; 4. a steady increase of frequency in the actual dropping of \( \dot{a} \) can be discerned from the earliest to the latest Vedic texts.

2. On a copper stamp bearing a Greek inscription, by Prof. F. P. Brewer, of Grinnell, Iowa; read by the Recording Secretary.

A copper stamp with Greek letters was brought from eastern Asia Minor, by Rev. George White, a missionary, who still has it in his possession at Chester, Iowa.
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1879.

The stamp is an oblong, 9 x 6 cm., with a copper ring for a handle at the back, and weighs about three hundred grams. The face contains fifteen letters, in three lines, surrounded by a border; reversed, as they would appear when stamped on anything, they are as follows:

A Π Ο Ι
C Ο Τ Κ
Δ Ο Ν Υ

Beginning with the lower line, we can read Δεονυσίων καρποὶ, 'crops of Dionysia.' I have never seen such a stamp before. That the inscription should begin at the lower line is, as I imagine, a mere blunder of the worker. The stamp was apparently used for branding boxes or barrels of grain, or possibly for impressing the clay-seal of store-rooms.

It is believed to be an antique. The letters A K C are ancient forms for A X K. The head of the P is small, and turned the wrong way.


This article was accompanied with a roll of thick paper mounted on cloth, one foot wide and twenty-eight feet long, giving an exact reproduction, in black and scarlet, of vignettes of the Turin Papyrus of the Book of the Dead or Funeral Ritual, enlarged thirty-six times, including always the running heading in scarlet and black hieroglyphs, enlarged on the same scale. The author translated the opening words of the heading thus: "The beginning of the chapters concerning the going forth on the day of the Resurrection of the worthy in Khenuter. Was said on the day that the coffin went in, after the going forth, by" [the name of the departed being here inserted]. The Roman type is put for the rubric, and the italics for the black.

The author then pointed out that the line of vignettes, or, as he has named the pictorial heading, the Panorama, below this reading, perfectly illustrates the text above it. Hence, to the people or forefathers of pre-historic Egypt it was revealed that the resurrection took place before the coffin was carried into the sepulchre.

The first individual in the Panorama is the departed, in his human form, dressed in the robes of the Maker, pronounced true, with his hands on his breast, and looking forward in his first surprise on entering the new world. The two in front of him have thrown up their hands in joy and praise at having reached the new world a little before him. The two and the one make three—the hieroglyphic, pictorial plural. These are men; and they represent all men who have just and recently entered the future world. Immediately in front of these three men—this multitude of men—are three women: the multitude of women recently arrived in the new world from earth. Immediately in front of these are three other women, facing them—facing towards the right, the two other threes facing towards the left. This second trio of women are taller than the first, and the first of the second three women is the tallest of the six women, and even taller than the men. She is also greeting the three women just arrived from earth. That is, the multitude of women already in the other life are come to receive the multitude just coming from earth; while the women from earth are in like attitude greeting the women who have come to receive them. Here ends the first portion of the Panorama; and here ends the corresponding portion of the black and red heading.

Next follows the Panorama of the funeral procession, showing the coffin, the sacred serekh or Mystery, the boat, etc. And over this portion are the words concerning the carrying of the coffin in, that is, into its place in the sepulchre. The author here called attention to the fact, that, setting aside his translation of the hieroglyphic heading, the Egyptians do thus and so represent in picture. He then said that the text of the heading was utterly simple, and perfectly explained or declared the nature of the Panorama; and that the great text underneath the Panorama reveals the fact that man rises into the other life with all his faculties: "He sees as ye see; he hears as ye hear; he stands as ye stand; he sits as ye sit." Also, the Panorama pictures men as men, and women as women. The
entire book treats of just what the first words of the heading declare as the subject—the resurrection of the worthy. The resurrection of the unworthy is not the subject; and the unworthy are spoken of only as opposed to the worthy—as the crew of the Devil or Set, who take the form of beasts, serpents, etc., and who go to the place of the Nemma or Destruction. The author therefore proposed a new name for the whole work, taken from the heading itself, given by the Egyptians of old: THE HAMROU, 'The Beginning of the Chapters.' comparing Breshith, 'In the Beginning,' the Hebrew name for Genesis. He said that Todtenbuch, 'The Book of the Dead,' presents people as dead, whereas the Hamrou is 'The Book of the Resurrection of the Worthy,' and thus presents people hereafter as alive. That the Book of the Dead is a modern name, while the Hamrou, or Book of the Resurrection of the Worthy, is a name full of a living faith, both pictured and expressed in writing of a pre-historic date, or date not known. He said that he had written out twelve papers of translations from the Hamrou, illustrating in minute detail nearly the entire Hamrou text.


Dr. Ward called the attention of the Society to a remarkable Babylonian cylinder in the possession of Dr. S. Wells Williams, of New Haven, which evidently contained a representation of the struggle between Bel-Merodach and the Dragon, but which differed from all other ancient representations known in that the dragon was figured as a serpent. He pointed out the fact that on another cylinder the temptation of man seems represented as accomplished by a serpent, and he suggests that these cylinders seem to show that there existed in early Babylonia a version of the fall of man and the subsequent punishment of the tempter, parallel in its form with that given in Genesis. He reserved a fuller discussion for a subsequent meeting.

5. On recently discovered Hittite Inscriptions, by Dr. Ward.

Dr. Ward remarked that as new inscriptions in the hieroglyphic of Hamath had been discovered, he had exhibited copies of them to the Society. He had lately received from Professor A. H. Sayce a copy of a long and important, though fragmentary, inscription, obtained by George Smith from Jerabulus, the ancient Carchemish. It seemed to be now sufficiently established that these inscriptions are in the character of the ancient Hittites and should be called by their name. The inscriptions thus far found at Carchemish, the famous old Hittite capital, show a large number of new characters, quite doubling the number gained from the Hamath inscriptions. They do not exhibit any relation to the hieroglyphics of Egypt on the one hand, or to those of primitive Babylonia on the other. The area covered by them is now greatly enlarging, and it is probable that antecedent to the introduction of the Phoenician alphabet they had a considerable currency over Asia Minor, Syria, and certainly as far as the Euphrates river to the east. Professor Sayce thinks he has evidence that one or two of the characters are used as determinatives.


Since the Hebrew is very closely allied to the Assyrian, its usage of the words for 'gold' and 'silver' may serve as an illustration of some points of the subject which this paper is designed to consider. The Hebrew has six words meaning gold, viz: זהב (two forms), זהב (Chald. זהב), זהב (Philo), זהב, זהב. 'Of these, זהב is used three times; זהב only twice in the Bible, once meaning 'gold' and once 'calf;' זהב and זהב are used nine times each, and generally denote 'pure, or fine gold;' זהב is rendered 'gold' six times, namely, in Ps. lxxii. 13 and Zech. ix. 3, and four times in Proverbs. There is no special reason why the last should be called, as has been done by some scholars, a "poetical Hebrew word for gold." It appears to belong to the later literature, yet it corresponds to hurru, the word for gold in Assyrian. זהב, the remaining word, is used between three hundred and four hundred times.
The Hebrew had but one word for silver, כַּפֶּל, which occurs several hundred times. The same word is found also in Chaldee and Syriac. The three northern Semitic languages, the Hebrew, Aramaic, and Assyrian, are in perfect harmony in the use of the word כַּפֶּל for silver, while the southern Semitic languages use other words to designate this metal. There is some evidence that among the Hebrews, and among the Assyrians also, pieces of silver, in very early times, were stamped and used as currency.

Of eighty-three cases where gold and silver are used in connection, the order of the words in eleven cases is 'gold and silver,' while in seventy-two the order is 'silver and gold.' These seventy-two are distributed among twenty-five books, and the eleven 'gold and silver' are distributed among nine books. The book of Psalms has one 'gold and silver' against four 'silver and gold;' Ezra, no 'gold and silver' against six 'silver and gold;' Daniel, two 'gold and silver' against four 'silver and gold.' In the New Testament, of nine cases noted, three have the order 'gold and silver,' and six have it 'silver and gold.' In the Old Testament, an examination of the context in the eleven cases concerned brings to light no reason why the order should be 'gold and silver.' The following conclusion is arrived at: the Hebrews, in the use of these words, had a rule, which was that 'silver' should precede 'gold.' But there is no apparent reason for the rule; moreover, it was not invariably, for among eighty-three cases there are eleven exceptions, with no traceable reason for the exception.

In Assyrian, 'gold' and 'silver' are generally expressed by the Accadian signs, BARBAR = κασπο, and GUSKIN = ḫaruṣu. The Accadian determinative for the precious metals is KU, rendered in Assyrian by šu-šu, or šu-su, corresponding to the Hebrew שָׁלְזָל, and signifying 'exalted, illustrious,' and hence 'precious' of metals. The words are also written phonetically: ḫu-ra-su or ḫu-ra-šš; and ka-as-pu, or ka-as-pi, or ka-as-p. The Accadian characters are often followed by the sign denoting the plural. ḫaruṣu is often followed by the words ru-as-su-a, 'heaven,' and ḫu-as-e, 'pure,' while κασπο is followed by nam-ri, 'shining,' or e-ti-bi (var. ti-bi, ti-bu), rendered 'white' or 'fine.' We have further ka-as, meaning 'a piece of money;' sad, κασπο, which Hincks, Norris, and Oppert agree in referring to 'silver mines;' and the custom of weighing silver mentioned in the phrase κασπο î-sa-ak, 'silver he weighs.'

In one hundred and eleven cases noted, the order of the words is as follows: thirty-eight have 'gold and silver,' while seventy-three have 'silver and gold.' In Assyrian, as in Hebrew, the rule seems to be for the order 'silver and gold;' but there is a much larger number of variations from this order in the Assyrian than in the Hebrew. There is, however, no apparent reason for this order, nor on the other hand for the variation from it.

A large number of inventories of valuable articles were given, where silver 'precedes gold;' and of others where 'gold' precedes 'silver.' These belong to various periods, extending from the reign of Assur-nasir-pal, B. C. 885–860, down to that of Assur-bani-pal, B. C. 668–626. The relative amount of gold and silver in these inventories was marked, and the value of each in talents and manehs was discussed. In one case we find mentioned ḫaruṣu . va . κασπο . e-par . mat . šu . , 'gold and silver the dust of his country.'

Gold and silver were put to a great variety of uses. We find thrones, sceptres, images, statues, tablets, bowls, bottles, vessels, handles of daggers, scabbards, and yet other utensils and vessels made of gold; also chains, rings, bracelets, horns, and bars, of gold. Gold was further extensively used in overlaying walls, columns, statues, and awnings, and in ornamental work about the palaces and temples. These facts as to the use to which gold was put are equally true of silver.

The study of this subject affords no hints as to the origin of the use of the precious metals. Gold at least seems to have been very abundant in the remotest times. The earliest Assyrian records show that it was in common use for very many purposes; and the facts that can be gleaned from the Accadian records, which are much older than the Assyrian, carry this common use still farther back into antiquity.
American Oriental Society:

7. Analysis of the Rei-gi rui-ten, or Court Etiquette of Japan, by Mr. Gilbert Attwood, of Boston.

Mr. Attwood presented with some prefatory remarks a translation, made by Mr. Tanetaro Megata, of the table of contents of the Rei-gi rui-ten, a treatise on the Court Ceremonial and Etiquette of Japan. This is a voluminous work compiled A. D. 1686 by a committee of scholars under the patronage of Mitsukuni, Second Prince of Mito. Of the 510 chapters of which the work is composed, the first 215 treat, in the order of the Calendar, of the ceremonies, religious and other, to be observed on certain days of the year. The remaining chapters prescribe rules for various extraordinary occasions, as well as for the more common occupations of court life.

The Rei-gi rui-ten has never been printed. Mr. Attwood has a manuscript copy, in 803 volumes, presented to him by the Tokio Library.


Mr. Luquiens began with paying a high tribute of praise to the unquestionable scholarship and literary ability of M. Darmesteter, and proceeded to discuss the general conclusion of his work: namely, that the twin gods of Iran were in reality born several centuries apart, Ormazd being a descendant of the supreme Acura of an Indo-Iranian period, while Ahriman is an Iranian afterthought, born of the desire to symmetrize the forces of evil with those of the good principle. Even more than this thesis, exception was taken to the underlying tendency to apply to comparative mythology the doctrine and processes of evolution, and to demonstrate the Mazdean faith as developed out of a previous naturalism. For, if the thesis is well founded, the oldest monuments should stand in a closer relation than the later to an antecedent naturalism; whereas, the contrary is the case: in proportion as the language is earlier, the myths are more scanty, and the unity Ahura appears endowed with moral attributes.

It was further enquired at some length what share in the Iranian traditions is due to the Indo-European solar myth, and what to a native religious element. Following in the footsteps of Roth, M. Darmesteter has sometimes been very successful in his comparison and identification of mythical elements—as in his interpretation of the legend of Takhma-Urupa. Here the myth has assumed definite forms, the cloud has turned mountain, the action is made historical, and the personages take their place in heroic dynasties. This gives a sort of law of comparison for the study of Iranian mythology: the echoes of the atmospheric tumult must be sought for in the chansons de gestes of Iran. On the other hand, if a legend is found with different and equally characteristic lineaments, pervaded moreover with a strong religious flavor, it will be prudent, in the absence of linguistic clues, to look to native agencies for its genesis. Of all the social and moral entities of the Mazdean system, there is none, however pallid and impersonal, that does not at a given time step out of its frame and put on the aspect of life. The Mazdean world is essentially and from beginning to end a battle-field. To single out any particular moment of this continuous war and interpret it as the reflex of a Vedic myth is unwarranted, so long as the links are still visible which attach it to the primitive conception.

A curious instance of the manner in which M. Darmesteter scoops the moral import out of a tradition in order to substitute the naturalistic myth is his attempt to transform Zoroaster himself into a god of light. He avoids the testimony of the oldest Avestan writings, and stands by later and often puerile legends, which he ingeniously interprets. The founder of Mazdeism, like one more illustrious, has had his apocrypha; but to read his life out of the absurdities of Pehlevi literature is to hold the book upside down. For example, it is related that Zoroaster, being about to ford a river, bethought himself that the respectable women of his train would have to bare themselves before an irreverent concourse; so he prayed; the waters parted, and he led his followers across on dry land. This would seem intended to set forth the prophet’s delicacy or power in prayer; but M. Darmesteter draws two things from it: that Zoroaster, like the fire-god
Agni, was brought up among women; and that also like Agni, he is son of the waters (apām napāt)! M. Darmesteter identifies Ahura with the Vedic Varuna, the heaven as deity, founding himself especially on two points: that Ahura is one, and the head, of the seven Amesha-pandas, as Varuna of the seven Adityas; and that both stand in a close relation to 'order,' primarily a cosmological notion, rising in the course of time to the rank of a moral abstraction, and known in the two religions respectively by the names āsha and rta, two forms of the same word. Decided objections, now, are to be taken from the Vedic side to Varuna's headship of the Adityas and their own seventh, and to his near relation with rta, 'order;,' but the theses are yet more questionable from the Avestan side. For the Amesha-pandas, far from deriving from ancient naturalistic entities, rise into existence in Avestan times before our eyes, and are mere religious abstractions. To the Gāthās is known as quasi-personality only Āsha, 'moral order,' Ārmanīt, 'religious obedience,' is nearest to being its fellow; and Khshatra, 'royal rule,' and Haurvatat and Ameretat, 'fullness' and 'length of life,' are dragged into personal attributes in the medieval writings. So fundamental is the difference between the two sets of deities that the similarity of number, even if made out, would be utterly empty. To the identity of āsha and rta M. Darmesteter devotes his extremely interesting opening chapter. He labors hard to prove that in Avesta as in Veda the original notion is physical, and that the moral import is secondary. But the texts allow only a moral pregnancy to āsha, and the cited passages merely testify to that characteristic feature of Zoroaster's religion, that earth and heaven participate in the conflict which begins in man's nature. While rta is the last word of Vedic morality, āsha is the first and purest word of Zoroaster's law, a sort of Mazdean logos, mediator between Ahura and his people, a provident, contriving divinity; it is an abstraction, but with the fullness of life which clothes such entities in Mazdeism; it is a god in pose. Here is rather a revolution than an evolution. Even if Ahura could be proved the same word with Varuna, Mazdeism would not come any nearer to being a mere outgrowth of ante-Vedic naturalism. We cannot but believe that an element foreign to Vedism once made its irruption; religion became conscious; the deity, stripped of its aerial brilliancy, assumed the brighter attributes of a moral responsible principle; a new motive is set in action; the spirit of kindness is the incentive of both god and worshipper. Of all this, however, our author seems to see nothing. It would be interesting to know once for all that the idea of a supreme God was emerging from the confused naturalism of our early ancestors even before they entered the diverging paths of independence; but if we are asked to forsake the safe guidance of linguistic comparison, to overlook the moral import of the texts, and to put the sameness of one typical myth in the place of the diversity of national genius, even the most ingenious hypothesis would be dear at such a price.

After passing a vote of thanks to the American Academy for the use of its room, the Society then adjourned, to meet again in New Haven in October.
Proceedings at New Haven, October 29th, 1879.

The autumn meeting was held at New Haven, on Wednesday, October 29th, the President in the chair. Mr. Van Name acted as Recording Secretary, in the absence of Professor Abbot.

The Directors reported that they had appointed the Annual meeting to be held in Boston, on Wednesday, May 19th, 1880, and had requested the Secretaries, with Dr. N. G. Clark, to act as Committee of Arrangements for it.

On their recommendation, were elected as Corporate Members:

Rev. H. J. Broadwell, of New Haven;
Prof. W. I. Knapp, of New Haven;
Mr. E. D. Perry, of New York.

Selections from the correspondence of the past six months were read. A letter from the son of our recently deceased member, Rev. Joseph P. Thompson, D.D., announces that the latter had bequeathed to the Society that part of his library which relates to the East, and especially to Egypt, and that the collection, embracing about 500 separate titles, was now already on its way from Berlin to this country.

The following communications were then presented:


Prof. Williams presented a translation of several chapters of this historical novel, which is held in high repute among the Chinese, prefacing it with a brief notice of this class of works in their literature. After referring to the remarkable care exhibited by the Chinese Government in preserving the annals of the nation, and the great extent to which they already reached, he remarked:

In addition to the various kinds of historical writings in Chinese literature, such as dynastic histories, annals, complete records, separate histories or mémoires pour servir, local or biographical histories, and official or documentary records and rolls, there are hundreds of authors whose works have exerted much more influence in diffusing a knowledge of their national life and prominent actors among the people. They answer very nearly to our historical novels; and, like them, some partake most of the novel, and others adhere most to historical facts. The literati regard them with something of the feeling with which we might suppose that Gibbon would have reviewed Old Mortality or Rienzi; and class them with the siao shuoh, or puiler talks. Yet the insight they give into the national manners and life of various ages, and the influence they exert in the formation of a literary taste and style, recommend them to the foreign scholar as among the most interesting portions of Chinese literature. There is naturally a great diversity in their "style, scholarship, and arrangement," but some writers have been so successful in their attempts to reproduce and vivify ancient times and actors, that their books have a permanent value in exhibiting the age of which they write; just as in recent years Howson's and Farrar's narratives of the Apostle Paul's life and times have invested him and his period with renewed interest and vitality.

The most celebrated of these panoramic histories in Chinese is the Records of the Three Kingdoms, a work in 120 chapters, by Lo Kwan-chung, of the Mongol dynasty in 1310. It narrates the historical events in the century immedi-
ately succeeding the decadence of the Han dynasty. A. D. 168-265. Its vivid description of plots and counterplots, victories and defeats, councils and intrigues, somewhat after the style of Froissart, have impressed this portion of their annals upon the minds of the Chinese during the last four centuries quite as much as Shakespeare's historical plays have tinged the popular estimate of Richard III. or Henry V. among his countrymen. About one third of it has been translated into French by T. Pavie (Paris, 1845). The scenes in it are often represented by statuettes of silk and paper, arranged on a board. At the autumnal festival in Canton, called Ta Tieno, a service like All Souls' Day, the streets are covered with awnings adorned with gay festoons of colored silk, and lighted by glass chandeliers and brilliant lanterns. On such occasions I have seen scores of these historic tableaux, three or four feet long, suspended just above the heads of the people, attracting their attention and questioning as they passed along, crowd after crowd, very much as similar representations of André in the hands of Paulding and his companions, or Pocahontas and Captain Smith, would interest American youth.

Another work of this class is the Tung Chau Lieh Kwoh Chi, or Records of the Feudal States during the Eastern Chau Dynasty (B. C. 790 to 300), or the period from King Uzhiah to Alexander and his generals. It covers the time in Chinese history when feudalism showed its destructive tendencies in the strife between ambitious kings and captains, resulting in the abrogation of the imperial power and degradation of the people, and general barbarism of the land—similar to the woes experienced in Europe before Charlemagne's time. The editor and annotator of the work, as it now appears, was Tsaï Yuen-tang of Nanking, who published it in 1752. It comes nearer to authentic history than the other, but as a work of genius and skillful disposition of materials is inferior. Both of them weary a foreign reader by the prevalence of dialogue over narrative, but the exigencies of the Chinese language make the former more perspicacious.

The Introduction, in 35 paragraphs, furnishes hints of the principles on which this work was written, and indicates its sources and claims to be regarded as credible history. It is like a review; and the author here analyzes and defends his work, shows its adaptation to instruct and entertain its readers, and gives them directions how to read it so as to derive the most benefit. The first paragraph is sufficient for our present purpose, and is quoted entire.

'The Lieh Kwoh Chi is unlike other stories, such as the Water Marshes, the Adventures of King Wu, and the Wanderings of Hiuen Chwang, all of which contain many statements made out of whole cloth (literally, split open emptiness and select), but is nearer to the San Kwoh Chi, though that has many fabrications and repetitions. The present work rather takes events as they happened, and makes its quotations as they stand, thus reducing the record to what really occurred. For if the record does not contain a thing, who has the leisure to make it up? Readers of this work must therefore verify it by the regular historians, and not regard it as a mere story-book. Every one will see that it is specially confined to the records of the kingdoms during the Eastern Chau Dynasty. The removal of the capital eastward [to Lohyang] dates from the reign of King Ping [B. C. 770-119]; and general miracle from that of his son King Hwan [119-686]; but this work goes back to the days of King Siuen [827-781]. The change of the capital was caused by the revolt of the snappish Jung tribes, whose attacks arose from the insensate fondness of his son King Yiu for Pao Sz', and the appointment of Duke Kwoh as minister. Pao Sz' was born in King Siuen's reign, indeed, and the children's ditty about the fall of the State was an omen of that reign. It was therefore necessary to go back to that date, and come down to later times in order to make the narrative clear. Though this plan of relating events is like digging up the tree to find its roots, yet there is no other sensible principle to go on.'

Prof. Williams observed that this work had never been translated into any European language, but was well known in Japan, Corea, and Annam. He read the version of the first chapter, which showed the curious mixture of historical facts, doubtful legends, and supernatural agencies in the performance, and lead us to approve the decision of the literati in excluding it from their serious histories. One extract from the chapter will illustrate this mode of treating events. It occurred during the last part of the reign of King Siuen, after he had
been much disturbed by various omens and weakened by defeats. The scene is laid in the palace.

'The king, humming to himself, did not answer, but all at once recollected that three years before he had ordered Governor Tu Peh to make search by means of the constables for the elfin girl, and had hitherto received no report. So after the sacrifices had been divided, he went back into court, where the officers returned thanks for them, and there asked Tu Peh why he had not already reported respecting her. He answered: "I myself personally inquired after the girl without success; but after the strange woman had expiated her crime, and thus fulfilled the ditty of the children, I concluded that if I kept stirring in the affair it would alarm the whole country. I therefore went no further."

'Much iritated, the king then asked, seeing that such was his opinion, why he had not reported it, and exclaimed, "Really, such negligence is nothing short of entire disregard of Our commands, and acting as one pleases. Of what further service can such a disloyal, unfaithful minister be?" He therefore ordered the guard to arrest him and take him outside the palace gate, there to exhibit his head to the populace.

'Terror seized the officers present on hearing this, and they became pale as clay. One of the Secretaries left his seat, and hastily taking hold of Tu Peh, as the guard was dragging him off, cried out to them, "No! No! You must not!" The king saw that it was the former lieutenant-governor, Tso Yu, a near friend of Tu Peh, and one who had been promoted with him. Prostrating himself, he said, "I have heard that although Yao had a nine years' flood, he did not thereby lose his throne; nor did Tang the Successful suffer injury to his power by a seven years' drought. If such disturbances in nature did not bring injury to a reign, how can mere human prodigies be relied on to cause it? If your Majesty executes Tu Peh, I fear that the people will quote these ominous oracles to make sedition; and the outside tribes will rebel as soon as they hear of them. I therefore pray that he may be pardoned.'

'The monarch remarked that as he stood up in behalf of his friend, he thereby disobeyed his sovereign's orders, thus esteeming a friend more than a sovereign. Tso Yu replied: "When a prince is in the right and a friend is in the wrong, then the latter must be opposed and the former obeyed: but just the contrary, when the prince is wrong and the friend right. Tu Peh has done nothing worthy of death, and if he be sacrificed, the country will say that the ruler is blinded; and if his ministers cannot convince him of error, they may be justly charged with disloyalty and unfaithfulness. If he dies, therefore, may I fall with him."' King Su'en's ire was still unappeased, and he cried out: "To destroy Tu Peh is like clearing off old stubble. Why do we waste words on it?" Hearing this, the guard carried him out, and executed him at the palace-gate. Tso Yu on returning to his house, cut his throat. Hearing of this act next morning, the king regretted that he had put Tu Peh to death, and returned to the palace sick and mortified.

'Some months elapsed before his health was restored and he could resume the government. On the recurrence of the winter-hunt, he went out with a great escort to kill game. On the return to the capital, greatly exhilarated, he saw the two friends once more.

'He had not gone much over a mile, when he suddenly felt a mistiness before his eyes as he sat in his chariot. From afar he saw a small car driving up rapidly, in which two persons stood up, each having a scarlet bow on his arm and holding a red dart. Turning towards him, they sneeringly asked: "O my king! Are you pretty well these days?" He then perceived that the two were Tu Peh and Tso Yu, and cried out in a shriek of terror. The apparition vanished while one could rub his eyes; and yet, when the king asked his retinue, not one of them had seen anything of it. While in this state of alarm and doubt, he again saw them both in the little car coming on, just in front of him. He screamed out: "Get out of the way, you guilty devils! How dare you thus insult your sovereign?" and cut at them with his drawn sword.

'They at once rallied at him: "O thou perverse and stupid prince! Thou hast no regard for righteous rule, and madly destroyest innocent people; thy days are now numbered, and we have come to be revenged for our lives taken by thee." As they finished speaking, each fitted a red arrow on his scarlet bow, and shot at King Su'en's heart. who, uttering a scream, fell bewildered in his chariot.'

Dr. Nutting gave many interesting details of the journeys he had undertaken in connection with his medical practice in Turkey, and of the observations which he had made on the way.


In this paper, after a résumé of the facts known as to the worship paid to the serpent among different peoples, Dr. Ward gathered together the references to the serpent in the Assyrian inscriptions. He also attempted to show that, parallel with the well known and more current legend among the Chaldeans, of the temptation of man by a dragon, there was also another form of the same legend, perhaps local in some of the cities of Chaldea, in which the dragon was replaced by a serpent. This is suggested by the well known cylinder (Smith’s “Chaldean Account of Genesis,” p. 91), in which two figures, a man and a woman, are seen sitting on either side of a tree reaching up their hands toward its fruit, while an erect serpent appears behind the woman. It is almost certain that this represents a legend of the same nature as that of the Temptation given in Genesis. This explanation, adopted by George Smith, Friedrich Delitzsch, Baudissin, and others, though very lately controverted by Menant, is corroborated by another Chaldean cylinder, as yet unpublished, belonging to Professor S. Wells Williams, of New Haven. This cylinder represents the next stage in the story. The representation is very common of the battle which took place after the Temptation between the dragon and Merodach. In this cylinder of Dr. Williams’s, we have evidently the same contest taking place, but the dragon is replaced by a serpent. The god Merodach is represented as pursuing at full speed a fleeing serpent, whose horned head, turned back towards its pursuer, he smiles with a sword. The vacant spaces are filled up with a smaller kneeling figure (probably to represent the owner of the cylinder), a standing figure with a circle in his hand, a crescent, a kṣeṣita, five stars, and two branches or small trees. These accessories probably have no special relation to the event pictured of the pursuit and punishment of the serpent by the god. The general character of the seal is very much like that figured in George Smith’s “Chaldean Account of Genesis,” p. 109, except that the latter represents Merodach as pursuing the dragon. The serpent of the one seal must be identical with the dragon of the other, and is thus connected with the story of the Fall of Man related in Genesis.


Prof. Whitney said that he had during the last year and more been absent from the meetings of the Society, and from his usual part in its affairs, because of his being engaged in Germany, in completing and carrying through the press a Sanskrit grammar, as one of Breitkopf and Härtel’s series of Indo-European grammars. He availed himself of the present opportunity to explain and defend, more fully than could be done in the Preface of the work itself, some of its differences from its predecessors.

The special features of its plan (as stated in the Preface) are these: to include not only the classical language, the Sanskrit properly so called, but also the older dialects, of Veda and of Brāhmaṇa; to treat the material of the language throughout as accented, so far as we have knowledge of its accentuation; to exhibit the facts primarily as they appear in actual use, in the recorded literature, and not according to the presentation of them made by the native grammarians; and to cast all statements, classifications, and so on, into a form consistent with the teachings of modern linguistic science. While it is impossible for us to be too grateful to the Hindu grammarians for their contributions both to Sanskrit learning and to the general methods of grammar, an influence which is beyond their due has been in general hitherto allowed them in determining the form of
Sanskrit grammar, to the detriment of clearness and of proportion. Special pains have been taken in this work to give the requisite proportion, by noticing everywhere the statistics of occurrence—in sounds, in changes, in forms, in combinations, etc.

Certain features which were introduced, also, into Sanskrit grammar by its earlier European elaborators, and which have enjoyed almost uninterrupted currency since, have been here abandoned. Of these, the one which will be most missed, probably, is the division of verbal forms into "special tenses" and "general tenses," since this has not only been adopted by most writers on Sanskrit grammar, but even introduced to some extent into the treatment of other languages. It is, however, undesirable and indefensible. It grew in part out of the confusion by the Hindu grammarians of tense and mode, and in part out of the great and well-regulated variety in Sanskrit of the formation of the present-stem, and the immense preponderance in use of the forms made from it. The so-called "special tenses" are a single primary tense with its modes and its augment-preterit, the "imperfect," and a similar array of forms, more or less complete, is made from each of the other tense-stems—the perfect, aorist, and future. There is no more fundamental peculiarity separating the "special" from the "general" forms than separates from one another the different divisions of the latter. The variety of present-formation is, though greater, not much greater than that of aorist-formation, and the two are in part accordant. The other tense-systems, not less than the present, are made from tense-stems, and not from the root directly. In fact, the name "special," as applied to the present-system, really signifies only that this system, owing to the diversity of its formation combined with frequency of use, calls for more "special" attention from the student than the other systems.

While the order of arrangement of the cases in declension established by the native grammar is best retained, because we see the reason and the reasonableness of it, the native order of the conjugation-classes cannot but be abandoned; nor has the nomenclature "ad-class, bhā-class," etc. enough to recommend it. I have named the classes from their characteristic signs, and arranged them in a natural order, beginning with the class in which the root itself is also present-stem. This unfortunately reverses the order of the two general conjugations which, after Bopp's arrangement, has become widely current; but the result was unavoidable.

The place of treatment of the passive yā-forms and that of the ṣaṣṭra-forms, including the tenth-class or cau-verbs and the causatives, is also other than that which has hitherto been most usual. But the special passive inflection is so purely and solely a present-system that it has no right to be separated from the others of its kind, unless there should be some overruling practical advantage to be gained by so doing: and this is by no means the case. Delbrück, accordingly, in his exhibition of the Vedic verb-forms (Altindisches Verbum), has put the passive along with the other systems coming from stems in a; and I have followed his example. On the other hand, the stem in ṣaṣṭra is not a present-stem only, but—like the intensive and desinative stems, and earlier and more fully than either of these—has been made the basis of a whole conjugation; other tense-stems are made from it, as from simple roots. If the division of secondary conjugation is to be recognized at all, the inflection of the cau-class of verbs belongs in it beyond a question, along with that of the causatives, from which they cannot be distinguished, and next to that of the denominatives, from which both are only slightly separated.

As to the various kinds of aorist, their arrangement by different authorities has been so discordant that there was no tradition to be violated. The one which I have adopted—namely, the two forms of simple aorist, the reduplicated aorist, and the four forms of aorist having a sibilant as essential sign—seems to me the one most defensible on joint theoretical and practical grounds.

To the ordinary mode of statement of the euphonic rules of combination, according to which the rules for external and those for internal combination are given separately, and the former first, much exception is to be taken. The rules for internal combination are both more fundamental and of more immediate importance, since the learner needs to know at least something of them in order to understand the make-up of the forms which he has first to learn; the others
can be deferred until he comes to reading or formine sentences. The rules of external combination are historically of quite various character: in part, they are the equivalents of the others, applied under circumstances somewhat different, and in part (as in the change of s to r) they introduce new processes, unknown or only sporadic elsewhere; in part they are the results of the law as to finals, sometimes (as in ns and ns for final n) preserving traces of endings otherwise lost; in considerable part (and to an extent far beyond what can ever have been the actual usage of a vernacular), they include the extension to sentence-combination of processes governing the combination of the parts of compounds. Whatever their character, however, they can in no way be so well presented as in connection with and in subordination to those rules of internal combination with which they stand most nearly related: and I have accordingly followed this order.

That the native classification of compounds, with its corresponding nomenclature, could not be maintained intact, has been clearly seen by all those who have of late concerned themselves with the subject. The "determinative" compounds, in their two great divisions of "dependent" (laksanavakya) and "descriptive" (karmadakaryaya), form the central and fundamental body, here as in other languages; the adjective applications of such compounds, with a value so overwhelmingly "possessive" that they are properly called by that name (sahyavakya), are, in virtue of their regularity and formation at will, a more peculiarly characteristic feature of the Sanskrit; and they, with two much smaller bodies, not recognized and named by the Hindu grammarians, constitute the great class of derivative adjective compounds, or such as, though having a substantive as final member, are themselves of adjective value. The so-called "numeral" (dvigu) and "adverbial" (aryayabheda) compounds are merely sub-classes or special uses of the possessives, and have no right to the position they have hitherto held in our classifications; even as sub-classes, they have no conspicuousness or importance in the oldest language. The copulative (dvandva) are a real and highly peculiar class, and important later; but in the earliest literature they are seen in the act of development, hardly a recognizable class at all.

In treating both compounds and derivatives, particular attention has been directed to the accentuation.

Hardly any two grammars have thus far agreed in the number and order of the declensions into which declinable stems shall be divided, while some have made no such division. I have set up five declensions, beginning with that which is immensely the most common, as well as first in alphabetic order of the final: thus, 1. stems in a; 2. in i and u; 3. in d, ñ, and ñ, radical and derivative; 4. in r (or ar); 5. in consonants: the last being divided into several sub-declensions. That the stems in d should be classed with those in ñ and ñ, and not, as has hitherto been the case, with those in a, seems to me beyond all reasonable question. In the working out of the subject of declension, great use was made of Prof. Lanman's monograph on Vedic declension, published in the last number of our Journal.

In the chapter on the alphabet, no attempt has been made to give a list of all the possible consonant combinations. Such a list is of little or no use, unless accompanied with full details as to the occurrence of the different combinations as initial, or interior, or by the combination of final and initial, as found later only or in the earlier language also (without the resolution of y and ñ into i and u, so common in the Veda), and as to comparative frequency—all which would require a treatise.

The general form given to the work is that which was believed to be called for by the circumstances of the case. There was no Sanskrit grammar in existence, for beginners or for more advanced students, from which could be learned what the actual forms of the language, earlier and later, and their uses, really were: and this was the need sought to be supplied, and in such a way that one might come to the study of Sanskrit from that of Latin and Greek without being repelled and impeded by having everything put gratuitously into strange shapes and called by strange names. The grammatical study of other Indo-European languages is in a very different stadium, and may call for present help in a very different way.
5. On the question whether the *Takharoi* of Strabo were Turks, by Prof. J. W. Jenks, of Newtonville, Mass.; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

Prof. Jenks follows the notices of the Turks and their name through a variety of authorities, classical and modern, and attempts to sketch the fates of the race, and its influence upon the history of the world, from the breaking-up of the Central Asiatic empire of the Hiong-Nu, in the second century before Christ.

After the presentation of these papers, the Society adjourned, to meet again in Boston, on Wednesday, the nineteenth day of May, 1880.
Proceedings at Boston, May 19th, 1880.

The Society came together at the usual time and place. The President being detained away, the chair was taken at first by Dr. N. G. Clark, and later by Dr. A. P. Peabody, and in the afternoon by Dr. F. Gardiner.

After the reading of the minutes of the last meeting, reports from the officers for the last year were called for.

The Treasurer's summary of the income and expenses of the year was as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>RECEIPTS.</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Balance on hand, May 21st, 1879,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Annual assessments paid in,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sale of the Journal,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interest on deposit in Savings Bank,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total receipts of the year,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$1,197.70</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>EXPENDITURES.</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Printing of Journal (Vols. x., xi.) and Proceedings,</td>
<td>$645.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Expenses of Library and Correspondence,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total expenditures of the year,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balance on hand, May 19th, 1880,</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$1,373.38</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The amount of the Bradley type-fund is now $815.58.

The Librarian reported that the most valuable donation of the year—and, after that of Charles William Bradley, the most valuable gift ever made to the collections of the Society—had been the books relating to the East forming part of the library of the late Dr. Joseph Parrish Thompson, and bequeathed to the Society by him at his death in September last at Berlin. By the kind and prompt care of his family, they had been received at New Haven before the end of the last year. The number of titles in the collection is 385; of volumes, bound and unbound, 284; of pamphlets, 122. The works relating to Egypt form, as from the direction of Dr. Thompson's studies would naturally have been expected, the most valuable part of the collection, and include many costly publications. The current exchanges of the Society and other gifts have brought a further increase of 81 volumes, 116 parts of volumes, and 22 pamphlets. The present number of titles of printed books in the Library is 3984; of manuscripts, 144.

The Committee of Publication reported that the concluding Part of Vol. X. of the Journal had at last, after many and regretted delays, been completed and distributed to the Society's members and correspondents, a couple of months ago. Of Vol.
American Oriental Society:

XL, a part was also already printed. With the express sanction of the Directors, the Committee had recently accepted for publication in the Journal Prof. Whitney's Index Verborum to the published text of the Atharva-Veda; and, as this would make the bulk of a whole volume, it had been resolved to issue it as Vol. XII, leaving Vol. XI. to be filled up in the mean time with the usual miscellanies.

The Directors gave notice that they had re-appointed the Committee of Publication of the last few years. Also, that they had designated Prof. S. Wells Williams of New Haven to represent the Society at the approaching Centennial festival of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and to be the bearer of its congratulations and good wishes to the Academy. Further, that the autumn meeting of the Society would be held in New York in October next.

On recommendation of the Directors, were then elected to Corporate Membership the following persons:

Mr. Porter C. Bliss, of New York;
Rev. George S. Burroughs, of Fairfield, Conn.;
Dr. George Z. Gray, of Cambridge, Mass.;
Mr. P. L. Armand de Potter, of Albany, N. Y.;
Mr. George H. Schodda, of Martin's Ferry, Ohio.

The Corresponding Secretary presented the last half-year's correspondence, and read a few extracts from it. In connection with it was exhibited to the meeting a curious votive inscription from India, stamped on a small pad of soft clay and burnt, and then enclosed in an acorn-like structure of soft clay and the whole burned again. The inscription, in an alphabet akin with that ordinarily used for Sanskrit, had not yet been deciphered.

The presiding officer appointed Professors Gardiner, Toy, and Latimer a committee to nominate officers for the ensuing year, and the ticket proposed by them was elected without dissent. Thus:

President, Vice-Presidents, Secretaries, Treasurer and Librarian, the same as last year.

Directors, Mr. Cotheal, Prof. Short, and Dr. Ward, of New York; Prof. Green, of Princeton; Prof. Lanman, of Baltimore; Prof. Peabody, of Cambridge; Prof. Thayer, of Andover.

The Corresponding Secretary read the names of members deceased since the last annual meeting (or earlier, but not hitherto reported): namely, Corporate Members,

Rev. Charles A. Brigham, of Ann Arbor, Mich.;
Mr. James Lenox, of New York;
Dr. Joseph P. Thompson, of Berlin;

Corresponding Members,

Dr. A. D. Mordtmann, of Constantinople;
M. Nicolas de Khanikoff, of Paris;

Honorary Member,

Prof. C. J. Tornberg, of Lund.
The Secretary, in connection with these names, gave some account of the life, and the services to learning, of each of the persons mentioned:—of the distinguished Semitic scholar Professor Tornberg (deceased in 1872), the regular receipt of the successive volumes of whose great work, the Ibn el-Athiri Chronicon (recently completed), had long testified both to his great industry and to his interest in the Society;— of the well-known savant M. Khanikoff, who during his official residence at Tabriz had been the efficient friend of American missionaries, who had sent from there his paper on the “Balance of Wisdom,” which held a conspicuous place among the publications of the Society of twenty years ago (Journal, vol. VI.), and whose retirement near Paris had been fruitful of contributions especially to the geography of the East;—of the numismatist and epigraphist Dr. Mordtmann;—of Mr. Brigham, whose presence and whose lively communications had often added interest to the Society’s meetings;—of Mr. Lenox, whose munificent foundation of a free library of consultation in New York had forever linked his name with the progress of American learning;—and especially of Dr. Thompson, whose friendship he had enjoyed, and whom he had often met during his recent residence abroad, admiring more than ever his rare qualities of mind and heart, his indefatigable activity, and the smiling energy and spirit of his struggle against a complication of bodily disorders which would have reduced almost anyone else to the condition of a helpless valetudinarian.

Dr. Peabody added his own deeply-felt tribute to the memory of Dr. Thompson, dwelling especially upon his activity as a publicist, the part played by him in the association for promotion of international jurisprudence, and his ready and effective usefulness as counsellor and aid of his countrymen who visited Europe.

Dr. Peabody also spoke of the merits of Mr. Brigham, the unusually wide range of his literary interests, and his usefulness as reporter and critic of others’ investigations. And Professor Toy and Messrs. Luquiens and Bliss added appreciative remarks as to other of the persons mentioned, particularly Tornberg and Mordtmann.

The following resolution, expressive of the Society’s sense of its loss in Dr. Thompson and his generosity toward it, was prepared and presented by Dr. Peabody, at the suggestion of the meeting, and was unanimously adopted:

Voted, that our Secretary express to the family of the late Rev. Dr. Thompson our gratitude for their courtesy and kindness in regard to his testamentary disposition in our behalf, our high appreciation of his bequest—one of the most valuable donations ever received by us from any quarter—and our profound sense of his eminent worth, and of his distinguished services as a scholar, as a Christian minister, and as an honored representative of his country, and friend and helper of his fellow-citizens, during his long residence in Europe.

Of communications, which were now in order, were presented those whereof abstracts are given below.

American Oriental Society:

After calling attention to the systematic exploration of Palestine and Syria that has been carried on in recent years, Dr. Merrill proceeded to a description of a few of the interesting archaeological remains of those countries; the following is a brief synopsis of his paper, which could not well be given more fully without illustrations.

A large number of drawings were exhibited to the Society, representing the different objects remarked upon; among them were pictures of glass articles from Phoenician tombs at Sidon. Two of the largest and finest of these articles are, so far as is known, unique—Objects of pottery, bronze, and gold, are likewise found in connection with the tombs, or among the debris far below the surface of some ruined city. This is true on the east as well as on the west of the Jordan. Pictures were shown of a bronze bull and of a bronze idol belonging to Phoenician times, and reference was made to the valuable collection of M. Peretti of Beirut, who during his long residence in that city has been unusually successful in obtaining important monuments of a very remote period. Copies of an Assyrian sculpture were also shown which Dr. Merrill had found in the hills east of Tyre: confirming what he had before shown from the cuneiform inscriptions to be probable, that in the time of the Assyrian invasions their armies followed from Banias to the sea-coast two main routes, one leading to Sidon, and the other, farther south, to Tyre.

The dolmens of the country were also remarked upon, and pictures presented of some of the more curious ones. The number and variety of these interesting monuments is very great in eastern Palestine, and many facts have been gathered which may help in clearing up the question as to their origin.

Quite an important relic in Dr. Merrill’s possession is a stone ball such as was used in the ancient ballista. He found it in an underground passage of the castle at Banias. In Josephus and other ancient writers we read of a castle being taken, and the garrison thereupon retiring to the citadel, where they held out for a long time, or perhaps resisted successfully all further assaults of the enemy. The Banias castle is a good illustration of the relation of these two parts of one and the same fortress. The citadel is at the eastern end, and is about 150 feet higher than the castle proper. It has a strong wall and a deep trench of its own, and would be a formidable place to attack even after the great castle below and about it had been captured. It was under this citadel, among debris and ruins, that the ball in question was found. When thrown it was injured slightly, so that at present it is not perfectly round. Its diameter is seven inches and its weight thirteen pounds. Elsewhere he found two, quite perfect, with a diameter of fourteen inches, and weight of over a hundred pounds.

Josephus, speaking of the size of these stones, says they were of the weight of a talent. This may have been 93 or more pounds; and the weight of the largest found is sufficiently near 100 pounds to furnish an important corroboration of Josephus’s words. In the siege of Jotapata in Galilee a large number of these engines, called by Josephus πετροθηκαι and λιθοθηκαι, were employed, and their destructive power was very great: “the stones, driven whizzing from the machine, carried away the battlements, and broke off the corners of the towers. And there was not body of troops so firm as not to be overthrown to the last rank by the violence and magnitude of the stones.” Some instances of their effectiveness are given, and among them that of a man “who stood near Josephus upon the ramparts, being struck... his head was torn off, and his skull flung to the distance of three furlongs.” Again, in the siege of Jerusalem, speaking of the tenth legion, he says: “The stones that were thrown were of the weight of a talent, and had a range of two furlongs and more. The shock, not only to such as first met it, but even to those beyond them, for a considerable distance, was irresistible.” The stone being white, and easily seen, the Jews “had watchmen posted on the towers, who gave warning when the engine was discharged and the stone projected, calling out in their native language: ‘The son is coming;’ on which those towards whom it was directed would separate and lie down before it reached them.” The Romans afterwards blackened it, so that it could not be so readily discerned, and consequently “many were swept down by it at a single discharge” (War. iii. 7, 9, 23; and v. 6, 3). The words referred to would probably be נונא and the first נ of ננה would no doubt be elided, leaving a word of two syllables which could be spoken quickly.

One of the altars which Dr. Merrill has is adorned with a grape leaf and a cluster of grapes, and has upon it a bullock’s head finely carved in relief. In the
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1880.


top of the head is a well preserved fire-box. Another altar is 9½ inches wide and 15 inches tall. It is square, with basin in the top, and near the upper edge are sunken places where the overlying material was fastened. On one side is a serpent, and on the opposite is another with a flat breast. Both have crowns upon their heads, and the one first referred to has a beard, which Prof. T. O. Paine states to be of the Egyptians a symbol of divinity. Of the two remaining sides, one has a bullock, above which is a wreath festooned, and the other has carved upon it an eagle with wings spread, and in its beak a large ring-shaped wreath. This eagle has a crown upon its head like that upon the heads of the serpents. The material is alabaster; the carving is beautifully done, and the figures are well preserved. This altar was dug up at Jeblal, the ancient Byblos.

Attention was also called to the ancient millstones which are scattered over the country in both Eastern and Western Palestine. They are found in quarries, by the side of ancient roads (where they were left apparently by some accident), along the large water courses, and are very common among the ruins of Moab, Gilead, and Bashan. The size of these stones varies a great deal, some being quite small and others very large. Such stones have doubtless always been in use; hence it is difficult if not impossible to assign those now found to any particular age. Rev. J. A. Paine holds that these mill-stones were "mysterious disks" "connected with the worship of Baal." "Even without excavation in this land it may turn out that the gods of the Moabites were simply orbs of stone" ("Identification of Mount Pisgah," pp. 21, 68). Dr. Merrill has found a stone larger than his largest: namely, 11 ft. 4 in. in diameter and 3 ft. 8 in. in thickness; but it was certainly designed for a millstone. These "mysterious disks" are still quarried at several points in the Lejah, and the price varies, according to the size, from ten to twenty-five dollars. They are transported to the different towns of the country where they are in demand, not for purposes of superstition, but for the more practical ones of crushing olives and making flour.

In connection with the tombs at Sidon were found four small objects of stone, with characters inscribed upon them. The stones are of flint, and of different sizes, while of the characters, eight in all, no two are alike. Their weight is respectively: 1 oz. 8 dr., 1 oz. 9 dr., 1 oz. 11 dr., and 2 oz. 11 dr., avoirdupois. Dr. Birch, who examined them and had casts taken of them for the British Museum, declared them to be very interesting relics, and there are good reasons for considering them as ancient weights.

2. On the True Site of Nineveh, by Mr. Porter C. Bliss, of New York.

Mr. Bliss explained that he had prepared a brief statement of his views on this interesting question at the suggestion of another member of the Society, who was to have presented it to the meeting; but, the gentleman referred to having been at the last moment prevented from being present, he had been led to come himself to read it. His opinion was briefly this: that we are to accept the authority of Ctesias and Diodorus Siculus as superior to that of Herodotus, and to place the ancient Nineveh, the original capital of Assyria, upon the upper Euphrates with the two first, rather than upon the Tigris with the last. The main argument in modern times in favor of Herodotus is that the ruins of Nineveh are supposed to have been discovered upon the upper Tigris. But they have been found there at three different times, in as many places—by Botta at Khorsabad, by Layard at Nimrud, and by the latter's successors at Koyunjik: the last identification being regarded as completed by the quite recent discovery there by Mr. George Smith of the palace and library of Assur-bani-pal, whom he hesitatingly identifies with "the Sardanapis of the Greeks"; but these two characters cannot be made to harmonize in any appreciable degree. Rawlinson's present view, that Nineveh comprehended the whole group of cities, with Koyunjik in the centre, may be adopted with limitations—in the sense, namely, that the capitals of several Assyrian monarchs of the period of two or three centuries prior to the final overthrow of the empire were at the localities mentioned, and that any or all of them may have been designated as Nineveh, as that name had become synonymous with the empire and its capital at any given time. But the primitive city,
the Nineveh of Nimrud and Ninus and Semiramis and Sardanapalus, and of all Greek legend and history, was on the Euphrates. The inscriptions on the Tigris are silent as to all these characters. The name was transferred from the old empire, which came to an end with Sardanapalus, to that which arose later in the other region, much as the name of Rome was transferred to Constantinople, and still remains in Rosmalia and Roumelia.

The opportunities of Ctesias for gaining trustworthy information were much superior to those of any other ancient Greek, and his treatment of Assyrian history was fuller than any other. Diodorus deliberately adopted him as authority upon all vital points. The site of the Euphratean Nineveh also was not lost to historians for many centuries. It was the Hieropolis of the Syrian empire of the Seleucides. It was named Ninevo Claudipolis by an officer of the emperor Claudius. Philostorus, the biographer of Apollonius of Tyana, writing near by at Antioch, and founding his account on the memoirs of Darius, a native of Nineveh, states that Apollonius, starting from Antioch, tarried at Nineveh, and there crossed the Euphrates. The Egyptian records also seem irreconcilable with the Tigris location of the city, as is virtually admitted by Rawlinson. The traditions of Nimrod and Semiramis and Sardanapalus linger on the upper Euphrates, as they do not elsewhere.

Mr. Bliss believed the biblical Shinar also to lie upon the upper Euphrates and Chaboras, and the Casdim or Ur-Casdim of Genesis to have no necessary connection with the Chaldeas of the times of the captivity; he held that the whole theatre of the earliest biblical geography, from the Noachian flood downward to the time of Abraham, is placed in the region of the upper Euphrates, from Lebanon and the Mediterranean to the Taurus range of mountains.

3. Index Verborum to the published text of the Atharva-Veda, by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

Prof. Whitney said he had already been notified to the meeting that this Index would before long appear, as the twelfth volume of the Society's Journal. Its collection had been begun by him in 1850, and finished in 1875, having been in considerable part so carried on that its material should be furnished in timely installments to the editors of the Petersburg Lexicon. He spoke of the value of such complete special indexes of important texts to the students of a language, and of their especial importance in the case of a language like the Sanskrit, whose whole classical literature had an artificial aspect, being produced under government of the inviolable rules of a native system of grammar, while the older texts, of Veda and Brāhmaṇa, showed much more nearly the character of a vernacular literature. Of these texts, one, and by far the most important of all, the Rig-Veda, had already its Index, furnished by Grassmann, with a care and skill, and an unstinted expenditure of labor in order to promote in every way the convenience of those using it, which are worthy of the very highest commendation: its plan has been pronounced by Delbrück decidedly superior to that of any existing classical Index, even of those to Homer. Next to the Rig-Veda in importance is the Atharva-Veda, as standing second only to it in amount of true Vedic or mantra material. The material of this character, additional to that of Rig and Atharvan, which is scattered through the other Vedic texts and through the Brāhmaṇas and Sūtras, will have in its turn to be collected and sifted and indexed.

As a not inconsiderable part (about one seventh) of the Atharvan material is found also in the Rig-Veda, with greater or less differences of version, the Index will take due account of this by marking with a special sign, every reference which is virtually the repetition of a Rig reference, and with another sign every one at which the Rig offers a varying reading. The reading of the pada-text for every word and form will also be given, to render unnecessary any publication of that form of text. Moreover, in accordance with Grassmann, will be shown the metrical form of each word, as exhibiting resolution of long vowels, conversion of a semivowel into a vowel, and the like. In the few cases of a difference of reading among the manuscripts, and in the more numerous ones of a deviation of the edited text from the manuscript reading, the facts will be briefly but sufficiently noticed. Under each root will be mentioned all its primary derivatives, and under each stem all its secondary derivatives and compounds. A reversed Index of roots and stems, arranged in order of the final, will be given at the end.
4. Remarks on the Method and Processes of Comparative Mythology, by Mr. J. Luquiens, of Boston.

Dr. Luquiens presented a few remarks on certain studies in Comparative Mythology recently published in different English monthly, and criticised the laxity of method evinced by most or all of them. The bulk of his remarks, however, bore upon the undue value set on linguistic evidence in researches of this nature. Phonetical affinity was the unerring criterion of comparative mythology in the modest beginnings of that science. But since the latter from a mere annex to comparative philology has become an independent field bordering on the domains of theology and morals, its method ought to be enlarged as its scope has been. Now parity of form indicates at best common origin, but origin in its most external sense, a mere formal pedigree, and remains short of the inner meaning. Words are, after all, mere hulls, and it is by no means unfrequent for a noun to be emptied of its original meaning and filled anew. Adonis, as Mr. Gladstone justly remarks (IXth Century, October, 1879), means Jevovah in our Scriptures, and yet is the Adonis of Syria, loved by Aphrodite. Moreover, the force of phonetic evidence is chiefly retroactive; the fact that Homeric Zeus once meant 'the sky' may prove that further back in history the sky was worshipped; but from the fact that Indo-European Dyu was a naturalistic God it does not follow that the later Zeus was ever adored in any such materialistic sense by the Greeks.

The necessity of repeating these and other remarks is well illustrated by the essay written by Mr. J. Darmesteter for the Contemporary Review (October, 1879). This essay, a corollary to the more ambitious work of the same writer on "Ormazd and Ahriman," sets forth the plausible view that there was in the Indo-European period of unity one supreme God, namely "the Heavens;" but, not satisfied with a mere plausibility, the author assumes first that the Roman, Greek, Vedic, and Old Persian religions were alike, and actual naturalistic systems. This premise, controvertible in regard to the Latin and Greek mythologies, and utterly unfounded, it is believed, so far as Mazdeism is concerned, finds in truth no other support than a reckless interpretation of names and texts, as if they had still the meaning bespoken for them by etymology in a far distant and scarcely-known period of unity. This tendency to ascribe to words a mysterious inner cohesion, and to reduce the mental development of our race to mere linguistic phenomena, is again instanced in another chapter of the same essay. The writer announces gravely that he is about to explain how the naturalistic God of the Aryan became from a blind force of nature a moral God; this solution, however, is a wordy paraphrase of M. Müller's famous paradox, that mythology is a disease of language. Morality, in the Indo-European stage, rests upon a linguistic misunderstanding: in the Rig-Veda, to say "everything is in Varuna," that is, in the Heavens, and to say "everything is through Varuna," that is, through the Heaven God, are one and the same thing; "so theism is ever found side by side with unconscious pantheism, of which it is only an expression," and so on; and consequently "Aryan morality came down from heaven in a ray of light!" This conclusion may seem more brilliant than intelligible; but even the theory, much clearer, of our race's blundering into a moral conception is not without difficulties; for since all the Indo-European families acknowledged, in historical times, a personal God, we have to admit for all of them an identical and very surprising looseness of speech. Mr. Darmesteter appears to have a vague consciousness of this improbability; for he explains, on the same page, that "if ever since the Indo-European period of Aryan unity the theistic conception was more clearly defined than the others, it is because it has deeper roots in the human heart and human nature, which in every phenomenon sees a Living cause, a Personality." But this admission must lead to another: namely, that man, who took out of his deep-rooted fund of ideas the notion of personality, may well have borrowed from the same stock the rest of the outfit of his God; and, indeed, every step of the God-making process described by Mr. Darmesteter shows that man simply clothed his deity in attributes drawn from his inner consciousness and social experiences, and that the mysterious forces which our writer lodges on high were nothing but the moral instincts inherent in man's nature, and far older than the naturalistic Gods.
American Oriental Society:

On coming together in the afternoon, Prof. Gardiner in the chair, the Society continued to listen to communications.

5. On Catalectic Vedic verses of seven Syllables, by Prof. C. R. Lanman, of Baltimore, Md.

The great majority of Vedic verses may be classed as tetrapodies or hexapodies with general iambic movement. The iambic hexapody is the so-called jagatī-pāḍa of twelve syllables, and with a pretty strictly diatonic cadence: e.g. sā jāyam-纳斯 paramā viomani (i.43.2; et al.). The triṣṭubh-pāḍa is evidently a catalectic form of the same verse: e.g. sā jāyam纳斯 paramā viomani. Here the catalexis gives to the cadence a trochaic effect; but the essential similarity of the two hexapodies will probably be questioned by no one. The question is, now, whether catalectic tetrapodies, or verses of seven syllables, are admissible for the Veda, as well as catalectic hexapodies, or verses of eleven syllables.

The Hindu metrical authorities, as the Rig-Veda Prātiṣṭākhyā, though they admit in certain cases of 7-syllabled pāḍas, do not help us much. For they show, along with their acuteness in some cases, a great lack of it in others. Thus, of the verse prāśthānam u priyādātmā sthū likhī āttihīm agnīr rūdhrāmān yāmān (viii.9.10), the pāḍas are reckoned (RPr. xvi.10) as of 6, 8, and 7 syllables respectively; while the cadence requires that the third pāḍa be made of 8 by the resolution of -nām to -nañ̄, and that prāśthānam in the first be read prāśthānam, as almost invariably elsewhere in the Rig-Veda (and correspondingly in the Gāthās). Is then the resolution of -dm to -am, necessary in the third pāḍa, required also at the end of the first, extending the seven syllables to eight? The instance is a typical one, and it is seen that the Hindus leave us entirely in the lurch.

There are numerous cases in which pāḍas written as of 7 or 11 syllables have their ultimate capable of a resolution whose admissibility is proved by its necessity in other cases. They cannot be used for either side of the question in hand. The gen. pl. in ādīṃ, ādīṃ, ādīṃ, ākāṃ are the most frequent examples of such admissible resolution: in 359 cases where this is proposed by Grässmann, 248 are at the end of catalectic pāḍas of 7 syllables; 16 at the end of such of 11 syllables; and only 95 elsewhere. So of the 75 cases where resolution of the ending bhyan to bhēs is proposed, only 32 are imperative; 20 render catalectic the pāḍas of 11 syllables, and 23 those of 7. Again, of the 46 instances where Grässmann restores a syncopated a to stems in man, ran, an, the validity of the process is established by 12: e.g. sāmah kalṣē caṇīyāṃ[!]at pathā (ix.56.16: AV. and SV. actually read -pāmandā); of the rest, 27 are at the end of 7-syllabled, and 7 at the end of 11-syllabled pāḍas: e.g. nākhiyāy soma-pāndvē (vii.31.1).

Since all these cases, in which the penultimate is long and the ultimate is susceptible of resolution, are indecisive, the question must be discussed on the basis of pāḍas of other character. Thus:

1. With long or heavy (positionally long) penultimate, but the resolution of ultimate of doubtful admissibility: examples are aú ṅākād a’ parākdī’ (i.30.21), trāyantikāk hē devīs’s (x.137.5), ṣāhē kēkāc ċīd ēviṣ (viii.9.23), sāstikā mūrhyāmāñ̄e (i.29.3), nīryantuā ṣāantīs (iv.48.2), prāti yād in havishāna (i.127.10)—such are numerous.

2. With heavy penultimate which would however be made light (prosodically short) by the resolution: examples are mūvīn sā’ risāẖuṇīhyēs (i.129.8), evamahā sacathīhyēs (v.50.2), caṭāi gā’ dāthwabhīyēs (vi.47.24).

3. With an ultimate incapable of resolution: examples are yynāyā dāhrēkā rādman (x.105.9), samādī ṅāthi bhārman (vii.2.8).

4. With penultimate of doubtful resolution or yielding a faulty cadence if resolved: examples are yā asmībhīyam ārādē (ix.21.5), vīrō devīya nēti (v.50.1), ṛgmdī dāthīpyān māghīnās (v.86.3).

The combination in the same verse of triṣṭubh (11-syllabled) with jagatī (12-syllabled) pāḍas, though sometimes clearly avoided (as by the substitution of viomani for the more usual riomani in the pāḍa first quoted above), is nevertheless not very unusual. And it does not appear why the relation of a jagatī to a triṣṭubh is not entirely analogous with that of a pāṭvātī (8-syllabled) pāḍa to its catalectic form. If these things be allowed, and if further, as has been shown above,
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1880.

there is a necessity for admitting the existence of 7-syllabled pddas in some cases, there seems to be no reason why this admission should not be considerably extended, to those classes of pddas in which resolution of a final after a long penultimate is merely possible but not imperative.


Nearly fifty years have elapsed since the first attempt to construct the language of southwest Arabia, sometimes called Himyaric or Himyaritic, but better Sabean. In that time much has been done to fix its form, but notwithstanding the recent great increase of material (the number of inscriptions now known being over 800), many points of grammar are still obscure. This is not from any lack of zeal or acumen in the investigation, but partly because of the sameness of matter in the inscriptions (most of which are votive or mortuary), the same words and phrases continually recurring, and partly because of the absence of indication of vowels in the writing. It happens that some curious and interesting questions arise in connection with the inflexion of the noun, as to which the Semitic dialects are so generally substantially at one. On certain points recent writers are agreed: namely, that the noun has the postfixed m, hu, harm, and n (the vowels here used are conjectural), that the dual ends in ni, the fem. plural in t, and the construct masc. plural in yod, and sometimes in wa. But on further points of detail there is much difference of opinion, and not a great deal has been done towards bringing the phenomena into connection with those of the sister dialects.

The postfixed m is held with tolerable certainty to be the mimation, as in Assyrian (and in survivals of ancient forms in Hebrew), answering to the nunation in Arabic. We do not know with what vowel or vowels it was pronounced—that is, whether Sabean retained the old Semitic distinction of cases, or had dropped one or two of them, and, if so, which it had retained. Ostianer refers, indeed, to the expression מִן הנִוָד, 'male children,' in Brit. Mus. Inscr., 18. 6; as the noun is here in the accusative, this termination, if we are to read it wa, would go to show that Sabean had retained only the old nominative-ending; but this is contrary to what has occurred in other dialects, and is contradicted by the yod that elsewhere appears in Sabean; and, in any case, one such instance is insufficient to establish a rule. Whether the yod and wa were ever used in Sabean as mere vowel-letters, as in Arabic and Hebrew, is uncertain. An equally difficult question is, whether this m was employed as postfixed in the plural, as the m in Hebrew and the n in Arabic. It might seem an easy matter to determine this; but in fact, with our present material, it is not easy. Take, for example, the arguments of Col. Prideaux, who regards the m as the termination of the external plural (Trans. Soc. Bib. Arch., v. 419). 1. He thinks, after the analogy of the Arabic and Hebrew, that the plural ought to have the same ending as the singular. But Arabic has m in singular, and n in plural; and the dual, which in Hebrew and Arabic agrees in this respect with the singular and plural, has n in Sabean. It does not help to say, as Prideaux does, that this dual is a remnant of the second cardinal lani; for this numeral has n for its second radical in all the dialects; and, assuming the origin of the dual to be the same in all, we could not thus account for the occurrence of n in some, and m in others. 2. The expression מִן הנִוָד he renders, with Gessinus, 'King of the Himyarites,' and not (regarding the final m as mimation) 'King of Himyar,' on the ground that there was no region called Himyar, but only a people called Himyarites. But as to this we cannot be said to have trustworthy information. 3. He appeals to certain Arabic rules of nunation, as that 'nouns ending in n are dipotae,' that is, ununated, and 'proper names formed by a combination of two words are dipotae,' and regards the final m in such cases as plural sign. It is, however, precarious to transfer the rules of one language to another in this way, and we know that the Sabean mimation does not act always as the Arabic nunation. The rules, moreover, are stated too absolutely: Arabic allows nunation in some composites and some proper names in n, and in some compound proper names. And these latter actually occur with mimation in Sabean, as לְעֹד לְעֹד, 'servant of Shamun' (Brit. Mus. Insc., 13. 1); we cannot, therefore, assume the plural ending in מִן הנִוָד, 'Hadra-
maut.' It has been long since declared that Sabean proper names resemble the Hebrew and Phenician much more than they do the Arabic. 4. He cites some general Semitic grammatical rules. Thus, in Halesy Inscr., 87. 1: בַּע לֶשֶׁנ, 'officers of Bin,' he thinks the m plural sign, because the mimation would fall away in the sinig. construct; but it would, by the ordinary rule, equally fall away in the plural. The example from Hal., 215. 3: בַּע לֶשֶׁנ, 'five kabs,' is more pertinent. Certainly we should here expect the plural, and be inclined so to take it, though the gender makes a difficulty, but for the general difficulty to be presently mentioned. 5. The occurrence of such words as מַשְׁלֵם, 'enemy,' Os., 18. 10, and מַשְׁלָם, 'man,' Prid., 18, as collectives is too common to make it necessary to regard an m attached as plural sign. These examples are not conclusive, and against the supposition that the m is plural sign is the constant absence of the yod or case before it. True, Phenician constantly writes the plural defectively, but it does so in the construct as well as in the absolute, while Sabean construct regularly shows the yod. The Assyrian presents a different case: it has a masc. plural in ' (yod), and another in as, but this latter is rare, and it would hardly be safe to adduce it in support of a Sabean asm. But neither is there proof that a was the plural sign; the n has a different meaning, as will be shown below. The plenary sign of the plural as yet discoverable is yod, and, in one word, אֲלֵי, 'sons,' now; this n is a petrified survival of the old nominative, which has probably in the general usage yielded to the genitive.

The termination n, which occurs with verbs as well as with nouns, is an expression of emphasis. There is nothing in the context where it is found to fix it as a plural sign—it is, indeed, sometimes added to an internal plural; and as, in all Semitic dialects, it shows in the verb a strengthened sense, it is more natural to suppose such a sense in its use in the Sabean noun. It is often followed by han, which also occurs separately with the noun, in the definite demonstrative sense 'this.' The ending n is found in the construct state. The postfix n in, or in the Hadramaut dialect h and m, seems not to differ greatly in sense from those just mentioned. It might naturally be taken for the possessive suffix of the 3d sing. masc., but its use precludes this explanation; we can hardly translate בִּנְיָנָן הנ, 'his city of Nashk'-the only such construction we know is the Aramaic anticipatory suffix, and we should here render 'the city of Nashk'-which, however, is not the meaning intended in the inscription. The h or s has a demonstrative sense, like the Hebrew ha, but it is not clear that it has the power of the definite article.

These facts may point to an original coexistence of the demonstrative postfixes m and n in Semitic, which were attached to the primitive noun-verb. On the separation of the noun and verb, the n, we may suppose, was assigned to the verb in the primitive language, and has been retained in all the dialects except Ethiopic. Both m and n are employed with the noun, but the different dialects chose between them according to principles unknown to us; why Assyrian, for example, should have m in the singular, and n in the plural, has not yet been explained. This postfix, from having been at first merely a sign of general emphasis (Osiander), came after a while to be a definite indication of determination (in those dialects that did not develop an article), or of indetermination (in those that did). This rule, however, is not to be pressed too far; Sabean has no well-defined sujject, and yet its mimation is indeterminate. What is peculiar in Sabean is the use it makes of the postfix n in nouns, as above described; in no other Semitic dialect does this act as a demonstrative postfix. We may perhaps bring it into connection with the k, hu, han. The base of these is probably ha, and the last is a compound of ha and an. This ha is the original form of the accusative ending, and survives in Ethiopic as hd, while a is the ending in the construct. In Aramaic it has petrified into d as a sign of determination, nearly equivalent to an article. It is to be observed that Sabean n, Ethiopic a, and Aramaic d all occur in the construct state; it is frequently said that in Aramaic this is the result of decadence of force, but it seems more likely that it is an instance of the original flexibility of the form, which, as simply demonstrative, might stand before a determining noun, or not. How the postfix transliterated ha stands related to ha, it is hard to say; there are indications
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1880.

On a certain Phonetic Change in Zend, by Mr. Luquiens.

In his recent studies on Iranian phonetics Hübeschmann lays down the rule respecting δ as follows: "δ arose mainly from original d or a, under the influence of a preceding labial or of following u." The indefiniteness of this rule leaves room for exceptional formations; still I miss, both in the rule and in the author's comments, the mention of an important factor: there may be in δ a compensative element, as when it stands for original as: or, especially, when it results from the vocalization of β or δ between a and y, as in varmâyā, hōyām, kōyām, etc. It is to that factor, I think, that some of the anomalies may be ascribed; the cases of compensation, however, need not and cannot arise from the same causes; there is clearly a distinction to be made between forms like māvōya, khsēmahōya, hrōvōya, and those like akōya etc.

1. māvōya, khsēmahōya are supposed by many, and by Hübeschmann himself, to stand for the dative case of the personal pronouns asem and yasem, namely for masaya and khasmahōya; but this opinion accounts neither for the presence of the d, nor for that of the i in the first syllable. Now there are in the Gandās possessive forms like khsēmdwāti, tudrāhi, marwāti (this latter, to be sure, ought to read māvdwātī), used personally, as in daēnīm yē khsēmdwātī, 'the law which is of you;' with one exception, those forms belong to the Gandās. On the other hand, the dative forms masaya and khasmahōya, with one exception (Vd. 20. 22), are unknown to the medieval Zend—which leads to the plausible surmise that the possessive forms khsēmdwāti and māvdwātī have taken their place in the dative, and also their ending, namely bya; hence the forms khsēmahōya standing for khsēmdwāga (it is common for suffix aīt to wear out into an), and māvdwāya for māvōya; the vocalization of the b is well supported even among pronouns as yasēmahōya for yasēmdwāga, dat. of yasēm; and hrōvōya stands in a like relation to the possessive hūdāya, from hēnu.

2. In forms like akōya, isōya, etc., δ suggests to me the vocalization of an organic s (h in Zend) before y—that is, akōya is perhaps simply the genitive case of asa, and stands for akōya=asa=a; isōya for isahya; and so with hūdōya, hādōya. Jōya (Y. 32.7) is more difficult; a genitive case it is not; I see in it a participial form jahya, from root jah=gah, 'come, end.' Of the possibility of the process there is little doubt; not only will such Vedic forms as akōya, askhāya, duvēya, but also the more cogent fact of the Homerīc genitive, speak in its behalf.

The regular change of asēh=as to δ or dāh before suffixes beginning with a sonant may offer a support to my surmise, which is strengthened moreover by a reading of the Vendidad-Sade, Brockhaus's edition, in Y. 43.8, namely khasathrōya for khsathrāhyāt (it occurs in the same stanza as isōya, yet the plea of "attraction" is not admissible, from an unknown and anomalous to a clear and usual form; the contrary might rather be expected). Finally, the sense of the passages concerned may be taken as conclusive evidence: Y. 51.8: iyat akōya drugātī usi yē asēm dādērī: 'That he may be of harm to the wicked, and weal to him who has maintained the holy order.' The same idea in a more forcible form is found in Y. 43.8: daēhēbdō hyat isōya drugātī at asēhmā hyēm rafān asōāhtāt: 'That I may be a plague of might to the wicked, a powerful help to the righteous.' Here, indeed, the parallelism between isōya and asōāhtat amounts to positive evidence. In Y. 43.2, atēt amēt ekpēnām rakhīmēm gāhērgyāt naē gāhērm dādētātāt: 'To him would belong everyday the best of the fire who should receive (give?)
the fire with thy understanding,' etc. This is a coarse and approximate rendering; but the thought, harsh as it is, finds a parallel in the next verse: 'he would come to something better than the good, who should teach us,' etc.

The passage in Y. 32.7, which contains hādrāyā and jōgā, is even more difficult than the last, both syntactically and etymologically; yet the admission of a genitive value for hādrāyā would certainly simplify the problem. I venture a rendering, premature perhaps, in which I give jōgī hādrāyā a sense similar to the Vedic phrase dījau aśāye: 'In the fray for the gain, he does not know the outcome of the violence he teaches,' etc.

8. Mr. John Westall, of Fall River, Mass., called the attention of the Society to certain representations of the resurrection on Egyptian monuments, and remarked briefly upon them.


The substance of Prof. Whitney’s paper was as follows:

A peculiar and striking phonetic feature of the classical Sanskrit is, as is well known, the strictness of the rules governing the combination of words in the sentence. These are in general the same which regulate the combination of members of a compound word: namely, the avoidance of hiatus, and the assimilation of surd and sonant finals and initials. By some they are regarded as a great advantage and merit of the language; by others, as certainly not in their full extent a possible characteristic of vernacular speech, but as more or less artificial, or even a figment of the native grammarians.

So far as the combination of final vowels (not diphthongs) with initial vowels and diphthongs is concerned, much light is cast upon the rules from the Vedic texts. These, though written according to the later rules, are required by the metre to be read very differently, with extremely frequent resolution of the combined elements, and restoration of hiatus. Here, however, there is a noteworthy difference between the class of cases in which an i- or u-vowel is by rule to be changed into y or r before a dissimilar vowel, and the class in which two vowel elements are to be fused into a long vowel or diphthong. In the former class, the i- or u-vowel prevalently maintains its vowel-value unaltered. This is so to a considerable extent even in the processes of internal change, especially in declension; in composition, the cases of retention are to those of conversion to semivowel, in the Rig-Veda, about as 11 to 1 (see Dr. Edgren, in these Proceedings for Oct., 1878), and in sentence-combination (ibid.) the proportion against y and r is still greater; in the Atharva-Veda the condition of things is nearly the same. In the other class of cases (chiefly the combination of a or a with a following vowel or diphthong) the proportion is decidedly the other way, although in every department are found examples of disregard of the later rules. In internal combination, the exceptions are only sporadic: in composition, such cases as gṛhaṁna, deviśāksa, ārkaśāk, as compared with ajīvi, devīśākta, trōhi, apīti, etc., are a very small minority in RV., and in AV. almost unknown; and in the sentence, the fusion is prevalent in RV., and still more so in AV. In both classes of cases, the mode of unification is practically the same in internal and in external combination; and the fact in regard to the latter may with evident plausibility be stated thus: the contractions of two vocalic elements, final and initial, into one syllable, which were admissible in the oldest language, and more or less frequent according to the nature and circumstances of the combination, have later been artificially made obligatory in all situations.

In the treatment of final diphthongs before an initial vowel, the rules of external combination are different from those of internal; the former require or permit (except in the case of e or o before a) the loss of the final element of the diphthong, a or d remaining, with hiatus before the initial vowel. The persistence of this hiatus testifies to the comparatively recent loss of the intervening y or r; and, on the other hand, the occasional fusion, even in the Veda, of the two vowels across the hiatus indicates that this loss is a genuine one, and began before the date of the classical language. Without going into details, it may be said that the general authenticity of the phenomena expressed by the rule is not open to serious question.
As regards the loss of initial a after final e or o, invariably required in the later language, it has been often pointed out that the Vedic usage is very different. In RV., the a remains except in about 1/4 per cent. of the instances (see Prof. Avery, in these Proceedings for May, 1879); in AV., the proportion of loss has risen to about 18 per cent.; it is, then, so plainly a growing tendency, that we do not need to wonder at its being later, in the general inclination to uniformity, raised to the rank of a necessary rule. The phonetic explanation is difficult; but it seems not unlikely, considering the way in which the accent of the lost a is represented in that of the remaining diphthong, that the latter is a prakritic contraction of -ay a- and -av a- respectively.

In consonant combination, the most noteworthy general difference between internal and external is that in the latter a final surnd mute must be made sonant before vowels and semivowels and nasals, while in the former surds are admitted as freely as sonants before these classes of sounds. On this point we can gain no light from the Veda; it is, at any rate, written according to the rules of the classical language, and there is no test which we can apply to determine the faithfulness of the representation. It is not impossible that we have to recognize here a degree of artificiality: a peculiar assimilation establishing itself first in compounds, and thence extended to sentence-locations. Sporadic instances of such assimilation also before suffixes occur very early, but do not become more common later.

The general assimilation of m, one of the most common of finals, to a following initial consonant is natural enough to pass without challenge, although we may be uncertain as to the time when it became obligatory.

As to final n, the most remarkable point is its treatment in certain situations as ns; that is to say, the retention in external combination of an original word-ending ns, of which the sibilant has elsewhere disappeared, and then the extension by analogy of the same process, misapprehended as a phonetic one, to cases where the s is not historically justified. This is, beyond anything else in the rules of external combination, a voucher of their genuineness. Indications to a like effect, but of less importance and more questionable character, are seen in other " euphonic insertions" after nasals.

The treatment of s, the most frequent of all final consonants, is a subject of prime consequence, and of no small intricacy and difficulty. Before a pause, final s becomes a breathing, the -śarga, or h; and the Hindu grammar makes this substitute the starting-point for its other changes: but with evident injustice, since the latter go back rather to the original s. Before surds appear in general natural assimilations of the sibilant, in part with allowed substitutions of h. Even before palatal and labial surd mutes, unaltered s is in the Veda the rule in composition (only one exception in RV., and three in AV.), and quite common in sentence-locating. The reduction to a breathing tends to extend itself from isolated use to various other varying situations; the steps of the process and their chronology are not determinable in detail. In internal combination, the change appears only before μ of the loc. pl., and there merely optionally.

After other vowels than a and d, s before sonants becomes r in external combination. In internal, this change is made only before bh of case-endings: not even before dh of a personal ending—although such an occurrence, if it be found at all, is of extremest rarity. The genuineness and relative antiquity of the conversion to r are vouched for by the Vedic examples of śar and āhr, which no grammatical theory could have devised. The extension of a kind of sonant assimilation found only before a mute within the word to collision with vowels etc. outside the word stands obviously on the same plane with the similar treatment of a final surd mute. After d, the complete loss of s before a sonant is universal. Within the word, the same loss appears to take place before dh of a personal ending: but the examples of its actual occurrence are very few, hardly half-a-dozen. The quantity of the vowel thwarts the attempt to trace a difference of usage in Vedic verse.

The ending as becomes in general o in external combination before a sonant consonant. The phonetic explanation of this change is one of the most difficult problems in Sanskrit euphony: the suggestion that ar has been an intermediate step between as and o does not seem to remove any of the difficulty, nor to be defensible by good evidence. It is perhaps worthy of note that the conversion to the lingual semivowel r is made in cases where the sibilant, if retained as sibilant,
would become the lingual sh (e.g. caśahur, havir beside caśahuk, havāhuk; but mano beside manasa). The same conversion is frequent in inflection before dh of a case-ending; but is never seen before dh of a personal ending (the only quotable examples, however, of the combination are edhi for as-dhi and sudvāma [sudvāmā i] for ras-dhāram). In derivation, as retained unchanged before semivowels and nasals is common (e.g. dasya, dasra, dasvan, namasaṇaṇi, dasma, varn); there are a very few sporadic exceptions (ahdyoyu, duvör, akydhoyu in RV.; sahovan in AV.; tejomaya and its like later).

The later rule is that as becomes o before initial a, with loss of the a. Where, in accordance with what was noted above, the a remains in earlier usage, the preceding final is always written o, both in composition and in sentence-collocation; but the requirements of Vedic metre would often be better served by understanding the combination as as a or as a: and, as between these two, the latter, involving the same conversion as before a sonant consonant, appears at present decidedly the more probably assumable. So too before other vowels, where the s or its substitute is recently lost, and the hiatus remains, the analogy of the treatment of as before sonants in general, and that of the loss of final element of a diphthong, make it altogether likely that the change has gone through the intermediate step of an o, and that the loss is of a v.

As to r, it need only be remarked here that its not infrequent retention in the Veda before a surd in composition (as sarsh, purpuri, etc.) indicates that there may be an element of artificiality in the later rule whereby r shows in such positions the same form which a s would show.

10. On Zoroaster and Zoroastrianism, by Mr. J. N. Fradenburgh, of Franklin, Pa.; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

Mr. Fradenburgh begins with referring to the notices of the Persian religion found in the Bible and in the classical authors. He next sketches the history of later European study of the Zend language and writings; he describes these writings; and he then proceeds to a characterization of the religion and an account of its foundering, and closes with a description of the present condition of its followers, the Parsis.


Prof. Jenks glanced at the changes in the relative position of Christian and Moslem powers which have taken place during the past three quarters of a century, and the increased ascendancy of the former, and related a few incidents of his own experience in connection with them. He urged the performance of certain duties toward the now thoroughly subordinated Mohammedans; to furnish them with a Christian diplomacy and code of international law, which, in the interests of peace, should be enforced on Moslem and Christian nations alike, and a representative world's congress; to impose entire religious toleration; to acknowledge a religious fellowship between Christian and Moslem; and to cease misunderstanding and contemnning Moslems and their belief.

After the conclusion of this paper, the usual vote of thanks to the American Academy for the use of its room was passed, and the Society adjourned, to meet at New York in October next.
Proceedings at New York, October, 1880.

The autumn meeting was held in the Chapel of Columbia College, New York City, on Thursday, October 28th, 1880, commencing at 10 o'clock A.M.

The President, Vice-Presidents, and Recording Secretary being absent, Rev. W. Hayes Ward, D.D., of New York, was called to the chair; and Prof. C. H. Toy, D.D., of Cambridge, Mass., was appointed secretary pro tempore.

The Society accepted with thanks an invitation from Chanc. Howard Crosby, D.D., to meet socially in the evening at his house. A lunch was provided at noon by the liberality of persons connected with Columbia College, in the College refectory.

The Directors gave notice that they had designated Wednesday, May 25th, 1881, as the day of the next annual meeting, and the Recording Secretary and Dr. N. G. Clark, as Committee of Arrangements for it. They also recommended for Corporate Membership the following persons, who were thereupon duly elected by ballot:

Rev. Gustav Gottheil, of New York;
Rev. Adolphus Huebsch, of New York;
Mr. W. W. Rockhill, of Baltimore, Md.;
Rev. W. H. Sloan, of Albion, N. Y.

The Corresponding Secretary read extracts from the correspondence of the past half-year.

Rev. C. Bennett writes from Rangoon, in July, 1880, along with a donation to the Library of a number of missionary publications, in Burmese, Shan, and Karen:

"... There has not been much doing here for some time in the way of languages, but recently a professor of Pali has been attached to the Government High School, who is making researches in Pali as it exists in Burma. He has unearthed some old inscriptions on slabs that have been buried on the east side of Shway-da-gong Pagoda, but so recently that I am unable to report further upon them.

We have lately added to the Shan literature a "Manual" in Shan and English, by Rev. Mr. Cushing, and have in press, and nearly half completed, a Shan-English and English-Shan dictionary.

We have also in press a revised and enlarged edition of Dr. Judson's Burman and English Dictionary, but it has as yet only got into the second consonantal letter.

The Government is bringing out a valuable publication, in two quarto volumes. The one volume is a Gazetteer of British Burma, and the other an Introduction containing all accessible reliable information, historical and ethnological etc., on the country, including a good portion, if not all, of what was valuable in the work of Dr. Mason on Burma. The manuscript of his revised "Burmah" went into the hands of the Government soon after his death, and has remained there for years, although there was at one time talk of printing it." . . .
Communications were then presented, as follows:

1. On the Alexandrian Obelisk, or so-called Cleopatra's Needle, in the New York Central Park, by Prof. G. Seyffarth, of New York.

Prof. Seyffarth referred briefly to the circumstances of gift and transfer of the obelisk, gave its dimensions, and proceeded to discuss its origin and antiquity. He pointed out that the popular opinion connecting it with Cleopatra has no foundation, as it was re-erected at Alexandria in the eighth year of the emperor Augustus, or B.C. 20, consequently after Cleopatra's death, and bears the names and titles of two kings who reigned earlier by eighteen and sixteen centuries; so that it was probably one of the works overthrown by Cambyses, B.C. 520. The two kings are Thuthmos III. and Rameses II. Prof. Seyffarth went on to discuss their age, and maintained that the former was the Pharaoh drowned in the Red Sea at the exodus of the Hebrews, which he believed to have taken place B.C. 1866; while Rames the Great died B.C. 1664.


A very brief abstract of Dr. Martin's paper is as follows:

Ritual observances occupy a large place in the Chinese scheme of government. Of these, none are cherished and inculcated with more care than those connected with the worship of ancestors. The Emperor sets an example of filial piety by associating his ancestors with Shangti, the Supreme God, in the sacrificial offerings which, as high priest of the empire, he makes at the temple of Heaven; tablets inscribed with their names being ranged on the right and left of that which bears the august name of the Ruler of the Universe.

Each family worships its own forefathers—twice a year at the cemetery, and twice a month at the family temple.

The influence of these rites has been no less beneficial than profound. They constitute a potent bond of social union; supply motives to deter from evil, and stimulate to good; and through ages past they have contributed to keep alive the popular faith in a future state.

This form of religion, though traceable in remote ages, derives its binding force largely from the authority of Confucius. As taught by him, it was free from two objectionable features: namely, the practice of invoking the spirits of ancestors as tutelar deities, and the superstitious belief that the location of their tombs has an effect on the destinies of their posterity.

Chinese of the upper classes, and indeed of all classes, are often deterred from embracing Christianity by being required to renounce the worship of their ancestors. Is it necessary to subject them to this ordeal? May they not be taught to abandon those superstitions which are excrescences on the ancient system, and yet retain the spirit and essence of an institution which might thus be rendered purely commemorative?


Prof. Hall presented the results of his investigations upon this point (which he had communicated at greater length to an English society) in substance as follows:

The Curetonian Syriac is known to read ܚܣܒܢܐ, 'heavy,' instead of ܒܢܒܢܐ, 'burning,' in Luke xxiv. 32; and it seems to be thought by the critics to be supported only by the Thebais, and perhaps by the Armenian. (See, for example, Scrivener's Plain Introduction to the Criticism of the New Testament, ed. 1874; and ed. viii. of Tischendorf's Critica Major N. T., at the passage in question.)

The difference between the two readings depends solely upon a single point of the last letter. At the top it gives the first reading, at the bottom the second. No one conversant with Syriac MSS. will readily admit that the point has been misplaced by a copyist's mistake; it rather dates back to the time when the Syriac doulaḥ and rish came first to be distinguished from each other by point;
when, most likely, the Syrians affixed the one which gave the meaning they had come already to apply to the unpointed letter.

The additional testimony I have found to this reading is the following:

A. The Philoxenian or Harclean Syriac. 1. The Codex I discovered in Beirut in 1876, nearer to the original Philoxenian than to the Harclean, reads ḫaba, which is the same reading with only the prefix conjunction dolath. 2. White's edition (Oxford, 1778) of the Philoxenian, the only one yet printed, reads ḫaba; which is the same reading as that of the Beirut codex, except that (perhaps by a printer's error) the second yād is omitted. White indeed translates by 'ardēnā,' but as he gives the Philoxenian margin saγyraν—unexplainable if the original Syriac in the MS. or MSS. read so as to mean ardēnā—it is probable that White has made a mistake in translating, and given the right letter in the text. As it is, White's text has the verbal form instead of the participial.

B. The Peshito. 1. The above Philoxenian and Harclean readings are no slight testimony to the ancient Peshito reading. 2. The editio princeps of Widmanstadt, 1555, reads ḫa. This was based on two Jacobite MSS., of alleged excellence. 3. The Four Gospels, printed by the British and Foreign Bible Society in 1829, based on one Nestorian MS. brought from Mosul by the missionary Wolff, has also the reading ḫa. 4. The American missionaries to the Nestorians found this to be the reading of the ancient MSS. there, and the one current among the Nestorian ecclesiastics. (See Dr. Justus Perkins' Residence of Eight Years in Persia [Audover, 1843], throughout, and particularly pp. 16, 17, where he specially mentions the fact, and the testing of one MS.). Dr. Perkins translated the Peshito New Testament into Modern Syriac, and in the translation gave the equivalent of this reading in the text, with that of the Greek in a foot note. This was several times reprinted; but in the American Bible Society's Mod. Syr. N. T. of 1884, the text is changed to correspond with the Greek, for the reason that the Bible Soc. declined to print any more editions unless they were made to conform to the Greek. The American missionaries also issued the Peshito, the Old and New Testaments separate, in parallel columns with the Modern Syriac. This has always retained this reading; which, moreover, has never been thrust out by the American Bible Society; for it appears in their edition of the original Syriac printed in New York in 1874. Under this head is also to be mentioned a Nestorian MS. deposited by Dr. Perkins at the A. B. C. F. M. rooms at Boston, and still there. It is of the 12th century, and has the same reading. 5. A Syriac Lectionary (presented at this meeting), which generally gives the church lessons after the Greek order, which was obtained by Dr. C. V. A. Van Dyck from the papal Jacobite Monastery in Damascus, has the same reading; only by accidentally omitting the second yād, the word has the verbal instead of the participial form. The Lectionary is of the 12th or 13th century. 6. An ancient Jacobite MS. of the four Gospels in the library of the Union Theo. Sem. in New York, wrongly supposed by its custodians to be Nestorian, of the 10th to 12th century, has also the same reading. 7. An Evangelistarium in the library of the American Bible Society, written in splendid Estrangelia, with here and there a note in Jacobite, said to be arranged after the Jacobite order, and probably of the 13th century, has also this reading.

There is thus a primâ facie case made out for the supposition that this is the true reading not only of the Curetonian, but also of the Philoxenian (or Harclean) and the Peshito. But the last word is to be said by the abundant MSS. in Europe.

4. Statistics of External Vowel-Combination in the Rig- and Atharva-Vedas, by Prof. W. D. Whitney and Mr. W. Haskell, of New Haven; presented by Prof. Whitney.

Prof. Whitney stated that, at the last meeting of the Society (see Proceedings for May, 1880; Journal, vol. xi., p. xxxii.), when discussing the laws of external sandhi of vowels in Sanskrit, he had drawn attention to the notable difference of usage in Vedic verse as regards, on the one hand, those combinations in which there is a coalescence of final and initial into a single vowel or diphthong, and, on the other hand, those in which an i- or u-vowel precedes a dissimilar vowel,
American Oriental Society:

and, in order to the union of the two syllables into one, would have to be semi-vocalized, into y or v (w)—the former being usual, the latter only exceptional. He was not able, at the time referred to, to speak with the desirable degree of precision in respect to this usage, but had since taken pains, with the help of Dr. Haskell, to make such examination of the two leading Vedic texts as enabled him to supply at present what had then been left wanting. Dr. Edgren, namely, has set forth with sufficient fulness (Proceedings for October, 1878; Journal, vol. xi., p. 71) the Rig-Veda usage as to the combination of a final i- or u-vowel with a following initial in word-composition; the speaker had added the facts as to the treatment of coalescing vowels in the same situation; and he had further assembled the corresponding facts from the Atharva text. Then, in order to bring in the other division of the external sandhi, that regarding the combination of separate words in the sentence, he had noted all the facts from a sufficient part of the Atharva-Veda; namely, the first four books and the tenth book (for certain particular combinations, from the whole text); and Dr. Haskell had done the same for books three and four of the Rig-Veda text, which, considering the general uniformity of the phenomena, was regarded as illustrating fully enough the Rig-Veda usage as to the points in question. The results are presented below, in tabular form.

First are given the combinations of i and u with a following dissimilar vowel in composition, the data for the Rig-Veda being taken (with some corrections and additions) from Dr. Edgren's article above referred to. As also in the next table, the numbers of separate stems and of their occurrences are given separately.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rig-Veda</th>
<th>Atharva-Veda</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>st. occ.</td>
<td>st. occ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i + vowel</td>
<td>9 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u + vowel</td>
<td>6 25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>15 41</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The compounds of ac or aic are excluded here, as in the statements below, although they might properly enough, at least in most cases, have been reckoned with the rest. The ratio of occurrences of combination of the two syllables into one is, it will be seen, for the Rig-Veda about 1 to 13 (7.3 per cent.) for the Atharva-Veda, about 1 to 4½ (18.7 per cent.). The difference between the two is evidently not fortuitous, but shows an increasing frequency of combination in the later text, although the cases of it still constitute only a small minority.

Next follow the data for the treatment in composition of vowels that coalesce into a single vowel or diphthong:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rig-Veda</th>
<th>Atharva-Veda</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>st. occ.</td>
<td>st. occ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a, a and a, d</td>
<td>115 312</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; i, t</td>
<td>19 27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; u, a</td>
<td>16 45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; r</td>
<td>3 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; c, ai</td>
<td>2 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; o, au</td>
<td>6 44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; i, t</td>
<td>9 32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u, a &quot; u, a</td>
<td>6 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>176 456</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Here, as is evident at a glance, the relation of the cases of combination to those of maintained independence of the vowels is directly reversed. The hiatus remains, in the Rig-Veda, in only about 1 case out of 6 (or in 17.4 per cent of the occurrences); in the Atharva-Veda, in less than a fourth of the cases (2.3 per cent.): the latter text, as before, showing a noticeable advance toward the usages of the later Sanskrit.
Proceedings at New York, October, 1880.

The data for the combinations of the sentence are presented below in a single comprehensive table, and with greater detail as regards the different vowels concerned. The numbers marked with an asterisk (*) include the cases occurring in the whole Atharvan text; the others, only those found in the passages defined above (R.V. i., ii.; A.V. i., iv., x.).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a and a</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>204</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; a</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; i</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>99</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; e</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; w</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; o</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; a</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>23*</td>
<td>5*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; e</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>&quot; &quot; o</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; &quot; o</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>&quot; &quot; du</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Total | 426 | 58 | 822 | 121 |

It appears from this table that in all respects, with regard to the two classes of vowel-combination, the usage is closely parallel in sentence-collocation with the usage in composition. As between coalescing vowels, the combination is actually made in the Rig-Veda in more than seven-eighths (88 per cent.) of the instances; in the Atharva-Veda, in almost precisely the same proportion (87 per cent.). But in cases involving conversion to a semivowel, the combination is made in the Rig-Veda only in one-fiftieth of the instances (2 per cent.); in the Atharva-Veda, in less than a quarter (24 per cent.). And here, as in the cases treated above, the usage of the Atharvan, as compared with that of the Rik, makes a perceptible advance, though by no means a near approach, toward that of the later language.


In his paper, *Empreintes de Cylindres Assyro-Chaldéens*, M. Ménant has stated his objections regarding the temptation of the first pair as represented on an ancient cylinder, on which are figured, apparently, a man and a woman sitting one on each side of a tree, plucking its fruit, while behind the woman is an erect serpent. George Smith (Chaldean Genesis, p. 91), gives this interpretation, and is followed by Delitzsch and Baudissin. But Ménant says that the two personages "are two men, such as are found on numerous analogous cylinders;" that "the
American Oriental Society:

tree has nothing in common with the tree of the terrestrial paradise; ” and, finally, that ” the serpent appears in this scene only as in a large number of others, where his presence is as yet unexplained.” It were to be desired that M. Ménant had referred us to the "numerous analogous seals" which he speaks of. The appearance of the serpent is quite rare on the seals. In 111 seals and cylinders published by Ménant, there is not another representation of the serpent. Among 30 or 40 figured by Lajard, not one contains a serpent. In Lajard’s ‘Céline de Méthra, the best collection published, out of about 200 there is only one other that contains a serpent, and that is the chief figure of the cylinder, having a human head and six folds. In Cullimore’s Oriental Cylinders, 4 out of 169 seem to contain a serpent, probably Cabiric. Besides, there is Dr. S. Wells Williams’s cylinder, on which a serpent takes the place of the usual griffin pursued by Merodach. The serpent does not seem to have been a common emblem. As to the tree having "nothing in common with the tree of the terrestrial paradise," it is not clear how M. Ménant knows this. No monumental testimony explains the worship of the tree, and there is evidence that it was called the "tree of life." That there should have been a legend of the Fall corresponding to that in Genesis, is in itself probable. As to the two figures being both masculine, there is no evidence offered, and the statement lacks probability. One of the figures is plainly masculine, although the usual beard is not given in the representations published. But the arrangement of the hair on the back of the head, and the horns, fix it as masculine. The other figure is without beard or horns, and there are no masculine signs. Ménant says (Empreintes, p. 46) that, in the frequently recurring group on the cylinders, where a bearded god sits on a throne and a beardless personage in a flounced dress and a peaked cap, and with a waving horizontal lock of hair behind, leads by the hand another beardless figure, as if presenting it to the god, the two beardless figures are also both masculine. But this flounced figure, which occurs scores of times, is never bearded, and must be feminine. Ménant says there are cylinders in which the "neophyte" led in is bearded. This is true, and there are also cases where it has the head of a bird, probably the wicked Zü bird: and it disproves the notion that this is the virgin brought every night to the bed of Belus; but a better explanation is that there is figured a scene in Hades, and that souls of the dead, male or female, are being brought for judgment to the god Hes. The streams occasionally flowing from the sitting figure show it to be Hes. Figure 18 of Cullimore’s Oriental Cylinders, in which two figures, unquestionably male and female, sit one on each side of a table, is convincing evidence that a male and a female figure may be put τητα-τιζε: compare, also, the famous cylinder of Dungi, where a bearded and a beardless figure stand one on each side of a similar tree with hanging fruit, best figured in Tompkins’s Times of Abraham, Pl. 111., H. The only evidence against the cylinder under consideration representing a legend of the temptation is found in Ménant’s Catalogue (of the Œdipus) in the Museum of the Hague, fig. 14, where is seen a very similar tree with depending fruit, and a standing feminine figure on each side plucking it, while one hands it to a third female figure. There is here, however, no serpent.

Another question is raised by the notched or saw-like sword, always carried in the right hand by one of the gods, who appears regularly with: profile face to the left, and with the right foot raised and resting on a square support, as in Cullimore, figs. 29, 44, 45, etc. This is probably the same god as the seated winged figure, Lajard, L. i, and again, standing between two columns, in Smith’s Chaldean Genesis, p. 159. I would suggest that this notched weapon was of wood with flint teeth set in the edge, as in the case of the Mexican weapon called mayahuitl: see Stephen’s Yucatan, i. 413. It is noticeable that two of the hieroglyphics in the Hittite inscriptions, Nos. 10 and 44 of my catalogue, are weapons of a very similar sort. I do not, however, know other evidence that weapons armed with flints were ever in use in the Old world.

Mr. Smith, in his Chaldean Genesis, pp 158-9, gives figures of three cylinders which may, he thinks, represent the building of a tower, perhaps of Babel: see other figures. Lajard, xvii. 3, 4, xii. 8; xiii. 13; Cullimore, fig. 165; and Ménant’s Catalogue of the Hague, 15. 16. These can hardly be towers. When most perfect, they seem to have projections on one side at the top and below on which to swing. The ornamental lines on top of them in one cylinder hardly agree with
towers. Can they be a portable sacred column, to be carried about and stuck in the ground where wanted? In one case this “tower” is adorned with two wings like those of the divine circle, and has a stream flowing from near its top into the lap of a woman on one side, and on the other to the ground, where a man puts his hands into it. The wings can hardly belong to a gate or a tower. They represent a special divine influence, as does, probably, the stream. In a cylinder in Smith’s Chaldean Genesis, p. 106, of much later date, two streams descend from a divine winged circle, which the Assyrian king is holding, as if to receive the divine influence.

6. A Greek Inscription from over a city-gate in Beirut, by Prof. Isaac H. Hall.

Though the city of Beirut has long outgrown its old walls, yet much of the wall and several of the gates still remain. One of these, a minor one, stands over an alley—a very respectable ancient street, however—which leads off into the old city from the wide street running from near the American press down to the Place du Canom. The level of the alley is now some seven or eight feet below that of the wide street, and the width of the gateway is six or seven feet. Over the gateway is an arch; but under the arch, and forming a supplementary lintel, are two long stones, one above the other, each bearing two lines of an inscription. The lines are about eight feet long and the letters about three and a half inches high. The stones and the inscription are much older than the wall or the gateway, and were apparently built in for their preservation. The letters are not deeply cut, but are quite legible. Their shape gives no certain clue to their date. The letters sigma and epsilon have the rounded forms of the uncial manuscripts; the lambda nearly that of the cursive character, though it does not project above the line; the theta is a circle with a dot in the middle; and the omega is like those of the uncial manuscripts, but turned upside down. There is no division between the words.

Shortly before I left Beirut I went down to copy the inscription, in the blazing noonday; but having no ladder, the nearest approach to copying on a level was to stand on the supporting wall of the wide street above, some twenty feet off. Then I could descend and come nearer; but, in any way I could manage it, the inscription was several feet away. I suspect, therefore, that I have made a mistake or two in the copy, which will be noticed presently. The following is the copy as I made it:

(1.) ΤΗΣΤΩΥΠΡΩΟΙΟΝΤΟΚΑΝΑΡΟΣΧΝΟΙΑΚΑΣΙ
(2.) ΣΑΓΙΟΣΣΕΙΤΩΧΟΧΙΡΟΟΙΟΙΕΙΝΚΑΙ
(3.) ΔΙΑΟΤΙΠΟΥΜΠΟΙΠΑΡΕΧΙΟΧΗΜΘΑΙΟΤ
(4.) ΠΑΡΑΓΑΡΤΟΜΕΙΚΡΟΝΙΕΙΝΤΑΙΠΗΡΗΧΑΙΙΟΙ

On studying the inscription carefully, it seems all right except the second line. The lines are four verses of iambic trimeter, but neither sense nor meter is apparent in the second line as it now reads. The natural emendations to be thought of are an η for the first ε (though as inscriptions are cut and manuscripts are written, the two letters sometimes change places); a ζ in place of the ε after οψ, as the difference consists only in the middle stroke, for which I have doubtless mistaken a scratch; and a η for the η. These emendations had suggested themselves some time ago; but to get a better opinion, I submitted the copy to Dr. Drieler, of Columbia College, who independently suggested the same. Meanwhile I have written to Beirut for a new examination of those points. The probability is that I have made the mistakes; but I have found heretofore that stonc-cutters and scribes do sometimes make mistakes of their own.

Adopting these emendations, the inscription becomes, written in modern shape:

Της τοι προσώπου ανδρός έννοιας άλη
σοφός έλεγχος η πρόσωπος γείνεται·
διδόν προδίμως ο παρέξεις η μη δίδου,
παρα γάρ το μεικρόν γείνεται πλάρες χάρις.

Of the disposition of the approaching man over the sight becomes a clear proof:
give readily what thou hast by thee, or give not; for with the little comes full favor.'

Whether these lines are taken from one of the (comic) poets or not, I do not know; but if so, this stone copy is probably as ancient authority as any extant manuscript. I suspect that they formerly occupied a place in connection with some Greek ecclesiastical building. One cannot help thinking, however, of the famous law-schools and other semi-gospel institutions of Berytus, among which the Xenodocheia were very prominent. The student of the Pædæcts can raise many conjectures. At present the inscription is directly across the way from the institution of the French Sisters of Charity.

7. On the Ḥawwān as-Safa or 'Pure Brothers,' by Rev. A. Huebsch, of New York.

The following is a brief summary of Dr. Huebsch's paper:

The association of Arabian philosophers bearing this name flourished in the 10th century. A monument of their activity is the encyclopedic work which is styled "Treatises of the Pure Brothers." This cyclopedia consists of fifty-two treatises, comprising all branches of knowledge. Corresponding to the four degrees of the order, knowledge was divided into four divisions: 1. the mathematico-philosophical division; 2. physical science; 3. psychology; 4. the divine law. The subjects of the treatises are: i. On numbers; ii. Geometry; iii. Astronomy; iv. Geography; v. Music; vi. Arithmetic and geometric relations; vii. Arts of knowledge; viii. Arts of practice; ix. Ethics; x. Introduction to philosophy; xi. The ten categories; xii. Hermeneutic; xiii. Apodictic; xiv. On matter and form, space and time; xv. Heaven and earth; xvi. Composition and decomposition; xvii. Celestial phenomena; xviii. Minerals; xix. Essence of nature; xx. Plants; xxi. Animals; xxi. Organization of the human body; xxiii. Sense and sensible things; xxiv. Embryonic development; xxv. Man a mikroskosmos; xxvi. Development of the individual soul in human bodies; xxvii. Limits of human knowledge; xxviii. Proper significance of life and death; xxix. On bodily and spiritual pleasure and pain; xxx. On the variety of languages; xxxi. The principles of reason according to Pythagoras; xxxii. The principles of reason according to the views of the Pure Brothers; xxxiii. The world a makroiosity; xxxiv. The understanding and its object; xxxv. Revolutions of the stars and spheres; xxxvi. The soul's love; xxxvii. The resurrection and future life; xxxviii. Quantity and variety of motion; xxxix. Cause and effects; xl. Definitions and determinations; xli. Difference of view on principles of creed; xlii. The right path to God; xliii. Creed of the Pure Brothers; xlv. Life of the Pure Brothers; xlv. True contents of the Mohammedan creed; xlvii. Essence of the divine nāmos; xlviii. The call to God; xlviii. Spirits and their actions; xlix. Forms of government; l. The order and succession of beings constitutes the existence of the world; li. On witchcraft: lii. A descriptive index of the preceding treatises.

To Prof. F. Viesterici, the principal authority on the Ḥawwān as-Safa and their writings, we are indebted for accurate information on this subject, furnished in his excellent book, Die Philosophie der Araber im Xlen Jahrhundert nach Chr.

Though the volumes of the Pure Brothers are pervaded by a deeply religious spirit, the principle confessed by the authors, that the Mohammedan religion had become adulterated and that the only way to purify it was to bring it into close alliance with Greek philosophy, was sufficient to stamp the members of this order with the stigma of heresy in the eyes of every orthodox Mohammedan. Thus it came that little mention was made of the fraternity by Arabian writers; and as no author signed his name to the volume he composed. we should be in utter ignorance to whom the authorship of this little but very significant library belonged, if Shahrozzi had not been less scrupulous than the other pious chroniclers: he mentions five men as the authors of the fifty-one treatises, and Haji Khalfa gives the following names: 1. Abu Sulaiman Muhammed ibn Nasr al Busti, surnamed al mukaddisi; 2. Abu-l-Hasan Ali ibn Harun al Zanjani; 3. Abu Ahmed an Naharjuri; 4. Al 'Auff; 5. Zaid ibn Rifa'a.

The paper concluded with a translation of the parable on how the Pure Brothers should live.
8. On a Manuscript Syriac Lectionary, by Prof. Hall.

This manuscript was obtained by Dr. C. V. A. Van Dyck, of Beirut, from the papal Jacobite convent in Damascus. For a Syriac MS. its contents are uncommon. They consist of a Lectionary in the Syriac language, but arranged after the Greek order. The Lectionary consists of an Evangelistarion, or Gospel lessons for the ecclesiastical year, and a Menology, or calendar of saints' days or feasts for every day in the civil year. The beginning of the Evangelistarion is gone; but the beginning of the Menology expressly states that it is "after the Greek order."

Externally, the manuscript appears to be in the original binding: heavy wooden boards covered with leather. The traces of metallic ornaments appear on both sides, and the two stout brass pins which caught the clasps are still there.

The MS. now contains 95 leaves of ancient, tough cotton paper (charta Damascena), glazed after the fashion of the better oriental paper MSS., and somewhat worm-eaten and worn, especially at the two ends. It originally consisted of 13 quires of 4 folios or 8 leaves each, except two, which had 5 folios or 10 leaves each. Besides the regular numbering of the quires or signatures, some later hand has added the same in Arabic—in words, not figures. This latter writing, however, is older than the current script of to-day. Originally there were 108 leaves, of which 13 are now missing. In nearly every case where a leaf is gone, a slight stump is left, besides the other plain evidences. The worm holes present no obstacle to the reading; the only difficult places are those where water has damaged the upper half of the first twenty leaves, with a few smaller spots elsewhere. In a few places, not half a dozen lines in all, a second hand has retraced the reading where it had been destroyed by water, along with the glazing.

The writing is in two columns to the page, 34 lines to the column. At the end of each principal division of the subject matter is usually an ornament, occupying the space of one to four lines. Otherwise there is scarcely a break. In one, or perhaps two places, a space left for a rubric has remained unfill'd; and here and there a blank is left at the end of a line where the end of the paragraph does not quite fill it. The height of the columns is 7 to 7½ inches, the width of the inner column 2½ inches, of the outer 2½. The space between the columns is ½ of an inch.

The style of writing is a mixture of the Estrangela with the Jacobite; the latter more of the Palestinian than of the Mesopotamian type. Ornamental initials conform generally to the old Estrangela, except in case of olaph, which occurs in the greatest variety of shapes, but never in the marked Nestorian form. It is easy, on the whole, for one acquainted with the Estrangela to read the character, but not for one who is familiar only with the common printed varieties.

There may have been two scribes. The handwriting is bolder in the later portions of the MS., and a few constant errors and misspellings in the first portions disappear in the later.

In both the Evangelistarion and the Menology there appears here and there an auxiliary lesson note in Arabic; but these are only fourteen in all. They are written in the older Neskei, but not as early as the transition from Cufic. Some of them appear to note lessons after the Syrian order. In one place mention is directly made of the coincidence with the Syrian lesson for a saint's day. Thus the contents of the MS., together with the actual mention of "the Greek order," fix the limit of its antiquity in the 12th century, and at the same time forbid assigning it to a much later date. With this the style of writing agrees: except that it seems to shut out the 12th century, and confine us to the 13th. It is not probable, though it is barely possible, that it was written early in the 14th. The early half of the 13th is the more probable date.

In the rendering of ecclesiastical terms, personal epithets, and the like, the genius of the MS. inclines to the Syriac rather than to the Greek; though here and there a Greek genitive seems to be transferred. Such words as Chryesostom, Theologus, Stylios. Theoktos are translated into their Syriac equivalents. The transliteration of foreign words, including proper names, with all the other minutiae which give a clue to the linguistic genius of the MS. show that the writers were pretty thoroughly Syrian, familiar with Arabic, but not well acquainted with Greek. The codex is, so to speak, at the opposite pole from the Syriac and Armenian palimpsest described by Tischendorf in his Anecdota Sacr. et Prof., p. 12.
American Oriental Society:

The Evangelistarium agrees very nearly with the Greek lessons as given in Scrivener’s Plain Introduction, pp. 68-79, and in Smith’s Dict of Christian Antiquities, pp. 955 ff., except that it commonly gives only the lessons for Saturdays and Sundays, with the more important fast and feast days. Week-day lessons are given from Easter to Pentecost, in Holy Week, and a few other places. The Menology gives the saints’ day lessons for every day in the year, and agrees as often as it disagrees with that given in Scrivener’s Plain Introduction, pp. 81 ff., and his extracts from the Jerusalem Syriac on pp. 291, 292. Several saints’ names occur which I have not found elsewhere.

The scribe has here and there committed an error in writing the name of one Evangelist in place of another, and in writing the abbreviation for “pentecost” where he intended “passover,” and the like. He has been (apparently) too free in his use of the diacritic marks which denote the plural. Otherwise diacritic points are rare, and generally confined to those which denote whether a pronoun is used substantively or in place of the substantive verb, and the like.

I have collated the scripture readings with the text of Leusden and Schaaf (ed. of 1708; I have not the 2d, better one), as the most convenient standard; though I think the American Bible Society’s edition has a far better text. The version is Peshito, of course. Of the collation no remarks are needed here. It may be stated that the last 12 verses of the Gospel of Mark occur as the third of the eleven “Resurrection Gospels,” as might be expected. The pericope de adulterio, as also to be expected, is ignored in the lesson which covers the context. In the lesson notes occur the notes of the Psalm, or of the Stichera (called Sticheron in the MS.), and these generally follow the text of the American edition, and Dathé’s Krpenius, and not that of the English edition. One Psalm appears to come from a place outside the Bible. (It is well known that the Psalms, etc. in the Maronite ritual include some from Ephrem, Jacob or James, and other fathers.) In Ps. xiv. 17, several times cited in the MS., the word for ‘they name’ has a feminine suffix pronoun, as better fits the context; though the Masoretic Hebrew and the English edition of the Peshito have it masculine.

The church lessons themselves, after the rubrics, most commonly begin with an introductory phrase, such as “At that time,” “Our Lord said to the Jews,” or “Our Lord said to his disciples.” Sometimes they transpose the opening words, or add a word or more to the lesson from the context to make the meaning clear. Thus, “Jesus said,” or “Jesus came,” for “he said” or “he came.” Cases where the ipistima verb of the Gospel begin the lesson are the infrequent exception.

The rubricated portions of the notes are mingled with black, apparently with no other rule than to aid the eye. Abbreviations are very common in the notes, but not in the text, and then they are of the most obvious sort.

As the manuscript now is, it commences in the midst of the lesson for Tuesday after Easter, at Luke xxiv. 18. Gaps in the MS. have taken away also the last four verses from the next Saturday’s lesson, all of the next Sunday’s, and matter from the lessons of the eve of Good Friday, occupying two leaves. The Evangelistarium is therefore nearly complete; and the missing portions could probably be supplied with certainty. (The paper presented contains a translation of the lesson notes, and gives the scripture places of the lessons.) The lessons for the week days of Lent are quite different from those of the ordinary Greek order.

The Menology commences with 101, or September, and goes through the year. With each month, at the commencement, is stated the number of days, and the number of day-time hours and of night-time hours—with one or two exceptions. The translation of the rubrics of the Menology (given in full in the paper presented) presented many difficulties in the transliteration of proper names. Two words occur for the ‘commemoration’ of a saint or an event; two words for ‘saint,’ and two for ‘Gospel.’ The first two cases present difficulty in close rendering; the last case none at all, as ‘Evangel’ and ‘Gospel’ fit the case perfectly. Two expressions occur for ‘mother of God;’ one literal, the other the Syriac equivalent for θετροισας or Drijara. The word for ‘apostle’ is used with a very great latitude, and yet means less than ‘missionary.’

In the Menology the gaps, though less in quantity of missing leaves, are harder to fill than those of the Evangelistarium. They are the following: 1101 (Sept.) 17
Proceedings at New York, October, 1880.

to the latter portion of the 1st of Tisbhrn 2 (Oct.); the latter portion of 18th day of Canun 1 (December) to latter portion of 3d day of Canun 2 (January); 21st day of Heziran (June) by error of scribe; latter part of 29th Ab (August) to the end.
Lessons, or parts of lessons, are thus wanting for 36 days of the Menology, or about one-tenth of the whole. The lessons are not always written out in full in the Menology, but denoted by reference. The following sample of one of the longer rubrics, taken at random, from the 4th of Canun 1, or December, shows one style.
The passages merely referred to are denoted in brackets; the one unbracketed is written out in full.


A good many choice bits of history or fable come out, which have not always found elsewhere. In the note for the 9th of Tammuz (July) occurs the following remark, which has a classic as well as an ecclesiastical hinge: "And in this day appeared the mother of God at the trembling water in the mount of Daphne. For she appeared to the apostles and to John, when they wandered by the Holy Spirit from Simon mother of the church and established there the first born of Antioch the city of Syria, having obtained mercy with God."

The Scripture passages now in the MS, not counting the short ones inserted for reference, are the following:

Matthew i. 1-25; iii. 13-17; iv. 1-26; v. 1-48; vi. 1-33; vii. 1-11, 24-29; viii. 1-33; ix. 1-13, 18-35; x. 1-8, 16-22, 32, 33, 37-42; xi. 1-16, 27-30; xii. 30-37; xiii. 45-54; xiv. 1-12, 14-34; xv. 21-39; xvi. 13-20; xvii. 1-27; xviii. 1-4, 10-20, 23-35; xix. 3-12, 16-30; xx. 1-16, 29-34; xxi. 11-15, 43-44; xxii. 1-46; xxiii. 1-39; xxiv. 1-51; xxv. 1-46; xxvi. 1-5, 6-16, 44-76; xxvii. 1-66; xxviii. 1-18.

Mark i. 9-11, 35-44; ii. 1-12, 14-17, 23-45; iii. 1-5; v. 24-28; vi. 14-27; vii. 31-37; viii. 27-31, 34-38; ix. 1, 17-31; x. 52-45; xi. 1-11, 22-26; xv. 16-41, 43-47; xvi. 1-20.

Luke i. 1-68, 76-80; ii. 22-40; iii. 1-22; iv. 1-13, 16-41; v. 11-16, 17-32; vi. 10, 17-23, 31-36; vii. 1-23, 36-48; viii. 5-21, 26-39, 41-56; ix. 1-6, 28-43, 57-62; x. 1-12, 16-21, 25-42; xi. 27, 28; xii. 2-12, 16-21, 32-40; xiii. 10-17, 19-29; xiv. 1-11, 16-24; xv. 2-32; xvi. 10-31; xvii. 3-10, 12-19; xviii. 9-14, 18-37, 35-43; xix. 1-10, 28-40; xx. 1-8, 46, 47; xxi. 1-4, 8, 9, 25-37, 33-36; xxii. 1-39; xxiii. 32-49; xxiv. 1-12, 18-53.

John i. 29-51; iii. 1-28; iv. 46-54; v. 1-16, 17-47; vi. 1, 3, 5-33, 35-44, 47-59; vii. 1-30, 37-52; viii. 12-59; ix. 1-41; x. 1-9, 17-42; xl. 45-47, 54; xli. 1-50; xlii. 1-8, 31-38; xiv. 1-31; xv. 1-27; xvi. 1-33; xvii. 1-26; xviii. 1-40; xix. 1-42; xx. 1-18; xxi. 1-26.

These are enumerated simply as being present in the MS. The table of lessons would be very different. Besides this, a number of passages from all the Evangelists occur twice, some from Matthew and John three times, and some from John four times. The portions relating to the passion are those which are most repeated.

9. On the connection between verbs of 'putting' and 'giving,' by Prof. Charles Short, of Columbia College, New York.

Prof. Short illustrated the near relation between the verbs signifying 'put' and 'give' principally from the Indo-European roots dха and dά, and their confusions and interchanges of office even in Sanskrit, but still more in the other branches of Indo-European language, especially the Latin. He regarded it as probable that these two roots were twin forms of one original. Corresponding facts from the Semitic and other tongues were adduced.

10. On the Chinese accounts of Fu-sang, supposed by some to designate America, and of other countries described in connection with this, by Prof. S. Wells Williams, of New Haven.
Prof. Williams's paper presented the account given by the Chinese archaeologist Ma Twan-lin respecting Fu-sang and certain other countries lying east of China beyond sea. This eminent author flourished in the troubled times which witnessed the conquest of his native land by the Mongols under Kublai Khan; and he was busy writing his Antiquarian Researches while Marco Polo was travelling about the country (A. D. 1275 to 1290) in the service of the Grand Khan. The date of the deaths of these two men was about the year 1324. Ma Twan-lin’s work is arranged in twenty-five books, the last one named Researches into the Four Frontiers; out of its 250 sections, only nine describe the maritime countries on the east. The account of Japan is too long to translate here, and would add nothing to clear up the question as to the identification of Fu-sang. The other eight are translated from the original text, in the order in which they stand, since this order has a bearing upon the position of Fu-sang. They are the following:

Sect. XVI. — Hia-t. The land of the Crab Barbarians or Foreigners.
Sect. XVII. — Fu-sang. The kingdom of Fu-sang.
Sect. XVIII. — Wu Keoo. The kingdom of Women.
Sect. XIX. — Wan Shon. The kingdom of Pictured Bodies.
Sect. XX. — Ta Han. The kingdom of Great Han.
Sect. XXI. — Chü Jü Keoo. The kingdom of Dwarfs.
Sect. XXIII. — Liu-ku. The kingdom of Lewchow.

The first of the eight is known to refer to the island of Yesso, and the Chinese still call the region by that name. The next country, Fu-sang, is not described by Ma Twan-lin himself; he merely quotes the narrative of the Shaman or Buddhist priest Hwui-shin, who returned from Fu-sang in A. D. 499. This man reported that it lay twenty thousand li (about 7000 miles) east of China, and was famous for its fu-sang trees, whence it derived its name. The people made paper from the bark of this tree, and also spun thread of which they manufactured cloth and brocade for dresses. They knew how to write, and had an established government. Hwui-shin's account contains several other particulars, which were first made use of by the learned orientalist De Guignes in 1761 to prove that the land thus described was Mexico. This view has been criticised by Laproth, supported by Neumann, and in China made the subject of papers by Breitknechter and Sampson, who opposed the view of De Guignes. All their arguments were reviewed by Leland in a small volume published in 1875, in which he upheld the original opinion of De Guignes. His conclusion has since found an advocate in the French sinologue Marquis d'Hervey de St. Denis, who had met with some additional information in a Chinese history. Prof. Williams summarized the arguments which make it difficult to regard Mexico as the country spoken of, and mentioned two especially, which are derived from Hwui-shin's report itself. One is the manufacture of kio or brocade from the bark of the fu-sang tree (Broussonetia papyrifera); this fabric, called nishiki, is woven of silk and paper, and still worn by the Japanese. He exhibited a specimen of this peculiar cloth which was obtained in 1854 at Hakodate in Yesso; its iridescence is very remarkable; and no such fabric is known to have ever been woven in any other land. The other proof against Fu-sang being Mexico is the statement that the colors of the king's robes varied with the ten cycle years which denote the dual action of the five elements, wood, fire, earth, metal, water. This reference shows that at the time the people of Fu-sang knew and adopted the sexagenary cycle for computing time and periods; while no such scheme is known to have existed among any people on the American continent. The probability was strong, therefore, that Fu-sang referred to the island of Sakhalien, a part of which once belonged to Japan under the name of Karafuto; this conclusion is supported by the old name Fu-shi koku, or kingdom of Fu-sang, which the Japanese employ for their own kingdom even to this day.

The 18th in the list is the kingdom of Women, a country only reported on the authority of the same priest Hwui-shin. It seems to refer to one of the Kurile Islands; and a legend of the same name is alluded to by Col. Yule, in his Cathay and the Way Thither, as current in Ma Twan-lin's time. The notice of the 19th, called the land of Pictured Bodies, is not directly ascribed to Hwui-shin, but to the histories of the same period; it cannot be
decided whether tattooing, or marking the body with colored clay like the North American Indians, is meant. This land would naturally be looked for also among the Kurile Islands, as it is placed 2000 miles northeast of Japan.

The 20th in the list is mentioned by several Chinese authors, and their various accounts of Ta Han only prove that they had no definite idea of its position.

In the next section three separate kingdoms are mentioned; namely, the land of Dwarfs, the Black Teeth kingdom, and the Naked People's Land. The notices are all probably hearsay reports of places in the Indian Archipelago.

The 22d section speaks of a land of Giants, and from the reference in it to Sinsa, or Eastern Corea, one would look for it in the islands between that country and Japan. A small Japanese cyclopedia was shown to the Society, in which a naked giant was represented as holding a richly dressed dwarf standing on his extended palm.

The last of these eastern kingdoms described is Lowchew, but the description confuses the Pescadores and Madji-co-sima groups with their more easterly and civilized kingdom.

The conclusion to be derived from all these various notices of the lands situated east of China is, that Ma Twan-lin had no definite knowledge of any of them from personal observation, and gathered his accounts from the most credulous sources at his command, supposing that they were all easily reached by Chinese and Japanese vessels.

11. On Indra in the Rig-Veda, by Mr. E. D. Perry, of Columbia College, New York City.

The primary object of this essay is to give as distinct an account of the god Indra as possible, as he appears in the light shed upon him by the hymns of the Rig-Veda; more especially, to determine with accuracy the position held by him in the Vedic pantheon, and his original significance. His Naturbedeutung; i.e. the powers of Nature which lie behind and are symbolized by this striking personification. The preliminary part of the work is of course a searching examination of the hymns themselves, and a conscientious interpretation of all passages in any way bearing upon the subject. Great care is taken to avoid two dangers: on the one hand, that of overhasty combination and comparison with seeming parallels in extra-Indian mythology; and on the other, that of following too closely what may be called the ritualistic tendency, which puts these ancient hymns (which breathe out the freshness of nature, and display the Indian people in the vigor of youth) on the same level with the religious monstrosities of a cunning, subtle ingenious, and yet frivolous priesthood of a later age, and attempts to explain obscure points in the text by not less imperfectly understood details of the later ceremonial.*

The Rig-Veda is the only source from which materials have been thus far drawn. The Brahmanas show so decided an advance beyond Vedic ideas that great confusion would have followed any attempt to combine them. The same reason prevails with regard to the Yajus. The Sáman contains only 60 or 70 verses not found in the Rik, and these offer nothing of value. A preliminary examination of the Atharvan shows that the results to be obtained from it would not differ materially from those furnished by the Rik, and its discussion has been postponed until later.

The essay is divided into four parts, as follows: I. The primitive conceptions of the Indians regarding Indra, and the powers of nature which are represented under this personification; II. The accounts of Indra's parentage, and the narratives and legends of his birth; III. The functions of Indra in the supernatural and the natural, the physical and the moral world; IV. The conception of Indra as a definite person, and the descriptions of him resulting from this conception.

I. The opinion has prevailed among scholars that Indra was, both in his origin and subsequent development, a sky-god. Roth, in his first published essay on

* To the first of these perils Myriantheus seems to have fallen a prey; his work, _Die Aevius oder Arischen Disenahren_, was published at Munich in 1876. The other has often proved disastrous to Alfred Hillebrandt, who is represented in this field by two books, _Über die Göttin Aditi_ (Breisau, 1876), and _Varuna und Mitra_ (1877).
the subject of Indian religion (in Zeller's Theol. Jahrbuch, 1846) calls him the god of the bright clear vault of heaven;* Lassen, in his *Indische Alterthumskunde*, takes substantially the same view, differing from Roth only in regard to the etymology of the name. Wuttke failed completely to grasp the true nature of Indra, and saw him only from the standpoint of the later Brahmanic descriptions. Benfey, Müller, Grassmann, and others call him a sky-god (Grassmann, the god of the bright ornament; the others, the god of the rain-sky); Ludwig cautiously names him “the god of the sky, under whose protection and guidance stand on the one hand the sun and stars, on the other the phenomena of the thunder-storm;” and adds that this deity seems to unite in his one person the characteristics of several older divinities. Hercagaine, viewing only the ethical side of Indra’s nature, maintains that he is less intimately connected with natural phenomena than any other of the Indian divinities. It is here attempted to be proved that for the Vedic period at least Indra is to be regarded, not as a sky-god, but as belonging to a region the conception of which was purely and exclusively Indian—the region of the air, a middle ground between heaven and earth; and that he was above all the personification of the thunder-storm, of the storm in its entire magnificence and grandeur; in which respect he is distinguished from the other storm gods, who represent particular features of that phenomenon.

The most probable derivation of the word indra is that proposed by Roth: namely, from the root ind or in, from which the word is formed with the suffix ra, a d being inserted, as in Greek ἰδρος, ἱδρως, ἱδρωτίς. Ludwig mentions a Slavonic word, *jedrą, 'swift,' as the only representative of *indr̂a in Indo-European language.

II. The passages in which reference is made to the circumstances of Indra’s birth are numerous, much less so those which afford any clue to the subject of his parentage. They are best divided into four groups: viz. 1. physical accounts, *e. g.* such as display most prominently the original element of the mythus, the immediate impression made by the observation of natural phenomena, in which details that mightiest of phenomena, the thunder-storm, are described, often with striking fidelity; 2. anthropomorphic accounts, in which Indra’s original significance in nature gives place to his humanized form and character, and in which, accordingly, his birth is represented as occurring in accordance with human experience; 3. accounts which mention Indra’s parentage, but omit to name or characterize sufficiently his parents; and 4. accounts of his origin which are plainly the results of conscious speculation on the part of the priests. Dyus or heaven seems to have been thought of as Indra’s father, whenever any one particular deity is meant, and as his mother. Prthivi or earth. Later views made him a child of Aditi; but the opinion, advanced by Hillebrandt, that this is to be accepted for the Vedic period too, is quite untenable. In several passages Indra is called *putroh varnas, 'Son of Might;' accordingly, the name Čavas, applied to his mother in two passages, seems merely equivalent to ‘the mighty one,’ and gives us no real clue. In the puzzling verse x. 101. 12 we find Indra styled “S-n of Nishtigri;” but the word *nishtigri* is met with nowhere else, and no more data are at hand to explain it. Skṛta, of course, explains it; he makes it equivalent to Aditi.

III. The subject of Indra’s functions in the universe is extremely copious, and embraces several questions of equal importance and difficulty. In the various manifestations of his power we find a ground on which he stands in common with other divinities. The most prominent of these manifestations is the battle which he has to fight in the air against the demons who steal the rain and light and withhold them from mortals; the most gracious act of his goodness, the restoration of these blessings to suffering men. His activity in this field brings him into an especially close connection with Tīrā, concerning whom it is endeavored to prove that he is an older deity who originally performed the functions of the later Indra, and sank gradually into insignificance before the rising national hero; with the

* Roth’s latest views, as expressed in the Vet Dict, differ widely from these. He there calls him the chief of the deities of the middle region, i.e. the air, between heaven and earth.

† Yet in his Chips, II, p. 91, Müller styles him the chief solar deity of India.
The Adityas, especially with Varuna, whose lieutenant in a certain field Indra seems to have been, until finally he succeeded his master on the throne of heaven (a question treated of at considerable length in the essay); with the Maruts, the gods of the storm, who support their leader Indra in the storm-battle; with Soma, originally the well-known intoxicating beverage supposed by the simple-minded worshippers to be enjoyed by the god with even greater gusto than they themselves experienced, but before long personified and elevated into a hero of boundless prowess, and associated with Indra in all his exploits; with Bhisaapa or Brahmapaapa, the god of prayer; with Agni, the god of fire and lightning, and Vishnu, the sun-god; and with Varaha and the Bhru’s, the skillful armurers and artificers. From the notion of Indra’s paramount importance in preserving the natural order of the world was developed by gradual stages the belief that he was its creator, in which character we find him celebrated in passages of great sublimity. His benevolence towards his worshippers, finally, is praised in grateful language, and gives occasion for associating with him Pishan and the two Agnas. And this benevolence per excellence among the Indoreans was the cause of his being celebrated in the most extravagant language. His personal appearance, his weapons, horses, chariot, his enormous appetite and still more prodigious thirst, are all described with the minuteness and exaggeration characteristic then as now of eastern poetry.


Buddhism has always exhibited a remarkable facility of adaptation to the characters and circumstances of the people among whom it has been propagated. Hence the great difference in the aspects of the same religion in Tibet and Tartary, China and Japan, Ceylon and Burma. It might therefore be expected that Buddhism would undergo considerable modifications whenever it was brought into contact with Christianity. This is notably the case in Japan; and the modifications referred to have perhaps shown themselves earlier in that country on account of the lively susceptible character of the people. In illustration of this, the speaker proceeded to give an account of a visit which he had made in company with Mr. Nishima, a native Christian pastor, to a Buddhist College in Kioto, the ancient capital.

The buildings suggest reform by their external appearance, being in the best style of European architecture, and in strong contrast with the famous Hangeleon temple, to which they are attached. They were erected, it is said, at a cost of 360,000 yen, or $300,000. The organization is not yet complete, but provision is made for the various departments of instruction usually found in western universities. In the department of Natural Philosophy, the speaker was shown a large collection of apparatus (mostly imported) for the purpose of teaching experimental physics; and in the department of theology he saw a class of forty candidates for the priesthood, taking notes of a lecture that was being delivered by a venerable looking Bonzo.

The name of the sect to which this establishment belongs is Shiniu, or the ‘new doctrine,’ and a tract which the speaker received from one of the professors indicates how justly it may claim that designation; explaining that the adherents of the Shiniu have abandoned the practice of compulsory celibacy, renounced ascetic rites, and rejected the worship of all Buddhas or other deities, except Amida, the Unlimited or Eternal. This document further states that the soul is in a state of salvation the moment it exercises faith in the love of Amida: all of which are Christian doctrines under pagan names.

In China such reformed sects are numerous; but they have not in any case approached so near to the adoption of Christian dogmas, and are distinguished from the current Buddhism of that empire chiefly by an attitude of protest against certain forms of popular idolatrie.

13. The Sutra in Forty-two Chapters, translated from the Tibetan by Mr. W. W. Rockhill, of Baltimore, Md.; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.
Mr. Rockhill points out in his introductory notice that this brief Sutra, one of the canonical works of Buddhism, has been already twice translated from the Tibetan—by A. Schiefner (1851) and L. Feer (1878); and also once from the Chinese, by Mr. S. Besse (J. R. A. S., vol. xix., 1863). He has been led to make a translation into English from the Tibetan version also by the fact that it contains in a concise form the most important points of Buddhist dogma and morals. The text used by him is the lithographed one published in 1868 by M. Feer from a copy in four languages (Chinese, Tibetan, Mongol, and Manchu) brought to France by the Abbé Huc.

The introduction (placed in the original text at the end of the work), giving the usual history of the importation of Buddhism into China, is as follows:

"In the 24th year of Tiou Tou Wang (the emperor Chao of the Chow) the year of the wood-tiger (1029 B.C.), the 4th month, the 8th day, a body of light coming from the southwest appeared in the king's palace. The king and his ministers, having seen it, questioned the wise men, who answered by the following prophecy: 'It is a sign that a mighty Lord will appear in that quarter (of the world), and that after a thousand years his doctrine will reach this land.'

"After that, in the 53d year of Muh Wang (949 B.C.), in the year of the water-sheep, the second month, the 15th day, the Master (Sakyamuni) showed the way to enter into the Nirvana.

"After 1013 years (from the luminous apparition), in the reign Yung-ping, (65 A. D.), the eighth of Hän Ming-thi, in the first month, in the night of the 15th day, the king had a dream. A being of more than eight cubits in height, of the color of gold, (whose body) emitted light like the sun, descended into the palace. 'My doctrine,' he said, 'will spread itself gradually over this country.' The following day, (the king) having questioned his ministers (about this dream), the minister Hphu yi (Fu yi) answered him thus: 'Long ago, in the time of Tiou Tou Wang, there was a prophecy made in answer (to a question); this dream of the king's agrees with it.'

"Then the king looked over the old records, and was made happy by finding this prophecy of the time of Tiou Tou Wang. The king sent eighteen men, among whom was the minister Wang Tsun, into the west, to try to discover the teaching of the Buddha.

"They arrived at the kingdom of Yuo-chi, where two men of India of the family of Kacsya, the Arhat Matangipa and the Pandit Gobharana (helped them) to put on a white horse, the fundamental works, the Sutra in 42 chapters and other Sutras, both of the Great and the Little Vehicle; and also a vase full of relics of the Master. (After that) they started back by the road by which they had come. At the end of the 12th month they arrived at the fortress of Lo-yang.

"In six years from that time, the Arhat and the Pandit had converted the unbelievers of the Black Plain (i. e. China).

"After that, the Arhat and the Pandit rising into the air spoke these verses to the king:

'The foxes' whelps are not of the lion's race;
A burning lamp is not like the sun and moon;
A little pond is not like the whole ocean;
Every mountain has not the majesty of Mount;
The cloud of the Law covers the whole world;
The rain of the Law moisteneth the seeds (in the hearts) of all mankind;
By showing wonders and miracles
(The Law) teaches mankind in all quarters of the world.'

"Having spoken thus, they returned to India by means of their magical powers.

"This is the origin and history of this Sutra. Originally it did not exist in Tibetan; but having been put in the Chinese Ikakhgyur (pron. Kanjur), it was translated into the Manchu language by order of the High one guarded by heaven (Kienlung), and translated also into the language of Böd (i. e. Tibet) by Dkah-bchus Thubrgag-rgyadowsa and Dkah-bchus Diyanjñathayāmasya. It was translated into the language of Sog (i. e. Moncolian) by the learned professor Phranodrayavaysa. The patron of the doctrine of the Victorious (i. e. Jina, the
Buddha), Hsing In, wishing to make known the Law, gave one hundred ounces of silver to have it engraved and printed in the four languages.

"May the seeds of virtue given to those who have become exceeding holy help the doctrine of the Victorious to be widely diffused for many years to come; may there not be in (all) the quarters of the earth either sickness, or famine, or tumult, or quarrelling. May all living beings speedily arrive at that wisdom which has no superior."


In this paper, the subject was presented substantially as below.

The question of the transliteration of Sanskrit is not merely a part of the vast and difficult one of representing alphabetic sounds in general by Roman letters; it has a quite specific and practical aspect: namely, how are the native Indian characters best to be turned into European ones, in view of the very great use made of the latter by Sanskrit scholars and by philologists generally. Not only are Sanskrit words and forms constantly needing to be quoted in philological works, where the intricacy of the devanādapit alphabet and the difficulty of setting it along with our ordinary types, make transliteration necessary; whole volumes, and of every class, are published in the transliterated form, even such texts as the Rig-Veda (Aureich), the Taittiriya-Samhitā (Weber), the Altareya-Brahmana (Aureich), etc. There is nothing illegitimate about this: the language is written in India, to no small extent, in whatever alphabet the writers are accustomed to employ for other purposes; and there is no reason why we may not allow ourselves to do the same.

The systems of transliteration employed are in detail very various, almost every leading scholar and periodical having a peculiar one, more or less different from every other. Respecting only a small minority of letters is there entire agreement: these are a, i, u, k, g, t, d, p, b, s, m, r, t, s; although also t, d, k, h are used nearly universally. It is true that this variety causes little practical difficulty, since he who employs one system is but slightly embarrassed to understand any of the rest; and hence scholars need not be strongly urged to abandon methods long employed by them and take up new ones; yet it is evidently desirable that usage should at any rate be made to tend gradually toward unity. The points of discordance are of every kind and degree: in some cases, choice is a matter of indifference, and must be arbitrarily made, merely for the sake of unity; but there are also signs current whose use is decidedly to be reproved, and, if possible, put down.

In reference to the vowels, in the first place, the leading question is, how long quantity shall be marked. The usual English (and hence also Indian) method has long been to write an acute accent over the long vowel: thus, ā. This is wholly to be disapproved; both because there is no adaptedness in such a mark to such a purpose, and because it thus becomes impossible to accentuate a vowel at all. Continental usage is divided between the macron and the circumflex accent: thus, ā or à. The choice between these two is comparatively indifferent; yet the former (as) must be allowed to be on the whole preferable, for the reasons that the macron was devised for this particular purpose and has no other, and that it is more easily combined with the accent-marks (a consideration of prime importance): there is, in fact, a degree of incongruity in writing two accent-marks, a circumflex and an acute or grave, over the same letter. Grassmann's device, of using the macron for simple long and the circumflex for long acute, is ingenious, and obviates a certain difficulty as regards type; but it is hardly worthy of general adoption, since it involves an inconsistency, and also leaves the case of a long circumflex (acutis) unprovided for. For these reasons, after employing the circumflex-sign for thirty years, I have myself recently adopted the macron instead.

The question of representation of the r-vowel is of quite another kind. Two signs divide between them general usage: namely, r and ri (and to the former of these Lepsius's sign, with little circle instead of dot beneath the r, may be regarded as practically equivalent, being theoretically preferable). Here the choice is not a matter of indifference, but involves an obviously important principle: not to give unnecessarily to a single element a double sign involving a false utterance. All
who understand Sanskrit phonetics know that the sound represented is a pure r-sound, and that ri is a later Hindu mispronunciation; there is no reason, theoretical or practical, why we should adopt and perpetuate the error. Simple r, with marks of quantity and of accent to be added as in the case of the other short vowel signs, is the only acceptable representative. It follows, of course, that ī, and not ā, and ă fortiori not that monstrous absurdity ār̥, should be written for the ē vowel.

The representation of the diphthongs has its minor difficulties. For the guṇa-diphthongs, there is almost universal acceptance of the signs e, o, with the corresponding pronunciation; and this pronunciation has been so long the custom in India, and hence also without exception in Europe, that no scruple need be felt as to admitting the e- and o-signs. Yet the value of those diphthongs was so evidently ai, au at the beginning, and even in earliest Sanskrit, that we cannot help wishing it were possible to introduce the corresponding written forms—as indeed has been done, though without further imitation, by one or two French scholars, the usages of their own language favoring the substitution. The heavier diphthongs are written either aī, au or aī, au: the latter are more etymologically correct, but the former are easier, and sufficiently well suited to e, o; there is not much to choose between them. To make evident the diphthongal quantity, ē and ō are written by some: it is well enough, yet seems a needless trouble; Grassmann’s ē, ō for the heavier diphthongs has found no imitation, and is not to be commended.

The designation of the acute (udatta) accent by our ordinary acute mark is universal; and nearly or quite so is likewise that of the circumflex (avarsa) by our so-called grave accent (thus, yā). No more suitable sign than the latter could be devised, since the tone signified by it is in fact a downward slide forward.

Passing now to the consonants, the first question concerns the mode of writing the aspirate mutes. And here, the addition of an h to the non-aspirate is well-nigh universal; Bopp’s added reversed apostrophe—as ēt etc.—is hardly any longer in use. In this there is nothing to be regretted; the element by which the aspirate differs from the non-aspirate may be sufficiently well signified by ā, nor does the distinction of surd and sonant in regard to it need to be insisted on. As to the mute-classes, the marking of the linguals (or by whatever other name we may call the mārdhana class) with a dot beneath—thus, ēt, ēd—is also nearly without exception, and unobjectionable. But the treatment of the palatals is a harder question, and embarrassed moreover by the doubt concerning the precise phonetic value of the sounds at a given period. To me, c and j (with, of course, ch and jh as aspirates) seem on the whole to be preferred: accented gutturals (as k̥, g̥) are more burdensome, and also interfere with the clearness of the actual accent; nor should, on theoretical grounds, any diacritical mark be employed with so disparate values. This last reason is conclusive also against the common English use of ch and ēbh—in which, moreover, is involved a needless waste of time and labor.

Of the nasals, n and m pass without question; and n, for the lingual, goes by constraint of analogy with ēt, ēd: as regards the two others, considerations of convenience must determine. One of them will naturally be written ŋ, because that sign is widely found already provided in fonts of type; and, in accordance with its general value, this is best assigned to the palatal nasal. For the remaining guttural is oftest met with an n with short horizontal line above it—which line ought, by its length or otherwise, to be well distinguished from the macron.

In connection with the nasals may be considered the representation of the anusvāra, difficult both on account of the variety of methods employed, and because, with the Hindu phonetists as well as with their modern successors, there has been question as to the phonetic value of the sound: whether and how far it was a nasalization of the vowel, or a nasal element following the vowel. Since, however, the Hindu texts in general use the same sign for all the different classes of cases, and whatever their theoretic estimate of the sound, there appears to be no good reason why we should not do the same thing we did with the same unanimity: writing, for example, hiṃsa, and allowing its ŋ to be viewed as having either the one character or the other. For it would be as good as impossible to provide a
Proceedings at New York, October, 1880.

lili

complete set of vowel-signs, unaccented and accented, with a mark of nasality added. Whether a or a shall be used as basis, and what and where the diacritical mark applied, must be mainly a matter of arbitrary selection: I prefer a dot above rather than below, because the dot below is already in full use as lingual mark, and because the dot above seems like a reproduction of the corresponding devaniÚgar sign; and further, the adoption of the latter allows us to write a for a more independent anaUira, and a for an m assimilated to a following consonant—a distinction which has a high practical convenience.

Of the semivowels, only the palatal and labial call for discussion. For the latter of these, too, v is so generally current as representative that it may almost pass for universal; a few Germans use w instead, but for no good and defensible reason. Historically best, to be sure, would be a w in the English sense and having the English utterance. Yet the English sound is also originally represented by u; and as we write both Latin u and French r, recognizing the u-sound as belonging to the earlier word and the v-sound to the later, we may properly enough do the same in the Sanskrit. For the palatal semivowel are widely used both y and i. The latter has much in its favor, being in all respects related to i as u to u; and it is to the Germans the natural sign for the sound, as is y to the English and French. The choice of designation has to be made in connection with that for the sonant palat i mute; and there is, it may fairly be claimed, a gain of convenience and economy in adopting for the two sounds y and i rather than in taking g and j, and so leaving y out of use altogether.

Among the sibilants we have only one fixed point, the dental s; in regard to the other two usage is very fluctuating, and the prevailing practice not altogether to be approved. It was apparently by some mishap that at the outset sh came to be used by the English for the lingual instead of the palatal sibilant, the two being regarded as practically indistinguishable in utterance (for the definition of the lingual as like sh in shun, and the palatal as like ss in session, though servilely copied from one grammar to another down to the latest, really means this, since the sounds in the two words are precisely the same); the impression was thus given that the lingual was the normal sh-sound, and the error has been perpetuated in a great variety of ways. There is one wholly unobjectionable mode of correcting it: namely, by letting the lingual point below the letter do for the sibilant what it does for the mutes and nasal, and so writing s. This (grassmann as perhaps some before him) has done, and others are doing—myself, for example, after reluctantly writing sh for a generation. The sign sh, or anything else involving the same implication, should be banished from general use. For the palatal sibilant, the customary English sign s' is very bad, as again using an accent-mark to signify what is not accent, and embarrassing the designation of the real accent. On the continent is most widely employed the sign c, which answers the purpose quite sufficiently well, although nothing very positive is to be said in its favor save that it includes a palatal letter as basis, and is found provided and ready for use in many fonts. In an alphabet of wider bearing, whatever sign stands for the sh-sound would be the most suitable representative of this sibilant.*

Bopp's addition of a diacritical point to our h as sign of the Sanskrit aspiration has, so far as observed, found no imitators, and is not to be commended. The character k for visarga is too firmly rooted in general usage to be displaced; nor is there pressing need for seeking a better representative for the sound.

To sum up briefly: the items to be most strongly urged, as involving important principles, are the use of r and s for the lingual vowel and the lingual sibilant respectively; of next consequence, for the sake of uniformity, is the adoption of the signs c, i, y, c for the palatal sounds; the designations of long vowels, of the diphthongs, of the nasals, are minor matters, which will doubtless settle themselves by degrees in the right manner.

A remark or two may be added as to the division of words. As every one knows, there is in the manuscripts no division at all; the whole text is written solid, and prose and verse alike. The European rule is, to make in devaniÚgar writing or printing a separation between words, whenever it can be done without

* A recent isolated case of the introduction of s as sign of the palatal sibilant is against every analogy, and altogether to be condemned.
any alteration of the written form; and it is so reasonable, and so universally practiced, that no suggestion of a change appears called for. In transliterated text, now, the natural adaptation of this rule would evidently be, to separate wherever the transliterated form suffers no alteration: thus, for example, tāt savatī vārṣeṇyam. To write tāśavatīr vārṣeṇyam because in devāṅgari the words would have to be so connected is certainly the height of unpractical bad logic—not to say of pedantry. The Boppian method of dividing also words whose final and initial vowels are fused into one sound, putting a single or double apostrophe before the second word, will naturally be followed only where the convenience of earliest beginners has to be consulted; but too anxiously to avoid it there seems to me to savor of the pedantic. Certainly, its application in transliterated texts (e.g. tathāī ‘vā ”stā) is not only unobjectionable, but to be recommended; and it is even as good as imperative where the authoritative form of a word (as determined, for example, by a pada-text or by a commentary) is to be briefly signified.

15. Notes on certain analogous Structures and Constructions in Tibetan and Japanese, by Mr. Rockhill; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

Mr. Rockhill briefly reviews the analogies between the two languages in question with regard to the verb, the noun-forms in construction, the formation of abstracts and diminutives, the uses of adjectives and numerals, of pronouns and adverbs, the value of reduplications, and so on.

One or two other communications were for lack of time withdrawn, to be presented at the next meeting.

A vote of thanks to the authorities of Columbia College, for the hospitable reception and entertainment offered by them, was passed, and the Society adjourned, to meet again in Boston on Wednesday, May 25th, 1881.
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1881.

Proceedings at Boston, May 18th, 1881.

The Society assembled at the usual place and time. The President and all the Vice-Presidents being absent, the chair was taken by Prof. A. P. Peabody, of Cambridge, and later by Rev. W. H. Ward, of New York.

The Treasurer's report for the last year was read, and his accounts audited by a committee appointed for the purpose, and accepted. The summary of accounts is as follows:

RECEIPTS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Balance on hand, May 19th, 1880</td>
<td>$674.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Annual assessments paid in</td>
<td>$570.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sale of the Journal</td>
<td>194.22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interest on deposit in Savings Bank</td>
<td>27.57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total receipts of the year</strong></td>
<td><strong>791.79</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>EXPENDITURES</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Printing of Proceedings and Journal</td>
<td>$755.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Expenses of Library and Correspondence</td>
<td>26.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total expenditures of the year</strong></td>
<td>$781.40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balance on hand, May 18th, 1881</td>
<td>686.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total expenditures</strong></td>
<td>$1,465.85</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Bills for printing will soon be due which will nearly or quite exhaust the balance now in the Treasury.

The amount of the Bradley type-fund is at present $848.52.

The report of the Librarian showed the accessions to the Library during the year to consist of forty-six volumes, sixty-three parts of volumes, forty-three pamphlets, and four manuscripts: the number of titles of printed books being now 4,046; of manuscripts, 148. Among the gifts is a magnificent work, published at the expense of the Government of the Netherlands, and by it presented to the Society, on the Buddhist temple of Bōrō-Boudour in the island of Java, consisting of 418 royal folio plates and a descriptive text in Dutch and French.

The Committee of Publication reported that the twelfth volume of the Journal, containing the Index Verborum to the Atharva-Veda, ordered published last year, was on the point of completion, and would be distributed to members doubtless within a month; also, that progress had been made with the earlier-
begun eleventh volume, of which the first part might be expected
to be finished in the course of the year.

The Directors gave notice that they had appointed the autumn
meeting of this year to be held in New Haven, on the last
Wednesday (28th) of October. Also, that they had continued
the Committee of Publication of last year for another year.
Further, they recommended to the Society the election as Cor-
porate Members of the following persons:

Prof. Maurice Bloomfield, of Baltimore, Md.;
Rev. F. F. Ellinwood, of New York;
Mr. E. W. Hopkins, of Bridgewater, Mass.;
Rev. L. F. Mills, of Hanover, Germany.

The gentlemen thus proposed were then balloted for, and de-
clared duly elected.

The election of officers for the ensuing year being next in order,
a letter was read from Prof. Salisbury, of New Haven, positively
decaying to be a candidate for re-election as President. Prof.
Abbott, of Cambridge, also requested to be relieved, after nearly
thirty years of service, of the duties of Recording Secretary.
These communications were referred to a Nominating Committee,
which brought in and proposed the following Board of Officers,
and it was elected without dissent:

President—Prof. S. Wells Williams, LL.D., of New Haven.
Vice-Residents—Messrs. Clark, Parker, and Woolsey (as last
year).
Recording Secretary—Prof. C. H. Toy, D.D., LL.D., of Cam-
bridge.
Corresponding and Classical Secretaries and Treasurer and
Librarian, Messrs. Whitney, Goodwin, and Van Name (as last
year).
Directors—Messrs. Cothral, Short, and Ward, of New York,
Peabody and Lanman, of Cambridge, and Thayer, of Andover
(as last year), and Prof. Isaac H. Hall, Ph.D., of Philadelphia.

The presiding officer (Prof. Peabody) then communicated to
the meeting the names of the members who had deceased during the
preceding year: namely, of the Corporate Members—

Rev. Rufus Anderson, of Boston;
Prof. J. L. Diman, of Providence, R. I.;
Prof. W. C. Fowler, of Durham, Conn.;
Prof. S. S. Haldeman, of Chickies, Pa.;

and of the Corresponding member—

Rev. S. F. Brown, of Japan.

Prof. Peabody spoke at considerable length of the venerable
Dr. Anderson, his own early teacher and life-long friend, describ-
ing and extolling his many virtues of character, his long years of
devoted service to the cause of Christian missions, his warm in-
terest, in connection with that cause, in studies relating to East-
ern language and history, and his contributions to them. The Corresponding Secretary called attention to the fact that he was the last survivor in the Society of its band of founders, having been a Director from the beginning and for many years a Vice-President, till age and infirmity led him to decline a re-election as such; and read extracts from the first records (1842), showing the active part taken by him in its earliest proceedings.

At the invitation of the chair, Prof. Williams of Brown University paid an eloquent tribute to the memory of his colleague Prof. Diman, dwelling upon the loss which American letters had sustained by the early death of this distinguished scholar and teacher.

The Corresponding Secretary recounted the services of Prof. Fowler to the study of American history and of the English language; and he gave a brief sketch of the life and works of Prof. Haldeman, who, from being a student of natural science, had passed to the study of phonetics, taking high rank by the production of his Trevelyan Prize Essay (1860), and during the latter part of his life had devoted himself mainly to philology, publishing many works, and being especially active in connection with the American Philological Association.

Dr. Ward gave some account of the long and efficient missionary labors of Dr. Brown, continued, with intermissions, for nearly forty years, in China and Japan.

Extracts from the correspondence of the past half-year were read by the Corresponding Secretary.

Mr. R. A. Guild, Librarian of Brown University, of Providence, R. I., communicates the information that the University has lately received from Burma a complete copy of the Buddhist sacred books, in Pāli. The donor, Rev. J. N. Cushing, writes respecting them:

"The set of books belonging to the Betagat (Tripitaka) is complete, as the Burmans accept them. Doubtless the text is imperfect, for there are always more or less errors in every palm-leaf book copied. All that I can say is that the books are such as any priest teaching Pāli, in his Kyoung, would use. . . Those having the bright gilding and vermilion covers come from Mandalay, where the art of palm-leaf book-making flourishes in its greatest perfection. These are new books. Some of the others have long been used in monasteries." . . .

Prof. Isaac H. Hall writes from Philadelphia, in reference to the Greek Inscription from Beirut, communicated to the last meeting (see Proceedings for Oct. 1880, above, p. xli.), that the emendations then conjecturally made in it prove, on renewed examination of the original by a friend on the spot, to be the true readings of the monument itself.

Dr. S. Merrill, of Andover, called the Society's attention to the fact that the inscription in question had already been published, in Boeckh's Corpus, vol. iii., and also in the Bibliotheca Sacra, vol. v., p. 588.

Prof. Hall also sends a brief account, with transcription and translation, of a charm picked up, a year or two ago, by an American gentleman in Jerusalem, near the pool of Siloam. It was enclosed in a tightly sealed little tin box.
The paper contains one short titular line, and six other lines, written in a Hebrew character that is rather difficult to read, but which would be called Rabbinic; but about two thirds of the last line are composed of Arabic numerals, carelessly written. Beneath is a square of sixteen spaces, with Arabic numerals in all the spaces, and an Arabic name written outside of each of the four sides. The language is a Chaldaic Hebrew, with at least one Arabic peculiarity, the use of the article. The following is the translation:

"May the work of Satan prosper!

'I conjure you, ye the evil spirits of the evil spirits of Asmodai the King of the evil spirits and Rex Tartaroth, king, and Meimon and Zaba'h and Birk'an and Murbab and Shemhoresh, and the red king and the white king, that ye shall put into the heart of Mobmed the son of 'Eliya fire and brimstone of mighty love, flame of Jah, that he may neither eat nor drink until he shall have done instant the wish and will of Karmuz the son of Sogma, so that he may fulfill his request, and not delay in the least nor bring to naught, through the force of those names that are set over the moon, Liaktm, Liakt", Liakt, Lialgó, Liáloteth, Liáloteth [each name twice], and in the Name, and the sons of Korah, Assir and Elkanah and Abiaoph and Ello'a.'

The numbers of the last line, when turned into Hebrew characters by their numerical values, seem to make no continuous sense. The numbers in the square, similarly treated, signify 'Love, mighty fire, flame mighty;' the words about it are the names Michael, Michael, "Ursael, Aesael."

Rev. L. F. Mills, now residing at Hanover, in Germany, writes under date of March 6, 1881, giving an account of his labors on the Avestan Gâthás, and of the publication of their results in which he is now engaged, and enclosing a few specimen pages of the latter.

Mr. Mills's edition includes the Avestan text, with transliteration and verbatim and free translations (the former in Latin); the transliterated Pahlavi version with critical notes and translation; Neriosengh's Sanskrit version in transliteration and translation; and the (transliterated) Persian Pahlavi described below. The Pahlavi version of the Gâthás, as of the rest of the Yaça, has hitherto rested on a single MS., published by Spiegel; Mr. Mills is placed, by the kindness of Dr. F. W. West, in possession of the collation of another MS., of about the same age, lent him by Destur Hoehangji Jamsapji in India; and also had the loan from the Munich Library of a copy made for Haug just before leaving India from a Pahlavi text in Persian characters, with interlinear Persian translation (mixed with Parsi and Arabic). It is not known from what source this latter text comes; in the difficult task of its decipherment Mr. Mills has again had assistance from Dr. West. It was found a valuable umpire between the other two texts, but so far independent that its own publication was deemed also desirable. The translation of the Pahlavi founded on these authorities has been revised by West, and in part by Spiegel; the former's suggested alterations, where not accepted and incorporated by Mr. Mills, the latter intends also to publish in full. For Neriosengh's Sanskrit, Mr. Mills has received from Spiegel notes of a collation of another Copenhagen MS.; and the same scholar has revised his work. An elaborate commentary is to follow, in which will be reported the opinions on every point of the author's predecessors, both Asiatic and European (except Anquetil); and there will be added glossaries of Pahlavi, Sanskrit, and Persian words, and a complete Index Verborum to the Gâthás themselves, with references to the explanations of each word. It is hoped that the volume will appear in little more than six months.

Mr. Mills's letter gives a succinct review of the condition of the Avestan field at the present moment, showing the timeliness of his undertaking. He was first drawn toward it by a desire to examine the connection between Zoroastrianism and orthodox Pharisaism. He has the approbation and counsel and aid of the leading scholars of Europe in this department, and hopes to gain the sympathy and support of Americans also.

Communications were now presented, as follows:
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1881.

1. Remarks on Guyard’s theory of Semitic Internal Plurals, by Prof. C. H. Toy, of Cambridge.

The Semitic broken or internal plurals have commonly been regarded as collectives (the language treats them as singular feminines), in which the numerical extension is indicated by an inward extension of form, as it is in the external plural by an addition at the end. There are difficulties in this view, one of which is that some of the broken plurals show also additions at the end, and Denenbourg (Journal Asiatique, June 1867) held the form in ֶזִּים to be a real external plural.

A few years later (1870), M. Stanislas Guyard extended this suggestion of Denenbourg’s so as to include all the broken plurals, which he endeavors to show are nothing but remnants, more or less disguised, of the regular external plural, somewhat as from English mon we have men for men-er. He makes the following classes: 1. forms showing the regular plural ending, with or without numeration or animating—an ֶזִּים, which is dual-ending in Arabic, and plural in Ethiopic and Aramaic, ֶזִּים plural in Aramaic, and ֶזִּים plural in Hebrew (אָשֶׁר, debarīm); 2. such as have lost the termination, but preserve the internal vowel-modification consequent on the addition at the end—as ֶזִּים (from which ֶזִּים by prothetic Elif, for ֶזִּים); 3. those which show the sequence a-ָ-י, occurring in plural like arāṭi, and thence extended by analogy to all quadrilateralers and to other forms; and the sequence u-ִּים, imitated from bilateral plurals such as ֶזִּים from ֶזִּים; 4. those which have substituted for the plural termination the feminine ending t. All other forms called in the grammars internal plurals he regards as true collectives, and not plurals.

This explanation is in many respects an attractive one. It accounts for a part of the facts in a satisfactory manner; it gets rid of an apparent anomaly in South Semitic inflection; and it is in accordance with what we know of the prevailing genesis of the plural (by addition at the end) in all families of languages. In its turn, however, it presents serious difficulties.

It supposes that Arabic and the other Southern dialects have a double plural system, retaining the full Semitic form as a living inflection, and alongside of it the same plural in curtailed shape, and also living, except that its plural character has been forgotten and it is treated as a feminine singular. This seems to be highly improbable. Modern Arabic has not stood still in the path of phonetic degradation; it has dropped the nominative, using the old genitive ֶזִּים for all cases; and further, has largely given up the external in favor of the broken plural. But it keeps the two classes distinctly apart. This theory supposes that long ago the language had not only already gone further in the same direction of phonetic change, but, after having produced a curtailed plural, had lost consciousness of its plural character and treated it as a singular. Such a transformation at such a time seems hardly credible.

Further, the theory involves a non-Arabic system of internal vowel-change. The plural arāṭi from ֶזִּים M. Guyard compares with Hebrew debarīm from debar or melakim from malk, and sees in the two the same broadening of the pretonic vowel. This, however, is distinctively Hebrew, and not Arabic; the latter shows no such vowel-movement. A similar objection holds to the comparison of Arabic ֶזִּים, ‘women,’ with Hebrew construct נְזִים and Syriac ֶזִּים. It is the transference of the phonetic usages of one dialect to another, without historical grounds.

There is nothing in the vowel-systems of these plurals that demands such a theory for its explanation. All the forms occur as infinitives, or as adjectives and nouns. The fact that quinqueliterals in making the plural reject one letter in order to have just space for the vowel-sequences ָָ-ָָ-ָָ, on which M. Guyard is disposed to lay much stress, is not peculiar to the internal plural; a similar device is adopted in forming diminutives and relative adjectives in ָָ, in both cases from a dislike to five-lettered words; or, if the aim be to maintain a certain vowel-sequenee, such sequence arises in the diminutive not through an external addition, but by a mere internal modification, and may so have arisen in the case of the plurals.

Lastly, this theory fails entirely to explain certain of the internal plurals (mono-syllabic and disyllabic trilliterals), and these M. Guyard throws out of the category of plurals, and regards as singular collectives. The language, however, makes no distinction between them and the others, and so arbitrary a separation
American Oriental Society:

of the forms is unjustifiable, especially as collectives proper are in Arabic carefully distinguished from those plurals.
In spite, therefore, of the attractive simplicity of this explanation, and the ingenuity and learning with which it is presented by its author, it seems to labor under difficulties which, if not fatal, at least make it impossible for us to accept it till new light has been thrown on the facts.

2. On Darmesteter's Translation of the Vendidad, by Prof. J. Luquiens, of Boston.

Prof. Luquiens presented a review of this work of Darmesteter's, which constitutes the fourth volume of Müller's series of Sacred Books of the East. His paper ended with the following conclusions: Considered from a literary point of view, the work leaves little or nothing to desire; it is a bright and spirited rendering of a book which was not held to be either bright or spirited. If the chief aim of M. Darmesteter was to bring out in the strongest light the best sense to be elicited from the tradition, he has been eminently successful; this result, however, seems an honor paid to the native commentators at the cost of a strict adherence to the text and to the most progressive methods of exegesis. As far as the coloring and subinterpretation of the Vendidad by the naturalistic myth are concerned, one must regret the hasty, and yet admire the faith, which led him to thus irrevocably identify the fate of his work with that of theories not yet risen from the hypothetical stage.

3. On the Metres of the Rig-Veda, by Mr. W. Haskell, of New Haven; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

The object of Dr. Haskell's paper is to make a statistical exhibition of the fundamental facts of Rig-Veda metric, as a necessary basis for future more detailed examination of the subject, having especially in view these three points: 1. what are the actual metres used, as opposed to those artificially distinguished and named by the Hindu commentators; 2. what is their comparative frequency; 3. what is the general metrical usage or law of each, as determined by an enumeration of quantities in a number of specimen verses.

The metres are arranged on a (provisional) theory as to their historical relations, as follows: that the anuvṛtta pāda, of eight syllables, is the most primitive, and the anuvṛtta metre, of four such equal pādās, its normal form of occurrence. gāyatrī and pankti etc. being the variations of this; that the 8-syllabled pāda is extended to one of twelve syllables more or less regularly alternating with the former, in the bhṛtt and other kindred metres: that the jagati is then made by putting together four 12-syllabled pādās: that the tristubh pāda, of eleven syllables, is a shortened jagati; and that the 5-syllabled pāda, of the śrīpya bṛhad, is a syncopated tristubh. There are not, either in the Rig-Veda or in the Atharva-Veda, any other metrical elements than these; all other so-called metres are various combinations of these elements, or imperfect and irregular verses, of varying degrees of irregularity, rising sometimes even to entire absence of traceable metrical form.

The order of the metres in respect to frequency is a very different one from this. Here (omitting the minor variations and doubtful cases) the tristubh, of four 11-syllabled pādās, comes first, reckoning about 4200 verses, or over two fifths of the whole Rig-Veda: the gāyatrī, of three 8-syllabled pādās, stands next, with near 2450 verses (occurring especially in the 1st, 8th, and 9th Books); then the jagati, with near 1300 verses: the bhṛtt, svādhyātā, uṣāh, and other combinations of 8-syllabled and 12-syllabled pādās (especially in the 8th Book), near 1200 verses; the anuvṛtta, over 800 verses; the pankti etc. of more than four 8-syllabled pādās, about 250 verses.

An enumeration of the heavy and light syllables, now, in fifty anuvṛtta-verses (with omission, here as later, of a few syllables of doubtful value) gives the following results:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Syllables</th>
<th>i</th>
<th>ii</th>
<th>iii</th>
<th>iv</th>
<th>v</th>
<th>vi</th>
<th>vii</th>
<th>viii</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Light</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>186</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>189</td>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anuvṛtta</td>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>108</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>144</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1881.

The pāda of this type, accordingly, is one having a very marked iambic movement in its last half (the final syllable being, as in Greek and Latin, indifferent), and a very weak iambic movement, consisting only in the greater preponderance of heavy syllables in the second and fourth places, in its former half. The different pādas show no difference of structure that is worthy of remark—unless it be that at the end of the first and third pādas the heavies are more frequent (namely, 54) than at the end of the second and fourth (only 38). The marked excess of heavy syllables throughout the whole former half of the pāda is, as will be seen below, a feature shared by the 8-syllabled pādas of all the other metres. The preponderance of lights in the concluding syllable of the pāda belongs to all the metres without exception, and appears to indicate only the real indifference of that syllable, the greater natural frequency of light syllables showing itself there without hindrance.

A similar enumeration for the other common pādas of eight syllables—namely, the gīyātri, pankti (pādas a–d), uṣṇih (pādas a, b), bṛhāasti (pādas a, b, d), and satobrāhasti (pādas b, d)—is as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>syllables,</th>
<th>i.</th>
<th>ii.</th>
<th>iii.</th>
<th>iv.</th>
<th>v.</th>
<th>vi.</th>
<th>vii.</th>
<th>viii.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gīyātri:</td>
<td>light</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>109</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pankti:</td>
<td>light</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>179</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>113</td>
<td>138</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>155</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Uṣṇih:</td>
<td>light</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bṛhāasti:</td>
<td>light</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>146</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>109</td>
<td>114</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>144</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Satobrāhasti:</td>
<td>light</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>92</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There seem to be no noteworthy differences of structure in these varieties of the 8-syllabled pāda: only the gīyātri shows a larger number of exceptional quantities than the others in its latter half. This is in accordance with the general greater irregularity of the gīyātri, rising even to a tolerably well-pronounced trochaic movement and cadence in certain hymns or parts of hymns; such have been avoided in the enumeration here made.

The total number of light and heavy syllables in the enumerated pādas of the six metres is given below, along with a reduction to percentages, and statement of the limits within which the percentages vary (as between the different metres, as above reported):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>syllables,</th>
<th>i.</th>
<th>ii.</th>
<th>iii.</th>
<th>iv.</th>
<th>v.</th>
<th>vi.</th>
<th>vii.</th>
<th>viii.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>light</td>
<td>385</td>
<td>207</td>
<td>263</td>
<td>193</td>
<td>827</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>850</td>
<td>581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>502</td>
<td>679</td>
<td>625</td>
<td>690</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>824</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>per cent.</td>
<td>93.0</td>
<td>95.5</td>
<td>62.7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>limits</td>
<td>55.4-97.3</td>
<td>69.2-95.6</td>
<td>58.7-78.0</td>
<td>67.3-94.1</td>
<td>90.9-97.3</td>
<td>85.6-99.</td>
<td>85.2-100.</td>
<td>85.1-65.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Taking up, now, the pādas of twelve syllables, there is a noteworthy difference between the uṣṇih (8 + 8 + 12) on the one hand, and the bṛhāasti (8 + 8 + 12 + 8) and satobrāhasti (12 + 8 + 12 + 8) on the other (these three constituting more than four fifths of the whole number of mixed eight and twelve-syllabled pādas, and the others being mainly extensions and variations of them). In the uṣṇih, the 12-syllabled pāda seems essentially an 8-syllabled one of the usual form, with four more syllables added at the end; as will appear from the following enumeration of a hundred pādas (half of them being those belonging to the 8-syllabled uṣṇih pādas already reported):
syllables,  i.  ii.  iii.  iv.  v.  vi.  vii.  viii.  ix.  x.  xi.  xii.
light  49   16  38  13  75  42  76  16  94  2  95  68
Usūth:  heavy  50  83  61  86  24  56  23  82  5  96  4  31

The iambic movement of the middle quaternion of syllables is sufficiently marked, although by no means so cogent as that of the second quaternion in amuṣṭubh and gṛṣṭrāṇi etc.; it is especially felt in the sixth syllable, where the heavy do not very greatly exceed in number the light quantities.

In bṛhatī and satobṛhatī, the middle quaternion has a quite other character: its first three syllables are prevalently light, and the second of them (which in usūth was prevalingly heavy) is more uniformly light than either of the others, while the first is oftener heavy than the third. Thus:

syllables,  i.  ii.  iii.  iv.  v.  vi.  vii.  viii.  ix.  x.  xi.  xii.
light  49  15  45  12  57  91  62  10  97  1  99  61
Brhatī:  heavy  51  85  55  88  43  8  38  90  3  99  1  39
light  38  15  34  13  57  76  66  5  89  5  95  70
Satobrhatī:  heavy  58  81  62  82  39  17  31  92  8  91  2  27

This looks like an expansion of the ordinary 8-syllabled pāda by an inserted element, tending toward the form — — — — (more nearly, in actual fact, — — — —).

The jagati and triṣṭubh pādas agree quite closely in their metrical structure with this. As they are in all respects accordant with one another, save that the triṣṭubh is catalectic, their enumeration may be presented together, thus:

syllables,  i.  ii.  iii.  iv.  v.  vi.  vii.  viii.  ix.  x.  xi.  xii.
light  99  18  120  24  104  164  138  2  190  2  193  117
Jagati:  heavy  95  175  74  110  89  23  56  192  4  191  1  77
light  115  26  105  24  116  166  100  5  186  4  120
Triṣṭubh:  heavy  82  172  92  171  80  27  97  192  11  193  68

The metrical movement of the second and third quaternions of syllables here is in no important degree different from what it was in the two preceding metres. On the other hand, the iambic character of the first quaternion is rather more marked, the light quantities even predominating over the heavy in the first and third syllables. No great stress, however, is to be laid upon this: in almost any set of verses examined, the preponderance will be found to be on the one side and on the other in different pādas; in another set of about 65 triṣṭubh-verses whose syllables were enumerated, the heavy quantities were found to be, in all the pādas together, slightly in excess of the light; and in the 50 bṛhatī pādas belonging with the 8-syllabled pādas first reported, light syllables are in the majority in the first and third places.

The summary of quantities, then, with percentages and limits of variation, for the 12-syllabled pādas of bṛhatī and satobṛhatī, the jagati pāda, and the triṣṭubh pāda (counting its eleventh syllable with the twelfth of the others), is as follows:

syllables,  i.  ii.  iii.  iv.  v.  vi.  vii.  viii.  ix.  x.  xi.  xii.
light  301  74  304  73  334  497  366  22  562  12  387  368
heavy  286  513  283  511  251  75  222  566  26  574  4  211
light  51.3  51.8  57.1  86.9  62.2  95.6  99.0  63  6
per cent.  heavy  87.4  87.5  96.3  98.0

For the dvipāḍī virāj, the thirty-one verses of i. 65–70 have been enumerated. The results are given for two successive pādas, because the uniform and decided prevalence of heavy syllables at the end of the first pāda of each pair (standing,
if the provisional theory stated above be correct, in the place of the fifth and sixth syllables of a *bṛṣṭubh* it appears to have a bearing of some importance on the view to be taken of the metre. Thus:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>syllables</th>
<th>i.</th>
<th>ii.</th>
<th>iii.</th>
<th>iv.</th>
<th>v.</th>
<th>vi.</th>
<th>vii.</th>
<th>viii.</th>
<th>ix.</th>
<th>x.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>light</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>103</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>65</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>118</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>113</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>115</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>per cent.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>light</td>
<td>76.2</td>
<td>53.7</td>
<td>85.1</td>
<td>53.7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>56.6</td>
<td>95.9</td>
<td>96.7</td>
<td>82.6</td>
<td>94.2</td>
<td>95.0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The usual censura after the fifth syllable is wanting in the fourth double pada of 68.1, and in the third of 70.5; and the same is the case in the first of v. 34.17: a strong indication that the whole is essentially one pada. The occasional occurrence of an unsyncopated *bṛṣṭubh* pada among *dvipada virāj* padaś also helps to illustrate the transition: e.g. v. 34.7 (second half); and, where the one metre changes to the other, v. 34.21 (second half); 56.10 (do.).

Any treatment of the other mixed metres, and of the irregular and defective verses, is reserved for a later communication.

Dr. Haskell acknowledged the constant counsel and assistance of Professor Whitney in classifying and presenting the facts gathered by him. The suggestion of the true character of the *dvipada virāj* he owed to Professor Lanman.


It was maintained in this essay that the Hindu systems of philosophy differ among themselves fundamentally in regard to the view taken of the principle of subjectivity; and that the difference in the accounts of the external world given by the various systems results from the difference in the conception of this principle. What may be called the Vedic system assumed the subjectivity of all knowledge and experience. Those early thinkers had discovered that man cannot get beyond himself. The world was to them a dream-world, and thus unreal. This view is implied in the Upanishads; it is distinctly affirmed, and analyzed into certain proximate elements, in the Vedānta; and by some later commentators is pushed to the logical extreme of an absolute solipsism. The Sāṅkhya system, on the other hand, affirmed the objective reality of the universe. It met the opposing view with the only reply that could be logically effective. It found an element of objectivity necessarily present in the very form of subjectivity insisted upon by the Vedānta. It admitted in effect, at least in a certain sense, the dream-like nature of the world, but maintained that the dream as such was real and objective.

To make clear this statement, we must examine the nature of the soul (*puruṣa*) according to the Sāṅkhya system. The soul was, to it, pure intelligence, without emotion or causality. This view of the soul has been regarded as meaningless and absurd by all western commentators who, so far as known to the essayist, have expressed any opinion upon the subject. But the idea of the soul must furnish the key to the whole system; and if this is not understood, the system cannot be understood. It is important then to ask how this view of the soul was reached. We find indications of the method used. The existence of the soul as distinct from the body is shown by the fact that I speak of "my body," "I," "me" must then be something distinct from my body. If it is objected that we also speak of the body of a statue, the answer is that this is pure tautology, the statue and its body being one. This reasoning we may carry further. Just as we say "my body," so we can also say "my mind," "my thought," "my feeling." Mind and thought and feeling must then be as distinct from the "I" as the body is. This may be illustrated in another way. We can not only say "I know," we can also say "I know that I know." We may thus have a regressus into the infinite. This regressus the Sāṅkhya philosophers had too much common sense to admit; and the "I" is posited as lying behind all consciousness. A similar regressus into the infinite is possible in the opposite direction. We can ask of any-
thing. "What is its cause?" and again, in regard to the cause assigned, "What is the cause of it?" and so on forever. Here the common sense of the Sankhyans affirmed prakriti, which was simply and avowedly to give the resting place needed. We must especially recognize the fact that in the search for the "I," and in that for the first cause of objective being, the movement is in opposite directions; and further, we must observe that all which we leave behind us in seeking the first cause is one of its effects, and thus belongs to it. Whatever on the contrary we leave behind in seeking the ultimate ego is cast off from it, and thus is foreign to it. The subject flees from the object, and, as it flees, it flings off one covering after another, until it stands naked and alone. While these views are implied in the whole discussion of this subject in the Sankhyan literature, and especially in the Aphorisms of Kapila, they are perhaps most distinctly stated in the Aphorisms of Patanjali. Here, two counter hypotheses are suggested to account for consciousness. One, that the "mind" is directly self-conscious and thus needs no ego behind it; the other, that self-consciousness is produced by memory. The first suggestion is rejected because "attention to two objects does not take place simultaneously" (Patanjali, v. 19). The other is rejected because "it would require a cognition of the cognition": that is, it would involve a regressus into the infinite (ibid., v. 20).

It will thus be seen that a profound psychological analysis underlies the Sankhya system. The subject, when we come to the last analysis, is but a single point over against the whole world beside. We understand also how real objectivity was reached, a result that had baffled the Vedantin. The nature of the difference in the views of the outward world held by the two systems is also obvious. To the Vedantin, the illusion which forms the essence of the universe exists in and through the subject. It is the soul that is the basis and sphere of all. On the other hand, the soul, according to the Sankhya system, being the one inmost point of subjectivity, "Intellect," which fills the place held by illusion to the Vedantin, becomes wholly objective. It cannot have its basis and support in the soul. The necessity of finding a basis and substance for it elsewhere leads to the notion of prakriti, which is merely this substantial basis of "Intellect." So, in the one system, we have the series of "sheaths" wrapping the soul, sheaths of "Ignorance," growing more and more dense as they overlie one another; and, on the other, we have the same forms of existence produced in a series by "Intellect," "the great one," or by prakriti, that works through it.

We see also the hope of deliverance which this view of the soul was fitted to bring to these thinkers, burdened by the thought of the evils of existence. If the soul is a外来者, it can leave when the decorator, it can leave when the object is withdrawn. Rather, if it has no organic relation with the objective world, it has only to become conscious of this fact, to know itself to be free. This "discrimination" (from which perhaps comes the name of the system) is all that is needed. Through it, the soul that fancied itself bound knows that it is free.

The essay discussed, along with the views here presented, the nature of the three "qualities" (guna), the relation of the system to religion, and other points connected with it.

5. On Relative Clauses in the Rig-Veda, by Prof. J. Avery, of Brunswick, Me.

Prof. Avery discussed in a statistical way the subject of relative clauses in the Rig-Veda, so far as concerns their position with reference to the corresponding antecedent clauses, and also the various modes of treating the antecedent word. All passages had been collected and classified containing derivatives of the relative root ya: excepting, however, yad, yadi, and yathä in clauses expressing condition or purpose; yad as a conjunction meaning 'that, since, so that, although;' and yathä in the sense of tvam. The passages are very nearly 4,000.

I. The antecedent clause stands first more than 2,000 times, or 50.8 per cent. of the whole number of occurrences. The antecedent is fully expressed in its own clause alone near 1,300 times (29.5 per cent.); e.g., lena ... gatah rāthena ... yen cicirnaḥ sūtār kiṃ tava (i. 47. 9), 'come with that chariot with which ye have constantly brought good things to the worshipper;' apō dev't r̥pa hṛṣye yata pa'vaḥ pibanti nah (i. 23. 18), 'I invoke the heavenly waters, where our kine
drink.' The antecedent is expressed in its own clause, and it or a synonym is repeated in the relative clause, 60 times (1.5 per cent.): e. g. imandau ma maruta stōmo dhārī yāin me naraka śṛutāṃ brāhma cakrā (i. 165. 11), 'the praise hath pleased me here, O Maruts, what famous prayer ye have made for me, ye mon.' The antecedent is expressed in the relative clause, and represented by a pronoun in its own clause, 51 times (1.3 per cent.): e. g. tyās te ye pāśrātaṁ āpajam ... niṣītyaśeṣ (i. 113. 11), 'gone are they, what mortals beheld her before.' The antecedent is found in the relative clause alone 69 times (1.7 per cent.): e. g. āpda dahiś 'rātrī yēbhīkā tāpobhir ādhaṁ jārātham (vi. 1. 7), 'burn away the grudges with what heats thou didst burn the waster;' nā Ṛṣi yuddaṁ yod vēc ādam tē (i. 164. 37), 'I do not understand quite what I am now.' The antecedent is not expressed in either clause, except by a pronoun or adverb, 670 times (18.8 per cent.): e. g. śva brahmaḥ yu u tāc cīketā (i. 35. 6), 'let there speak here whoever knows that;' ivaṁma yātrā pratīrākvā uṣyā (i. 113. 16), 'we have gone where they lengthen out life.'

II. The relative clause stands first more than 1850 times, or 46.8 per cent. of the whole number of occurrences. The antecedent is fully expressed only in its own clause over 900 times (22.5 per cent.), by noun, pronoun, or adverb: e. g. yā rāgā 'vāṁśī nāhi'n ... śāma indrīya gūḍāta (i. 4. 10), 'who is a great stream of wealth, to that Indra sang ye:' yātra grī'vā ṛidaṁ tātra gachate (i. 135. 7), 'where the pressing-stone is uttering its voice, thither go:' yātra hīṁ āsāṁ tē'n avā (vii. 75. 15), 'on what side I am, them favor thou.' The antecedent is expressed in the relative clause, and it or a synonym is repeated in the antecedent clause, 56 times (1.4 per cent.): e. g. ye te pāṁbah ... tebhūr no adhyā pathābhā sugardhā vātā (i. 35. 11), 'what paths are thine, by those easy paths guard us this day.' The antecedent is more fully expressed in the relative clause, and represented in the antecedent clause by a pronoun or adverb, 276 times (7.6 per cent.): e. g. ye' tā śṛtaḥ ... śṛya no hinukhā rājhaṁ (vi. 45. 14), 'what help is thine, with that urge on our chariot:' yā ha tāṁ mādhana drī'ṭiḥ ... tītaḥ pīłatam (vii. 5. 19), 'what wine-skin of mead is yours, thence drink ye.' The antecedent is expressed in the relative clause alone 100 times (2.7 per cent.): e. g. yē ādhaṁ nistamūhaṇan te tanti śīṣeśa āsrātīvāyāya (ii. 27. 21), 'what might, magnificent Indra, is thine, bestow on thy friends.'

The antecedent is not expressed in either clause, save by a pronoun or adverb, 526 times (13.2 per cent.): e. g. yē āsmaṁ abhidhāsat ādharānī gamyā kīmanā (x. 152. 4), 'whoosho attacketh us, send thou to lowest darkness:' iyām vṛṣṭiṁ yāta ababhuva ... vā aśiī reka (x. 129. 7), 'whence this creation came into being here, he verily knoweth.'

III. In the third position, the relative clause stands within the antecedent clause 94 times (2.4 per cent.). The same variety of treatment of the antecedent appears here as under the two preceding heads. Examples are: hēya sādhiṁ tvāṁ yēś-bhir āyati nṛcākṣasasā (i. 34. 8), 'his are successful arrows, with which he shoots, men-beholding [ones] etc.: cātām āpa bhīṣmaś carman upro yāk pāṁbah paruḥāla tēma (x. 42. 7), 'drive far away the enemy, O much invoked one—what weapon (?) is terrible, with that one (i. e. with whatever weapon is terrible):' munātāṁ yē sati tamāśa eva bhīṣmaṁ kṛtām ēva āsamā (vi. 74. 3), 'put away what sin committed is bound to our bodies from us:' nāhī yāt aṁ adhiṁśitaṁ 'nādriṁ kō vṛtāy पराण (i. 80. 15), 'for no one, surely, so far as we know, is beyond Indra in might.'

IV. Once more, by a process the reverse of that just noticed, the relative clause takes the antecedent one wholly into itself. This singular arrangement occurs only twice, namely: yē śīhare indraḥ kriṇā vu no daś maśvē ājan (vi. 33. 1), 'what is the mightiest, Indra, do grant that to us, passion, O hero:' yē ēka tā śī hare etu ni sūhṛ krēṣṭuṁ śīvaśrāya pāśīr jyotā (vi. 45. 16), 'who verily alone, him praise thou, is born the chief lord of men.'

The natural position of the relative word seems to us to be at the head of its clause: and it is in truth found there in the Rig-Veda about 2500 times (65 per cent.); but it has the second place near 1,000 times (24.4 per cent.), the third place over 250 times (6.5 per cent.), the fourth place 81 times (2 per cent.), and so on, in decreasing frequency, down to the ninth place.

The preparation of this paper was suggested by certain brief statements made by Prof. Delbrück in his work on the 'Use of the Subjunctive and Optative in
Latin and Greek. He there says, in substance, that while the nature of the relative is such that the clause which it introduces should follow the principal clause, it in fact precedes it in most cases in Sanskrit—meaning, apparently, the Veda; or at least including the Veda, since that is the principal source of the examples quoted throughout his volume. In this usage, he declares, which is of secondary growth, the Sanskrit differs from the Greek of Homer. Now if my statistics are correct, it appears that in the Rig-Veda, at least, the relative clause retains its primitive position in a (small) majority of cases. He further states that the two forms of sentence, where the relative clause either precedes or follows the antecedent word and the antecedent word is expressed in its own clause only, are not very frequent. On the contrary, if we include in these forms the instances where a personal pronoun serves as antecedent, they are half the whole number of occurrences. Again, we are told that the cases where the antecedent or a synonym is repeated in the relative clause are common. I find them uncommon, being less than 3 per cent. of the whole number. Yet further, it is maintained that by far the most frequent arrangement is that in which the antecedent word appears in the relative clause only; that when the latter follows the principal clause, there is no reference in that clause to the antecedent; and that, when it precedes the principal clause, the antecedent is generally represented in the latter by a form of the demonstrative ta. The last only of these three statements seems to be correct, so far as the Rig-Veda is concerned. It would appear that the author’s views rested upon general impressions derived from reading, rather than upon any enumeration of instances.

6. Studies on the Mahāyāna or Great Vehicle School of Buddhism, by Mr. Wm. W. Rockhill, of Baltimore, Md.

The object of Mr. Rockhill’s paper was to set forth some of the principal features of the doctrines of the Mahāyāna school from hitherto unpublished Tibetan documents, and also to show the differences that exist between the older mahāyāna śūtras, of which the Sūtra in 42 Chapters (see Proceedings for Oct. 1880, above, p. 1) is an example, and those of later dates. The following is a brief abstract.

The oldest form in which we find the śūtras of the Great Vehicle is furnished by the Sūtra in 42 Chapters, in which the different points considered are set forth in unpretending, plain language, without any of the repetitions or embellishments of more recent works. The doctrine that is taught does not differ to any great extent from that of primitive Buddhism.

The śūtras on transcendental science (prajñā pāramitā śūtras) expose the more perfected form of teaching of the Mahayanaists of the Madhyamika school. The object of all these works is thus defined by Eug. Burnouf (Intr. à l’Hist. Bud. ind., p. 483): “Les livres de la prajñā pāramitā sont consacrés à l’exposition d’une doctrine dont le but est d’établir que l’objet à connaître ou la perfection de la sagesse n’a pas plus d’existence réelle que le sujet qui doit connaître ou le Bodhisattva, ni que le sujet qui connaît ou le Bouddha.”

The Vajracchedika (Rdo-rje grho pa) is a good sample of these works. It is quite short (18 folios in the Tibetan text), and may consequently be considered as older than the similar works in 100,000 and 8,000 chokons. This text differs in many respects from the Chinese, an English translation of which was given in 1884 by Mr. S. Beal (Jour. Roy. As. Soc’y, new series, vol. i). The “Histoire de la vie et des voyages de Huien Thsang,” p. 310, gives some of the objections to Kumārajiva’s Chinese version (the one followed by Mr. Beal). The Tibetan text approaches much nearer the Sanskrit original, of which a copy exists in the Bibliothèque Nationale (fonds Burnouf, No. 34).

The founder of the Madhyamika school is said to be Nāgārjuna (or Nāgavasu); but from different passages of Tārāntaka and of the work of the biographers of Huien Thsang (p. 274), “Kumārajiva was a contemporary of Aśvaghosa, Deva, and Nāgārjuna,” etc., we conclude that he was the great representative of his school before it assumed its definite form. According to the above statements, he must have lived towards the end of the IVth and commencement of the Vth centuries A. D.

The Kṣetrayāga śūtra, which belongs probably to the Yogāchārya sect of the Mahāyāna school, is a short text taken from vol. xxii., vade section (fol. 81a-6),
of the Bka'-hgyur. It teaches that all Buddhas are endowed with three bodies, the dharmakāya 'the body of the Law,' the sambhogakāya 'the body of perfect acquirement,' and the nirmanakāya 'the body incarnate.' When they have finished their ministry in this world, they divest themselves of the nirmanakāya, but retain in the Parinirvāṇa the two other purer forms, of which they have become possessed on account of their omniscience and many perfections. This text differs considerably from the one mentioned in Julien's Si-yu-ki (liv. iv., p. 240, note).

The third and last sūtra, the aparimita āyūrjñāna sūtra, seems to be of very recent origin. The text that has here been used was published by the Baron Schilling von Cannstadt. The Buddha does not instruct Kumārabhūtī Manjūśrī on any point of the doctrine. He simply tells him that if the present work is copied, recited, or even kept in the house, it will greatly prolong life. The sūtra or sermon has here become a magical formula, the simple repetition of which is all that is necessary to salvation.

The aparimita āyūrjñāna hṛdayanā dhāraṇī, the sequel to this sūtra, professes to contain in a charm of a few words all the virtue and power of the sūtra itself.

The Sāntirika school, to which the last sūtra belongs, was introduced into Tibet in the 11th century, and has been predominant there since that time.


Prof. Lepsius has recently (1880) published a Nubian Grammar, the fruit of studies begun during his celebrated expedition to Egypt and Ethiopia, in 1842-6, and afterward continued under favorable circumstances in Germany. It is worked out with the thoroughness, and in the clear and attractive style, which are characteristic of its author. Besides the grammar itself (200 pages), there is a body of Nubian texts (60 pages), a Nubian-German and German-Nubian vocabulary (180 pages), and an appendix (60 pages) on the dialects of the language, including also a criticism of Reinsch's work on the Nubian. To the whole is prefixed an Introduction (126 pages), on the classification and relationships of African languages in general; this will interest, of course, a wider circle than the rest of the volume, and is worthy of the most careful attention.

Lepsius believes all the African races proper to exhibit only a single physical type; and in addition to its ordinarily recognized characteristics he calls attention to a forward tilt of the pelvis, which gives a peculiar bearing to the body. But he regards the northern and northeastern peoples, the so-called Hamitic races, as early intruders from Asia, followed later by the Semites, these two divisions being ultimately related with one another. The whole southern peninsula of the continent, now, from 7° or 8° N. L. nearly to the Cape, being filled (with the insignificant exception of the Hottentot and Bushman) with the dialects of a single well-defined family, the South-African or Bantu, and there being between these and the Hamitic a broad band of heterogeneous tongues, falling into numerous and discordant groups or families, he holds the Bantu and the Hamitic to be the two original language-types, and the others to be the product of their mutual modification and mixture. The generalization is a grand and striking one: and if it be true, its demonstration in detail will constitute a highly important division of linguistic history. Without laying any claim to the detailed knowledge that would enable him to criticise it with authority, Prof. Whitney reported succinctly the author's views and arguments, and commented on them, especially on those to which he was obliged to take exception. In his opinion, there were too many questionable points involved in it to allow of our accepting it otherwise than provisionally, as a basis for further investigation.

There is, in the first place, the capital question whether the influence of one language can so metamorphose the structure of another as the theory would imply. The prevalent views as to language-mixture are called in this work an "assumption" and "prejudice;" but they appear rather to be the best induction thus far possible from the known and indisputable facts of mutual influence of languages, and cannot be put down except by actual proof of their inapplicability to a given case; if an offered solution of the African problem simply takes for granted their
falsity, we are driven to inquire whether some other solution is not possible. Prof. Lopsius draws up a list of twelve leading particulars in which the Bantu and Hamitic tongues differ, and by them tests the intermediate tongues, ascribing the agreements and disagreements of the latter to the influence of the one or of the other element. The method is not without its dangers, since the differences of any two languages may be taken as test, and other tongues will be found to stand upon the side either of the first or of the second with regard to each point of difference (for a door must be either shut or open); the question of origin of the discordance is still left to be settled. Two of the adopted criteria are of wholly indecisive value, because even the Hamitic dialects themselves differ in regard to them; two or three more are such phonetic matters as even nearly related tongues of other continents are sometimes found to differ upon; the rest arrange themselves mostly under two heads: prefix or suffix structure, and gender founded on sex. As to the first, the intermediate tongues are very discordant, and many of the facts brought to notice by Lopsius are in the highest degree curious and interesting; but it seems still to be open to question whether more of it all than he is inclined to allow, in Bantu and elsewhere, may not be the product of positive growth out of a less developed general condition, and not mere decay and metamorphosis of an original structure most nearly represented by the Bantu. We should not limit too narrowly the possibilities of new production in agglutinative tongues: our author himself gives a very notable example of this, in exhibiting the acquisition by certain Upper Nile dialects, not under Hamitic influence, of an apparent sexual gender distinction, growing, as he believes, out of an earlier, grosser and more material, distinction between stout and puny. Perhaps the wide territorial domain of the Bantu gives a false impression of its predominant importance as a factor in the history of African language; there is nothing in its present extension to prove that it might not have been originally a coordinate member of the congeries of Central African groups, to which favoring circumstances, along with the superior capacities of its speakers, have given a very exceptional growth; whether there is anything in the language itself to show the contrary, remains to be ascertained.

The subject of gender is one of leading interest in the Introduction, and the highest degree of value as a criterion is attributed by the author to this grammatical element. He holds, for example, the absence of gender in Nubian to be a sufficient indication that that language is fundamentally Central African; though in all the other respects considered by him it agrees with the Hamitic. He holds the Hottentot to be Hamitic solely because it has gender, while in other points of structure and in material no trace of anything Hamitic is discoverable about it, and while the physical type of the race is purely, if not exaggeratedly, African; he believes the Hottentots to represent a branch of Hamitic stock, severed from the rest by the crowding outward of the Bantu peoples, and pushed southward, with an ever-increasing admixture of African blood, till its Hamitic characteristics were completely swamped. And this, although he has shown us an example, as noticed above, of the virtual acquisition of gender by a body of African dialects, and the Persian offers a familiar example of a language of our own family that has utterly lost the distinction. He regards the common (and nearly exclusive) possession of gender by the Indo-European, Semitic, and Hamitic families as proving their ultimate relationship: the fact is certainly a very striking one, and that it may have so decisive a bearing need not be too dogmatically denied; while at the same time we are justified in regarding this as unproved, and even in the highest degree questionable, considering how probably the distinction appears to have been worked out in the course of the structural growth of each division of language. Prof. Lopsius endeavors to find a psychological basis for the African classes, on the one hand, in the attitude of African savage man toward nature, and for the genders of the higher races, on the other hand, in the regulation of the relations of the sexes which made family organization the starting-point of the superiority of those races. Various considerations were adduced, however, to cast doubt upon the sufficiency of either explanation. Thus, as regards the latter, it does not seem clear that a moral organization of the family, in our sense, any more than the virtues of benevolence and justice, are what advances a race that is struggling upward toward power; then, all languages have
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1881.

distinct names for human beings in all their various relations, and can by help of
these constitute the family as purely as they have moral sense for; and it is no
honor done to the element of sex to extend it fancifully to everything in cre-
ation, any more than it would show a keen sense for form to call birds and
the weather square, and goodness and headaches round; and the most important
words designating gender in Indo-European, father, mother, brother, sister, daugh-
ter, have no gender characteristic, either in derivation or in inflection. On the
whole, gender remains still the same difficult and trying problem as hitherto: un-
less we are to see in the special gender-development out of a distinction of size
and dignity on the part of the group of Nile languages referred to above a valu-
able hint as to what the history of the same thing may have been in our own
language.

Other of Prof. Lepsius's general views laid down in this work were reported:
thus, for example, his repudiation of "Turanian" affinity for the race that laid
the foundation of Mesopotamian culture, and his reduction of the latter to an
Egyptian origin through Cushite mediation. The hope was expressed that he
would take occasion to write himself out more fully on this subject, with state-
ment of his reasons.

8. On a Manuscript Fragment of the Samaritan Pentateuch,
by Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of Philadelphia; presented by Prof. Toy.

Some days ago, through the kind offices of Rev. Dr. W. Hayes Ward, I came
into possession of a parchment folio, or pair of leaves, written in the Samaritan
character, quite old, and somewhat obscure. It was obtained from a Jew, who
stated that he brought it from Jerusalem fifty years ago.

The size of each leaf is 4 1/4 x 3 3/4 inches; of the written page, 3 x 2 3/4 inches.
It is written with twenty-four lines to the page, except that a word is pushed
into the twenty-fifth line on two of the pages, and on another the same is true of
the punctuation at the end of a chapter. The style of writing is that of ordinary
Samaritan manuscripts, with a fine point or dot to separate the words, here and
there replaced by a punctuation mark like a colon. At the end of a chapter the
punctuation is like that seen in Petermann's edition of the Book of Genesis in
Samaritan characters. Spaces are left between the letters toward the end of a
line when necessary, so that the last letters of the lines may stand in an upright,
even column. No words are divided at the end of a line. A hole in the parch-
ment, not like the writing, divides some words, in one case separating the
letters by more than half an inch. Paragraphs are marked by leaving a whole
line blank.

The manuscript is a fragment of the Samaritan Pentateuch, containing Numbers
xxvii. 24 (beginning at בנה רפז נ) —xxviii. 16; xxxii. 23-42. An easy com-
putation shows that just eight pages, or four leaves, or two folios, were inside
this folio in the quire when the MS. was complete. It was therefore the middle
folio, or one of the outer folios, of the quire: if the quire was a fermio, then it
was the outer one, which I do not think was the case.

The writing begins in a verse which I have called 24, above; but it is a verse
not there in the Hebrew, added after verse 23 from Deuteronomy iii. 21, 22,
slightly altered. The paragraph and chapter end with this extra verse in the
MS.; and the next paragraph ends with verse 10. Another paragraph ends with
verse 15; and the page ends with the third word of verse 16, [םויצ], of which
last word only the first 2 can be read without a lens, and the last two letters are
hopelessly defaced. The previous word is interrupted by the hole: thus, תג וינש.

The next leaf begins with Numbers xxxii. 23, and has paragraph divisions at the
end of verses 28 and 33. The last page ends with the chapter, at verse 42.

In connection with the following collation with Blayney's edition of the
Samaritan Pentateuch (Oxonii, 1790) are noted the chirographical peculiarities
not mentioned above. When not otherwise stated, or a parenthesis not used, the
variation from Blayney's text is to be found in his lower margin as a manuscript
reading. I have not thought it worth while to repeat them from his edition.

Chap. xxviii. 2, ימש for ימש. Here the * seems to be a re-linking of a faded
ת, and not a correction, or change of mind of the original scribe. The two letters
resemble each other very nearly in the script—arrivée forISION. This is slightly different from Blayney’s variant, which isION.

Verse 5. ENERGY for ENERGY. Here the Й is written over a faded Й. It is difficult to account for this change in restoration except by ignorance. This variant is of course not given by Blayney.

Verse 7. לccion for לccion.
Verse 8. לccion for lccion.
Verse 9. Same as above in verse 7.
(Verse 12. הלא is omitted by error of scribe, but added by a later hand above the line.)

Numbers xxxii. 24. (תור for תור by mere error, but the Й is added above the line prima manu.)
(Verse 26. יסמר for יסמר, but the superfluous Й has a stroke drawn obliquely across it by a later hand in token of erasure.)
Verse 28. ליע for ליע.
(Verse 29. יד for יד; but the Й has a horizontal stroke drawn above it prima manu, in token of erasure.)
(Verse 33. י for י; but the Й is added above the line prima manu.)
Verse 38. ליע for ליע

So far as can be seen from this comparison, the manuscript appears to be a very respectable one. It is also evidently ancient; but how ancient, I have no means of determining. The collation discloses only one real variation from Blayney’s text or margin; and that of no great importance. Its real interest lies in its disclosing the fact of a partial re-inking, and a correction both by the original scribe and a later hand, and the manner of so doing. It is worth while to remark that there is one vacant space, in one of the lines, large enough for a whole word. I am unable to determine whether this is an actual erasure, or left blank originally because of a defect in the surface, or to make the line come out even. In some cases the spacing seems to be done for the latter purpose throughout a whole line, sometimes only through the last half, but oftener only in the last word or two. One line leaves wide spaces between both the words and the letters of a word for that purpose.


These monuments consist of seals, a number of casts of important relics, and one very fine slab, recently received, of Assur-nazir-pal, B. C. 885-860. This is similar to other slabs of this king that have previously been brought to the country, and from its perfect preservation it may be classed among the very best of them. The inscription upon it is clear, and is generally known as the “Standard Inscription.” A detailed account of all the Assyrian monuments then known as having been brought to America, accompanied by translations, was presented to the Society by Mr. Merrill at its meeting in October, 1874. The design of the present paper was first to call attention to the desirability of supplying our museums with casts of these valuable relics and records from Nineveh and Babylon; secondly, to point out some new features in the slab here mentioned; and thirdly, to describe briefly some new inscriptions of Assur-nazir-pal that have lately been discovered.

Dr. Ward, of New York, had brought with him copies of all the recently discovered Hittite inscriptions, but the lateness of the hour rendered their exhibition impracticable.

After passing a vote of thanks to the American Academy for the use of its room, the Society adjourned until Wednesday, Oct. 26th, 1881.
Proceedings at New Haven, October, 1881.


The Society assembled at New Haven, on Wednesday, Oct. 26, 1881, at 3 o'clock p.m., in the usual place, the Library of the Divinity School. The chair was taken by the president, Prof. S. Wells Williams, LL.D., of New Haven, who in a few words returned thanks to the Society for the honor done him in electing him to fill the place made vacant by the resignation of Prof. Salisbury.

The minutes of the last meeting having been read, the Committee of Arrangements reported that they had accepted on behalf of the Society an invitation from the President to hold the evening session at his house, in a social way.

On the part of the Directors, the announcement was made that the Annual meeting would be held in Boston, on Wednesday, May 24th, 1882, Professors Toy and Abbot being the Committee of Arrangements for it. They also recommended the election to Corporate membership of the following persons:

Prof. Francis Brown, of New York;
Mr. H. F. Burton, of Rochester, N. Y.;
Prof. B. L. Gildersleeve, of Baltimore, Md.;
Rev. J. S. Jenckes, Jr., of Des Moines, Iowa;
Rev. S. D. Feet, of Clinton, Wis.;
Prof. Calvin Thomas, of Ann Arbor, Mich.

These gentlemen were then elected, in accordance with the recommendation.

The Committee of Publication stated that the first Part of Volume xi. of the Journal would doubtless be in the hands of members before the next Annual meeting.

On motion of the Librarian, a Committee was appointed to consider, in conjunction with the authorities of Yale College Library and of the Yale Divinity School, the transfer of the Society's Library to the premises of the latter.

Extracts from the Correspondence of the past half-year were read:

A member of the family of Professor Benfey, of Göttingen (an Honorary Member of the Society, deceased since its last meeting), writes from Berlin, expressing the hope of the family that his library, in accordance with his own earlier intimated desire, may be purchased entire by some American institution. It has been pronounced by authority of high rank "unusually complete in the departments which it represents."

Prof. J. W. Jenks, of Newtonville, Mass., has written repeatedly, urging the importance of putting on record the literary history of the Arabic translation of the Bible, before it shall be too late. The Corresponding Secretary said that he had referred the subject to Prof. Isaac H. Hall of Philadelphia (formerly for a time at Beirut), who had promised to take initiatory steps, at least, toward satisfying the probably widely felt desire to which Prof. Jenks gives expression.
American Oriental Society:

Dr. D. B. McCuttee, formerly of China, writes from New York accompanying the gift of certain Buddhist documents obtained in Japan, partly in Indian characters, and explaining their nature and value. They are:

1. A Sūtra, called by Dr. Eitel (Handbook of Chinese Buddhism) the svārma pāraṁśu jñānāya, one of the nine dharmanas of the Nepalese, and ascribed to Čāryamuni himself. The volume contains the Sanskrit text of the work, with interlinear Japanese transliteration, and the Chinese version and comments, also interlined with Japanese.

2. A syllabary of the Sanskrit characters used in China and Japan, with explanations in the languages of those countries. It is a Japanese edition of the Chinese work called by Eitel (as above) the Siddha-stotra, or first chapter of the Pan-chang, a work in twelve parts attributed to Brahma. It is also noticed by Mr. Satow, in the "Chrysanthemum" (Yokohama) for Jan. 1881, p. 17, under the name of Shittan-ji-ki.

3. A rubbing (about six feet by three) of an inscribed dhūrani, or Buddhist formula, in Indian characters, from the temple of Kwannon (Kwan-yin), at Asakusa, Tokio. The Chinese title over it is the same with that of the Kau-Yung Kwan inscription, described by Mr. A. Wylie in the Journ. Roy. As. Soc. for 1870 (Vol. v, pp. 14 ff.); namely, "Great Dhūrani of the honored diadem on Buddhā's cranium." It contains just over 400 characters. Accompanying it is a manuscript transcription with interlined Japanese transliteration, and also a Chinese transliteration, both made by a Japanese scholar.

4. A photograph of the tolo (dhūrani) pall described by Dr. Jamieson in the Trans. No.-China Branch Roy. As. Soc'y for December, 1865.

The following communications were presented to the meeting in the afternoon and evening:

1. Notice of F. Delitzsch's views as to the alleged site of Eden, by Prof. C. H. Toy, of Cambridge.

Delitzsch's recent work entitled "Wo lag das Paradies?" is distinguished above all its predecessors on the same subject by fulness of learning and sobriety of judgment; and its notes and appendices furnish a very valuable collection of geographical and linguistic remarks. After a criticism of other theories, the author points out that the writer in Genesis ii. had in mind an actually existing place as his Eden, and deals with known geographical data; his tone, as well as that of Ezekiel, is purely historical; he shows for himself, and assumes for his readers, the same sort of knowledge of Pishon and Gihon, of Havilah and Kush, as of Tigris and Euphrates and Assur. Delitzsch regards the essential identity of the Babylonian and the Old Testament cosmogonies as satisfactorily demonstrated; nor does he regard it as open to question that the Babylonians and not the Hebrews were its originators. Wherever, then, the Babylonians placed Eden, there the Hebrews placed it when they received the story. And if they received the latter at the time of the exile, in the 6th century before Christ, as Delitzsch holds, it must agree with the Babylonian doctrine of the same period, which was preserved in documents going back to the earliest known times of Babylonian (Assyrian) civilization. We have every reason to presume that there is geographical consistency in the Babylonian account. The problem, then, is a simple one: what four rivers are there, branching from one common stream, two of them being the Tigris and Euphrates, and the other two in close proximity with the lands of Kush and Havilah? Such a group can of course be found only in Babylonia; and, as no four rivers proper now exist there, the theory has been suggested and worked out by various authorities, that the Pishon and Gihon are to be recognized in some of the numerous canals with which that region was filled. Any theory placing Eden below the junction of the Tigris and Euphrates is excluded by the fact, brought prominently out by our author, that in the 6th century B. C. the two rivers did not unite before reaching the Persian Gulf. Delitzsch's view then is, that Havilah is the northeastern part of the Syrian desert, touching on the Babylonian Euphrates, and traversed by the canal Pallakopas, in which is to be recognized the Pishon of Genesis. The Asiatic Kush he
identifies with the territory of the Klamitic Sumerians, dwelling on the north-eastern and northern shore of the Persian Gulf; through it runs the Shat-en-Nil, which is the Gihon. The Garden of Eden is the Karduniash, the so-called Isthmus, watered by the Euphrates, the left bank of which is here considerably higher than the right bank of the Tigris. To the dwellers in that region the Euphrates would seem to be the one river, from which parted not only the two great canals, but also the Tigris, which was connected with the Euphrates by a cross-canal. The two canals were probably old river-beds, and, being navigable and very ancient, might naturally be called rivers.

Prof. Toy presented in some detail the evidence relied on by Delitzsch to establish the truth of the various parts of this theory; and, while pronouncing it to come nearer than any hitherto proposed to meeting the requirements of the narrative in Genesis, proceeded to point out certain respects in which the author's statements do not seem to be entirely satisfactory.

1. There must be doubt about the positions assigned to Havilah and Kush. According to Delitzsch, Havilah extends from a point south of Judah to the bank of the Euphrates, and farther north than Babylon. Such a position for the Joktanite Arabs is somewhat surprising, especially as the tribe or region Yobab, which follows Havilah in Gen. x. 29, must have lain still farther north. Unfortunately the datum in Gen. x. 30 ("the dwelling of the Joktanides was from Mesha to Sephor, a mount of the east") is too indefinite to help much. Nor can it be said to be made out that Kush is identical with Babylonia. The genealogical statement in Gen. x. 7 confines Kush to Arabia (Havilah also being a son of Kush), and elsewhere in the Old Testament it means either Arabia or Ethiopia. Ezekiel, who shows so many points of contact with the 10th chapter of Genesis, and who was probably well acquainted with Babylonian geography, uses Kush of Ethiopia only. The fact that Nimrod, to whom is assigned the kingdom of Babylonia, is said to be a son of Kush, would hardly be sufficient ground for assigning the name Kush to Babylonia.

2. There is further the meaning of the participle zarz, "encircling," which is used in describing the geographical relation of the streams Pishon and Gihon to Havilah and Kush respectively. Delitzsch remarks that the word may mean "traversed;" but this is not borne out by the usage of the Old Testament; in none of the passages that he cites will the verb admit this signification. In what sense can the Pallakopas be said to "encircle the whole land of Havilah?" It might be properly said, perhaps, to pass along its frontier, to form its boundary; but, if this were meant, the expression would be different, as in the case of the Tigris, which is described as flowing "in front of Assyria." There is a difficulty here which Delitzsch's exposition does not remove.

3. Again, the relation of the four branches or "heads" to the main river involves difficulty. It does not clearly appear how a Hebrew writer, knowing the geography of Assyria and Babylonia, could call the Tigris a branch of the Euphrates. Delitzsch himself dwells on the distinctness of the geographical knowledge of this region possessed by its inhabitants, and this I see no reason to call in question. But the distinctness their knowledge, the more certain it must have been to them that the Tigris was an independent stream, in some places greater than the Euphrates, and not at all to be regarded as one of its branches.

Further, we must ask why, if the Euphrates was the main Eden-river, it was not called by its name. A river, says the narrative, went out of Eden to water the garden, and thence parted into four streams, of which the Tigris and the Euphrates are two. As the writer is giving geographical details, why does he not say distinctly that this river was the Euphrates? His silence cannot be attributed to ignorance, or to geographical carelessness; it is evident that he is ready to tell all that he knows of the locality. As the fourth branch is given as the well-known river Euphrates, one does not see why the main stream should not be named, if it was known as the Euphrates. Possibly the writer might have thought it geographically inconsistent to give the same name to the main river and to one of its branches; but we should hardly look for such scrupulosity.

Delitzsch's theory is a strong and well-supported one, but it labors under these difficulties, which must be set aside before it can be accepted.
2. On Non-diphthongal e and o in Sanskrit, by Prof Maurice Bloomfield, of Baltimore, Md.

The discussion starts with the statement that it is impossible to explain the e of the so-called contracted weak perfect stems, like sod- in sedimā etc., as diphthongs. The type of these perfects is older than the beginning of the separate life of the Indian languages, and any explanation of it made for Sanskrit alone is insufficient; and if the e in forms like these is explained as a diphthong, the same explanation must hold good for all other languages that exhibit this method of forming perfect stems, which is not the case. The e of this type is now generally held to be long ē, the result of short e plus the tone of a sonant consonant, which has itself fallen out, but left its tone to preserve the long quantity of the syllable: e.g. Skt. sādīmā stands for *sād-ēd-ēmā, *sād-(ē)āmā, where the ē in falling out left its tone behind it; this lengthened the ē preceding it into ē. In the same way Latin sedimus and Gothic setum must be referred to the Indo-European stem *sed-ō, sed-; and in these languages the explanation of the ē as a diphthong is simply impossible. In sādīmā the ē is Indo-European; it has been generated in the same manner within the history of Sanskrit itself in ēdhi, which cannot be explained except by referring it to *ēdhi, *(ē)dhi; so also in dehi and dēhī, which are equal to *deh-dhi and *deh-dhi (Zend daehati), and in a few others, most of which are treated by Johannes Schmidt, Kuhn's Zeitschrift, xxv. 69 fg.

The explanation of these as long ē, the result of short ē plus the tone of a sonant consonant, is supported by the entirely parallel way in which long i and ā are the results of short i plus the same tone, which a sonant has lost as compensation on falling out. A case in Indo-European times is exhibited in the present stem ād- of Skt. ādāti. Ādāti, Lat. ādī; which is equal to *ād(ē)-dī, precisely as ēd-ī is equal to ēdāmā; within the Sanskrit itself mādhi = Gr. μάθη; mādā, 'nest,' stands for *māzdā; the participles ādā, mādā, for *ādzh-ā, *mādzh-ā. For the word ādā affinity with Latin āridus for *āridus is suggested, so that its ī is again the result of compensation for short ī. In the same way long ā in cases like ādā, mādā, dādāhā and dāpīca, etc., is the result of short ā compensated by the tone of the sibilant which has fallen out (*ā-dāhā etc.).

It has been seen that long ē, i, and ō, when the result of compensatory lengthening, have originated from their corresponding short vowels ē, ī, and ō; this creates a presumption in favor of an attempt to explain the ō as a like result of compensatory lengthening.

The word sōdāra is especially interesting, because it is so different from all the numerals with which it could be associated mentally; there is no analogical numeral formation by which its ō could be accounted for, and it must be explained as the result of organic growth. And sōdāra is naturally explained from sōda, where the ō has been changed from ē by the ē which preceded it, as in Zend kšnavas and in the Greek inscriptive form rēx.

The peculiar nominatives in the Rig-Veda—areyā's from the stem areyād, paro-
ār's from the stem paroārā; and the nom. cretaura of the grammarians, cannot be explained organically as coming from the several stems plus the ō of the nominative. They can only be analogical formations, and the only forms which could have given rise to them are the bh-cases, avarabhī, paroabhīs, and āgirabhīs, which are preserved by the grammarians. It is found that root-stems which have long ō in the strong cases often show ō in the weak ones; that this short ō is probably the representative of ō or equal to ō is shown by Greek declensions like klaw klistos; σῶμα σώματος; ōl tō ὁλί. We assume then that before the bh-endings (as areyās-bhis, paroārā-bhis and āgirabhīs-bhis) the sonant sibilant has fallen out as in so-dāra, and compensated the short ō by lengthening it into ō; so far as can be seen, forms like these, and only such, could have given rise to as-
nominatives, areyās etc., on the basis of a proportion āgirabhīs: āgirās: avarabhīs: areyās.

The main point of the paper is the explanation of the change of final ē into ō. The ō in such cases is not a diphthong; it is long ō, the result of short ō plus the tone of the sonant sibilant ō which has fallen out. Short Indo-European ō is secondarily not entirely dead upon Indian ground, any more than short ē. E. g. ē and ō both have been preserved in certain cases as long ē and ō. The euphonic change
Proceedings at New Haven, October, 1881.

of a sound-group acvo dravati differs from that of a sound-group edhi only in the quality of the short vowel which preceded the change: *acvos dravati is the historic precursor of *acvo dravati, precisely as *edhi of edhi.

There are great difficulties besetting this explanation; but they are not to be regarded as insurmountable. In the first place, final *e does not correspond to European *e alone, but also to European *a; in the latter case it ought to appear as *a; *agnayi dahaneti for *agnayi dahaneti. That this state of things once did actually exist in India appears to be rendered strongly probable by certain dialectic phenomena. In the Magadhi-dialect, original final *e generally appears as *i; cf. Hemacandra iv. 288, and Varraruci's Prakrit-prakiti xi. 10. And if we were disposed to distrust the historical legitimacy of the phenomenon in a late and artificial dialect like the Magadhi, we are convinced that this final *i is a linguistic fact, because the inscriptions found in various parts of the old Magadha district show the same *i. Such are the inscriptions of Açoka in Dhauli; they have final *i, while the same inscriptions at Girnar in Guzerat show final *a. The reason why the original difference between *acvo dravati and *agnayi dahaneti was lost is clear. As soon as the difference between *acvos and *agnayeti before surds was wiped out, because both short *o and short *e were written as short *a, there was no longer any basis for the differentiation of *acvo and *agnayeti; one or the other had to disappear; that the *i-forms usually succumbed may probably be brought into connection with the fact that final Skt. *a = Eur. *a is about 2½ times as common as final Skt. *e = Eur. *a. When this disappearance of *e for *a began, it is almost impossible to say. On the one hand, there are many facts that would seem to prove that the process was started in Aryan times, when the Indian and Iranian languages were still one; it is a fait accompli in the Vedâ Samhitas; in most of the Prakrit dialects and in Pali, *i is simply substituted for *a without reference to the character of the following sound; the Iranian has carried the process of extending the *o-forms on the one hand farther than Pali, namely into composition; on the other hand, the *a has survived before enclitics: manadhâ, but mananâhaco. But there are facts also which appear to prove that the *o accomplished the task of crowding out the *i separately in the various dialects of the Indo-Iranian languages; such are the victory of *i over *o in Magadha, and the distinct traces of *i by the side of *a in Iran, which will be pointed out below.

The form in which stems in *a (manas) in Skt. appear before the bh-endings has deviated from the original. For here, as in the case of final *a, we must be guided by the vocalism of Europe; this is unequivocal. Homeric ἐρήμωσις, ὀρθοκοπις, etc. point to Indian forms like *manedhis etc. Of these there is no trace; *a has here also crowded out *i. But the Zend has preserved the historical form most strikingly: raecebis from raeceanh, aevbis from aevanh, etc., both in the Gathâ-dialect and in the later Avestan. The position of this *i in the language points with perfect distinctness to a genesis from a short *ê (Hübnermann's and Justi's e), and through this *ê, to a connection with simple Skt. a; on the other hand, the *i just as clearly shows affinity with that *ê which in the later Avesta alone stands for final *a, and is actually found to interchange with it in the Gathâs, and like it to exchange with *a; for when we have forms like manê for manêi, vacê for vacêi, yokê (kas-nî), we are bound to recognize here that stage in which final *a and *ê are still both in existence, although the laws with regard to the use of one or the other have been necessarily wiped out along with the difference between *ê and *o; the *ê of raecêbis is the same ê as the final *ê in the Gathâs, and has escaped that levelling process which in the later Avesta has substituted final *ê for *ê everywhere at the end of a word by virtue of its more protected position. It is interesting and fortunate that there is no possibility of explaining raecêbis etc. as analogical formations, because the Zend has, unlike its sisters in India, separate forms for long *ê and *a clearly differentiated from the *i and *a diphthongs. While an Indian *raecêbis would be subject to the suspicion that it had in some way become contaminated by the a-declension, or was an a-formation parallel with the *a-formation, as is often enough the case, such an eventuality is here wanted off by daârâdibî, aetâdibî, etc.

There remains an exception in Sanskrit, contained in the later rule, that final *a before *ê changes to *ê, and the following initial *ê is dropped. The difficulty lies in the change of a syllable short by nature and position into a long one; there is
American Oriental Society:

here no ground for compensatory lengthening. It is believed that in unravelling the meshes of this exception the last trace of a value of final ə or ə will be detected on Vedic ground. In the later language, not only final ə from ə produces the elision of initial ə, but any other ə; and what is more, ə also produces the same effect. We must however turn to the earlier Vedic language before we can begin to explain; and here the complexion of the two rules we are dealing with is changed materially. Final ə or is still written before ə, and we find this ə again in juxtaposition with final ə, for in the Veda also the initial ə is elided after e and o: only with this difference, that the elision is here the rare exception, not the rule. It is impossible to explain the elision after ə as a mere analogical process, an imitation of the properties of a parallel sound, the o, because we are dealing with an ill-regulated tendency, itself too vague and undefined to furnish the firm foundation of facts likely to exercise the necessary attraction. It will be necessary then to recognize the fact that the elision after e, just as that after o, stands on its own basis, and to explain how two sounds of a character so widely different (o is almost always the product of as, e always a historical diphthong) show the same tendency in the earlier language to elide a following ə.

The organic parallelism of e and o in early times is proved by a still more striking fact. A. Kuhn has shown, in his acute investigations on Vedic language as exhibited by metrical conditions, that in the Rig-Veda final e and o before vowels are themselves short (see especially Kuhn & Schleicher's Beiträge, iii. 118 ff.). His proof, as far as ə is concerned, may be called almost a linguistic necessity, there being no reason for a lengthening of final ə before o; but what is to be done with the diphthong e, which is nothing but a diphthong in historical times; what is the reason of its short quantity?

It is believed that the following explanation will be found to remove the difficulties involved: 1. Final ə and ə simply dropped the e before vowels, whether ə or any other vowel followed. As the Indian alphabets possessed no signs for either short ə or ə, they had to put signs actually existing in their places: before all vowels except ə the short ə was chosen, the sign being indeed insufficient to render the color of the vowels, but doing perfect justice to the quantity; before o, the disinclination to allow two identical vowels to follow upon one another was probably the motive which led to another possible expedient, by which the vocalic color was preserved, but the quantity sacrificed in writing, by employing the signs o and e; this, it is believed, is the starting point from which the remarkable juxtaposition of e and o in the euphonic rules must be explained. 2. These e and ə, coinciding graphically with the long and diphthongal ə and ə, ended by attracting them to their own condition, so that every e and o, without reference to its origin, was pronounced short before ə; but then, also, the other vowels, which indeed would occur almost only after e, were drawn into this rule; so that the shortening of e and o took place before all vowels. This is the condition of things which Kuhn finds; and it may be added, as a valuable proof that this shortening does not take place on the principle vocalis ante vocalem corripitur, that in a few instances the short values occur before consonants also. 3. Before the period from which our Vedic material dates, the final ə (written ə) for ə had also absorbed the final ə (written ə) for ə, precisely as in the case of final long ə and ə; so that only those ə were left which could preserve their existence from the fact that they occurred also in other connections than merely before initial vowels: namely, the diphthongal e, which had been drawn secondarily into the treatment as short vowel. We have then the last vestige of final ə on Vedic and Sanskrit ground in the short value of e in the Veda, and also in the sporadic elision of initial ə following. 4. The vanishing of initial ə after e and o has thus far been called by a name which for the later language is well and expressive enough, namely elision. That it is however in reality not elision is clearly enough to be recognized from the fact that the resulting accentuation takes account of the e; the tone of the ə or ə that results shows that the ə has been united with the e and o. Two peculiarities are then connected with this phenomenon: first, that e and o do not, as might be expected before vowels, resolve themselves into semivowels or groups; second, that the combination occurs so sparingly in the Rig-Veda. The first difficulty falls aside, because the o and e are not diphthongal, but short ə and ə; the law according to which these combine with following ə then lies before us: Short
Proceedings at New Haven, October, 1881.

3. On the Aboriginal Miao-tsz Tribes of southwestern China, with Remarks on the Nestorian Tablet of Si-ngan fu, by Prof. S. Wells Williams, of New Haven.

Before taking up the proper subject of his paper, Dr. Williams called attention to the fact that this year is the 1100th anniversary of the erection of the celebrated Nestorian monument in Si-ngan, the ancient capital of China, and recalled to the recollection of the Society the principal facts in its remarkable history. A recent rubbing taken from the tablet itself was exhibited, to show its continued good condition. The monument was visited in 1866 by two English missionaries, Messrs. Williamson and Lees, who found it built into a brick wall in such a way as to shield it from the weather. This had been done in 1859, by a Chinese named Hian Tai-hwa, who had added a brief inscription at the side, stating his regret at its former neglected condition, and his desire to preserve it. In 1874, three American missionaries again visited it, and obtained rubbings from its face; they also learned that the citizens of Si-ngan were well aware of the age and importance of the tablet. The brickwork put up in 1859 had, however, been meanwhile destroyed by some Imperial soldiers; and Rev. Arthur Smith says that the stone now stands in an open court without any shelter. Five other tablets stand in a row with it. The demand for rubbings from it is a partial guarantee that it will be carefully preserved. Its material is said to be a kind of silicious limestone. The capital Si-ngan was abandoned in A. D. 904 for Loh-yang in Honan, and was left in a ruined condition. The tablet was probably placed in the cathedral church of the Nestorians there, and if this church was destroyed, or pulled down for its materials, its roof and other parts not worth carrying off would furnish plenty of earth and debris to cover the stone as deep as it was found in 1825. The notice of its discovery at that time gives no particulars as to its situation; but the hypothesis above made would account for its good condition. The fact that tablets of a similar character are still set up in temples and burial-places all over China leads to the hope that others may yet be found connected with the Nestorian religion; for it would be strange if only this single relic of a faith that existed in the Middle Kingdom for about eight centuries had ever been erected. Rather it may be regarded as an earnest of what future explorations will reveal, when they come to be prosecuted by competent men working at their leisure. The recent discoveries in Western Asia of various relics in the form of inscriptions, substructions, and monuments, proving the existence of ancient nations like the Hittites and Accadians, has stimulated the researches of qualified scholars everywhere in that region. In such researches, the discovery of a single stone with a legible inscription opens the path to a wider field than the excavation of a whole city showing only the foundations of houses or the slabs of sidewalks. The Moabite stone did its best work when it added its testimony to the authenticity of the story of King Mesha, in the second book of Kings—a testimony given out, so to speak, at its last gasp. In Eastern Asia, sovereigns and great men have depended more on literary records than on great buildings and monuments to perpetuate their history; and consequently we have hitherto few epigraphic memorials of their existence. But the probabilities are strong that further search will bring more of them to light in China, when foreigners and educated natives are able to look for them.

Dr. Williams then exhibited a collection of forty water-color paintings of figures
of as many tribes of Miao-tz' by a Chinese artist. They were obtained by him in Peking. Such sketches are not rare in China, and he had seen others superior in execution to these. To each picture is added a short description of the tribe, and translations of several of these were read. They do not give much information as to the origin or numbers of the delineated nations, but are rather designed to direct the reader's attention to their leading characteristics. Volume xiv. of the Chinese Repository contains the complete translation of a like series of descriptions accompanying pictures; these are briefer, and the illustrations of inferior workmanship. The Miao-tz' have shown no desire to record their history and sufferings; and ages of degradation have reduced them to the fragmentary condition in which they now appear.

The name Miao was early applied in Chinese books to the aborigines who refused obedience to the Emperor. In the Book of Records they are called the San Miao; and they successfully resisted the control of the Chinese as early as B. C. 1000. Some of them are also termed Nan Men, and occupy portions of the present Hunan and Kweichau provinces; most of them were first conquered about B. C. 250–220.

The Miao-tz' are connected in their racial affinities with the Laos and Lolois people of Siam and Burmah. Their national designation is Li or Lo; one of these names is still retained in Li-mu, the present designation of those dwelling in the island of Hainan; the other is found in the last part of Siem-lo, the common Chinese name for Siam, from which we derive our own. The Miao-tz' themselves use both Li and Lo for some of their tribes. Dr. Edkins of Peking has compared many common terms found in twelve Chinese vocabularies of Miao-tz' words, contained in two topographies of Kweichau and Kwangsi provinces, and other special Chinese works on these tribes.

Reference was made to the visit, in 1870, of the late German missionary Krolczyk to a tribe called Yao-jin, dwelling in the northwest of Kwangtung province, in Lien-chau. (See Missionary Recorder, vol. iii., pp. 62, 93, 126.) The great precautions these mountaineers took to prevent strangers entering their districts showed their fear of the inroads of the Chinese, and their long habits of seclusion. In their social and domestic life they have sunk far below the Chinese dwelling in the lowlands, and now maintain their individuality chiefly by their seclusion. The total number of Miao-tz' still left in China cannot be guessed with any probability; I should place it at less than a million. The French traveler Mohout, who died on his journey from Cambodia to Hankow, thus fairly sums up the intellectual status of this race: "I am getting tired of these people, a race of children, heartless and unenergetic. I sigh and look everywhere for a man, and cannot find one. Here all tremble at the stick, and the evervating climate makes them incredibly apathetic."

As selections from a number of the descriptions read, the following ten will show the small value of the information they give.

1. The Yang-tung Lo-hun.—These are found in Li-ping prefecture [in the southeast of Kweichau]. The men are farmers and carry on trade; the women tie their hair in a slovenly manner, and insert a wooden comb before the temple. Ear-rings are made of gold and silver hanging in a chain. They bind a double girdle which meets on the back. Sometimes they wear long trousers and short skirts; at other times long skirts and no trousers. They rear silkworms and weave broccoli silk. On festival days they wash their hair with perfumed water.

Among the Miao and Mau tribes, few are found that excel this one.

2. The Kib-mong Miao.—This tribe lives in the townships Kin-choh in Kwangshun clan [near the capital of Kweichau]. The people select overhanging cliffs in which they dig caves for dwellings; some of them are over a hundred fathoms high; bamboo ladders are used for ascending and descending. They have no plows drawn by oxen, but use iron hoes; they cover in the seed without plowing. Men play on the xang, and thus find their mates. After a child is born, the marriage presents are sent to the woman's parents. When a relative dies, they sing and dance, calling it fighting the corpse. When the cuckoo's note is heard the next morning, the whole family raise a lamentable cry, saying, The birds have come back, but our parents will never return to us.

5. Ling-kan Miao.—This tribe resides in Li-po district [in Tu-yun fu, near the
south border]. All classes of men and women cover their heads entirely with blue kerchiefs. In the eleventh month the unmarried youth dance and sing, each selecting the partner who pleases them. Whenever a child is born the girl returns with her partner, but no wedding takes place if otherwise.

"6. Tung-kiu Miao or Cave-dwelling Miao.—This tribe also lives in Li-po district [in Kuei-chau]. They wear black garments reaching only to the knees. On New Year's day they place fish, meat, spirits, and rice in wooden trenches, and thus offer them. They live near the streams, and raise fine cotton. The women are industrious weavers. The men can talk Chinese, but do not know how to read the characters. When they have any business, they use notched sticks for letters.

"7. Shui-kiu Miao, or Water-dwelling Miao.—These live in Li-po district. The men are expert in fishing and hunting. The women dress in ribbed skirts, which are short, and mixed all around with flowered pieces. At New Year's men and women assemble in crowds to dance; it is allowable for them to marry without observing the rites.

"8. Luu-ngeh tz'o, or Six-forehead people.—These live [in the west of Kwei-chau province near Yunnan], in Ta-ting prefecture, in Wei-ning district; there are both black and white people. The men braid the hair in a pointed knot. Women wear long garments but no petticoats. The dead are buried in coffins; and after a year's interval they invite their relatives to come on a lucky day around the grave, when they make an offering of an animal and spirits. The grave is opened, and the bones taken from the coffin, brushed and washed clean, and then re-interred, wrapped in cloth. After one or two years they repeat this act, and so till seven times are fulfilled; then they cease. If one of the family is taken sick, they say, 'Your ancestor's bones are not clean;' and take them out to wash them. Hence they are called Wash-bone Miao.

"11. Ku-nung Ku-nung Miao, or Nine-name-surname Miao.—These live in Tuh-shan district, in southern Kuei-chau. They are of a treacherous and violent disposition; they often falsely assume other peoples' names and surnames. At weddings and funerals they kill oxen and assemble to drink; when excited by drink they quarrel, and those who receive wounds are willing to settle the matter by receiving cattle. The women cultivate the land, raising hill sorghum for food.

"12. Ye-tau Miao, or Gentlemen Head Miao.—These live in Ku-chau, in the southeast of Kuei-chau. They use no oxen in plowing, but take men to drag it. The first day of the eleventh moon is a great festival. The women braid their hair and adorn it with garlands made of silver wire shaped like a fan, fastening them with a long skewer shaped like a guitar. In marriage, a paternal aunt's daughter must marry her cousin, and have a dowry of money. If they are too weak to work themselves, this money enables them to hire a son or grandson to work. If they have no marriageable son, the girl must allow the uncle to arrange the match for her and take the dowry, which is hence called the niece's dowry. If this be not done, he will not permit her to marry.

"15. Tsing-kiang Heh Miao, or Black Miao of Clear-water River.—The men dress in red cloth, the women in black. They bind their hair with silver bands and wear large ear-rings. They wear wide trousers and are fond of dressing in paricolored garments like play-actors. On pleasant days in spring they go to high cliffs, carrying liquor with them which they drink out of cows' horns. They are very licentious.

"16. Law-ku Heh Miao, or the Black Miao who live in lofts.—These live in Pah-chai in Tan-kiang ting. The men work hard at plowing. Women make hair-pins of rams' horns. They prefer to live in the upper story. When a death occurs, the body is coffined and kept; after twenty years have passed, the whole village choose a lucky day, and bury from ten to a hundred coffins at once. A hall is erected by the people to worship the dead in, called Demon's Hall; whatever is placed there is regarded as sacred, for it would be unlucky to take anything. These people rear animals; they live in the lofts, and the stock is tended below."

4. On the so-called Henotheism of the Veda, by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

11
American Oriental Society:

The following is a succinct view of the subject as presented in this paper:

We have long been accustomed to class religions as monotheistic and polytheistic, according as they recognize the existence of one personal God or of a plurality of such, and to call pantheistic a faith which, rejecting the personality of a Creator, accepts the creation itself as divine, or holds everything to be God. The last of these is the one least definite in character, and confessedly latest in the order of development; nor has it any popular or ethnic value; it is essentially a philosophic creed, and limited to the class of philosophers. The other two, monotheism and polytheism, divide between them the whole great mass of the world’s religions. As to which of the two is the earlier, and foundation of the other, opinions are, and will doubtless long or always remain, divided, in accordance with the views taken respecting the origin and first history of the human race. But it does not appear doubtful that they will settle down into two forms: either man and his first conditions of life are a miraculous creation, and monotheism a miraculous communication to him, a revelation; or, if he is a product of secondary causes, of development, and had to acquire his knowledge of the divine and his relations to it in the same way with the rest of his knowledge, namely by observation and reflection, then polytheism is necessarily antecedent to monotheism; it is simply inconceivable that the case should be otherwise—nor can we avoid allowing everywhere a yet earlier stage which does not even deserve the name of religion, which is only superstition.

Nearly all the religions of men are polytheistic; monotheisms are the rare exception: namely—1. The Hebrew monotheism, with its continuators, a. Christianity, and b. Mohammedanism; and 2. the Persian monotheism, or Zoroastrianism (so far as this does not deserve rather to be called a dualism): the former apparently has behind it a general Semitic polytheism; the latter certainly grows out of the Aryan or Indo-Iranian belief in many gods. That they should be isolated products of the natural development of human insight is entirely in harmony with other parts of human history: thus, for example, all races have devised instruments, but few have reduced the metals to service, and the subjugation of steam is unique; all races have acquired language, but few have invented writing: indeed, all the highest elements of civilization arise at single points, and are passed from one community to another.

A single author, of much influence—namely, M. Müller—has recently endeavored to introduce a new member, with a new name, into this classification: he calls it henotheism (or kathenotheism), ‘the worship of one god at a time,’ as we may render it. The germ of his doctrine is to be found in his History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature; where, after speaking of the various gods of the Veda, he says (p. 532, 1st ed., 1859): “When these individual gods are invoked, they are not conceived as limited by the power of others, as superior or inferior in rank. Each god is to the mind of the supplicant as good as all [i. e. as any of?] the gods. He is felt at the time as a real divinity—as supreme and absolute, in spite of the necessary limitations which, to our mind, a plurality of gods must entail on every single god. All the rest disappear for a moment from the vision of the poet, and he only who is to fulfill their desires stands in full light before the eyes of the worshippers.” And later (p. 526), after quotation of specimen: “When Agni, the lord of fire, is addressed by the poet, he is spoken of as the first god, not inferior even to Indra. While Agni is invoked, Indra is forgotten; there is no competition between the two, nor any rivalry between them or other gods. This is a most important feature in the religion of the Veda, and has never been taken into consideration by those who have written on the history of ancient polytheism.” In his later works, where he first introduces and reiterates and urges the special name henotheism. Müller’s doctrine assumes this form: (Lect. on Sc. of Rel., p. 141) that a henotheistic religion “represents each deity as independent of all the rest, as the only deity present in the mind of the worshipper at the time of his worship and prayer,” this character being “very prominent in the religion of the Vedic poets;” and finally (Or. and Growth of Rel., lect. vi), that henotheism is “a worship of single gods,” and that polytheism is “a worship of many deities which together form one divine polity, under the control of one supreme god.”

As regards the fundamental facts of Vedic worship, Müller’s statements so
exaggerate their peculiarity as to convey, it is believed, a wholly wrong impression. It is very far from being true in any general way that the worship of one Vedic god excludes the rest from the worshipper's sight; on the contrary, no religion brings its gods into more frequent and varied juxtaposition and combination. The different offices and spheres of each are in constant contemplation. They are addressed in pairs: Indra-Agni, Indra-Varuna, Mitra-Varuna, Heaven and Earth, Dawn and Night, and a great many more. They are grouped in sets: the Adityas, the Maruts, Indra and the Maruts, and so on. They are divided into gods of the heaven, of the atmosphere, of the earth. And they are summed up as "all the gods" (priye deva), and worshipped as a body. Only, in the case of one or two gods often, and of a few others occasionally (and of many others not at all), the worshipper ascribes to the object of his worship attributes which might seem to belong to a sole god: never, indeed, calling him sole god, but extolling him as chief and mightiest of the gods, maker of heaven and earth, father of gods and men, and so on. This fact had been often enough noticed before Müller, but no one had had any difficulty in explaining it as a natural exaggeration, committed in the fervor of devotion. And it is in fact nothing else. This is evidenced by its purely occasional or even sporadic character, and by its distribution to its various objects. The office of Agni, as the fire, the god on earth, mediator and bearer of the sacrifice to the other gods, is as distinct as anything in Vedic religion, and the mass of his innumerable hymns are full of it; but he, in a few rare cases, is exalted by the ascription of more general and unlimited attributes. The exaggerations of the worship of Soma are unsurpassed, and a whole Book (the ninth) of the Rig-Veda is permeated with them: yet it is never forgotten that, after all, soma is only a drink, being purified for Indra and Indra's worshippers. The same exaltation forms a larger element in the worship of Indra, as, in fact, Indra comes nearest to the character of chief god, and in the later development of the religion actually attains in a certain subordinate way that character: but still, only as primum inter pare. These are typical cases. There is never a denial, never even an ignoring, of other and many other gods, but only a lifting up of the one actually in hand. And a plenty of evidence beside to the same effect is to be found. Such spurning of all limits in exalting the subject of glorification, such neglect of proportion and consistency, is throughout characteristic of the Hindu mind. The Atharva-Veda praises (xi. 6) even the uchita, "the remnant of the offering," in a manner to make it almost supreme divinity: all sacrifices are in and through it, all gods and demigods are born of it. and so on; and its exaltation of kála, "time" (xix. 53, 54), is hardly inferior. And later, in epic story, every hero is smothered in laudatory epithets and ascriptions of attributes, till all individuality is lost; every king is master of the earth; every sage does penance by thousands of years, acquires unlimited power, makes the gods tremble, and threatens the equilibrium of the universe.

But this is exceptional only in its degree. No polytheist anywhere over made an exact distribution of his worship to all the deities acknowledged by him. Circumstances of every kind give his devotion special direction: as locality, occupation, family tradition, chance preference. Conspicuous among "henotheists" is that assembly which "with one voice about the space of two hours cried out 'Great is Diana of the Ephesians'"—all other gods "disappeared for a moment from its vision." The devout Catholic, even, to no small extent, has his patron saint, his image or apparition of the Virgin, as recipient of his principal homage. If thus neither monothelism nor a monocratically ordered polytheism can repress this tendency, what exaggeration of it are we not justified in expecting where such restraints are wanting? And most of all, among a people so little submissive to checks upon a soaring imagination as the Indians?

The exaggeration of the Vedic poets never tends to the denial of multiple divinity, to the distinct enthronement of one god above the rest, or to a division of the people into Indra-worshippers and Agni-worshippers and Varuna-worshippers and so on. The Vedic cultus includes and acknowledges all the gods together. Its spirit is absolutely that of the verse, curiously quoted by Müller among his proof-texts of henotheism: "Among you, O gods, there is none that is small among you: you all are great indeed." That is to say, there is an indefinite number of individual (Müller prefers to call them "single") gods,
independent, equal in godhood; and hence, each in turn capable of being exalted without stint. No one of them even arrives at supremacy in the later development of Indian religion; for that the name Vishnu is Vedic appears to be a circumstance of no moment. But, also according to the general tendencies of developing polytheism, there come to be supreme gods in the more modern period: Vishnu, to a part of the nation; Ciwa, to another part; Brahman, to the eclectic and harmonizers. The whole people is divided into sects, each setting at the head of the universe and specially worshipping one of these, or even one of their minor forms, as Krishna, Jagannātha, Durgā, Rāma.

Now it is to these latter forms of Hindu religion, and to their correspondents elsewhere, that Müller would fain restrict the name of polytheism. To believe in many gods and in no one as of essentially superior rank to the rest is, according to him, to be a henotheist; to believe in one supreme god, with many others that are more or less clearly his underlings and ministers, is to be a polytheist! It seems sufficiently evident that, if the division and nomenclature were to be retained at all, the names would have to be exchanged. A pure and normal polytheism is that which is presented to us in the Veda; it is the primitive condition of polytheism, as yet comparatively undisturbed by theosophic reflection; when the necessity of order and gradation and a central governing authority makes itself felt, there has been taken a step in the direction of monotheism: a step that must be taken before monotheism is possible, although it may, and generally does, fail to lead to such a result.

It may be claimed, then, that henotheism, as defined and named by its inventor, is a blunder, being founded on an erroneous apprehension of facts, and really implying the reverse of what it is used to designate. To say of the Vedic religion that it is not polytheistic but henotheistic, is to mislead the unlearned public with a juggle of words. The name and the idea cannot be too rigorously excluded from all discussions of the history of religions. It is believed that they are in fact ignored by the best authorities.

After the usual vote of thanks to the authorities of the Divinity School for the hospitality shown it, the Society adjourned, to meet again in Boston, on the 24th of May next.
ADDITIONS TO THE LIBRARY.

JULY, 1878—DECEMBER, 1881.

From the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

From the American Antiquarian Society.

From the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions.

From the American Philosophical Society.
List of Members, 1880. 8°.

From the Asiatic Society of Bengal.
List of periodicals and publications received in the library. Calcutta, 1878. 8°.
The Taittiriya Sanhitā. Fasc. 28, 30, 31.
The Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa. Fasc. 25.
The Lalita Vistara. Fasc. 6.
The same, translated by Rājendralāl Mitra. Fasc. 1.
The same, translated. Vol. i, 1.
The Agni Purāṇa. Fasc. 5, 10-14.
The Chaturvarga Chintāmani. Vol. ii, pt. i, 7-13; pt. ii, 1-12; vol. iii, pt. i, 1
The Chhandah Sūtra. Fasc. 3.
The Gobhīśya Sūtra. Fasc. 6, 7-11.
The Bhāmatī. Fasc. 4-8.
The Prthivirāja Rāsaṇ. Pt. ii, 2, 3.
The same, translated. Pt. ii, 1.
The Átharvāṇa Upanishad. Fasc. 5.
The Maitri Upanishad. Fasc. 3.
The Aṣṭāmbhāmah. Vol. i, 7-8 and index; ii, 2-4 and index.
American Oriental Society:

The Prákṛita Lakāhāram; or, Chanda's Grammar of the Ancient Prákṛit. Edited by A. F. Rudolf Hoernle. Fasc. 1.
The Aphorisms of S'Aśāḍīya, with the commentary of Swapnesw'ara. Translated by E. B. Cowell. 1 fasc.
The Yoga Aphorisms of Patañjali, with the commentary of Bhoja Rájá, and an English translation by Rájendralála Mitra. Fasc. 1.
The Institutes of Viśākh, with extracts from the commentary of Nanda Pañḍita called Vaijñayanti. Edited by Julius Jolly. Fasc. 1, 2.
The S'r'uta Sutrā of Āpastamba, belonging to the Black Yajur Veda, with the commentary of Rudrātāta. Edited by Dr. Richard Garbe. Fasc. 1.

From the Asiatic Society of Japan.
Journal Asiatique. 7° sér., t. xi, 2, 3, xii, 1, 2, xiii, 1, 3, xiv, 2, 3, xv—xvii, xviii, 1, 2. Paris, 1878-81. 8°.

From Rev. James Bassett.
Tract primer in Persien. Lithographed. 12°.
Hymns in Persian. Lithographed. 12°.

From the Batavian Society of Arts and Sciences.
Verslag der viering van het honderdjarig bestaan van het Genootschap op 1 Juni, 1878. Batavia, 1878. 4°.
Bronze medal struck in 1878 in commemoration of the centennial anniversary of the founding of the Batavian Society.
Tweede vervolg-catalogus der bibliothek. Batavia, 1877. 8°.
Kawi oorkonden in facsimile, met inleiding en transcriptie van Dr. A. B. Cohen Stuart. Leiden and Batavia, 1875. 8°, plates f°.

From Rev. C. Bennett, of Rangoon.
Additions to the Library.


The Epistle to the Romans, with annotations and references. [Burmese.] Rangoon, 1880. 8°.


Hymns for public and social worship. 10th ed. Rangoon, 1877. 16°.


From Mr. A. Barth.


From Prof. Theodor Benfey.

Behandlung des auslautenden a in nā ‘wie’ und nā ‘nicht’ im Rig-veda, mit einigen Bemerkungen über die ursprüngliche Aussprache und Accentuation der Wörter im Veda, von Theodor Benfey. Göttingen, 1881. 4°.

From the Royal Academy of Sciences at Berlin.


From Mr. Thomas Bland.


From Prof. Otto Böhtlingk.

American Oriental Society:

From the Bombay Government.


From Dr. G. Bühlner.


From James Burgess, Esq., of Bombay.

The Indian Antiquary. Vol. i, 4-6, 9-12, ii-vi, vii, 6-12, viii, 1-8, 10-12, ix, x, 1-10. Bombay, 1872-81. 4°. Fāli, Sanskrit, and Old Canarese inscriptions from the Bombay Presidency and parts of the Madras Presidency and Maiśūr, arranged and explained by J. F. Fleet. London, 1878. 1°. [25 copies printed.]

From A. C. Burnell, Ph.D.


From Prof. E. B. Cowell.


From Rev. C. H. A. Dall.


From Prof. O. Donner, of Helsingfors.


From the National Library, Florence.


From Prof. P. E. Foucaux, of Paris.


From the Government of France.


From M. Lucien Gautier.

Additions to the Library.

From the German Oriental Society.
Abhandlungen für die Kunde des Morgenlandes:

From the German Palestine Association.

From M. Eugène Gibert.

From Pres. D. C. Gilman.

From Prof. S. Goldschmidt, of Strassburg.

From Rev. J. T. Gracey.


From Prof. Isaac H. Hall.

From Rev. A. P. Happer, D.D., of Canton.
A visit to Peking, with some notice of the imperial worship at the altars of heaven, earth, sun, moon, and the gods of the grain and the land. By Rev. A. P. Happer, D.D. Shanghai, 1879. 8°.

From M. Heilprin, Esq., of New York.

From the Government of Holland.
Börd-Boederoop op het eiland Java, afgebeeld door en onder toezigt van F. C. Wilsen, met toelichtenden en verklarenden tekst, uitgegeven op last van Zijne Excellentie den Minister van Kolonien, door Dr. C. Leemans. Leiden, 1873. 8°, with 393 folio plates; also a French translation of the text.
American Oriental Society:

From Her Majesty's Secretary of State for India.


Buddha Gāya, the hermitage of Sākya Muni. By Rājendrañāla Mitra. Calcutta, 1878. 4°.


Papers relating to the collection and preservation of the records of ancient Sanskrit literature in India. Edited by Archibald Edward Gough. Calcutta, 1878. 8°.


Reports on publications issued and registered in the several provinces of British India during 1875, 1876, 1877, 1878, 1879. [Selections from the Records of the Government of India No. 137, 143, 147, 159, 174.] Calcutta, 1877-81. 8°.

The Imperial Gazetteer of India. By W. W. Hunter. 'London, 1881. 9 v. 8°.

Inscriptions of the cave-temples of Western India, with descriptive notes, etc. By James Burgess, LL.D., and Bhagwanlal Indrajit Pandit. Bombay, 1881. 4°.


Grammar of the classical Arabic language, translated and compiled from the works of the most approved native or naturalized authorities. By Mortimer Sloper Howell. Pt. ii. iii. Allahabad, 1880. 8°.


From the Italian Government.


From Prof. J. W. Jenks.


From the University of Kiel.


From Prof. C. Kossowicz, of St. Petersburg.

Canticum Cantorum ex hebraeo convertit et explicationis Dr. Cajetanus Kossowicz. Petropoli, 1879. 8°.

From Prof. Adalbert Kuhn, of Berlin.


From Mr. W. Lugus.

Quelques remarques et une proposition au sujet de la première expédition russe au Japon, par W. Lugus. Leide, 1878. 8°.


From Prof. Alfred Ludwig.

Additions to the Library.

From Dr. D. B. McCartee.

A Buddhist Sûtra, a Sanskrit-Chinese-Japanese Syllabary, a rubbing of a Buddhist inscription, and a photograph of a tate, described in the Proceedings of the Society for October, 1881.


From the Madras Government.


From the Public Free Libraries of Manchester, England.

Twenty-fifth, twenty-sixth annual report to the council of the city of Manchester on the working of the Public Free Libraries. Manchester, 1877-78. 8°.

From M. Aristide Marre.


From Mrs. Eleanor Mason.


From Prof. Alexander Meyrowitz.


From Dr. A. D. Mordtmann.

Five papers by Dr. A. D. Mordtmann, extracts from journals: viz. Neue Beiträge zur Kunde Palmira's; Ueber die persopolitischen Münzen; Zur vergleichenden Geographie Persiens; Ueber die Keilinschriften von Armenien; Studien über geschnittene Steine mit Pehlevi-Legenden, zweiter Nachtrag. 8°.

From John Muir, Esq., D.C.L., of Edinburgh.


From the Royal Bavarian Academy at Munich.


Ueber die lateinische Komödie. Festrede von Dr. A. Spengel. München, 1878. 4°.


From the Chief Commissioner of Mysore.

American Oriental Society:

From the Historical Society of New Mexico.
Historical Society of New Mexico. Inaugural address of Hon. W. G. Ritch, President, with the charter, constitution and by-laws. Santa Fe, 1881. 8°.

From Prof. Theodor Nöldeke, of Strassburg.

From the North-China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.

From the Old Colony Historical Society.

From the Ethnographical Institute, Paris.

From the Indo-Chinese Society of Paris.

From the Society of Japanese Studies, Paris.

From Rev. S. D. Peet, of Clinton, Wisconsin.

From Dr. Wilhelm Pertech, of Gotha.

From Miss Mary O. Pickering, of Salem, Mass.
A table of Indian tribes of the United States east of the Stony Mountains, arranged according to languages and dialects; furnished by Albert Gallatin, 1826. No. iii, broadside.
Quae ad supplendum indicem linguarum totius orbis Vaterianum collegit E. H. Ludewig, Dresdensis. MS., dated New York, 1844. 50 pp. 16°.

From Dr. Rám Dāsa Sen.
Aitihasika Rahasya [Essays on the history etc. of ancient India]. By Dr. Rám Dāsa Sen. Parts i-iii. Calcutta, 1876-79. 16°.

From Bābā Rajendralāla Mitru, of Calcutta.
Additions to the Library.

From Charles Rau, Esq., of Washington.

From J. W. Redhouse, Esq.

From the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland.

From Prof. Léon de Rosny, of Paris.
La littérature des Japonais: conférence à l'École spéciale des langues orientales, par Léon de Rosny. 8°.

From the Imperial Academy of Sciences, at St. Petersburg.

From Prof. Edward E. Salisbury.

From the Royal Saxon Society of Sciences, Leipzig.
XXII. Die slavischen Ansiedelungen in der Altmark und im Magdeburgischen, von Dr. A. Brückner. Leipzig, 1879. 8°.

From Prof. G. Seyffarth, of New York.

From Mr. B. V. Shastri, of Bombay.

From the Smithsonian Institution.
American Oriental Society:

From Mr. F. Tempsky, of Prague.


From Rev. Joseph P. Thompson, LL.D.

Alocck, Sir Rutherford. The Capital of the Tycoon; a narrative of a three years' residence in Japan. New York, 1863. 2v. 12°.
Allen, Capt. William. The Dead Sea, a new route to India; with other fragments and gleanings in the East. London, 1855. 2v. 12°.
Amos, Sheldon. The purchase of the Suez canal shares and international law. London, 1876. 8°.
Ball, B. L., M. D. Rambles in Eastern Asia, including China and Manilla, during several years' residence. Boston, 1855. 12°.
Barclay, J. T., M. D. The City of the Great King; or Jerusalem as it was, as it is, and as it is to be. Philadelphia, 1858. 8°.
Birch, Samuel. Rhamsinthus and the game of draughts. [Repr. from the Transac.
— The land of promise; notes of a spring journey from Beer-sheba to Sidon. New York, 1858. 12°.
Additions to the Library.


Recueil de monuments égyptiens. 2 pts. Leipzig, 1862–63. 4°.


Hieroglyphische Grammatik. Leipzig, 1872. 4°.


Reiseberichte aus Ägypten. Leipzig, 1855. 8°.


Karte des alten Aegypten. Leipzig, 1867.


Chabas, F. Voyage d’un Égyptien, en Syrie, en Phénicie, en Palestine, etc., au 14ème siècle avant notre ère. Chalon-sur-Saône, 1866. 4°.

The same. Réponse à la critique. Chalon, 1868. 4°.

Les inscriptions des mines d’or. Chalon, 1862. 4°.


Les pasteurs en Égypte. Amsterdam, 1868. 4°.

L’inscription hiéroglyphique de Rosette analysée et comparée à la version grecque. Chalon, 1867. 8°.

Recherches sur le nom égyptien de Thèbes. Chalon, 1863. 8°.

Chateaubriand. F. A. de. Itinéraire de Paris à Jérusalem, précédé de notes sur
Cooper, Basil H. The hieroglyphical date of the Exodus in the annals of Thoth-
me the Great, discussed and compared with the Mosaic narrative. London,
1860. 8°.
Cowper, B. Harris. Anselcata Nicæana: Fragments relating to the Council of
Curtiss, Samuel Ives, Jr. The name Machabee. Leipzig, 1876. 8°.
Dall, Mrs. C. H. A. Egypt's place in history. Boston, 1868. 8°.
Colombo, 1871. 8°.
Danz, A. Aus Rom und Byzanz. Weimar, 1867. 8°.
Day, St. John V. Papers on the great pyramid, including a critical examination
on Sir Henry Jame's "Notes on the great pyramid of Egypt." Edinburgh,
1870. 8°.
Delany, M. R. Official report of the Niger Valley exploring party. New York,
1861. 8°.
Deschamps, L'Abbé A. De la discipline bouddhique, ses développements et ses
Devésia, Théodule. Le papyrus judiciaire de Turin et les papyrus Lee et Rollin,
—— Catalogue des manuscrits égyptiens qui sont conservés au musée égyptien
—— Lettre à M. Auguste Mariette sur quelques monuments relatifs aux Hyq-
s'os ou antérieurs a leur domination. Paris, 1861. 8°.
—— Notice de quelques antiquites relatives au basilicogramme Thouf ou
Dietrich, F. Die Philosophie der Araber im X. Jahrhundert nach Christi.
Theil I. Leipzig, 1876. 8°.
Ditton, George L. The Para papers on France, Egypt and Ethiopia. Paris,
1859. 8°.
Drew, G. S. Scripture lands in connection with their history; with an appendix,
and extracts from a journal kept during an eastern tour in 1856-57. London,
1860. 8°.
Du Courret, Col. L. Life in the desert, or recollections of travel in Asia and
Dünnichen, Johannes. The fleet of an Egyptian queen from the XVII. century
before our era, and ancient Egyptian military on parade represented on a monu-
iment of the same age. Leipzig, 1868. 12°.
—— Bauerkunde der Tempelanlagen von Dendera. Leipzig, 1865. 4°.
—— Eine vor 3000 Jahren abgefasste Getreideerechnung an der südlichen Aus-
—— Über die Tempel und Gräber im alten Aegypten und ihre Bildwerke
und Inschriften. Strassburg, 1873. 8°.
—— Die erste bis jetzt aufgefundenen sichere Angabe über die Regierungszeit
eines ägyptischen Königs aus dem alten Reich. Leipzig, 1874. 8°.
—— Der ägyptische Felsentempel von Abu-Simbel und seine Bildwerke und
Inschriften. Berlin, 1869. 8°.
—— Durch Gessen zum Sinai, aus dem Wanderbuche und der Bibliothek.
Leipzig, 1872. 8°.
—— Disquisitions de dynastia vicissima sexta regum Aegyptorum. Berolini,
1865. 4°.
Additions to the Library.


—— Der grosse Papyrus Harris. Leipzig, 1872. 8°.

Études égyptologiques:


The Euphrates valley route to India. By a traveller. London, 1856. 12°.

Kusebi chronicon canonum quae superaunt edidit Alfred Schoene. Berolini, 1806. 4°.


Finlay, George. History of the Byzantine and Greek empires from 716 to 1453. Edinburgh, 1853-54. 2 v. 8°.


Forster, Rev. Charles. Sinai photographed; or, Contemporary records of Israel in the wilderness. London, 1862. 1°.


—— Die Hyperborœer und die alten Schinesen; eine historische Untersuchung. Leipzig, 1866. 4°.


Gosse, Philip Henry. Assyria; her manners and customs, arts and arms, restored from her monuments. London, 1862. 8°.


Graetz, H. Kohleto, oder der Salomoniche Prediger, übersetzt und kritisch erläutert. Leipzig, 1811. 8°.


Hawks, Francis L. The monuments of Egypt; or, Egypt a witness for the Bible; with notes of a voyage up the Nile, by an American. New York, 1850. 8°.

Hincks, Edward. On the various years and months in use among the Egyptians. Dublin, 1865. 4°.


American Oriental Society:


Henne von Sargans, A. Manesios, die Originen unserer Geschichte und Chronologie. Gotha, 1865. 8°.

Hergt, C. Palästina beschrieben. Weimar, 1865. 8°.

Hibbard, F. G. Palestine; its geography and Bible history. New York, 1851. 12°.

Hildreth, Richard. Japan as it was and is. Boston, 1855. 12°.

Jablonski, P. K. Pantheon Aegyptiorum. Franc. ad Viad., 1750–52. 3 pts. in 1 v. 8°.

Jacob, Samuel, and others. History of the Ottoman empire, including a survey of the Greek empire and the Crusades. 2d ed. London, 1854. 8°. [Encyclop. Metropolitana.]


Kremer, Alfred von. Aegypten; Forschungen über Land und Volk während eines zehnjährigen Aufenthalts. 2 The. Leipzig, 1863. 8°.


—— Les zodiacaux de Denderah; mémoire où l’on établit que ce sont des calendriers commémoratifs de l’époque gréco-romaine. Munich, 1865. 4°.

—— Moses der Ebreer, nach zwei aegyptischen Papyrus-Urkunden in hieraticher Schriftart zum ersten Male dargestellt. München, 1868. 8°.

—— Die geschichtlichen Ergebnisse der Ägyptologie. München, 1869. 4°.

Layard, Austen Henry. Discoveries in the ruins of Nineveh and Babylon, being the result of a second expedition. New York [London], 1853. 8°.
Additions to the Library.


— Uber die zwölfte ägyptische Königsdynastie. Berlin, 1853. 4°.

— Uber die Götter der vier Elemente bei den Ägyptern. Berlin, 1856. 4°.


Lewis, Thomas. The siege of Jerusalem by Titus; with a journal of a recent visit to the Holy City, and a general sketch of the topography of Jerusalem from the earliest times down to the siege. London, 1863. 8°.

Liebein, J. Dictionnaire de noms hiéroglyphiques en ordre généalogique et alphabétique. 1ère livr. Christiania, 1871. 8°.

Life in the tent; or, Travels in the desert and Syria, in 1850. By a young pilgrim. London [1852]. 8°.


Marcel, J. J. and others. Égypte depuis la conquête des Arabes jusqu’à la domination française, par J. J. Marcel; sous la domination française, par Amédée Ryme; sous la domination de Méhémet Aly, par M. M. P. et H. Paris, 1848. 8°.


American Oriental Society:


Matthey, A. Explorations modernes en Egypte. Lausanne, 1869. 8°.


Meshâka, Dr. The nature and duties of the priesthood [Arabic]. Beirut, 1852. 12°.


Napley, G. Gharada; or, Ninety days among the Bede Muzab; adventures in the oasis of the desert of Sahara. New York, 1871. 12°.

Naville, Édouard. Textes relatifs au mythe d'Illorus recueillis dans le temple d'Edfou et précédés d'une introduction. Genève, 1870. 8°.


Newman, Rev. J. P. "From Dan to Beersheba;" or, The land of promise, as it now appears. New York, 1864. 12°.


Nourse, J. E. The maritime canal of Suez; brief memoir from its earliest date, and comparison of its probable results with those of a ship canal across Darien. Washington City, 1869. 8°.


—— Map. Seven miles around Jerusalem, from original surveys and observations. Philadelphia, n. d.

Osburn, William. The monumental history of Egypt as recorded in the ruins of her temples, palaces and tombs. London, 1854. 2 v. 8°.
Additions to the Library.


Petherick, John. Egypt, the Soudan, and Central Africa, with explorations from Khartoum on the White Nile to the regions of the equator, being sketches from sixteen years' travel. Edinburgh, 1861. 8°.


Pleyte, W. Papyrus de Turin. facsimilé par F. Rossi et publiés par W. Pleyte. Leide, 1869. 4°.


— La religion des prê-Israélites; recherches sur le dieu Seth. Utrecht, 1862. 8°.


Poole, Reginald S. Horæ Egyptianæ; or, The chronology of ancient Egypt discovered from astronomical and hieroglyphic records upon its monuments. London, 1851. 8°.


The proper names of the Old Testament arranged alphabetically from the original text, with historical and geographical illustrations. London and Leipzig, 1869. 8°.


Reil, Dr. W. Aegypten als Winteraufenthalt für Kranke, zugleich ein Führer für Cairo und Umgegend. Braunschweig, 1859. 16°.
American Oriental Society:


Reland, H. Palestina ex monumentis illustrata. Nürnberg, 1716. 4°.

Renan, Ernest. De la part des peuples sémitiques dans l'histoire de la civilisation. 5e éd. Paris, 1862. 8°.


Robinson, Edward. The physical geography of the Holy Land; a supplement to the late author's Biblical researches in Palestine. Boston, 1865. 8°.


—— Lettres à Monsieur Lepsius sur un décau du ciel égyptien. Leipzig, 1870. 4°.


—— Recherches sur les monuments qu'on peut attribuer aux six premières dynasties de Manéthon. Paris, 1866. 4°.

—— Christamathie égyptienne. Fasc. i. ii. Paris, 1867-68. 4° and 8°.


—— Le poème de Pen-ta-ouer: extrait d'un mémoire sur les campagnes de Ramses II (Sesostris). 4°.

—— Moïse et les Hébreux d'après les monuments égyptiens. Paris, 1869. 4°.


Saalschütz, J. L. Archäologie der Hebräer. Königsberg, 1855-56. 2 Thle. in 1 Bd. 8°.


Sauley, F. de. Narrative of a journey round the Dead Sea and in Bible lands in 1850 and 1851, including an account of the discovery of the sites of Sodom and Gomorrah. New ed. Philadelphia, 1854. 2 v. 12°.


Schleiden, M. J. Die Landenge von Sués, zur Beurtheilung des Canalprojects
Additions to the Library.

und des Auszugs der Israeliten aus Aegypten, nach den älteren und neueren Quellen dargestellt. Leipzig, 1858. 8°.
Schmidt, L. Geschichte der Stadt Jerusalem vom Jahre 2000 vor Chr. bis auf unsere Tage. Hoyerwerda, 1862. 8°.
Selden, J. De synedris et praefecturis jurisdictis veterum Ebræorum libri tres. Francof. 1696. 4°.
——— De jure naturali et gentium juxta disciplinam Ebræorum libri septem. Argentor. 1665. 4°.
Sepp, J. N. Jerusalem und das heilige Land; Pilgerbuch nach Palästina, Syrien und Aegypten. Schaffhausen, 1862-63. 2 Rde. 8°.
Smith, George. The Hebrew people; or, The history and religion of the Israelites from the origin of the nation to the time of Christ. New York, 1850. 8°.
Smyth, Warrington W. A year with the Turks; or, Sketches of travel in the European and Asiatic dominions of the Sultan. New York, 1854. 12°.
Spalding, J. W. Japan, and around the world; an account of three visits to the Japanese Empire. New York, 1855. 12°.
Taylor, Bayard. A visit to India, China and Japan in 1853. New York, 1855. 12°.
The temple services. Philadelphia; American Sunday School Union. n. d. 4°.
Teysard, Félix. Égypte et Nubie; atlas photographique. 10e livr. Paris. n. d.
Thrupp, J. F. Ancient Jerusalem; a new investigation into the history, topography and plan of the city, environs and temple. Cambridge, 1855. 8°.
American Oriental Society:

Tweedie, Rev. W. K. Jerusalem and its environs; or, The Holy City as it was and is. London, 1859. 16°.
—— Ruined cities of the East. Boston, 1860. 16°.
—— Das Todiengericht bei den alten Ägyptern. Berlin, 1854. 8°.
—— Three days in Memphis; or, Sketches of the public and private life of the old Egyptians. Philadelphia, 1858. 12°.
—— Das alte Jerusalem und seine Bauwerke. Langensalza, 1861. 8°.
—— Map of the Holy Land. Gotha, 1858. f. 8 sheets.
—— Memoir to accompany the map of the Holy Land. Gotha, 1858. 8°.
—— Plan of the town and environs of Jerusalem, constructed from the English ordnance survey, and measurements of Dr. T. Tobler, with memoir by Dr. Tobler. Gotha, 1858. 2 v. 4°.
—— Popular account of the ancient Egyptians, revised and abridged from his larger work. New York, 1854. 2 v. 12°.
—— The Egyptians in the time of the Pharaohs, being a companion to the Crystal Palace Egyptian collections, to which is added an introduction to the study of the Egyptian hieroglyphics, by Samuel Birch. London, 1857. 8°.
—— and others. The recovery of Jerusalem; a narrative of exploration and discovery in the city and the Holy Land. London, 1871. 8°.
Wilson, John. The lands of the Bible visited and described. Edinburgh, 1847. 2 v. 8°.
Additions to the Library.

ciii

Wortabet, Rev. John. Researches into the religions of Syria; or, Sketches historical and doctrinal of its religious sects, drawn from original sources. London, 1866. 8°.


From M. W. de Tiesenhausen.


Review of Russian contributions to Oriental numismatics. [Russian.] St. Petersburg, 1878. 8°.

From Rev. T. Tracy.

Manuscript of the Tattvabodha, a Sanskrit philosophical treatise. Roll, 86x6 in.

From Mr. Robert N. Toppan.


From the University of Tübingen.

Zur vierten Säcularfeier der Universität Tübingen im Sommer 1877:


Festprogramm der katholisch-theologischen Facultät: Konrad Summenhart, ein Culturbild aus den Anfängen der Universität Tübingen, verfasst von Dr. Franz Xav. Läussennann. Tübingen, 1877. 8°.

Festprogramm der philosophischen Facultät: Die Jubiläen der Universität Tübingen nach handschriftlichen Quellen dargestellt von Dr. Bernhard Kugler. Tübingen, 1877. 8°.


From the Imperial Academy of Sciences of Vienna.


From the Anthropological Society of Vienna.


From the Geographical Society of Vienna.


14
American Oriental Society:

From T. Watters, Esq.

From the Bureau of Education at Washington.

From Prof. W. D. Whitney.
Intorno agli studi del Thavenet sulla lingua algonchina, osservazioni di E. Teso. Pisa, 1880. 4°.

From Prof. S. Wells Williams.

From the Wyoming Historical and Geological Society.

From Prof. Edward-J. Young.

From unknown donors.
Hakâ'lk el-kâlâm. [Turkish.] Constantinople, 1879. 8°.
Arabic almanac for the year 1879. Beirut. 8°.
The Society met as usual, in the rooms of the American Academy, at ten o'clock. The meeting was called to order by the Secretary, who explained the absence of the President, Prof. S. Wells Williams, as due to illness, consequent upon an accident sustained by him in January last, from the effects of which he was now slowly recovering. No Vice-President being present, the Secretary of the Classical Section, Prof. Goodwin, of Cambridge, was called to the chair.

After the reading and acceptance of the minutes of the last meeting, reports of the retiring officers were offered. The summary of the year's income and expenses was as follows:

**RECEIPTS.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Balance on hand, May 18th, 1881</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Annual assessments paid in</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Life membership</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sale of the Journal</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interest on deposit in Savings Bank</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total receipts of the year</strong></td>
<td><strong>$886.45</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**EXPENDITURES.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Printing of Journal (Vols. xi., xii.) and Proceedings</td>
<td><strong>$1,223.46</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Expenses of Library and Correspondence</td>
<td><strong>$46.75</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total expenditures of the year</strong></td>
<td><strong>$1,270.21</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The amount of the Bradley type fund is now **$882.79**.

The Librarian reported that the additions during the year amount to 47 volumes, 113 parts of volumes, and 52 pamphlets—chiefly the current exchanges from other societies. Those received up to December last were included in the list printed with the Proceedings for October, 1881.

The Committee of Publication stated that their expectations expressed a year ago had been realized, the twelfth volume of the Journal having been issued last summer, and the first part of the eleventh volume this spring. Work had not yet been begun upon the second half of Vol. xi., and it was impossible to say when its completion might be looked for.

The Directors announced that they had appointed the autumn
meeting to be held in New York in October next, on a day to be designated later by a Committee of Arrangements consisting of Prof. Short, Dr. Ward, and the Corresponding Secretary. Further, they had reappointed the Committee of Publication of last year. They also recommended to the Society the election to membership of the following persons:

As Honorary Members—

Prof. August Dillmann, of Berlin;
Prof. Monier Williams, of Oxford;
Mr. Alexander Wylie, of London.

As Corporate Members—

Rev. S. C. George, of Chambersburg, Pa.;
Rev. Lysander Dickerman, of Roxbury, Mass.;
Rev. J. P. Peters, of Dresden;
Mr. Henry C. Warren, of Boston.

The gentlemen thus proposed were elected without dissent.

A Nominating Committee, appointed by the Chair, proposed the re-election, without any change, of the Board of Officers of last year, and they were chosen by a unanimous vote.

The presiding officer communicated the names of the members deceased since the last annual meeting, and invited remarks upon their merits and achievements. They were:

of Corporate Members,

Mr. Gilbert Attwood, of Boston;
Mr. Ralph Waldo Emerson, of Concord, Mass.;
Rev. Samuel Johnson, of Salem, Mass.;
Prof. Theophilus Parsons, of Cambridge, Mass.;

and, of Honorary Members,

Prof. Theodor Benfey, of Göttingen;
Prof. Adalbert Kuhn, of Berlin;
Dr. John Muir, of Edinburgh.

Some account was given, by the Corresponding Secretary and others, of each one of those whose loss the Society had to deplore. Mr. Attwood was a Boston merchant, whom circumstances had led to take a special interest in the young Japanese visiting this country for purposes of education, who had rendered them signal services, gratefully acknowledged by them and their patrons, and whose interest in the Orient and in the Oriental Society, testified by him in many ways, had centred about Japan and its institutions. Mr. Johnson, for many years a studious recluse, had devoted himself to the study of the religions of the East, and had produced two volumes, the first of a projected series, one dealing with the beliefs of ancient India, the other with those of China—both highly valued, and reprinted in England. Prof. Parsons, the noted jurist, deceased in the fullness of advanced age, had been attracted to the work of the Society by his interest in Hindu philosophy. And we were permitted and called upon to bear our part, along with all America and the whole civilized
world, in homage to the genius and exalted character of the illustrious Emerson. More particulars were given respecting the lives and works of our deceased foreign members, who all stood in the foremost rank of those who have deserved well of their generation, and of all future time, by their labors in behalf of Oriental knowledge.

Extracts were given from the correspondence of the past half-year.

Mr. W. W. Rockhill writes from Montreux, Switzerland, enclosing copies of two Mongolian inscriptions, in the Pa-asse-pa character, used during the Yuen dynasty. They were made from a transcription belonging to M. Alphonse Piart, and have been compared with the other inscriptions heretofore published. They are in a fragmentary condition, and Mr. Rockhill is unable to give a satisfactory account of them.

Rev. L. H. Mills writes from Hannover, Germany, reporting satisfactory progress in his work upon the Gāthās (described in the Proceedings for May, 1881), and sending as a specimen nearly 300 pages (three quarters) of the first volume, of texts and translations.

Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of Philadelphia, excuses himself for being not yet ready with the history of the Arabic Bible version, undertaken by him at the request of the Directors. He reports progress on the MS. Syriac version of the New Testament in his hands, and desires to make a few corrections in his preliminary account of it, given in the Proceedings for October, 1877, as follows:

1. The statement that there were church lesson notes in the Ambrosian Peshitto codex has already been corrected (Proceedings, May, 1879).

2. The paragraph respecting Luke ix. 30, 31 proves to be erroneous, and should be cancelled. The place where that passage occurs is one of the most difficult in the whole MS. I read it in Beirūt to the best of my ability, and, as I thought, with certainty; but in this country the MS. has had a long drying, and is not only in better preservation than when it left Beirūt, but in most places more legible; hence, I have been enabled to correct this, with some other mistakes in the reading. The reading of the passage agrees exactly with that of White's edition.

I may also state that the change of climate has rendered decipherable some letters written in the ornament at the beginning of Luke. They read: "John the sinner, a monk, wrote [it]." The name John occurs also written in the ornament at the beginning of Mark, and probably refers to the same scribe—not to John Mark.

3. In the paragraph respecting Luke xxiv. 32, the word "Curetonian" should be substituted for "Jerusalem." The error is almost self-correcting to an expert; and I would apologize for it by saying that my books were still on their way across the Atlantic when the communication was written; and the writing was done at a hotel, with scarcely anything to refer to. Only, I had committed the same error in writing to the newspapers from Beirūt, and my mind was doubtless running in the old groove.

4. Errors occur in the numbers given in the translations of the subscriptions to the Gospels. They are as follows: a. Subscr. to Matthew, "sections twenty and three" should read "twenty and two;" b. Subscr. to Mark, "miracles twenty and three" should read "miracles twenty and two;" "sections twelve" should read "sections thirteen;" c. Subscr. to Luke, "testimonies 72" should read "testimonies 16; and lessons 72;" d. Subscr. to John, "miracles nine" should read "miracles eight."

Proceedings at Boston, May, 1882.
Considering the character of these mistakes, it is best to subjoin a correct table of the numbers given in the subscriptions:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Matthew</th>
<th>Mark</th>
<th>Luke</th>
<th>John</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Kephalaia,</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Canons,</td>
<td>360</td>
<td>240</td>
<td>348</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miracles or Signs,</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parables,</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Testimonies,</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lessons,</td>
<td>74</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sections,</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

5. In the closing words of the subscription to Mark, the words "and for one" should probably read "and every one." The difference consists in the reading of one letter only. This is in Hebrew I took to be 'ee ('aša); but in this country it looks more like a kaf. The latter also makes the best sense, in my judgment. These two letters are easily mistaken for each other in the writing of the MSS.; and some would probably agree with my former opinion.

Communications were now called for; below are given abstracts of those presented.

1. On Early Trade Routes between Eastern and Western Asia, by Prof. Howard Osgood, of Rochester, N. Y.

Prof. Osgood traced upon the map the principal ancient routes of intercourse between the East and West, and described them and the commerce carried on upon them.*


After a short account of the literature of the subject followed a statement and examination of the ancient testimony as to the geographical position and the character of the Kushites:

I. The most trustworthy historical testimony places Kush in Africa, just south of Egypt. So the Egyptians, who gave the name Kosh or Kish to this region, and, as far as appears, to no other; and from them, apparently, came the similar Assyrian name. This is also the Hebrew use of the term throughout the Old Testament, except in Gen. x. (and 1 Chron. i. 9, 10) and probably in Gen. ii. (geography of Eden). The Greek geographers employ Ethiopia in the same sense, but sometimes include under it regions lying further west, manifestly not for ethnological reasons proper, but from external similarity of tribes. For like reasons Herodotus and others apply the name to Asiatic peoples dwelling near the Indus and the Ganges; Pomponius Mela calls these "quodammodo Achelioi." The ancients seem thus to have given the name really only to the African country south of Egypt.

II. On the other hand, certain statements are supposed to show that the term Kush and Ethiopia embraced the whole region from the Tigris or the Indus to Meroe, along the shore of the Indian Ocean, and that the Kushites were a great civilized and civilizing race.

1. The table of nations, Gen. x., appears beyond doubt to put Kushites in Arabia (Sheba, Dedan) and Mesopotamia (Nimrod). This points to some sort of knowledge or tradition—some acquaintance with tribes bearing similar names, or some belief that there were different peoples in those regions; but not necessarily to any correct ethnology. If the opinion was a very old one, the name "Kush" may have been used as loosely as the Greeks used "Ethiopia," for all remote southern countries. If it was comparatively modern (and there are strong reasons for referring the genealogical table to the period of the Exile), the author may have assigned these regions to Kush as the nearest of the sons of Ham, to whom alone, of the three sons of Noah, they could, in his opinion, belong.

2. Various Greek myths and legends connect "Ethiopia" with the Tigris.

* Owing to the author's illness, no full report of the paper has been obtainable.
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1882.

(Susiana), India, Palestine, and Arabia. Most of these are not found earlier than in the time of Herodotus, and have little or no ethnological value. The wildness with which they were invented and employed is illustrated by their explanations of the origin and history of the Jews (cited by Movers, Phoen. ii. 1, 23). The name "Ethiopia" in these stories is a loose geographical designation, absolutely without ethnological significance; it includes peoples, such as the tribes of northern India and of Syria, that we know to be of different races. The name Kephenes, therefore, by which the Chaldeans are said to have been formerly called (Hellenic), and by which the Egyptians called the Phenicians (Knos), is not to be regarded as African Kushite because Kephues is represented as king of Ethiopia. For Ethiopia need mean nothing more than southern Babylonia or southern Palestine (Joppa). 3. The alleged historical facts are not more conclusive. The name of the Kusis or Koosais of Susiana, the Kashish of the Assyrian inscriptions, resembles Kish, Kosh, Kush; but the resemblance may well be purely accidental, or non-ethnological. The name Puna, belonging to a people living in the Kush region south of Egypt, has been compared with Panici, Panii, Phoinix; but it has little resemblance to the last, and nothing that we know of the Phenicians connects them with the Puna.

III. Against the hypothesis of an Asiatic Kush are some strong positive grounds. 1. Supposing the old African Kush to be represented by the modern Beja, Galla, Somali (as is generally agreed), there is no trace of their language in Asia, either in Arabia (Himyaritic), or in Mesopotamia (Sumerian-Assylian), or elsewhere; the "Kushite" element is a pure fancy. 2. They had no civilization of their own, according to the best information concerning them; and the supposed a Kushite civilization in Arabia, formerly held firmly by eminent scholars, would now find no advocates. But it is alleged that they were the bearers of Egyptian culture eastward; that the ancient civilization of Babylonia was borrowed from Egypt. A comparison of the two civilizations will show, however, that neither could have been borrowed from the other. They were products of the same period of the world, and of sister-races, but each went its independent way; we can no more speak of borrowing between them than between the languages of the two peoples. 3. There seems to have been no time when African Kushites could have carried civilization eastward. They were themselves barbarians up to B.C. 3000 at earliest, and were not imbued with Egyptian culture before B.C. 2500, when a flourishing civilization had already existed for centuries in the region of the Tigris and Euphrates.

It appears, therefore, that the name Kush belongs properly only to the region lying just south of Egypt. The languages of the group of tribes represented by the Saho and Beja may with probable correctness be called Kushite or Kushic, but otherwise the term seems to have no scientific value.

3. The Cosmogonic Hymn, Rig-Veda X. 129, by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

The prevailing belief of the Hindus of the Vedic period as to the origin of the world is that it was made by the gods. They have no detailed and generally accepted theory of the creation, and, in the absence of a supreme divinity in their Pantheon, and the lack of consistent system among their beliefs, now one and now another of their gods is credited with the production of heaven and earth, of men and animals, and even of the other gods themselves. Here and there, however, are found signs of more advanced thought on these subjects, beginnings of the speculations which rise to greater and greater importance in the Brāhmaṇas, the Upanishads, and the philosophical systems. The most interesting of these, and the most noted, is a hymn in the tenth or supplementary book of the Rig-Veda, evidently to be reckoned among the most modern constituents of that great collection. It has been repeatedly translated, or more or less loosely paraphrased, and accompanied with laudatory comments, often of a greatly exaggerated character. Hence a simple version and brief exposition may seem not superfluous.

The point of view of the author of the hymn is given most plainly in the two concluding verses, which, in the metre of the original, run thus:
American Oriental Society:

6. Who truly knoweth? Who can here proclaim it?
Whence hither born, whence cometh this creation?
Hitherward are the gods from its creating;
Who knoweth, then, from whence it came to being?

7. This creation—from whence it came to being,
Whether it made itself, or whether not—
Who is its overseer in highest heaven.
He surely knoweth: or if he does not know?

One or two points here are questionable. In 6 c, we have the instrumental instead of the more regular ablative; hence Ludwig translates: "the gods have arrived hither by the sending of this one" (the pronoun, namely, may be masculine as well as neuter; it is not feminine, referring directly to viṣṇu, "creation"). But the denial of prior existence to the gods, which is the main point, comes from either interpretation. Again, in 7 b, the subject and meaning of the verb ādāre are unclear; it must be either "it set (or made) itself," or "he set (or made) it for himself," i.e. the "overseer" of the next line. I have thought the former more acceptable; but whether the middle can have so pregnant reflexive a sense admits of doubt.

To the apprehension of the poet, as is seen, the gods themselves are only a part of the present order of things, and their existence to be accounted for along with the rest, while no competent knowledge of its origination is to be expected from them. He rejects the old faith and its simple solution of the problem; to be sure, he has not so cast it out of his mind as to deny the existence of a general manager of the universe, located in the old heaven, but even his power to satisfy our curiosity is questioned. The rest of the hymn is the poet's own solution, which, after all, he is not afraid to venture to put forth, drawn from the depths of his consciousness.

In the first verse and a half, then, he attempts to depict the chaos negatively, by telling what was not then in existence. And he commits the rhetorical fault of beginning with a denial so absolute that what follows in the way of detail can only dilute it and weaken its force. Thus: 1. "Not the non-existent existed, nor did the existent exist, at that time:" i.e. in that indefinable past which preceded the present order of things there was neither existence nor non-existence. Surely, then, there can be nothing more to say about it; yet he goes on: "not the room of air existed, nor the firmament that is beyond." Then follows in the second line a series of questions (not entirely clear, since kṣīm may either mean 'what' or be more interrogative particle): "what enveloped? where? in whose protection? what was the ocean, the abyss profound?" The next verse proceeds: 2. "Not death existed, nor what is immortal, then"—a very unnecessary amplification; since if there was as already declared, neither existence nor even non-existence, there evidently could occur no cessation of existence, nor could there be anything that prolonged an existence without cessation. Finally, "there was no distinction of night from day;" and so the negative description ends with a mere denial of the existence of light—a conception that is further enlarged upon in the fourth verse.

Now comes something positive; and it appears that there was in existence, after all, a certain indefinite It, or That, or This (for tat might mean any one of the three: probably "It" is our best rendering): "Breathed, without wind, by inner power, It only: than It, truly, nothing whatever else existed besides." Of course, if there is a tat, the attribute of existence cannot be denied it: and the poet by this time is content merely to assert that nothing except this existed (ānā: the verb is the same with that used at the beginning of the first verse). He deludes himself with the belief that by first denying absolutely everything, and then denying all but an indefinable something, he has bridged over the abyss between non-existence and existence, and given a start to the development of the universe. And he anthropomorphizes his "It" by making it breathe, as if a living being; though he adds, by way of saving clause, that such breathing occasioned no perceptible motion of air.

The third verse is in good part a repetition of the second, in slightly different terms. It reads thus: 3. "Darkness existed, hidden by darkness, at the begin-
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1882.

The first half-verse presents a familiar and widely-spread conception; an unillumined ocean is one of the most naturally suggested figures for the Chaos; but its inconsistency with the first verse is manifest. "A void covered (literally, as a vessel is covered with its lid) with emotion" is a not particularly unsuccessful attempt to express the inconceivable; about as good as the old popular definition of Chaos, "a great pile of nothing, and nowhere to put it." Whether "fervor" (tapas), in the last quarter-verse, means physical heat or devotional ardor, penance, according to the later prevalent meaning of the word, admits of a question; but it is doubtless to be understood in the latter sense. For no such physical element as heat plays any part in the Hindu cosmogonies. While penance, the practice of religious austerities, is a constant factor in their theories. In the stories of their Brāhmaṇas, it is told times innumerable how the Creator, desiring to accomplish or attain something, performed penance (tapo 'tapagata), and so succeeded. It is a grossly anthropomorphic trait; yet hardly more so than that with which the next verse begins: 4. "Desire arose in the beginning upon It, which was the first seed of mind (thought, intention)." That is, since desire precedes and leads to action in man, it must have done so in the creation likewise; so 'kīm'apāta, 'he felt desire,' is the introduction to most of the acts of Brahmā, the Creator, in the Brāhmaṇas and Upanishads. The remaining line of the verse is obscure: "The sages (or poets), by devotion, found the tie of the existent in the non-existent, seeking it in the heart." The verb here is in the same tense with those used in describing the processes of creation above; and so the verse seems to project, without any preparation, certain wise persons into the midst of the nonentity or its development; if something later, within our period, were intended, the tense should be the aorist. And wherever satt and saṅg, 'existence and non-existence,' are brought together, it is a mere juggle of words, an affectation of depth.

But the next verse is still more unintelligible; no one has ever succeeded in putting any sense into it, and it seems so unconnected with the rest of the hymn that its absence is hardly to be wished. A mechanical translation runs as follows: 5. "Crosswise [was] stretched out the ray (line) of them: was it forsooth below? was it forsooth above? impregnators were, greatnesses were: svadā below, offering beyond." The word rendered 'offering' is literally 'forth-reaching,' and has sometimes also, as perhaps here, the signification 'straining, intentness,' which of its senses svadā has in the line, I have not ventured to determine. Who the 'they' are, unless the sages of the preceding verse, it is hard to guess. The second quarter-verse gives an indication of lateness, much more important than any other in the hymn; it has projection (pihka) of the final syllable of each of the two clauses, signifying a balancing of the mind between two alternatives (māṁsāta). There is no other case of it in the Rig-Veda; but half-a-dozen occur in the Atharvā, and it is by no means uncommon in the Brāhmaṇas.

The general character and value of the hymn are very clear. It is of the highest historical interest as the earliest known beginning of such speculation in India, or probably anywhere among Indo-European races. The attitude of its author and the audacity of his attempt are exceedingly noteworthy. But nothing is to be said in absolute condemnation of the success of the attempt. On the contrary, it exhibits the characteristic weaknesses of all Hindu theosophy; a disposition to deal with words as if they were things, to put forth paradox and insoluble contradiction as profundity, and to get rid of anthropomorphic divinities by attributing an anthropomorphic personality to the universe itself. The unlimited praises which have been bestowed upon it, as philosophy and as poetry, are well-nigh nauseating.

At this point the Society took an hour's recess, and on assembling again, Prof. Abbot of Cambridge in the chair, continued to listen to communications.


Dr. Butler gave an interesting description of a darbar, held by the Viceroy of India near Delhi, in 1889, of which he was himself a witness. Its object was to
honor the Maharaja of Rewah for his faithfulness to the British cause during the mutiny, and his kind hospitality and effective protection extended to English fugitives from the massacres, and to decorate him with the grand cross of a Commander of the Star of India. The Raja was himself a leper, as had been his ancestors for several generations, in spite of the devotion of one of them, who solemnly sacrificed himself in the Ganges, under the promise of the priests that it would extinguish the curse resting on his line.

5. On the doctrine of God and the Soul among the most ancient Nile-dwellers, by Prof. T. O. Paine, of Elmwood, Mass.

The word ḫmwn means ‘hidden,’ in the hieroglyphic text of the Book of the Dead (†bd.). When followed by the figure of God, the word is a name of God, and means ‘the Hidden One.’ The word ḫ to means ‘the Sun;’ and, when followed by the determinative for God, it means God as the Sun. The two terms together, ḫmr Rn, do not mean ‘the Hidden Sun,’ but ‘the Hidden One of the Sun.’ On the cartonnage of Anchapi (†ḥpy), in the Rochester Museum, that lady is called Osiris en ḫapy Anch, and also Osiris Anch ḫapy: the transposition is merely ornamental; but the insertion of en, ‘of,’ is of great importance—it is almost always omitted. We thus have ḫmr en Rn, ‘The Hidden One of the Sun.’ Compare “Who coverest thyself with light as with a garment” (Ps. civ. 2), and “His face did shine as the sun” (Mat. xvii. 2); also Rev. i. 16; x. 1; xii. 1; xix. 17; xxi. 23; xxii. 5.

Add. Book of the Dead, 163. 9: “Oh Hidden One (God). The [P]r Man [kr], Existing (ḫprr) (God, nature).” “(God)” represents the picture of God—the determinative. “Hidden One” is ḫmwn. Thus God is conceived of as “The Man,” and as the One who “Exists,” who “Is,” but who is “Hidden” from human sight, as pictured by a screen covering a man like an umbrella (ibid. 153. 4).

Amun Ra is hence The Sun-Hidden God—God as a Self-Existing, Divine Man, inside of the Sun, and covered by it. This also is a name of God in the Future world. The Blessed Spirit (mḥ xer), after death, says: “I am a [as a] pure lily springing up in the meadow of God”—of Ra, the Sun, inside of which is God: a picture of the Sun (ḫ to) is here followed by a picture of God in human form (ibid. 81. 2).

In the La Trouvaille de Deir-el-Bahari, loaned to Prof. Paine by the Rochester Museum, Queen Mâkeri’s body is joined to its everlasting (ḥtp) place; united to its dwelling for ever (ḥḥ)—the beautiful burial of the Hidden One of Thebes” (Pl. 13). With this put: “I am living a second time after death” (†bd. 38. 4); “I shall not die a second time in Khemeter” (44. 4); “His soul liveth for ever (ḥḥ); he dieth not a second time” (153. 9).

Hence the embalmed body remained in the earth (ḥḥ) for ever (ḥḥ), while the departed man-soul lived in the future world for ever (ḥḥ).

Prof. Paine spoke of a late paper before the Harvard Biblical Club, in which he exhibited a picture of the soul as in a spiritual body painted blue, firmly erect, while the body of flesh, painted earth color, was in the act of dropping to the ground.

6. On M. de Harlez’s Avesta, by Prof. J. Luquiens, of Auburndale, Mass.

The complete French version of the Avesta by the well-known Belgian scholar, Mgr. de Harlez, which has just appeared in a revised form (Bibliothèque Orientale, vol. V., Paris, 1881), and provided with an almost encyclopedic introduction, is a work of so great a scope not to deserve more than a passing recognition. Like Spiegel, his immediate predecessor, M. de Harlez seems to have aimed at reconciling the data of Eastern comments and of linguistic comparison; and, their methods being similar, their works could not differ essentially. Still, in Avestan matters, harmony does not reach very far, and leaves a wide scope to originality or divergence. M. de Harlez’s stamp is clearly imprinted in all his pages: less in his many suggestions or corrections of detail than in his readiness to discuss, and fairness in reporting, divergent opinions, and in the very ruggedness of many passages which, out of sturdy adherence to his positions, he has disdained to
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1882.

cxiii

smooth off: indeed, scientific honesty marks out his translation among far more brilliant works.

It is to the method, however, that we would gain look for indications of progress; though it is there, perhaps, that their want is most felt. Not but that we might point out in the author's renderings and in his notes a growing distrust of tradition. Even in his preface he asserts that his translation rests before all "upon the comparative study of the text" which is in itself a declaration of rights. There is certainly in the texts an element of evidence which often is self-sufficient; the roots are not from an unknown stock; they bear upon their faces the familiar Indo-European stamp: oftentimes the far more definite Aryan and Vedic type is so visible that little is wanting to get at the intrinsic value of a form. It is held, then, that by pursuing the course of a root through all its meanderings in the Avesta an adequate idea of cognate words would be gained; and the more so, since the two extreme terms of the process are well set in light: namely, the root on the one side, the traditional rendering on the other; but it soon appears that M. de Harlez's conception of "a comparative study of the text" stops far short of the process just outlined, and amounts in the main only to so modifying in this or that way the specific meaning furnished by the native comments as to make it fit the several texts.

Let us take as an instance the word drāona, found all through the many strata of the Avesta. The Parse tradition hands to M. de Harlez the sense 'consecrated wafer, small loaf used in sacrificial offerings;' and on this basis he establishes his comparative study: in Vendidad xii. 129, the word must mean both simple 'bread' and 'altar-bread,' and that in the same breath, through a very unlikely play of words; in Yasna xi, it is no longer 'bread' in any form, but an offering of meat; and again, in Yasna xxxiii. 8, it is neither bread nor meat, but 'offering,' in the palest sense that term ever had. And for this chassé-croisé of meanings no voucher is adduced; for there can be no question of any peculiar fitness when we are thus led to the very singular prescription of Yashit xix. 7, that "tou le temps que (quelqu'un) gravit des montagnes, que tout ce temps il jette en morceaux un drāona" (the loaf in question, of the size of a dollar) etc.; or to the very odd statement that the dog and the priest are alike, for both are "à petit pain." Yet the etymological clue was near at hand: the word can be connected with either of two Avestan roots only: one dru, 'run,' the other dru, 'be firm,' and between the ideas of 'course' and of 'stability' no hesitation is permitted. The oldest instance of our word is namely in one of the hymns, Yasna xxxii. 8, in which the singer asks "for the lasting gift of long-life (omerdi) and for the stability (draona) of health," a fitness confirmed by the fact that another word of the same root (drazaiti) came in the course of time to mean 'health,' too. From the abstract sense 'rest, stability,' to the concrete one 'thing fixed, laid apart for offering,' the step is easy, and nothing more is needed for an adequate rendering of all the passages concerned. It is in the old hymns, however, in the Gāthās, that the inadequacy of M. de Harlez's method is most felt: not that his rendering of them is obscure; but, like Spiegel's, it is colorless, wanting in edges and relief; the words follow in good order, but with a sameness which leaves no hold for either ear or eye. It is easy enough to put the finger on the fault: the presence of many x and y quantities, which tradition at bay clothed with so abstract or inaccurate a meaning as to make them inert obstructions in the drift of thought. The word gāthra, for instance, one of the large and dubious family of 'light-words,' and a factor of some moment in the older Avesta, is rendered 'brightness, brilliancy' by our writer, though he varies from this notion into that of 'glory' (Y. l. 5), and even 'felicity' (Y. xxviii. 2); in the several passages the word is a lifeless burden, except perhaps in Y. xxxi. 7, thus translated: 'Celui qui a formé à l'origine ces éclats lumineux (gāthra) pourra les répandre dans les astres (raocēs), celui-là a créé par son intelligence la pureté par laquelle il soutient le bon esprit,' etc.; the sense is plausible, but the speciousness of the wording only disguises the fact that if gāthra is 'brilliancy of light,' so is undoubtedly the word rendered 'astres, raocēs; and the process of giving 'luminous brilliancy' to the 'lights' is not unlike that of carrying coals to Newcastle. In truth the frequent word raocē, 'lights,' is never accompanied by any 'luminous' epithets, but generally—and this is an important clue—by the adjectives anaghra, 'without commencement,' and qadbata, 'self-ruled' (or rather, by the natural transition from
American Oriental Society:

selfness to sameness, 'never-changing, everlasting'); this notion, a favorite one in the religion of the Divine Order, is usually added to a word by the pronominal affix qa (eva), and qāthra is probably another immediate exponent of it. Our passage might then mean: 'He who in the beginning planned (with) for the heavenly lights that they should be clothed with lasting (self-rulled) motion, planned also the Divine Order (aša), for the purpose of establishing firmly the law of kindness; therefore thou must be thought (? in mind, 0 Mazda, as ever the same.'

It is feasible, then, through a revision of the text in the light of comparison, to give many passages a relief they have not in current versions; whether our conception of Mazdaism will be materially changed thereby is a question which may remain open until the revision has been carried out on a large scale. The interpreter of the Avesta must remember, in any event, that tradition was formed on, but also out of, the ruins of Mazdaism, through a natural, though to us unknown, process. As this respect for the filiation of Mazdaism is a marked merit of the school to which M. de Harlez belongs, we can readily admit that, in broad lines, he has read Mazdaism correctly out of the texts, and that his tenacious advocacy of the spontaneity of that religion as against the evolution-theory is to be reckoned an eminent service to Avestan studies. This does not imply that he is averse to theorizing, nor even to theorizing with a broad sweep. When, for instance, he strives to specify, with a degree of closeness not claimed by any previous theory, the place, date, and mode of birth of Mazdaism, he treads upon purely speculative ground. In his introduction, namely, though more fully in a work often quoted there, les Origines du Zoroastrisme, he ascribes the genesis of Mazdaism to an influx of Jewish ideas, coinciding with the captivity of the tribes of Israel in Assyria and Media, under Salamanasar. This view is not lacking in plausibility: if Jehovahism, more intense from its defeat, ever met face to face, and at close quarters, dying naturalism, the outcome cannot be a question of doubt. The argument, as drawn in the Origines, rests chiefly upon the presumable similarity of certain tenets common to both religions. "The four principal and characteristic features of Mazdaism," he says (Orig., p. 296), "are monotheism, creation ex niliō, prophetism, and moral dualism." The list has certainly a Judaic sound, and as long as his argument tends to prove that the Jews cannot have borrowed it, it progresses smoothly enough; but from this easy victory it does not follow so clearly that the Iranians borrowed from the Jews: not even though M. Renan triumphantly quoted by our writer, should say that "here the problem is reduced to knowing which nation preceded the other." In reality, these "features" are characteristic of Mazdaism in M. de Harlez's theory only, not in his version, where one might look in vain for traces of prophetism or creation ex niliō. As to moral dualism, it is there, but not indeed as in Judaism, where it timidly stands on the outer edge of the system, and in a book of doubtful date; in Mazdaism it takes the foreground, and even in the earliest time pervades every stratum of thought or language; its tone is clear, almost aggressive; one might call it a national almost as much as a religious feature; and if the specious dilemma suggested by M. Renan is unavoidable, we should be compelled, on this point at least, to grant Mazdaism priority of possession. It is not so with monotheism; the very name, if used in Mazdaic theology, must at the outset be encircled with a close net of qualifications, lest the Avestan texts should turn out exegetical pitfalls. One can not deny, however, that out of several conflicting factors monotheism stood for a moment uppermost in Iran: not the full, conscious, jealous one-God-doctrine, but rather enshrouded by the last reflections of naturalism and the rising rays of dualistic conceptions; this admission leaves the problem unsolved; distant likeness proves nothing when the angles and lines in no point coincide; and no such coincidence is claimed. M. de Harlez suggests (Introdc. ev.) that the Magi did not aim at imitating, but built out of their plunder an edifice sui generis: but this is taking the very ground from under the argument: for if the Magi so well disguised their loans, one can no longer plead the striking likeness of the dogmas. In truth, syncretism of this kind is a philosophical phenomenon of effete times and great centres; it rises on the ruins, not on the pedestal, of national pride; and whenever it appeared, no human hand was ever so guarded, no mind so transcendent, but that here and there a word, an image, slipped in that betrayed its exotic origin. M. de Harlez refuses to the early Iranians that degree of culture needed for the setting-up of a religion, as if culture and religiousness went
abreast; and yet he ascribes to them a feat which implies a mental and literary skill such as no nation of those times could boast. If, however, we eliminate from his theory the part assigned to the Jews, that allotted to the Medes must follow, and the gates of time and space are opened wide again for the history and genesis of fire-worship. Yet as the role of the Magi in Mazdeism involves another argument, it ought to be considered in the light of its own merits.

Both native and classical tradition agree in clothing the Median tribe of the Magi with religious authority in Mazdean worship; but as both stop very far from even the earliest historical times, it is unwarrantable to suppose that that status existed from the beginning. The testimony of the texts is for early times far more trustworthy than tradition; it is chiefly negative, to be sure, but it is unbiased, and reaches to the very farthest point of time from which we may hope to hear. Taken strictly, it proves beyond a doubt that neither Medes nor Persians had a hand in the composition of the Avesta; the language of the latter is different from that of the Persians to a certainty; from that of the Medes too, if we take for a basis of comparison a few Mede words that have been transmitted to us. Medes and Persians are equally, as distinct nations, unknown to the writers, who exult in the name of Aryan only. Nothing indicates that the Magi had any birthright among believers, or that priestly orders were in the possession of any family or tribe; M. de Harlez sees the name of the Magi in a puzzling word (mogha) twice found in the later Avesta—as if the ambitious tribe of the Medes could have deemed its pride satisfied with two dubious allusions. No nation sets about composing books of the nature of the Avesta for a literary pastime, carefully avoiding to affix its mark or sign; and it is incredible that the writers of those books, if composed at a time when the two great empires of Persia and Media, not to mention the Assyrians, were waging terrific wars for supremacy, could so hush down their feelings as not to drop a single word bearing the burden of their national pride or antipathies; there were opportunities for this such as would tempt even the dullest patriot; indeed, after the numbering of Mazdean cities and lands, in the 1st chapter of the Vendidad, after the words “There are yet other places, other lands.” etc., the Pehlevi translator, wondering at the silence of the Avestan writer, could not but add “such as Persia, etc.” Think of the greatest realm in the East being indebted for a mere mention to the late hand of a Sassanid Parthian!

Again, the language of the Avesta denotes a location in the centre of an unmixed Iranian race; everything is Aryan, from the name of the earth to that of the gods, not excepting hostile gods; not a syllable is there to suggest the proximity of any but kith and kin, until we reach the very latest strata of Mazdeic writing—which could not happen in the midst of the Sumerian or Scythian tribes of Media. The most telling argument, however, which M. de Harlez with his wonted fairness reproduces in all its force, is this: among the antagonists of the Mazdean apostle are the Kavus and the Cidikas—that is, the singers and sacrificers with whose names the Vedas have made us familiar; “this coincidence is strange,” adds M. de Harlez; it is, indeed, passing strange, and decisive as to the time as well as to the location of the older Avesta. Mazdeism was born on ground distinctively Iranian, remote from un-Aryan influences, and yet within reach of Vedism, though it be one of its farthest ramifications; this ground we may not be able to fix more definitely, but it was not Western Iran. It must be added that our writer, anticipating these objections, propels his main theory with other incidental ones: as, that the older parts of the Avesta were written by the Magi in their western settlements, near Mouru (Merv); but this hypothesis, which assumes the existence of two, nay, three different dialects successively spoken by the Magi, is supported neither by tradition nor by the texts. So long, indeed, as the testimony of historical times is made to go abreast with that of the Avesta, there will exist a hopeless conflict between these two sources of information. The conflict is allayed, however, if, instead of being juxtaposed, they are superposed. The ascending thread of history breaks when we reach the great context between Medes and Persians, but it is taken up by the Avesta (barring such timid additions as we may ascribe to later writers) a little before the rise of Media, and follows, though not perhaps unbrokenly, to times not far remote from the Vedic period. It is better to admit these breaks in the annals of the Iranians than to assume a theory which neither offers the time needed for the
American Oriental Society:

long fluctuations of the Mazdean dogma, nor even satisfactorily accounts for its status at the dawn of Persian history.

It remains, in truth, to explain how Mazdaism born in Media is found exercising its sway in Persia as early as in Darius's time; it does not stand to reason that the religion of the vanquished should have easily become that of the conqueror. Both de Harlez and Darmesteter (the latter more fully in his Introd. to the Vendidad) lay great stress on that part of Persian history which culminated in the death of the false Smerdis and the elevation of Darius to the throne; they infer, namely, that Mazdaism (or rather Magism) was just then making headway in Persia, and that the Achemenidae's attitude was that of spirited patriots, who descry under religious encroachments the incoming danger of foreign usurpation. This is very plausible, but the contrary is plausible also; for there is not one of the Achemenian inscriptions but breathes the purest Mazdaic spirit, while the role of the Magi is so problematic that other recent writers maintain that it was the Persians who upheld the faith and that the Magi were its adversaries (Oppert). Both writers make also too much of the fact reported by Herodotus, that the Magi exposed their dead as prescribed in the Vendidad, while the Persians buried theirs. It is taking very narrow ground to set up as a shibboleth of Mazdaic orthodoxy a practice which was neither distinctively Iranian (since it was also current among Scythian tribes in several regions) nor generally adopted among Mazdaean followers, as we know from the first chapter of the Vendidad. For those who believe that Mazdaism was born in the East in times far anterior to the Median, and brought westward by successive migration, that its growth was slow, fluctuating according to places, times, and new influxes of ideas, they have no difficulty in admitting that what was law in one place was possibly heresy in another; but there is a more positive argument to adduce: namely, that only ages of adhesion on the part of the Persian people to Mazdaism can account for its moral status, insinuated by very early documents; for if theological consistency is not a feature of Mazdaism, if even in the old hymns monotheism, dualism, and a sort of abstract polytheism elbow each other, getting successively the upper hand according as the wind blew or the writer leaned, there is no variation as to the ground-work of the faith. the healthy, pure, uncompromising principles of conduct, Iranian ethics. M. de Harlez devotes an interesting chapter of his Introduction to Avestan morals, quoting among others the testimony of the Greek writers in favor of the probity and veracity of the Persians; but a witness even more forcible speaks to us from the height of the Behistun rock, namely Darius, son of Hystaspes: "I have not been wicked nor a liar; I have not connived with crime, neither I nor my family; I governed in agreement with the law; I committed no violence against the just or against the virtuous!" Have we not here the best historical comment, sealed by a royal hand, on the precepts ever dear to the believers in the Divine Order, truth and humanity? We might now ask of M. de Harlez, or any writer who denies to the Persians the heirloom of Mazdaism, how many mouths—or, if this be deemed trifling, how many years are reckoned necessary for a system of morals to imbue the life of a nation from the laws to the personal principles of conduct, to pervade all classes from the king to the commoners: and upon the answer to this rests the question of the previous standing of Mazdaism among Persians.

7. On the Rude Tribes of Northeastern India, by Prof. J. Avery, of Brunswick, Me.

The old province of Assam, which was coterminous with the valley of the Brahmaputra, is bordered on three sides by a rugged mountain tract, which has been, in most cases from time immemorial, the home of numerous savage tribes. The great diversity of speech among these tribes, and the primitive manners and customs which they have stubbornly retained in spite of Aryan civilization, present an interesting, but as yet little-worked, field for the linguist and ethnologist.

Beginning in the extreme east of the province, we find the settlements of the Khasis and Singphos, the most intelligent of the Hill tribes. The former are a branch of the Shan race, and came into Assam from Burmah in the last century. The Singphos, who are allied to the rude tribes of northern Burmah, reached their present abodes at about the same time.
Following the border-land northward, we come first to the Mishmis, whose villages extend from the Namlang, a branch of the Irawaddy, to the Digam, a tributary of the Brahmaputra, or approximately between 96°–97° 30' E long. and 27° 40'–28° 40' N. lat. Next to the Mishmis, and between the Digam and Dibang rivers, is found an allied tribe calling themselves Midhas, but known to the Assamese as Crop-haired Mishmis. These two tribes are very savage, and are known only from the scanty accounts of a few venturesome travellers and occasional visits to the Assam markets.

West of the Dibang a line of tribes stretches along the foot-hills of the Himalayas as far as the confines of Bhutan. In order of location they are the Abars or Padam, Hill Miras, Daphias, and Akas. As we approach Bhutan, the tribes show an increasing likeness to the Tibetans in features and customs. Returning to south-eastern Assam, we first enter the extensive territory of the Naga people, who are said to number not less than thirty tribes, and whose villages are found as far west as the Doyang river, or between 93° and 97° E. long. The Nagas are the most savage of all the mountain tribes, and their country has never been completely explored. Adjoining the Nagas on the west are the Mikirs and Kukis, the latter being immigrants from a large and powerful tribe lying farther south in Manipur and Kachar. The remaining border land is occupied by the Jaintias or Syntengas, the Khasias, and the Garos. These tribes probably represent the true aborigines of Assam, and have preserved marked traces of affinity to a similar population in Central India. The rude tribes, whose location we have hastily traced, differ considerably in details of physical appearance and customs, but have certain characteristics in common, only one or two of which can be noted in this abstract. Physically, they exhibit in a marked degree the type called Mongoloid—the oblique eyes, high cheek-bones, square jaws, scanty beard, and color varying from tawny yellow to dark brown. They live in long, narrow houses, one end of which is usually supported upon posts, so as to secure in their rough country a level floor with the least trouble. Many families and even a whole village sometimes crowd into one of these houses. Their skill in the arts is very limited, not all of the tribes being able to make iron implements or weave their own clothing. They practice the rude sort of agriculture known all over India as jhum. Each tribe is usually divided into clans, at the head of which are hereditary chiefs, whose authority is in some cases real, in others merely nominal. In the latter case the fear of private revenge is the only restraint to crime. The Abars are governed by a council of elders, who daily convene in the morang or town hall, and regulate the affairs of the community even to the details of daily labor. The religion of all the tribes except the Khamti, who have embraced Buddhism, is at a rude, animistic stage, and consists chiefly in propitiating the mischievous spirits of their forests by offerings of fowls and other animals. Divination and magic are universally practiced. Traces of Aryan influence can be detected in some of their ideas of a future life. The languages of these tribes have never been carefully studied, and with exception of a grammar of Garo, a grammar and dictionary of Khasia, and a few other missionary publications, are known only by brief vocabularies. Any classification is therefore provisional. The Khamti is located with the Siamese in the Tai group; the Khasia and Jaintia form a group by themselves at present; and the other languages, or dialects, as shall appear hereafter, not less than two score in number, are classed with the Tibeto-Burman sub-family. The prevailing type of all these languages is monosyllabic with a tendency to agglutination.

8. Specimen of a List of Verbs, intended as a Supplement to his Sanskrit Grammar, by Prof. Whitney.

Prof. Whitney said that, in the present condition of Sanskrit grammar and lexicography, an account, as full as our knowledge permits, of the verbal roots of the language, with the verb-forms made from them, and their immediate or primary derivatives, cannot be considered otherwise than timely and desirable. The Sanskrit grammars of Williams and Müller, indeed, include something of this character; but it makes no pretense to completeness, and moreover takes as its basis the native grammarians, giving what these have laid down as approved for use, rather than what actually finds place in the literary records of the language.
Prof. Whitney has been for some time past engaged in preparing such an account, and he now brought a specimen, and laid it before the Society, with some account of the method followed, hoping to elicit criticism and suggestions of improvement.

The proposed plan is to give under each authenticable root all the formations from it which are thus far quotable from any part of the literature, ancient or modern, with the period of their appearance. Of course, the information on which such a statement can be founded is in the main that given in the great Petersburg Lexicon, supplemented by Böhtlingk’s briefier dictionary, now in process of publication. But a great deal of independent work has also been done by the author, in the way of revising and extending the collect-ins represented by the Lexicon. Such work must long remain incomplete, and a List like that contemplated cannot but be, at its first publication, of a provisional character, an assembling and arranging of a body of material for constant correction and additions, according to the opportunities of every scholar.

As regards the chronological periods to be recognized in the history of the language, it is intended to distinguish the Veda (by the sign v), the Brāhmaṇas (by b), the Sūtras (by s), and the Upanishads, where necessary (by c); then the epic language, of Mahābhārata and Rāmāyaṇa, which has not been brought under absolute subjection to the rules of the grammarians, needs to be held apart (by x) from the grammatically correct or classical tongue (denoted by c). There is unquestionably a certain rudeness in this classification—and especially, when all mantra-material shall have been gathered from samhitā and brāhmaṇa and śūtra, and properly arranged and examined, it will be possible to establish a mantra-division; but at present nothing better than what is here proposed appears to be within reach. The special works of each class may be referred to wherever there appears to be occasion for it; and in particular, much that belongs to the Rig-Veda alone will require to be so marked. Forms authorized by the grammarians, but not met with in use, may sometimes be added in brackets.

The modes of formation of the present-system are marked according to the order followed in the author’s grammar, the conjugation class-number of the Hindu grammar being added in brackets. The numbering of the asriot-formations is according to the former authority only.

The form given as specimen of a tense-system is regularly in the third person; but if only isolated forms are met with, they are set down as they occur. Among the primary derivatives, it is best to put not only those really deserving the name, but also those which, though properly secondary, have won in the history of the language the position and value of primary words. Such are especially the rudiments in ya, tasya, and ananya, with the words in uka, and ukh and us etc. Formations by primary suffixes from secondary conjugation- stems are put last.

A few examples follow:

\[ \text{ąp, 'obtain.'} \]
Pres. IV. [5]. āṇōṭī etc. AV. + ; āṇute E.—VI. [1]. [āpatī].
Perf. āpa etc. V. + ; āpīrē RV.
Aor. I. āptī c. ; II. āptī etc. V. + (āpēyam AV.). — 3. āpiṇān C (āpiṇat BA.).

—t. āpīs E.
Fut. āpāṣyati-te etc. B. + .—[āptā].
Verbals. āptā V. + ; āptum, āptūṭā, -āpya B. + .
Sec. Conj.; Pass. āpāṣēte etc. B. + .—Desid. ēpāṣī etc. AV. + ; ēpāṣate E.

(āpāṣanta RV.).—Caus. āpāṣyati etc. B. + , te E.; āpāṣyisēt C.
Deriv. āpas āpās V.R., āpās RV., āpānāna RV.; āpa B. + , āpaka E. + , āpāya V. + ; āpīnī C., ēpāna V. + , ēpāṇā C. (āpēnak RV.), āpīs RV., ēptī V., ēptī AV. + ; ēptuvāya C., ēptinā C. (āpēnaq (?) RV.); ēpās E., ēpāun E., ēpāu B. + ; ēpātuvā E., ēpāvīṭī V.; ēpāpiṇīṣu E.

\[ \text{tāp, 'heat.'} \]
Pres. VI. [1]. tāpti-te etc. V. + —VIII. [4]. tāpyati (see Pass).
Perf. tātāpā tepē etc. V. + (tātāpāte RV.).
Aor. I. ātāptī RV. ; III. tātattāp E.; ātē RV. — tāpti s., tāptam B.S., tātāpēs (?) AV.

Fut. tāpāṣyati-te etc. E., tāpāṣyat E.; tāpāṣyati E.—tāptā E.
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1882.

Verbs. taptā v. +. tapita e.; tapitum, tapīvā, tápya v. +.
Sec. Conj.: Pass. tápyāte v., tápyate b. +, tápyati b. +.—Intens. tátapyate e.—Desid. [tāpsati-tē].—Caus. tápyati-tē AV. +; tápyate.

Deriv. -tāp RV.—tāpa e. +, tápya e. +, tápana v. +, tápanā b. +, tápanī RV., tápas v. +. tápiṣṭha v., tápiṣṭha c., tápyas c., tápū RV., tápūs v., tápūt c., táptavya c., tápti RV., tápū AV. +, tápaka c., tápin c., tápya c., tápana e. +; tápyatā RV.; tápyatē c., tápyatīRV.

verb... know.

Pres. VI. [1]. bódhāti -te etc. v. +.—VIII. [4]. budhyāti etc. e. +, budhye etc. v. +.

Perf. būdbhādha bubudhe etc. v. + (būdbhādha etc. RV.).

Aor. I. abudhān -ram RV.; bodhi impv. RV.; ābodhi v.; budhānā RV.—2. budhānta RV., budhēma (?) AV.—3. abubudhāt v.—4. ābubutai etc. v., abuddha c.—5. bodhiṣat RV.

Fut. bhotsye etc. RV. -te e.

Verbs. buddhā v. +; boddhum e. +, buddhvā e. +, -būdhyā RV. +; budhī RV.

Sec. Conj.: Intens. bhubhūhiti c.—Desid. bhubhūsati c.—Caus. bodhāyatā v. +, -te b. + (abodhiṣata c.), bodhyāte c., bhubhāyiṣa- (in deriv.) c.

Deriv. -buddh v. c., buddha e. +, -buddha RV., buddhi e. +; bodhā v. +, bodhaka c., bodhin c., bodhya c., bodhāna v. +, bodhanyā e. +. bodhi c., bodhiit RV., boddhyāvya u. +, bodhityāvya c., boddir u. +; bhubhatsu e. +, bhubhitye RV. +, bodhayitiavva c., bodhayiṣu e., bhubhayiṣu e. + (bhubhāyiṣu u.).

The author's collection and arrangement of material being not yet finished, the above details do not claim at all points the degree of accuracy attainable; but they will illustrate sufficiently, it is believed, the general scope and method of the undertaking. It is hoped that the List will be published within a year.

9. Further Studies among the Metres of the Rig-Veda, by Mr. W. Haskell, of New Haven; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

In continuance of his examination of the Vedic metres reported a year ago, Dr. Haskell gives more detailed statements with regard to the anuṣṭabh and gīyātī stanzas.

The Rig-Veda has 794 anuṣṭabh and 2435 gīyātī verses, distributed as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>an.</th>
<th>gīy.</th>
<th>an.</th>
<th>gīy.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>469</td>
<td>VI</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>VII</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>104</td>
<td>VIII</td>
<td>112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>112</td>
<td>IX</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>156</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>X</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Taking all the anuṣṭabh verses in Book I. as instance the general structure of the metre, we find the distribution of light and heavy syllables (leaving out, here as later, a few doubtful ones) in all the four pādas to be this:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>syllables</th>
<th>i.</th>
<th>ii.</th>
<th>ii.</th>
<th>iv.</th>
<th>v.</th>
<th>vi.</th>
<th>vii.</th>
<th>viii.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>light</td>
<td>193</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>166</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>389</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>403</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>231</td>
<td>327</td>
<td>257</td>
<td>336</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>392</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>142</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There is no noteworthy difference between the different pādas as regards their structure. The cadence — — — is found in 88 per cent. of all the pādas, a light syllable being about twice as common as a heavy at the end of the pāda (68 to 30 per cent.). In the remaining 12 per cent. (60 pādas) is found every variety of combination; in a few cases even the penultimate syllable is heavy. In the first half of the pāda, the combination — — — is more frequent than any other (21 per cent.); the combination — — — is decidedly less common (16 per cent.); the formula — — — will satisfy over 63 per cent. of the cases.

About 26 pādas, in all the Books, are defective, or not to be filled out by any of the ordinary resolutions; 10 are redundant. Book X. has several pādas (?).
that are entirely made up of heavy syllables. There are no \textit{anustubh} hymns with trochaic (or spondaic) cadence, and even two such pādas succeed one another in only 9 scattered verses. When \textit{a} from \textit{as} occurs before \textit{a} in the cadence of the verse, it is usually to be scanned as light (the only exceptions are at vii.55.15; ix. 98.3; x. 159.1). Syllables like the initial \textit{a} of \textit{asya} always occur in cadence where they ought to be heavy (in ix. 86.18, the cadence may be regarded as trochaic). Cases where final \textit{n} is doubled before an initial vowel are rare in \textit{anustubh} cadence; but the syllable appears to count as a heavy one in a great majority (three-quarters) of cases in all metres.

Again, for the \textit{gīyatrī}, taking as example all the verses of this metre in Book L, the distribution of quantities throughout the pādas appears to be this:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>syllables</th>
<th>i.</th>
<th>ii.</th>
<th>iii.</th>
<th>iv.</th>
<th>v.</th>
<th>vi.</th>
<th>vii.</th>
<th>viii.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>light</td>
<td>638</td>
<td>304</td>
<td>473</td>
<td>245</td>
<td>1302</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>1307</td>
<td>888</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>754</td>
<td>1088</td>
<td>919</td>
<td>11147</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>1265</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>504</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The predominance of heavy syllables in the first half of the pāda is even more marked here than in the \textit{anustubh} metre; by combining the percentages, the norm \(\frac{1}{2} = \frac{1}{2} \approx \frac{1}{2} \approx \frac{1}{2}\) has a value of nearly 78 per cent. for all the syllables; and \(\frac{1}{2} = \frac{1}{2} \approx \frac{1}{2}\) of over 88 per cent.; the cadence \(\frac{1}{2} \approx \frac{1}{2}\) actually occurs in 86 per cent.; and the remainder are again of the most heterogeneous character. Hardy any (less than half-a-dozen) unmanageably defective pādas are found, and not many more (7) redundant ones.

But besides not a few detached pādas, and even stanzas, scattered through all the books, certain passages have the cadence wholly or predominantly trochaic or spondaic: they are, as noticed, viii. 2. 1-27, 29-41; v. 30, 32-5; 16. 1-12; 71. 1-9; 79. 1-8; 81. 1-9; ix. 66. 16-29; x. 20. 4-8; 185. 1-3. The estimate made of their quantities is as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>syllables</th>
<th>i.</th>
<th>ii.</th>
<th>iii.</th>
<th>iv.</th>
<th>v.</th>
<th>vi.</th>
<th>vii.</th>
<th>viii.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>light</td>
<td>113</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heavy</td>
<td>166</td>
<td>213</td>
<td>177</td>
<td>209</td>
<td>145</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

By combining the percentages of the several syllables, the norm \(\frac{1}{2} = \frac{1}{2} \approx \frac{1}{2}\) is found to be represented by 79 per cent. of the syllables, the proportion being very nearly the same in each of the three pādas. But the number of pādas which actually exhibit the full trochaic cadence \(\frac{1}{2} \approx \frac{1}{2}\) is only 85, about a third of the whole number. The regularity of structure is decidedly greater among these verses than among the more usual \textit{gīyatrīs}; and it seems quite doubtful whether the Vedic poets can be said to have formed and realized the conception of a trochaic verse.

The scattered pādas with trochaic or spondaic cadence number about 100, and an analysis of their structure yields results almost identical with those just given.

10. The Middle Pathway between the Orient and Occident—will it now be opened anew and made safe? by Prof. J. W. Jenks, of Newtonville, Mass.

The author being obliged to leave before his paper was reached, it was presented and read in part by the Corresponding Secretary. Prof. Jenks reviews the position and recent activity of the European rivals in Asia, namely England and Russia, notes the distance separating their respective outposta, and the terminations of the avenues for trade and peaceful intercourse established by them, and the character of the countries and races that lie between. He gives an itinerary of the inland route from the eastern border of Europe to and across Afghanistan, entering India by Peshawur, and calculates the chances for its recovering its ancient peaceful state. "where once, according to tradition, in times we are apt to look upon as only filled with barbarous violence, a solitary peddler could travel, night or day, with his pack on his back, unmolested"—but arrives at no satisfactory and confident solution of the question.

The Society, after passing the usual vote of thanks to the American Academy for the use of its room, then adjourned, to meet again in New York in October next.
Proceedings at New York, October 25th and 26th, 1882.

The Society met at 3 o'clock p.m., in Room No. 23 (Prof. Short's) of Columbia College. In the absence of the President and Vice-Presidents, Prof. Charles Short of Columbia College was called to the chair, and presided at the meetings of Wednesday afternoon and evening. The Corresponding Secretary explained on behalf of the President, Prof. Williams, that, though steadily gaining in health, he was not yet sufficiently restored to bear the fatigue and excitement of the sessions.

After the reading of the minutes of the last meeting and the settlement of the order of the present one, it was announced on the part of the Directors that the Annual meeting for 1883 would be held in Boston, as usual, and on Wednesday, May 23d; Professors Abbot and Toy would act as a Committee of Arrangements for it.

The following persons were then elected Corporate Members:

Mr. G. Wetmore Colles, of Morristown, N. J.;
Prof. David G. Lyon, of Cambridge, Mass.;
Prof. Thomas R. Price, of New York City.

A very brief summary of the correspondence of the past half-year was given by the Secretary.

Rev. L. H. Mills sends from Hanover an account of the progress of his work on the Gāthās, noticed in previous issues of the Proceedings. He hopes to have a volume ready to appear in a few months.

Prof. C. de Harlez, of Louvain, regarding himself as unfairly treated in a criticism of his work by Prof. Luquiens, published in the Proceedings for May of this year, had sent for distribution to members present at the meeting extra copies of a reply to the criticism, communicated by him to the Louvain "Muséon." These were laid upon the table for members to take, and the Secretary gave notice that he had in his hands a brief rejoinder by Prof. Luquiens, which would be read at a later session (see below).

Communications were now presented, as follows:

1. On Words for Color in the Rig-Veda, by Mr. E. W. Hopkins, of Columbia College, New York.

Geiger's article on color in the Rig-Veda is the only work of authority on this subject. The purpose of the present paper is to see if the facts set forth in that article be correct, to give a more detailed discussion of the color-words, and finally to investigate the theory on which the belief in a gradually developed color-sense in man is founded.
The great mass of color-words in the Rig-Veda indicate colors which cannot be referred to any one invariable standard, but which express the lighter shades of red and yellow, or reddish-yellow. The word hari and hariya, which means literally the 'burn-color' (from ग्हर), is used generally to indicate 'yellow;' but it cannot be proved that the meaning 'green' is unknown to this word in the Rig-Veda. In the later literature the word meant 'green' and 'yellow' both; and something of the same sort may be assumed for the Rig-Veda, when we find the earth called पृथिवि hariyaropas (iii. 44. 3), or the frog (vii. 103. 6) called hariya. The meaning 'green' is not proved for these passages, but cannot be disproved; a fact which should have some weight when applied as an argument to a theory which, like the development theory, rests on wholly negative data. The word for 'blue,' निला, which in the later language may mean 'blue' without any idea of darkness combined with it, has been assumed by Geiger to mean in the Rig-Veda only 'grey' or 'dark-brown.' But in the discussion of this word Geiger fails to note that, whereas the meaning 'dark-brown' might possibly suit one or two passages, it is impossible to assume such a meaning for every case: for instance, viii. 10. 31, where the first sparks (or dark-blue flames?) of the newly-lighted fire have the adjective निलवान applied to them. So, too, the same adjective, when applied to the खास, may mean 'dark-blue;' at any rate, Geiger has not proved that the blue tone of this adjective, which was later so general, is entirely foreign to the Rig-Veda. But only that from the few passages where it is used, it might be made to correspond to 'dark-brown' in order to suit his theory.

Before discussing the development-theory as applied to the Rig-Veda, the same process of reasoning was applied to Milton's Paradise Lost, and in detail to the Nibelungen-Lied. It was shown that these poems exhibit the same comparative use of color-words as Homer and (if we took all Geiger's statements as proved) the Rig-Veda. From this the conclusion was drawn that simple mention or non-mention of color was no proof either of a lack of development of color-sense, or of a lack of proper terms to express color. Good reasons exist why we do not find green and blue mentioned as we find red and yellow in the Rig-Veda. A statistical survey of the use of words for grass, meadow, fields, etc., in the Rig-Veda shows that such words were merely introduced as an accident of the thought. No description is given in any way. It is therefore misleading when Geiger speaks of fields, trees, etc., being so often described, and yet not called green. They are not "often described;" and when a rare epithet occurs, it is one of utility, almost never of beauty. Therefore the lack of description extends over the color together with the other attractions of these natural products. What was not useful was not regarded. In the same way it is an error to say that the firmament is frequently spoken of but not called blue. The firmament is rarely alluded to. What is described is the lower heaven, the clouds, the sunrise, the lightning. On these phenomena of nature the whole burden of epithets rests. But these all give no opportunity for the use of 'blue.' Red and yellow would naturally be the foremost colors. It was these glaring colors that accompanied the deities, and it was the object of the hymns to worship these deities by describing their phenomenal appearance. Beauty for its own sake was not admired or described. Therefore the Vedic singers did not pass in their descriptions out of the light-colored three-fold heaven of glaring light, except in an occasional chance allusion to the निलस्या प्रश्यन, the round-backed firmament that shut in the lower sky. As on earth, need and not beauty gives the impulse to the hymn. It seems to be more a defective development of aesthetic appreciation for the beautiful in itself than a defective development of the human retina that causes the scarcity of words for green and blue in the early literatures.

2. Syriac Miscellanies, by Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of Philadelphia.

The Chronicle of Joshua the Stylist, of Edessa, has been elegantly edited, with an elegant translation, a good index, and maps, by Professor William Wright of Cambridge. It has long been known as an important source of history, in its abridged Latin translation by Joseph Simon Assemanni, pp. 262-283 of the first volume of his Bibliotheca orientalis. The first complete edition of the Syriac text appeared in 1876, edited for the Deutsche Morgenländische Gesellschafi, in their Abhandlungen, Band vi., No. 1., Chronique de Jounè le Stylisté, écrite vers l'an 515,
Proceedings at New York, October, 1882.

dexte et traduction par M. abbé Paulin Martin. Wright's edition is provided with excellent foot-notes, explaining all his emendations of the MS. The date of the Chronicle appears to be A. D. 597, and it is preserved in a MS. written at some time between A. D. 907 and 944, being incorporated into the larger work of Dionysius of Tell Mahrê, patriarch of the Jacobites (ob. A. D. 805). The only MS. of the work is preserved in the Vatican Library. The reason for mentioning this work here is to note that it supplies documentary testimony, almost as ancient as any we have, for the numbering now in use of the Hebrew Psalms. In chapter xxxiv. of the Chronicle, according to Wright's numbering, is a mention of the "eighteenth Psalm," which the context shows to be the same as that known in the Hebrew and English by the same number. The whole context, also, looks as if the passage could not have been altered at all, but preserves the original form of the Chronicle. So, at all events, we have a testimony to this numbering which goes back to the early part of the tenth century; and, in all probability, to the beginning of the sixth. It is to be remembered, also, that the Syriac service books do not cite the Psalms by number, but by the opening words of a section.

Attention was also called to the well-known possibility of a change from $^\gamma$ to $^\delta$, or the reverse, in Hebrew; and the like in Syriac. If actual examples of this change can be shown, it might tend to acquit the critics of too great rashness, when they think they detect it by a reasonable conjecture. In Syriac, the change is very rare, yet it is now and then made by an individual scribe. But one case appears in Luke xxiv. 32 (treated of in the Proceedings for October, 1880), where the Curetonian, Peshitto, and Harclean have all adopted an erroneous change from $^\gamma$ to $^\delta$. The error not only occurs in the MSS., but has passed into many of the printed editions, including some of the best of them. Another case appears in 2 Corinthians iv. 18, where $^\epsilon^\gamma^\alpha^\iota^\omicron^\nu$ has been changed in many MSS. and editions to $^\epsilon^\gamma^\alpha^\iota^\eta^\omicron^\omicron^\omicron^\nu$, "we rejoicing," which makes good sense, though of course it is wrong. The latter, erroneous reading is that of the oldest and the latest printed editions, and of all the MSS. I have examined. The varia lectura of the present edition do not inform us whether the copyist who stands in sundry printed editions, rests upon MS. authority or upon conjecture only.

Another apparent instance of the change of one letter for another appears in Mark xiv. 33, in the Peshitto rendering of $^\epsilon^\theta^\mu^\mu^\pi^\mu^\iota^\sigma^\tau^\iota^\alpha^\iota^\nu^\alpha^\iota^\varsigma^\varsigma^\nu^\iota$, which very well renders $^\lambda^\pi^\iota^\sigma^\iota^\alpha^\iota^\nu$, but not $^\epsilon^\theta^\mu^\mu^\pi^\mu^\iota^\sigma^\tau^\iota^\iota^\iota^\sigma^\tau^\iota^\alpha^\iota^\nu$. For the latter, the Syriac requires a $^\gamma$ in place of the $^\delta$. The change might easily be made in most Syriac MS. alphabets by simply omitting the diaeresic point; as otherwise the two letters are easily mistaken for each other. I do not find that any printed edition or MS. has the right letter.

All these are manifest historic instances of the general change of letter, and of a general acceptance of the wrong one. It ought not to frighten us, therefore, when a conscientious critic offers a reasonable conjecture based on the assumption of a similar change, though it cannot, from the nature of the facts apparent, be either proved or disproved historically.

Several examples of the sort occur in the Apocalypse; but as all the printed copies rest upon one MS. only, it would hardly be fair to insist upon them in this connection.

The spelling of the word "Peshitto," as the name of the chief Syriac version of the Bible, varies greatly among different writers; and some remark thereupon seemed called for, not as news for Orientalists, but for the benefit of those who have not the facts under their eyes. As to the fixed points of the orthography, the $^\iota$ represents the Oriental $^\omicron^\iota$, and may be represented by an $^\epsilon$, an $^\iota$ (superior, as the printers say), or an apostrophe ('), according to the preference of the transliterator. The $^\iota$ is the long vowel, and may be written with a makron or circumflex (1 or $^\iota$), or left unaccented. The $^\epsilon$ represents the Western Syriac pronunciation, chiefly Maronite; but may be replaced by an $^\alpha$, representing the Eastern pronunciation, of the Jacobites and Nestorians (the latter call themselves Chaldeans, and abhor
the name of Nestorians). However, the Syriac written vowel is the same in both cases.

As to the points of variation, the sh represents simply the consonant shín; and it is absurd for any one but a German to transliterate with sch. as is often done by ill-informed writers. The chief point refers to the št; for which many write only š, and some th. The fact is that the word, in this use, is a feminine adjective, agreeing with one of several nouns which severally stand for 'ēditio' (in the old Latin sense, when applied to books), for 'version,' or 'copy,' or for 'portion of Scripture.' The oldest term comes down to us from Gregory Bar Hebræus (13th century). In the preface to his Θ&να&ριου Aρεαρο&ρος. It is there ἐ&δ&ι&τ&ο&ς ἑ&π&ί&κ&ε&λ&ε&ς; the word edito bearing the meaning just above stated. Some would render versio simplex; but that is scarcely correct. Another term, modern and still in use, may be seen, for example, in the American Bible Society's edition of the Syriac New Testament (a reprint of that of Justin Perkins, Urmia, 1846), New York, 1874. At the beginning, each, of 2 Peter, 2 and 3 John, Jude, and the Apocalypse, is a note, stating that the book is not in the ἐ&δ&ι&τ&ο&ς that is called ἑ&π&ί&κ&ε&λ&ε&ς; but is written in other ancient ἐ&δ&ι&τ&ο&ς.

The word ἐ&δ&ι&τ&ο&ς means here either 'copy' or 'work;' or, substantially, 'version.' It is a derivative from a word which furnishes the common name for the modern chapters in the Arabic Bible, and the ancient sections of the Syriac Bible. The verbal form from which it is immediately derived seems to mean to elaborate, sometimes to collate and correct, a book.

Thus, in any event, the two št's seemed called for; the first being a šeth, the second a šaw. Accordingly, št is correct enough for ordinary purposes; št for more correct purposes; while th is altogether unobjectionable. It should here be stated, however, that the Western Syrians no longer pronounce the šaw as an English th in any case. It is always the simple š with them. The Eastern Syrians still pronounce the št as if it were th (in bín), in certain cases. But the single št can be used by one informed of the facts only in more deference to a supposed English usage, which is now abandoned by most scholars.

The sum is, therefore, that Peshitto or Peshitta is practically near enough for ordinary English; while Peshto is wrong, and Peschito is unworthy of any one who writes English. If the Germans did not make two consonants out of sh, and if sch were not a single consonant with them, we might—use the suppositions as we liked. But their necessities of transliteration should be no pattern for us. Until we are ready to abandon our perfect transliteration of Jehel for the awkward German Jœwebel, we ought not to yield our better sh for their misleading sch. Misleading. For many respectable scholars often mistake it for ŝch; that is, ș followed by the guttural kh.

Concerning the meaning of the name Peshitto, nothing is more common than for tires to explain it as signifying 'literal:' but that seems to be a mistake. That explanation is by some said to distinguish the Peshtito Old Testament from the Jewish targums (which were not used by the Syrian Christians); or else, from the one made simply from the Hebrew, in distinction from the Hexaplar, made from the Septuagint, by Paul of Tela, at Alexandria, A. D. 616. As to the New Testament, no version less 'literal' is put forth in the way of contrast, by those who urge the meaning 'literal.' In fact, neither of these meanings has sound foundation in fact; for the Peshtito is the least 'literal' of the versions; and the 'simple' manner of making is an idea which no Syriac scholar could entertain; for it requires ideas to be put into the word which it does not have in Syriac.

The word Peshtito appears sometimes to be applied to the Old Testament, whence it has been inferred that the name was first given to the latter, and then to that version of the New Testament which commonly accompanied it. But whether that be the case or not, the only versions of the New Testament common among the Syrians were the Philoxenian and HarcLean. So that, at all events, the name Peshtito only distinguished that version from the Syriac Hexaplar of the Old Testament, and the Philoxenian and HarcLean of the New Testament. Accordingly, we should not expect to meet the name before the seventh century, the date of the Hexaplar and Philoxenian; and, in fact, we do not find it till
Proceedings at New York, October, 1882.

much later: at the earliest, in the ninth century; and the first clear statement is that of Gregory Bar Hebræus, above referred to.

Now for the facts. The Peshitto is a wonderful version; mostly literal, but always idomatic, always Syriacizing, never Grecizing; never shunning a paraphrase, but often inserting a paraphrase of mere explanation. Its genius much resembles that of Luther's German Bible, which is far less literal than most modern versions, yet magnificent in its German reproduction of the sense and spirit of the original. On the other hand, the Hexaplar, the Philoxenian, and the Harclean, were slavishly literal, keeping the Greek idiom and order of words, and even sometimes reproducing Greek inflexions of proper names and transferred words. Every one of them was a far more literal version than the Peshitto; and no Syrian scholar could fail to know it.

Moreover, the Hexaplar was founded on the LXX. of Origen's Hexapla: and both it and the pair of New Testament versions, viz. the Philoxenian and Harclean, were crowded with the asterisks and obeli of the Origenistic MSS. Besides this, the Philoxenian and Harclean had a margin of annotations, sometimes giving the words of the Greek original in Greek, sometimes the same transliterated into Syriac; besides other matter of explanation and comment, almost entirely critical. The MS. on which White's edition of the Harclean is founded contains in the margin the alternative ending of Mark's Gospel, found otherwise in the Greek uncial Codex L. In short, these versions were critical, annotated works for the use of the learned; and could scarcely be appreciated to the fullest extent except by those familiar with the Greek. In contrast with these, the Peshitto presented only the clear, simple, or single (that is what Peshitto often means, when we say it means simple) text, uninvolved by textual marks or marginal notes. Now, to turn back to our oldest accessible authority, Gregory Bar Hebræus, we find that he states the Peshitto, "which is conformed to the Hebrew text," to be the basis of his comments, and only mentions the LXX., with the Greek versions of Aquila, Symmachus, Theodotion, etc., as the source of some of his illustrations. But he does not give any meaning to the name Peshitto. And he only speaks of the Peshitto New Testament by way of noting the date of its supposed making, stating that it was translated after the same Peshitto pattern as the Old Testament. The word which I render here by 'the same pattern' is one of the untranslatables. All it means is, the New Testament portion of the same thing. Gregory Bar Hebræus does not at all explain the word Peshitto; but he mentions, in contrast with it, the Philoxenian, the Harclean, and the Hexaplar. And the differences above stated between those and the Peshitto would be entirely evident to him. He would never have said that the Peshitto was more literal than the others; nor do any of his words bear the meaning—nor could they bear the meaning—that the name refers to a rendering from the original texts. Moreover, that would not distinguish it from the other Syriac versions of the New Testament; and it is only at the close that he speaks of the Hexaplar.

It is plain, from what he does say, that those who have supposed that he defined it as Peshitto because it was made from the Hebrew and Greek have committed a double error; first, of having failed to read for themselves, and consequently of mistaking his mention of Greek for Syriac versions. A misunderstanding of Wiseman's "eadem simplici forma" (Liber Syr., p. 99), as a translation of what I have called untranslatable, has been the second error. Wiseman's note (idem, p. 89) shows that he did not himself misunderstand it.

It is, however, but fair to state that those who think the 'literal' character of the translation gave the name to the Peshitto have some color for their opinion from Pococke's translation of the words of the Arabic historian Abulfaraj. "That speaks of the Syriac version, "quod simplici vocat, quod in quae versione elegante ratio habita non sit." But this statement is quite contrary to fact, and cannot be accepted. It is not to be supposed that the Syrians would be guilty of such a lucus a non in a matter so grave; while the Arabian historian would follow the instincts of his profession in all the ages, and manufacture an explanation to order without scruple.
American Oriental Society:

3. On Differences of Use in Present-Systems from the same Root in the Veda, by Prof. M. Bloomfield, of Baltimore, Md.

Prof. Bloomfield began with pointing out the importance, both to Sanskrit grammar and to general Indo-European grammar, of the question whether there are to be discovered in the earliest Veda any traces of a difference of use, functional or diachronic, among the present-stems—often two or three, and sometimes numerous—found to occur there from the same root. He reviewed some of the leading facts in the case: the (including intensives) dozen or more present-stems of the root ṭṛ (ṭar-ṭīr-ṭur); the six from pṛ-ṛṣ; the five from īṣ, ḫā, and others; and so on. A part of these formations are evident results of transition from one system to another, brought about by some form or forms derivable from more than one stem. In other cases, an isolated present-form is due to the influence of a similar formation from some other root occurring along with it. Yet it must be granted that, in all the languages of the family, the same root not infrequently makes present-stems with different formative elements. We might naturally look to find the cause of this either 1. in an original functional difference of the various formations—a variety of temporal or modal use; of causal, factitive, continuous, intransitive use, or the like—or, 2. in the dialectic or stylistic habit of different localities or literary compositions. Prof. Bloomfield's paper presented the results, mainly negative, of a search through the Rig-Veda for differences of these two kinds.

Delbrück is the scholar who has given this subject most attention, in his Grundlagen der griechischen Syntax (Halle, 1879). The main result which he claims concerns the root-present. This, he assumes (p. 112), was originally the present of inceptive action (das Præzens der eintretenenden Handlung), basing his view upon another supposition: namely, that the root-aurist was originally the preterit of the root-present. As for the other present-formations, he regards it as extremely probable that to every one of them there was once attached a delicately differentiated meaning, too delicate to be taken hold of by our linguistic sense. Accordingly, in another passage (p. 100), he says: "The oldest Sanskrit shows that in the case of many roots there existed several present-formations. So there are found from root bhṛ the three, bhārti, bhārati, and bibharti. A difference of function we do not feel here any longer; but it is to be assumed that it did once exist. It may be assumed in addition that bhārti indicated momentary action, bhārati continuous action, and bibharti repeated action." But the root bhṛ is almost unique in showing a distinct functional difference between its two stems bhāra and bibhāra; the former being, in the terminology of Slavic grammar, "perfective," regularly followed by the dative and best rendered by "convey," while the "imperfective" bibhāra is used without the dative, and means "support." Typical examples are bhāra ṭrī ṣāvāni, "bring good things to the singer" (RV. ix. 69. 10); and vāṃ bibhāravi ṣāvāyes, "thou bearest wealth in thy hands" (RV. i. 55. 8). Further examples for the perfective bhāra are RV. x. 94. 1; vi. 1. 10; vii. 14. 8; AV. ix. 3. 24; x. 8. 15; i. 15. 8: for the imperfective bibhāra, RV. x. 32. 9; vi. 53. 8; i. 39. 10; x. 69. 10; etc. etc.; AV. xii. 1. 15; i. 4. 1; ix. 4. 6; etc. etc. The stem bhār occurs only twice, and is also imperfective.

This important functional difference naturally suggests further investigation on the same line. Accordingly, all reduplicated pres.-vts in RV. have been looked through and compared with the other present-systems from the same root; but without any positive results. Examples are as follows: From root sac, present-stems śaiva, saca, saca, saca; no perceptible difference between them: examples, RV. ix. 84. 2; vii. 3. 2; x. 27. 19; i. 22. 1; vii. i. 4; i. 101. 3. From root cṝ, stems carCRT, cṝRT, cṝRT: in forty passages examined, no other difference than that of transitive and intransitive, which is pretty regularly (though not precisely) distributed between active and middle forms; examples of intransitive use are RV. iii. 61. 3; x. 117. 5; vii. 36. 38 (vṝRT: only case): of transitive, RV. x. 26. 8; vii. 36. 4. From roots gum and gṝ: no differentiation of meaning among all the different forms (the discussion of whose character, and distinction of present from perfect and aorist, is difficult, and would require too much space here). It is especially disappointing to us that no specialization of meaning appears in the stem gṝĉhā, no inchoative sense as in the Greek phaino. 'He.' So in the Homeric pañcat pṝbha, 'making long strides,' is seen an intensive or frequentative meaning of the
Proceedings at New York, October, 1882.

reduplicated form, which is wanting in Vedic jīgī. From the root ūrt, whose especially numerous present-stems were noticed above, the formations in the main show no differences of use: so, for example, ītār at RV. ii. 31. 2; and tārā at RV. i. 32. 14. But tīrā forms an exception; it is used only with prepositions, and has a causative sense. From the root hā, the various present-stems (jukā, hāva, hātā, hā, hāiva) are used with entire equivalence: examples are RV. i. 4. 1; vii. 26. 2; x 81. 7; i. 89. 3; 35. 1. Other roots discussed with the same result are mad-mand, vāc, muce, cec, āyu, bhī, hēr. From the root 2 yu, however, the "inchoative" present-stem yūcha has a distinct intransitive value, 'keep one's self away,' the other presents being transitive: compare RV. viii. 39. 2; 52. 7, with vi. 47. 13; v. 2. 5. The other roots making a reduplicated present are not even worth mentioning; and it must accordingly be confessed that, with the exception of the unique couplet bhīhar and bhāra, there is nothing traceable in the Vedic use of the reduplicated present which should tend to overthrow the current opinion to the effect that its functional differences, if they ever existed, have been wiped out.

In one present-stem evidently derived from the root ūrt, namely tārā, there is to be noted an occasional causative value: e.g. tārātarai [mā] nari duridāt (RV. vi. 50. 10), 'save me, ye men, from ill-hap.' Other examples are found at RV. i. 100. 5; vii. 20. 24; 74. 10. But there are also passages, as RV. vi. 15. 5, where tārā is equivalent with other stems from the same root. The same causative force, now, is very apparent in jārava from the root jṛ (e.g. RV. ii. 30. 5; vii. 104. 4; vii. 60. 1), while jiru and jiru are almost invariably intransitive (jiru is causative at i. 182. 3). And dhārā, apparently formed in a similar manner from a root dhr, and meaning 'damage,' may also be causative in value. A like tendency seems observable in stems of the type jiśa. This stem, as well as the more original jīna (which occurs only twice in RV.), is readily explainable as causative of jī, and signifying 'cause to prosper.' Among the other various stems of ji no functional difference is to be detected (as to the middle-passive jiṣa, see below). The stem iniā has a like causal force; and examples of the more primitive ini are used in the same manner: e.g. iv. 10. 7; x. 129. 1. On the other hand, jīva proves nothing: for while it is itself distinctly causally, the other stems coming from the root pī or plT are much the same, 'cause to swell' in the active, with additional reflexive value in the middle: for examples, active. see RV. i. 64. 6; iv. 16. 21; middle, see RV. i. 79. 3; 164. 28; iv. 27. 5. The same is the case with pris; the causal sense is shared by it with prā and prār: see RV. i. 174. 9; ii. 42. 1; ix. 7. 5; but intransitive uses also occur, as at RV. i. 35. 9; vi. 2. 6. The stem hinā, occurring only twice, has a value that may be understood as causal; but so also has hinā, in its numerous occurrences. And when we consider that the so-called root ḫi occurs in RV. almost only in these two present-systems, we shall be led to suspect that it is nothing more than a weak root-form of hā. The root dhīra of the grammarians corresponds to a stem dhīra of the Brāhmaṇas, and its meaning 'satisfy' may also be regarded as causal, and related to dhī, 'suck, drink,' as Ḫī to ḫā. In this connection, note also the so-called root mar and the ad present-stem of the root mr; both are causal (cf. A. V. v. 29. 11; vi. 142. 1); while mara is intransitive (e.g. RV. i. 191. 12; x. 86. 11).

We have thus found a number of su-presents having a more or less pronounced causal sense. The same, now, may be sought further in the stem suna. Under the roots su, 1 su, 2 su, Grassmann intimates that the three may be only one, but without going into details. If the original root meant something like 'bring to light, produce, set in motion,' we have these senses unimpaired in the stem su; the middle stem su, 'bring to light for one's self,' naturally signifies 'give birth to,' and suna with its causative force is 'cause to bring forth, press out.' It is unnecessary to refer to examples, as the three are separated in Grassmann's lexicon.

All attempts, however, at tracing a similar value in other su-stems appear to lead to no result. Among those roots under which search has proved in vain may be mentioned sēṣ, man, sā, ṭā, ṭīṇ, ṭī. We can only claim to have demonstrated the probability that a causal value once, or in certain cases, attached itself to the nasal classes.

The sēṣ- or ch-class is the most disappointing of all, in view of the peculiarly marked character of the present-sign, and the inchoative value which appears here
American Oriental Society:

and there to belong to it in the related languages. Two of the most important stems of the class, ṝ́ṣha and ṝ́ṣha, have been already disposed of, and any speciality of meaning has been found only for ṝ́ṣha. The stem ṝ́ṣha does also in a measure exhibit a peculiar function, which is not easy to characterize. Grassmann, while recognizing the original identity of 1 is and 2 is, explains ṝ́ṣha by 'set one's self in motion toward something;' while the other stems are explained upon the basis 'set in motion;' we have here, then, a reflexive or intransitive sense for ṝ́ṣha, comparable with the intransitive one of ṝ́ṣha. But this use of ṝ́ṣha is not universal (cf. RV. i. 80. 6), nor is it impossible to show points of contact with the presents of 1 is and 2 is (cf. RV. ii. 20. 5). Nor do the stems ṝ́ṣha, ṝ́ṣha, and ṝ́ṣh offer conditions favorable to the presumed inchoative value of the ok. The last two do indeed show some tendency to differentiation in meaning from the other stems of their respective roots, but not distinct enough to make it valuable in the consideration of more general questions.

In the ya-class (or div-class) is seen a marked tendency toward intransitive, reflexive, or even passive function (Whitney, Skt. Gr., § 762); and this is sometimes so clear as to furnish a distinct intransitive conjugation over against the transitive of the present-stems. So, from the root dŕṣ or dŕṣh, the stem dŕṣhya (e.g. RV. iii. 30. 15; viii. 24. 10; 80. 7), against dŕṣha (e.g. ii. 17. 5; vi. 67. 6; x. 101. 8). The intransitive use of rud́ṣhya with omu is too familiar to require illustration. And j́ṣhya (AV. j́ṣhya) is used along with and as equivalent to full passives: so at RV. ix. 55. 4; x. 152. 1; the same is likewise true of míṣhya. On the other hand, the cases in which ya-stems are not intransitive, and do not differ in sense from other present formations from the same root, are also common.

As regards the remaining conjugation-classes, enough material has been collected and examined—and to some extent exhibited above—to put beyond question the fact that there is nowhere any specialization of the use of a class, in any way that should help us to a conception of the original value of its class-sign.

A search for traces of dialectic use was also undertaken, and carried far enough to show that it would doubtless continue to be fruitless, so far as the present-stems are concerned. A number of prominent roots were made the basis of the investigation, and their present-stems numbered as found distributed among the books of the Rig-Veda, in order to see whether a given book employed a given stem, or more than one, with such predilection as might be presumed due to dialectic tendencies. But absolutely no such tendencies come to light. By way of example may be given the statement in detail for the root hú: it is a fair illustration of the state of affairs also in regard to the other roots:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>hú</th>
<th>juhú</th>
<th>kura</th>
<th>kura</th>
<th>kurya</th>
<th>johú</th>
<th>total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>30</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>34</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Val.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>118</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>353</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

It is easy to see that there is but one point here which has any significance as disturbing the equality of distribution of the present-systems: namely, that kurya has 29 out of its 42 occurrences in the 1st and 10th Books, in accordance with the generally recognized later character of these Books—kurya being the only present-stem that has survived in the later language.

Finally may be noticed the numerous cases in which two or more of these stems occur in the same hymn: kura and kurya are found in different verses of i. 21, 22, 36, 27, 102, 114, 117; ii. 12; iv. 39; vi. 26. 33; x. 17; kura and kura in different verses of i. 127; iii. 20; vi. 60; vii. 32, 56; viii. 1, 13, 22, 27, 32, 66; x. 150; kura and An in different verses of i. 106; vi. 46; vii. 30; kurya and An in different
verses of $x \cdot 112$; $\text{heya}$, $\text{hava}$, and $\text{hura}$ in different verses of i. 23; viii. 5, 26; 
$\text{heya}$, $\text{hura}$, $\text{ha}$ in different verses of v. 56. In the same verse are found $\text{heya}$ and $\text{hura}$ at ii. 12, 8; $\text{hava}$ and $\text{hura}$ at vii. 41, 1; x. 160, 5.

This paper, being unfinished at the end of the afternoon session, 
was taken up again and completed at the evening session.


In Greek poetry, light is the expression of life; but, in Latin poetry, light is 
converted into color. Especially is the poetry of Vergil marked by great variety 
and richness of color-effects. The word color, in its antique sense, as distinct from 
its modern scientific sense, denotes the cover, or surface, of things, distinguish-
able and separable from their substance. The word is used by Vergil in at least 
six different senses. To express high color, Vergil uses 27 terms, and to express 
blacks, grays, and white, which in Latin are often true color-terms, he uses 15 
terms more. Thus each term has to express a large number, 26 at least on the 
average, of closely related tints. Vergil uses the color-terms of the red-group 77 
times, and of the green-group 65 times. For the violet group he has no special 
term at all. Of the color-terms lying between red and green he makes 97 uses; 
and of color-terms lying between green and violet he makes 57 uses. Of the 
group lying outside of the spectrum, purples, whites, grays, and blacks, he makes 
304 uses.

All color-impressions consist of three elements: hue, luminosity, and purity of 
color. Vergil’s use of color-terms, like the painter’s use of pigments, does not 
express absolute hue, but hue as varied by luminosity and purity, and especially 
by contrast of color. Examined in this way, Vergil’s use of color-terms is always 
accurate, the result of close and loving observation.

To fix the exact meaning of a color-term is a problem of philology. To solve 
the problem, we must know: 1. the etymology of the word; 2. the physical 
standard of the color; 3. the extension of the term on both sides of the standard; 
4. the variation of the color in purity and luminosity; and 5. the variation of 
the color by contrast. Each color-term used by Vergil has been separately studied, 
so far as the material allows, by each of these five methods.

Color as conceived by Vergil differs from the diffusion of color in the real world 
in three ways. The colors that lie about the middle of the spectrum predominate 
over the colors of both ends; warm colors, including the purples, predominate 
over cold colors; and the more luminous predominate over the less luminous.

The Vergilian color-system is largely in advance of the Homeric, and almost up 
to the full measure of modern art. Red, red-yellow, yellow, green, green-blue, and 
blue are all distinctly recognized, and marked by distinct terms. Violet is absent; 
but there is clear evidence that, although Vergil had no distinct term for violet, 
he had the sense of the color itself.


In the British Museum are several copies of this cuneiform text, more or less 
complete, and numerous fragments of other copies. The inscription has three 
times been published in cuneiform characters: 1. in the Cuneiform Inscriptions of 
Western Asia, vol. iii., London, 1870; 2. in Mr. George Smith’s History of Asur-
banipal. London. 1871; 3. in the Cuneiform Inscriptions of Western Asia, vol. v., 
London. 1880. The first edition presents a large number of lacunas, although the 
text was partially restored from other cylinders and tablets containing the same 
narrative. The second edition is an attempt to present in chronological order the 
narrative of Assurbanipal’s history, as recorded in various cylinder inscriptions 
and on, tablets. While filling many of the lacunas of the first edition, it leaves 
many others which could not at the time be filled. The happy discovery of Mr. 
Hormuzd Rassam has added a new cylinder to the treasures of the British Museum, 
and Mr. Theophilus Pinches, who prepared this new copy for the 5th volume of 
W. A. I., has done a capital piece of work. Only two parts of lines are wanting 
in this long and beautiful text, the lacunas having been filled by Mr. Pinches from 
other cylinders.
Translations of the cylinder inscription have four times been published, all from the pen of Mr. George Smith: namely, in History of Assurbanipal, London, 1871; Records of the Past, vol. i., pp. 59–108, London, 1875; Assyrian Discoveries, pp. 319–316, London, 1875; Records of the Past, vol. ix., pp. 39–64, London, 1877 (the last only a reprint from the History of Assurbanipal after Mr. Smith's death). Sir H. C. Rawlinson and M. Jules Oppert are said to have translated parts of the Egyptian campaigns (Records of the Past, vol. i., p. 57). The great improvement of the last edition of the original over older editions entitles this important text to a new translation.

The course of the narrative in the cylinder text is well known. The inscription is a record of nine campaigns of the Assyrian monarch, two of them being directed against Egypt, one against Tyre, and one against Arabia. The whole is introduced by an account of the youth and accession of Assurbanipal, and closed by the narrative of his rebuilding the harem (bēt rīdāt) at Nineveh.

The present paper is only preparatory to a future one, whose object will be the discussion of some passages made clear by the new edition of the original, and of such others as have been inaccurately translated, or as present, either in idea or in mode of expression, parallels with Hebrew usage.

The expression sharru ša inaštu niškū, V. R. * li. 123, is rendered by Smith 'the king whom God has blessed art thou.' More correct would be the translation 'the king whom God knows (= foreknew) art thou.' Iddā, 'know' (= Heb. ידע), occurs often, but not, so far as I am aware, in the sense 'bless.' The sense 'know, foreknow' is not only etymologically better, but agrees well also with the opening passage of this inscription, where Assurbanipal represents himself as preordained by the gods to be the king of Assyria. The use of šarā is very rare in the singular, except where the name of the god follows, as šarā Asšur, šarā Naka, or in phrases where god and man are compared or contrasted, as tub沙tti šiš u šarru. 'clothing of god and of king.' IV. R. vii. 31 b. In our passage the word has a monothestic tone, which is seldom seen in writings of the date of Assurbanipal.

The passage šalamiššu ididdašu indásšarā pagaratu, 'his dead body they cast down, they tore in pieces his corpse.' V. R. iii. 8. 9, illustrates at once the parallelism so frequent in Assyrian writing, and the striking similarity of the Assyrian and the Hebrew vocabularies. Shalamia, accus. of šalamiššu, is a fem. noun from the verb šalimu, 'finish' (Heb. השלם), and signifies 'something which is finished, done, past,' hence 'dead body,' a use similar to that of א蜱ים, from א蜱, 'fall.' Pagaru, construct from pagaru, is synonymous with šalamiššu, and is the same word as Heb. רפה, while the Syriac pagā means 'body' in general, as well living as dead. Iddā, by assimilation from indā, is from the verb nādā, synonym of ădā, both of which the Hebrew presents in its ידה and ידה. Indásšarā = indaksšarā is represented in Hebrew by the single word ישור, 'a vulture,' so called because it tears its prey in pieces.

Among numerous parallels with Old Testament narrative may be mentioned the utter desolation of the fields of Elam, V. R. vi. 100 ff., parallel with 2 Kings iii. 25; the restoration of the goddess Nana to her sanctuary at Erech, V. R. vi. 107 ff., in some respects similar to the account of the restoration of the Ark from the land of the Philistines, 1 Sam. vi.; and the tragic death of Untanaddas, V. R. vii. 30 ff., parallel with the story of Saul's death, 1 Sam. xxxi. But the discussion of these and of other points is reserved for another paper.


Prof. Short made an oral communication in reference to matters connected with the Codex Vaticanus, or Codex B, of the Old and New Testaments. By the courtesy of the Librarian of the Vatican, he had himself, after some delay, been allowed to see the Codex in June, 1881, during a visit to Rome. He had exam-

* By V. R. is meant volume v. of the "Cuneiform Inscriptions of Western Asia." This method of citing has become quite general, is brief, and is also correct, inasmuch as Sir Henry Rawlinson is editor of the work.
Proceedings at New York, October, 1882.

ined it, as fully as the brief time permitted, written out a description, and prepared a fac-simile of a part of it. He gave an account of the publications made of the text: Cardinal Mai's edition was finally issued in 1857, and followed by a cheaper edition of the New Testament in octavo in 1859. In view of the unsatisfactory character of this publication, Tischendorf attempted to obtain permission to do the work over again. In the style of his Codex Sinaiticus, but was refused; the intimation being given him that the enterprise would be undertaken by Italian hands. He was suffered, however, to spend some three weeks of study on the MS., in the spring of 1866; and this enabled him in 1867 to put forth a quarto edition of the New Testament far superior to any that had preceded it. His title, which overstates his brief and hurried work, was: N. T. Vaticanum post Angelis Maiorumque imperfectos laborum ex tero codico editum etc. The project of Pius IX. has since been realized. The new edition, rivalling the imperial Codex Sinaiticus in magnificence, consists of six volumes, 4to, folio. The New Testament appeared in 1868, and was criticized severely by Tischendorf in his Appendix N. T. Vatican. 1869. He was replied to by the Roman editors, and made a violent and bitter rejoinder in a pamphlet in 1870. Along with the concluding volume (containing the Apparatus Criticus), published in 1881, was issued a brochure of 31 pages in small folio, giving a general account of the great work. Prof. Short had received a copy of this brochure from one of the collaborators of the edition; and he presented in detail to the Society, with blackboard illustrations, some of the points of difference demonstrated by it between the Codex and Tischendorf's edition of it, amounting to not less than seven for the first page of the Codex.

This was the last paper offered during Wednesday evening. On meeting again at the same place in the morning, Prof. I. H. Hall in the chair, the Society resumed the hearing of communications.

7. Rejoinder to the Counter-Criticism of M. de Harlez, by Prof. J. Luquiens, of Boston; communicated by the Corresponding Secretary.

The personal character of the following remarks finds its only excuse in the article lately published in the "Musaeum" by M. de Harlez, and reproduced in pamphlet form, under the title: Origine de l'Avesta, Système et Critique de M. Luquiens. Without wasting any expression of surprise or regret, I may say that M. de Harlez, having taken offense at my criticism of his recent work on the Avesta (see Proceedings for May, 1882), has chosen this way to manifest his indignation, and accuses me of self-contradiction, bad faith, and prevarication. These are very harsh words; but, in a somewhat obsolete dialect of Zend polemics, they mean simply that on some points—no, for instance, the value of his own writings—M. de Harlez's opinion and mine are at variance. That he holds to the old style of warfare is to me quite evident, from the singular qualification which he applies to his charges at the very outset: my guilt is hardly personal, it seems, not inborn with me; I am simply a victim of disreputable fellowship. Once even my labors were promising, gave expectancy of something better, but in a fatal moment (worse day!) I joined the d priori anti-traditional school, and forthwith adopted their "sad mania of perversion of others'" opinions. There is a further mitigation of the charges against me. M. de Harlez acknowledges, namely, that I borrowed from my ill-favored associates their procedure, but not their insulting language; but if I, though in evil company, have kept to the pristine fairness of my speech, why should M. de Harlez, still in the folds of unblemished orthodoxy, apply to my criticisms such opprobrious epithets? Is there a privilege of hard language connected with sound doctrine? I must regret, however, that since M. de Harlez is pleased to consider my guilt as the result of newly formed connections, he has not been at pains to specify the date of this evolution; my literary baggage is so slender as to make the task an easy one; in reality, of two essays which alone bear on the subject, the first, published in the New Englander in 1879, implied my belief in the high antiquity of the Avesta; and the second (Journal of Philology, Sept., 1881) outlined with unmistakable precision my attitude in regard to Avestan tradition. As these are the very issues
American Oriental Society:

between us, I must conclude either that my former essays were by no means so promising as my adversary kindly admits, or that my guilt began at the exact moment when my criticism reached his own writings.

Be this as it may, honesty forbids me to see any assignment of my faults in others' participation. M. de Harlez may not fully understand this, but I must disclaim belonging to any school in the sense he attaches to that word: I object, namely, to being shut in by so narrow a classification as would prevent me from carrying my sympathy or approval from one side to another over the field of Avestan studies. I will acknowledge a sort of sequence between the several positions which a scholar may hold in this study; one cannot well base the interpretation of the Avesta on linguistic comparison alone without admitting also a high antiquity of the Avesta; in this respect I gladly follow in the footsteps of the men whom M. de Harlez drives into a corner by themselves under the name of "a priori anti-traditional school." Yet I should feel wanting in catholicity if I failed to express my deep sympathy for the works of Windischmann, Spiegel, and others—a sympathy as sincere as if it rested on conformity of method. In their historical position, narrow as it seems to me in some respects, I see a greater insight into the religious value, more regard for the individuality, of Mazdaism, than in the point of view which makes of the Avesta a philological phenomenon chiefly interesting on the score of its affinity with the Vedas. For M. de Harlez himself, I have more than the fellow-feeling just mentioned; we both, though each in his own manner, exerted ourselves against the hasty spread of a mythical conception of the Avesta. If he ever ascribed my part in that contest to mere school feeling, he was mistaken; I had then and have to-day no other rule than my responsible and rational appreciation of the facts at hand; and, following this rule, I mind not being counted out of school by strict partisans on either side.

This unwillingness on M. de Harlez's part to admit any free exercise of judgment out of the rule of acknowledged schools is characteristic of the part of his Answer which refers to my opinion as to the age of the Avesta. He there reiterates the arguments of his Introduction, and comes to the conclusion that his plea is right in all points, and mine wrong throughout: so say contending lawyers in court; and yet the decision rests with the jury. I, for one, gladly leave the case with the reading public. If I open the argument anew, it is to remark that M. de Harlez, having thrust me of his own accord into a school of his own description, assumes to lay upon my shoulders the burden of all that has been advanced by the members of that school. Thus, for instance, I am made to adopt Haug's theory of a direct opposition between Gathas and Vedas. Now in my essay, "The Avesta and the Storm Myth," printed three years ago, I already expressed strong misgivings as to the plausibility of this view; and farther study has confirmed my doubts. I must then beg to say that "Vedism" is not necessarily identical with "Vedas:" the former means rather a stage in the religious and cosmogonic thought of the Vedic Aryans—a stage of which the Rig-Veda is indeed the highest utterance, but which must have existed in various forms, and with more or less definiteness, according as the localities were situated nearer to, or farther from, the religious centres; therefore, I felt bound not to be more definite than my convictions would allow, and located new-born Mazdaism "on ground distinctively Iranian and yet within reach of Vedism though it be one of its farthest ramifications"—which is far from holding the view that "the Gathas continually allude to the Vedas." Nor is there a contradiction between the belief just expressed and my subsequent admission that certain practices of later Mazdaism denote a Scythic influence. If this be a contradiction, not half my sin has been told; for I see in the Vendidad traces not only of Scythic, but also of Semitic notions; I so little exclude exotic influences from my general conception that I see in their absence or presence—i.e., in the more or less purity of the texts—the very criterion of the respective age of Avestan writings: a view which is not belied by my statement that "nothing in the Avesta suggests the proximity of any but kin or kith until we come to the very latest strata of Mazdaic writings." If it was so difficult to reproduce in their integrity my views, which when put in print hardly fill two pages, will not M. de Harlez, whose statements are disseminated over a large octavo and innumerable pages in paper thin, condemn the errors of the same nature which I am supposed to have committed?

Let us now examine M. de Harlez's charges of unfairness, or some characteristic
samples of them; for there is hardly a statement of mine that he does not resent as a personal injury.

In the first place, I wronged him grievously by ascribing to him the view that Mazdaism was the outcome of Semitic, and, more especially, of Jewish contact and influence. "No one has ever claimed," he says, "that Zoroastrianism had to a certainty borrowed from the Jews." My carelessness on this point is clearly inexplicable, for I have been imposing upon the good faith of my fellow-members, presenting as a serious belief of M. de Harlez that which was a mere hypothesis, a speculative by-play, as it were. But though I regret the time wasted in the consideration of what I was dull enough to take in earnest. I am glad that M. de Harlez, even at this late hour, qualifies his theory; for I much fear that I am not the only reader upon whom his statements left a wrong impression. My mistake, however, was not unnatural; when, in his Origines, M. de Harlez prefaced his elaborate argument with the striking dilemma that either the Jews or the Iranians have borrowed from each other. I candidly inferred that our writer, having to his satisfaction disproved the latter thesis, was bound to the converse proposition, even though he modestly asked his readers to draw their own inferences. But if "no one" ever defended the certainty of the contributions of Judaism and Semitism to the Avestan doctrine, will M. de Harlez tell us who wrote the pages cov. and cvi. of his Introduction, and among others the following passage: "We believe that we can affirm as indubitable . . . . . that the principles of this transformation, of this new creed (the Avesta), were taken from the Western neighbors of Iran, from Babylon and the Israelites."

In the preceding instance I merely "falsified" the facts; but there was in my criticism a part even less approvable: to wit, my characterization of M. de Harlez's interpretation; and surely, if it be wrong to criticize M. de Harlez's views, my remarks on his method were deeply dyed in guilt; for they alone, of all others, were to an extent personal. Not entirely so, however; for I hold the belief that no system of interpretation of the Avesta which rests upon the data of tradition can be so consistent with itself as not to desert occasionally its premises for the opposite ground of etymology and linguistic comparison, and that to this alloyage of disparate methods we owe most of the jar and checker-work of our versions. If these strictures were uttered in connection with M. de Harlez's work, it was because, as a very result of the step forward which I acknowledged in his personal efforts, the conflict of the dual methods is more marked. Nor is this general statement gainsaid by the declaration on p. 12 of his Answer that "the only good method is that which takes tradition into account, not blindly, but with discernment." If this means any thing, it is a claim on his part to follow alternately tradition, and comparison according to a law of his own, whether it is called "discernment" or discretion. The example I selected to prove my point proves precisely the reverse, says M. de Harlez; it may be so; I lay no claims to infallibility; but whether he is right in accusing me of bad faith will be best established by a short review of his pleas. I, namely, selected the word draona, and blamed the motley rendering it received in his version: 'bread' and 'sacrificial bread' in accordance with a Pārād custom, and 'offering' in accordance with his own discernment. Now, says M. de Harlez, no one ever did regard the draona of the Avesta as an equivalent of the modern (Pārād) darun. The "no one" so often quoted by M. de Harlez is a mysterious personage, who deals with very sweeping statements, and who is, in the nature of things, difficult to reach. But I dare say that "no one" is not acquainted with the fact; for M. de Harlez himself, in his note to Vd. v. 76, says very positively that the drauna, not darun, was a little round loaf of the size of a five franc piece. Again, he was so far from taking darun as the starting point of his rendering, that on the contrary he derived drauna, in his Handbook, from Sanskrit dravina, "good, gift, present," and regarded 'offering' as the principal sense. M. de Harlez, who forgets sometimes what is written in the very work he defends, will forgive me if I failed to remember what is said in his Handbook; yet, though it may seem strange to translate a word written in Media not earlier than the 6th century before our era in accordance with a word current among Indic Aryans at least four or five hundred years back of that date, we cannot but acknowledge this gratifying progress in Avestan methods. I must, however, suggest that an etymology is often a superfluity in the study-room of a "traditional" scholar; Spiegel also had one; he
on connected researches related to Sanskrit literature, but never claimed an exclusive understanding of the latter meaning of the word "sanskrit". Indeed, M. de Harlez asserts that out of the many Sanskrit words which underwent a change in meaning, those which have not undergone significant variation in meaning, appear to have no Sanskrit meaning at all. Nevertheless, I am not surprised, and only wonder how the exact Sanskrit words were used in their context. But I must say that from the few Sanskrit words that have undergone significant changes, it appears to me that it was not until the modern era that the modern meaning of "sanskrit" began to be established. The modern meaning of Sanskrit is that of a language and a culture, and not just a specific word.

On Eggeling's Translation of the Catapatha-Brahmana, by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

The writer begins with a general account of the work under examination. It is a part of the series "Sacred Books of the East," published under the editorial charge of M. Muller, and it is, in fact, ancient India it is concerned, the most legitimate and valuable member of that series. The latter is somewhat open to many objections. For one, it is in Sanskrit and for what it says in its present state. It is obvious that the work works which, like the Translations, have been revised and with the best interest of those with, like the law-books, are very welcome additions to learning and for those who would like to read them. It is also obvious for the present work under the title of "Sacred Books," or of those which, like the Brhadabindu, are of both, those who, and it does not include any partial or partial additions to the whole work. It is a version of the Rig-Veda in English from Muller's own, and it is evident that it was done by a man of learning, and this would be the case, in part, on account of the whole volume. There are in existence the more complete German translations, but neither of them is satisfactory, and both are far more inaccessible to English readers than are versions of some of the works included in the whole series, in its various departments. The English play-Veda begins by Wilson is so little in accordance with, and far behind the present state of Vedic scholarship, that it must be pronounced hardly better than worthless; and even Wilson's continuation seems to regard it as not worth completing; for he has suffered sixteen years to elapse since the last volume of it appeared.

No one will doubt the desirability of including at least one work of the Brahmana class among the published Sacred Books of India; we can only question whether it worth while to begin so vast a work as the Catapatha in a series already nearly full; for the volume now issued, of 450 octavo pages, gives not any more than a fifth part of the whole; and five such volumes would cost more than the original Sanskrit text. But perhaps a fragment of the Catapatha is better worth having than the whole of any other Brahmana; for it is certainly the most generally interesting, as well as the most extensive, of the works bearing the name. Even the well known animal- or Talavakara-Brahmana, if we include with it its Upanishad-Brahmana (of which the Kena-Upanishad is a
Proceedings at New York, October, 1882.

chapter), is somewhat smaller and much more tedious; the Aitareya-Brahma, already published, has only about a quarter as much matter; and none of the others is more comprehensive than this.

Parts of the Catapatha have been already translated: so the first chapter, by Weber, in the Journal of the German Oriental Society, vol. iv. (1850): this was the first specimen of the Brahma style rendered in a European language; then considerable passages of this, as of other Brahma's, by Muir, in his five volumes of Original Sanskrit Texts; and somewhat over a chapter (next following the content) of the volume now under discussion, on the ceremony of consecration for the Soma-sacrifice, by Dr. Lindner (Leipzig, 1878). Delbrück also, in his volumes of contributions to comparative syntax, gives numerous Brahma-extracts, taken especially from this text, and rendered with a care, and an appreciation of the niceties of style, which are not exceeded, if they are equalled, by any other scholar.

Eggeling's translation is made with competent knowledge, both of the Brahma style and of the details of the ceremonial with which it deals, and is worthy of high commendation. For some purposes, a closer adherence to the letter of the text, with its curiously broken and jointed clauses, would be desirable; but it is by no means easy to maintain this and make the version at all readable, and the author is not fairly to be blamed for following a different method. His notes are valuable, adding to the comprehension of the text, and especially interesting as giving occasional glimpses of the further inane intricacies of the ceremonial, passed unnoticed by the Brahma's, and in part perhaps unknown at its period.

It appears here and there as if Prof. Eggeling (unless he is careless in his citations) had a slightly different text before him from the published one. Considering the excellence and accuracy of the latter (quite wonderful for the time at which it appeared), and the improbability that another will be put forth for a long time to come, it is the obvious duty of any one undertaking a work like that before us to report with conscientious care every correction of an error, or substitution on manuscript authority of a better reading, which he finds occasion to make in Weber's text.

There are, of course, as necessarily in every such work, occasional oversights, due to haste and insufficient revision. The worst of these—rendering né 'jyré at I. ii. 5. 24 by 'washed their hands' (as if niniyré) instead of 'did not sacrifice,' against the plainest evidence of the accentuation and the context—he has doubtless himself long since noticed; it is one of those humana to which even an accurate worker is occasionally liable. Here and there an instance occurs of a phrase badly rendered in one place while it is correctly understood elsewhere: thus, for example, gait 'dána iyyhj jilyh at I. vi. 2. 1, 2 (compare II. iv. 4. 15); dvagáma rendered 'twice' at I. viii. 3. 14, but correctly 'a twofold reason' at ix. 1. 1: 3. 7. A number of cases of omission of a word or phrase or sentence might be pointed out (e.g. at I. vi. 3. 13; ix. 1. 27. II. i. 3. 1; 4. 22; ii. 1. 8; iii. 3. 18, 20; v. 1. 11; 2. 38); but none of them is of particular consequence. Numbers and persons are sometimes wrongly rendered (e.g. I. iii. 1. 3; v. 4. 12; ix. 1. 11. II. iii. 1. 14). More important is a not very infrequent mistranslation of the aorist: as a present (e.g. II. iv. 1. 11; 2. 11): as an imperfect (e.g. I. iv. 1. 39; viii. 3. 11, 17; ix. 1. 20; 3. 10, 12. II. vi. 1. 15); or, what is much worse, as an optative (e.g. I. vi. 3. 10, 11. II. i. 4. 19, 20): surely, the use of this tense is accurate and consistent enough in the Brahma to call for consistent treatment in a translation. Now and then, an erroneous rendering or division depends upon the neglect of a point of accent: instances are II. iii. 1. 11; iv. 3. 13; and especially II. ii. 2. 20, where Eggeling's complete mistranslation is corrected from Delbrück in a note at the end of the volume.

Examples of an objectionable or unhappy rendering of single words and phrases are for the most part too unimportant to give in detail. A very common instance is the translation of kapála by 'potsherd' (perhaps after Haug): or does Prof. Eggeling believe that the Hindu offerings were actually made on fragments of broken pottery? 'Equipment' for sabhára (II. i. 1. 1 etc.) is so ill-suited that the translator is not able always himself to adhere to it.

It is also a matter of course that any one going over the translator's work after him will find now and then a passage which appears to have been wrongly apprehended—as, indeed, there are passages of difficult and doubtful interpreta-
tion, in regard to which the opinions of scholars may be expected to be at variance. A few cases are cited here. The obvious meaning of the last sentence in I, iii. 1. 22 is: ‘One and the same [everywhere], forsooth, is the significance of cleansing: he just makes it thus sacrificially pure.’ The passage I, vi. 1. 4 is rather to be rendered: ‘That, now, was an offense to the gods; they said: “verily, for less than this, enmity begins hostilities against enemy; how much more, for what is on such a scale! Contribute how this may be otherwise than thus.”’ There is much to object to in the translation of I, vi. 2. 26; the accent of the first āpūdī is neglected (it means ‘whichever two in each several case he gains by means of the two butter-portions’); ahorātē and ardhahārās are left out; and the subjunctive asat is turned into an aorist. A little later, at 33, anupalaphitān signifies ‘striking in another direction;’ that is, one whose back is turned toward his attacker can make no effective resistance, because, if he deals a blow, it is in another direction than at his assailant. The last half of I, vii. 2. 8 should read: ‘Now whenever the metres gratified the gods, then the gods gratified the metres; now then it has been previous to this that the metres, harnessed, have borne the sacrifice to the gods, have gratified the gods’—and hence he now proceeds on behalf of the gods to gratify the metres. The asserted reference to forbidden degrees of kindred at I, viii. 3. 6 is certainly a pure figment of the commentator. In I, ix. 2. 27, the words yāatra-yātra ‘śāṁ cāraṇāṁ kādā dūṣu are wholly misunderstood; they mean ‘(them he thus in due form dismisses) about their several businesses.’ At II, ii. 3. 3, as everywhere else where it occurs, the translator appears to misunderstand the particle ēd, and his version is both an inaccurate and a tame rendering of the colloquially lively original: ‘ ‘Here we come again,’ said the gods; and lo! Agni out of sight!’ At II, iii. 2. 3, Asant Pāśa (‘the non-existent dusty one’) is not the place where they throw the ashes, but the ashes themselves. In II, iv. 2. 1–3, the assignments of gifts are unacceptably rendered; they are as follows: to the gods, ‘be the sacrifice your food; yours be immortality, yours might, and the sun your light;’ to the Fathers, ‘be your eating month by month; be the funeral-oblation (svadā) yours, yours thought-swiftness, and the moon your light;’ to men, ‘be your eating at evening and at morning; be progeny yours, and death yours, and the fire your light.’ At II, iv. 3. 13, attention to the accent of pṛjēta would have saved the translator his difficulty with the particle eṣā: ‘if he have [already] sacrificed, or if he be sacrificing with the new- and full-moon offerings, then let him sacrifice with this one.’

The method of transliteration pursued in this, as in the other volumes of the series of Sacred Books, is highly unacceptable; it is the general editor’s own “Missionary Alphabet,” a mixture, too ugly to be tolerated, of roman and italic letters and small capitals in the same word. The original device was, to be sure, an ingenious one, and the alphabet has its own proper sphere of usefulness—namely, where the resources of a well-furnished printing-office are wanting, and one must accept thankfully the best means of distinction that are available. But it was certainly a grave error of judgment on Müller’s part to impose its use upon the Clarendon press, and in these handsome and costly volumes.

This closing the list of communications, the Society passed a vote of thanks to the authorities of Columbia College for kindly allowing it the use of the room it had been occupying, and adjourned, to meet again in Boston, on the 23d of May, 1888.

* A fuller exhibition of them, as well as of the other points criticized by the writer, will be found in his paper as published in Gildersleeve’s American Journal of Philology, No. 12.
The Society met, as usual, in the Library of the American Academy, at 10 o'clock A.M. In the absence of the President and of all the Vice-Presidents, the chair was taken by the senior Director present, Prof. Peabody of Cambridge, and later by Dr. Ward of New York.

After the settlement of the order of business and reading of minutes of the last meeting, the reports as to the transactions of the year 1882–3 were offered.

The Treasurer's summary of accounts was as follows:

**RECEIPTS.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Balance on hand, May 24th, 1882</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Annual assessments paid in</td>
<td>$575.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Life Membership</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sale of the Journal</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interest on deposit in Savings Bank</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total receipts of the year</strong></td>
<td>$308.25</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**EXPENDITURES.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Printing of Proceedings</td>
<td>$91.60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Expenses of Library and Correspondence</td>
<td>21.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total expenditures of the year</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Balance on hand, May 2d, 1883</strong></td>
<td>$1,097.07</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The amount of the Bradley type-fund is now $918.44.

The Librarian reported the accessions to the Library to amount to 30 whole volumes, 91 parts of volumes, and 40 pamphlets. Five volumes of Pali MSS. were donated by Rev. S. C. George. The present number of titles is, of printed books, 4218; of manuscripts, 151.

The Committee of Publication announced that the second half of Vol. xi. of the Journal was not yet in the hands of the printer; they hoped to be able to report something more definite in regard to its prospects at the next meeting.

The Directors gave notice that they had appointed the autumn meeting to be held this year in New Haven, and on October 24th, unless the Committee of Arrangements (the Corresponding Secretary and Treasurer) should see good reason, as the time approached, for changing the day. Further, they had reappointed the Committee of Publication of last year. For election to membership
American Oriental Society:

of the Society, they proposed and recommended the following persons:

As Honorary Member—
Prof. A. F. Stenzler, of Breslau.

As Corporate Members—
Miss Eva Channing, of Jamaica Plain, Mass.;
Prof. S. F. Duke, of Bath, Me.;
Prof. L. H. Elwell, of Amherst, Mass.;
Mr. A. L. Frothingham, Jr., of Baltimore, Md.;
Mr. R. L. Goodrich, of Little Rock, Ark.;
Prof. T. B. Lindsay, of Boston;
Prof. A. B. Nicholson, of Kingston, Ont.;
Mr. E. P. Vining, of Omaha, Neb.

The persons thus nominated were balloted for, and declared duly elected.

The choice of officers for the ensuing year being next in order, a Nominating Committee of three, appointed by the chairman, proposed the re-election of the officers of last year, without exception, and their proposal was ratified by the meeting. *

The chairman, Prof. Peabody, read the list of members deceased during the year, and called upon the members present to pay a tribute of respect to their memory. The names communicated were,

the Honorary Member,
Mr. Arthur C. Burnell, of England;

of Corresponding Members,
Prof. C. A. Holmboe, of Christiania, Norway;
Rev. W. G. Schaufler, of New York;

of Corporate Members,
Mr. G. A. Perdicaris, of Trenton, N. J.;
Dr. T. T. Van der Hoeven, of San Antonio, Tex.

In response, the Corresponding Secretary and others gave some account of the character and works of each of the persons named. The great and painful loss, the severest of the year, sustained by Oriental studies in the untimely death of Dr. Burnell, cut off last October in the flower of his age, was especially dwelt upon, and his great services were briefly set forth. Mr. Dickerman described a visit made by him to the aged missionary, Dr. Schaufler, some years ago, at his home near Constantinople, and dwelt at some length upon his life. A German by birth and a musical-instrument maker by original profession, he had early entered the American mission

* For convenience, the names are repeated here: President, Prof. S. Wells Williams of New Haven; Vice-President, Dr. N. G. Clark of Boston, Dr. Peter Parker of Washington, Pres. T. D. Woolsey of New Haven; Recording Secretary, Prof. C. H. Toy of Cambridge; Corresponding Secretary, Prof. W. D. Whitney of New Haven; Secretary of the Classical Section, Prof. W. W. Goodwin of Cambridge; Treasurer and Librarian, Mr. A. Van Name of New Haven; Director, Mr. A. I. Copley, Prof. C. Short, and Dr. W. H. Ward of New York; Prof. C. R. Lanman, A. P. Peabody, and J. H. Thayer, of Cambridge; and Prof. I. H. Hall of Philadelphia.
service, and done notable work, as preacher and as translator of the Bible into Turkish. He had a remarkable mastery of many languages. Mr. Perdicaris was a man of Greek birth and education, who, after fleeing to this country from oppression at home, held for a time a professorship in Harvard College, but afterwards engaged in extensive business enterprises in the Southern States, and for many years past resided at Trenton, N. J. He died at Tangiers in Africa. Dr. Van der Hoeven was a Netherlander, educated at home as a physician, but long a resident in this country, at San Antonio in Texas, to which place he resorted on account of feeble health. He did not practice his profession, but gave himself to study, for the gratification of his literary tastes, and in order to assist in the education of his family. He was a man of wide and thorough learning and accomplishments, and of rare enterprise. He took up some years ago, at an already advanced age, the study of Sanskrit, on account of its value as an aid to his other linguistic studies, and made himself a well-read scholar. His interest in this language brought him into relations to the Society, with whose Corresponding Secretary he maintained for some years a remarkable intercourse by letter. He is not known to have left any memorials of his scholarship.

The correspondence of the half-year was presented, and some parts of it were read.

Mr. W. W. Rockhill writes from Montreux in Switzerland, enclosing a rubbing of a coin with a Neu-chih inscription, from Chiuah. Although the character is at present undeciphered, every document containing it is of value as a contribution to its possible interpretation. Referring to a translation from Tibetan of the Udānavarga, recently published by him as one of Trübner's Oriental Series, he says:

"If I am able to call the attention of students to this rich field of Buddhist learning, I have attained one of the objects I had in view in translating this work. Students of Buddhism have been too prone to search for their materials exclusively in Pāli records; whereas I consider it beyond doubt that nearly every one of the southern texts may be found in the Tibetan or Chinese canons."

He sends further a paper on two Sūtras, for presentation at this meeting (see below).

Dr. G. L. Ditson writes from Paris Oct. 31st, 1882:

"It affords me pleasure to state that the Abbé Gruel has started here an Oriental Society, called the Institut Oriental. He has had donated to him in the south a large estate, where he is to receive and educate persons from the Orient who shall come to learn something of our arts, sciences, religions, etc., respecting the religious belief of every one, 'as is stated in his circular. He has also received many other contributions. He is highly recommended by many eminent persons, and has letters of approval from the patriarch of Cilicia, the minister resident at Tunis, the ex-Khedive of Egypt, and others. His address is 33 rue de Sévres."

Dr. Ditson solicits contributions of any works or objects likely to be of value in the collections of such an institution, and is confident that the Society, and its members individually, will take an interest in the enterprise.

The following communications were presented at the meeting:
1. On the Greek Inscription found by Dr. S. Merrill at Gerash, by Prof. T. O. Paine, of Elmwood, Mass.

Prof. Paine exhibited his fac-simile of this inscription (published by Prof. F. D. Allen in Gildersleeve's American Journal of Philology, iii. 206-7), and detailed the history of its decipherment. It had been for the first time made out nearly in its entirety, and the general sense gathered, by himself, Dr. Merrill having made over to him his whole material for it during some weeks; he had read all but 18 out of its 267 letters. His fac-simile was placed in the hands of Pres. Woolsey, who recognized at once the character of the inscription as in elegiac couplets, and made certain further restorations; others were added by Prof. Packard. The papers were then passed over to Prof. Allen, who made further amendments, and published the result, with the fac-simile. Prof. Paine disagreed with the last-mentioned scholar in regard to sundry points, as follows. There is no need of bracketing the \( v \) of \( \varepsilon \sigma\theta\varepsilon \) in line 1. the \( \Upsilon \) having been clearly legible in March, 1881, in the squeeze. The stone-cutter omitted the cross-line of an \( \Lambda \) in each of l. 7, 10, 15, except granting the identity of these Prof. A. L. in line 11, two. The \( \Delta \) have its hook closed in the inscription, but is always open below. The final \( \Delta \) of \( \delta\mu\alpha\alpha \) at the end of line 9, is legible. At the end of l. 10 is to be read not \( \Gamma\theta\rho\alpha\gamma\varsigma \), but rather \( \iota\rho\alpha\gamma\varsigma \); the stone has \( \varepsilon \varepsilon\Pi\varepsilon\varepsilon \); and there is no trace of following \( \varepsilon \zeta \), either in the squeeze or the field-copy, nor any room for those letters, even in an abbreviated form or reduced size; the letterer cut the related \( \varepsilon \) instead of \( \varepsilon \) in \( \varepsilon \zeta \). Besides, it is highly improbable that the poet would say \( \gamma \) but she gained a portion of the land of Gerash "Antoch"—as if we should say \( \gamma \) she was buried in the land of Shawmut Boston." The name Gerash, then, is not mentioned in the inscription. Also \( \mu\nu \), for \( \mu\nu \), in l. 12, is wrong. Prof. Allen throws doubt on the \( \H \) by dotting its cross bar; but this was clearly seen on the stone by Dr. Merrill, and in the squeeze by Dr. Paine; and the spacing is also different from what an \( \varepsilon \) would require.

Dr. Paine pointed out the parallelisms between the two halves of the inscription. He also traced the difficulties of the letterer, who began with characters upon too large a scale, 1.7 inches long, but reduced them gradually; and from l. 9 onward made them only 1.26 inches. The first four lines average only 13 letters to the line, the next four average 16.4, the next two 19, and the next has 20. In the first four lines, he lost three opportunities of joining letters, making one stroke count as part of two letters; he did not mean to lose another; and he in fact let slip only one, in l. 12. The whole inscription, measured from the squeeze, is 33 by 12.7 inches.

2. On the Site of Pithom (Exodus i.11), by Rev. L. Dickerman, of Boston.

Pithom means 'the abode of Tum,' the god of the setting sun, as Ra was of the rising. It was the name of one of the temple-cities, or store-cities, built by the Hebrews for Pharaoh. "They built treasure-cities... Pithom and Ramses" (Exodus i.11); the Coptic version adds On, i.e. Heliopolis. All agree that these cities were in the land of Goshen, on the Delta, east of the Tanitic branch of the Nile. The design of the paper is to give a review of opinions as to the site of Pithom.

Josephus (Ant. ii. 7) says that Joseph met Jacob at Heliopolis. But the Hebrew text says, in Goshen (Genesis xlv. 28). The LXX. translate: 'And Judah he sent in advance to Joseph, in order that he might meet him in the city of Herop, in the land of Ramses.' The Coptic version substitutes Pithom for the city of Herop. From granting the identity of Pithom and Heliopolis, which perhaps the Coptic scholars assumed, the site of each is still an open question. On the authority of different interpretations of Herodotus ii.158, Cary and Wilkinson place Patumes, possibly the ancient Pithom, near Bubastis, at the west end of the canal, Stein places it somewhat on the line of the canal, and Wesseling at its entrance into the Red Sea—a difference of 37 m. p. The itinerary of Antoninus appears to agree with Wesseling. Did then the authors of the Coptic version detect the blunder of the LXX., read Herodotus as Wesseling does, regard the Patumes of Herodotus, the Thoon of Antoninus, and the Pithom of Ex. i. 11 as identical, and all at Lake
Timesch on the extreme eastern boundary of Egypt, whither Joseph would naturally go to meet his father? It would seem so. But this identity is not proved, and modern scholars have been much at variance in regard to it.

Chalass (Jehuiyes Egyptiæ, iii. 154) identified Pithom with Tel-al-Maskhuta, about 6 m. west of Ismailia, in the valley of Wady Tumeilat, and near or on the fresh-water canal of Ramesses; but afterwards ("Academy," Apr. 24, 1880) gave up this opinion in favor of that of Brugsch, fixing the locality 30 m. further north. He also suggested the identity of Pithom and the Etham of Ex. xiii. 20.

The views of Richter, endorsed by Unruh and Schleiden, have been since advocated by Brugsch with profound erudition and admirable freedom from prejudice. Brugsch finds on both sides of the Tanitic branch a region called in the Egyptian texts the Sethroitic nome. Pithom, identical with Heracleopolis Parva, as proved by the texts, was the chief city of the nome. He puts it at the centre of the nome, 22 miles east of Zoa-Tanis. The latter great city itself, whence Thothmes III. set out to invade Canaan, and into which Ramesses II. made his triumphal entry, was, according to the same scholar, no other than the Ramesses of Ex. i. 11, and the point of departure of the Hebrews in their exodus (Num. xxxviii. 5). Brugsch's arguments in support of this opinion were given in brief summary, also the opinions of Hengstenberg, Ewald, and the scholars accompanying the French Expedition. After all, in a note in the second edition of his "Egypt under the Pharaohs" (ii. 422), Brugsch admits that he has some doubts as to the site of Pithom.

In the "Academy" for Apr. 24th, 1880, Miss Amelia B. Edwards has a carefully prepared article, in which it is argued that the Ramesses and Pithom of Ex. i. 11, necessarily near each other, were both situated in the Wady Tumeilat, at Tel-el-Maskhuta. The principal evidence given for this theory is that derived from her interpretation of the Anastasi papyrus III., of the British Museum. In this papyrus, Panehes speaks of a Pa-Ramases, as a port at which ships discharged many kinds of rare delicacies, including fish from the Piharta (i.e. Euphrates), and shows it to have been in the vicinity of various lakes, one of which "furnished nitre." It was also adjacent to the Shet Hor, or sacred pool of Horus—a body of water which is also mentioned in an inscription at Karnak. The Karnak text speaks of a canal at the north of this lake. It is claimed by Miss Edwards: 1st, that it cannot be true that ships could bring fish to Zoa-Tanis-Ramesses from the Euphrates; 2d, that no lake "furnishing nitre" can be found in that locality; 3d, that the sacred pool of Horus is not there; and 4th, that no canal ever ran north of it in the field of Zoa; but that, on the other hand, all these conditions are fulfilled in the valley of Tumeilat, at Tel-el-Maskhuta. The canal begun by Seti I., and completed by Ramasses II., did run north of Shet Hor to the Bitter Lakes, where nitre was found, and thence to Suez; so communicating with the Red Sea, the Persian Gulf, and the mouths of the Euphrates. Hence Ramesses, and therefore Pithom too, were not on Lake Menzaleh, but in the valley of Tumeilat. She also suggests that the whole valley of Tumeilat was sacred to Tum, and that possibly its modern name is a commemoration of that fact—not an improbable suggestion.

Just at this point in the search for the ancient Pithom, a new Society is formed in London, called the Egypt Exploration Fund, with Reginald Stuart Poole as honorary secretary, Miss Edwards as his assistant, and Edouard Naville of Geneva, who has distinguished himself by scholarly investigations in Egyptology, as the explorer. Certainly no better names than these could be found. Under the direction of M. Naville, excavations were begun at Tel-el-Maskhuta in February last. On the 13th he writes to Mr. Poole: "Tel-el-Maskhuta is the Pithom of Ex. i. 11. I thought so before; now I know it." A week later he writes: "It was only a poor fragment of a limestone statue that definitely settled the question." Now this poor but wonderful fragment of limestone is the statue of a priest, bearing the following inscription: "The chief of the store-house of the temple of Tum of Theku (or Thuku)." This Thuku, it is claimed, is Succoth; for Dr. Brugsch says that \( \theta = s \). So that the discovery, it is claimed, not only discloses the site of Pithom, but that of Succoth, the first camping place of the Israelites in their flight from Egypt. Therefore Ramesses, from which they started (see Ex. xii. 37; Num. xxxiv. 5), must be found not more than a day's march from there, north or west. Moreover M. Naville has found at the mound a Roman millarium, which indicates
the distance from Clysmus to Kro (presumably the Hero of the Itinerary of Antoninus, and the more modern Heroopolis) as 68 m. p., just as Antoninus says. Therefore Pithom and Heropolis are one. Thus M. Naville is supported perhaps by the blunder of the Septuagint as compared with the Coptic version, certainly by D'Anville and Larcher of the French Expedition, by Henrici and Krael, and by the Wesseling translation of Herodotus. This is no mean support. Lapis says this is not Pithom but Ramses (Herzog. Encyc. s. v. Aegypten).

Mr. Poole, delighted with this discovery, abandons the theory which he elaborately set forth so recently as the beginning of this year, in his "Cities of Egypt," article "Zoa;" and Ebers, Pierret, and Maspero hasten to accept likewise the conclusions of M. Naville. Yet several questions force themselves on our consideration:

1. Where, within a single day's march from Tel-el-Maskhuta, north or west, or in any other direction, are we to look for the great city of Ramses, from which the Hebrews commenced their exodus? If they started from where the greatest number dwelt, as would seem most natural, such was the city of Zoa-Tuns, with its immense and magnificent ruins. This city was called Ramses. Where are the ruins indicating the existence of another city of the same name, within 15 miles of the newly-discovered Pithom-Succoth? 2. The Hebrews went into the desert laden with spoil which they had borrowed from their neighbors. This would be possible, if they started from such a wealthy city as Zoa-Ramses. Where was the city in the valley of Tumeiat in which it was possible to borrow gold enough to make a molten calf? 3. If the buildings at Tel-el-Maskhuta were erected by Hebrews, how happens it that the bricks there, still bearing the cartouche of Ramses II., are wholly without straw, as fully testified by Dr. Schweinfurth? For the Hebrews were obliged to put straw in their bricks (Ex. v. 7-12). 4. Why has neither Antoninus nor Strabo nor any other traveler found in this valley a city called Ramses, or a city called Succoth, while now the locality is fixed only by a poor fragment of a limestone priest? 5. Many scholars, down to the most recent times, have doubted whether Succoth, 'a place of tents,' was the name of any definite locality. We are now told that it means a real place, where much grain of the valley was stored and guarded, with a fort and soldiers. Was it not a strange place for the flying Hebrews to spend their first night in, under the missiles of a hostile garrison? 6. According to Strabo, the Sethroite nome, of which Pithom is the admitted capital, was along one of the two lakes on the left of the great stream above Pelusium (Bohme's ed. of Strabo, iii. 243). Did Strabo know where this nome was? 7. If Ramses and Pithom were in the valley of Tumeiat, the sufferings of the Hebrews, and the wonders performed in their behalf, were there. But Psalm lxxviii. 12. 43 says the wonders were performed "in the field of Zoa." Did the Psalmist know? 8. Granting that the fragment of a limestone statue belonged to a priest of Tum, and that this Pithom temple was Succoth, how does this prove that the place where it was found was Pithom-Succoth, that the priest never lived anywhere but here, or that his statue had never been carried from one place to another? The obelisk in New York has been twice removed.

Mr. Pickerman pointed out in conclusion that his paper was not written in the interests of any theory as to the route of the exodus. But the facts seem to leave us a reasonable doubt whether the site of Pithom has yet been discovered.

3. On the Japanese Nigori of Composition, by Mr. B. S. Lyman, of Northampton, Mass.

The most common phonetic change found in Japanese, Mr. Lyman said, is that of the nigori at the beginning of the second part of compound words: that is, the change of the initial from surd to sonant. The word nigori means 'turbid,' the Japanese regarding a sonant as merely a modification of the corresponding surd. They even hold that all the sonants in the language are derived from surds; and there are circumstances which give a certain support to this view. The change of nigori is not merely euphonic and to be made or not at will, but has to do with the meaning also, and is obligatory.

The rule is, that the second part of a compound takes the nigori: i.e. its initial, if ch, f, h, k, s, sh, or t, is changed to the corresponding sonant. But the rule does
not apply. 1. when $b$, $d$, $g$, $j$, $p$, or $s$ already occurs anywhere in the second part of the compound; 2. when the second part is a Chinese word; or 3. when the word (though given by Hepburn as a compound) is really made up of words in regular grammatical construction, without elision—such as juxtaposed verbal forms, Chinese words followed by verbal forms denoting doing or action (ski, sura, and the like), or words connected by $mo$ or followed by $to$ or $te$ or any of the syllables used as terminations of verbal forms; and 4. there are 1002 other cases where the $nigori$ is not taken, against over 2200 where it is taken (ono in three). Full lists of the words had in view in these rules and exceptions were presented with the paper; they are based on a review of all the words in Hepburn's dictionary, and some hundreds more, or about 23,000 words in all.

If the complete lists of compounds with the $nigori$ and without it are carefully examined, it will be found that the change is not made when the first part indicates source or cause, possession, superiority, or pervasion or inclusion of the second part—in short, domination over it as a subordinate thing; and these are the qualities possessed in English by a substantive following the word of, as compared with one that precedes. But when those qualities are rather possessed by the second part of the compound, of which the first part indicates a subordinate or partial or occasional characteristic, the $nigori$ is taken.

It is clear that the $nigori$ arises from the disappearance of a sonant consonant—almost always an $n$, and generally the word $no$, 'of,' but sometimes $ni$, 'in, to,' sometimes the negative $n$, and sometimes other sonants or syllables, as $de$, 'at' or 'with.' It can be hence understood why the sound $n$ is so often heard in Japanese before a dental $nigori$, and $m$ before a labial one, and still often $ng$ instead of simple $n$. The significance of such sounds is a strong argument for specially marking them in any system of transliteration: for writing, say, $Na$ wasaki, in the time-honored European way, instead of $Nyuousaki$.

The rule of $nigori$ in composition helps much toward tracing the derivation and meaning of many Japanese words. For example, $nigori$ itself, apparently from $ni-nu$, 'resembling,' and $koro$, 'black,' $hidari$, 'left hand,' is $ki no de aru$, 'direction of the sunrise,' as $nigi$ (in the country often $nigiri$), 'right,' is $mi no kiri$, 'the direction of the cutting off of sight.' It is interesting to see that these words of direction come from the ordinary and favorite southern outlook of houses in that climate.

Mr. Lyman closed with calling attention to the general interest and importance of grammatical investigations of this kind, which are too much neglected, because scholars are so much taken up with translation and interpretation.


Restricting the term "Orientals" to the people of the western half of Asia, their prominent traits were considered, and the following conclusions were arrived at, and confirmed by various evidences: 1. Their traits are those of youth and immaturity. 2. Hence the religion suited to them must be elementary and chiefly preceptive; and their government must be arbitrary. 3. Hence Islam and the Koran are better for them than Christianity and the gospel of freedom; and the example of Christian life is the only way of reaching them and doing them good. 4. As the Koran is derived from the two Testaments, Moslems should be considered as a sect of elementary Christians, unitarians, early "protestants" against three-Godism and the idolatries both of the Christian church and of heathendom, from which they have kept western Asia in great measure free now for a thousand years. 5. Mohammed professed to and actually did restore the religion of Abraham, the "Syrian nomad." (Deut.)—i.e., a nomadic religion. 6. For nomadism has always been and still is the prevailing characteristic of Moslem countries. 7. The character of nomadism, then came under inquiry; and the definition of this "wild-ass man" of tien. xvi. 12 was adopted from a theologian of the last century. 8. If, therefore, we have ourselves arrived at a more advanced stage of civilization—say humanity's age of adolescence—we should not as Christian nations crook around the supposed curse of Islam, waiting for our share of the carnage, but should generously acknowledge fellowship with what is good in the Orientals—should treat them as an older brother treats a younger in a lower stage of education.
5. On the Jāmīniya- or Talavakāra-Brāhmaṇa, by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

During the past year and a half, I have spent no small share of my time upon the Jāmīniya-Brāhmaṇa, and I desire to take this opportunity to give some account of my dealings with it.

It was soon after the lamented Burnell first announced his discovery and acquisition of this important text that, in 1879, I wrote him, begging to have made for me a copy of it, that I might excerpt and use what grammatical material of value it should be found to contain, for the benefit of a possible second edition of my Sanskrit grammar; and I pledged myself not to use it for any other purpose without his express permission. With his usual kindness, he at once promised to have the desired copy made, in derandgipti characters. Soon after, however, as all students of India know, his health broke down, and he was obliged to return to Europe, first temporarily, and then forever. When it was settled that he could not go back, he wrote me that he had not been able to arrange for making the promised copy, but would send me instead his own Grantham texts; and they in due time came into my hands, toward the end of 1881. There was a continuous text of the whole Brāhmaṇa proper, a copy of the Upanishad-Brāhmaṇa with the variants of a second MS., and then a second copy of perhaps a quarter of the Brāhmaṇa text, with the collation of yet another MS. of the first third of this quarter. Never having learned the Grantham character, being unwilling to risk the valuable MSS. again across the ocean untranscribed, and also desirous to retain the text within reach of American scholars, I concluded to make for myself a transliterated copy, which should go finally into the library of the Oriental Society; and that has been accomplished, with the kind and liberal aid of several other members of the Society, who took off my hands about half the task of copying, and to whom mine and the Society’s thanks are due for the service—they are Messrs. Avery, Hopkins, Bloomfield, and Perry; (Miss Channing also wrote off a comment by Čankara on the Kena-Upanishad, found at the end of one of the volumes). I, finally, added the collation of the second and third texts of the part of the Brāhmaṇa above specified.

In acknowledging the receipt of the MSS., I had renewed my promise to Burnell to make no use of the material belonging to him save such as should be specifically authorized by him. He did not, however, in his answer to this, any more than to my previous letter, make any reference to this pledge, or express acceptance of it; and from a notice which he sent to the London “Academy” (of Dec. 31, 1881, No. 504, p. 496), to the effect that the MSS. had safely reached his hands, and that I, “he hopes, will be able to extract something of value from it,” I infer that he rather regarded himself as having turned over the whole matter to me, to use as I should please. But this I did not feel at liberty to assume; and I wrote him again last summer to ask whether he would allow also the lexical material to be excerpted for the new Petersburg lexicon; and he had not yet answered me at the time of his death.

I give these details, because the statement has been repeatedly made (even in the last Secretary’s report to the Asiatic Society at London), that I was going to edit the text of the Brāhmaṇa. Even if I had not my hands already entirely full for some years to come, or felt otherwise prepared for undertaking such a task, the material for a text is as yet quite insufficient, except possibly for some part of the first book. The manuscripts are all quite incorrect, full of false readings of every kind and degree, and of houses longer or shorter; it would hardly be worth any one’s while even to try to patch up a conjecturally amended text, until time and search should have shown that absolutely no new MSS. were to be found in India. I have never planned to do more myself than extract the grammatical material; but, being desirous to have whatever is valuable in other ways also as soon as possible worked up. I have, after failing to find in this country any scholar with leisure and disposition to undertake the task, proposed to pass the transliterated copy for the present over to Professor Weber at Berlin, as of all living scholars the one best qualified to deal with it; and a part of it is already in his hands. A very brief general characterization, therefore, is all that will be attempted here.

The Jāmīniya is on the whole a dull and uninteresting work, as compared
with the others of its class. A most unreasonable share of its immense mass is taken up with telling on what occasion some being "saw" a particular sāman, and "praised with it," thereby attaining certain desired ends, which may be attained by others that will follow his example; and the pseudo-legends thus reported or fabricated average of a degree of flatness and artificiality quite below the ordinary. Of course, there are extensive passages of a different character; and also some of the stock legendary material of the Brāhmaṇa period appears here in a new setting, or a different version, or both. Decidedly the most interesting case of the latter kind, so far as I have observed, is the passage which, with a true insight, Burnell himself selected and published in 1875 as a specimen of his new Brāhmaṇa.* By way of further specimen, and contribution to the same important end, the comparison of the varying versions of common material found in the Brāhmaṇa, I give here another extract, containing a story already well known from the Catapatha;† it fills several sections of the third and last of the principal divisions of the Brāhmaṇa proper.

"120. To these the cyavana. Cyavana the Bhārgava knew the vistūpaçaṇa (MS. vistūpa-, viptūpa-, vistūpaṭaya) brāhmaṇa. He said to his sons: 'I know the vistūpaçaṇa brāhmaṇa; put me down, then, in the vistū, and go forth with thrice repeated departure ('pātrik punak prajāpiṇam)." They said: 'We shall not be able; we shall be cried out against (ād хозānavartas); men will say of us "they have deserted their father."' 'Not so,' said he; 'you on your part will be the gainers by it, and I by this means have hopes of becoming young again; just leave me and go forth.' Thus he gave them to understand. They put him down at the piṭāṇa of the Sarvasvati, and went forth with thrice renewed departure. He, deserted (? in the vistū, wished: 'May I be young again; may I win a girl for wife; may I surmount with a thousand.' He saw this sāman; he praised it.

"121. When he had praised, Āryā̄ta the Mānavaṇ, with his clan, settled down by (ādhyāvasya) him. The young cow-herds smeared him with dirt, with balls of dung whitened with ashes (ūnapāṣa). He wrought discord for the Āryā̄taṇa; then neither did mother know son, nor son mother. Āryā̄ta the Mānavaṇ said: 'Have ye seen anything here about, on account of which this has become thus?' They said to him: 'Surely there lies below here this used-up (niśāṇa) old man; him the young cow-herds and shepherds to-day have been smearing (ādhyāvasya) with dirt, with balls of dung whitened with ashes; hence this has become thus.'

"122. He said: 'That verily was (nabāt, has been') Cyavana the Bhārgava; he knows the vistūpaçaṇa brāhmaṇa; him, now, his sons have left in the vistū and have gone forth.' Running up to him, he said: 'Sage! homage to thee! have mercy, sir, on the Āryā̄taṇa.' Now there was a beautiful daughter of Āryā̄ta, Sukanyā. He said: 'Do you give me Sukanyā? 'Not so,' said he; 'name some other treasure.' 'Not so,' said he; surely I know the vistūpaçaṇa brāhmaṇa; put her down here by me, and then go (yidā) with your clan this very day at evening.' They [said]: 'How shall we answer thee without taking counsel?' They took counsel, and said: 'Surely, one, two, three treasures we should be willing to gain at cost of her; and now we shall gain just everything by her; come, let us give her to him.' They gave her to him. They said to her: 'Girl, this is a worn-out old man, not equal to pursuing; when, now, we shall yoke up, then do you run (dhāvahitā) after.' So she rose up to follow after the clan when it had yoked up. He said: 'O serpent, circumvent her deserting [her] living friend.' As she goes (?)—

"123. A black snake rose up against her. She, noting this, sat down. Now the two Aśvinis, spoon-sacrificers (daṇḍominā), were going about there performing cures, not sharers in the soma (anapameśu). They came up to her and said: 'This is an old man, not whole, not fit for the office of husband (patitvaṇṇa); be our wife.' 'Not so,' she said; 'to whom my father has given me, his wife will I be.' This he listened to. Then they went forth. He said: 'Girl, what was that noise just now?' 'Two men came up to me here, with a form that is the

† See Muir's Original Sanskrit Texts, v. 260; Weber's Indische Streitze, i. 13.
American Oriental Society:

most beautiful of forms.' 'What did they say to you?' 'Girl, this is an old man, not whole, not fit for the office of husband; be our wife.' 'What did you say?' 'Not so, I said; to whom my father has given me, his wife will I be.'

'124. That, now, was pleasant to him; he said: 'Those were the two Aśvinīs, aposacrificers, that go about here performing cures, not sharers in the soma. They will come to-morrow and say the same thing to you; do you then say (brūdā) to them: 'You verily are not whole, who, being gods, are not soma-drinkers (asomapāṇa); whole in sooth is my husband, who is a soma-drinker.' They will say to you: 'Who is competent to this, that we be sharers in the soma (apisomā)?' And do you say (brūdā): 'My husband here.' By this means there is hope of my becoming young again.' They came to her on the morrow, and said the same thing. She said: 'You verily are not whole, who, being gods, are not soma-drinkers; whole in sooth is my husband, who is a soma-drinker.' They said: 'Who is competent to this, that we be sharers in the soma?' 'My husband here,' said she.

'125. They said to him: 'Sage, make us sharers in the soma, sir.' 'Very well,' said he; 'do you now make me young again.' They drew him away to the pīrāra of the Sarasvatī. He said: 'Girl, we shall all come out looking alike; do you then know (jīvādā) me by this sign.' They all came out looking just alike, with that form which is the most beautiful of forms. She, recognizing him...

'This is my husband.' They said to him: 'Sage, we have performed for you that desire which has been your desire; you have become young again; now instruct us in such wise that we may be sharers in the soma.'

'126. He said: 'The gods here are engaged in sacrificing in Kurukeshtra with a victim-sacrifice (paśuyāyogasana); they do not obtain that desire which is the desire at the sacrifice; the head of the sacrifice was cut off; so then what [Dadhya]nā the Atharvan saw, that do you supply; he will teach it to you; then you will become sharers in the soma.' That head of the sacrifice that was cut off is yonder sun; he in sooth is the pravrāga. So they came to Dādhyac at the Atharvan; they said to him: 'Sage, we would have recourse to thee.' 'For what desire?' 'We would learn about the head of the sacrifice.' 'Not so,' said he; 'Indra likewise saw that; he said to me: "If you were to tell this to any one else, I should cut off your head;" that is what I am afraid of.' 'Then do you teach us with this head of a horse.' 'Very well,' said he; 'let me now see you talking together.' They then laid off his head, put on instead the head of a horse and sat talking together, singing soman, uttering re and yujis. So he put confidence in them, and taught them with that horse's head.

'127. This Indra became aware of: 'He has told it to them,' said he; and running up, he cut off his head, that horse's head. Then what was his own head, that they skillfully (manicitam) put on instead. They came to the gods, who were sacrificing with a headless sacrifice. They said to them: 'Ye sit sacrificing with a headless sacrifice; hence ye do not obtain that desire which is the desire at the sacrifice.' 'Who knows that head of the sacrifice?' 'We do.' 'Put it on in its place.' 'Then draw a draught for us.' They drew for them that Aśvin's draught. They said to them: 'Ye two verily are officiating priests; ye, who understand it, shall set on in its place that head of the sacrifice.' 'Very well.' They were officiating priests. Thus they became sharers in the soma.

'128. Then Cyavana the Bhārgava, having become young again, went to Čaryatā the Mānavan, and conducted his sacrifice on the eastern side (prīṣnātīn stalâyān). Then he gave him a thousand; with them he sacrificed. Thus Cyavana the Bhārgava, having praised with this soman, became young again, won a girl for wife, sacrificed with a thousand. These were the desires at that soman; just those desires he attained. With just what desire one praises with this soman, that desire is fulfilled for him. With that same soman Cyavana the Bhārgava used to draw up out of the pīrāra of the Sarasvatī whatever food he desired. That is a food-attaining soman. He attains food-eating, he becomes the best food-eater of his kindred, who knows this. And since Cyavana the Bhārgava saw it, therefore it is called cyavana...

Whatever may be thought respecting the extract already published by Burnell (in regard to its opinions will doubtless differ), it will hardly be denied that this story wears a less original aspect than the corresponding one (or ones) in the other Brāhmaṇa. We cannot, however, be too cautious about expressing sweep-
ing opinions as to the comparative age of the various Brāhmaṇas and their relation to one another, while they are so imperfectly worked up as at present. Their prevailing accordance, in language, style, and contents, is the most striking fact about them; they evidently come in the main out of one period, and their differences appear to be of minor consequence. Even from such grammatical indications as that the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa uses ārīm as nominative, makes a periphrastic perfect with āsa (known elsewhere only in the Gopatha, and occurring but once even in the older Upanishads), and has such forms as heuytta and kamiya (common enough in the Sūtras, but among Brāhmaṇas paralleled only by kalpavyuta in the Kiśkinda), we should doubtless be over-hasty in concluding that the Aitareya is a more recent compilation than the rest.

In point of language, the Jāminiya stands fully upon the general plane of the Brāhmaṇas, offering no signs either of special antiquity or of more modern date. Thus, to specify a few points: it invariably (and not very rarely) uses as nominatives āram and yuvam; it makes its periphrastic perfects with kr only (a new case is apacacigam caṅkṛa: 'reverenced;' and iŋkṛa sa caṅkṛa occurs three times, in the sense of āye; the text has no examples of aorists of this formation); it has no optatives like kamiya (still less any participles like kiṃmāya, which seem to be absolutely wanting until the epic period); it uses the aorist strictly to express time just past (and hardly offers an instance of what Pielbrick calls the zeitos use, or equivalence with a present); its infinitives are in their variety and proportional frequency like those of the Čatapatha and Aitareya; it employs the subjunctive with freedom (although its variety of forms is decidedly less rich than that of the Čatapatha); its imperative in bit has as regularly a future sense as in other Brāhmaṇas (some of the best examples are those in the extract given above); it has such 3d sing. pres. middle forms as dute, āye, aye (which Aufrecht, Ait. Brāh. p. 429, incautiously pronounces "imitations of Vedic forms," though no Brāhmaṇa is found without them); its gen-abl. sing. fem. is in āti instead of ās: and so on. Its unusually frequent omission of the augment is probably to be regarded as due to the inaccuracy of the manuscripts; they vary greatly in regard to it.

Of new and interesting grammatical material, the immense text is decidedly barren, more so than any of the other Brāhmaṇas except perhaps the Kuśtinatī. But the mass of literature from this period already at command was so considerable, that not much that is novel was reasonably to be hoped for. The text is so faulty that some things are doubtless hidden which further collation or deeper study may bring to light. A very few new aorists appear: as amitad, avuccat (doubtful), abhubat, anumurat (not noted before in the older language), aipat, amvits. Precautive forms are made from only half-a-dozen roots. As usual, the s-aorist is most frequent, being made from over thirty roots (the sa-aorist, from about half as many); of the sa-aorist, only two or three scattering forms appear (the mongrel addikra, in the extract given above). Desiderative stems are nearly three times as numerous as intensive; of special interest in the two classes are tītītī, jītīna (gā 'sing'), dhūpan (besides dhupa), yavita, bhrūnya, which are new; and cichṭa, vīvadika, leih, nūna, which I have not hitherto found of Brāhmaṇa age.

A new root, gārda, seems to make its appearance at iii. 171, in accounting for the name gārda given to a sīmam. We are told that when the gods and Asuras contended about food (aṇaadaya), and the gods possessed the possession of the Asuras' food, there was left to the Asuras a great food named gārda, which the gods coveted. Accordingly (as nearly everywhere through the Brāhmaṇa), 'they saw this sīmam and praised it; and thereby they won the gārda food of the Asuras;' and then: tamam agārda (rejoiced, made merry?); yad agārdaṁ tadb gārdaṁ gārdatam. In another passage (iii. 92), #error is apparently a variant or an error for isāda (which the grammarians give as of the sa-class, although no sa-classes have heretofore been found): thus, indu ni ni ni na sadhnot; so bhūmayata: sīmā sadbhāpaṁ ati; so etat sīmā 'pacyat; tena stula; tato viṁ na sīmā na sadhnot; tad yad etat sīmā bhavati, sīmāṁ eva sadhīyat. The rare root net occurs repeatedly, both with ati, as in the examples hitherto found, and with pra (tasya yo rasah pra 'read, etc.)

I will only add further that the familiar later word ādi makes its earliest appearance here (it had been found till now no further back than in Upanishads
cxlviii  American Oriental Society:

and Sūtras), and in constant connection with forms of ā + ədā, showing that the derivation conjecturally given for it in the Petersburg Lexicon is unquestionably the true one. Examples are: "teno eva punar ādīn ādāte (i. 120); ho ətākā "ādīn ādīdāta (i. 130); hīn kurvanti ... prastātā ... ādīm ādāte ... udgāyati ... prātharati ... (iii. 304).

It may be mentioned, however, in conclusion, that the word sākṣāya, put forward by Burnell as older form of cakkavāla, is (as conjectured by Böhltingk in his minor dictionary) only the familiar cātāvāla. The groups īv and īv are hardly distinguishable, and often confounded, in the Grantham manuscripts; but what they give here is pretty clearly meant for īv.

6. On Modes in Relative Clauses in the Rig-Veda, by Prof. J. Avery, of Brunswick, Me.

In a paper read before the Society in May, 1881 (see the Proceedings for that meeting, Journ. vol. XI. p. Lxvi.), a statistical exhibit was made of the position of relative clauses in the Rig-Veda with reference to their corresponding antecedent clauses—understanding by relative clauses those introduced by the relative pronoun or relative adverbs of time, place, etc.

It is my design in the present paper to conclude the survey of these clauses by some statements regarding the modes of the verb employed in them. This portion of the subject has already been treated at some length by Delbrück in his work on the Use of the Subjunctive and Optative in Sanskrit and Greek: but as I have a list of all the occurrences of relative clauses in the Rig-Veda, and have examined them independently, it may not be superfluous to give my own impressions regarding their characteristics; especially as I shall endeavor to state exactly (as Delbrück has not done) the relative frequency of the various uses of the modes, and shall give a list of all occurrences except for the indicative. The advantage of a full citation of passages is obvious, since, in the present condition of syntactical study, the oldest texts, interpretations and classifications must be considered open to amendment. The uses of the modes are so lacking in clear definition, and their forms so often doubtful, that no treatment of the subject can be accepted with confidence which is not accompanied with an ample list of illustrations, so that each scholar may interpret them for himself.

Now in regard to the modes in relative clauses, it may be said, in the first place, that all the modes of the finite verb—indicative, subjunctive, optative, imperative—are represented in them; and that the frequency of their occurrence is in the order named. To these may be added a single example of the so-called conditional tone, or preterit from the future-stem.

As in other languages, the indicative is the mode found in the great majority of instances, claiming in the Rig-Veda about 88 per cent. of the whole number. In general, the familiar Greek rule prevails: that the indicative is used when the antecedent of the relative is definite, unless the general sense of the passage requires another mode. After an indefinite antecedent, in conditional clauses, the same mode is not uncommon; but in a majority of cases the subjunctive—less often the optative—takes its place. The following are a few examples: 'All that is auspicious which the gods favor' (āvasi) (ii. 23.19); 'No one harms him from near or far who is (bhīmati) under the guidance of the sons of Aditi' (i. 27.13); 'He gains every kind of treasure whom thou furtherest' (āvasi) (v. 28.2); 'Fortunate beyond (others) let that man be (āsti) who is obedient to (ātasati) thy laws' (iii. 59.2). Occasionally the subjunctive and indicative are coordinated without any evident change in sense: e. g. 'who despises (matsya) us. Maruta, or scorps (matsriti) the prayer when made, his faults shall be offenses to him' (vi. 52.2). Other examples of the indicative after an indefinite antecedent are: i. 141.6; ii. 28.1; 28.3; viii. 18.13. In one passage, iii. 4.5 (yíke vihār . . . jiit'gata), we find the indicative where the subjunctive in a purpose-clause would seem much more appropriate.

Next to the indicative, the subjunctive most frequently occurs in relative clauses. It is found about 316 times, according to my understanding of the forms. It is fair to say, however, that owing to the identity of the 3d form of the subjunctive with the augmentless preterit, and to the fact that the subjunctive in Sanskrit does not as in Greek take a servile particle, nor does the relative assume a peculiar form,
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1883.

such lists are liable to some amendment; still, in most instances the requirements of the context make the sense sufficiently certain.

The various uses of the subjunctive in relative clauses we will treat under four heads: Subjunctive in Conditional clauses; Subjunctive in Purpose-clauses; Subjunctive for the Future. The order of these categories also represents the relative frequency of their occurrence. The first is found about 241 times, the second 42 times, the third 17 times, the fourth 10 times. A few doubtful cases are not counted here. As in Greek, conditional clauses with the subjunctive may be divided into general suppositions and particular suppositions. In the first instance, the subjunctive is indefinite as to time, and is best translated by the present indicative; the verb of the antecedent clause is in the present indicative, or if in the aorist or perfect, it is used in a gnomic sense. A few examples will illustrate this usage: 'I hear their whips whenever they crack (vádān) in their hands' (i. 31.3); 'What mortal delights (trātānat) in thy friendship, divine Soma, him the wise seer attends' (i. 91.14); 'What mighty ones seek to win (āvārānā) thy favor, victor, with hymns: having spread the barhis for a seat, supported by thee, Indra, they come (ajñanā) to riches' (i. 10.16); 'They call him sinful who approaches (ajigātā) his own sister' (x. 10.12). In particular suppositions, the verb of the antecedent clause takes a mode referring to the future; the verb of the relative clause also has a distinctly future sense, and may often be best translated by our future-perfect. Examples are: 'When thou shalt have cooked (kūrasi cētām) him, then give (slattāt) him over to the fathers; when he shall have come (yēcchātā) to the spirit-world, then he shall become (bhūrātā) a servant of the god' (x. 16.2); 'Whoever shall have worshiped (drāćit) thee, him no harm shall reach' (acumātā) (i. 23.4). This use of the subjunctive to express a general or particular supposition after a primary tense is accordant with Greek syntax, but I find no example of the rule that the optative shall follow a secondary tense. In the one or two passages where the perfect occurs in the principal clause, it manifestly has a present sense: and we shall find when we come to speak of the optative, that it is used precisely like the subjunctive. Another interesting deviation from Greek usage is, that while in the latter the indefiniteness of the antecedent is indicated by compounding the indefinite pronoun with the relative, and by the use of dū with the subjunctive, in Sanskrit, on the other hand, such devices to aid in understanding the sense are employed almost without exception when that is not sufficiently clear from the mode of the verb: that is why, when it is in the indicative, I am able to cite but a single example where such words are used with a subjunctive: viz. 'Whenever (yadā) kādi' ca we express (ānāvāma) the Soma, let āgni as messenger hasten to thee' (iii. 53.4). With the indicative may be cited vi. 75.6 (yātra-syatra hānaye); viii. 32.4 (yād adyā kāca ... udāgā aḥā); in other elliptical expressions (vi. 46.8: x. 19.7; 20.8; 90.10; 97.10), the verb to be supplied is manifestly an indicative.

The next most common use of the subjunctive in relative clauses is to denote purpose. Such clauses being identical in form with hortatory clauses, the line between them cannot be very closely drawn. Both express the will of some person—commonly in this text that of the speaker. The following are examples: 'Bring us heroic power by which we may conquer (vēnasīma) enemies in battles' (vi. 19.8); 'Give riches . . . by which we may subdue (abhā kṛnūma) men who are godless enemies, and may over come (abhā ānuvāma) godless tribes' (vi. 49.15); 'Which shall carry (pi'parat) us across the darkness, O bright Aqvas, that power give us' (i. 46.6); 'I make for him a new, lordly song to (lit. which shall please (jājōsat) him, in order that (yēhā) he may hear (tyāvat) us' (vii. 26.1). In the last passage we seem to have the two ways of expressing purpose in the same verse. In the majority of purpose-clauses expressed by the relative pronoun and the subjunctive, the antecedent is indefinite. When the antecedent is definite, yāhā or yād is employed. The propriety of this usage is obvious: since, when the antecedent is indefinite, the relative clause is needed to define more fully its character. But there is nothing in the nature of such clauses to forbid their use after definite antecedents, and they are sometimes so employed in Greek. We cannot, then, quite agree with Delbrück's remark that relative purpose-clauses occur only after indefinite antecedents—at least, if our understanding of certain passages is correct. For example: 'Drive forth that victorious chariot of thine, that we may hail (ānāvādāma) it (lit. which we may hail) in battle' (i. 102.3);
'Let your favor be turned toward us, that it may give (lit. which may give) great relief (vargavatārā āstā) from distress' (i. 107.1); 'Hurl down from heaven thy thunderbolt, that with it thou mayest (lit. with which thou shalt) merrily burn down (nīyārāhā) the enemy.'

In certain passages, the verb seems to express more directly exhortation, obligation, or, more mildly, prayer. These cases I have called, with Delbrück, the subjunctive of will. They shade off on the one side into purpose-clauses, and on the other into expressions of futurity. Examples are: 'Praise the Agni of Deva-vātsa, O Deva-āvaras, who shall be (āstā) the lord of men' (iii. 23.3); 'May the chant extant Indra, which Indra may the offering and Soma extant (vārdhāt); the prayer, song, hymn, devotion extant' (vārdhāit) (vi. 38.3. 4). In viii. 20.15, we seem to have an interchange of clauses. As it stands we must read, 'He was fortunate by your aid in former dawns, Maruta, who shall be (āstā) so now also.' The more natural form would be, 'Whoever was fortunate by your aid in former dawns, may he also be so now.'

In expressions of will, it is said that the will resides in the first person, and that obligation expresses the condition of the second or third person. We can quote one passage where the subjunctive seems to represent an obligation resting on the first person: 'Tell me, ye gods, by what path I ought to bring (vāhāni) the obligation to you' (x. 52.1).

The last use of the subjunctive in relative clauses which we shall note is that in which it approaches the sense of the future indicative. This use is appropriately called by Delbrück the subjunctive of expectation. It is common to speak of it as a softened, i.e. a doubtful, future; but I question whether the Vedic usage does not lie nearer to the primitive idea of the subjunctive, that of will, rather than to the later and weaker sense of contingency. Thus, i. 113.11, after speaking of the appearance of the dawn to the men of old, and its present rising before his eyes, the poet adds: 'Those are coming who shall see (pāvyō) her horserider.' To his mind, no phenomenon of nature is so unfailing as the recurrence of the dawn; and the firmness of his confidence is expressed by the subjunctive. A passage where the sense is not quite so obvious is vii. 87.7: 'We long to be guiltless before Varuṇa, who will (assuredly) pardon (mrdayātī) him who hath committed sin.' Here the worshiper seems to express unfailing, child-like trust in the loving compassion of the god. This use of the subjunctive is not of frequent occurrence.

A few cases of improper subjunctives are not included in the above classification; they are perhaps rather to be understood as indicatives. The optative, as a comparatively infrequent form, occurs in relative clauses far less often than the subjunctive; still it not only is occasionally found in its proper sense of wishing, but it also begins to usurp the functions of the subjunctive, which it has mainly supplanted in the later language. 1. The optative of wishing: 'Receive this prayer of mine, Maruta, by whose power we wish to live (ōvāmas) a hundred winters' (v. 54.15). This passage might be easily understood as a purpose-clause. 'To us, who wish to conquer (vādenta) by thy aid, . . . thou didst give over Viṣṇurīta, Trāyastī's son' (ii. 11.19). 2. The optative in conditions: 'Let the mighty bull roar . . . whenever he is aroused' (jugurōt; i. 132.2); 'What priest knows (āddhō) the solar hymn, he deserves the bride's garment' (x. 85.34). 3. The optative in purpose-clauses: 'Grant us renown in heroes, by which we may outshine (cāvāmānta) others' (iv. 36.9); 'Bring hither great riches, Agni, by which we may have enjoyment' (āvāmūna) (vii. 1.24). 4. The optative of expectation: 'I wish to ally myself with the kind friend who will not harm (riyōl) me' (viii. 48.10).

The imperative occasionally occurs in relative clauses, being found but once in its proper form, at i. 127.2: 'We wish to invoke thee, the flame-haired bull, whom let all these tribes urge on (prāvānta) to haste.' There is, however, one other passage in which a quasi-imperative is used, i. 63.8: 'Do thou, divine Indra, make this sparkling libation flow around like floods of water, with which grant (yāyas) us life.'

As we have noticed already, the conditional form of the verb occurs once: ii. 30.2. After this compendious statement of the uses des in relative clauses, and the principal senses in which they are employed, I have only two remarks to add: 1. It appears that in conditional relative clauses the mode of the verb is not deter-
mined by the tense of the verb in the antecedent clause; 2. As might be expected, the order of the clauses has no effect upon the modes. On the contrary, the nature of the relative clause seems to have an influence upon the order; for while on the whole the antecedent clause stands first in a small majority of cases, yet in relative conditional clauses, in which the relative clause precedes in order of thought, it precedes in position also in about the ratio of 1:4 to 1. On the other hand, in purpose-clauses, where the relative clause follows in order of thought, it follows in position also almost invariably.

LIST OF CITATIONS.

Sub. in rel. cond. clauses (antecedent indefinite), i. 27.1; 30.1; 35.6; 37.3; 42.2; 46.3; 48.15; 54.6; 63.2; 68.6; 70.6; 71.6; 73.8; 77.2; 82.1; 84.16; 86.7; 91.14; 20; 93.3; 8; 94.15; 100.1; 101.8; 113.10; 121.17; 12; 122.12; 123.3; 127.1; 132.5; 67; 139.1; 8; 162.2; 164.16; 165.7; 10; 166.14; 167.2; 169.4; 174.4; 179.9; 180.1; 2; 186.9; ii. 11; 11.3; 16; 14; 23.4; 7, 14; 15; 30.1; 7; 11; 32; 54; 10: iii. 6; 7; 8; 10.3; 30.5; 51.11; 53.4; iv. 2.6; 7; 8; 8; 10; 4; 10; 11; 12; 12; 16.11; 17; 23.4; 24.1; 10; 41.1; 42.6; 55.2; v. 3.5; 7; 4; 11; 27.4; 29.13; 30.1; 33.2; 37.5; 42.10; 49.4; 50.4; 66.2; 60.6; 62.6; 73.5; 79.7; vi. 2.4.5; 4.1; 5.4; 9.3; 15.14; 25.5; 6.17; 26.1; 46.14; 23; 46.13; 52; 56.4; 59.4; 60.1; 67.8; 11; 68; v. 16; 7; 20.6; 7, 8; 25.1; 30.3; 4; 32.5.7; 1, 13; 40.1; 3; 42.4; 47.2; 50.2; 56.22; 57; 4; 60.1; 65.2; 66.4; 70.6; 84.8; 84.39; 6; 93.3.5; 98.4; 100; 101.3; 103.4; vi. 1.31; 13.6; 28; 18.14; 30; 31; 46.6; 50.127; 55.4; 58.7; 69.9; 82.26; 29; 30; 85.12; 89; 1; 92.4; ix. 12.2; 102.5; x. 2.3; 4; 3.2; 10.11.12; 11; 8; 12.1; 4.6; 15.6; 16.8; 11; 27.10; 11; 31.10; 37.5; 43.5; 45.9; 50.3; 55.8; 61.4; 25; 67.5; 91.11; 93; 5; 96.12; 96.9; 97.17; 99.8; 148.3; 155.1 = 241.

Sub. in purpose-clauses—indef. ant., i. 8.1; 46.6; 140.12; 166.14; ii. 38.11; iii. 13.4; iv. 41.1? v. 23.1; 37.3; vi. 16.36; 19.8; 33.1; 48.12; 49.15; 68.1; vii. 26.1; 53.3; 56.15; viii. 1.8; 6.24; 19.16; 27.22; 49.12; ix. 9.2; 97.51; 101.9; x. 44.9; 63.6; 68.10; 85.37; 96.3; 113.10 = 36. Def. ant. t. 1.102.3; 107.1; ii. 20.3; 30.5; iii. 62.10; viii. 19.20 = 6.

Sub. in mood, i. 70.8; 176.5; 186.5; ii. 23.3; 33.8; vi. 17.11; 22.10; 38.4; vii. 61.2; viii. 20.16? 24.27; ix. 108.14; x. 29.8; 52.1 = 17.

Sub. of expectation, i. 113.11; iv. 55.2; vii. 57.2; vii. 92.11; x. 10.10; 53.9; 74.4; 96.8 = 10.

Doubtful cases, i. 100.14; iii. 44.3; vi. 12.5; vii. 56.16; viii. 2.39; 60.11.

Optative of wish, i. 11.19; v. 54.15; vii. 19.7; viii. 3.17; 66.24 — condition, i. 173.2; v. 34.6; vi. 16.46; vii. 19.11; x. 85.34 — purpose, i. 39.13; iv. 36.9; vii. 1.24; vii. 40.1 — expectation, vii. 48.10.

Imperative, i. 63.8 (gāṇa); 127.2. Conditional, ii. 30.2.

Totautes: Subjunctive, 316; Optative, 15; Imperative, 2; Conditional, 1.

7. On certain Irregular Vedic Subjunctives or Imperatives, by Prof. M. Bloomfield, of Baltimore, Md.; presented by Prof. Lanman, of Cambridge.

The Vedic forms referred to are those of the types sūka, jāhōka, ḫr̥ta; kārta, ṣyārta; gāṇa; ḫ/ddārta — appearing at first sight to be so-called imperfect subjunctives, but having irregularly strong stem-forms with accent on the stem, instead of on the ending. The words of this form occurring in the Rig-Veda were first stated, with their number of occurrences in that text. They have been (by Delbrück and Whitney) regarded as simple variations of the regular forms sūkta, jāhukta, etc., perhaps under government of the belief that they were the product of metrical needs. But this seems wrong; because the short vowel would rather have been lengthened to make it suit the iambic cadence, nor would the accent have been shifted: cf. ṣyājapāna, with metricalally altered root-vowel but unchanged accent (esp. ṣyāyapāna). It is indisputable that the forms originated in some way from metrical needs. A detailed examination (given in full in the paper) of the passages where they occur shows that, for example of the 66 occurrences of the forms with irregular a, 35 occur in the cadence of the verse, where a long vowel is most imperatively demanded, and most of the remainder where the heavy syllable is either required or strongly favored; and the same thing is substantially true of the other classes of the words under disc-
The forms showing an a, it was urged, are particularly calculated to make it improbable that the category represents a modification of augmentless subjunctives; since, for example, punatu and punāta are metricaly equivalent; while addāta etc. are so remote in form and accent from datād etc. that their supposed formal correlation is extremely improbable.

The following theory of the formation was then proposed. In the division of subjunctives with mode-sign a and secondary endings, if we look at Prof. Avery's lists of forms from the Rig-Veda, we shall be struck by the fact that the 2d and 3d dual, and especially the 2d plural, are entirely unrepresented. The exclusion of so important a case as the 2d plural from an otherwise well-developed category is a priori improbable. It is even not to be doubted that just here must be sheltered such forms as punāta and addāta, which are in all respects regular subjunctives save that their ending is secondary. And this furnishes the key for the others also. If we look over the subjunctive forms possible from a stem ṭhau, for example, we find ṭhau, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, and ṭhauṇa. It is seen at once why an additional form was needed: none of these, being of four light syllables, is fit for use in iambic cadence. Nothing is more natural than that the least usable among them, ṭhauṇa (since th at least occasionally makes position), should be remodelled. Accordingly, forms like ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, are to be regarded as contracted or apostrophized from the hypothetical ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa, ṭhauṇa. This may be urged with especial emphasis for the 0-forms; for the metrical correlation of and u is established by many instances which cannot be impugned. A few cases of such correlation were given as examples, the point not having been fully worked up. Thus the “weak” stem mahau- for mahau-; and mahau has even sometimes to be read for written mahau, as at RV. vi. 65. 3; as gāvas for gāva (i. 181. 8), uvaśudhi for uvaśudhi (vi. 3. 7), and vācās for vācā (i. 62. 7); and stātante seems clearly to require to be read stānte at vi. 26. 7. Compare also vocatives like aghan and bhagau from aghanau and bhagauau, and the relation of prau to prau—without resorting to such doubtful etymologies (BR.) as uatha from uatha. Analogous is the correlation of ami with a: stātraya is to be read as stātraya at RV. vi. 18. 12, and stātraya as stātraya at vi. 19. 10. Compare the contraction of causative ayau to e in Prākrit. Cases in which original etymological ara and ana become ar and an are not, to be sure, found; but extensions of ar or ra to two syllables are well-known; and cases have been pointed out in which no ar is to be read as ana.

The points, then, which cause the explanation here given to be proposed with some confidence are these. The language furnisheth no iambic forms for these persons; they had to be supplied by some secondary process. These very cases are wanting in the scheme of the subjunctive; and a form like ṭhauṇa is the most natural modification for metrical purposes of ṭhauṇa. As negative evidence may be added that the forms in question do not occur with the negative ma—which is in accordance with the fact that ma is used with the augmentless and not the thematic subjunctive. The single exception (RV. ii. 30. 7) is one of the two cases in which a occurs in a syllable which is more usually light.

At first sight, the whole theory seems endangered by the fact that there are also augmented imperfect forms (as akṛtānau, akārta, ajauganta, adadāta, abra- ilauna). But it is a priori not unlikely that on the analogy of forms like kṛto and kṛtata there should be formed an akṛtā to akṛtā. Moreover, these imperfects, not numerous, occur under peculiar conditions. Of the 14 occurrences, 10 are found in the 1st and 10th Books (5 in the rībhu-hymn i. 161); 3 in the rībhu-hymn iv. 35; the remaining one at vii. 33. 4.

Prof. Bloomfield's paper closed with the expression of an intention to work the whole subject over again as soon as other engagements permitted, and with an invitation of criticism and suggestions.

In response to the author's request, Prof. Whitney offered some remarks upon the theory. Prof. Bloomfield was mistaken, he said, in supposing that his grammar intended to suggest a theory as to the character and origin of these forms; he had been careful simply to note and describe them, as forms showing the ordinary characteristics of a strong stem where a weak one was to be expected. Especially was it far from his thought that the irregular forms should have been called out by metrical needs, since he utterly disbelieved in such an originating cause. If a Vedic verse-maker has two equivalent forms to use, as kṛtu and
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1883.

kṛṣṇa, he will naturally put each of them into the place which it fits, or where in the loose and easy structure of Vedic metre it can be tolerated; and the detailed discussion of the metrical uses of the two classes of forms in the paper was nothing but an illustration of this innocent fact, and had no force to prove anything. If there is only one form, as kṛṣṇa, the poet puts it where it can go, and fills up the rest of the verse with something else. To assume that there is anything in the metrical form of kṛṣṇa which leads to the creation of a kṛṣṇa for other metrical places seemed to the speaker inadmissible, and he was glad to take this opportunity to protest earnestly against it, since it is by no means uncommon. No small part, for example, of Benfey’s innumerable discussions of the puda- and saūhītī- differences of reading in Vedic texts was in his opinion vitiated by it; and it would be easy to refer to other examples. Of course, like everything else of the kind, the metrical convenience of doublata like kṛṣṇa kṛṣṇa is liable to be extended beyond its natural limits; an unskilful versifier will make, for example, a kuruks beside kuruks; and such things will be done the more, the more unvernacular the language and the more artificial the style. So, in view of the widely prevailing equivalence of active and middle forms in Sanskrit, the epics unquestionably sometimes, purely metri causis, say e.g. bhavate for bhavati; but they would never think of saying bhavati, because there is no genuine form like the latter. So also, doubtless, there are some inorganic cases of final a for a in Vedic words; but it is because there are so many real cases of variation in quantity of the final vowel to serve as justification of the projection. And in the discussion of such double forms, one should never be content to say “this is metrical,” which means nothing and explains nothing; the question should rather be: is this a historical form, or is it only the imitation of such, made upon this or that analogy? If one is allowed simply to plead that a given heavy vowel is explained by the metre, there is nothing in the way of our admitting a set of variant forms for every word in the language, fitting it to all the conceivable exigencies of metrical use.

As regards, also, the filling-in of a theoretically deficient scheme of subjunctive inflection, Prof. Whitney was disinclined to admit the suggestions of the paper. Instead of lists of forms from the Rig-Veda alone, the paragraphs (560, 562) in his grammar devoted to this point might well have been consulted and referred to by Prof. Bloomfield, since they state the facts of subjunctive formation as derived from the whole body of literature, both Veda and Brāhmaṇa, in which subjunctives occur. It is only in two active persons, the 2d and 3d singular, that thematic subjunctive forms are made with both primary and secondary endings; in four of the remaining persons only with primary, and in three only with secondary. Among these seven deficient persons, there would seem to be no good reason for selecting one or two whose deficiency should be painfully felt and sought to be supplied; we might, for instance, as naturally expect a kvāvāmas and kvāvānā and kvāvān to be added as kvāvāata. The explanation of the strange distribution of endings in the subjunctive active, while in the middle they are almost exclusively primary, is still to seek; but by the assumption of double forms in the 2d plural it does not appear to be brought any nearer.

But further, the paper does not take account of all the forms which might claim the right to be brought into the discussion. There are in the imperative a number of 2d persons singular also, made upon the strong instead of upon the weak stem: in the Rig-Veda, yudhāti and yudhātī (to which may be added edāt, if, as generally believed, it comes from as-dāth); from other texts, yudhāti, yudhāti, punahāti, punahātī, śṛṣṭā, śṛṣṭā, and the middle variants; and the augmentless quasi-subjunctive yudhāus (RV.) should be mentioned with them. There can be no question here of contracted subjunctives; they are simply forms made with the usual ending, from the strong stem: and if the 2d singulars, why not the 2d plurals likewise? There is at least a prima facie probability that all these irregular second persons belong together, and are to be explained together.

Objection is also to be made to the treatment of such forms as kṛta and pāta on one plane with the rest. These do not belong to the present-system, but to the root-aorist; and although this is in its inflection mainly accordant with an imperfect of the root-class, yet (as pointed out in the grammar, § 831–3) its stem is especially liable to irregular strengthening, and about as large a proportion of
the forms in the first person plural show the strong stem as of those in the second.

For these reasons, while acknowledging the ingenuity of Prof. Bloomfield’s theory, we can hardly accept it as satisfactorily explaining the irregularity with which it deals.

8. Was there at the head of the Babylonian Pantheon a deity bearing the name El? by Prof. D. G. Lyon, of Cambridge, Mass.

This question is one of no small interest, and has been variously answered. The affirmative has been espoused by most writers on the Babylonian religion, including some of the best Assyrian scholars. On the other hand, Prof. Tiele, in his *Histoire Comparée des Anciennes Religions* (pp. 181, 182), denies the validity of the argument; and very recently, as a correspondent from Germany has informed us, Prof. Fr. Delitzsch has also surrendered his belief in a Babylonian El (cf. the “Hebrew Student,” Morgan Park, Chicago, for Feb., 1882). Yet El still has his friends. Prof. Schrader of Berlin and Prof. G. Rawlinson of Oxford have reaffirmed his existence in two works published during the current year (Schrader: *Die Keilschriften und das Alte Testament*, ed. 2, p. 11; Rawlinson: “The Religions of the Ancient World.” pp. 37, 38).

This paper will first attempt to show that Rawlinson’s proof is based on mis-translations, and will then examine some other grounds claimed for the existence of a god El or I1. Rawlinson is himself evidently not acquainted with the Assyrian literature in the original, but has taken all his translations at second-hand. Still, his book purports to be scientific in its methods, to give only facts without theories: in his own words, to collect “materials which may serve as a portion of the data, when the time comes, if it ever comes, for the construction of the science in question”—i.e. the “Science of Religion”—(p. 3). His book then is profoundly critical, and in it he asserts the existence of a Babylonian El, or rather I1 or I1a (pp. 37, 38). His proof texts are found in the faulty translations of “The Records of the Past.” He confesses indeed that the very name of the supposed god I1 “is not of frequent occurrence.” In a foot-note (p. 37) he gives several references to the “Records.”

The first is translated in the “Records” (v. 21): “From all the enemies of Ashur, the whole of them, I exacted labor. I made, and finished the repairs of, the temple of the goddess Astarte, my lady, and of the temple of Martu, and of Bel, and I1, and of the sacred buildings and shrines of the gods belonging to my city of Ashur.” The original text (I. R. 14. 85 ff.) should be translated: “After I had subdued the enemies of the god Ashur in all their boundaries, I restored and finished the temple of Ishtar of Ashur (?), my lady, the temple of Raman, the temple of Mullahara (?), the house of divinity (?), the deserted temples of my city Ashur.” What here concerns us is the expression biš i1a Mullahara, written biš an ēn u ra. The translation of the “Records” seems to take ēn with the preceding i1a as an ideogram with the value Bel, which it often has; to take u as the connective, certainly its usual value; and to understand ra as an ideogram representing the god I1 or I1a. It would be a sufficient objection against thus dividing the signs ēn u ra to point, with Dr. Lotz, in his comment on this combination (Die Inschriften Typhathpiiler’s I. p. 168), to another list of gods where the name of this deity occurs (III. R. 66, obv. 5 b). Lotz gives also his grounds for reading the name Mullahara. But if this second passage were unknown, the translation in the “Records” would still be very improbable, because both the word biš ‘house, temple’ and the determinative i1a ‘god’ are wanting before the sign ra; proof that ra could not as an independent word be of the same class as Ishtar and Raman, and consequently not the name of a deity. And even if ra here did represent a god I1, he would be only a member of the Assyrian Pantheon. This passage then would prove absolutely nothing for a Babylonian god I1 or El, except so far as his existence might be inferred from his presence in the Assyrian Pantheon.

The second reference might seem to lend more support to Rawlinson’s theory (“Records.” v. 129). The original reads (I. R. 56, col. 7, l. 13; I. R. 57, col. 7, l. 14, 15): “The many kings preceding me whose names i1a appointed unto royalty.” If the text here be correct, we might translate i1a by ‘the deity,’ or understand it to be the name of a god I1. The latter would, however, only be admissible if we
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1883.

had independent evidence of its existence. But the highest god in the Babylonian pantheon of Nebuchadnezzar was undoubtedly Marduk, and the passage is from one of this king's inscriptions. It is to Marduk that the same text gives such titles as bēl tišnī išu Marduk; "lord of the gods, the god Marduk" (Col. 4, l. 8; col. 7, l. 24), and bēl šigiltu tišnī, 'the lord, the leader of the gods' (col. 9, l. 47). Many gods are mentioned in the text, but Marduk towers above them all. He is the išu, 'the deity' par excellence. We shall return to this subject later.

Rawlinson's next two references to the "Records" are from a translation by Oppert. The signs here read El are an ēn kit (cf. original I. R. 70, col. 3, l. 9; col. 4, l. 2). The an or išu is the determinative for 'god,' and ēn kit is the very frequent combination for the god Bēl (e.g. IV. R. 61, 30-1; 35-6; Dour-Sarkayan, p. 24, l. 2, compared with p. 26, l. 2). Oppert has himself elsewhere in the "Records" (xi. 20: the original is I. R. 36.68) correctly translated an ēn kit by Bēl; while in still another place ("Records," xi. 24) he has combined his two readings and given us a third, Bēl-El. Here he evidently means only to say that he regards Bēl and El as convertible terms, or rather that Bēl is El. But Rawlinson misunderstood him, and hence he tells us that in two of the passages the name El "seems to stand for Bēl, who is called Bēl-El sometimes" (p. 37, note). Let the future writer on the "Science of religion" beware of such "data" as these!

The "Records" (v. 118) have another mention of the god El, but the translation is hopelessly incorrect. The original (I. R. 54, col. 2, l. 60), an an šu-pa(r) (?) an ki, could never mean ("the statue") of the god El, the beauty of the sphere." It is to be read tišnī šu-pa(r) (?) šanām irēli, 'the gods in the presence (?) of heaven and earth.' The same expression occurs elsewhere (V. R. i. 86), except that the plural tišnī is expressed, not by doubling the sign an an, but in the more usual way, an išnām.

Equally unfortunate is the argument for the existence of a god Il (El) or Ra drawn from the Accadian name of the city Babylon, which Rawlinson informs us (p. 38) was Ka-ra. On the contrary, this name was Ka-dingir, generally written Ka an ra, where ra is what is known as a "phonetic complement," indicating that the preceding sign an is an ideogram for a word ending in the letter r (rā = Assyrian ūbū, 'gates,' Arabic biātū: cf. Delitzsch, Lesestücke, p. 52, l. 233; and for dingir = Assyrian išu, 'god,' cf. ib. p. 46, l. 2). The name Iššu-šu is then a literal translation into Assyrian from the Accadian Ka-dingir, 'gate of god.' As dingir was the generic term for 'deity' among the Accadians, so was išu among the Babylonians and Assyrians. Far from meaning 'the gate of Il,' it more probably means simply 'gate of deity,' without reference to a special god or even to a single god. This seems to be also Schrader's present opinion (K. A. T. pp. 157, 126). The word išu often occurs where there is no thought of a particular god: e.g. I. R. 36.64, where Argos appoints for his new capital, Dūr-Sarrukin, persons who shall teach the inhabitants pālak iš u šursrī, 'the fear of god and of king,' i.e. 'of the gods and of the kings.' Elsewhere there is mention of the food or the clothing 'of god and of king' (cf. Judg. ix. 13).

Prof. Rawlinson says (p. 38) that the god Il "was certainly regarded as the head of the pantheon," and yet, perhaps because he was "a somewhat shadowy being," the Babylonians "frequently omit him from lists which seem to contain all the other gods." He cites as a case of such omission an inscription of the very ancient king Aqū-kak-rimēi ("Records," vii. 3 ff.). But the original (V. R. 33, col. 7, l. 36) has in the list cited the very ideograms (an ēn kit) on which Oppert's and Rawlinson's Bēl-El is based. The same ideogram occurs also in the 5th line of this inscription; but as it is in both cases correctly translated Bēl in the "Records," Rawlinson is thus prevented from recognizing his imaginary Bēl-El. This list ("Records," vii. 7, 8) is by no means intended to give the names of all the principal gods. It omits Išhtar, the greatest of the goddesses. But that Išhtar was one of the chief deities of Aqū-kak-rimēi's pantheon is seen by the fact that she is mentioned in the opening of the inscription (l. 9) along with the great gods Aššur, Bēl, Enlil, and Marduk. Anu, Bēl, Ea, Marduk, Sin, and Shamash.

We pass now to the examination of some other passages in the cuneiform inscriptions. One of these is an ēn kit an an ēn ur išu (I. R. 63, col. 7, l. 24; V. R. 34.48 a), and has been generally understood until recently to contain the names of three gods, Bēl, El, and Marduk. As we have above seen, an ēn kit are indeed the signs which very often represent the god Bēl; an ēn ur išu are the signs for the god
It was therefore very natural to see in an an another deity, i.e. the god II. This interpretation commits, however, a double mistake; an an kit is not here, as it so often is, the god Bēl, is indeed not a proper name at all, but means bēl 'lord,' while anan is to be read its, 'the gods.' We should then have in transiteration bēl itiši Marduk, 'the lord of the gods, Marduk,' in which Marduk and the 'lord of the gods' are synonymous expressions. The reading bēl itiši Marduk, 'the lord of gods, Marduk,' recommends itself by its bare announcement, is perfectly consonant with what we know to have been the high regard of the Babylonians for this deity, and is raised above all doubt by line 44 in a Nebuchadnezzar inscription recently acquired by the library of Harvard University. This line has the signs an zur ut an en kit ni ni, which are to be read Marduk bēl itiši, i.e. 'Marduk, the lord of gods.' Here Marduk precedes the appositive title bēl itiši, and ni ni has taken the place of an an. But ni ni is a well-known way of writing itiši: cf. for instance II. R. 55.1 b, where the writing bēl ni ni stands for the goddess whose name is often written bēl itiši an māš: i.e. bēl itiši (I. R. 36.60): or cf. V. R. 34.52 b, where for ni ni another copy reads an an, i.e. itiši, 'the gods.' Compare further the expression itiši (written ni ni) bēlta, 'the gods, my creators' (IV. R. 17.24 b).

It is also not without analogy when an en kit, the special combination of signs for the god Bēl, is employed instead of the usual simple en as a common name for bēl, 'lord.' The same secondary application of a sign is seen in the large character pronounced a and used as a connective of words. This a, so far as I have observed, never employed in the older literature as a syllable, but is always an independent word meaning 'and,' or it is occasionally an ideogram (as in Ablukbara above). But in some of the texts of Nebuchadnezzar a is used both as a connective and as a syllable, specially in the word ra-bi-a 'great': e.g. Marduk bēl ra-bi-a, 'Marduk, the great lord' (V. R. 34.11 a); bēl ra-bi-a Marduk, 'the great lord, Marduk' (V. R. 34.55 b); cf. also I. R. 51, col. 1, 10. Another passage supposed—by Schrader, for instance (K. A. T. 11)—to be positive proof of the existence of a god II, is on a lexical tablet containing a list of gods (II. R. 48.24 ff.). Part of this bilingual tablet contains on the left certain signs and on the right the names of certain deities, written ideographically or phonetically, represented by those signs. First comes ita, then ishtar. These are followed by Anu, Bēl, and Ea, the members of the first triad in the Pantheon. Then come Sin, Shamash, Roman, constituting the second well-known triad. After these are Marduk and his spouse, Zirparitu; Nabu and his spouse, Tashmetu.

Now it is claimed that this list gives the names of the Babylonian gods with their relative rank, and that ita at the head of the list is the supreme god, i.e. the god II or El. Ishtar, the second name, is also understood to be the well-known goddess Ishtar. Of course, then, she must be the second in rank, next to El, and higher than Anu, Bēl, and Ea. The date of this tablet is not known, though it is perhaps very old. The mention of a Sargon, who is probably the Sargon of Agade, would indicate that the text was not earlier than the time of this king. Now we have texts belonging to still earlier times, for instance a text of the old king Aga-kok-rimé (V. R. 33); but this text, though mentioning many of the gods, has no II; and it names the goddess Ishtar after Anu, Bēl, Ea, and other gods. In general, leaving the list under discussion out of the question, I know of no evidence that Ishtar was ever regarded as of equal rank with the gods Anu, Bēl, and Ea. In the Assyrian method of representing the gods by numbers, 60 stands for Anu, 30 for Sin, the moon-god; while Ishtar has only 15 (Lotz, Quest. de hist.-Sakk.). The presumption therefore is that in the list before us either ishtar is not the goddess of that name, or if it is, the list is not altogether arranged according to the relative rank of the gods.

The most probable solution of the difficulty lies in considering both ita and ishtar in the list as representing, not two deities, but generically 'god' and 'goddess' (so Tiele, Hist. Comp., p. 182), just as they in their turn are preceded by two signs for 'heaven' and 'earth.' The use of the word ishtar (written an ishtar) to express, not the name of a deity, but 'goddess,' in general, would be parallel to what we have above seen in regard to the name Bēl. And there is other proof that ishtar was so used, being indeed occasionally accompanied by pronoun suffixes. See the expression li-bi ili-shu at ita ishtar-shu, 'the heart of his god and
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1883.

his goddess' (IV. R. 8.10 a), and so is-ia-man-ii iltu ishtar-ir, 'my goddess has not loved me' (IV. R. 67.58 b). The word occurs even in the plural, like the Hebrew נרִי. One of Sargon's inscriptions mentions iltu iltu ishtar-at ashtarut Ashur, 'the gods and goddesses inhabiting Assyria.' (Khons. 176; cf. II. R. 66.2). That iltu is often used for 'god' in general is a well-known fact, and some examples of such use have already been quoted.

Still another argument for the existence of a god El is drawn from a passage in an inscription of the old Babylonian king Hammurabi or Hammuragash (Ménant, Manuel de la long., assyr., 2d ed). This text begins thus: 'I am Hammuragash, the mighty king, the king of Babylon, the king of the four regions of the world, who fulfills the will of Marduk, the ruler who rejoices his (i.e. Marduk's) heart.' It then proceeds: 'When iltu (an) ū en kit gave the people of Semer and Akkad into my dominion and filled my hand... I dug the canal of Hammuragash, a blessing for the people, the bearer (habitat) of abundant waters to the inhabitants of Semer and Akkad.' The discussion here concerns the signs iltu (an) ū an en kit, which have been read iltu ū Beli, 'the god El and the god Bel.'

Beside this reading, there are sundry other possibilities. 1. A mistake in the text. For it perhaps there should be sur-ul, the similar and well-known signs for the god Marduk. The passage would then read Marduk beli, 'Marduk, the lord' (an en kit, as above, representing in that case the god Bel but the common noun beli, 'lord').

2. But let us suppose the text correct. Then we may read iltu ū Beli, 'iltu and Beli,' and understand iltu as the god, the deity.' The question then becomes, which deity? In this inscription the god preeminent is Marduk, so that the passage, while rendering 'the god and Bel,' would mean 'Marduk and Beli.' This agrees well with other parts of the inscription. It is with the forces which Marduk gives him that Hammuragash builds his castle. Omitting the passage under examination, no other deity is mentioned by name except Marduk, and his name is mentioned twice. Marduk is then clearly the chief god of this text. In another short inscription of Hammuragash, Marduk is beyond all question the great god in this city's pantheon. He is called by such titles as 'the great lord' (beli raba), 'the giver of abundance' (nadin keshali), 'the lord of Hammuragash,' 'the lord of Babgal and Ezida' (two famed temples). Hammuragash names himself 'the beloved shepherd of Marduk;' and he built at Horispa a temple to 'Marduk his creator' (ana Marduk ili banišu). Prof. Tiele (Hist. Comp. 182) offers the same solution, but supposes that iltu stands for the god Anu, which seems to me less probable.

One might go a step further, and maintain that, so far as our information extends, Marduk is from the earliest times of the national history the chief Babylonian deity in point of rank, and that therefore there was no place for a supreme god El or II.

Another paragraph should discuss the use of the word iltu in proper names. It is well known that both Babylonians and Assyrians were very fond of confounding proper names of several elements, one of which should be the name of a deity. The result of an examination of proper names containing iltu would be to show that this word does not represent a particular deity, but simply 'god,' as we saw above in the case of Bab-iltu, 'Babylon.' This is not saying that iltu would mean the same god in each case. Zikar-iltu, for instance, 'Servant of iltu,' might mean servant of Ashur, servant of Marduk, servant of Beli, according to the preferences of the family in conferring the name.

On general grounds also it might be argued that there was no superior god II in the Babylonian pantheon. It is on all sides admitted that he must have been a very vague, indefinite being, whose functions no one can define. The system was complete without him. Anu was god of the heavens, Beli of the earth, Ea of the deep. The planet also had their special deities. In Assyria, Ashur was the national god, excelling in power all others. In Babylon this dignity belonged to Marduk. If a supreme god II existed, he ought to have taken some part in the conduct of affairs, either of gods or of men; this he seems never to have done.

Further, in the Babylonian account of Creation and the Deluge, many gods appear, but a god II never. Likewise in the accounts of the Babylonian gods which have been left us in Greek by Berosus and Damascus, II has no place.
And, in general, in the older Babylonian system (for it is supposed that the idea of the supremacy of Marduk became obscured in later times), we may the less expect to find a god to whom the other members of the pantheon are subject. This would be an approach to monothelism which the Babylonians down to the fall of their empire never made. Before the consolidation of the empire, it seems that each city or province regarded its own deity as the most powerful of all; and after such consolidation the national god became the most powerful, but still the other deities did not become his subjects. They were indeed in the estimation of the people inferior to the national god, but independent of him, each in his own sphere supreme. It is in national affairs that the supremacy of the national deity appears.

For the general conclusion we might draw support of a negative kind from other Semitic sources. The word El represents neither in Hebrew nor Phœnician the name of a supreme deity (the Arabic does not have the word), but is, as among the Babylonians, the general term for 'deity.' The Phœnicians seem not to have advanced beyond this point. The Hebrews went further. When they rose to the full consciousness of monothelism, they made use of the general term for deity, El, Elohim, in speaking of the only God. They still retained indeed the name Yahweh along with Elohim, but it was because their national deity Yahweh, whom they had once regarded as one among other deities, had risen to be in meaning co-extensive with Elohim. Yahweh has burst through national boundaries and become the El, the 'god,' of the whole world, not superior to other gods, but the only God, holding to all others the relation of existence to non-existence. This is the doctrine which comes out with such force in the second Isaiah (xiv. 5, 6, 14, 18, 21, 22; xlv. 9).

It is not impossible that other passages from the cuneiform inscriptions might be adduced in proof of the existence of a Babylonian god El, but those regarded as strongest by the advocates of this theory have been examined, and there is no reasonable doubt that any others might be easily explained in agreement with the conclusion of the foregoing discussion.

9. On the Bronze Crab Inscription of the New York Obelisk, by Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of Philadelphia, Pa.; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

Those who were present at the New York meeting of the Society, just before the obelisk was set up in the Central Park, will remember that at the close of Prof. G. Seyfearth's communication about the obelisk, I asked if he had seen the bronze crab, and could give a correct reading of the inscription upon it; as I had noticed that the published copies differed from each other, and it was important to get at the true reading.

I may add that at about the same time, both before and after that meeting, I had written to several gentlemen who I thought possessed sufficient interest to have the matter looked into; but I did not succeed in awakening their attention.

On the 29th April last, I had my first opportunity to examine at leisure the crab and its inscriptions, the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York (where the crab now is) being closed, and the stand with the crab being wheeled out so that I could view it in any light I wished. I made careful copies and notes; and also brought away tin-foil impressions, and a double set of plaster casts of both inscriptions.

It turns out that all the published copies are wrong. The Greek, on the outer side of the thick part of the claw, is as follows:

L ΙΗ ΚΑΙΣΑΡΙΟΣ
ΒΑΡΒΑΡΟΣΑΝΘΟΙΚΕ
ΑΡΧΙΤΕΚΤΟΝΟΝΤΟΣ
ΠΟΝΤΙΟΥ

That is:

'In the year 18 of Caesar
Barbarus set [it] up,
The architect being
Pontius.'
The inscription as published in W. R. Cooper’s “A Short History of the Egyptian Obelisk,” (London, Bagster, n. d., first dedication and preface to 2d edition dated 1877), p. 48, is wrong in substituting an E for the L, and in omitting the I of the date. Cooper’s authority was two-fold: “Dixon’s letter in [London] ‘Daily News,’ July 18, 1877; and illustration in [London] ‘Graphic,’ July 7, 1877.” Cooper also remarks: “The Latin text unfortunately differs in both.” I believe that these two sources copied from a publication at Athens, or others in Alexandria, which I have not seen.

The L is the frequent inscription form of lambda, and stands for the old word for ‘year,’ whose nominative case is λεπάδα. To consider it as an E, for ɜ̇rsa, was an easy mistake. As to the omission of the I in the date, that was honest; as it is only a few weeks since the bronze was properly cleaned; and before this operation the I was wholly indiscernible. But it is now quite plain, and cut as deeply as any other letter.

In the first line the last two letters are indistinct; the O being smaller, and near the top of the line; and the Σ being barely legible.

In Lieut.-Commander H. H. Gorringe’s “Egyptian Obelisks,” Plate V., facing p. 5, also p. 55 and p. 76, the inscription is given without the mistake in the L (though a period placed after it seems to me doubtful); but, for the reason mentioned above, the I of the date is omitted. Also, the one word of the third line is wrongly separated into two: APXITEKTON ONYTOE, doubtless by an error of interpretation.

The Latin inscription, on the inner side of the claw, is difficult, and could never have been made out without the help of the Greek. It is not so well or so skilfully cut, it is much more damaged by time, and there are other reasons, presently to be mentioned, for trouble and confusion. The inscription as given by Cooper (ubi supra) and by Gorringe (ubi supra), omitting the punctuation (which may be only the printer’s work, and which is not to be seen on the bronze), is as follows:

ANNO VIII
AVGVSTI CAESARIS
BARBARVS PRAEF
AEGYPTI POSVIT
ARCHITECTANTE PONTIIO

This is wrong in several respects. The inscription contains only four lines; the CAESARIS is on the first line; there is no trace whatever of the word AVGVSTI; and the date was clearly XVIII, and not VIII simply. But it is obscure, and has to be restored from the fragmentary strokes of the letters. The word ANNO is also very obscure, and has to be likewise restored. But I will first restore the inscription as it was on the bronze, and then make what remarks I intend at present. The inscription was as follows:

ANNO XVIII CAESARIS
BARBARVS PRAEF
AEGYPTI POSVIT
ARCHITECTANTE PONTIIO

That is:

‘In the year 18 of Caesar,
Barbarus Prefect
Of Egypt set [it] up,
Pontius being architect.’

(For “architect,” in both inscriptions, I might have chosen a more technical English word; but it is as well to have it thus.)

It is plain, almost at the first glance, that a former inscription underlay the present one (a fact first discovered by Dr. W. C. Prime and Gen. di Cesnola); but I think it was only a mistake in cutting the inscription, and that it was made and corrected by the same engraver that made the present one. The marks of hammer and other tools, and perhaps of fire to soften, are quite plain in the former obliteration. The first line seems to have been made correctly; but I think that in making the second line the word CAESARIS was repeated, and the fault continued farther on in the line—at least. Before the B are traces of a CAE, apparently, and the lower curve in the same B is mostly part of a still legible S. The first R
in BARBARVS is illegible; and the second R overles an E or an F. But I will not go into further particulars of that sort. As an evidence of the character of the engraver's knowledge, I will state that the P in AEGYPTI is made like a Greek II, with the right leg short, as often seen in inscriptions, manuscripts, and early printed books. The T's in the last line extend high above the line, as represented in Cooper's copy; but the two last are formed on the last stroke of the N preceding. The F at the end of the second line (it is now impossible to say whether it was followed by VS) likewise extends high above its line.

Without the aid of the Greek, only CAESARIS could be read on the first line; BARBARVS could never have been made out; and the P in PRAEF likewise would have remained undecipherable. Also, in the next line, the T in AEGYPTI has a mistaken (or older) stroke which makes it a good D if one chooses so to read it. In short, it is impossible to account for the former published reading of the Latin inscription.

The matter of a supposed former inscription I forbear to go into further, as it would require more time than I now have at command. I have not noted all the peculiarities of the marks of such inscription; nor of the letters of either the Greek or the Latin inscription. Matters historical, also, have untouched, as I learn that Prof. Merriam of Columbia College has given the subject thorough study, and is preparing an article for publication which will render needless any further discussion on my part. I have only wished to give my independent testimony to the facts I have personally observed.

10. On certain Sounds in the Peking Pronunciation of Chinese,
by Mr. B. S. Lyman, of Northampton, Mass.

Mr. Lyman gave his views upon a few points in Chinese pronunciation which are wont to be made unnecessarily troublesome and difficult to a beginner in the language. He had practised them through a year at Yedo under an intelligent native of Peking, and afterward verified his conclusions with a well-educated Peking teacher at Shanghai.

The sound sometimes represented by $s$ is not made up of a surd and sonant sibilant followed by a breathing, but is simply a surd $s$ followed by the vocal-sound of $c$ in mercy (our long 'neutral vowel' before $r$). The same vocal-sound occurs after many other consonants, and has been very variously represented: most appropriately, perhaps (by Williams), with the German $y$.

The sounds $sh$ and $ch$ followed only by that vowel are pronounced with the tongue rolled up, as for an English $r$.

The initial sound of the word for 'man' (jén) is written by some with $y$, by others with $zh$; it is really a $y$ made with the tongue rolled up as above.

The sound sometimes represented by $zh$, sometimes by $zh$, contains the same vocal-sound, of $c$ in mercy, with our $r$ in arm—a $r$ made rather far back in the mouth.

Wade distinguishes by $zh$ before $a$, $e$, $o$, $u$, and $ka$ before $i$ and $u$, what Williams writes with simple $h$. The latter is preferable, since the following vowel always determines the quality of the sound: in the former case, the German $sh$ of sch; in the latter, that of $zh$, only made still further forward in the mouth, close behind the teeth. It is the same with the Yedo $h$, often mistaken by provincial Japanese and foreigners for the Japanese $sh$; it is the sound which gave Golvinitkin such great difficulty. The English $h$-sound is heard in Peking Chinese only after $ch$, $k$, $p$, $t$, and $b$, where its position sufficiently separates it from the other sounds written with $h$.

$W$ is a short English $ow$, and $uw$ has really no consonant element. In like manner, $y$ is a short English $er$, and $yi$ is sounded exactly like $i$.

It has been sometimes held that Chinese words should not be called monosyllabic when they contain three separate vowel sounds; but these are short, and run together into a diphthong or triphthong, and there can be no valid objection to our viewing them as forming together one syllable.

Besides such combined short vowels, Peking Chinese has what some would call single long vowels; which, however, seem rather to be similarly coalescing repeated short vowels, the first pronounced on one pitch and the second on another, making an upward or downward slide, such as is made in successive
different vowels. An unrepeated single short vowel is followed by s or ng, which enables the slide to be made audible. These slides, on two different keys, a higher and a lower, are the "tones," a much exaggerated bugbear to those who are to begin the study of the language.

11. Translation of two brief Buddhist Sūtras from the Tibetan, by Mr. W. W. Rockhill, now of Montreux, Switzerland; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

The two Sūtras, of which I offer a translation from the Tibetan in the following pages, serve to show, in a certain measure, that Buddhist literature is in reality a comparatively meager one, if we take into consideration the immense collection devoted to it extant at the present time.

I might have taken a hundred other Sūtras in the Tibetan Bhāh-hygar that would have equally well served my purpose; but these are especially commendable, because they are short. It must have struck every one who has read any number of Buddhist works how the same stereotyped phrases, the same similes, occur on every page, and that one Sūtra differs from another only by slight changes introduced into these stock phrases, and by a selection suited to the text of the sermon. Take the Dhammapada, the Sutta Nipāta, or the Tibetan Ukhānāvarga, and you will find the substance of nearly every Sūtra in the canon; these works have probably been used as compendiums from which the long diffuse Sūtras like the Lātā Vāstara, or the Prajñā Paramitā, have been derived; but turn to whichever work one will, one finds the same sentiments, the same old precepts, of the Dhammapada and other like works.

I do not claim that these works are in themselves among the oldest of Buddhist literature; on the contrary, they cannot have been composed until after the Dharma had been taught for a long while; but they certainly contain the best authenticated versions of the sayings of the Buddha (Sāntāna).

The founder of Buddhism addressed himself to the masses of the people, to the learned and to the ignorant; and to all he taught, not an elaborate system, but a few irrefutable truths; in some cases, even, he enables a hopelessly stupid person to perceive the truth by the simple performance of some manual labor, or by the constant repetition of one word; but generally he teaches them to repeat a few lines which contain that portion of the doctrine best suited to their intelligence.

Frequently the triviality of the simile struck their untutored minds, and in every case the verses were so short that it required but little application to commit them to memory.

"He who, though he can only recite a few lines (of the law), walks in the way of the law, and has forsaken passion, anger, and ignorance, he has a share in the priesthood" (Ukānāvarga, iv. 23; Dhammapada, 20).

It is these oft-repeated aphorisms that have served as the basis of the greater part of the Sūtras, which were set down in writing long after the death of the Buddha; and it is unquestionably a proof of the estimation in which they were held, to find them everywhere repeated, or so slightly altered that we cannot help detecting the source from which they are taken.

For these reasons, I think that wherever we see these aphorisms, we may take them as the utterances of the Buddha, with much greater probability than any other part of the works we may have before us. The two following Sūtras are therefore worth notice, for they are undoubtedly compilations. It is remarkable that, beside Sūtras like these, in which moral virtues are so highly exalted, we find passages like the following, taken from the Brahmagāta Sūtra: "Bhikshus, all those foolish beings who have not heard (the law), speaking in praise of the Tathāgata, only speak of trifles, such as morality (pīṭa), and of the removing of desires by seclusion" (Bhāh-hygar, Mdo xx. f. 110 b).

The explanation of this discrepancy seems to lie in the fact that morality, charity, good will, etc., were the foundation—indispensable, it is true—the preliminary steps, of him who would reach perfect enlightenment, who would become a Buddha. The omniscience of which the Buddha was possessed made the more humble virtues sink into insignificance—in the case mentioned in the Brahmagāta, at least.

Morality—that is to say, keeping the ten or the six commandments binding on
American Oriental Society:

a mendicant or as a lay follower—was a virtue essential to all beings, and was a source of great future felicity; but this only required to be impressed upon the ignorant crowd; and to such were these sermons or “trifles’” spoken.

I have endeavored to preserve, as much as possible, the style of the gathás forming the latter part of the Madrīdhārama Sūtra, which appears to me to have been something like a song.

This Sūtra gains especial interest from the fact that it is one of a rather numerous class of Sūtras which were translated into Tibetan directly from Pāli, as we are informed by the colophon, which says that “it was translated in the Mahāvihāra, in the island of Ceylon, by the great pandit Anandaśri and the bhuvanesvāya lobsu, the bhikhu of Ėkṣya, Ni-ma-ngyal-mtsean dpal-bzang-po (Śūryadhvaṇa ēriḥādva), who (both of them) understood the two languages (Pāli and Tibetan or Sanskrit).”

... BHIKHU PRAHEJU SŪTRA.

In the language of India, Bhikhu prāṛju sūtra; in the language of Bod (Tibet). Dpe-ṣlong-la rab-bu gches-pai mo (the sūtra called ‘very agreeable to a bhikhu’).

Praise be to him who knows all!

I once heard the following discourse, while the Blessed One was residing in the Phullahapadma vihāra in the great city of Črāvasti, accompanied by a retinue of twelve hundred and fifty bhikshus.

Then it happened that from amidst the retinue of the Blessed One, the ārya called Upāli, whose senses were well controlled, who was attentive, whose wisdom was profound, who was particularly esteemed on account of the way in which he could recite the disciplinary rules that had been set forth by the Blessed One, rising up from his mat, throwing his cloak over one shoulder, touched the ground with his right knee with hands joined over his breast, and smilingly said to Bhagavat: “Thou who, like a lotus, art free from the mire of the world, thou who art unshaken as a mountain, whose mighty body is adorned with the ornaments of symmetry and beautified with the flowers of signs, thou whom one gazes at unwearingly, who art the best of the best, then do I worship!

We who are here gathered together, all of us bhikshus, we beseech the Mighty One to tell us these four things: 1. the nature of a bhikhu; 2. the different kinds (of bhikshus); 3. what constitutes (this condition); 4. the deportment (of a bhikhu).”

Then the Conqueror, the Blessed One, well pleased, turned toward Upāli and said: “Give thou only ear, Upāli, and I will satisfy you by explaining what is becoming in bhikshus.

The real bhikhu, being the chief ornament of the Law, the real bhikhu is a living diamond.

The real bhikhu, having cast off suffering, the real bhikhu is the son of the Conqueror.

The real bhikhu, having destroyed all corruption, the real bhikhu goes to the garden of freedom.

The bhikhu controlling (or who controls) his whole nature, knowing the four fundamental (truths), and observing the two hundred and fifty (rules of the Prātimokṣha *), is pure and virtuous.

There are many kinds of bhikshus: the signs and characteristics of the real bhikhu, of him to whom that name only really applies, are these:

He who seeks for virtue (dpe-ṣlong = bhikhu), and who seeks for his food by begging, who is dispassionate, who walks in the way, whose life is correct, who has cast off passions, he, on account of these qualities, is a bhikhu.

The real bhikhu is adorned, for having cast away (worldly) ornaments, he is well adorned. He has attained his great desire when he has cast off desires.

The mendicant who cares about ungues, baths, choice food, jewels, (fine) garments, o PLLVRA, Horses, elephants, panaginas, wagons and carriages, for which he ough not to care, is not a (real) bhikhu.”

Then Upāli said to the Blessed One: “What the Sugata has said is obscure; I beseech the Sugata to illuminate with the light of his words the obscurity of his (previous) sayings.”

* There are 253 rules in the Bhikhu Prātimokṣha and 373 in the Bhikhuṣi P, in the Tibetan version. The Chinese Prātimokṣha has 250 rules.
Then the Blessed One said:

"He who has cast far away gold and all the other ornaments of the world, and who is merciful, he is adorned with the most precious of ornaments.

Not the garments of the world, but the garment of the doctrine, the saffron-colored gown, is the best of raiment.

It is not camphor and such like, but morality, that is the best of ungueants.

It is not white, red, or such like, but faith, that is the most beautiful color.

It is not worldliness, but application, that is the best and swiftest conveyance.

Contemplation and the practice of the Law is the best food, and has a sweeter aroma than boiled rice.

They who in the abode of the community are dispassionate, who are content with a single mat, come not back again (to this world), they are truly bhikshus.

They who, weary of the three perfections* (pradhāna) and their accompaniment, become hermits, and (take up) cool dwelling places, their bodies, speech, and minds all well controlled, knowing the proper way to comport themselves, they are truly bhikshus.

Both of these (kinds of bhikshus) arrive at the city of freedom, where they enjoy the perfect happiness of freedom.†

He who scoffs at the alms-bowl and the other (possessions of a bhikshu), will be plunged in hell in molten bronze for four thousand kalpas.

To some morality (cīla) brings happiness, to others morality (i.e. the want of morality) is a source of suffering.

He who has morality has the greatest blessing. He who acts against morality is in misery.

He who has brought himself to perfectly observe morality, the appearance of that man is beautiful.

He has nearly conquered, I consider, the man who has learnt morality; for in a single day he acquires an incalculable amount of merit, which vies with the fruit of enlightenment (bodhi).

He who convinces himself that he understands the spirit of the Law (lit. the sign of victory) of the Sugata, when he is not keeping the precepts of the Law, that man is only devoted to form (rūpa);‡ that bhikshu I consider like a mad bull held by a hair, or like one who drinks acids rather than sweets. That man sows in a single day innumerable seeds of wickedness, and does himself all kinds of injuries.

He who keeps not the cīla precepts, who, though not keeping the precepts, (thinks) that he comprehends rightly the Law of the Sugata, who approves of the saying that one can hold on to form (rūpa) and to a home (life), that man, not keeping the precepts, perceives not the characteristics that mark all worldly (existence) as essentially connected with sorrow; so all the utterances of that man are evil.

The live trunk of a tree can send forth shoots for a long time; so that man will talk for a long time the language of sin, and will greatly add to his wicked works.§

Morality is the greatest happiness! Morality is the road to freedom! Morality is the field of perfection! Morality is the foundation of enlightenment! Morality is the chief of good things! Watch over morality as over the apple of your eye, for life is at stake! He who renounces it, unwise, foolish is he!

All things that are born have but a limited existence; but morality has no such future.¶

Therefore, Upali and all you other disciples, watch well over these laws.”

When the Blessed One had thus spoken, Upali and the bhikshus greatly extolled his teaching.

The stūtra called Bhikshu praveṣa is finished.¶

---

* Gīta-bo goṣṭha: this most likely means Buddha, Dharma, Sangha, but in a very restricted sense.

† They attain arhatship or kecapanirvāṇa.

‡ “If one has heard little, but does carefully observe the moral laws, he, because he honors the moral laws, is the best kind of hearer.” Udānavarga, xxii.8.

§ Cf. Dhammapada, v. 338.

¶ Or it may be rendered: “He who is born has a limited life, but he who observes the cīla precepts has no such future.”

¶ Taken from the Bhāh-kyūr, xxvi th vol. of the Mdo, l. 189, 192.
MĀTRĪBHĀVANA SŪTRA.

In the language of India, Mātrībhāvana sūtra; in the language of Bod, Byams-pa bogs-pai mdos (the sūtra on showing good will).

Glory to the blessed Tri Ratnas!

This discourse I once heard, while the Blessed One was stopping at Grāvaṣṭī, at Jitāvana, in the grove of Anathapiṇḍikā. It happened that the Blessed One called the Bhikshus to him: and when they were in the presence of the lord Bhagavat, he spoke to them as follows:

"To thoroughly emancipate the mind, one must show good will; to steadfastly keep it in one's thought, one must show it to many; one must be dispassionate, one must make it a fundamental law, one must strictly adhere to it; to this accustom yourselves, devote yourselves.

There are eleven blessings (attached to good will) which I will explain. They are as follows: one sleeps peacefully, one awakes peacefully, one has no bad dreams, men delight in him, supernatural beings delight in him, the gods protect him, fire or poison or the sword harm him not, his mind is always happy, his countenance is beaming, he will die with his mind at peace, through his righteous deeds he will be born in the world of Brahmā.

Bhikshus, steadfastly keep the thought of good will in your minds, practice it, show it to many, be dispassionate, make it your fundamental law, strictly adhere to it, to this accustom yourselves, devote yourselves. These are the eleven blessings.

Bhikshus, I will tell you of yet other blessings that good will brings:
He lives with food and drink in plenty. Which he finds near at hand,
He lives in the midst of great abundance, The man who is not without good will.
Where'er he goes within the town, Be it in the city or in the royal palace,
Everywhere he meets with honor, The man who is not without good will.
To him thieves and robbers come not, To him the king does no harm,
He is a friend to all creation, The man who is not without good will.
Free from anger, he happily lives at home; To mankind there shines no such pleasing yoke,
But he is better than them all, The man who is not without good will.
He who shows honor, honor he will find, He who bows, to him shall others bow,
Glory and fame shall he find, The man who is not without good will.
He who is respectful, respect he shall find, Reverence comes to him who shows it,
He will have the bloom of health, The man who is not without good will.
He shines as does a blazing fire, His body like that of some (bright) god;
He will not love his wealth, The man who is not without good will,
Great will be the herds, Great the grain in the field,
Many the sons and the daughters, Of the man who is not without good will.
Falls he from off the mountain-top, Or falls he from off a tree,
He drops not, but (gently) reaches the earth, The man who is not without good will.

The man who climbs a phata (or tala) tree, Cannot be shaken by the wind,
So enemies cannot bring to harm The man who is not without good will."

When the Blessed One had thus spoken, the Bhikshus greatly extolled his teaching.

The sūtra on showing good will is finished. (Bkha-hgyur, Mdo xxx. f. 575, 576.)

After the completion of this paper, the Society, with the usual vote of thanks to the American Academy for the use of its room, adjourned, to meet again in New Haven in October.
Pursuant to adjournment, the Society met at the Library-room of the Yale Divinity School in New Haven, on Wednesday, October 24th, at 3 o'clock p. m., the President in the chair.

After the reading of the record of the previous meeting, the Committee of Arrangements reported that they had accepted on behalf of the Society an invitation from the Corresponding Secretary to assemble socially, with their ladies, at his house in the evening, meeting there other invited guests; and that the reading of papers would be adjourned from the end of the afternoon until Thursday morning at nine o'clock.

The Directors announced that they had appointed the next meeting to be held in Boston, in May next, and on Wednesday the 7th of that month, unless the Committee of Arrangements, Professors Toy and Abbot, should see reason for changing the day. They also stated that, at the suggestion of the Treasurer, they had voted to omit the yearly assessment for the current year.

The following persons, recommended by the Directors, were chosen Corporate Members:

Prof. Paul Haupt, of Baltimore, Md.;
Mr. F. Cope Whitehouse, of New York City.

The correspondence of the past half-year was reported on, and extracts from it were read:

Miss Amelia B. Edwards writes from Bristol, Eng., Aug. 17th, 1883, explaining that she is not (as called in the Proceedings of the last meeting) Mr. Poole's assistant, but honorary secretary along with him to the Egypt Exploration Fund, which she had labored independently for many years to call into life.

Pres't Martin, of the Tung-wen College, writes from Peking, Sept. 4th, 1883, commenting on the state of affairs in China, and promising for the Society's next meeting a paper on the Northern Barbarians of Ancient China, with especial reference to the period preceding the erection of the Great Wall.

Rev. L. H. Mills writes from Hannover, Sept. 15th, 1883, accompanying a copy of the first volume of his work on the Zoroastrian Gāthās, already more than once reported on by him to the Society and mentioned in its Proceedings. The volume is not yet published, but copies of it have been distributed to all the leading Zend scholars in Europe. The second volume, containing, besides the author's commentary, an autographed Pahlavi text, a paraphrased version, etc., Mr. Mills hopes to have ready in six months more. The volume already completed was exhibited to the meeting.
American Oriental Society:

Mr. F. Cope Whitehouse writes from New York respecting his new determination of the site of Lake Moiris (along with copies of his papers on the subject in the Revue Archéologique and the Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archæology, for June, 1882).

Mr. Whitehouse claims that the determination made by Linant de Bellefonds has only been used to cast discredit upon the authenticity of ancient records, and is wholly indefensible. It is now conceded that the dyke at El-Lahun prevents High Nile from filling not only the Fayoum, but also the Wadi Reia, which Mr. W. discovered and surveyed in 1882. See Schweinfurth in l'Exploration for May, 1883, and Amélineau in the Revue des Questions Historiques for Oct. 1883. The Moiris which it is now proposed to restore would be only the southern or Reian basin. It would resemble in form and situation the Meridia lacus on the maps of Ptolemy. It would hold water enough to irrigate 1000 sq. miles of territory, and free Egypt from the dread of a dangerous flood.

Communications were now called for, and were presented as follows:


Prof. Hall spoke especially of those inscriptions which come from the site of a temple on a tongue of land between the sea and the salines west of the Marins of Larnaca, the present Citiun. There were two temples on this tongue of land, each on a little knoll. One was a temple to Artemis Paralia, as shown by the Greek inscription there found. (In Cesnola's "Cyprus" the inscriptions and temple are wrongly credited to Demeter Paralia, but the mistake was long ago discovered.) The other temple, at the end of the tongue of land, is shown by all the Phoenician inscriptions found there to have been erected to the deity Eshmun-Melkarth, i.e. Asclepius-Hercules. This deity Prof. Hall proposed to identify with Palesmon, or Portunus, or Portunnus, a patron of shipwrecked mariners; and he purposes to present a full paper on the subject at a future meeting.

2. A Temple of Zeus Labranius in Cyprus, by Prof. I. H. Hall.

In Cesnola's "Cyprus," at p. 283, is a short account of a visit and discoveries made near Favorli, a village not far from Amathus, where thorough exploration was prevented by lack of tents and provisions, as well as by a fire apparently kindled by the natives to drive the explorers away.

"On the summit of one of [the hills west of Amathus]," runs the account, "very difficult of ascent, situated between the two small villages of Dimitri and Favorli, I found the ruins of an elliptical structure measuring twenty-seven feet by sixteen. Its area was strewn with pieces of broken statues, upon two of which an eagle was carved. I discovered also, on the bases of two life-size statues, to which the feet still adhered, Greek characters roughly but deeply cut in the calcareous stone (see Appendix). I should have liked to explore this spot thoroughly, as these ruins are not improbably those of a temple dedicated to Jupiter." Then follows the reason for not exploring more thoroughly, stated above.

On looking at the "Appendix" for the above reference, it appears that the inscriptions here referred to are not given; the reason being that the stones were on their way to, or had reached, America, when that Appendix, covering the Greek inscriptions, was compiled in England. The inscriptions are now in the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York City, and are rather difficult to read without being taken out of the cases. They had not been read or deciphered till I examined them last September.

Before proceeding to the inscriptions, however, I wish to supplement the account given in "Cyprus," from Gen. di Cesnola's note-book, written at the time on the spot, which he kindly showed me. The note-book contains a pencil-sketch of the hill, with the ruins at the top, and stone fragments, as they had rolled down the hill on one side, and lay at the base and partly along the slope. It contains also a plan of the structure, from which it appears that the ellipses is
truncated at one end, through the middle of which end was the entrance. Near the other end, inside, against either wall and opposite each other, are the pedestals (probably of the two statues referred to. The note-book also contains sketches of the two bases which bear the inscriptions. The written entries in the note-book are as follows:

"Fasula (this is the general local pronunciation), 1\frac{1}{2} hours' mule drive from Paleo-Limasool, west of Amathus.

[Here follows sketch of the hill.]

"With temple at top, and fragments lying along foot of hill and a little way up.

"Temple found about 4 ft. below ground, made of small irregular stones.

[Here follows the plan, with dimensions.]

"No remains below the foundation, and no entire statue or statuette found here.

[Here follow the sketches of the bases with feet.]

"Found 16 fragments of statues Gr[eco-] R[omen], all life-size. Fragments of 2 statues, having the eagle (Jupiter?). Greek inscriptions. Only a few hours of digging. Some one fired the woods purposely, and we had to stop working here.

"These 16 fragments seem to belong to three statues only, of none of which the head was found. Most of the fragments were a few inches only buried, and others were found at the bottom of the hill, as if hurled down by peasants. My guide says he has seen the fragments where they lie when he was a boy. No houses near by. The little village of Fasula is the nearest point."

("I may mention that the statuette figured on p. 283 of "Cyprus" is mentioned in the note-book, and the place of its finding described. It was at a different place from this hill.

I asked Gen. di Cesnola, for reasons which will appear further on, if he found any sculptured axe, but he says that he did not.

The bases with feet are of the calcareous stone of Cyprus, now made familiar by the sculptures in the Museum. The letters on each base are of about the same age, and belong, apparently, to a period limited by the third and fifth centuries A.D. They are deeply cut, in two lines to each inscription, nearly covering the whole front edge of the stone. The letters are about an inch high, rude, and presenting some peculiarities in shape. One of these inscriptions (numbered 132) reads as follows:

1. ΟΛΙΑΣΑΛΙΑΛΑΒΡΑΝΙΩΤΕΣ
2. ΜΕΝΟΣΑΠΕΙΩΚΕΝ

or,

"Oliasas and Menosakewes xirwvnon upthkev."

In English:

'Oliass having vowed paid [it] to Zeus Labranio.'

In this inscription the sigma and the epsilon are of the form familiar in uncial manuscripts, or somewhat like the Roman C. The omega is like that epsilon turned so that the curved side is downward. The upsilon is sprawling, with the two inner strokes joined in a curve. The kappa is turned on its side, so that what is usually the vertical stroke is nearly horizontal, with the oblique strokes hanging below it. The upsilon extends below its line, quite across the face of the stone (the last one of the second line being reached just before it), and so does the xi, which has a form much like that of the earlier uncial manuscripts.

The other inscription (numbered 105) is as follows:

1. ΔΗΜΗΤΡΙΕΙΑΛΑΒΡΑΝΙΩΤΕΣΑΜΕ
2. ΝΟΣΑΠΕΙΩΚΕΝ

or,

"Demetros and Nosaakewes xirwvnon upthkev."

In English:

'Demetrias having vowed paid [it] to Zeus Labranio.'

In this inscription the letters are of the same general style as the other, except that the second delta in the first line stands on its apex, with its horizontal line at the top; the xi has the usual form; and the upsilon is shaped like a Roman V.

It lies upon the surface, after these inscriptions are once read, that General di Cesnola was right in his conjecture that the ruins are those of a temple to Jupiter. As he found the eagle, so we find the name, and read that these statues were votive offerings to the deity, by persons bearing the respective proper names given in the inscriptions. The third statue which the fragments disclose was probably the temple-αυλαμα, or σελαννων, of the divinity.

The identification of the particular Zeus, or Jupiter, whose temple this was, is
not much more difficult. To anticipate a little, he was the Zeus Stratios, or Jupiter of the camp and war, who had a temple at Labranda, in Caria, and who is known in the classic writers as Labrandus, Labrados, Labrindentus, Labrindios, Labrayndenus, and still other varieties of spelling. The only trouble in the identification—and that not serious, even if it were not removed—is to account for the absence of the d in the word as it occurs on the inscriptions, since the d is found in all the forms given by the Greek and Latin writers. But this trouble will disappear before we come to the end.

The first mention of this Carian or Lycian Zeus is in Herodotus, v. 119, where it is related that such of the Persians as escaped from the battle of the Marathas collected together at Labranda, *ἐς Δόξα Στρατιών ἱερόν, μέγα τε καὶ ἄκραν δέως παραπραγματευόμενον*. Herodotus adds: “and the Carians are the only ones we know who offer sacrifices to Zeus Stratios.” He also, a little further on, indicates that this ἱερόν was not far from Mylassa.

Strabo (xiv. 23, or c. 659) gives a little more particular information about this deity and shrine: “And the Mylasiotes have two temples of Zeus, that of the one called Ωροκόος and the one [called] Labrayndentos (Ἀλβραγνονθυντη), the one in the city, but Labraynda (τῷ ἂν ἄλανναδις) is a village in the mountain on the pass from Alabanda to Mylassa, away from the city. Here is an ancient temple to Zeus Stratios; and he is honored by the people of the region (τῶν κτίσιον) and by the Mylasiotes; and a way, called sacred, is paved for about sixty stadia, as far as the city, through which the sacred processions are conducted. And the most distinguished of the citizens are always consecrated for life. These, then, are the peculiar matters of the city.”

The site and title of Labranda were perfectly identified by Fellowes (“Lyca” pp. 67 ff.), in accordance with Strabo’s description, even to the distance and the paved way. It is not to our purpose to quote Fellowes here, though we shall do so in another connection. We may remark, in passing, that some of the classical dictionaries wrongly credit Fellowes with the mistake of Leake (“Asia Minor,” p. 234), who located Labranda at *fakis*. The true site is to the northwest of *Melias* or *Mellano*, the modern representative of the ancient Mylassa.

Of the mention of Zeus Labrindentus in the Greek and Latin authors, it is not necessary to cite all the instances; but a few of them are proper for our purpose.

Pliny (Hist. Nat. xxxii. 2, 7), says: *E manu vescentur pisces in Labranydis Jovis fonte.* The same feeding of tame fishes at this place is also related by *Ælian* (Hist. Animal, xii. 50): “And in the sacred place (τῷ ἱερῷ) of the Labradian Zeus (ὁ Δώς) is a spring of transparent water, and the fishes have necklaces and earrings, and all gold. And the temple of Zeus is sixty stadia from the city of the Mylasiotes. Upon this image is hung a sword (εἴφος); and it is honored, called both Karios (Carian) and Stratios; for the Carians were the first to make a market of war, and to go to war for money, and to hang straps (δύναμι) upon their shields, and to attach crests to their helmets. And their name was called [Carians] from Kar the son of Crete and Zeus. But Zeus Labrandaeus (Ἀλβραγνονθυντης) being diphthong, like the an of the preceding syllable in Strabo’s word) is said to have received and to bear the name from having rained furiously (ἄλαννα) and much.”

With this derivation of the name compare Lactantius (De Falsa Religione, i. 21). Speaking of the way in which heroes acquired power and compelled divine honors, he goes on: *Nic constituta sunt templia Æliae Matyría, Ælii Labrados, Matyrion eius et Labrados hostipes ejus, atque in illos places in bello fuerant.* Hem *José Laprio, José Malorio, José Cusco, et quae sunt in eundem modum.* (The text here followed gives the name as Labradenus, but others give it as Labrandeus.)

As the Greek and Roman authors were confused about the spelling of the name, so these passages in *Ælian* and Lactantius show a confusion in respect to its derivation and meaning. But in the latter point Plutarch will set us right, especially as supplemented and confirmed by the investigations of Fellowes and by these two di Gemola inscriptions. Plutarch’s *Quaestiones Graeca*, xlv., runs thus: “For what reason is the image of the Labradian (Ἀλβραγνονθυντης) Zeus in Caria furnished (ὑπερήμα) with an axe (ἐπίκρατον), and not made with a sceptre or thunderbolt? Because Hercules, having slain Hippolyte and taken away, among other things, her axe, gave it as a present to Omphale; and the kings of the Lydians with Omphale bore it, receiving it in succession among the other sacred heir-
louus; until Candaules, having disdained it, gave it to one of his comrades to bear. But when Gyges revolted and made war against him, Arselis from the Myrians came as an ally to Gyges with a force and destroyed both Candaules and his comrade; and he brought the axe to Caria along with the other spoil. And having prepared an image of Zeus, he put the axe in its hand, and called the god Labradus (Labrautos); for the Lydians call the axe labrys (λαβρύς τον πέλεκυ σωμάτου).

Now the axe, usually double-bladed, or double-headed, was found by Mr. Fellowes to be the prominent symbol of Mylasa and the shrine Labradus. In his “Lycia,” p. 75, he gives a cut of this double axe, from the keystone to “a fine arched gateway” at Mylasa. “This emblem,” he says, “have seen on four different keystones, built into various walls in the town, showing that it must have been very commonly used in the architecture of the city, and not improbably placed over each of its gates.” Also, “I have obtained coins of the ancient city, with the same emblem upon them, and also one representing Jupiter, with a similar axe in his hand.” These objects he represents in plate 35, numbers 4 and 5, at the end of the volume. The coin has for its obverse a head, with the legend ΣΕΒ [ΣΤΟΣ] ΠΡΟΣ ΠΕΡΤΙΝΑΣ; and on the obverse an image of Jupiter, holding the double axe in one hand, and a spear in the other; with the legend ΜΥΛΑΣΩΝ. The shape of the Greek letters on this coin, as would be expected, corresponds with its age.

It is, of course, perfectly clear that this Zeus of the Aexe, or of the labrys, was the Zeus Stratos of Labradus; and that the name Labradus, or Labrunda (probably originally Labryanda—τὰ Λαβρυάνδα, and thence τὰ Λαβρυάνδα, αὐ diphthong afterwards giving way to a) was derived from λαβρύς, or the Carian word represented by that Greek form. It is not clear just how all the ways of spelling the word arose (besides the above, Fellowes found a tombstone inscription with the word λαβρυάνδος), but each is susceptible of a very natural explanation, which is probably also the historical one. We are prepared to find the v or y missing in the Cessonia inscriptions, as in other cases. Nor is it at all difficult to account for the absence of the letter d in the termination. The termination -da, or -da, or -da, is shown by its frequent occurrence to be a Carian, Lydian, or Lydian termination indicative of a place. Labrunda is one of numerous other examples. Τὰ Λαβρυάνδα would be the natural name for The Place of the Aexe, or of the god of the axe; and would be the natural parent of the other forms. The Greek and Latin authors, naturally, not knowing the significance of the word, added a gentile adjective termination to the name Labrunda, from which the d could hardly vanish. But it would be perfectly natural for the Carians to neglect the d, and call their deity by the word Labrunda, without character, not of place. Had they regarded place, they would have called him Mylabaros, or Mylabanos, that is, of the Myrians; for he was the local tutelary deity of the city Mylasa and the people immediately about it. Labradus was only a κώμη (see Strabo, ubic supra), its whole extent probably no more than the periblos of the temple of Zeus, with its fountain of the same name, and its grove of plane trees; sustaining much the same relation to the city Mylasa as the temple and periblos of Artemis to Ephesus.

It follows as a consequence, in even pace with the foregoing, that the temple found by di Cesnola was one erected by Lycian or Carian settlers, and that the latter came from Mylasa or its immediate neighborhood. This temple is the only known one of that local deity, except the original one at Labrunda. And when these immigrants set it up, doubtless they were unable (even if they knew the word) to call their deity Zeus Labranos, which would mean no more than the Zeus of the κῶμη, to which he had given the name—or who bore the name of the ensign of the Myrians. They could call him nothing else than Zeus (Labranioc, Labrunios or) Labranius, the Mylian Zeus of the Aexe, the Zeus Stratos, of the camp and war.

The deity, though a local one, was ancient. The notice of Herodotus and Lactantius, not to mention these Cessonia inscriptions, show him to have been worshiped for a full thousand years.

That the axe was not found by di Cesnola among the fragments—where the heads were gone—need surprise no one. Indications, however, that this part of Cyprus was settled by Carians or Lycians are abundant in other directions. The
American Oriental Society:

resemblance of the sculptures found about Amathus to those of Lycia has escaped
the observation of no archeologist (see, e.g., Cessola's "Cyprus," pp. 264 ff.).
But with the help of our inscriptions we fix the very home and city of these
settlers. The resemblance of the name Oliasos, too, upon the first of the two in-
scriptions, to the Oliatos of Mylasa, mentioned by Herodotus (v. 37) as one of
the Ionian tyrants, is not to be passed over. The entire structure of the name, both
stem and termination, seems to be Carian. (Compare Steen's note in his Herod.,
Bd. III., p. 36.)

And finally, it is noticeable, as bearing on the question of the origin of the
Cypriote writing, that, save one fragment of three characters, and those not of the
Paphian type, no Cypriote inscriptions were found within the limits of this Lycian
or Carian settlement about Amathus; and that fragment is probably adventitious.
There is no indication that any came from other regions in Cyprus, where the Lycian
style of art or architecture seems to have left no trace.

If these facts stood alone, they would of themselves—and each singly by itself
—bear strongly against the supposition of a Lycian or other Asia Minor origin of
the Cypriote writing; but as it is, they only add one more to the numerous
reasons against that hypothesis—a hypothesis which, however alluring, has
always seemed to me to savour more of fancy than of fair or sound induction.

3. On a proposed edition of the Kauśika-sūtra of the Atharva-Veda, by Prof. Maurice Bloomfield, of Baltimore, Md.

In the summer of 1882 I went abroad, largely for the purpose of collecting
materials for an edition of the Kauśika-sūtra, the chief ritual-book of the Atharva-
Veda. Of this text there existed in Europe for a long time only a single fairly
correct MS., No. 110 of the Chambers collection in the Royal Library at Berlin,
cataloged by Weber, Verzeichnis der Sanskrit-Handschriften. p. 88 (cf. Indische
Literaturgeschichte, 2d ed., p. 168). The date of this MS. is sāṃvatsāra 1670, and a
copy of it belonging to Prof. Whitney, and now in my possession, was the material
I started out with.

Up to the year 1871, nothing new bearing upon the Kauśika had turned up in
Europe, excepting certain copies from Indian MSS which were made for Adalbert
Kuhn, and which are now, I believe, in the possession of Ernst Kuhn. I do not
know what Indian MSS. they were copies of.

In 1871, Prof. Roth obtained through Prof. Kiellhorn's mediation a copy of a
Kauśika MS. of Elphinestone College, of late date (sāṃvatsāra 1792), and of inferior
value. It seems to stand in some genetic relation to the Chambers MS., as it
shares many readings and blunders with the latter.

In 1874, Roth finished a collation of a MS. of the Pāṇa Deccan College, which
had been sent to him by the Bombay government (cf. his Atharva-Veda in Kauśi-
mir, pp. 13, 24): it is dated sāṃvatsāra 1740, sāṃvatsāra 1706. This contains many better
readings than the Chambers and Elphinestone MSS., and is perhaps a copy of, cer-
tainly in some way related to, a MS. dated sāṃvatsāra 1708, which I now have in my
hands, and which will be mentioned below.

In 1878, Roth collated a MS. from Bikanir dated sāṃvatsāra 1735: also a very
fair MS.

Upon my arrival in Tübingen, Prof. Roth kindly allowed me to use his mate-
rials, and I had thus four readings of the text. But with all of them an even ap-
proximately correct edition would not have been possible; and I turned to India
for help. Both Profes. Roth and Bühler aided me in a search in the Indian cata-
logues for MSS. of the text of the Kauśika; the latter also in a search for acces-
sory texts of the padhātā and prayoga-class, which seemed likely to be useful in
making the edition. I addressed myself to Mr. K. M. Chatfield, the Director of
Public Instruction, who responded by sending for me last summer to the India
House thirteen MSS., two of the Kauśika itself, and eleven small texts belonging
to the Atharva-Veda in general. Dr. Rost at once sent them to Baltimore, and
they are now in my possession.

The most valuable of these MSS. is a very excellent text of the Kauśika, older
than any previously known in Europe. It is No. 86 of the paper MSS. catalogued
in Kiellhorn's report to the Director of Public Instruction for the years 1850–1;
written sāṃvatsāra 1708, therefore 230 years old, and in an excellent state of preser-
viation. I have derived as much help from it as from all the other text-MSS. put together. This MS. seems to be the source of the Puna Deccan College MS. mentioned above, and is, as far as I have been able to find out, the oldest codex of the Kāūcika which has as yet been catalogued or noticed.

The other Kāūcika-text which I owe to the liberality of the Indian government is of very inferior value. It is MS. No. 150 of the collection of 1879-80, and a quite modern copy, corrected only in the first few kṣayākiśā; and later on it is in itself almost worthless.

Of the eleven small Atharva-texts, all but one are of subordinate value for the work in hand, though a few passages in the Kāūcika are benefited by one or the other of them. I will merely mention their titles: 1. ātharvavādanam uññyeśṭi-karma; 2. āvānīrakṣā; 3. smānāya-grādhanāhi pravāni-karmavādhiṣṭa ca (sāṅvat 1883); 4. atharvavatara (sāṅvat 1794); 5. ātharvavakramāṇīkeśā (author, Vasudeva); 6. homapadhattik; 7. sodo-pocāra-pāra-brahmadevasu; 8. anuṣṭhānapadhatti kāūcikokāṇāni karmaṇām (a fragment of one leaf; has nothing to do with the Kāūcika; the name Kāūcika used for Atharvan in general; cf. Weber, Ind. Lit., p. 170); 9 and 10 are rahasya-texts.

The eleventh MS., on the other hand, is of very direct value. It has the title: daça karmāṇi brahmavedodanā, and is nothing else than a padhāta to those parts of the Kāūcika which treat what is strictly house-ritual. It begins with the ājñayāntra, which is an amplification of the first kṣayākiśā of the 14th book of the Kāūcika, and then turns to the saṅskāras, from the garbhādhānam to the caturthikarma. Like padhāta generally, it gives the mantras in full, and with the regular accent marks, in red. On the other hand, those parts of the Kāūcika which are especially Atharvanic in their character it does not touch upon at any point. It is a very modern MS., and winds up as follows: sāṅvat 1867, pāthanārthāṁ pañci-lakṣānāṁ. It contains, at the end, a dictum of a certain famous Adhyāya, in which the author of this MS. inquires as to the rite whereof this MS. is a fragment of. The title is aṣṭa kṣayākiśā of the 6th adhyāya. The text is treated as though at an end, at least as far as the immediate source of this copy is concerned, for we have a colophon at the end, with the date pake 1762. Of Dārila I have found no mention anywhere else, but pūdās of the teacher Vatsacarman (pūdā apadāyakaraṇa-karmanā) are cited in Dārila’s comment. As the MS. was under no conditions to be removed from Berlin, I had to get a copy (in devānāgari); and in this I was kindly aided by Dr. Klatt, the custos of the Indian Department at the library.

The MS. of this text is very corrupt, and the comment often very obscure; my repeated efforts to procure from India a complete copy, if such a one be at all in existence, have been unsuccessful. Yet I may fairly say that it forms the most valuable single factor in my materials. The MS. of the text alone rarely divide the sūtras, and that is the chief difficulty in the more obscure parts of the text. For this, and of course also for the exegesis of many difficult passages, it has been very useful. It contains the explanations of a considerable number of Kāūcika-words whose meaning has been either entirely unknown or misunder-
borrowed from other languages have more than two syllables. Borrowed words abound, and are taken from a great variety of sources: from Laos, Cambodian, Malayan, and Chinese; a few from Peguan, Burmese, and Anamese; but by far the greater number from Sanskrit and Pali. There may be said to be three styles: the idiom of the uneducated, consisting of pretty pure native words; the high or court dialect, composed in great part of Cambodian; and the religious or sacred, mainly Sanskrit and Pali. There are five tones: the high tone or rising inflection, the common tone, the period tone, the depressed tone or falling inflection, and the emphatic tone or circumflex. Most syllables, otherwise phonetically alike, have two tones, making as many different words of them; but very few have as many as three tones. There are no inflectional endings, either of declension or of conjunction; such distinctions as are made, are made by means of auxiliary words and particles. The language has few adjectives; they follow the noun which they describe—as does also a noun used adjectively, or with the value of a genitive. The object noun follows the verb. The Siamese are a feeble folk, both physically and mentally. They are slow of apprehension, and have little perseverance in dealing with what causes them mental labor. The translation of western treatises into their language is attended with great difficulties.

5. On the Khasi Language, by Prof. J. Avery, of Brunswick, Me.

The people speaking this language occupy a district known as the Khasia and Jaintia Hills, and approximately included between the 25th and 26th degrees N. lat. and the 91st and 93rd degrees E. long. They number about 170,000, and are divided into two principal tribes—the Khasias proper in the west, and the Jaintias or Syntongs in the east. They represent a truly aboriginal population, and, beyond a few obscure traditions, are known to give no account of an earlier home. In physical character they exhibit the Mongolian type. The interest attaching itself to their language is due, chiefly, to the isolated position which it occupies among the aboriginal tongues of India, differing too much to admit of classifying with any one of them; and to its morphologic character, on the border between the monosyllabic and the agglutinative types of speech. The Khasi has no indigenous literature, having been first reduced to writing by missionaries, who translated the New Testament and a few missionary works. One of these missionaries, the Rev. W. Pryse, has given us a little grammar, combined with vocabulary and reading lessons, of 122 pages, Calcutta, 1855.

The sounds heard in Khasi are represented by 10 vowels, long and short, and 23 consonants, as shown in the following scheme: ai, ei, ii, u, uu, y; k, kh, g, gh, h; j, jh; t, dh, d (dh) n; p, ph, f, b, bh, m; w, l, r; s, sh; h. The vowels are sounded as in German, except that į is heard as in hot; the semi-vowel y is used by Mr. Pryse and others to represent the neutral vowel-sound in hot. The consonants have, mostly, the same power as in English; but the aspirate mutes are pronounced as in Sanskrit, though ph is occasionally heard as f. The sonant aspirate dh occurs only in foreign words.

The Khasi rarely elides or assimilates letters. The only quotable examples of the former are the negative ym and the future sign yn, which regularly lose their initial letter after a vowel, e.g., ba'm for ba + ym, nga'n for nga + yn. Rare instances of assimilation are pيبأl for pyn + lal, pydling for pyn + ding; while forms like pyndap, pyndah are more common.

Though Khasi is usually classed among monosyllabic tongues, its words are by no means all monosyllables. Of Mr. Pryse's list of about 3200 words, nearly seven-eighths have more than one syllable; but a majority of these are easily separable into monosyllabic elements, each having an independent status in the language.

There seems to be no restriction as to the number or kind of letters which may form a Khasi root; though groups of consonants are not common, especially as finals. This language differs from all the other non-Aryan languages of India in possessing a complete system of gender. To every substantive in the language is ascribed a masculine or feminine quality, irrespective of its representing an object actually having sex. The feminine greatly preponderates, and is oftenest applied to abstract ideas and things unencumbered with reason.
American Oriental Society:

Gender is marked by distinctive names, or, more commonly, by the forms of the third personal pronoun. These are *u* for masculine, *ka* for feminine, and *ki* for plural of both genders: e.g. *ka nag* 'he-live,' *ka nong* 'she-live,' *ki nong* 'they-live.' To remove the ambiguity of the plural, the word for 'male' or 'female' is added. These marks of gender always accompany nouns, except in occasional set phrases. They also serve to mark number.

Grammatical relations are denoted in Khasi by position, or, more often, by prepositions or by helping-words with more or less attenuated meanings. In contrast with this usage, the Dravidian, and, for the most part, the Kolarian and Tibeto-Burman families, employ suffixes and postpositions; while the Mon-Anam languages follow the example of the Khasi, and the Tai group uses both systems. The possessor is placed before the thing possessed in the Khasi, Tai, and Mon-Anam languages; but before it in the other groups named.

Adjectives regularly follow their substantives, taking the same gender-sign. They are usually formed by compounding with the root—verb, noun, or other—the prefix *na*, which seems to be the relative pronoun. The adjective is thus a condensed relative clause: e.g. *ka nag ka balik 'a white house,' lit. 'a house which (is) white.' Adjectives are compared by connecting with them the words *kham* 'more' and *tam* 'much': e.g. *balik 'white,' ba-kham-tam* 'whiter,' *balik-kham-tam* 'whitest,' lit. 'white more-much.' The Khasi has native names for numerals up to one hundred, but has borrowed Bengali names for higher numbers. The language is supplied with the usual pronominal words, except the possessive pronoun, whose place is supplied by a genitive construction: e.g. *ka nag jong nga* 'the house of me.' The personal pronouns are:

- *na* I
- *me* (mas.) thou
- *pha* (fem.) she
- *u* (mas.) he
- *ka* (fem.) she

The personal pronouns are identical with the verb *nag* to *nga* etc. is the nearest approach to inflection that we observe in the language. The possession of a relative pronoun distinguishes the Khasi from most of the non-Aryan languages of India, a peculiarity which it shares with the Tai, the Cambodian, and the Anamese tongues. The Khasi verb, like the noun, has nothing corresponding to the synthetic forms of the inflecting languages: but, by the use of auxiliary verbs and adverbs, it manages to serve very fairly the needs of an unlettered people. The verb itself never suffers change.

Number and person are left to be inferred from the subject. The tenses in common use are present, preterit, and future. The first is expressed by the simple root, *u leh 'he does;' the second employs the adverb *la 'since,' u la leh 'he did;' the third uses a sign *yn, u'nu leh 'he will do.' Progressive, or impending, action is indicated by the adverb *dang or sa: e.g. u dang leh 'he is doing, u la dang leh 'he was doing, *u na leh 'he is about to do.' A perfect and a pluperfect tense, formed by the auxiliary *lah 'to be able,' sometimes occur; e.g. *u dang lah leh 'he has done,' u la leh leh 'he had done.' The same collocation of words, or with the substitution of *nang 'to know' for *lah, seems also to serve for a potential mode: e.g. *u lah (or nang) leh 'he can do,' u la lah (or nang) leh 'he could do.' The simple root, proceeded, commonly, by the adverb *serves* for an imperative: e.g. to *leh 'do.' This mode is usually confined to the second person, in which case the subject is not expressed. The root, preceded by *ban, is said to represent an infinitive; but this word is evidently compounded of *ba + yan, so that *u ban ban leh 'he wishes to do' is more exactly 'he wishes that he shall do.' To express a present participle *du* is used, *da leh 'doing,' and to form a past participle *ba-la: e.g. ba-lo-leh 'done'-an adjective form, or, more strictly, an abbreviated relative clause. The verb has no passive voice, but uses in its place an impersonal construction; thus, *u leh kane 'he does this,' but *leh in kane du u 'this is done by him,' lit. 'it does this by him.' The thought is, however, generally so expressed as to avoid this construction.

The structure of the Khasi sentence is direct and simple. The normal order is: the subject followed by its modifiers, verb-auxiliaries, verb, object, and adverbial adjuncts. The copula *long, is usually omitted. The relative clause regularly follows its antecedent clause.

The language shows great aptitude for compounding words, giving it the aspect
Proceedings at New Haven, October, 1883.

of the agglutinating tongues; but its compounds rarely suffer change in the process, and readily fall apart into their elements. The most familiar compounds are: two verbs, of which one specializes the meaning of the other, as singh ‘to offer thanks,’ from aï ‘to give’ and mgh ‘to thank;’ a verb and a noun, as īn ari ‘offering,’ from aï ‘to give’ and vī ‘thing;’ a verb and an adverb, as lehm ‘to give it up,’ from lēh ‘to do’ and mō ‘off.’

There is another sort of compounds, of a closer character: of which one member has, in some degree, sunk to the position of a servile word, and forms classes of words, like a true prefix. Some of these words are: mōn, forming nouns of agency; jīng, abstract nouns; pys, causal verbs; vī, verbs denoting reciprocal action. The first two occur as independent words. It is said that the language employs tones to help out its scanty vocabulary, but of this we cannot speak definitely.

The Khasi is feeling a decided influence from the superior Aryan civilization on its borders, and has borrowed many foreign words, especially from the Bengali. These words are somewhat mouthed over in becoming naturalized, but their identity is seldom greatly disguised. It is impossible to state the proportion of foreign to native words in the language, but the number is so rapidly increasing as to bid fair, in the opinion of some, to speedily extinguish the native speech.


The recent publication of Taylor’s “Alphabet,” and the treatment there given to the Rougé’s theory of the Egyptian origin of the Phoenician alphabet as an absolutely proved fact instead of a still unproved theory, have induced me to prefix my presentation of my own theory by a criticism of that part of Taylor’s book which deals with this subject. In answer to the objection that the Egyptian and Phoenician letter-names resemble each other neither in meaning nor outward form, Dr. Taylor adduces the derivation of the Russian alphabet from the Greek etc. (vol. i. p. 119). By an application of the acrologic principle, bēt became bukti ‘beech,’ delta became doloro ‘oak,’ etc. From this analogy he argues (p. 120): “Hence new acrologic names, significant in Semitic speech, would naturally be invented, as in other borrowed alphabets [this is, I believe, a very exceptional course; cf. the derivation of the Greek, Kittioptic, etc., from the Phoenician, Latin from Greek, etc.]; with the object of making it easy to connect the forms and values of the several characters.” This fails to answer the objection, for the reason that a number of the letter-names have no significance in “Semitic speech.” The mode in which such significance has been found by those whom Dr. Taylor has followed is this: the Hebrew letter-names as they stand have been treated as the original Phoenician names, no comparison being made with the Greek, Samaritan, Ethiopic, Syriac, etc.; words resembling these names have been sought in any Semitic language; and if any similar word is found in any one language, the given letter-name is declared to be “significant in Semitic speech.” The most extreme example is the letter-name lamedh. In Judges iii. 31 occurs the ārāt layymoun malmād, meaning, apparently, ‘ox-goat.’ From this isolated derivative, the meaning of which must be guessed from the context, lamedh is proved to be “significant in Semitic speech,” and to mean “ox-goat.” Besides lamedh, the letter-names for which no tenable etymologies have been offered are hē, saïn or saï, ceth, teth, sādhe, koiph; and uncertain are qmel, samek, pē, and shin.

Dr. Taylor says (vol. i. p. 122) that the “Egyptian alphabet” consisted of twenty-five letters, of which some were vowels. If the Phoenician alphabet was taken from the Egyptian, the loss of the vowels seems utterly unaccountable. Different as may be the Indo-European and Semitic conceptions regarding vowels, it cannot be said that they do not exist in the Semitic languages, nor that the need of some mode of expressing them to the eye has not been felt. Aleph, vē, vē, yodh, and even aïn, have to do double duty, and have made decided progress towards becoming themselves vowels: and this, too, at an early period, as may be seen from the Greek alphabet. Later this need was supplied in Hebrew, Syriac, and Arabic by new signs, or by points. Ethiopic and Mandaic developed
the alphabet into a syllabic system in their efforts to remedy the defect. That part of the history of the Semitic alphabet which we know argues strongly against the theory that it was borrowed from an alphabet possessing vowels distinct from consonants.

Dr. Taylor argues also as to the chronological probabilities of the derivation of the Phoenician alphabet from Egypt. So he says (i. 145): "The Semitic occupation of Egypt lasted for several centuries. The origin of the Semitic alphabet is connected with this occupation by three distinct lines of evidence. The first is external. The sojourn of Israel in Egypt is nearly synchronous with the Hyksos period. Before the Hebrews went down into Egypt the art of writing was unknown to them; when they came out of Egypt they possessed it. The inference seems clear—it must have been acquired from the kindred races who occupied the Delta." This whole statement is a tissue of unproved assumptions, and the chronological argument drawn from those assumptions must be classed as worthless. It is exceedingly desirable, in the present state of our knowledge, to leave Hebrews and Hyksos out of the argument. The intercourse of the Phoenicians with the Egyptians, hence the possibility of their borrowing a system of writing from them, even the probability of their doing so, provided they did not already have one of their own, will be conceded.

Another theory is: that the Phoenician alphabet is an independent invention of the Phoenicians themselves. This is contrary to our knowledge of the laws of nature, and has, I believe, few or no adherents at the present day.

Deecke (Z. D. M. G. xxi.) assigned the origin of the Phoenician alphabet to the new Assyrian cuneiform, an anachronism which needs no further disproof. We seem, so far as our present knowledge enables us to determine, to be limited to three possibilities: an Egyptian origin, some of the objections to which have just been considered; a Hittite origin, for which at present the argument could not be more than the negative one of failure to prove anything else; and the origin from the old Babylonian cuneiform writing.

Classical tradition ascribes to the Phoenicians a Babylonian origin. Phoenician tradition, so far as we know it, and Hebrew tradition, are divided, being both for and against such an origin. Movers, in his Phöniatische Alterthüm, argues against the Babylonian origin, but rests his argument mainly on linguistic grounds. Later discoveries of the close linguistic affinity of the two peoples, their essential identity in religion, the use of Babylonian weights and measures among the Phoenicians in the earliest times of which we have knowledge, with other striking similarities of use and custom, would to Movers himself, I believe, reverse his argument. If the truth of the tradition, supported by such corroborative proof from close connection of language, religion, and civilization be admitted, a strong a priori argument for the old Babylonian origin of the Phoenician alphabet is at once established. It is probable that if the Phoenicians came from a country where a system of writing was not only in use, but actually applied to a Semitic language, they would have brought a knowledge of that system with them. The Phoenician alphabet would be an evolution from that system under new circumstances and conditions. If this tradition be not accepted, the argument of a priori probability is still, I believe, stronger than that for the Egyptian theory. That there was a close commercial intercourse between Phoenicia and Babylon in the earliest times is shown, among other things, by the use of Babylonian weights and measures among the Phoenicians before the 16th century B.C. The adoption of the weights and measures is a strong argument for the adoption of the system of writing also. Phoenician civilization may fairly be said to be borrowed from the Babylonian; it is strange if in one point, and one point only, the Phoenicians should have borrowed from the Egyptians instead. It will be answered that the Egyptian alphabet had reached the alphabetic stage, while the Babylonian cuneiform was still a complicated combination of syllabic and ideographic signs. Admitting the very early development of the so-called Egyptian alphabet, it must be said that the Egyptians themselves never used it. The system of writing in actual use and with which the Phoenicians would have come in contact was about as complicated as that used among the Babylonians. In favor of the adoption of the Babylonian rather than the Egyptian system of writing was the close connection of language. There is an immense gap, it must be acknowledged, between the complicated cuneiform of Babylonia and the completed alphabet of Phoenicia.
The Egyptian theory does give us something to fill up the gap; we can by that theory show the stages of development. The earliest examples of the Phoenician alphabet which have yet been discovered date, perhaps, from 900 to 1000 B.C., certainly no earlier. From Egypt, Babylonia, and Assyria we have documents of a much earlier date. It is assumed, and apparently is a well proved fact, that the Phoenicians had some system of writing from 500 to 1000 years before the date of the earliest monument of their alphabet which we possess. What is the reason of this lack of monuments? Assuming for an instant the truth of the old Babylonian theory, it is not impossible that it may be due to the transition going on from cuneiform syllables and ideograms to real letters, and that the year 1000 B.C. may represent approximately the era at which the alphabet became fixed. Transitional types, it must be remembered, tend to disappear, as has been well shown in the history of evolution in the field of natural science. Turning to the forms of the letters themselves, we find the degree of resemblance between the Egyptian hieratic and the Phoenician and the old Babylonian cuneiform and the Phoenician about the same. The Phoenician letters might have been developed from either; intermediate forms are necessary for a conclusive proof, so far as form is concerned, of such development in either case. As Dr. Taylor himself says (i. 352), letter-names are evidence more reliable than letter-forms, and it is on the names that I place most reliance in the endeavor to prove the old Babylonian origin of the Phoenician alphabet. The accompanying table gives some specimen letters, in the identification of which I feel a tolerable degree of confidence.

Aleph 'ox' is the Babylonian alpú 'ox.' ‘Aleph, bêth, etc., owe their final a to no Aramaean influence, as Dr. Taylor holds. There is a sufficient number of examples of the Hellenization of Hebrew words by adding an a and making them indeclinable to justify us in saying that the Phoenician letter-names were similarly treated.

Bêth, bêth, is Babylonian bitu 'house.'

Gimel. Greek xýmu and Samaritan gaman lead me to suppose that the ground form was gam, the syllabic value of the old Babylonian character. The Greek letter-names present presumably the nearest approach to the Phoenician originals. The oldest forms of the Hebrew names which we possess are the Greek transcriptions in the LXX. translation of Lamentations. These are not old; moreover, there is considerable variation of manuscripts. The fact that some of the letter-names were real words probably caused in Phoenician a tendency to assimilate names derived from syllables to words which they resembled in sound. The same tendency was at work in Hebrew. The Hebrew names as we have them seem to show Aramaean influence also. The derivation of some of the letters from ideograms and some from syllabic signs will explain the difficulty as to the significance of the letter-names in Semitic speech. As to the outward form of this letter, when straight lines are substituted for wedges we have two straight lines (somewhat as in the bracketed form) running into one another. For convenience one of these lines was placed at an angle with the other.

Daleth 'door.' Greek dikóra, is Babylonian diku 'door.' The three preceding letters have been taken from exceedingly common Babylonian signs. This sign, however, is not common in this value, for which cf. II. R. 44 no. 5. V. R. 13, 5, 6, 7a, b. The same sign in the syllabic value ru was the original of the letter rûsh. The original Phoenician name is preserved in the Greek pò. The Phoenician word for 'head' is rûsh (rû). The similarity in sound seems to have led ultimately to an assimilation, and the letter-name adopted by the Hebrews was rûsh or rûsh 'head,' which was written, as in the Phoenician, definitively, with only two radicals. The pronunciation of the Hebrew letter-name which we now have seems due to the influence of the Aramean râsh, which is both the name of the letter and the word 'head.' The original identity of râsh and daleth is shown by the identity of characters in the Abu-Simbel and Thera inscriptions, the Aramean signatures to Assyrian contract tables, the Eshmunazar sarcophagus, and elsewhere, as well as by the antagonistic methods of differentiation pursued in various Greek and Italic alphabets, as shown by bracketed forms in the table.

Zain. Greek delta and Ethiopic zai suggest zâr or zai as the original form, the ta of the Greek being due to the influence of yô. The Syriac name was zâr, zâs, or zain. In the Hebrew there is a question as between zai and zain, the better text in Lamentations (LXX.) being apparently zain, while, on the other side,
Kusebius gives the pronunciation as za' (Prasp. Ev. x. 5). The latter seems the more original, the former may be due to the influence of the Aramean word za'mah 'arms.' The common value of the Babylonian character was the syllable za.

**Yodh.** From the concurrence of Greek etc., this seems to have been the original Phoenician name. The root is common to all the Semitic languages, and means 'hand.' The Babylonian character is common in the meaning 'hand,' and is plainly the picture of five outstretched fingers. In a late Babylonian form of the same, two fingers have disappeared. There was a similar evolution in the case of the early Phoenician character, and the thumb was twisted around.

**Mem.** The Greek gives the original form as μ, which is the common syllabic value of the Babylonian character. This coincided in sound with the Phoenician μσ (μσ) 'water,' which led to the identification of the word and the letter-name, and the consequent translation of the latter into the Hebrew word for 'water.'

**An.** For this no Egyptian original is offered by Dr. Taylor. It means 'eye,' which is also the common meaning of the old Babylonian character (ēm). Its Greek form, β-μικρον, is justified by the Phoenician use of the letter as o.

**Tau.** I believe to be, as the name suggests, a mere 'mark' or 'cross' added as a letter at the end of the already formed Phoenician alphabet, just as new Greek and Latin letters were made and added. The simplest character to form is a rough X or cross, as is shown by our use of the same for the signature of illiterate persons. That the same rough X was used as a signature among the Hebrews also seems to be proved by Job xxxi. 35. This simple cross-stroke was utilized by the Phoenicians to furnish an additional letter when one was required; and in the same way, as it seems to me, originated the χ of the Greeks, our X.

These letters will be sufficient as specimens to show the method of identification which I have pursued. The forms bracketed in the old Babylonian column are given by Oppert and Menant, the rest I have myself identified. The old Semitic forms are meant to show the oldest known types.

I may add that classical tradition is about equally divided between the Egyptian and Assyrian (i.e. Babylonian?) origin of the alphabet.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hebrew name</th>
<th>Egyptian Hieroglyph</th>
<th>Hieratic</th>
<th>Old Semitic</th>
<th>Old Babylonian</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aleph</td>
<td>eagle</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>◐</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beth</td>
<td>crane</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>(R)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gimel</td>
<td>throne</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>X</td>
<td>(L)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daleth</td>
<td>hand</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9A (D)</td>
<td>(L)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Resh</td>
<td>mouth</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zain</td>
<td>duck</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yodh</td>
<td>parallels</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>□ □</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mem</td>
<td>cwi</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>□ □</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>An</td>
<td>lasso</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tau</td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>X</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Proceedings at New Haven, October, 1883. olxxix

7. An account of the Arabic Bible of Drs. Eli Smith and Cornelius V. A. Van Dyck, by Prof. I. H. Hall.

This was a paper prepared at the request of the Society, and consisted first of a written account by Dr. Van Dyck himself, and next of other particulars obtained through correspondence and inquiry, from a number of other sources.

Dr. Van Dyck's account first presented an abstract statement of previous Arabic versions. The first known was that made, under John, bishop of Seville, from the Latin Vulgate, about A. D. 750. This is extant in Spain, but never reached the East. Rabbi Sadh Ghidgson, commonly known as Saadiah of the Babylonian school, translated the Old Testament from Hebrew into Arabic, for the use of Arabic-speaking Jews. This was in the ninth century. The Pentateuch was published in Constantinople in 1546, in Arabic characters; and in Paris in 1545, in Arabic characters; and in London in 1667.

"Abu Said the Samaritan." date unknown, but between the 10th and 13th centuries, made a translation of the Pentateuch. A few copies have been found in Syria. This was edited by Juyboli, of Leyden, and published a few years after his death.

An unknown Jew of North Africa made an Arabic translation of the Pentateuch in the 13th century, which was printed in Europe in 1522.

A translation of the prophetical books from the LXX. was made by a Jew of Alexandria in the latter part of the 10th century. It was printed in Paris in 1546, and in London in 1667.

There are extant parts of the historical books made from the Syriac in the 13th and 14th centuries. Some have been printed in Europe; and occasional fragments are found in Eastern countries.

The version of the Psalms used by the Papal Greek church is a translation of the LXX. made by Abdallah Ibn el-Fadl in the 12th century. It was printed in Aleppo in 1706, and in London, 1725. Another version was printed in Genoa, 1516, and in Rome, 1614; and a third, apparently from the Syriac, was printed at Shueir, Mt. Lebanon, in 1610.

Of versions of the New Testament little is known. The four Gospels seem to have been extant in Arabic since the 7th century, and the other parts since the 9th and 10th. Several versions of the whole New Testament are extant: some made from the Syriac, some from the Greek, and some from the Coptic. The four Gospels were first printed at Rome in 1551, and the whole Testament in Holland, 1616, in Paris, 1645, and in London, 1671.

Early in the 17th century, Sarkis er-Rizz, a Maronite bishop of Damascus, got permission from the Pope to gather and compare copies of the Arabic Scriptures, and make a new version. He began the work in 1620. He reduced all to conformity with the Vulgate. This version was printed at Rome, about 1671, in three folio volumes, with the Apocrypha. It was (without the Apocrypha) adopted by the British and Foreign Bible Society, and printed by them, and circulated in the East by all missionaries until the new version was made.

It is said that the Sultan Muhammad II. ordered a translation of the Old Testament to be made from the Greek into Arabic, but it is not known whether the work was ever executed.

Between 1840 and 1850, Fares esh-Shidiak and Prof. Lee, under the auspices of the Church Propagation Society, made a version of the entire Bible into Arabic. In this the mistakes of King James's English version are copied. It seems that Shidiak translated from the English, and Lee was supposed to reduce it to agreement with the Hebrew. It was printed between 1851 and 1857, but never came into use.

As far back as 1837, the missionaries of the A. B. C. F. M. in Syria were considering the idea of a new version. Dr. Eli Smith began his labors upon Arabic type chiefly with that object in view. His type was ready by 1843, but ill health and domestic affliction prevented his actual beginning of the Bible till 1848. He commenced with the aid of Muallim Butrus el-Bistani, a good Syriac scholar, who first studied Hebrew with Dr. Smith. He made the first draft, and Dr. Smith carefully revised it. As soon as a form was ready, it was put in type, and a copy sent to each missionary in the entire Arabic field, as well as to any other Arabic scholars near enough at hand. These proofs, with any suggestions, emendations,
American Oriental Society:

or corrections, or objections, were sent back to Dr. Smith, who made a careful review with their help. He began with the Old Testament, but soon thought best to leave this and proceed with the New Testament. He left a basis of the entire New Testament, but nothing of it was put in type.

Dr. Smith adopted no known text of the Greek, but selected from Tischendorf, Lachmann, Tregelles, and Alford, as he thought fit. He had gone on far with the New Testament before Alford was published, and he stopped until he could go back and compare what he had done with Alford. On his death-bed he said he "would be responsible only for what had been printed:" namely, Genesis, and Exodus with the exception of the last chapter. Dr. Van Dyck edited the last chapter of Exodus after Dr. Smith's death, which took place in January, 1857; but for a year previous the latter had been able to do nothing at the translation.

In the fall of the same year Dr. Van Dyck (then at Sidon) removed to Beirut and assumed the care of the Press, and continued the translation. It was then first found out that Dr. Smith had followed no published text of the Greek, a thing which the Bible Society could not allow; and the whole New Testament had to be done over. Dr. Van Dyck was directed to begin and finish the New Testament before proceeding to the Old; and also, to follow the Revised Text (i.e. the ordinary English editions professing to reproduce Mill), but with permission to put in as many various readings, in foot-notes, as desirable, especially where the text differed from the Syriac or from any known version in Arabic. Dr. Van Dyck availed himself largely of that permission. He followed the same plan as Dr. Smith in sending out proofs, and using the suggestions of all that were returned to him. Some of the more difficult parts of the Old and New Testaments were kept in type for several months, till he could get the criticism of Rodiger and Fleischer from Halle and Leipzig. He has still their criticisms on the Song of Deborah and other difficult passages. Thirty copies of each proof were distributed as above stated, and the version thus really embodied the work of a large number of Arabic scholars.

The translation was finished Aug. 23, 1864, and the printing of the first edition March 29, 1865. The New Testament had been finished and printed in 1860—a "reference" edition, with parallel passages noted in the margin.

Dr. Smith's immediate assistants were the Sheikh Nadif el-Yazigi and M. Butrus el-Bistani. Dr. Van Dyck's assistant was the Sheikh Yusuf el-Asir, a Muslim and a graduate of the college of the great mosque of el-Azhar in Cairo. Dr. Van Dyck preferred a Muslim to a Christian, as coming to the work with no preconceived ideas of what a passage ought to mean, and as being more extensively read in Arabic literature.

The Jesuits have issued a translation made by them with the assistance of Ibrahim el-Yazigi, son of Dr. Smith's former assistant, and printed in three large 8vo volumes. It is a fair translation generally, and only differs in very slight particulars, so far as Dr. Van Dyck has examined, from his own; and that only for the sake of differing from the Protestant version.

The first part printed of the new (Van Dyck's) version was the New Testament, reference, 12mo, pp. 624. That was [reproduced in small 12mo, pp. 596, and other forms, and] followed by the entire Bible. reference. 8vo. then a voweled New Testament, 12mo, and 16mo without vowels. Dr. Van Dyck then went to New York (1862-5), and in the Bible House got out electotype plates of a plain 8vo Bible. These plates are still in use, and show very little wear. At present [1883] Dr. Van Dyck is engaged in correcting them where small breakages have occurred, in printing so many editions from them.

After two years he returned to Beirut with Mr. Samuel Hallock, and they made there electotype plates of four sizes of the entire Bible, one voweled entire; and three sizes of the New Testament, one voweled; and one set of voweled Psalms in 12mo; in all, between 10,000 and 11,000 plates. Some of these were made after Dr. Van Dyck left the Press, and through oversight of the proof-reader do not altogether conform to the standard copy which he left for comparison. In that way some slight discrepancies have crept in which Dr. Van Dyck is [1883] correcting—re-reading all, so as to make all the plates conform minutely to the same standard, as well as to repair any broken letters or vowel points.

The British and Foreign Bible Society have also electrotyped two editions of the entire Bible of this version, besides several separate parts.
Proceedings at New Haven, October, 1883.

To this account of Dr. Van Dyck were added a few notes, bibliographical and supplementary, with matters, obtained from divers sources, which seemed to be of interest or use. This additional matter was of about equal bulk with Dr. Van Dyck's account. It contained further notice of Dr. Smith's work in persuading the missionaries in the field, and their supporters at home, of the necessity, 1. of a new version of the Bible; 2. of a printing press at Beirut instead of doing the work at Smyrna, nearly a thousand miles away, among people of a different language; 3. of the necessity of having a moderate critical library for the translator; 4. of the necessity of having good fonts of Arabic type; and also some further details of Dr. Smith's manner of working. It was also shown (a fact that Dr. Van Dyck did not mention) that Dr. Smith's MS. translation of the New Testament was destroyed by fire, and that Dr. Van Dyck derived no help from it. Dr. Van Dyck was also assisted by his son Edward as a copyist, and in the selection of Old Testament references for the margin.

Some further notice of Dr. Van Dyck's and Dr. Smith's native assistants was also given; the Sheikh Nasif el-Yazigy having been a noted grammarian, and commentator on Ibn Akil; and M. Butrus el-Bistani being a successful teacher and journalist, as well as author of the Mohit el-Mohit, a large dictionary which answers in Arabic to our Webster or Worcester, and of an Encyclopedia in Arabic, of which several volumes were issued, but of which much remained unfinished and unpublished at his death in (1881 or) 1882.

Some notice was given of Dr. Van Dyck's and Dr. Smith's other works published in Arabic; and of the estimation in which they were held by natives as scholars. The mission has never had another man whose influence for such a work at all approached theirs, or in whose translation the natives would (not to say could) put confidence. Indeed, to Dr. Smith alone is due the credit of originating the enterprise, and fighting the battles, both at home and in the field, which made the existence of the new version possible. Dr. Van Dyck went out to Syria in 1840. It is to these two men that the great work done in Syria is chiefly due; not to mention the exchange among the natives of a manuscript for a printed literature, the bringing to Europe and America of a multitude of accretions to the knowledge of Oriental literature, and the improvement, in every way, of the condition of things in respect thereto, in both the East and the West.

8. Notes on the Nandini Commentary to Manu, by Mr. E. W. Hopkins, of New York City; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

The object of this paper was to show that the author of the gloss called Nandini on the law-book of Manu—1. is not a strict follower of the Kullukah school of interpretation; 2. is not a strict follower of the Medhatiti school; 3. had a text differing from, or in other of these schools; and 4. was ignorant of these schools and the point of dispute between the two. The data are drawn from a MS. in the Grammaton character belonging to the East India Office, and inscribed Manava-Dharma-pātra viii. and ix., with Nandanācārya's commentary Nandīni. "The illustrations are taken from the eighth book only.

1. A follower of the Kullukah school is one who, like Raghavānanda, rarely deviates from Kulluka's text or explanations except in trisves. Such a one the author of the Nandini was not; witness (among others) the following deviations from K., agreeing often with M. (sometimes, in slight var. lect., supported by Raghavānanda): v. 13. sābhā... pravestavā; M. R. N.; 93. caturghraham M. R. (gloss) N., kulam K.; 221. eva M. N., etam K.; 287. N. supports M. (prāga=baka), and the whole gloss resembles that of M.; 314. M. notes as a v. l. K.'s reading dhanuṣa, but prefers dhanum, which N. has; 330. apara M. N., angera K.; 359. M. and N. understand the persons punished to be "a kṣatriya and the other (lower castes).

K. says a gṛha is meant, from the very nature (harshness) of the penalty. Further, 40. M.'s explanation that the money is to be paid from the king's treasury, not found in K., is supported by N.'s gloss kṣatid vā; 98. M. and N. agree in understanding puruṣastra to refer to ownership of a slave, an explanation not given in K.; 392. K. explains "the neighbor next and next but one," M. and N. "the one opposite and next back."

2. On the other hand, N. often agrees pointedly with K. against M.; note the
following (among other examples) vv. 32-3 (N. 30-1), in M. the order is inverted; 64. sākṣa, M. ‘sureties,’ K. N. ‘companions;’ 68. sāraṇa of general similarity M., restricted to caste K. N.: 296. N. agrees with K. in making the penalty a thousand panaś, while M. makes it death, of which the ‘half’ is mutilation.

3. There are points (some of them unimportant) where N. agrees neither with M. nor with K.: thus, for example, v. 68. lingastha, ‘student’ M. K., ‘ascetic’ N.; 151. 415, explanations given in K. are ascribed by N. to ke cit: 159. kārṣaṇam, not ‘writing’ M., but = srivaraṇam N.; 209. ādhiṇe = agnyādhiṇe N., not so M. K.: 210. N. gives a different explanation from that of M. and that of K. (and other authorities). A number of further peculiarities of reading in N. were pointed out. Sometimes it seems as if the simpler explanation of N. was based on a more primitive style of exposition: e. g. at v. 192, M. and K. say ‘without distinction of deposit,’ but N., more harshly for the Brahman, ‘without distinction of caste;’ 243. N. explains ‘ten times’ of the amount spoiled, while M. and K. make a forced reference to the income-tax of the king, which by their rule would amount to half as much again as the wholecrop.

4. Examples of significant silence on the part of N. as to points discussed in K. or M., or where their explanations differ, are found at v. 319, as to whether a mūṣa of gold is meant: 190, as to the ‘methods,’ N. saying simply ‘all other than the one spoken of;’ 73. as to devajottama; at v. 37 we find only pustakā, while M. and K. disagree as to the meaning; and so on. It must be confessed that N. occasionally wears a modern aspect, as in reading v. 283 nāstikāyam for the obscure dādhikāyam of the ordinary text; or in rendering ṣaṇḍāla at v. 309 ‘one who deserts a Brahman,’ thus with Ragh. finding in it virāṇa ‘priest,’ instead of the prepositions e and pra; but in this very verse is given by N. a reading (asaṇṭā ca erpāṇi tyajet) noted in M. as met with; and a little further on (v. 325), a definition referred to in M. as that of ‘others’ is found in N.

Under v. 152 is given a quotation from Rhaspati, like that given by K., yet consisting of only one verse, and that having a v. l. as compared with K.’s version.

The verses numbering in K.’s text 8, 11, 74, 81, 332 are wanting in N., and there are instances of a difference of order: especially after v. 99 and 186. N. has also three and a half new verses, of which only one is supported by the gloss: the others are apparently explanatory, and perhaps marginal amplifications slipped into the text.

Whether a comparison with Govindaśara and Nārāyaṇa would show any special similarity between them and the Nandini, I am unfortunately at present unable to determine, not having access to them. Enough has been said to show that the Nandini deserves some notice as a commentary, were it only for the support it gives the more important ones on conflicting points. It appears very free from the ‘by all means save the Brahman’ spirit of Kullūka; and, that but that it is unknown to the older commentators, it might well be regarded as quite ancient—though much that is apparently antique in it may be the result of geographical difference. As it is, however, when we reflect that many of its readings coincide with those of the earliest extant commentator, Medhātithi, and that some are yet older, agreeing with those of the ‘some’ and ‘others’ referred to by Medhātithi as his predecessors, we may not be far wrong in hazarding the opinion that the Nandini has preserved much that is old in its text and explanations. On its original vagaries we cannot lay much weight; but some of these are interesting from their very uniqueness.

The possibility of the existence of other commentators than those known to us by name—Medhātithi, Govindaśara, Mādhava-Sīyāna, Kullūka, Nārāyaṇa, Rāghavānanda—is the whole list—is hinted at by Kullūka himself, when he says that he cannot support the explanation of Govindaśara in one or two passages (as līl. 127), ‘because it is not supported by Medhātithi and following [commentators, who are] older than Govindaśara’ (medhātithi padaḥ kṛitādhipati ya ca api ruddhatarair anahhyaptatvār). As Rāghavānanda mentions the commentators known to him as ‘Kullūka, Nārāyaṇa, Govinda, Medhātithi,’ it might be rash to suggest that Nandana is one of the ruddhatarair (Rāghavānanda, however, does not notice Mādhava in this list); yet he may have preserved some from one of these ‘elders,’ and, being geographically separated from the influence of the other commentators, he may represent us more or less that lay behind them.
Proceedings at New Haven, October, 1883. clxxxiii

9. On the professed Quotations from Manu found in the Mahābhārata, by Mr. E. W. Hopkins; presented by the Corresponding Secretary.

Of this elaborate paper (offered as the first of a series of studies on the legal data found in the epic), only the main points are given here in abstract. Its intent was to examine the precepts ascribed to Manu by the compilers of the Mahābhārata; and especially, to see what light the habit of this great work casts upon a certain usage, common in works on law, and occasionally employed in the law-book attributed to Manu himself—that of emphasizing a remark or rule by adding “Manu said”—or something equivalent. It is the personal Manu referred to in the epic, not the quotations from the māṇaṇa-dharma-pīṭṭha at large, that are here had in view.

The paper begins with an exposition of the sources of law professedly held by the Mahābhārata, which are not much different from those acknowledged in Manu itself, namely custom, the usage of the good, etc. Among the many authorities referred to, no special distinction seems to be awarded to one over another. Manu sometimes heads the list, but sometimes not; there is certainly no tendency to refer as ultimate authority to a code of Manu. Passages are found, and even ascribed to Manu, which are against both the text and the spirit of the law-book. Manu himself appears in the epic in various characters: as law-maker, king, demigod, and creator; and the genealogy given him is a very mixed and changeful one; the chief mythology about him is a late product.

The quotations ascribed to Manu were reviewed in detail, being divided into three groups, as found respectively in the earlier books, the twelfth, and the thirteenth book; and added remarks in each case show its relation to the present text of the law-book known as Manu’s. A summary of the results shows that of the 33 quotations, 8 occur in books i.—xi., two being traceable in the law-book and six not so; of the 15 in book xii., eight are traceable; of the 10 in book xiii., seven are traceable. Of the 17 thus ranked as traceable, only five are verbal quotations; the rest agree in doctrine merely.

The received explanation for the untraceable quotations is that they come from an older recension of the Manu-treatise, in which they were contained. This is facile, but far from satisfactory. All probabilities are against the treatise having ever been longer than it now is; the law-books grow, not contract, with time. Another view may be presented, with all due difference. Manu and Manu’s law-book are very different. Manu is an ancient sage, a demigod; a quotation of his opinions was decisive; but the law-book is a thing seldom quoted, and chiefly in the modern part of the epic. It may be inferred then that the treatise was worked out between the time when the bulk of the epic was composed and its final completion; that there existed previously a great number of sententious remarks, proverbial wisdom, moral precepts, etc., ascribed to the ancient hero Manu as a type of godly wisdom, and floating in popular currency as “Manu’s laws”; and these were welded into one with the “laws of the Māṇava sect” or school. The latter may have built up their own śāstra and rājadharmas without any reference to Manu; but then, seizing upon the current sayings of Manu, they appropriated and worked them in. This process may well have begun in the Śāstra period. Therefore it is that we find in the law-book itself so many verses that end with “thus said Manu:” if Manu said the whole, why emphasize these few? These in fact are those which kept their old form though incorporated. In the same way is explained another fact: namely, that some of the most modern verses in the metrical law-book claim to have been “said by Manu”: they were spurious, and tucked in later to support a doctrine unknown to the original work. Hence also such quotations in other law-books: doctrines unknown to or at variance with the Māṇavān text are palmed off upon us as the utterance of Manu, and we are expected to be convinced by them. Among these are some which we are perfectly sure never could have been in the extant or in any other version of the Māṇavān law-book. Among the metrical law-books of modern type, the number of untraceable quotations from Manu in no wise diminishes. Some discussion of them will be presented at another time.

It is not easy to realize without a detailed examination what an iota these professed quotations from Manu, verified and unverified, are among the mass of
verses in the Mahābhārata that correspond with our present Mānavañ text. Most of these are without any quotation of authority; some are noted not as 
smṛti but as āditi; some, again, are attributed to entirely other law-givers. Nor should one fail to notice now large a storehouse of authorities is drawn upon by the epic, or suppose that the verses formally attributed to Manu suffice to show that his "law-book" was regarded as of paramount importance. The paper closes with a list and citations of the most prominent among the law-givers mentioned, especially in the twelfth book, in the Mahābhārata.

10. The Various Readings of the Sīma-Veda, by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

Prof. Whitney explained that he had recently had his attention drawn more closely to the mantra-material peculiar to the Sīma-Veda, by finding that this was not quite fully taken account of in the Petersburg lexicon, notwithstanding its very complete and thorough working-up in Benfey’s special Glossary to the text: doubtless the general near acquaintance of the Sāma- with the Rīk-Veda had induced a little neglect, which was also favored by the extremely troublesome method of citation (with five separate items) with which the text had been needlessly burdened by the editor. Examples of omitted words and forms are: riṣvakodīvan, i. 437; ṣūkādī, i. 531; aṣṭuyādī, i. 537; sōbhāthi, ii. 355; abhādātī and kṣītā, i. 536; pratīṣṭapāthā, ii. 1069. He had been then led on to a detailed examination and estimate of that part of the Sāma-material which consists in its variations from the Rīk-readings. In common with most students of the Veda (apparently), he had been wont to content himself with accepting the value of the Sāma-readings given originally by Benfey (in the Preface to his edition), and repeated (or arrived at independently) by Weber (in his History of Indian Literature): namely, that they are in general older and more original than the Rīk-readings. This view has been recently assented to by Ludwig (in his Rīk-Veda, vol. iii. p. 91), but after an exposition and discussion which to many will seem to conduct more naturally to a contrary conclusion; and it has been sharply controverted by Anrecht (in his Preface to the second edition of his transliterated Rīk-Veda). In this condition of things, it had seemed to the speaker as if a complete digest and orderly presentation of the Sāma-Veda variants would be a useful thing; such a one he had accordingly been engaged in drawing up, and he laid a part of his work (not yet reduced to final form) before the Society at this meeting.

The interest of an exhibition like this lies in part in the question as to the superiority of one of the texts to the other; but in a much higher degree in its bearing on the history of tradition of the Vedic hymns, and on the higher criticism of the texts transmitted to us. Each text having been handed down in a well-nigh perfect and unchanged form after its fixation at a certain period, the variants shown by the same verse in different texts become to us, as has been repeatedly pointed out, the equivalents of the various readings of the manuscripts of a classical text, for example; and their study becomes the best and the necessary preparation for the attempts, from which we cannot wholly refrain, at conjectural amendment of one and another text—even of that of the Rīk-Veda itself. Just as the suggested re-ordering of the verses of Rīk-Veda hymns, practised especially by Roth and his school, find their best warrant and justification in the differences of arrangement of the verses of the same hymn in different Vedic texts, so every suggested alteration of a Sīma-Veda reading wins plausibility if similar variations can be shown among the Vedic versions of identical material. And the Sīma-Veda variants ought to be especially valuable for such a use, because of the close relationship of the two versions, and their at any rate only slight difference in point of antiquity and originality. The time has quite gone by at present when the existence of such a body of verses as the Sīma-Veda could be deemed explained by asserting it to have been "extracted from the Rīk-Veda," and the existence of its few peculiar verses and its various readings, by declaring it to come "from a different and more comprehensive text of the Rīk-Veda than the one now in our hands." We see now that the various collections must in the main have proceeded separately and independently out of one common body of traditional material, as truly as, for example, the varying versions of an English or Scotch ballad; and while we may confess the general superiority of one collec-
tion over another in point of readings, we can never be certain until after close
examination which text in any given particular may give the best version. And,
since all Hindu tradition on the subject is either wanting or worthless, all we can
ever know as to the history of transmission of that ancient literature prior to the
time of fixation of the several texts must come from their comparison.

Of the 1474 Rig-Veda verses found also in the Sāma-Veda (leaving a remnant
of only 75, of which 21 occur also in other Vedic texts), over 850, or more than
four sevenths, show identically the same form in both texts. But the proportion
of these is quite different in the two parts of the Sāman. In the second Part
(composed generally of little groups of verses, oftenest three in number, belonging
together, and found together also in the Rig-Veda), the unvaried verses are not
much less than three quarters (about 750 to 425); while in the first Part (made
up of isolated verses) they are considerably less than half (about 240 to 300).
This marked discordance can hardly be deemed accidental merely, especially as it
is found to exist also between the two portions of part I.: namely, the verses
found only in part I., and those (249 in number) which occur also in part II.; for
of the latter a decided majority are unvaried, but of the former, less than a half.
A similar relation is seen in the verses peculiar to the Sāman; they are consid-
erably more than twice as numerous proportionally in part I. as in part II. In
our present ignorance of the history of the minor collection, and of the relation
of its two parts, these facts are not to be disregarded.

In presenting the body of variants in their detail, the method is followed of
taking up first those of less consequence. Thus, the scheme begins with the
differences simply in the order of single words and of pādas. Then come the
phonetic differences (those in regard to a lengthened final vowel, the abso-
ption of an initial a, the lingualization of a s or n, and so on); differences of accent
follow; then differences of equivalent inflectional forms (as mādhas and mādhvās
etc.), substitutions of one equivalent word for another without change of con-
struction, substitutions of one form for another from the same verb- or noun-
stem, exchanges of forms of different stems from the same root; then the more
considerable variations of reading, and, last among these, the cases where it
seems more or less probable that one reading has been unintelligently put in place
of another which it resembled in sound. In the great majority of cases the varia-
tions are apparently indifferent as regards originality, the one being as primitive
as the other; but where anything different from this is to be noted, the advan-
tage is so uniformly on the side of the Rig-Veda reading that the general opinion
to the contrary expressed by Bonfey and Weber appears to be without any suffi-
cient foundation. Details must be omitted until the paper is published in full.

Prof. Francis Brown, of New York, gave a brief account of the
International Congress of Orientalists at Leyden this year, at
which he had been present, and suggested the possibility of some
future congress being held in this country.

After passing a vote of thanks to the Faculty of the Divinity
School for the use of their room at the present meeting, the
Society adjourned, to meet again in Boston in May next.
Proceedings at Boston, May 7th, 1884.

The Society met, as usual, in the Library of the American Academy, at ten o'clock. The meeting was called to order by the Vice-President, Dr. N. G. Clark, of Boston.

The minutes of last autumn's meeting were read and approved, and the order of business for the day was announced. The reports of the retiring officers were then presented.

The Treasurer's summary of accounts was referred to Messrs. Avery and Hall as a Committee of Audit, and found correct; it is as follows:

**RECEIPTS.**

Balance on hand, May 2d, 1883. $984.47
Annual assessments paid in. $95.00
Sale of the Journal. 72.62
Interest on deposit in Savings Bank. 39.25
Total receipts for the year. 206.87

**EXPENDITURES.**

Printing of Proceedings. $134.90
Expenses of Library and Correspondence. 18.50
Total expenditures of the year. $153.40
Balance on hand, May 7th, 1884. 1,037.94

The Bradley type-fund now amounts to $955.53.

The Librarian reported the following additions to the Library: 50 whole volumes, 49 parts of volumes, 64 pamphlets, and one manuscript. The accessions were chiefly by exchange. The whole number of titles is now, of printed books, 4263, and of manuscripts, 141.

The Committee of Publication announced that the second half of volume xi. of the Journal was not yet in the printer's hands, but that there was a good prospect of completing it soon, by the issue of Professor Bloomfield's edition of the Kauçika Śutra (which is now nearly ready for the press), or otherwise.

The Directors announced that, in response to an invitation from the Johns Hopkins University, they had appointed the autumn meeting to be held in Baltimore, and had made Messrs. Gilman and Bloomfield and the Corresponding Secretary a Committee of Arrangements. The date was to be Wednesday, October 29th, unless the Committee found reason to change it. They had reappointed the Committee of Publication of last year, substi-
tuting the name of Professor Toy for that of the late Dr. Abbot. The Committee now consists of Messrs. Salisbury, Toy, Van Name, Ward, and Whitney. The Directors proposed and recommended to the Society for election the following persons:

As Corporate Members—

Mr. Robert Arrowsmith, of New York;
Gen. Henry B. Carrington, of Boston;
Mr. Harry T. Peck, of New York;
Mr. Herbert W. Smyth, of Williamstown, Mass.;
Prof. John Phelps Taylor, of Andover, Mass.

The gentlemen thus proposed were elected without dissent.

The presiding officer appointed Messrs. Dickerman, Crane, and Lyon a committee to nominate officers for the ensuing year, and the following ticket, brought in and proposed by them, was elected without dissent:

President—Professor W. D. Whitney, Ph.D., LL.D., of New Haven.
Recording Secretary—Professor C. H. Toy, D.D., LL.D., of Cambridge.
Corresponding Secretary—Professor C. R. Lanman, Ph.D., of Cambridge.
Secretary of the Classical Section—Professor W. W. Goodwin, Ph.D., LL.D., of Cambridge.
Treasurer and Librarian—Mr. Addison Van Name, of New Haven.

Directors—Professor John Avery, of Brunswick, Maine; Professor Joseph H. Thayer, D.D., of Cambridge; Mr. A. I. Cotheal and Professor Charles Short, LL.D., of New York; Professor Isaac H. Hall, Ph.D., of Philadelphia; and President Daniel C. Gilman, LL.D., and Professor Maurice Bloomfield, Ph.D., of Baltimore.

The Corresponding Secretary (Prof. Whitney) read the names of the members who had died during the preceding year: namely, of the Corporate Members—

Prof. Ezra Abbot, of Cambridge;
Prof. Arnold Guyot, of Princeton;
Mr. Richard S. Fellowes, of New Haven;
Prof. S. Wells Williams, of New Haven.

and of the Honorary Member—

Safvet Pasha, of Constantinople.

Prof. Whitney remarked upon the unusually severe losses of the Society during the past year, and upon the life and work of the gentlemen just named, especially in their relations to the Society. In particular, he spoke of the character and achievements of the late President, Prof. Williams. He recounted the services of Dr. Williams in the conduct of the diplomatic intercourse
between China and the United States, and his successful efforts to 
procure the insertion of the "toleration clause" in the Tientsin 
treaty of 1858, and spoke finally of the results of his persistent 
and well-directed literary activity. He also read a letter from 
Dr. D. B. McCartee, who spoke with deep feeling of his life-long 
tercoourse and friendship with Dr. Williams, and of the latter's 
courage as a pioneer, his zeal in promoting the Christian religion, 
and his extraordinary productivity. Prof. Thayer paid a hearty 
and fitting tribute to the memory of his friend, Prof. Abbot, 
calling to mind his profound and varied learning, and the beauty 
and modesty of his character. He was followed by Prof. Hall, 
who spoke of Prof. Abbot's self-sacrficing devotion to his friends.

On motion, a Committee, consisting of Dr. Clark, Prof. Whitney, 
and Prof. Toy, was appointed to make some suitable expression 
of the feelings of the Society respecting its loss in the death of 
Messrs. Williams and Abbot. The following minutes were pre-
pared by them and unanimously adopted:

The American Oriental Society desires to put on record its sense of the great 
loss sustained by the world of scholars and by this Society, in the death of its 
President, the Hon. Samuel Wells Williams, LL.D. He was a man of rare intel-
lectual gifts, of singular industry, and of fidelity to all the trusts committed to 
him. He was of wide and varied learning, and without a superior in the knowl-
edge of the country, the language, the literature, and the moral and religious 
systems of the Chinese. He was eminent for his services to his native land as 
Secretary of Legation of the United States in China, and for the aid which he 
rendered to commerce and to Christian missions by his executive labors, by his 
important contributions to periodical literature, and by his published works, espe-
cially The Middle Kingdom, The Commercial Guide, and The Syllabic Dictionary 
of the Chinese Language.

The Society desires in like manner to express its sense of the bereavement that 
it has suffered in the death of Ezra Abbot, D.D., LL.D., Professor of the Criticism 
and Interpretation of the New Testament in the Harvard Divinity School at Cam-
bridge. He was for nearly thirty years the faithful Recording Secretary of the 
Society. As a student of the textual and historical criticism of the New Testa-
ment, he won for himself an enviable reputation for exact and broad scholarship, 
and made contributions of enduring value to the department of learning to which 
he was devoted.

A few of the facts respecting the lives of these two men may be 
mentioned here:

Samuel Wells Williams was born at Utica, New York, September 22d, 1812. 
His father, a highly esteemed citizen of Utica, was a book-seller, and engaged also 
in the business of printing and binding. The son entered the Rensselaer Institute 
at Troy in 1831. The next year he was invited to go to China as a missionary 
printer of the American Board. He immediately accepted, but on condition that he 
be allowed a year to learn more thoroughly the printer's art, whose rudiments he 
had acquired as a school-boy. He sailed from New York, June 15th, 1833, reaching 
Canton in October. Here he was met by Dr. E. C. Bridgman, who had gone out 
in 1830, and had begun the publication of the Chinese Repository in 1832. Dr. 
Williams took charge of the printing-press which had been sent out from New 
York, and for more than twenty years he assisted in the publication of the 
Repository. In 1835, he went to Macao, and, working with his hands as a type-
setter, he completed in seventeen months Medhurst's Dictionary. In 1837, he 
sailed to Japan to take home some shipwrecked mariners. He was not allowed 
to land at all, and on returning, he learned from them their language, and 
In 1844, he returned to America. In 1853, when the American Government
at attempted to open Japan, he accompanied Commodore Perry as interpreter. The next year he resumed his missionary work in China, and in 1855 was made Secretary and Interpreter to the American Legation. In 1857, he accompanied Minister Reed to Shanghai and Tientsin, where England, France, Russia, and the United States made treaties for mutual intercourse with China. To Dr. Williams is due the insertion of Article xxix., which provides for the toleration of the Christian religion. In 1859, he went to Peking, to aid in the ratification of the treaty of Tientsin. During 1860 and 1861, he was absent on leave at home for about a year. In 1862, Dr. Williams removed his family to Peking, and there he resided until October 25th, 1876, the forty-third anniversary of his arrival in China, when he bade farewell to the Flowery Land, the scene of his laborious and successful life. He established himself at New Haven, and was elected Professor of the Chinese language and literature in Yale College, in 1877. In 1881, he was made President of the American Bible Society and of the American Oriental Society. His last public duty was to preside at the meeting of the Oriental Society in October, 1883. His death occurred at New Haven, on the 16th of March, 1884.

To the twenty volumes of the Chinese Repository Dr. Williams contributed about 140 articles. These included twenty articles upon subjects connected with the Chinese government and people, sixteen relating to the natural history, and ten to the arts, sciences, and manufactures of China. The Journal and Proceedings of the American Oriental Society, the Journal of the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, and the volumes of the United States Diplomatic Correspondence relating to China contain many learned and important papers from his hand. His Eazy Lessons (in the Canton Dialect), appearing in 1842, his English and Chinese Vocabulary of the Court Dialect (1844), his Tonic Dictionary of the Canton Dialect (1856 and 1876), and his three volumes of the Anglo-Chinese Calendar, were of inestimable value to students of the spoken dialects at a time when helps were few. His Syllabic Dictionary of the Chinese Language (1874) contains 12,527 characters, with the pronunciation as heard at Peking, Shanghai, Amoy, and Canton. In 1844 appeared The Chinese Commercial Guide, and this most useful work reached a fifth edition in 1863. The work by which Dr. Williams is best known to the general public is The Middle Kingdom, which first appeared in 1848; and it was with feelings of devout thankfulness that he alluded to the completion of the beautiful new edition of this work toward the close of his serene and happy life at New Haven.

Dr. Abbot was born in 1819 at Jackson, Maine, and, after studying at Phillips Exeter Academy, entered Bowdoin College, and graduated in 1840. After teaching several years in Maine, he went to Cambridge in 1847, taught there in the High School in 1852, was appointed Assistant Librarian of Harvard College in 1856, and Bussey Professor of New Testament Criticism and Interpretation in the Harvard Divinity School in 1872, which last position he held till his death. His first publication was the Catalogue of the Cambridge High School Library in 1859, and the American edition of Smith's Dictionary of the Bible is greatly enriched by valuable bibliographical contributions from Dr. Abbot. As an example of the minuteness and breadth of his exegetical study may be cited his article on Romans ix. 5, in the Journal of the Society of Biblical Literature and Exegesis. On textual criticism, the subject to which he devoted most of his time, he has unfortunately published comparatively little in his own name. To Dr. F. H. A. Scrivener he sent a long and important list of corrections to his Plain Introduction to the Criticism of the New Testament. As member of the American Committee of Revision of the New Testament, he had opportunity to make a worthy use of his text-critical learning; but, beyond such results as may exist in the revised translation and a few newspaper articles, he has left no record of his researches. The first volume of the Prolegomena to Tischendorf's eighth edition of the Greek New Testament contains textual and grammatical contributions by Dr. Abbot, prepared with minute accuracy and careful discrimination. His only historical-critical work is The Authorship of the Fourth Gospel (1880), an examination of the external evidence in the case, a work remarkable for scholarly precision and close reasoning. An account of his printed works gives no idea of his unceasing activity, and only his pupils and friends know the inspiration given by the high character of his scholarship, and the purity, faithfulness, and self-sacrificing devotion of his daily life.
American Oriental Society:

The Missionary Herald for April, 1884, contains a notice of the life of Dr. Williams by Pres. Porter, and the Bible Society Record for March 29th has another, by Mr. E. W. Gilman. Professor Thayer's commemorative notice of Dr. Abbot appeared in the Independent for March 27th and Apr. 3rd, 1884 (reprinted in the Christian Register for Apr. 3rd), and another notice, from which the above is excerpted, appeared in the Nation of March 27th.

The Corresponding Secretary further gave some account of the life and labors of the distinguished scientist, Prof. Guyot, during many years an interested, though for the most part not an active, member of the Society; and of Mr. Fellowes, an eminent citizen of New Haven, whose liberal hand and efficient helpfulness in every good work make his loss keenly felt there. He also stated what particulars were known to him of the enlightened and scholarly Turkish gentleman, who, elected at the instance of our late member, Hon. J. P. Brown, had since 1850 graced our List of Members with his name. Safvet Pasha was at one time Grand Vizier of the Ottoman Empire. His death occurred on the 17th of Nov., 1883.

The correspondence of the half-year was presented, and some parts of it were read.

The following communications were presented at the meeting:

1. On a Cippus from Tarsus, bearing a Greek Inscription with the name of Paul, by Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of Philadelphia.

In the late spring of 1871, the U. S. ship "Alliance" brought down from Marseille, the port of Tarsus, a round marble cippus from the site of the latter city; which was given by the American consul (or vice-consul) there to the Hon. John T. Edgar, then U. S. Consul at Beirut. Mr. Edgar gave it to the museum of the Union Theological Seminary in New York city, through the Rev. Dr. Philip Schaff, who was then returning from his tour in the East. The stone is now in the Seminary Museum in New York, labeled: "Inscription from Tarsus, with the name of Paul." This label is true enough, but the inscription has no reference to the great apostle who was once Saul of Tarsus.

The inscription is in uncial letters, rather late, plainly and deeply cut, and reads as follows:

ΤΟΠΟΣ ΠΑΙΛΟΥ
ΜΑΤΙΡΟΥΨΟΥΣΙΣ
ΚΟΠΙΟΥΚΑΙΒΟ
ΑΣΙΑΟΥΤΟΤΗΣ
ΑΤΟΥΤΑΜΕΤΤΗΣ

Or, in English, "Tomb of Paulus Magirus the [son] of Episcopus, and of Basious his wife."

The chief interest in this inscription lies in the feminine proper name, which shows that in certain Cilician inscriptions in C. I. G., where the editor has ventured corrections, the stone is probably right and the editor wrong.

Examples of the genitive feminine ending in -ους (nominative probably—sometimes certainly—-οις) are to be seen in C. I. G. 4822 (μητρος Φιλοστός), 4826 (μητρος Σαραποντος, where the editor has corrected the σ to τ), 4921 (Πετροκοντος μητρος, where the editor has corrected the second τ to σ, 4403 and 4404 (where the editor has ventured similar corrections).

If this Tarsus inscription were treated in the same way, we should probably change the Βοσιανουτος to Βοσιανουτος or Ευσιανουτος; but the better opinion would be that the stone-cutter was right in all the instances.

2. On a Shapira Roll in Philadelphia, by Prof. I. H. Hall.

In the Ridgway Branch of the Philadelphia Library is deposited a leather roll, composed of pieces of Synagogue-rolls of different hands and ages, each full-sized.
piece containing regularly five columns, and each column regularly fifty-one lines. The pieces are stitched together with linen or cotton thread. The leather is sheepskin, most of it stained red. It much resembles the Karaite rolls. The columns number forty-seven, and the contents of the roll are the entire book of Numbers—no more, no less. Spaces mark the common Hebrew sections; but there are no verse divisions. The age of none of the pieces seems to be very great; but in this respect I have not examined it closely.

The roll was bought from Shapiro in Jerusalem, a number of years ago, by a well-known citizen of Philadelphia, on the strength of Shapiro’s statements, and of a letter of the late Professor Tischendorf, which accompanies the MS. The letter reads as follows:


Geh. Rath Dr. von Tischendorf."

Leipzig, Sept., 1870.

For various reasons I suspected that the letter was a forgery, and I had phototypes prepared, which I sent to sundry people in Germany who I thought would be able to determine the question of its genuineness. These phototypes stirred up a number of queries there, of which the most burning one was whether the MS. was the late batch of fragments which Shapiro tried in vain to sell in Germany and England. (But the MS. has been in Philadelphia for twelve years.) Von Gebhardt, of Göttingen, was the first to suggest that the letter was probably sold with another roll than the ones for which it was written, and he thought the letter genuine. Dr. C. R. Gregory thought it genuine, and showed it to Tischendorf’s widow, who pronounced it genuine. At length von Gebhardt sent it to Professor Franz Delitzsch, who pronounced the letter genuine, and knew all about the rolls for which it was written. There were two rolls left with Joh. Alt, of Frankfurt a. M., by Shapiro for sale, and were described by Delitzsch in the (Augsburg) Allgemeine Zeitung for 10 February, 1870; one being a roll from Sans in South Arabia, much resembling this, but written with four columns regularly to a section of the leather, and containing between two copies of a repeated portion of Leviticus, a note to the effect that Abu Ali Sadi had caused the MS. to be written and presented for the improvement of his soul’s health, in A.D. 1558. The other roll was from Hebron, and on parchment.

We need not dwell on the fact that, though Tischendorf was a prince among Greek palaeographers, he had no reputation as a judge of Hebrew MSS.; and it is plain that he neglected or overlooked the date, which would have showed that his opinion put the age of the MSS. two centuries too far back.

But it is plain that the letter was not written with any reference to this Philadelphian MS., and that its connection therewith is a fraud. The roll is a curiosity worth keeping; but no such treasure as the two rolls for which the letter was written.

3. On the Stanza, Rigveda x. 18. 14, as illustrating the Varieties of cumulative Evidence that may be used in the Criticism of the Veda, by Prof. C. R. Lanman, of Cambridge.

The eighteenth hymn of the tenth book of the Rigveda is one of a collection of five funeral hymns, and is the best and most important of them. Except the last or fourteenth stanza, the hymn is clear and intelligible throughout. It has been translated and explained by Prof. Whitney in his Oriental and Linguistic Studies, i. 50. There is no question of importance respecting the integrity of the text of the first thirteen stanzas. They contain an appeal to death to depart far away; then follow stanzas to be said in connection with ceremonies typifying the separation of the living from the dead; then other stanzas which accompanied the commitment of the body to the ground; and finally, in the thirteenth stanza, a prayer
that the kindly spirits that hover about may not let the earth press hard on the departed, and that Yama may provide for him a dwelling in the other world. Then come the words:

\[
\text{prati'c'ina mā'ṃ dhani'vaḥ paryām uś'vā dādhuḥ |} \\
\text{prati'c'īn jagrābā vā'c'om ēś'vam račanāyā yathā |}
\]

The stanza is translated by Geldner and Kaegi thus: 'On a future day they will take me, as a plume from the arrow. I hold thy voice back, as a steed with a rein.' The words are put in the mouth of a sorcerer who is conjuring a sick man nigh to death. The sense would then be: To be sure, the day is coming when I must die, when they will take me as they do the plume from the worn-out and useless shaft, in order to throw away the shaft like as they will my corpse. But although my day will come. I nevertheless hold your voice or breath of life back in your body by my magic power. [With this interpretation the comparison halts badly. Rather, they will take me as they do the torn and useless plume from the still useful shaft, in order to throw away the plume, for pṛṣṇam, not śivā, is compared with mām.] The above rendering is open to several objections. The first half of the stanza is not an opposition antithesis to the last. The rendering of the perfect, a dādhuḥ, as future is inadmissible. The words pratiścina and pratiści ought to have essentially the same meaning. The word uśi is hardly equivalent to ēṃman or manas (RV. x. 60. 8), and if it did mean 'thy voice, i.e. breath of life,' there ought to be a vā or i.e. The interpretations of Graesemann and Ludwig are not convincing.

On these accounts, the rendering of Whitney, although tentative, is perhaps to be preferred:

They've set me in a fitting day
As one the plume sets on the shaft,
I've caught and used the fitting word
As one a steed tames with the rein.

This then would have to be taken as an expression, on the part of the author of the hymn, of self-complacency, of a consciousness that he had made a good hymn at the right time and place, and with as good skill as a skillful horseman, for no skill was more prized than his.

The Rigveda consists of a large amount of material which was for a long time handed down by memory and word of mouth. During this period of memorial tradition, it was natural that parts of hymns should be forgotten, and that even all but a single stanza or two of what was once a complete hymn should be forgotten. In this way it came to pass that, along with the hundreds of complete hymns, there were in the mass of remembered material also scores of isolated stanzas. Now when this material was reduced to written form, the complete hymns were arranged in the main according to certain simple principles (which concerned their authorship, the divinity invoked, and the length: see Delbrück, \textit{Jenner Literaturzeitung}, 1875. no. 49), but there was palpable difficulty with regard to these isolated fragments. Where should these be put? Often such a fragment contained some word or name or allusion which linked it to a certain stanza of some complete hymn, and was accordingly inserted after that stanza in the hymn. In this way have occurred many interpolations whose cause is easy to discern. But oftener still, these isolated stanzas were like dogs without a master, claimed for no author, and having no belongings. In these cases they received a place in the written collection at the end of complete hymns. It has often been remarked, by Roth and others, that the favorite place for isolated, spurious, and modern stanzas is at the end of hymns or books. This point is well illustrated by the first of the \textit{kūśālikāni sākārāni}, the supplementary hymns or later additions, as given by Aufrecht, vol. ii. 672: it follows hymn 50 of the first book, the last of Pra-kāya's hymns. This hymn consists of nine stanzas in three strophes of undoubted integrity. At the end of these strophes, or the hymn proper, come four stanzas, relegated by their metre and sense to the limbo of doubtful canonical, but still passing in the MSS. as genuine. And then finally, in the supplement, comes the pāśākā, or 'later addition,' whose posteriority and spuriousness was admitted even by the Hinduls. Other things being equal, therefore, a stanza which occurs at the end of a hymn and does not stand in any easy connection with the rest of it, may be more safely regarded as an isolated, spurious, or modern stanza than if it occurred in some other position.
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1884.

Even with Prof. Whitney's rendering, the stanza in question is, co ipse, a later addition. But it is interesting, and perhaps useful, to point out a remarkable number of concurrent items of evidence for the lateness of the stanzas.

1. It is at the end and out of connection with the rest of the hymn.
2. Its metre is of a different kind from that of the body of the hymn.
3. The metre is not a good Vedic specimen of its own kind; it has, e.g., a trochee in the cadence of the third padā.
4. The genitive-ablative form āśās is not good Vedic. This allows only āśā.

Examples of singular forms in āt, āt, or ātā, in connection with u-stems, number only three for the whole Rigveda, viz., āśā, vi. 75. 15, and āśādevās, viii. 19. 37, both stanzas of late date, and āśās here.

For the Rigveda the rule holds that oxytone stems in āc throw the accent forward to the case-ending in the weak cases and to the feminine i, when the vowel of āc is absorbed in the i or u of the preposition. A genuine old Vṛk-verse would have prátičam, but our text has prátičam. Compare RV. iii. 30. 6, jākti prátičā劫ti, with its A.V. variant, iii. 1. 4, jahi prátičam āśaṃ. Compare RV. iii. 30. 6, jākti prátičā劫ti, with its A.V. variant, iii. 1. 4, jahi prátičam āśaṃ.

5. All the stanzas (1–13) are prescribed by Aṣṭavaliyana in the Grhyasūtras, iv. 2.18–5.12, to be used at the burial service excepting this one. The application of this criterion to Vedic texts offers an inviting and fruitful field of study. See Hillebrandt, Spuren einer älteren Rigvedarecension, Beysenberger's Beiträge, vii. 195 ff.

7. This stanza is passed over by the commentator Sāyana in silence and without a word of explanation, as if it were something uncanny. This is a thing that he seldom does. Similarly the pāda-kāra passes by certain stanzas, e.g. vii. 59. 12, x. 121. 10, and all of x. 190, without giving the divisions into words.


There are two cases in which the equivalence of śh and n in Proto-Babylonian seems to be certain:
1. Sumerian šer = Akkadian ner (Aramaic sharru), 'leader, king.' Cf. also Sum. šer-mal with Akk. ner-gal 'king, ruler,' lit. 'being leader.'
2. Sum. a-šera = Akk. a-nera, 'to lament'; this is probably a compound of a, 'water,' and še-ir, 'to lament, sigh.'

The form mun-gišša-a-an was supposed to furnish a third case of this equivalence (Sum. pašh = Akk. gen), but has been differently explained by Hommel, Die semitischen Völker und Sprachen (S. V. u. S.), p. 511.

The equivalence in question was first pointed out by Professor Haupt; compare especially Der keilinschriebliche Sündabuchtext, p. 25, note 16, where also the passages are quoted. It has thus far found no explanation, and Hommel, in accord with Schnader, recently expressed serious doubts as to whether these words were not after all merely chance homonyms. Compare S. V. u. S., p. 289 and p. 471, note 158, with the additions to this note, p. 510.*

As a contribution to the explanation of these facts as a real equivalence, Dr. Lehmann offered the following suggestions.

* Hommel repeats these doubts, adds some new examples, and suggests an explanation of the phenomenon in general, in the Zeitschrift für Keilschriftforschung, i. 170–1, and note 2. This passage is in the part for April, 1884, which was not received here until May 22, i.e. after this paper had been read.
the Aramaic form of the numeral 'two,' ינ, terén, answers to a 2, s, in the other Semitic tongues; compare, e. g., Hebrew פָּאָנָא, shānāim. So also the Aramaic word for 'son' is ינ, br, in the singular, but shows in its plural forms ינ, ינ, ḫnā, ḫn, the 3, s, which is common to all the Semitic languages; compare Hebrew ינ, ben. On the other hand, Aramaic 2, s, corresponds to 3, r, of other Semitic languages, in ינ, ḫn = Hebrew ינ, zrā, 'to rise,' of the sun, compare Arabic ḏrā.

For a further discussion of this question, see Philippi, Zeitschrift der deutschen morgenländischen Gesell., xxxii. 32-9, especially 34 and 38, and the authorities there cited, and also de Lagarde, Gesammelte Abhandlungen. p. 51, line 27.

Thirdly, in Indo-European, we find, for example, in Prakrit, the form darśana corresponding to the Sanskrit dārśana (pointed out by Bloomfield), and in Lithuanian Margašė for Margaryšė (Bugmann). It may also be mentioned that in the syllable of reduplication of the Sanskrit intensives the final consonant is almost invariably either r or n; see Whitney, Grammar. § 1902 b, and cf. c. Compare also the relation of the stems ḥns, ḥn, ḡn, sa'āns, sa'ān, sa'dhān, Journal Am. Orient. Soc'y. x. 523.

Fourthly, examples of the correspondence of r and s may be found even in Proto-Babylonian. Thus 'plantation' or 'garden' is expressed by gas as well as ar, and both forms appear in Assyrian as gīnā and kīrā respectively. Against the name of the Old Testament city Erez was pronounced by the Assyrians as Uruk. In Akkadian the name is usually written ideographically, and on this account we cannot trace variations in the Proto-Babylonian pronunciation of the word. In one instance, to be sure, the name appears in phonetic writing as u-su-ug, i. e. Uruγ, and Friedrich Delitzsch, Paradies, p. 221, no. 32, explains the Assyrian form as a "hardening" from Uruγ; but it seems more probable that in parts of ancient Babylonia the pronunciation was really Uruγ, and that from this the Assyrian form is derived. See Haupt, Keilschrifttexte, i. p. 19, no's 330-1, and compare especially 334.

In view of these considerations, the assumption that a nasal r is the intermediate stage between sh and s seems probable.

The two words discussed here, šer and a-šera (properly a-šer), show the correspondence of sh and s in a syllable which ends in r; and on this account it may be that the intermediate form with r does not appear.

The difficult question of the relative age of the two dialects, Sumerian and Akkadian, need not here be discussed. But if, with Hommel and Delitzsch, we consider the ene-shal dialect (here called Sumerian) to be the younger, and the form with s accordingly to be the original one, the main part of our theory is not thereby invalidated. S would then have become a r with combined nasal element (cf. the Aramaic example cited above); but for the change from r to sh it would perhaps be difficult to find analogies.


The meeting of the American Oriental Society is a fit occasion to notice the remarkable undertaking of a successful business man of Bengal, Pratap Chundra Roy. From his youth he had cherished the idea of checking the progress of irreligion, as he says, by diffusing among his countrymen a knowledge of the classics of India. Accordingly, after retiring from business and recovering in a measure from a severe domestic affliction, he organized the Dātavya Bhārata Kārṣṇalaya, an institution bearing some general likeness to the American Tract Society. The Kārṣṇalaya relies on the public-spirited and wealthy men of India for its pecuniary support, and devotes itself to the printing and gratuitous distribution of the great works of Sanskrit literature. Roy began with the free distribution of one thousand copies of the Mahā-bhārata in Bengali translation. This was followed by two other editions of about three thousand copies each of the same translation. A fourth edition of the Mahā-bhārata, containing the original Sanskrit text and Bengali translation is now in progress, and a similar diglot edition of the Rāmāyana is nearly completed. All of these works are extensive, and the number of printed forms already gratuitously distributed or in course of distribution mounts up to the astonishing figure of 13,783,500.
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1884.

At present Mr. Roy is engaged upon the publication and free distribution of an English translation of the Mahā-bhārata. The edition will consist of twelve hundred and fifty copies, and of these two hundred and fifty copies are designed for the scholars of Europe and America. Sanskrit students, therefore, who wish to obtain the work, may send their addresses to Mr. Roy, at No. 367 Upper Chitpore Road, Calcutta, British India.

The translation is doubtless the work of some Hindu scholar, but his name is not mentioned. It is in the main smooth and correct; but there is great lack of accuracy in the rendering of the proper names; and the Sanskrit technical terms of sacrifices, for example, are often spelled out in Roman letters without the least consistency. It is greatly to be hoped that in the forthcoming parts these serious blemishes will be remedied. In like manner, we cannot too earnestly express the wish that Mr. Roy will cause the numbering of the book, chapter, and verse to be given on the outside edges of the head-lines in place of the page-numbers of his translation. These last are of small importance and can be put at the inside.

The number of every tenth cōlā should also be given in square brackets and clear figures at the end of every tenth cōlā in translation. This will add greatly to the usefulness of the work for scholars, although perhaps not for cursory readers. Of immense advantage, further, would be the addition of a synopsis or table of contents of the whole poem when the end has been reached. I venture to say that this would contribute more to help on and facilitate the study of the Mahā-bhārata among foreign students than any other one thing that Mr. Roy could do.

It is true, the second chapter of the first book (Calcutta ed. i. 360–660 = Bombay ed. vol. i. folio 19–28) contains a very brief synopsis of the contents; this is useful as far as it goes, and its usefulness is recognized by the Hindus in the following words:

अभ्योत तद अदान अनुवतमुष्म महारथानि
विज्ञेयम महाद तो परवसानिर्ग्रहोऽपि
सुविश्वास भवाति न पर्यः सत्कादीगाधानि
विशिष्याति लावयालाम यथा प्लवेना || i. 659.

'As the vast ocean becomes easy to get over for men with a boat, so this great history, incomparable and of great import, is to be understood in this world by means of the table of contents, if one will first listen to that.'

But neither this bold enumeration of subjects in the parvasanirghraha, nor the short analysis of Williams in his Indian Epic Poetry (now out of print), is in any way sufficient or convenient. What we need is a full and complete synopsis of the Bhārata, of that which may provisionally be supposed to be the more or less original nucleus of the work. The episodes, as, for instance, the Bhagavad-gītā, or the Nāla, might be given only in the briefest analysis. Double references, to the Calcutta and the Bombay editions, might be given throughout, and every typographical device should be brought into service to make the work easy for use.

Such a change of plan, however, may seem impracticable to the publisher; moreover, the mechanical production of neatly and conveniently printed books is doubtless attended with far greater difficulty in India than in Europe. Accordingly, we cannot refrain from making publicly the suggestion to Dr. Adolf Holtzmann, of Freiburg, that he should undertake the publication of this analytical summary. There can be no doubt that such a work would be exceedingly welcome to those who desire to make small excursions into these fields, and it would no less certainly exercise a powerful influence in stimulating Sanskrit scholars to grapple with questions of higher criticism concerning the Mahā-bhārata. The dramas, the law-books, and the Vedic literature, all have had their turn in engrossing the attention of scholars. Is it not time that the Epos should be made the subject of critical investigation?

To Mr. Roy and his undertaking we wish all success. And, in view of what he has already accomplished, we believe that he will carry it out to the end. If he does not conclude to modify slightly the plan, so as to make his book more useful to scholars, we shall at least console ourselves with the thought that all legitimate efforts towards widening the circle of those interested in Indian literature (like the series of Eastern Classics for Western Readers to be edited by Professor Peterson, of Bombay, and like these publications of Roy), cannot fail to have an indirect influence on the progress of Indian studies; for from the increas-
ing numbers who pursue them there will arise a number absolutely if not proportionally increased of those whose interest will bear fruit in important contributions to our knowledge of Indian antiquities.

6. On the Unaugmented Verb-Forms in the Rig- and Atharva-Vedas, by Prof. John Avery, of Brunswick, Me.

The most ancient form of Sanskrit speech, like the earliest dialect of Greek, often omitted the augment in the preterit tenses of the verb. Superficial observation shows that this usage is most common in the Rig-Veda; is less so in the Atharva-Veda; is rare in the Brahmapas; and has disappeared from the later language, except in aorist occurrences after the negative mā and in other sporadic instances. It appears, moreover, that these abbreviated forms in part yield precisely the same sense as the longer ones; and in part have, in some way, acquired a subjunctive or imperative meaning.

Since it is essential to a correct interpretation of the Vedic texts that we should know how to understand these forms, the present investigation has been begun with this view: to bring together all occurrences of unaugmented verb-forms in the two texts above mentioned; to note their relative frequency in the different tenses of the verb-system; to inquire whether they accord in sense with the distinctions commonly received as characteristic of the tenses in the Veda; and, finally, to determine how large a proportion have retained a preterit sense, and how many are employed like true subjunctives or imperatives. To this end the text of the Rig-Veda has been searched through, and the result corrected by Grassmann’s Dictionary; and for the Atharvan the occurrences have been excerpted from Prof. Whitney’s Index Verborum.

It needs to be premised that in a work like this a precise result cannot be attained in every instance. For, in the first place, the ancient system of verb-inflection did not always make a formal distinction between unaugmented perfects and true subjunctives or imperatives: e.g. riṣa’s may contain the modal a or be simply shortened from ṛīṣā, and so dāti is to be compared with the subjunctive dāti and the preterit āditi; the unaugmented a-aorist is not always clearly distinguishable from the subjunctive of the root-aorist, especially when the accent is wanting; and even when that is supplied it may mislead—οs sīnat beside sanema; the so-called pluperfect, having lost its augment, does not differ, in most instances, from a perfect subjunctive with secondary endings; so, too, the imperative in certain persons is like unaugmented preterits of the same persons, and here even the accent sometimes fails to make the needed distinction. In the second place, a doubt may arise whether a given form belongs to the “root” or “accented a” class of the present-system, or to one or other of the two tenses of the simple aorist. We are accustomed to class short forms like ākar with the aorist, and forms like dāṃnā with the imperfect; yet it is theoretically not improbable that in the earliest literature, whatever may be the usage later, this distinction had not become everywhere recognized, and that while, for example, dāṃnā was coming to represent the imperfect tense—or indefinite past—the earlier ākar had not wholly retired from that office and assumed the role of an aorist. This may explain the fact, often occurring among unaugmented forms, that an imperfect sense may at times best render a so-called aorist form. But, after eliminating all the doubtful cases referred to above, the great majority of unaugmented forms are found to have a recognizable character, and may be classified as follows.

The occurrences of augmented verbs in the Rig-Veda amount to 3309—of which 2065 belong to the present-system, and 1194 to the aorist—while the augment is wanting in about 1945 instances, or in a ratio to the complete forms of nearly 1 to 1.69. Of the 1945 unaugmented forms, about 45.2 per cent. belong to the present-system; 12 per cent., rather more doubtfully, to the perfect-system; and 53.6 per cent. to the aorist. Of the last, a little more than 74 per cent. are claimed by the simple aorist.

Augmented forms are more frequent in the present-system than in the aorist, in the ratio of about 1.73 to 1, while unaugmented forms are more numerous in the aorist, in the ratio of 1.21 to 1.

A complete separation of the unaugmented forms into those which have an indicative, and those which have a subjunctive or imperative sense, cannot be made.
Proceedings at Boston, May, 1884.

with entire certainty; and in the following summary a small margin must be left for doubtful cases. Of the 1946 instances, 47.7 per cent. are reckoned an indicative, and 52.3 as subjunctive in meaning. In the present system the indicative use appears to exceed the subjunctive in the ratio 1.3 to 1, while in the aorist the latter exceeds the former in the ratio of 3 to 2. Of the 626 occurrences of the improper subjunctive in the aorist, the simple aorist claims 454 (about equally divided between its two stems), the reduplicated aorist 71, and the sibilant aorist 101 (rather more than half being counted with the te-stem).

Turning now, to the Atharva-Veda, we find a very different usage. The occurrences of unaugmented forms in this text amount to 383, of which 61 are reproduced from the Rik—and so, as stereotyped expressions handed down from a former age, do not fairly represent the usage when the later hymns were composed. The occurrences belonging to the present system are 94, against 289 counted with the aorist. Of the former, nearly one-fourth are taken from the Rik. Dividing the passages into those having an indicative, and those having a subjunctive sense, we observe a marked difference between the two texts. Only 27 instances are reckoned with the indicative, but 356 with the subjunctive or imperative. While in the Rik the improper subjunctive occurs in about 52 per cent. of all occurrences, in the Atharvan it appears in not less than 93 per cent. of them. About three-fourths of the forms yielding a subjunctive sense are in the aorist, of which the simple aorist claims the lion’s share—showing 185 occurrences, against 17 for the reduplicating stem, and 77 for all the sibilant stems. It is further to be observed that in a majority of occurrences (244 out of 356, of which 213 are in the aorist) of the improper subjunctive in this Veda it is in connection with the negative mā.

The foregoing introductory remarks and compendious statements are made pending a more searching investigation of the subject, when it will be set forth in greater detail and with ample illustration.


Professor Whitney began with a brief characterization of the Hindu native science of Sanskrit grammar, and a notice of the essential aid it had rendered to European students of the language. Its general character, as in other such cases, was determined by the character of the language with which it dealt. The Sanskrit is above all things an analyzable tongue, of transparent structure, falling easily apart into roots and suffixes and endings. In its perfected form, then, as represented to all after time by Pāṇini, the native grammar is an established body of roots, with rules for their extension to stems and the inflection of the latter, and for the accompanying phonetic modifications, this last involving a phonetic science of very high character; the syntax is much inferior, though perhaps only in proportion as the Sanskrit sentence is inferior to the classical. But its form of presentation is strange, consulting brevity at the expense of every other quality; and hence it is very difficult of acquisition; one must be master of the whole system, in all its details, before he can be certain with regard to any one point that there does not lurk in some remote chapter a rule bearing upon it: it is something like having to construct passages in a text out of an index verborum to that text—and one, too, not alphabetically arranged. Theoretically, all that is prescribed or allowed by Pāṇini’s rules, taken together with the list of roots accepted by him, and other like supplements, is Sanskrit; and nothing else is entitled to that name. The young pandit learns the system, and governs his Sanskrit speech and composition by it. The first European students did the same, to their great advantage; and one must, of course, still follow a like method, if he is to communicate with pandits, and to gain their respect and aid. But the question is whether Western scholars in general are bound to this course: in short, whether we are to study Pāṇini for the sake of learning Sanskrit.

It is to be noticed, in the first place, that the native grammar can never have been the means, but only the regulator, of the tradition of the learned language. No one ever mastered a list of roots and a grammar, and then went to work to construct texts upon that basis. The learner, rather, has his models which he imitates; he makes his speech after that of his teacher, only under the constant
check of having to quote the grammar in regard to any questioned point. All this is like the ordinary transmission of a cultivated language, merely with a difference of degree. That such was actually the case with Sanskrit is made plain enough by the facts. There is no absolute coincidence between Pāṇini and the classical language. The latter, indeed, includes little that Pāṇini forbids; but it also lacks a great deal that he allows. The difference is so great that Benfey, who was deeply versed in the Hindu science, calls it a grammar without a corresponding language, as he calls the pre-classical dialects a language without a grammar. What is then this grammarians' dialect, standing between the classical and the pre-classical, and unlike them both? and what claim has it to our study?

We have, in the second place, an immense literature in that older pre-classical language, which was produced in entire independence of the grammarians, and is only very imperfectly treated by them. It is in two or three dialects, of different degrees of antiquity standing in a perfectly natural order of succession to one another. And the classical language stands in a natural succession to them. This historical affiliation casts the most important light on the classical language, which only by its help is properly understood.

The main thing which makes of the grammarians' Sanskrit a special and peculiar tongue is its list of roots. There are about two thousand such; but a full half of them have never been met with in use, earlier or later. Some small number of these, doubtless, do not happen to occur, and may in part yet turn up; others are assumed for the sake of explaining derivatives; others are the offspring of confusion and original false readings; but a very large number are an as yet unexplained and problematical remainder, and even in no small measure obviously artificial and false (see Dr. Edgren's discussion of them, in Vol. xi. of the Society's Journal). It is well known what mischief this list of roots wrought, in the hands of the earlier incantuous and credulous students of Sanskrit, and how many false and worthless etymologies were founded upon them. That work is even yet, perhaps, not entirely over; still, it has come to be generally understood that no alleged Sanskrit root can be accepted as real unless it is supported by a kind of use in the language that authenticates it (for, in late writings, verb-forms are now and then made artificially, on a root taken by a grammarian's license out of the list of roots): that is to say, that a Hindu grammarian's statement as to the fundamental elements of his speech is without authority until tested by the actual facts of linguistic use, as represented by the Sanskrit literature.

But the principle thus won is of universal application; for we have no reason to expect more trustworthiness in other departments of the grammar; there is nothing in Pāṇini and his successors which does not require to be tested by the language, in order to the finding out of its real value. That this is so, a few examples will show. To the periphrastic future tense, made by compounding a sōmen ajetis with the present tense of an auxiliary, the root as, the grammarians give a corresponding middle, although the auxiliary has no middle inflection. Now what are the facts? In the Brahminas there are four sporadic instances of an attempt to make middle persons of this tense, after the analogy of the general relation of middle endings to active; and in the whole immense body of the epic and classical literature, I do not find notice of more than a single additional attempt! On this absurdly narrow basis the native grammar has built a universal formation. The case is somewhat similar with the so-called 'preative:' it is hardly more than sporadic in the older language, and in the classical tongue (which here also is a true successor of the other) it is just about as rare; but the grammarians give a preative to every verb, and even to its secondary conjunctures, where it has not a single known example, either earlier or later. The preative is an aorist optative; but this the Hindu authorities ignore, though they can hardly have failed to perceive it, and they give their rules for its formation as a separate and independent part of the verb-system—in which they are followed by their European imitators. Again, the causative secondary conjugation includes a ruduplicated aorist, which is not made from the causative stem, but from the original root; it has been adopted into the causative system, by a process in which the Veda is not yet complete. As was to be expected, now, the grammarians prefer to force a derivation of this aorist from the causative stem: the root being bha, for example, we are not to make adhākarat from it, but from the derived stem bhakṣya, by striking off first the ay and reducing the bhā or bhā to bhā—that is,
we are to get the formation from the stem, through the intermediate step of reducing the stem to the root! Here again, the European imitators, down to the very last, follow the Hindu example. Again, in a large body of verbs, a second alternative set of passive forms is allowed in the aorist and futures (e.g. from đa, the forms addāyāsi, dāyāye, dāyisse, etc.); what the statement means is wholly problematical, since it is illustrated by no genuine quotable usage, either in the earlier language or in the later; it is perhaps some misapprehension or blunder; certainly, the matter is one with which beginners in the language never should be troubled. Once more, the ending dhanam of 2d pl. mid. has to become dhanam after an etymological lingual sibilant, lost in the present condition of the language; and, so far as is known, the change is never met with, at any period of the language, except where such a sibilant would properly stand; but the Hindu grammar gives respecting it rules which appear to be utterly non-sensical, involving conditions between which and the change no relation is to be discovered; and they extend it also to the perfect-ending dhāre, with which it has nothing to do.

These are a few of the characteristic cases, showing what kind of guides the Hindu grammarians are. Many others, of various degree, might be adduced; but these are surely enough to enforce the conclusion, almost of itself evident, that not a single rule given or fact stated by the grammarians can be taken on their authority, without being tested by the language itself. Of course, much the greater part of what they teach is true and right; but no one until after examination can tell which part. Of course, also, there is more or less of genuine supplementary material in them; but what, is only to be determined by a thorough and cautious comparison of their whole system with the whole language. This has not been made, and is hardly making: chiefly for the reason that the skilled students of the native grammar are looking at their work from the wrong point of view. They seem to think it their duty to learn out of Pāṇini, and set forth for others, what the Sanskrit language really is, instead of explaining him out of the language, determining what in him is true and genuine, and accounting for and excusing the rest. In other words, they need to realize that, in studying the native grammatical science, they are simply investigating a certain branch of Indian learning, like the Hindu astronomy or philosophy, one that is of high interest and importance, and has also had a marked influence in shaping the latest form of Sanskrit—not always to its advantage. Some scholars appear to feel as if a fact that they find in the language is to be credited as such only when they discover it set down in Pāṇini. It may be asked, on the other hand, of what consequence it is, except for its bearing on the grammatical science itself, that any given fact is so set down. A fact in the pre-classical language is entirely independent of Pāṇini; he has nothing to do with it; one that belongs to the classical language may, even against his omission or prohibition, have its genuineness shown by other supporting facts; or it may be genuine with his assent; or it may have an unguenuine and artificial existence on account of his seeming to authorize it. The statement in the native grammar that such a thing is so and so is of wholly uncertain value; if, on being tested, it proves correct, it scores one to the credit of the grammar—not of the language, which is what it was before.

To maintain this is not to disparage Hindu grammatical science; it is only to refuse to bow to it as authority, to set it above, or even on a level with, our own grammatical science, characterized by objective collection and classification of facts, lucid order and method, sense of proportion, and observance of historical relations. The time has not yet gone by when discussion of the subject is reasonable. We still occasionally read in general philological works (e.g.) the "fifth" or the "seventh" conjugation-class of verbs, and so on, as if the general student could fairly be expected to remember the senseless and unexplainable order in which the bodies of similarly conjugated roots are catalogued in the Hindu dhatu-päthas or lists of roots (they themselves never gave them names founded on this order; that is a European perversity, and now no better than pedantry); and the very last published Sanskrit grammar in German (by a scholar long resident in India) begins with the sentence "Sanskrit verbs have ten tenses and modes"—as if, because the Hindus failed to make the distinction of tense and mode, we ought to do the same; or if we admit as well say that "the Sanskrit has four parts of speech: name, predicate, preposition, and particle." If the Hindu grammar is remanded to its own place, not only will beginners be relieved from learning forms
that never occur and classifications which must be abandoned later, but the study of the grammar will be made more fruitful of results for the real history of the language itself.

8. On the Cesnola Cypriote Inscriptions in New York, by Prof. I. H. Hall.

This paper consisted of a review of the New York Cesnola inscriptions, with especial reference to their treatment by Dr. W. De Geer in the first part of H. Collitz's Collection of Greek Dialect Inscriptions, and also with reference to some hitherto unpublished. Some of the inscriptions have been published twice over, as if different inscriptions, and some are given wrong side up, and so are read wrong throughout. The work is characterized by brilliancy, ingenuity, and learning, but contains much that needs emendation. Many of the errors of the edition were unavoidable, being based upon the labors of predecessors which the editor had no opportunity of verifying. On this account the necessity for a revision of the work at the hands of some scholar who has access to the originals is the more immediate and pressing.


The Great Chinese Wall separates now, as it has for twenty centuries, two distinct stages of civilization. On the one side are the nomad tribes of Mongolia and Manchuria, and on the other, the tillers of rich fields and gardens. Between the two, perpetual hostility has existed. At first, a line of military posts was established for protection against the nomad invaders. As a supplement to these posts was built the Great Wall. In the main, it has proved an effective barrier, and is described as "The ruin of one generation, and the salvation of thousands."

Twice, however, has the whole of China been subdued by extra-mural invaders: once by the Mongols under Genghis Khan (ca. 1200 A.D.), who passed the wall in the northwest province of Shan-si; and again by the Manchus, who entered at the eastern extremity, and are now in possession of the throne.

For three and a half centuries, then, the Tartars (and by this we mean in a general way the nomads of the north and west) have held sway in China; but, besides, there have been three periods of partial conquest: 1. From 907 A.D. to 1234, by the Tartars of the North; 2. From 386 A.D. to 532, by the Tartars of Topa; and, 3. From 202 B.C. to 220 A.D., by the Hiongnu. Had the wall been held by forces unaffected by treason or discord, it would always have proved a sufficient defense; but, as it is, the Chinese of the northern provinces have passed seven out of the last ten centuries under the yoke of the Tartar conquerors.

The third period just mentioned is nearly coincident with the rule of the Han dynasties. At that time, the tribes inhabiting the vast region from Lake Balkash to the mouth of the Amur (an extent of over 3000 miles) formed a kind of confederation under the hegemony of the Hiongnu. That the chief or Shanyu of the Hiongnu was a mighty and dreaded enemy of the House of Han is evinced by the fact that the Chinese accorded to him the sacred title of Hwang-ti, a name which they have hesitated to concede to the Emperor of Austria-Hungary.

During the Han and immediately succeeding dynasties, the Hiongnu were kept in check by force of arms. The later emperors sent their sisters and daughters across the frontier, in order to effect by family alliance what they could not by prowess. These transactions have supplied rich materials for poetry and romance. Thus Chau-keun, a lovely woman who was given to the Khan of Tartary to induce him to retreat with his overwhelming forces, threw herself into the Amur rather than endure the life of exile.

Prominent in the wars of the Hans with the Hiongnu were Li-kwang, Li-ling, Sz'na Tsien, and Su-wu. The first, after seventy victories over the Hiongnu, slew himself on the battle-field, because he failed to capture the Khan. His son, Li-ling, when pursuing the flying foe too eagerly, fell into an ambush, and lost his division of five thousand men, and passed the rest of his days among savage foes. His relatives were executed on account of his supposed treachery, and his noble friend, Sz'na Tsien, who guaranteed his fidelity, was disgracefully mutilated. This Sz'na Tsien was the great historian, who submitted to mutilation instead of
execution, not because he feared death, but solely in order to gain the time to complete the history, his own imperishable monument. Su-wu was a diplomatic envoy, who was kept in captivity by the Grand Khan for nineteen years. Besides the great history of "ma Tsen, there are extant the letters of Li-ling, and the tender poems exchanged between Su-wu and his wife, all interesting memorials of the time (ca. 100 B.C.).

We turn now to the still more ancient times of the dynasty of the Chau, which reigned for over eight hundred years (B.C. 1122 to B.C. 240). We are at the dawn of letters, the dividing line between the legendary and the historical periods. The Great Wall is not yet built; but the hostile tribes are there. At this period, the Chinese were few in number and occupied a comparatively small territory; but their knowledge of letters and their incipient culture gave them already a great advantage over the savage foes who beset them around.

These tribes are grouped under several comprehensive terms: those on the east are called Yf; those on the north, Thf; those on the west, Jung or Chiang; and those on the south, Man. The original sense of these names seems to be as follows: the Yi were famous archers, and were so called from their "great bows." The northerners used dogs in hunting and herding, and depended on fire to temper the cold of their rigorous winters. "Dog" and "fire" are therefore combined in the ideograph by which the Thf are designated. The Jung were armed with spears, and this their weapon furnished the symbol for their ideograph. The ideograph Chiang is made up of the head of a goat and the legs of a man, and so denotes to the Chinese imagination hideous monsters, and at the same time means 'goat-men,' 'goat-herds,' or 'shepherds,' and identifies them essentially with the Thf or nomads of the north. The character for Man combines those for 'worm' and 'silk,' and imports that the barbarians of the south, even at that early day, were not ignorant of silk-culture.

All the tribes of the Man and the Yi (save certain aborigines called Miao-tsz') were conquered by the vigorous race whose progeny peoples modern China Proper. The tribes of the north and west, the Thf and the Chiang, were never permanently subdued. Their lands never invited conquest. On the contrary, as we have seen, it was the wealth and fertility of the North China plains and valleys that tempted constantly throughout the eight hundred years of the Chau dynasty the fierce and hungry tribes of the northwest to make their overwhelming incursions.

The oldest extant Chinese poetry, older than any history, shows us the Chinese warrior with the head of his steed and the point of his lance directed always towards the north as the source of danger. To the princes who held these northmen in check were committed the destinies of the empire. And in this way the northern tribes exercised for centuries, throughout the third or Chau dynasty, an important political influence. To give a historical instance: The house of Chau rose from a small warlike principality in the mountains of the northwest; they were strong by conflict with their savage enemies, and their chief was the bulwark of the nation. Wen-wang, by his growing power, roused the jealousy of his suzerain, the last emperor of the second or Shang dynasty, and was by him imprisoned. When the northmen made a sudden irruption. Wen-wang was set free and invested with greater power than ever; he remained loyal; but his son used the trained forces, not only to drive back the invaders, but also to overthrow the throne of his master, the Shang emperor.

In the early part of the Chau period, China had two capitals; one in the west, near Singan fu (about one hundred miles southwest of the great bend of the Hoang ho), in Shensi; and the other in the east, near the present K'ai-fung fu, in Honan. The former was sacked by the Tartars in 781 B.C. The heir to the throne removed to the eastern capital. But even here, in the midst of the central plain, and surrounded by a cordon of feudal States, the emperor, through the plots of a kinsman of his barbarian wife, brought down on himself the anger of her tribe, and was put to flight. By the cupidty of the Tartars, by the treachery of his own envoys, and by the intrigues of his empress, the throne of one Chau emperor after another was menaced and shaken, until the dynasty was brought to fall.

The Confucian annals mention five of the Tartar tribes as finally successful in establishing themselves in the interior of China: two in Shensi, one in Honan, one in Chih, and two in Shantung. This happened doubtless in this way: the feudal
American Oriental Society:

barons asked aid of the Tartar horsemen, and rewarded their services with grants of land. The emperor sought aid in like manner against his unruly vassals. And so, at last, by too great dependence on foreign auxiliaries, the empire became unable to shake off its helpers.

In conclusion, the ethnological relations of the Hiongnu were discussed. It has been much disputed whether they were Turks, Mongols, or Huns; but it is not probable that any satisfactory conclusion will ever be reached. The ancient names, Jung and Tih, are too vague to help us in a philological way. Nor does the earliest literature of China preserve any fragments of these northern tongues, as, for example, Plautus does of the Carthaginian. Nor have these nomads left any monuments of themselves which might help us to answer the question of their origin and belongings.

As for the physical type of the Jung and the Tih, it was doubtless the same as that of the Mongol and Manchu of to-day. The primitive Chinese type, on the other hand, is no longer to be discerned. In southern and central China, it has been everywhere modified by combination with aboriginal inhabitants, whose influence is seen in provincial characteristics; while, in the northern belt, it met with tribes akin to those of Mongolia, and gradually absorbed them.


Prof. Lyon gave some account of Bezold and Hommel's Zeitschrift für Keilschriftforschung und verwandte Gebiete, Friedrich Delitzsch's The Hebrew Language viewed in the Light of Assyrian Research, Paul Haupt's Das Babylonische Nimespoesi, his own work entitled Keilschrifttexte Sargons, and of J. N. Strassmaier's Alphabetisches Verzeichniss der Assyrischen und Akkadischen Wörter im II. Bande der Cuneiform Inscriptions of Western Asia.

After the conclusion of this paper, the customary vote of thanks to the American Academy for the use of its Library was passed, and the Society adjourned, to meet in Baltimore in October.
The Society was called to order in Hopkins Hall of the Johns Hopkins University, at half past three o'clock on Wednesday, October 29th, by the President, Professor W. D. Whitney, of Yale College.

In the absence of the Recording Secretary, Professor Toy, it was moved that the Corresponding Secretary, Professor Lanman, serve in his stead for the time being; and this was voted.

The minutes of the May meeting were read, and, after some slight corrections, approved. The Committee of Arrangements announced through President Gilman that the session would be resumed on Thursday morning, and that the members of the Society were invited to meet on Wednesday evening at the house of Mr. A. L. Frothingham.

On the part of the Directors, it was announced that the next meeting would be held in Boston, on Wednesday, May 6th, 1885, unless the Committee of Arrangements (consisting of the Corresponding and Recording Secretaries) should see reason for changing the day.

On recommendation of the Directors, the following gentlemen were elected Corporate Members:

Mr. Cyrus Adler, of Philadelphia, Pa.;
Mr. Samuel A. Binion, of Baltimore, Md.;
Prof. James T. Hatfield, of Holly Springs, Miss.;
Mr. John W. McCoy, of Baltimore, Md.;
Mr. Geo. L. Shaw, of West Oakland, Cal.;
Dr. Edw. H. Spieker, of Baltimore, Md.;
Mr. Talcott Williams, of Philadelphia, Pa.;
Prof. Henry Wood, of Baltimore, Md.

The correspondence of the half-year (most of it addressed to Professor Whitney) was presented to the Society, and extracts from it were read:

Rev. Henry Blodget transmits a copy of the resolutions adopted by the Peking Missionary Association on hearing of the death of Dr. S. W. Williams, and dated Peking, April 28, 1884.

Dr. N. G. Clark writes from Boston, June 12, 1884, that he has just received a note of inquiry from Rev. Mr. Logan, missionary of the American Board in Micronesia, with regard to the publication of an alphabetically arranged vocabulary of from 2500 to 3000 words of the Mortlock dialect, spoken on one of the southernmost groups of the Caroline Islands.

Rev. S. C. George, under date of Chambersburg, Pa., Oct. 17, 1884, says that his Siamese grammar is well advanced toward completion.
Rev. J. M. Jamieson, of Monmouth, Ill., for twenty-two years a missionary in India, wrote Oct. 6th, 1884, concerning the publication of a translation of the Hindi Prem Sāgar which he had completed in manuscript, and again on the 15th, saying that he had since then learned of the recent publication of an English version of the same work in India. It was suggested that the manuscript be deposited in the Society's library.

Miss Mary O. Pickering, of Salem, Mass., sent a letter, interesting as a memento, addressed to her father, the first president of the Society, by Professor R. Lepsius, of Berlin, recently deceased. It is dated at Philae (the First Cataract of the Nile), Sept. 15, 1844. Dr. Lepsius thanks the Society for making him an honorary member, and gives an account of the results of his journeys and ethnographical studies in Nubia.

Mr. W. W. Rockhill, under date of New York, July 18, 1884, announced his intention of departing that day for Peking, where he hoped to be by the middle of September. He offered to present to the Society a report on the condition of Oriental studies in North China.

Mr. A. W. Thayer writes from Trieste that Captain Richard F. Burton proposes to issue at private subscription a complete translation of the Arabian Nights for the use of scholars. As the work is unexpurgated, the translator is unwilling to have it brought out by a publisher, and he pledges himself to limit the edition strictly. It will appear in ten volumes at a guinea a volume, each to be paid for on delivery. Subscriptions should be addressed to Captain R. F. Burton, Trieste, Austria.

Rev. Mark Williams, missionary of the American Board at Kalgan, North China, sends a description of very ancient mounds in his district, some in clusters on the plain (burial mounds?), and others singly on eminences (signal-towers?). Kalgan is about 120 miles northwest of Peking, and on the line of the Great (outer) Wall.

The following communications were presented to the Society, numbers 4, 5, and 6 being given during the evening meeting at the house of Mr. Frothingham:

1. The Origin of the Chinese and Korean writing, by Dr. D. B. McCartee, formerly of China and recently of Japan, now of New York City.

A chart was exhibited, showing:

1. The Pah-kwa, or 'Eight Diagrams,' ascribed to Fuh-ji, the legendary founder of the Chinese polity. The Pah-kwa were at first slips of wood arranged in various combinations, and took the place of the knotted cords previously used. The slips were supplanted by straight lines cut on surfaces of bamboo. These methods of making records were so rude and imperfect that even in the time of Confucius (the sixth century B. C.) oral tradition and memory were necessary complements for the understanding of such records. From these beginnings was developed the written character.

The hair pencil was introduced in the reign of Shi-hwang of the Ts'in dynasty (B. C. 220–206), and had an important influence in helping the formation of a more convenient system of writing, and in developing (circa 350 A. D.) the elegant cursive characters now used. The rude Pah-kwa are however still found in the Yü-king ('Book of Changes'), in books of geomancy and divination, and on
amulets. Four diagrams of the Pak-twa are emblazoned on the Korean national flag.

2 and 3. The Chinese numeral symbols and the Korean imitations of them. These symbols are the written representatives of the original wooden reckoning slips. These slips are still used by the Koreans and are called by them Ka-chisan, a term which the Catholic missionaries rendered by 

4. The Korean alphabet or én-mun. This is a true alphabet, each letter representing a single sound and each sound being always represented by the same letter. The characters are composed of the simplest elements: the square, its upper right-hand angle, the lower left-hand angle, a rectangle with the right side gone, a rectangle with the sides prolonged upward, the triangle, circle, and straight line. The letters are even classified according to the organs of speech concerned in their production. This classification is shown in the similarity of the forms of certain letters; thus, the aspirates kh, th, and ph are made by adding a line to the signs for k, t, and p.

It is evident from the ancient form of the characters that they were first made by some unyielding implement. The introduction of the hair pencil has given them a more cursive form and a general similarity to the Chinese. That the characters are of real Japanese origin, as some maintain, is highly improbable. The Japanese Katakana and Hiragana show no evidence that their inventors had any idea of a true alphabet; whereas, the Korean is a true alphabet, although its elements have been combined into a conventionalized but easily analyzable syllabary.

2. On a Cursive Manuscript of the Greek Gospels, by Prof. Isaac H. Hall, of New York City.

This manuscript is in the hands of some person in or near Constantinople, known to Prof. Albert L. Long, of Robert College. Prof. Long wrote about it to Rev. Dr. Bliss of the Bible House at Constantinople, enclosing photographs of four pages; and Dr. Bliss transmitted them to Rev. Dr. Edward W. Gilman, Corresponding Secretary of the American Bible Society, who handed them to me for inspection.

Prof. Long's letter says: "The whole MS. consists of 266 leaves of stout vellum, stitched in 8vo. The order of the Gospels is Matthew, Luke, Mark, John. The cover is wanting. There are no mutilations, so far as I can discover, but there are stains of candle-grease, mud, etc., upon many of the pages, and occasional scralls and rude drawings, as though it had fallen into the hands of a school-boy. There is appended a list of the Scripture lessons to be read throughout the year, but I have found no subscription from which any date could be made out."

Then follow some remarks unnecessary to be quoted, among which is a guess that the MS. is not later than the tenth century.

The photographs are poor, but they show an interesting and valuable manuscript. The date is uncertain, but must lie somewhere between the latter part of the eleventh century and the middle of the thirteenth. It cannot possibly be of the tenth century.

The order of books stated above by Prof. Long is rare, if not unique; but it is probably not the original one of the MS.: for the photograph shows an Arabic numeral at the top of the folio on three of the pages, which must have been a folio number. The character of these numerals is a rather old native Arabic script. The page from Matthew has the number 2, from John 22, and that from Luke 133. So the original order of books in the MS. was probably: Matthew, John, Mark, Luke; which is not unprecedented.

The writing is a fair curive of moderate sized letters, with a moderate amount of ligatures, and the regular New Testament compendia scribendi. It has uncial initials projecting into the margin to mark the beginning of a paragraph; but this uncial initial would seem to be applied to the first word in the paragraph that begins a line, as with τα in Luke viii. 37. There is no iota subscript.

The contents of the photographs are as follows:

one leaf from Matthew, v. 62 (εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν ...) to vi. 13 (and of verse); one leaf from Luke, viii. 31 (τὴν ἄνωθεν ...) to 39 ( ... ἐκλείσας δὲ τοῖς ...); one leaf from John, xvii. 5 (εἰς ᾿κολογίαν καὶ ἐκαλεῖ βοήθησαν ... to 17
American Oriental Society:

( . . . ἀγίασον αὐτοῦ). The pages from Matthew are reduced in size: the others are said to be of the actual size of the manuscript pages.

The pages from Matthew show the Ammonian sections and the Eusebian canons noted in the margin, as follows: at v. 43, μθ 1 (41, 10); at v. 48, μθ' 1 (42, 10); at vi. 7, μθ' 1 (43, 10); the letter at the top, in each case, being not clear in the photograph, and hence not represented here. At the end of chapter v., and also at the end of vi. 13, is the abbreviation for τῆς, to mark the end of the church lesson. At the beginning of chapter vi. is the title of the church lesson: σά τῆς τυρφοε'την (I am not sure about the last character, but the γ is above the line) ματθα'ου: i.e. τῶν ἀντικειμένων τῆς Τυρφοσίων [Eδομάδος τοῖς διδάσκαλοις] Matthew, or "Saturday of the cheese-eating week; [Lesson] from Matthew." (Cheese-eating week was the week before Lent, or Quinquagesima week.) This title is one appropriate to a lectionary, and out of place in a MS. of the Gospel (with the lessons noted). The addition of ματθα'ου seems to show that the MS. was copied with the help of a Lectionary, if not made up from one. Another indication of the same sort will appear presently.

The text is pretty closely Stephanic; with, however, some important exceptions, as follows:

Matt. v. 47, χίλιοι πρὸς ἄδελφον; (I give the accents as in the text, not as modified by quotation here).

Matt. vi. 1, προειμεθεῖται ἀπὸ τοῖς αὐτῶν μαθηταῖς (another mark of lectionary make-up).

Luke viii. 34, οὐκ ἔπεσαν ἀντὶ οὐκ ἔφεσαν.

John xii. 11, 12, 4 (I supply a subscript) πρὸς ὑπό (8).

John xvii. 16, καθὼς ἔγιν ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου οἷον εἰμὶ πρὸς καθὼς ἔγιν οἷον εἰμὶ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου.

There seem to have been two scribes employed upon the MS. At least, the difference in handwriting between Luke and John is enough to warrant the supposition.

The manuscript would seem, from the above specimens, to be a good and valuable one; but it would be premature to attempt to state its affinities until we have more of it to judge from. The above readings are well known, and, except perhaps the last, occur in noteworthy MSS.

3. On the Hieroglyphic Evidence that Lake Mōris extended to the west of Behnesa, by Mr. F. C. Whitehouse, of New York City.

All the texts of Claudius Ptolemy’s Geography (at book iv. § 20) place Ἱούδας Ἰλινή at 60° 20', 29° 20'. In § 34 and the following they locate the towns περὶ τοῦ Μωρίδου Ἰλινῆ as follows: Βακχίς, 60° 30', 29° 40'; Διονύσιος, 60° 30', 29°. When Ptolemy gives a single position for a mountain or lake, he always means the centre, and Ἰούδας is sometimes added. According to the calculation of M. Jomard (confirmed by Dr. Kari Müller, Göttingen, 26th June, 1883), the middle of Μωρίδου Ἰλινῆ is at Qass Qerūn. The word Ἰλινὴ includes the entire district, as a technical term, equivalent to ta-Sie or Hun-l, the Phiom or El-Fayroum. Dr. Müller therefore said that this strengthens the view that Lake Mōris extended not less than twenty miles to the south of the southern extremity of the present Birket el-Qerūn.

Diodorus said, τὸ δὲ ζάβος ἐν τοῖς πλείστοις μέρεσιν ὦργανων πεντήκοντα, which seems to imply more than one μέρος or basin. This is also in harmony with the Arab traditions given by Muradi and others, and especially by AbuBaida. "The water was drained into a south-western basin by Joseph." A tradition may state a fact founded upon subsequent observation and not history. Many Arab traditions seem to have arisen in this way. The Wadi Reian is unquestionably from 200 to 300 feet below High Nile at El-Lahun. It is dry except at a single spot, which appears to be Dionysias, where there are a few acres of palm-trees but no inhabitants. This basin if filled with water would form the southern basin of a double lake and extend south of 29°.

In the Diet. Geog. of Brugsch Bey, under MR, p. 1187, occur the following sentences: "Malgré la certitude, garanti par la suite et l'ordre des noms de leurs
Proceedings at Baltimore, October, 1884.

méropoles, que ce nom [SAP-MOR] renferme l’antique appellation du chef-lieu du 19ème nome de la Haute-Egypte, l’Oxyrhinchites des géographes, il y a encore quelques doutes à dissiper," because "le mar dans ce côté de l’Egypte serait donc un autre lac Marieótis dont la tradition classique n’a pas conservé les moindres traces de souvenir." Dr. Brugsch adopted the Moris of M. Linant, endorsed by Dr. Lepsius, accepted by Bussé (Eng. ed.), and so interprets all references to the papyrus 1 and 2 of Bülau, and the third fragment or “Papyrus of the Labyrinth.”

This opinion has been questioned by M. l’Abbé Amelineau and Dr. Pleijte, on the supposition that my surveys (1882 and 1883) show that Lake Moris filled the western part of the Fayoum and the Wadis to the south. This "ma dunšt ni mar (l’eau occidentale du pays du lac) and ma n’t mar dunšt (l’eau du pays du lac de l’ouest) is therefore the southern part of Moris, fed by the canal Temî (ib. p. 1189).


Buddhism was introduced into Tibet in the seventh century. In the latter half of the ninth, it was brought to a high degree of power and influence by the good king Ralpachan. He was succeeded at the beginning of the tenth by the last and perhaps the worst of Tibetan monarchs, Glang Darma. This king, along with the followers of the Bon-po religion, did all in his power to destroy Buddhist temples, monasteries, and books, and to persecute Buddhists. After a reign of three years, he was assassinated about 915 A. D.

About a hundred years later came a revival of Buddhism. In 1042 Lord Atisha, or Jo-yo rje, as he is generally named, came from India to Tibet, and, with other missionaries, had to begin the work of conversion on what was practically a virgin soil.

Before Glang Darma’s persecution, the Tibetans had followed the Mahayana doctrines of the Mahayana school; but those which Atisha brought from Bengal were of an entirely different character, and belonged to the Tantrik school. Through them Tibetan Buddhism, or Lamaism, as it is commonly but inaccurately called, acquired the greater part of its peculiar features.

- Atisha had many disciples in Tibet. The most celebrated was Bu-ston, author of the Ehos-hbyung rin-thun. Marpa is the name of another Buddhist missionary of these times, perhaps a disciple of Atisha. Judging by his name, he was a Tibetan by birth; but of his works and life we know nothing save a few scattered phrases in the books written by his disciple, Milaraspa, the subject of this notice.

The exact date of Milaraspa’s birth seems to be uncertain. The Vaidurya Karpo, a mathematical work cited by Csonka de Körös in his Tibetan Grammar, p. 184, says that he was born 1038 A. D. Sarat Chandra Das has a valuable article, entitled "Contributions to the History of Tibet," in vol. 50 of the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal (part i, pages 187-251). On p. 238, Das places Milaraspa in the fourteenth century; but this seems to be a misprint, for on pages 206-211 he gives what is undoubtedly a translation from one of Milaraspa’s works which he calls a “block-print said to be 800 years old,” which agrees with Csonka’s authority. Mr. Jesschke, in his Tibetan Dictionary, p. 413, a.v. Mi, says: "Mi-la-ras-pa, often only Mi-la, name of a Buddhist ascetic of the eleventh century (Vaidurya Karpo), who between the periods of his meditations isomerized in the southern part of Middle Tibet as a mendicant friar, instructed the people by his improvisations delivered in poetry and song, brought the indifferent to his faith, rekindled and converted the heretics, wrought manifold miracles, and whose legends, written not without wit and poetical merit, are still at the present day the most popular and widely circulated book in Tibet."

Two books are attributed to Milaraspa: "The hundred thousand distinct songs of the life of the revered lord Milaraspa," in Tibetan, Rje-btsun Mi-la-ras-pa rnam-thar rgya-par phyi-sa mgur-hbum; and "The biography of the revered lord Milaraspa, the blessed lord of yoga," in Tibetan, Rnal-bhgyor-gyi dbyung-phye dam-pa rje-btsun Mi-la-ras-pa rnam-thar. A copy of the former, obtained through the kindness of Mr. Wherry of Ludiana, is presented by Mr. Rockhill to the Society. The latter (the rnam-thar or biography) is in the Library of the St. Petersburg Academy, no. 4950. See Schleifer, Mélanges Asiatiques, i. 4. 413.
Whether Milaraspa is the author of these works or not does not readily appear from any examination of the only one to which I have had access, the *Mgyur-hbum*. One might think this the work of his disciples. Jaeschke calls the *Ksum-thar* an autobiography, and it is probable that this represents the received opinion among Tibetans.

In the copy of the *Mgyur-hbum* now given to the Society there are sixty chapters occupying 245 folios, partly printed, partly manuscript. The copy is very incorrect, and it is greatly to be desired that another should be obtained, to serve as the basis of a more critical examination. It would well repay careful study, as it is written in a language which differs immensely from that which we find in classical works.

The versification is very different from that usually found in the works of the *Bkah-hgyur* or *Bstan-hgyur* where all the *padas* of a *stoka* contain the same number of syllables. Here we find such arrangements as the following: first line, 7 syllables; second, 8; third, 7; fourth, 8; first, 8; second, 7; third and fourth, 8; fifth, 7; sixth, 8; etc.

It is impossible to examine in detail the doctrines professed by Milaraspa. Chief among his precepts are the recommendations of the practice of yoga or meditation, and of prayer:

Free from the world, lift up your heads to laws divine
And do as I, a yogin, am wont to do.—Folio 16a.
Rejoice in the words spoken by the mighty teacher,
And often, often test the mighty weight of prayer.—Fol. 16b.

A few extracts will illustrate his mode of teaching and the points on which he lays the greatest stress.


Nano guru!
The reverend lord Milaraspa had come to Rkyang namkbar rdzong from Ragnas, and one night, while stopping there, a monkey riding a bare appeared before him, bearing a mushroom shield and a straw for a lance. Laughing, the Master said: "You come to frighten me; away! I fear you not; put away all thought of harming me. My mind has embraced the body of the truth (dzarmabtags); why flaunt your magic feats before me, for I, a yogin, scorn them!" On hearing these words, the (monkey) promised to obey him; so, vanishing as would a rainbow, it became (a human being called) Gro-thang rgyal-po.

Then this devout (lit. dispenser of gifts, dānupati) Gro-thang inquired of those who were round about the Master, what was so delightful in this place, and he (Milaraspa) replied in the following song:

Hear me, O Lama, my master!*
Inconceivable are the perfections of this place,
Ignored are the delights of this spot,
This lonely place, the Rkyang-phan namkbar rdzong,
This fastness here of Rkyang-phan namkbar rdzong.
O'er it spreads the purple southern cloud;
Below it flows the crystal stream;
Behind it the red rocks and heaven's expanse;
Green apace and flowers of every hue surround it.
Far from its confines the wild beast seeks its prey.
Around it soars the mighty eagle.
And on it fall the sweet, gentle showers from heaven.
On all sides the bee hums his song,
The little fawns run here and there in play,
The apes and monkeys gambling jump about,
And loudly sings the lark when come forth its young.
The bird of gods, the white grouse whistles its sweet note,†
The brook babbles gayly o'er its clay slate bed;
The voice of time and unworthy friends‡

* His *bla ma* or guru was Marpa. He calls him sometimes "Lord of Lho-brag."
† The words rendered 'lark' and 'grouse' are *lho-po* and *song-mo*.
‡ The text appears to be incorrect, but I do not see how to correct it.
Trouble not the dream of this place's sweetness.—
I sing a song of joy,
I speak words of good advice.
All ye here, you, good sir, and people,
Follow after me, do as I have done,
Shun sinful deeds and do that which is good.

Loud were the exclamations from those present, when he had finished speaking, and they said: “Good, Lord! your words delight us. Teach us, we beseech you, some easily remembered verses by which we may acquire this habit of meditation.”

So, to satisfy their wish, he sang the following song:

I crave the blessing of the Lama on my mind;
O bless me, that I may comprehend the void (of all things).
I will sing a song of the joys held out by (my) religion,
Which the believing man’s devotion procures him.
The visible, the void, the inseparable, three are they;
These three are comprised in the rules of the doctrine.
The visible, the invisible, the immovable, three are they;
These three are comprised in the rules of meditation.
Absence of passion and greed, perseverance, three are they;
These three are comprised in the rules of behavior.
Absence of hope, of fear, of illusions, three are they;
These three are comprised in the rules of rewards.
Shamelessness, dissimulation, deceit, three are they;
These three are comprised in the rules of the void.

When he had thus spoken, the hearers were filled with faith, and abandoned their sinful ways. Some days later, their minds being uneasy (about the Master’s health), these same persons came and inquired of the Master concerning his health, and paid him their respects.

He answered their inquiries about his health in the following song:

I bow at the feet of the blessed guru.
In solitary, secluded places, in woodland depths,
Milarepa’s meditative habits bring joy.
Happy is he, dwelling free from greed,
Happy, with body free from burning pain,
Happy is he, not given to the sluggard’s ways;
Happy, deep in thought abstracted from all.
Happy is he, with that warmth* which knows no cold,
Happy, his penance performed with heart not faint.—
Happy is he, a husbandman seeking for naught,
Happy, with resting-place, solitary, undisturbed.
All these are the joys of the body (of a yogin).
Happy is he, carried along by both art and science,
Happy, having obtained skyed-rings and sung-tying,†
Happy is he, conscious of exhaled and not coming breath,
Happy in silence free from gossiping friends.
All these are the joys of (his) speech.
Happy is he, free from selfish views,
Happy, deep in uninterrupted meditation.
Happy, the goal neither longed for nor feared;‡
All these are the joys of (his) mind.

* The more developed mysticism recognizes a “power which meditating saints by dint of long continued practice may acquire of holding back their breath for a great length of time, by which means the air is supposed to be drawn ... into the principal artery, thus causing a feeling of uncommon warmth, comfort, and lightness inside, and finally even emancipating the body from the laws of gravity so as to lift it up and hold it freely suspended in the air.” Jaspé, Tib. Dict., p. 206, s.v. “glim-po.”
† Two degrees of meditation, is Sanskrit usa-rama and sampanna-rama. See Jaspé, p. 50.
‡ Cf. Manu vi. 45.
Happy is he with enlightening, fixed, ineradicable,
Happy all his life amid these mighty joys.
Great the joy of mind bound by no fetters.—
This is the burden of the song of his mighty joys.
I sing the song of what I feel,
It all is granted for practising the truth,
It is the groundwork of enlightenment to come;
Learn ye then to live this (life).

When he had thus spoken, the hearers learnt why the guru enjoyed such happiness, and great was their surprise. Having asked him whence it came, and having found it out, they said: "Why should not we also enjoy similar happiness? Teach us, we beseech you, some easily remembered verses by means of which we may acquire some small portion at least of this habit of deep meditation."

To satisfy their request, the reverend master spoke to these twelve persons the following song:

I bow at the feet of the blessed guru.
Gentlemen, you who would know the mind,
Learn to do as I will now relate.

Faith, intelligence, steadfastness are three;
These three are the mainstay (ergo-thing) of the mind;
He who living firmly keeps them, happy he.
Make ye then this mainstay.

Absence of passion, of selfishness, of stupidity are three;
These three are the armor of the mind;
He who wears this armor is proof against cut and thrust.
Make ye then this armor for yourselves.

Meditation, diligence, firmness are three;
These three are the steed of the mind;
Swiftly he runs towards freedom.
Make ye then this charger for yourselves.

Self-knowledge, self-consciousness, self-happiness, are three;
These three are the fruit of the mind;
If obtained, sweet is the taste of these fruits.
Get then for yourselves these fruits.

These are the twelve treasures of the mind,
Which one reaches in the heart of yoga.
Believing men, devote yourselves to them.

Thus did he speak, and they believed, and afterwards became distinguished members of the church.*

After this the Master made up his mind to go to Yo!-mo gangs ra (rī?).
In the following song (folio 26b) Milarapa contrasts quite poetically his own songs, which caution and save his hearers, with the signals of alarm of the birds and beasts which surround them.

Behind us a silken veil of white infolds the mount,
Before it is the wish-granting forest's expanse.
On meadows, green alps, amid wide groves,
Among the sweet, perfumed white lilies,
Is the loud buzzing of many insects.
On the banks of the ponds and pools.
The water-fowl watching turns its head,
On the boughs of the wide spreading trees,
Sing all the lovely songsters.
Above, in the top branches of the trees,
The apes and monkeys gamobling show their skill.
On the meadow's emerald green,
Pasture herds of many kinds.
And to shield them from harm the herdsmen

* Lit. benefactors of Lamas.
Proceedings at Baltimore, October, 1884.

Sings, and plays on his flute of reed.  
They who are enslaved by worldly passions,  
Who in this world are given to worldiness,  
I, with the eye of yoga (far-reaching),  
On the top of the resplendent jeweled rock (?),  
Teach them by parable the impermanency of the visible world.  
A mirage, a bubble deem all worldly desires,  
This life, the vision of a dream.  
On the ignorant think with kindness.  
Feed on the vacuity of space.  
Reflect with never-wandering minds:  
All the different images which may appear—  
Forsooth, 'tis but the universal law of things—  
They all, whatever we see, are of a truth unreal.

5. On the Book of Hierotheus by a Syrian Mystic of the Fifth Century, by Mr. A. L. Frothingham, Jr., of Baltimore, Md.

The appearance of the Pseudo-Dionysian writings in the fifth or sixth century is a fact familiar to all students of church history, as is also the influence which they exercised from that time to the renaissance. Being the production of a master-mind and covering a vast field— from the minutest regulations of the ritual to the most abstruse philosophical speculations—they came into favor not only with the more theoretic Orientalists but also with the practical leaders of the Roman church, to whom they gave support in questions of church discipline and ritual. Pseudo-Dionysius, who was in all probability a Syrian monk, became during the scholastic period the great authority: his writings were the source of most of the theories propounded first in one form by John Scotus Eriigena, and later in others by the school of St. Victor, by the German mystics Eckhart and Tauler, and by Thomas Aquinas himself. To read both Aquinas and Bonaventura carries one back to Dionysius as their immediate inspiring source. The Neo-Platonists of the fifteenth century, like Nicolaus Cusanus, Pico della Mirandola, Marsilio Ficino and others, continue to look up to him with reverence.

Now Pseudo-Dionysius states that he had two teachers in the faith, St. Paul, and one named Hierotheus: the former is of course a fiction, the latter may have more reality as will soon be demonstrated. Hierotheus is praised by him as a divine and inspired Mystic, whose writings were a second Bible and whose knowledge of divine things far exceeded his own. Pseudo-Dionysius also gives (Div. Names, ch. ii, § x.; ch. iv. § xv.-xvii.; and Ecl. Hier. ch. ii. § 1.) certain extracts from Erotic Hymns and from a work entitled The Elements of Theology which he attributes to Hierotheus. If all medieval philosophy and mysticism is founded on Pseudo-Dionysius, of what interest would it not be to discover the very source of these doctrines in the writings of Hierotheus? Unfortunately nothing had ever come to light respecting the master of Dionysius and he had come to be regarded as a fanciful personage. About two years ago I had the good fortune not only to bring to light what is, in all probability, the opus magnum of Pseudo-Hierotheus, but also to show who is on good evidence to be considered as its real author. Of this work and the questions connected with it I propose to give a succinct account in this paper.

A Syriac MS. of the British Museum (Rich 7189) described in Rosen and Forsshall's early catalogue, contains a work the title of which is: ḫtha davadavha ḫrothōs dē'ui risē ḫisē dē'ebth Alīshaḥ, 'The Book of Hierotheus, on the hidden mysteries of the Divine Nature.' Still the title always given to it is simply "The Book of Hierotheus." The MS. is unique, being the very one which the Patriarch Gregory Bar'ebraeus succeeded in procuring, in the thirteenth century, through his agents, and of which he made an abridgment which exists in MS. at Paris (Bib. Nat.), in the British Museum, and at Oxford. This MS. is a small folio of the thirteenth century containing 167 sheets, each page being divided into two columns. Of this the text of the Book of Hierotheus occupies but a fifth part, the rest consisting of an elaborate commentary by Theodosius, Patriarch of Antioch from 887 to 895. The work is dedicated to his "son" and beloved disciple, which of course is taken by Theodosius to mean Dionysius the Areopa-
American Oriental Society:

gite: it is divided into five books, each of which contains a number of chapters. The work is certainly not by a first-century Hierotheus, but is one of those forgeries which were so common, especially in Egypt and Syria. Let us see, before attempting to analyse it, who may be its real author. We read in the work of Gregory Bar'ebraia, entitled נבוארת גודאכה 'אל שבאכע 'יתנואיתו, 'The light of the saints on the fundamental doctrines of the Church,' at the close of an enumeration of heresies: 'Thirtieth heresy: that of Stephen bar Hudall. He affirmed that there would be an end to hell-torments and that the impious would not suffer forever, but would be purified by fire. Thus would mercy be shown even to demons and everything would return into the divine nature, that, as Paul says, God may be will in all. He also wrote a book in support of this opinion and called it by the name of Hierotheus the master of the holy Dionysius, as if it were by the holy Hierotheus himself, which many also believe.' In a passage of his Ecclesiastical History, he makes a similar statement in fewer words, the first of which I will give, as they add to the information given above. He says: 'At this time (i.e. under the Patriarch Sergius of Antioch) Stephen bar Sudall was notorious as a monk in Edessa.' This statement of Bar'ebraia is not an ipse dixit, but is found to be corroborated by writers living more than four centuries before him, namely, John of Dara, and Cyrilus, Patriarch of Antioch from 193 to 817.

Cyrilus is quoted by Bar'ebraia in his Neoconon as saying, 'The book entitled The Book of Hierotheus is not by him, but probably by the heretic Stephen bar Sudall.' John of Dara, who cannot have lived later than the eighth century and was perhaps earlier, says in his inedited work, ס' ג'אמא דג'פורג נשקאר, 'On the resurrection of human bodies,' 'Diodorus of Tarsus in the work which he wrote on the Ḫeconomy, and Theodore his disciple and the master of Nestorius, say in many places that there is an end to condemnation. The same view is taken by the work called The Book of Hierotheus, which is in reality not by him, but was skillfully written by another in his name, and is by Stephen bar Sudall. Gregory of Nyssus also, in his treatise to Martina and in that to his sister Macrina, and in other writings, teaches the doctrine of apocatastasis, that is, the return to the first principle; and says that there will be an end to hell-torments.'

There seems then to be a chain of tradition from the seventh or eighth to the thirteenth century assigning to one Stephen bar Sudall the authorship of the Book of Hierotheus.

Who then was Stephen bar Sudall? All the information we can gather regarding him, besides the mention in Bar'ebraia, is from two inedited Syriac letters, one addressed by Jacob, bishop of Sarug, to Bar Sudall himself, and the other sent by Philoxenus, bishop of Mabug, to some priest of Edessa, condemning Bar Sudall's doctrines. (From Assman's account of these letters, Neander, Gfrorer, Dornier, and others give an important position to him). From them we learn that Stephen was a native of Edessa, and flourished apparently during the last decade of the fifth century and the first of the sixth: that is, he comes to our notice during this period. He was a monk of some repute for sanctity and good works, and at first seems to have been an esteemed member of the Monophysite sect, though he was afterwards excommunicated, and the record of this remains in the Jacobite profession of faith. Philoxenus speaks of his having followed for some time John of Egypt, and having afterwards imitated him in originating a heresy. To this fact may be added that there remain some short inedited extracts on the faith which go under the name of Hierotheus, originally written in Coptic. There is therefore a strong presumption that Bar Sudall passed a portion of his early career in Egypt, and imbibed there a portion of his religious ideas. He afterwards returned to Edessa, and during his residence there Jacob of Sarug wrote him the above-mentioned letter of mild reproof concerning the opinion he held that the punishment of the wicked was but temporary, that hell would pass away, and all creatures be redeemed.

 Quite soon (perhaps in a few years) after this, towards the year 500, we conjecture, he left Edessa to avoid persecution, and went to Jerusalem, where he entered a monastery and soon made his emaciated theories well known, and was active in forming a mystical sect. He caused a great outcry against him among the monks by writing on the wall of his cell. 'All nature is consummated with the divine Essence.' The period of his stay in Jerusalem may be fixed, from a comparison of the dates of Philoxenus and Elias of Jerusalem, at between 494 and
513. The date of Philoxenus' letter, written when Bar Sudaili had evidently not been long at Jerusalem, as it refers to his disputes with the Patriarch Elias, must be placed at about 510. This letter was written to Abraham and Orestes, priests of Edessa, as a warning against the intrigues and pernicious teaching of Bar Sudaili. It begins thus: "I have learned that Stephan the scribe, who departed from among us some time since and now resides in the region of Jerusalem, sent to you a short while ago some of his followers with letters and books composed by him. He took care at the same time that the arrival of those whom he had sent, as well as what he was assiduously trying to accomplish, should be concealed from us; for he thought that were I to learn that he had sent you men and also writings, his hopes might be disappointed. He has insanely imagined ... to put forth in a book an impious and foolish doctrine, which is worthy of being reputed not only a heresy but worse than heathenism and Judaism, because it openly assimilates the creation to God and teaches that everything must become like him."

In another part he discusses Bar Sudaili's theory that the existence of the world was divided into three periods: 1st, the present fallen and evil condition; 2d, the millennium, when there is perfect rest and all is united to Christ; and 3d, the consummation and perfection, when God will be all in all, and there will be a confusion not only of the creation with the divine substance but also of the persons of the Trinity one with another.

Philoxenus shows Stephan to be a learned man, who commented extensively on the Scriptures in a mystical manner. He mentions as the first work by which he came to his notice a Commentary on the Psalms. Although Philoxenus refers in a casual way to several other writings by Bar Sudaili, it seems certain that he was not acquainted with the Book of Hierotheus.

Without giving any more time to an examination of the opinions of Bar Sudaili as they are expressed by Philoxenus, I will pass to the Book of Hierotheus. The Syriac text we possess is asserted to be not the original but merely a translation from a Greek original. The authority for this is the introduction of the supposed anonymous translator, who dedicated the version to his Macedon named Phileas, who had requested him to perform this work; a postscript of similar import closes the volume. To both of these Theodotus appended his commentary, and they must have formed part of the original text. This may appear quite correct; but our suspicions are awakened by finding the Syriac text remarkably pure, easy, and idiomatic, and showing no traces of being fettered by the necessities of a translation. Compare this with the result obtained in the version of Dionysius the Areopagite by such a learned man and so competent a translator as Sergius of Rasain, who was almost a contemporary of Bar Sudaili. If we consider the Book of Hierotheus to be the work of Bar Sudaili, two hypotheses seem to be at hand to explain the idiomatic quality of the Syriac. Either, 1. we may allow that Bar Sudaili wrote the work first in Greek, but that in order to foster his propaganda in Edessa he himself wrote a duplicate in Syriac, or, 2. we may suppose that the existence of a Greek original was entirely fictitious, and that the introduction of the translator was manufactured by Bar Sudaili; this fiction was of course necessary in order to render the fraud credible. In this case the Syriac text which we possess is the real original. Taking into account the absence of any reliable traces of the existence at any period of a Greek text, I think the latter alternative the more plausible. While we find a constant tradition in the Syrian Church on the book and its author, there does not seem to exist a single mention of it by a Greek writer.

I will now give a rapid analysis of the work, only dwelling on the most salient points. It is a real theological epic, in which are developed in a most vivid manner the mystical scenes through which the soul passes on its ascent towards the Arch-Good—the Neo-Platonic One—conceived as primordial chaos. The writer himself professes to have more than once attained to the highest point of mystic union with the Arch-Good. To describe the contents in a few words, at the beginning we find the statement regarding absolute existence and the emanation from primordial Essence of the spiritual and material universe. Then comes what occupies almost the whole work—the experiences of the mind in search of perfection during this life, the key-note to which is its absolute identification with Christ, and its attempt by performing in a spiritual sense all the acts of Christ's economy to become one with Him. Finally comes the description of the various
phases of existence, as the mind rises into complete union with the primordial chaotic essence and ultimate absorption into it.

The two most interesting points in his whole system are his theory of the evolution of the universe, and his theory of its return to the original chaos. With him all distinct existence—even the Trinity—is produced by a fall. From the first fall came the Universal Essence, which, he says, is called universal as it existed after separation from the Good, and before the ordered distinction: for to it came all that which was separated from the Good, and from it came forth every nature which appears separately and distinctly. This first emanation of Hierotheus corresponds to the Intelligence of Plotinus and to the One of Proclus, containing all things within itself, but with the germs of distinct existence. Hierotheus' elaborate and orderly system of hierarchies of spiritual beings, both celestial and infernal, we can compare both with that of Plotinus and with the Aeon of the Gnostics. Most remarkable are the chapters where with bold and unrestrained reasoning he shows that the mind, after passing through its many trials triumphantly and stamping out all traces of the evil part of its nature, rises beyond the rank of Christ, the Son, beyond the Spirit and beyond Divinity, “for all distinction will cease and all nature will be confused with the Father.” Essence alone will remain.

This is all I can say in such a brief notice of the contents. I cannot establish the many points of contact with the views of Bar Sudaili as stated by Philoxenus or with the fragments quoted by Dionysius. The main thing for understanding the form in which the author clothes his thought, is to bear in mind that absolute secrecy is rigidly enjoined on almost every page; the initiated are bound by threats not to reveal any of the doctrines set forth in the Book, for fear of persecution. The same feeling prevailed even in the time of the Patriarch Theodosius, and he has recounted the difficulties he encountered in his search for a copy of the Book. It was not intended to go beyond a limited circle of the initiated.

The relation of the Book of Hierotheus to the Dionysian writings is an important factor in the problem. The question is: might it not have been produced precisely in view of the references to Hierotheus in Pseudo-Dionysius, and after the latter had come into vogue? Now I have looked there in vain for anything resembling the passages quoted by Dionysius from the writings of Hierotheus. If Hierotheus had been posterior, it would have been natural to use the title, Elements of Theology, given by Dionysius to the work of his master which he quotes, and to incorporate as a proof of authenticity the passages quoted by Dionysius. Throughout the book, however, there is no trace of any attempt to relate itself to the Dionysian writings; his name even is not mentioned. But the point of greatest importance is the internal evidence to be drawn from the ideal relation between them. The intellectual standpoint of the two minds was totally different, and both were original. The thought of Pseudo-Hierotheus is distinct from any philosophical system; he claims direct vision and draws his theories from his own consciousness, expressing them with great naivité and freshness: it is the divine seer, not the philosophic genius, who speaks. On reading his Book one feels it to be the genuine out-pouring of a strongly excited religious imagination and the work of an original mind. Although in his system we find ideas from both the Christian and Pagan Schools of Alexandria, as well as traces from the Kabbalistic and Gnostic systems and even from the early Chaldaean cosmogony, yet they are marshalled into a perfectly symmetrical and harmonious whole in subordination to the ideas peculiar to Hierotheus himself. With him there is hardly ever any attempt at discussion; his theories are successively unfolded as absolute and undeniable certainties, as things which he has known and seen.

On the other hand, although Pseudo-Dionysius shows much of the same spirit in his Mystical Theology and Divine Names, yet even here there appears the logical element so conspicuous in his writings, as well as a far closer connection with the Neo-Platonists, which classifies him in a different branch of the mystical school from that of Pseudo-Hierotheus. They seem to connect the one with the West-Syrian School of Antioch, and the other with the East-Syrian School of Edessa. The relations just traced between the two would give, according to the natural development of schools, the priority to Hierotheus.
The results obtained by bringing to light this work are various. 1. Until now the period of the composition of the Pseudo-Dionysian writings could not be defined with certainty within a hundred years. Now the date is probably narrowed down within the limits of a few years before or after 500, and this not from any surmises but from certain data. 2. It becomes a moral certainty that Pseudo-Dionysius was a Syrian monk, while before this he has been variously called an Egyptian, a Greek, and a Syrian. 3. The source is disclosed from which Pseudo-Dionysius derived the mystical part of his opinions. 4. The work is the unique instance of a Spiritual Guide, a Manual of Mysticism—comparable on another plane to the Imitation of Christ—which exercised a strong influence on eastern thinkers.

Some remarks on the commentary of Theodoeius will not be out of place. Throughout it, to all appearance, he believes implicitly in the work having been written by a first-century Hierotheus. Besides a long general introduction, each of the five books is preceded by a particular one. To the text of the chapters the commentary is attached in two different manners in different parts of the MS.: either the whole text of the chapter is given first, and then repeated in short sections, each with its commentary, or else the latter system alone is employed. Selecting a considerable portion which is exegetical and explanatory of the writer's opinions, a large part consists in definitions of the words used in the text. Not only does Theodoeius at the very beginning explain a long list of words in general use throughout the Book, but in every chapter he analyzes all the significant words and expressions. The definitions are often mystical and suited only to the special use of the word in Hierotheus, but in many cases they are of general use and application; and although they are in a somewhat philosophical form, yet they are always clear and to the point. The manner of defining is quite similar to that used later by the Arabian lexicographers. Theodoeius is almost contemporary with Bar Ali, the author of the Syro-Arabic Glossary which is the earliest lexicographical work of any importance for Syriac. His philological endeavors show at least a tendency to analyze the language critically, and are of especial interest as explaining the Syriac by itself, and not by Arabic as in Bar Ali and Bar Bahlil.

My intention is to publish first an introductory volume, including the text and translation of the letters of Jacob of Sarug and Philoxenus of Mabug, together with all I have been able to collect concerning Bar Sudaill and his relation to the Book of Hierotheus. It will also contain whatever is known of the Book, and finally a full analysis of the same. This volume is now in the printer's hands, and I expect it to appear before the summer. I also intend soon to prepare an edition of the text of the Book of Hierotheus with an English translation and commentary, and with as much of the commentary of Theodoeius as may seem feasible.

6. On the thesis, Zoan is Tanis magna, a suburb of Memphis, and not San el-Hagar or Tanis parva in the Delta, by Mr. F. C. Whitehouse.

All the scholars who have given any attention to the subject are agreed that San el-Hagar is the Zoan of the Old Testament. They hold with unanimity that it was an imperial residence in the time of Isaiah and Ezekiel, and the seat of the Tanitic Dynasties. Almost without exception they infer that it was the palace of the Pharaoh of the patriarch Joseph and the Exodus. They usually identify it with Ra'ameessu Miamnu, a city built by Ra'ameessu II., and assume that the descriptive terms, 'field of Zoan,' 'land of Egypt,' 'land of Mizraim,' 'land of Goshen,' 'land of Arabia,' 'the well-watered,' 'the rich,' 'the royal pasturages,' and other equivalent expressions, describe the adjacent country.

The Egypt Exploration Fund has assumed that this view is not open to question, and has accordingly explored the mound at San el-Hagar—but without finding any monument which confirms the opinion commonly entertained. The question, if there be any, is therefore still purely literary, and the operations of this Society having brought the subject under discussion, advantage should be taken of this opportunity to arrive at the truth.

The definition given by Fuerst (2d ed.) is a brief and comprehensive classification:
American Oriental Society:

...p. of the metropolis (1) of Lower Egypt (2), and at the same time the oldest (3) city of the country (4) as well as the abode (5) of its (6) kings (7). Num. xiii. 22 (8), the nearest (9) district (10) of which was called ʿiyār (11), Ps. lxxxviii. 12. 43 (12). It lay on the east bank (13) of the Tanitic branch of the Nile, which received its name from it (14), and was the seat (15) of a dynasty down to (16) the time of Psammetichus (17), Is. xix. 11. 13. xxi. 4 (18), Ez. xxx. 14 (19), quoted by Manetho as the 21st and 23d (20). The LXX. (21) and Targum (22) render it by Tāṣē; Sandia, by the Arabic form صان صان (23). The Tanis of classical writers and Ṭ is the Coptic Sank, Sani, Sane, i.e. the low region (24), whence the Hebrew and Arabic forms originated (25).

In A. D. 1168. Rabbi Benjamin of Tudela returning from Bagdad to Spain descended the Nile. He visited the Fayum and identified it with Pithom. Four days brought him "to Mitzrail, commonly called Old Cairo." The Rabbi Nathaniel, president of the Jewish University and Grand Rabbi of Egypt, was at that time "one of the officers of the great king, who resided in the fortress of Zaon in the city of Mitzrail. The residence of Zoan was selected for its convenience. Zoan is enclosed by a wall, whereas Mitzrail is open." It is certain therefore that in the twelfth century the Jewish inhabitants—numerous, wealthy, and learned—living under the walls of Babylon-Cairo, now Muzar, supposed that the land of Zoan, Mitzrail, and Ramessus, lay to the south of Heliothopolis and was the district which Isaiah Told Ezekiel and the LXX. translated Toor. In the Itinerary of Antoninus Martyr, ca. A. D. 530, chap. xiii., this Italian pilgrim visits the nilometer at Rhoda (Sanaa, Maqoudi, ii. 366), and two cities on either bank of the Nile "which the daughters of Lot are said to have built: one of them is named Babylon." "Then (be) came through the plains of Tanis, to the city of Memphis, and to Antinoe where Pharaoh lived, from which cities the children of Israel went out." Josephus also fixes the starting-place of the Exodus at Heliothopolis and particularizes the route. "The Hebrews went out of Egypt by Letopolis, a place at that time deserted, but where Babylon was built afterwards."

It is evident, therefore, that there was a continuous tradition in Egypt after the time of Josephus that the Ramesseum of the Pentateuch and the Zen of the psalmist and prophets was a fortified and imperial residence within a short distance of Cairo—and, although also called Tanis, was not the place known by that name and described by Herodotus, Diodorus, Strabo, Stephen of Byzantium, and others, and therefore not the San-Tanis in the marshes of Menzelah.

Following the order of Puercet: (1.) There was no metropolis at San el-Hagar. It was never more than a large town (Steph. B.), and not at any time, according to classic writers, of even second rank. (2.) It never had, or could have had any preeminence or authority over Lower Egypt. Communication and commerce in the Delta necessarily followed the great canals and channels of the river. In the case of a forced march only (such as that of Titus) would it have been deemed expedient to cross the Delta. Commerce ascended one branch to descend another. Memphis-Heliothopolis was the heart of the arterial and venous system of both the branches and canals of the Nile.

(3.) Zoan-Tanis is said to have been the oldest city because in Num. xiii. 22, a parenthetical clause [perhaps added by a later hand?] reads "now Hebron was built seven years before Zoan in Egypt." But Josephus, B. J. iv. 9. 7, explains: "Now the people of that country [near Hebron] say that it is a more ancient city not only than any in that country but than Memphis in Egypt, and accordingly its age is reckoned at 2,500 years. They also relate that it had been the habitation of Abraham." The context seems to suggest that the Anakim occupied Hebron before Memphis, and that both cities were founded by them. San-Tanis on the edge of the Delta must have been, like similar towns in Holland, one of the later acquisitions from the salt marshes. It is not conceivable that an A. U. C. should date from the lake-dwellings of fishermen, or that an epoch could be fixed with such accuracy. On the other hand, the founding of Memphis, in that memorable year in which the Nile was diverted from its course (Herodotus), was a well-settled historical event. While Jablonski (de terra Gosen) has arrayed with great force arguments which seem to me to warrant his conclusion which places Gosen south of Cairo (Opuscula ii. 184, § viii.), it is greatly to be deprecated that he permitted
himself to dispute the evidence of Josephus and to assume that "castigandus est error Flavii Josephi de B. J. c. 9, § 7, ζημίας accipiens de Memphi." It is the more surprising because the site of Tanis-Zoan is the only objection which he considers weighty, and he felt himself obliged to leave it as a masked fortress in possession of his opponents; and therefore for nearly two centuries his admirable treatise has been disregarded.

(4.) Even had San-Tanis been the oldest city in the Delta, it certainly was not so old as Avaris (Hawara); and the term country is very loosely applied to a region which either like the Wadi Tumilat is covered with sand, or, sunk under the marahves towards Arabia and the Serbonian Bog, has "disappeared from the map of Modern Europe" (Brugesch, Hist. Egypt, ii. 338).

(5.) It was never the abode of the Pharaohs (Lepsius Zeit, für Aeg. Spr. 1883, ii.), for at best it was only a summer residence (see, passim, even R. S. Poole).

(6.) It was never even the 


domus


era of a royal family. (7.) Its kings were apparently feudal barons in the ante-Möris period, or among those kings (rajahas) of Lower Egypt who found themselves shut up in their [separate] cities in B.C. 1300. See Dr. Birch, Records of the Past, iv. 39. cited by Dr. Brugesch, ii., p. 117.

(8.) The passage in Numbers is conclusive against a Zoan-Tanis north of Heliopolis. The Tāwir of the LXX., in B.C. 180 is the Tāwir of Josephus, Ant. i. 8. 3; but it is also the Babylonias-Tanis-Memphis of Antoninus, and the Zoan-Mizraim of B. Benjamin. It is expressly qualified as Tanis in Egypt, i.e. in the district of Mizraim-Pard-Gaaf, from Heliopolis to Heracleopolis. The words seem to have been added for that purpose. Titus, according to Josephus, in the expedition against Jerusalem, landing at Alexandria marched to Thmousis, and camped for the night at a certain small town called Tanis (κατα τους τα εδώδει) B. J. iv. 11.5. His second station was Heracleopolis. As this was Heracleopolis Parva, so both Thmousis and Tanis were too insignificant to be mistaken for the vast and important places south of the 'strait' (Mizraim) of Middle Egypt, and its Bab (Babylon) at On-Heliopolis. The law of dualistic nomenclature in Egyptian geography has never been formulated. It exists. The facts also are well known. Aphroditopolis, Apollinopolis, Heracleopolis, Hermopolis, Heroopolis (see Migne, note on Jerome), are familiar examples, and have created confusion. So Dr. Lepsius, "Diese Duplicität der Namen in Nubien und in Ägypten muss uns wie bei den Doppelstädtlen in Ober- und Unter-Egypten auch immer veranlassen zu fragen ob der in Rede stehende Name dem Norden oder dem Süden angehört" (Zeit. 1883, p. 47). Thus Tanis of Egypt was Tanis Magna, Zoan-Cairo, the Tanis of the South.

The nearest (9) district (10) of San el-Hagar was in the days of Abraham the field marsh (Wilkinson) subsequently converted into a lake (Edrisi). It was never called (11) [περίπατος], for Sa'id was a technical term (Abulfeda) so inscribed on the MS. map of Edrisi, Bib. Nat. Paris, 1883, and translated 


nedov (LXX.) or campus (Antoninus).

The plague (Ps. lxxviii. 46) of the Locusts (12) must have been in a region lying between the two seas, so that the west wind off the sea of Moëris blew the insects into the Sea of Reeds. It is doubtful whether San el-Hagar ever lay (13) on a bank of the Nile. The Tanitic branch of the Nile received its name under the walls of Zoan-Tanis-Memphis. It gave its name to its ostium or sea-port, through which Egypt traded with Phoenicia.

(15.) Never the seat of a dynasty for any continuous (16) period, there is nothing to lead us to believe that in the time of Psammetichus (17) ambassadors from the kings of Judah (Isaiah) (18) would have descended North from Memphis to San-Tanis-Parva, while the messengers of the same embassy were ascending seventy miles to the South of Cairo to Hanes-Heracleopolis-Magna. Nor would (19) the sacking of this provincial capital be named in the same category with such ruin as that wrought "when Cambyses laid Mizraim-Egypt waste" (Josephus), and successively mastered the cities of the Hexantoniad.

(20.) It is by no means probable that Manetho ever intended to indicate dynasties ruling in San-Tanis. The Semitic historians are explicit. The dynasties of Egypt enumerated by Makrini (except the Alexandrian), ruled from their various fortresses near Cairo. Memphis, Fostat, Al-asker, Al-katay, were the Louvre, Luxembourg, Elysée, Vincennes, or Versailles of the natural home of all the Lords of the Two Egypta.
(21.) The LXX. having therefore qualified Tanin, could not suppose (ca. B.C. 180) that any further explanation was needed. Nor was it, as the consensus of tradition shows. The Targumists (22), Jonathan and Jerusalem. in Gen. xlvi. 11, put Pelusium for Raamses, and translate Ex. i. 11 by ποταμος (Tanin) and ποταμες (Pelusium); but Antoninus has explained that two fanoubous of Memphis were called after the daughters of Lot, and "a daughter of Lot" was (patronymically) ραμεσ (i.e. Po-Lot-αδη). And so we find that a Tanin and a Pelusium were pointed out as holy places to Latin pilgrims in the fifth century near Cairo. See Fabricius, Codex Paeudep. V. T. 2d ed., Hamburg, 1722, p. 431.

If Es-Saaadia renders Zoon (23), he never doubted that Pitom was the Fayoum, and Heliopolis or "El-Arish" (i.e. Pelusium-Memphis) the starting-place of the Exodus. If Sanskrit Coptic for the low region (24), it is also equivalent to Zoon in its sense of convenient (R. Benjamin) from the obvious association of Ta-an (the Valley) with an abundant supply of water. The Hebrew and Arabic names originated in this connection and were so applied.

There is a very large body of evidence to corroborate these positions, well collected and lucidly stated by Jabloński (op. ii.), Dr. Birch has shown that Tanen was a name for Memphis B.C. 1300. Menephtah II. had entrenchments drawn to protect the city of On, the city of the god Tum, and to protect the great fortress of Tanen (i.e. Memphis). Records of the Past, iv. p. 39, cited by Brugsch, Hist. ii. 117.

7. On the second Part of the fifth Volume of the Cuneiform Inscriptions of Western Asia, by Prof. D. G. Lyon, of Cambridge, Mass.

This paper called attention to the alphabetical arrangement of the list of verb-forms published on page 45. Two principles of arrangement were pointed out. 1. Many words are placed together in a group, because they have the same first two radicals. 2. The words within such groups are arranged alphabetically, according to the last letter, as in native Arabic lexicons. The order of the letters familiar to the scribe differs but slightly from the Hebrew order. The tablet bears no date, which is the more to be regretted, because it is very interesting to inquire how early the Babylonians and Assyrians became acquainted with an alphabet. The place of discovery might give some clue to the date of the tablet.

On page 66 a clay cylinder inscription of Antiochus is published, recording his restoring and adorning two great Babylonian temples. He styles himself Ἀντίοχος, the great king, the mighty king, son of Σιλευκος (Seleucus), the king, Μαχαμνα-απο-κλη (the Macedonian). At the close he invokes blessings on himself, his son Σιλευκος, and on his wife the queen, who bears the name Ασσα-φα-απο-κλη i.e. Σεραφαοια. The tone of the inscription is as reverent toward the god Nabu as any native Babylonian king might have employed. It is probable that Antiochus undertook the restoration for state reasons, just as Cyrus seems to have done, and that the language is the conventional scribal-priestly style, which had been in use for many generations.

8. On the classification of certain Aorist-forms in Sanskrit, by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven, Conn.

There are certain 2d and 3d persons singular middle in Sanskrit, belonging to the aorist, respecting which it may be doubtful to which form of the aorist, the root-aorist or the s-aorist, they ought to be referred; the native grammarians classify them as belonging to the latter. Attention was called to these in the writer's Sanskrit Grammar (§§ 834, 881, 883-4); but the fuller collection of material, and the addition of other facts bearing upon the question, make a re-examination of it not superfluous.

The first group of roots which may be noticed making such forms end in r: thus, from ṭṛ 'make,' aṣṭṛ 'made,' ḍṛ 'lieed,' ḍhṛ, dhṛ, ṭṛ 'die,' ṭṛ 'cover,' ṭṛ 'choose,' śṛ, ṭṛ; with three or four exceptions, the forms occur only in the older or pre-classical language. Is there, now, any good reason why we should assume mutilation of
Proceedings at Baltimore, October, 1884.

a-brsthás, a-brṣ-ta etc., by omission of the aorist-sign s. From three of the roots in question, we have unmistakable root-norist middle forms in the older language: thus, abri akrátáṃ akrata krātā, anmádáṃ, acrī; from three others are found active persons of the same formation; from six of the nine occur also middle forms from the s-aorist. There is, then, plenty of justification for regarding the forms in question as made from the root-aorist; and, until some reason or analogy shall be made out for the otherwise assumable loss of the s, such would appear to be the preferable view. More confidently than this we perhaps have not the right to speak, until we can explain why r alone among final vowels is not strengthened in the middle tense-stem of the s-aorist, or why there is an entire absence in the language not only of such forms as akṛṣṭhas akrṣta, but also of any others in which s immediately follows a short vowel; although such forms as akṛṣṭhas, anrēta, acṛṣṭhas acroṣta are made often enough from roots ending in i, i; u; also such as akṣhás haṣkha, and apiṣṭhas apiṣṭa, from a-roots, and akṣaṃsthás akṣasthā from roots ending in a nasal. On the other hand, from certain roots in ṣ and in a nasal we have forms exhibiting a short vowel, and after them an absence of the s. Thus, the three roots dā 'give,' dhā 'put,' and sthā all make forms like adhiṣṭhas adhita. The native grammar reckons these to the s-aorist, in the same manner as those discussed above; but the question again arises whether this is right. And the occurrence in the older language of such evident root-aorist forms as adhimati, adhimahi, adhirnas again indicates that the forms are probably of the same order. A mutilation of adhiṣṭhas to adhiṣṭha seems even less plausible than of akṛṣṭhas to akṛṣṭha. Once more, from three nasal roots we have the forms agatha agata, atathā atatha, and amatā, and are taught by the grammarians to refer them to the s-aorist; while the analogy of the root-imperfect akrthās akratha from the root han, and the occurrence of such aorist persons from the same verbs as gnmahi gmnata, anmata, ammnah, teach us yet again to regard the classification false; and the forms in question as belonging to the root-aorist. Not admitting any middle inflexion as belonging to the root-aorist, the native grammar would appear to have referred to the s-aorist such relics of the former as had not been entirely lost in the later language.

Next we come to consider the cases of the same kind from roots ending in non-nasal mutes. That, in the inflexion of such roots, the s-aorist-sign should be lost between the nasal mute and the t or th of the personal ending, is both supported by other familiar facts in the language (as ut-thā, ut-labhā), and put beyond question by the occurrence of similarly mutilated forms of the active aorist, where the vṛddhi root-vowel leaves no room for doubt as to the classification. The quotable examples of the latter kind are very few: they are achānta (j/chant), tāptam, ṭoṭā, abhāṭa, amūskaṃ. In the last two cases, it will be noticed, the combination is not made as if from abhāṣṭa, amūska-tam (which, according to ordinary euphonic rule, would yield abhāṣta, amūskaṃ); the uncombined s is as totally lost as in tāptam for tāpas-tam. But in the middle, where the root-vowel remains unstrengthened alike in the root-aorist and the s-aorist, the true classification becomes a matter of real doubt. For example, pithās admits of explanation equally as for pad-thās and pad-s-thās; and there are supporting forms for either: apadhā and apadhā for the former, apatā and apatātia for the latter. A like case is ayukha ayukta, where the occurrence of ayuṣy ayujmahi ayujran makes for the one explanation, and that of ayukṣi and ayukṣita for the other; and the objection that ayukṣ + i ought to make ayukṣa is refuted by abhāṣta etc., considered above. It is plainly impossible to determine these and similar cases with certainty; in the later language they must be referred to the s-aorist; and this is especially easy if other forms of that aorist occur. The persons are quotable from 20 roots: 5 ending in (chād, nād; pad, bhād, mad), 3 in p (tap, tip, srp), 4 in c (pṛc, muc, ric, ruc), 1 in ch (prach), 7 in j (bhaj, yaj, yaj, taj, yaj, yaj, yaj); and the root in ch (prach) and two of those in j (yaj, taj) have, as in their other forms (e. g. the passive pple), s before the endings—thus, aprāṣṭi, aṣṭi, aprāṣṭha aṣṭha; while those in c, and the others in j, have in like manner k—thus, aprāṣṭha aprīkta, vikṣhī vikta, etc.

One other group of forms calls for notice: those, namely, made from roots ending in a nasal, as rūdhā. For these, the nature, as was said, requires the omission of the s in both active and middle, before an ending in t or th, and then the further combination as if the sibilant had never been present: for exam-
American Oriental Society:

ple, the 2d plur. arīṇḍha, as if from arīṇḍh-e-la directly, with loss of s, not from arīṇās (= arīṇās + s + a); and in like manner arīṇādham arīṇādhām active, and arīṇādhas arīṇādha middle. No example, now, of such an active form is, to my knowledge, quotable from the whole literature, earlier or later; and of the middle forms the examples are excessively few: namely, arābdha, abābdha, arūddha from the older language; abuddha, ayuddha from the classical; and the anomalous droghā (which we may doubtless amend to drūghā) from the epic (MBh. iii. 11,002, p. 569). All these middle forms, it is evident, could be without difficulty regarded as belonging to the root-sorist; and beside arūddha, found only in Māitrī, we have in the same text arūdhāna; while abuddhan in RV gives a like aspect to abuddha. That, however, the reference of these forms to the s-sorist, as made by the Hindu grammarians, involves no unsupposed and inadmissible phonetic process is, in the first place, made probable by the occurrence of such forms as ambātta, ambātikāsa, etc., treated of above, which show a like total loss of the sibilant; and, in the second place, it is put beyond question by a set of curious and apparently anomalous forms made from the roots ghas and bhas. Both these roots, namely, show a disposition to suffer elision of the radical vowel (thus, akṣaṇ jaktēti, bapsati); and then, before a t, the s equally disappears without trace, and the t is combined immediately with the preceding aspirate. Thus, from ghas comes the augumentless 3d sing. impf. middle gath (for ḡa-s-ta), the pas. pple jathā (in aṣṭaṇd), and the noun gathī (in sāṣṭhī). These are all of the greatest rarity; but from the reduplicated root-form jaks (= jaks[1]a[2]), the derivatives jaghī, jagdham, jagdhā, jagdhī are not uncommon, and occur in every period of the history of the language. From bhas or the reduplicated baps occurs only bodhān (for bodhān[3]aīm), and that only in a sentence quoted in the Nirukta (v. 12; the form is also given in Naṅgaḥ. iii. 8); but the analogy of the derivatives instanced above from ghas puts the genuineness of the form out of the question. There is involved here an anomaly in the phonetic treatment of s which will probably be found very hard of explanation. But the grammarians are evidently justified in regarding these forms as capable of being referred to the s-sorist;* and we have here, as in the preceding group, persons who admit an alternative explanation, as belonging either to the root-sorist (in the older language) or to the s-sorist.


Some time last September I learned that Mr. R. S. Williams of Utica, N. Y., a brother of the late Prof. S. Wells Williams, and of the late William Frederic Williams, missionary to Mossul and Mardin, had an old Syriac manuscript in his possession, which was said to contain the book of Revelation. As only one manuscript of the Revelation in Syriac is practically known, and that late, I felt bound to inquire about it at once; and Mr. Williams very kindly and promptly sent me the book to examine. I immediately found that it did not contain the Revelation, but something about as rare and good: the Second Epistle of Peter, the Second and Third Epistles of John, and the Epistle of Jude, in the version commonly printed in our Syriac New Testaments. That version, and all the printed copies, are known only from one manuscript, in the Bodleian Library at Oxford, England; and Edward Pococke's edition of those Epistles, from that manuscript, printed by the Elzevirs at Leyden in 1630, is the sole parent of the printed texts, except so far as they have been modified by editorial conjecture.

In this fact lies the chief interest of the manuscript—but that is not its only interest. The manuscript consists of the Acts, the Catholic Epistles, and the Pauline Epistles, in this order, with a few tables of feasts and lessons at the beginning, and a poem in honor of the Trinity and relating the manufacture of the book at the end. Its date is given in a colophon, which states that the work was finished at noon on Thursday, the fourth day of the sultry month Tamnuz, in the year of the Greeks 1782. This date corresponds to Thursday, July 4th, 1471, according to our reckoning.

The manuscript is written on cotton paper, charta damascena, in a rather western

* And the paradigm given in the writer's Sanskrit Grammar, § 882, requires amendment accordingly.
Proceedings at Baltimore, October, 1884.

Syrian hand, in two columns to the page, and regularly twenty-five lines to the column. One leaf, the first, is now gone, but it originally contained 150 leaves of text and tables, and two leaves more for the poem at the end. The size of the leaf is 10½ by 14 inches; of the columns, 8½ inches high by 3½ inches wide; space between the columns, ½ inch; size of the written page, 8½ by 5 inches. The quires are numbered in the first part of the book, but in the latter parts they are quaternions, except the last, which is a tercios. A later hand has numbered the folios, in Syriac numerals. While most of the manuscript is written on paper of double thickness, some portions are written on paper of single thickness, which, from the glazing (probably), has a darker color than the rest, and which allows the ink to show through. But it is all of the same age, as appears by many proofs.

Besides the scribe's general introduction and colophon, there is a preface to the Acts, to the Catholic Epistles as a whole, and to each one of the Pauline Epistles. That to Acts is avowedly taken from the "Treasure of Mysteries" of Maflianas, i.e. Gregory Bar Hebræus; and I find by comparing that the preface to the Catholic Epistles comes from the same source; but I am unable to say whether those to the Pauline Epistles do or do not, for I have not that portion of Gregory Bar Hebræus to compare them with.

The church-lessons are given in red in the body of the text, and their numbers in the margin; and the Syrian sections, or chapters, are likewise given in the margin. In both, the Acts and Catholic Epistles are treated as one book, and all the Pauline Epistles (closing with the Epistle to the Hebrews) are treated as another.

The ordinary Syrian sections suffer some derangement because of the introduction of the anti-epigraphies, above mentioned. In the ancient and ordinary division the Acts and Catholic Epistles have 32 sections or chapters; section 31 beginning at I. John ii. 7, and section 32 at II. John iii. 21. But in this manuscript section 31 begins at II. Peter i. 13; section 32 at II. Peter iii. 8; section 33 at I. John iii. 21; and section 34 at I. John iv. 2; the whole having three more sections here than ordinarily.

The manuscript is very carefully voweled and pointed throughout, with the points γαραγός and ruchoko supplied in red. Besides these, there is an abundance of Syriac and Arabic marginal notes about the vowels and points, and about other matters, orthographical, grammatical, and linguistic, which give the manuscript a great and special value. Some of these notes are like those of Gregory Bar Hebræus, but many, if not most of them, are not found in his commentary. There are also, some literary and scriptural comments.

The anti-epigraphies, above mentioned, are a rather better text than that commonly printed, sometimes coinciding with the editorial conjectures, but quite as often holding to the other manuscript authority. It sometimes supplies Cocke's omissions, e.g., in rendering προτέμους in III. John 6.

But further matters of interest about the text, the titles, the subscriptions, and the comments, may be left for a more extended article. A few words about the origin of the manuscript will be enough to close this preliminary account.

From various internal reasons, I have been inclined to suppose that the scribe was one of the St. Thomas, or Malabar Syriac Christians, on a visit to his western brethren; one of whom wrote the Leyden Apocalypse, with a few other manuscripts extant in Europe. The poem at the end calls the writer a layman, in a strange country, and uses the far-eastern term "Sahib" to characterize one of his friends. The scribe does not give his name, but tells pretty well the circumstances of his writing, as well as who furnished the paper, and who paid for writing. But an extract from the poem itself will best tell the story:—

"This book, in which are the Acts of the Apostles,
And their Catholic Epistles that are seven,
And the seven and seven of him that was architect of the faith—
Fourteen epistles of Paul [who was] filled with wisdom—
Was written for my dear brother in love,
Young Selimun, who loves the wisdom from the Son of David,
Who endured much weariness with me, and showed me much kindness,
And in all my straits shared with me in prudence.
A wretch wrote it, who is full of faults and all things hateful—
A stranger, yea, a sojourner in the region—"
And that are not worthy that I should sign plainly in my book
The name of my poverty, with a hand full of faults and follies.
Behold, my head bowed, and with renderings and sighs.
I beseech the brethren whom time in its length shall bring,
That they will pray for me with a kind heart and with diligence.
And that they will say to the Lord, with their remembrances and prayers:
Good Lord, abundant in love and full of goodness,
Pardon thy servant, who wrote this book in love;
Forgive his defects, also his folly, and all faults
That were committed by him in this world full of trouble;
Forgive his fathers who erred in their opinion of the faith.
And make their souls to dwell with thee in the kingdom."

The rest of the prayer includes all his benefactors, and is beautiful enough to translate entire; but besides the above reference to his heterodox fathers, we need only mention his two grandmothers and his mother, who brought him up and paid the expenses of his education, and a number of others whom he specifies by name as having helped him in the place of his exile, and were "diligent to rest; over his life, without impediment." Unfortunatingly, the place occurs in the very interesting portion in which he speaks of the compilation of the book; but I will add a translation of the parts that remain:

"I have been diligent with this book [in my place of exile (?)].
Vowel-signs and vowel-points . . . .
Abominable to the Lord is . . . .
And what also is that which is written according to strength?
Let no man say that this . . . .
Or that in my good knowledge or strength . . . .
Far be it; this shall not be to the man . . . .
Since I am vile. of the children of the grave.
But I brought forward my writing to this worthy diligence,
Just as a witness who in weakness beholds the letters.
But it came to this polish for two reasons:
First, from love to him who purchased the book and its polish;
And second, because I had learned accuracy
In respect to all the points and vowels of the words and syllables.
I gathered books, so that what I knew not might be investigated;
And I proved them in the strength of God who giveth wisdom;
And in this book and that book, with fixed attention,
I kept closely scrutinizing, bringing it forth word by word.
And this also is a thing that shows a work of prosperity,
That no man has diminished aught from it of the sweet strength of sweetness (or, correctness)."

(In the last line the word for “sweetness” contains a play that cannot be rendered: it means “correctness” as well.)

However, the conclusions to be drawn from this poem have to be modified in one respect by an Arabic note that just precedes the text of the manuscript, or that just follows the tables at the beginning. From this it appears that one Daud ash-Shami ib-Homsii, or David the Syrian of Hamath (Hamath), had found this excellent work; owned by Suleiman (the name spelled Selimun in Syriac and in the poem), at the fortress of Husn Kifa, and finding it so much better than any manuscript of the same matter that he ever saw (and he had seen many)—divided into its chapters or sections, provided with lessons, notes, etc., and accurately made pointing and vowels—had obtained a copy for his own use. Husn Kifa, as Dr. Van Dyck has kindly informed me, is described by the Arabic geographers as a fortress over the Tiger, either quite up in Armenia or on the borders of Mesopotamia. It would seem, therefore, that the poem describes an original critical edition of the Acts and Epistles, of which David of Hamath obtained a contemporaneous copy (this manuscript), which he may have brought westward. Still Daud el-Homsii would not be called el-Homsii except away from home; and this fact rather goes against its having been brought westward. The handwriting of the book, though of the style called western, appears to be that which the Marbar sojourners used. However, I find nothing in the scrulls
Proceedings at Baltimore, October, 1884.

(Syriac, Arabic, and Carshun) which shows any complete history of its possessors, but some few of them are written in a Nestorian hand. When Mr. Williams obtained the manuscript, he was a resident of Martin, but he was continually engaged in making extensive journeys, so that it is impossible to say just where he procured it. He obtained it, however, from an aged priest, who probably only parted with it because he was unable to read it.

It is bound in old leather, with a flap, the stiffening of the boards being supplied by other Syriac manuscripts. Except a new back, pasted on, the binding is doubtless the original one. Unlike many Syriac manuscripts, this book is a "ruled copy," but the rulings about the columns show plainly that they were made after the writing, not made first to bound or mark it out.

10. On the Position of the Vāitāna-sūtra in the Literature of the Atharva-Veda, by Prof. M. Bloomfield, of Baltimore, Md.

In this paper an attempt is made to define more exactly than has as yet been done the position of the Vāitāna-sūtra in the literature of the A.V. On several interesting points light was gained from the Atharvasūya-paddhati, a second paddhati of the A.V., the modern capital of the A.V., the Royal Library of Berlin I had the privilege of using for my forthcoming edition of the Kāuṣika. This differs from the dūpa karmāni (Proceedings of the A. O. S. for October, 1883, p. vii) in that it not merely paraphrases the description of certain rites of the Kāuṣika, but rather comments upon them somewhat independently, occasionally differing from Dārila, the commentator of the Kāuṣika.

After a short introduction, it turns to the paribhāṣā-sūtras at the beginning of the Kāuṣika, then continues with the ajīva-trāna (here called bhūkat-vaṇḍakā), with its appendix the udrata-trāna; then it treats the personal saṁskāras (giving after the sparvayaṇa the following vratas: vedāvatā, kalpavatā, mārgāvatā, visēśhāvatā, then laghu-țhālakarman, bhūchālakarman, pīṇyudaka, samākāma-karman, pustikāma-karman, abhicārā, vṛddhi-rāddhia, dahanavādi (with asthi-saṁkāya, pīṇḍādāna, svolīcapacira, and vṛṣteṣaṣa).

The paddhati quotes, in addition to the regular Atharva-books: Dārila, once in connection with two other commentators, Bhādra and Rudrā (dārila rudrabhadri ca trayas te bhāyākahīrā), both of whom are not otherwise known as commentators to the Kāuṣika; further, a paddhatikāra named Keśavā; Upavarṣa, the author of a mimāṃsa (i.e. pāravimāṃsā) work; likewise the Paṭikapatalikā, written also by Dārila to Kaṇ 8. 22; and finally Pātiṃnāi. The latter is cited frequently and familiarly by Dārila; and it seems barely possible that the sūkti of Pātiṃnāi may go back to a dharma-sūtra of the A.V. Often as this text is cited, no M.S. of it has as yet come to light. The name of a teacher Munalaśālīra Pātiṃnāi occurs also in Atharva-pariṣṭta 2. 3 and 17. 13.

Indian tradition is unanimous in presenting the ritualistic literature attaching itself to the Atharva-Veda as consisting of five kalpas, whose names vary somewhat in the different sources. By combining the statements of the carasāpyāka of the White Y.V., the carasāpyāka of the A.V. (A.V. Pariṣṭta 49), the Dērī-pārśa, Pārśa-vyākhyā, Atharvasūya-paddhati, and Sārpa-paddhati in the introduction to his commentary to the A.V. (London Academy, June 5, 1880), there result the following names:

I. The Kāuṣika-sūtra, known also as Saṁhitā-kalpa, or Saṁhitā-vidhi.
II. The Viśāna-kalpa or Vāitāna-sūtra.
III. The Nakṣatra-kalpa.
IV. The Čānti-kalpa.
V. The Aṅgira-kalpa, or Abhīśa-kalpa or Vīdhāna-kalpa.

Very noteworthy is the statement of Sāyaṇa that these ritualistic books belong to the A.V., the Čāṇukya, the Aksa, the Vālakesa, and the Brahmavaḍāde. I find essentially the same statement in the introduction to the Atharva-Paddhati: atharvasūyaṇa nava bhedā hāranti: tatra cāurṣṣa cīkṣhāṇa śūnaka(stū) kāuṣiko 'yāṁ saṁhitāvidhiḥ. . . The last three of these texts hardly rank in value above pariṣṭtas, so that the authoritative ritual books of the A.V. are the Kāuṣika and the Vāitāna.

Of the usual dependence of the grihya-sūtras upon the grānta-sūtras nothing is found in the correlation of these two texts. On the other hand, the Vāitāna
depends upon the Kāṇḍikā at almost every point where the difference of the subject-matter and the difference between Vedic ceremonial and house-rites allows it. The position of the Vātītā may therefore perhaps be described as follows: It is not the product of practices in Vedic ceremonies, which have slowly and gradually developed in a certain school, but probably a somewhat conscious product, made at a time when Atharvavedins in the course of their polemics with the priests of the other Vedas began to feel the need of a manual of Vedic practices distinctly Atharvantic. That the A.V. is poorly fitted for furnishing the foundation for Vedic ritual can be seen from the fact that very little belonging to its proper material (caurīna, devotions), and not borrowed from the Kāṇḍikā, is to be found. On the other hand, it contains numerous verses and formulas from the Yajus-san īhitās, and in the description of the ritual it follows very closely Kātyāyana’s Črīta-sūtra. Vātītā Sūtra i. 8. devātā hasī devatā ārtih yajurveda it seems to make formal recognition of this fact. On the other hand, the relation of the Vātītā to the Kāṇḍikā may be described by stating that the former treats the latter almost as if it were another san īhīta, taking for granted that its ritual, and the mantras which it quotes from other sources than the vultaga, are understood and known by its readers.

The points of contact between the two texts in general are very numerous. In the matter of external form it may be worth noting that the Vātītā-sūtra proper, which contains eight adhyāyas, is frequently found extended to fourteen adhyāyas by the addition of prayācīta-sūtras. This may have been done in deference to the fourteen books of the Kāṇḍikā. Both texts frequently begin a chapter with a long mantra-passage, which belongs to the action of the preceding chapter; they frequently introduce cōka-passages by such phrases as tad api cōkā vadati, tatra cōkā, etc.; both occasionally refer to the expression brāhmanbhaśa or iti brāhmanbhaśa. I have not noted in the Vātītā the practice common in the Kāṇḍikā (it occurs about a dozen times) of disregarding hiatus produced by sandhi (e.g. patañjālīya = patañjāla śīla); but each text has once a nominative plural employed as accusative in very similar phrases: Vātītā 11. 24. aṅguthāpaṅkabhīṣyaṁ tīrā uchchrayet; Kāṇḍikā s. 18. trāyodāyāgaras tīrō dādhi-madhani śṛṣṭīvīśi badhānī. Both texts employ very commonly the expression mantra, ‘the person or the thing mentioned in the mantra.’ They share also many technical terms which are restricted wholly to the Atharva-ritual, or occur preponderatingly in it. So the purasabdhaḥmaṇa and saṁśaktihāmaṇa; the terms sarāpravate and sārvapraṣana, sampūta and sampūṭavānt, ākritītāta, cāntyudaka, rasaśriran, pradyogikāvīrti, yomasārasvāta. Further, the teachers mentioned in the Vātītā occur in the Kāṇḍikā, and the designations of gāpas, ‘groups of hymns,’ single hymns of prominent character and wide application, and groups of verses, are essentially the same: e.g. the hymns called cikaukti, apās, kālanī, gaṇadhana-yūlayā, apiṣṭita, and the verses called gandhapraṣadā, jīva, and utthaṇant. Finally, there are about fifty passages in the Vātītā, in which the ritual described exhibits a more or less close resemblance to performances of the Kāṇḍikā; of these a concordance has been made.

It would certainly be going too far to suppose that the Vātītā has drawn upon the Kāṇḍikā for all these correspondences; it is very probable that many of the specialties shared by both texts were simply current in the Atharv schools in such a way that they would be at the bidding of the compiler of a religious manual at any time. But in looking over these parallels it is found that the Vātītā frequently exhibits a certain fact or series of facts in a fragmentary way, merely presenting certain features of a group of facts, which the Kāṇḍikā has apparently in full. E.g. the Vātītā mentions Atharva-teachers here and there: Kāṇḍika, Kṛṣṇa Kāṇḍika, Bhūgali, Māthara, Ĝūnakā. The Kāṇḍikā presents all these, but in addition also Gārgya, Pārthāraçāna, Kāṇḍīyana, Paribhāra, Jātākīyana, Kiṣṇapati, Īṣvāli, and Devadāra. The same superiority of the Kāṇḍikā is exhibited in its knowledge of a much larger variety of hymn-gāpas, names of single hymns, and verse-lists. The paribhāsa-sūtras for the bulk of the Kāṇḍikā are contained in chapters 7 and 8. These are not unknown to the Vātītā, but yet only two distinct references to them occur: Vātītā 10. 2, aralīyār iti yāpanā vṛṣamānam amanuvanyate; Kāṇḍikā s. 12, aralīyār iti lakṣati; Vātītā 10. 3, yat tā ti cikā tī prakṣikāyāmām; Kāṇḍikā 8. 13, yat tā ti cikā tī prakṣikāyāmām. The terms ākritītāta, cāntyudaka, sampūta, sarāpravate, which are so characteristic of the Kāṇḍikā, appear but once or twice each in the Vātītā.
Still more noteworthy is the fact that in a number of passages the Vaitana refers to ritual described in detail in the Kaucika, indicating merely the first and last traits of the performance. E.g., Vait. 1. 19 jividhir ucmauryayati prapadanam, 'He performs the rite at the beginning of which he raises his mouth, while uttering the jivi-verses (A.V. xix. 68, 1-4), and which ends with the prapada-formula.' Kaucika 3. 4 describes it in full: jividhir acamayo pothiya vedaprapadibhir prapadyata om prapadye bhak prapadye bhawa prapadye svak prapadye janat prapadye siti. And in the same manner Vait. 11. 14 = Kauc. 24. 26-31; Vait. 24. 3 = Kauc. 7. 14; Vait. 24. 7 = Kauc. 6. 11-13. Still more valuable is the evidence of the passage describing the satyudaka, Vait. 5. 10: uasa satyudakas karoti cistyadhitih athavasahibhir kapurisparvavardha-kaverikavatina-darshana-dhanibhir angirasahibhi ca. This is the only passage in the Vaitana which Garbe finds himself unable to translate. It becomes clear enough in the light of the parabhisa-mitra, Kauc. 9. 16: citi prajnatai canti camaika avandhava-vandhavaka talika-pahyavavanta-sambhala saman-darbha ‘pamargya ‘kritya va‘ mahashaya dvaramprandha-vrtha yasakh cintai. This is a list of articles, largely plants, which are considered as holy, and are therefore employed in the preparation of the satyudaka. The passage from the Vaitana is to be translated: 'In the morning he prepares the holy water with atharthasa-substances citi etc., and with angirasasubstances kapus etc.' We may perhaps expect to find an explanation of these angirasasubstances in the angirasasalpa, if this ever turns up. In this case it becomes especially clear that the Vaitana, in abbreviating the first list which occurs in the Kaucika, and in giving in full the second list which does not occur in the Kaucika, confesses itself as directly dependent upon and later than the Kaucika.

We have finally a technical proof. Both texts follow the usual practice of citing the hymns belonging to the canon of their own school by their pratiskas. The Kaucika moreover follows the custom current in sutra-texts of giving in full any hymns or formulæ which come from another pathā of the same Veda (e.g. the Kautilya-pathā in chapters 72, 91, 107, 115), as well as those from another Veda. The Vaitana in general, though not always, follows the same practice; one exception is especially noticeable: any hymn or formula which occurs in the Kaucika is cited by its pratiska only; it matters not whether the hymn in question occurs also in some other sabhā, or is—as seems often the case—the special property of the Kaucika, not to be traced in any of the published sabhās. So Ts. ili. 2. 4. 4 has the formula ahe dātīdasaaya 'd atas tiśka ‘nyasa ‘asadhe ‘sāda yo ‘smat ‘pakatarah. This is cited in full in Kātyā. Čr. ii. 1. 22 and Kauc. 3. 5; Vait. 1. 20 cites only the pratiska ahe dātīdasaaya. The Kaucika, at 6. 11, has a mantra which Dārila designates as kalpajā, and which I have not been able to trace to any sabhā: vi mukūm cārt nāra-śūravam agraṇi hātraṇi agraṇi rahasmātram etc.; Vait. 24. 7 cites only the pratiska vi mukūm.

11. On the use of the Word 'aśāh in the Bible, by Mr. Cyrus Adler, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore.

The word aśāh, one of the commonest in the Bible, has been defined by Gesenius, and the lexicographers generally, as follows: 1. to work, to labor; 2. to make, to do, to produce by labor.

The second meaning is specialized as follows: a. to make, i.e. build or manufacture; b. to create, as used of God; c. to produce or yield, as does the earth; d. to get by labor, to acquire; e. (at this point the development of meaning is not so clear) to make ready, to prepare; f. to dress or prepare, and so, to sacrifice; g. to keep any stated day, to hold or celebrate.

To this list we would add the meanings 'to worship' and 'to devote.' The Bible translators have been averse to using even those meanings which had already been made out, and by using do or make have often obscured the sense. Thus in Gen. xiii. 4, the authorized version reads, 'Unto the place of the altar which he made there at first.' Here aśāh means 'to make,' and aśāh, 'sacrificed,' and the passage, if aśāh really means 'place,' should read, 'Unto the place of the altar where he had sacrificed at first.'

In the same book we find the phrase aśāh viśnūḥ occurring frequently: thus, xiii. 3, xl. 20, xxvi. 8, xxvi. 30. In fact aśāh, 'feast,' is combined regularly only
with the verb מָשָׁל, save in one or two narrative passages, where же is used. It will easily be seen how the association of מָשָׁל with מַעֲשַׂה would tend to develop that meaning of ‘celebration,’ and more especially of ‘joyous celebration,’ which we find attached to it.

The word is essentially a vox media, and so sometimes the association is in the other direction. Thus the passage at Gen. i. 10, usually rendered, ‘He made, וַיַּכֵּן, a mourning for his father seven days,’ means of course simply that he observed rites of mourning. Exodus i. 21 shows a very peculiar usage of the word. In x. 25 and xii. 28, it plainly means ‘to sacrifice.’

In Exodus xii. 47. כֹּל הַמַּעֲשָׂה הַשָּׁלֹシェ refers to the paschal lamb, and yet the English version has, ‘All the congregation of Israel shall keep it.’

The next verse, כִּי יִרְאוּ אֶת הַמַּעֲשָׂה and יָשֻׂהֳהוּ is translated. ‘And when a stranger shall come with thee, and will keep the passover to the Lord, let all the males be circumcised, and let them come near to keep it.’ ‘Sacrifice’ should be substituted for ‘keep’ in both places, and ‘paschal lamb’ for ‘passover.’

Exodus xx. 23, is a passage which has been constantly misunderstood. The English version reads, ‘Ye shall not make with me gods of silver neither shall ye make unto you gods of gold,’ and the Septuagint and Vulgate agree. Luther solved the difficulty by rendering, ‘Darum sollt ihr nichts nöben mir machen, silberne und goldene gotter sollt ihr nicht machen.’ It should probably be, ‘Ye shall not worship alongside of me gods of silver,’ etc.

Exodus xxxi. 16 furnishes an undoubted instance of the use of הבאת in the meaning ‘to celebrate.’ 

In the English version: ‘Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath throughout their generations for a perpetual covenant.’

It really means, ‘And the children of Israel shall watch, i.e. take care, or observe the Sabbath to celebrate the Sabbath, a perpetual covenant for their generations.’

Exodus xxxii. 35, means, ‘And the Lord plagued the people because they worshipped the calf which Aaron made,’ though commentators have alike misunderstood it.

In Leviticus xvi. 34 there is an error in Luther’s translation. The passage וַיִּכָּרֵא כֹּהֵן כֹּהֵן כֹּהֵן (of the priest), he renders: ‘Und Moses that wie ihm der Herr geboten hatte.’ The Septuagint and Vulgate are both correct, and the error is certainly curious.

Judges xvii. 31

is translated, ‘And they set them up Micah’s graven image which he made all the time that the house of God was in Shiloh.’ This however conveys very little meaning; ‘worshipped’ would be a much better translation than ‘made.’

11. Samuel viii. 13 is a passage which has not been clearly made out.

To summarize, the word יָשָׂה is used in the sense ‘to celebrate’ in about
Proceedings at Baltimore, October, 1884.


At the October meeting of the Society in 1880, Professor Whitney presented a paper on the Transliteration of Sanskrit. In this paper he explained and gave reasons for the system of transliteration which he himself had adopted. This system is substantially the one that he has used in almost all of his publications which called for it, and is precisely the one which is employed in his Sanskrit Grammar (1879). The fact that this system has been followed in a work of such a character, and of so wide circulation among Sanskrit scholars—both learners and investigators—in Europe and America, is to my mind a good and sufficient reason for its adoption by all Sanskrit scholars in America. It is open to a few theoretical objections as any system yet proposed, and perhaps to fewer; while practically it involves the greatest economy of diacritical marks, and makes the cleanest and clearest printed page of Sanskrit which is attainable. Its more important features are: the use of a macron to mark a long vowel, of the acute sign to mark the acute accent, and of the so-called grave accent to mark the circumflex; the use of a subscript dot with the lingual vowel and sibilant (r, ñ) and with ć; and the use of c, j, y, and ĝ for the palatals. Its economy and simplicity is apparent from the fact that for the 33 consonants (25 mutes, 4 semivowels, and 4 spirants) only 5 characters not found in ordinary English fonts of type are necessary.

The time is now come or is soon coming when it will be found desirable or necessary to print Sanskrit in transliteration in a good many different places in this country. The offices of the Journal of our Society, of the American Journal of Philology, and of a single Boston firm are the only ones that I know of which are equipped for this work. For the Philological Association, for the publishers of various philological texts-books, and even for the humbler necessities of printed Sanskrit examination papers, Sanskrit "sorts" are desirable. In each case when the scholar brings his copy to the office, the practical printer will ask what "sorts" or "accents" are required to put the manuscript into type. It is a matter of considerable trouble and care to make the correct answer. On the one hand, the printer is unwilling to go to needless expense in providing sorts for which there will be no use; and, on the other, the author should not be put to an unfair expense for corrections caused by the lack of the needed sorts. I have accordingly made the following table on the assumption that Whitney's system will be used, and although its purpose is wholly practical rather than scientific, I believe it will prove of sufficient convenience and value to be worthy of preservation in the Proceedings of this Society.

It is safe to presuppose the existence of a c with the cedilla and of an n with the tilde in most American fonts of English type in good offices for book-work. It remains to show what needed characters are not provided for in such fonts.

A glance at the alphabet

Gutturals, k kh g gh ñ h a ā
Palatals, c ch j jh ñ y i ā i e ā i e ā
Linguals, s t th d dh n r f
Dentals, t th d dh n l
Labials, p ph b bh m v u ā o ā

shows that r, t, d, ñ, and ñ, are the only types for consonants that need to be made anew. The ordinary book-fonts make provision for all of the diphthongs and vowels except r, ñ, and ć. Long ē never occurs. Short ē and long ē are so infrequent that they may be left to the compositor to make by setting the proper marks above or below a shaved letter. But in case an extensive work is to be printed, it is better to provide these letters. On the score of the vowels, there-
fore, we must add $r$; and for visarga and the anusvara-signs, we must add $\breve{u}$ and $\breve{n}$. It is sometimes desirable to print the Sanskrit words in a heavy or full-faced type, and for this purpose a "job-font" rather than a "book-font" may be employed. In such cases, the author should assure himself that it contains $\tilde{a}$, $\tilde{i}$, and $\tilde{u}$, or else have them provided, as they are of very frequent occurrence. For printing unaccented or classical Sanskrit, according to the following eleven or nine sorts are needed:

1. $\breve{a}$, $\breve{i}$, $\breve{u}$, $\breve{a}$, $\breve{e}$; $\breve{a}$, $\breve{u}$, $\breve{n}$ [r, f].

If, in the second place, it is desired to print accented (i.e., Vedic) words or texts we shall need one more consonant, $l$, and quite an extension of our vowel resources. There are five vowels. Each may be with or without a macron. And each may be without an accent, or with an acute accent, or with a circumflex ("grave") accent. Thus:

\[
\begin{array}{c|ccc}
\text{a} & \breve{a} & \breve{a}' & \breve{a}'' \\
\text{i} & \breve{i} & \breve{i}' & \breve{i}'' \\
\text{u} & \breve{u} & \breve{u}' & \breve{u}'' \\
\text{r} & \breve{r} & \breve{r}' & \breve{r}'' \\
\text{e} & \breve{e} & \breve{e}' & \breve{e}'' \\
\text{o} & \breve{o} & \breve{o}' & \breve{o}'' \\
\end{array}
\]

For a theoretically complete printer's case of the Sanskrit vowels, therefore, we should need $(5 \times 2 \times 3 = 30)$ thirty boxes. We should add six more for the two guṇa-diphthongs, e and o. The six varieties of the two vyādhi-diphthongs, $\breve{a}t$ and $\breve{a}u$, can all be made by setting together simple vowels, so we leave them out of the question. Practically, however, the number of thirty-six is reduced to thirty-one by the fact that no long or accented r-vowel (i.e., only simple $\tilde{r}$) is ever needed, and farther to thirty, because a long circumflexed $\breve{r}$ never occurs.

Leaving out of account the r- and $\breve{r}$-vowels, lines 4 and 5, all the letters in the first four columns may be expected to be found in a good book-font. In the fifth column, three new sorts will be needed for $\breve{a}$, $\breve{e}$, and $\breve{u}$, acute long, and in the sixth, one for $\breve{a}$, circumflex long. Circumflex long $\breve{r}$ and $\breve{u}$ sometimes occur, but can be made with a "grave accent" on a separate piece of metal, set beside the vowel.

Of the r- and $\breve{r}$-vowels, lines 4 and 5, three are already provided for above, under § 1, namely r [r, and $\breve{r}$]. Acute short $\breve{r}$ is so common that it ought to be provided; but $\breve{r}$ and $\breve{r}'$ are so rare as to be quite dispensable, and, in case they should be needed, can be made by setting a "grave accent" or else a "minute-mark" on a separate piece of metal beside the vowel. For printing accented Sanskrit texts, accordingly, there are needed:

2. $\breve{a}'$, $\breve{i}'$, $\breve{u}'$; $\breve{a}$; $\breve{r}'$; $\breve{f}$.

That is, there are needed in all 17 new letters, or, not counting $\breve{r}$ and $\breve{f}$, 15. It may be well to add that it is unnecessary for the type-founder to cut new dies, even for these; the matrices from which they are to be cast can be made with great ease by electrotyping, since all the diacritical marks are simple dots and straight lines, which can be put in juxtaposition to the body of the letter before electrotyping the matrix. Such matrices cost only $\$1.50$ or $\$2$ a piece, so that a complete equipment of Sanskrit sorts made on Roman letters may be had for twenty-five or thirty dollars. If the sorts are made both in Roman and Italic, the cost will be rather more than doubled; but this is not necessary, except for printing extensive works of mixed Sanskrit and English; for the effect of Italics can be produced by hair-spacing the Roman. Unless both Roman and Italics are used, it is better to make Roman the basis of the sorts.

Finally, the author should assure himself that the font he proposes to use really contains, in addition to the $\breve{a}$, $\breve{i}$, $\breve{u}$, mentioned above, the acute $\tilde{a}$, $\tilde{i}$, $\tilde{u}$, $\tilde{e}$, and $\tilde{o}$, and the circumflex $\breve{a}$, $\breve{i}$, $\breve{u}$, $\breve{e}$, and $\breve{o}$. These ought to be contained in a book-font, but may be lacking in an otherwise more desirable job-font.

Proceedings at Baltimore, October, 1884.

The theory most in vogue concerning the meaning of Baalim and Ashhtaroth, the plural forms in the Old Testament of the divinities Baal and Ashreh, is that these forms do not signify the divinities themselves, but their representations or images. Since its principal advocate, Gesenius, it has been adopted by the majority of critics. An examination of the passages in the books of the Old Testament where these words occur seems to show conclusively that the Gesenius image-theory is not only unnecessary but untenable, and that Baalim and Ashhtaroth must signify either the various aspects of Baal and Astarte or false divinities in general. The questionable passage, Hosea xi. 2, must be compared to Hosea ii. 13 and 17. So also in II. Chron. xxiv. 7, the words 'asher le-Baalim must not be translated 'made into Baalim' but 'consecrated to Baalim' (cf. II. Kings xxiii. 4 etc.). Judges viii. 33 shows that Baalim was a general term, one of whose specifications was Baal-Berith; while the tenth chapter evidently points to a use of Baalim and Astarte as general terms for the false male and female divinities of the surrounding nations.

There are fewer indications for Ashhtaroth, and here we must seek help from the inscriptions. That among the Canaanites and Phenicians Astarte was a common name is shown by the inscriptions of king Mesha, of Eshmunazar, and others; and an Astarte of the Baal of Sidon, an Astarte of Chemosh, an 'Attar of 'Atu, etc. In Assyrian, Ishtar was originally the common name for 'Goddess,' as Ilu was that for 'God'; later the plural form only was used in that sense. Whenever Ishtar became a concrete goddess, her various attributes were worshiped separately and in different centres; thus arose Ishtar of Arbela, Ishtar of Ashur and of Nineveh, Ishtar of Eresh, Ishtar of Agade, etc. In regard to Baal as the supreme and single divinity among Hamitic nations, it is not necessary to adduce the proofs for such a fact, as they are obvious; a glance at the various individualizations of Baal in the Old Testament and in the Phenician, Palmyrene, and other inscriptions is of itself convincing.

14. On the Etymology of the Sanskrit noun vratá, by Prof. Whitney.

As to the derivation of the common Sanskrit noun vratá (meaning in the classical language oftenest 'a sacred act' or 'vow'), and as to the way in which it arrives at its variety of senses, there exists considerable difference of opinion among scholars. The Petersburg lexicon makes it come from व्रत ‘choose,’ and draws out its scheme of values as follows: 1. will, command, law, prescribed order; 2. subservience, obedience, service; 3. domain; 4. order, regulated succession, realm; 5. calling, office, customary activity, action, carrying on, custom, etc.; 6. religious duty, worship, obligation; 7. any undertaken religious or ascetic performance or observance, rule, vow, sacred work; 8. vow in general, fixed purpose;” and then certain specialized uses. Grassmann’s treatment of the word (in his grammar of the Rig-Veda) is essentially the same (dictionary); it is essentially the same. The derivation from the same root, starts with the meaning “a (self-chosen) voluntary act, rule,” and goes on to “action, doing,” to “work,” to “a devout act . . . a vowed observance, a vow,” and then to the more specialized senses; here, it will be seen, the assumed fundamental signification is completely different from that of the other authorities already quoted. But F. M. Müller, in his so-called translation of the Rig-Veda (pp. 225-8), even takes vratá from another root, 1 र ‘protect,’ and holds to it “have meant originally what is enclosed, protected, set apart,” then “what is fenced off, what is determined, what is settled . . . law, ordinance,” and then to have “come to mean sway or power, and the expression vratá tava signifies, at thy command, under thy auspices.”

Since, now, two of these explanations must be wrong, it is not impossible that all the three may be so; certainly, it stands open to any one to criticize them all, and to suggest a new explanation.

Of course, I have not finished my work, but the information I possess makes it appear that the word is quite a common one in the Rig-Veda, and that its sense is varied.

We are justified. I think, in the first place, in simply setting aside Müller’s etymology as unsatisfactory; it lacks any fair degree of plausibility, and is also incompletely carried out: how its author would connect the usual later meaning of the word with those laid down by him, does not appear.

Against the etymology of the two authorities first quoted is to be urged that (see their own dictionaries) the root 1 र does not signify willing, command, pre-
scription, but only choice or preference; the idea of laying down the law, which runs through all their leading definitions, is by no means to be found in it. There is, to be sure, a certain relationship between 'choose' and 'command,' but it is not so close as to allow of simply substituting the latter for the former. Hence even if we admit the derivation from 2 芨, the Petersburg lexicon's scheme of definitions, as it now stands, must be pronounced unacceptable, and requiring to be recast. Nor does the transition from law and ordinance to action, through the sense of prescribed activity and accustomed action, seem an easy or natural one.

The objection of non-correspondence with the proper meaning of the root is avoided by Benfey, who virtually starts from the sense of 'chosen activity, selected course of action,' and then simply drops the idea of choice or selection in the following senses. No such meaning as the former is recognized by any of the other authorities who have discussed the word; and if one examines the references given by Benfey under it, he will find that no implication of choice is at all called for by them; in fact, this author's leading definition is an oblique addition to his system of meanings, and made only for the purpose of forcing a connection between the real senses of the word and its assumed etymology.

My own idea of the word corresponds nearly with Benfey's, save that I would get rid of the forced implication of choice or selection, by accepting a different etymology.

If we derive ṛata from either root having the form Ṙ, we have to recognize in it the suffix त, which, except as making the passive participle, is of great rarity; in fact, the only analogue to ṛata would be मा तिरुत्त 'mortal,' from स्मी 'die,' and this would show a difference both of accent and of root-form. Notably easier as regards the external shape of the word would be a derivation from स्ृ 'proceed,' with suffix त, the form ṛata instead of ṛata is exceptional, but need cause no great difficulty, especially as it finds support in ṛa, ṛadda. The word ṛata, then, from स्ृ would mean something like a procedure, course, line of movement, course of action, then conduct or behavior. This would correspond to meaning 5 in the Petersburg lexicon scheme, and 2 and 3 in Benfey's scheme. Then the developments of meaning would be on the one hand to a habitual, established, usual, or approved course of action or line of conduct—a familiar transfer, as instance by गुप्त 'virtue,' रूप 'beauty,' and the like; and, on the other hand, to a special act or series of acts or ceremonies of an obligatory character, imposed by morality or religion; and any other senses would be easily explained specializations of these. The whole sphere of significance of the word seems to me more naturally covered in this way than in any other. Even the phrase रतात स्त्रिया (of which Grassmann makes a final separate head, as if in doubt as to how it shall be connected with the rest) seems not less readily explained as meaning 'in thy (established or approved) course, following thy lead or example,' than 'under thy control or protection,' or 'in thy service,' as suggested by the other authorities.

The leading sense of 'course of action or behavior' appears to me best to suit the great majority of the compounds with ṛata, even in the Veda: e.g. रितात, 'of discordant action, दपृतात 'of officious or rebellious conduct, दाशरता 'of submissive behavior,' रित्रता 'doing boastous work,' सुभतता 'of excellent conduct,' and so on. The commonest Rig-Veda compound, दर्शीतरता, admits of more than one interpretation, as from the leading or the developed sense.

There are passages here and there which appear to indicate a recognition of the etymological connection of ṛata with root रि: such are रि यु यू रितात काल (R.V. l. 183.3), अदितांतात रतात आनुपायानितांत (A.B. iii. 11). ल would not, however, be proper to insist too much upon their importance, since they might possibly be accidental collocations, or artificial plays upon words. The general character of the verbs used along with such a noun has a legitimate and important value as pointing to its fundamental sense. And the verbs which take ṛata as object decidedly favor its interpretation as a word of motion. We do not find them to mean 'obey, submit to, accept,' and the like, but rather 'follow after, pursue, attach one's self to,' and so on (ि, अन-ि, अन-ि, अन-ि, अन-ि, अश, अश, अश, अश). Examples are: येन रतात चार्धे यिन्दी सारे (A.V. vii. 40.1), दु रतात रितात (R.V. iii. 61.1), योहे . . रतात पाद(r) स्त्रिये (v. 67.3), तदा . . . रतात अग्निसंग (vii. 5.4), तदा . . गुरुरतात दु रतात (i. 136.5)—and many others might be quoted. The only notable exception is the root मि or मि (alone, or,
more frequently, with prefixes a or pra); and here the original meaning of
the root is doubtful (its connection with Latin minus etc., usually accepted, is highly
questionable), and the difficulty of explanation seems about as great with one
understanding of vratá as with another.

If this account of vratá shall approve itself to acceptance, the hitherto assumed
shade of meaning in sundry Vedic passages will be slightly modified, but their
interpretation will not be essentially changed; since the matter involved is not
so much the senses themselves of the word as their derivation and relation to one
another.

In preparing this paper, the fact was overlooked that M. Bergaigne also, in his
Religion Védique (iii. 212 ff.), has treated of the history and use of the same word.
He gives yet a fourth derivation, different from that of any of the three other
authorities—making it come, indeed, like Müller, from the root tṛ, but with the
primary sense of 'guard, protection.' This appears not less unacceptable than
the rest; and here, again, it may be said that M. Bergaigne's learned and acute
discussion of the uses of the word does not at all necessarily reposes upon its ety-
omology as held by him, but only upon the prevalent senses of it, as to which all
are agreed.

After passing a vote of thanks to the Trustees of the Johns
Hopkins University for the use of their assembly-room, the
Society adjourned to meet in Boston, May 6th, 1885.
American Oriental Society:

Additions to the Library.

January, 1882—May, 1885.

From Dr. Carl Abel.

From the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

From the American Antiquarian Society.

From the American Philosophical Society.

From the Asiatic Society of Bengal.
The Oriental Biographical Dictionary by the late Thomas William Beale. Edited by the Asiatic Society of Bengal under the superintendence of Henry George Keene. Calcutta, 1881. 4°.

Bibliotheca Indica. Old series, no. 243—49; new series, no. 376, 394—95, 466—80, 492—530, viz.:
The Tāttiriya Sanhitā. Fasc. 32, 33.
The Lalita Vistara, translated. Fasc. 2.
The Mâyâsâ Dârsâna. Fasc. 16, 17.
The Prthirâja Râsâ. Pt. ii. 4.
The Vâyu Purâna. Vol. ii. 2—5.
The Nirukta. Vol. i. 4—6; ii. 1—5.
The Yoga Aphorisms of Patanjali. Fasc. 2—5.
The Nitiârâ. Fasc. 5.
The Akbarnâmah. Vol. iii. 1—5.
The Tâbakat-i-Nasirî. Fasc. 13, 14.
The Sus’rûta Sanhitâ. Translated by Udoy Chând Dutt. Fasc. 1, 2.
The Tattva Chintâmani. Edited by Paṣâta Kâmâkhyânâtha Tarkaratna. Fasc. 1, 2.
The Shivarâvâlîcharita, or Paris’išhtaparvan, by Hemachandra. Edited by H. Jacobi. Fasc. 1, 2.
The Parâś’âra Smrîti, by Pandit Chandrakânta Tarkâlankâra. Fasc. 1—3.
Additions to the Library.

From the Asiatic Society of Japan.

From the Asiatic Society of Paris.

From Mr. Robert Ballard.

From the Batavian Society of Arts and Sciences.

From the Royal Academy of Sciences at Berlin.

From Prof. Ramkrishna Gopal Bhandarkar.

From the Society of Biblical Archeology.

From Prof. Maurice Bloomfield.

From the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.

From Prof. Otto Böhtlingk.

From Mr. William Bramsen.
Japanese chronological tables, showing the date, according to the Julian or Gregorian calendar, of the first day of each Japanese month from 645 A.D. to 1873 A.D. With an introductory essay on Japanese chronology and calendars. By William Bramsen. Tokyo, 1880. obl. 4°.
American Oriental Society:


From the Buffalo Historical Society.

Semi-centennial celebration of the City of Buffalo. Buffalo, 1882. 8°.


From Mr. James Burgess.

The Indian Antiquity. Vol. viii. 9, x, 11, 12, xi, xii, xiii, xiv. 1–4. Bombay, 1879–85. 4°.


From the Ceylon Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.


From the City of Charleston.


From Mme. Chavée.


From Mr. Hyde Clarke.


From Rev. Henry N. Cobb, D.D.


From Mr. Robert Cust.


From the Government of France.


From the National Library, Florence.


La ribellione di Masacado e di Sumitomo. Testo giapponese riprodotto e tradotto da Lodovico Noventini. Firenze, 1878. 8°.


From Prof. P. E. Foucaux.

Additions to the Library.

From Mr. A. L. Frothingham, Jr.

From Prof. F. Gardiner.
Journal of the Society of Biblical Literature and Exegesis, including papers read and abstract of proceedings for June and December, 1881. Middletown, 1882. 8°.

From Rev. S. C. George.
Pali MSS: viz. Kacciyano’s Pali grammar, the Pācittiya, the Patimokha Dhammapada, and a catalogue of 326 Buddhist books; all modern transcripts on paper.

From the German Oriental Society.
Abhandlungen für die Kunde des Morgenlandes:

From M. Eugène Gébért.

From Prof. Fitz-Edward Hall.
The Sāṅkhya Aphorisms of Kapila, with illustrative extracts from the commentaries. Translated by James R. Ballantyne. 3d ed. [By Fitz Edward Hall]. Lond., 1886. 8°.

From Prof. I. H. Hall.

From Rev. A. P. Happer, D.D.
The population of China. By A. P. Happer. 8°.
The number of Buddhists in the world. By A. P. Happer. 8°.

From Mr. C. de Haarles.
H. K. Geldner’s Studien zum Avesta [From Philologische Wochenschrift, 1883, no. 9]. 4°.

From the Theological Faculty of Harvard University.
Ezra Abbot [a memorial]. Cambridge, 1884. 8°.

From the Government of Holland.
Nederlandsch-Chineesch woordenboek met de transcription der Chineesche karakters in het Teiâng-Tau dialekt. Door Dr. G. Schlegel. Deel i. 1, iii, 1-3 [A, 0-5]. Leiden, 1882-84. 8°.
American Oriental Society:

From Mr. Henry A. Homes.

Turkish manuscript book of forms for firmans, etc. 192 ff. 16°.

Al-Ghazzali's Alchemy of Happiness, in Turkish. Constantinople, 1845. 8°.

Gallaudet's Natural Theology, in Armeno-Turkish. Edited by H. A. Homes. Smyrna, 1843. 12°.

On the duty of reading the Scriptures, in Armeno-Turkish. Edited by H. A. Homes. Smyrna, 1844. 16°.


Dialogue between an Armenian and a Protestant, in Armeno-Turkish. Constantino-ple, 1844. 16°.

Genesis and Psalms, in Turkish. London. 1852. 16°.

Turkish almanacs for 1847, 1848, 1849, 1851. Constantinople, 1847–51. 16°.

Almanac de l'Empire ottoman pour 1850. Constantinople, 1850. 16°.

Proverbes de Salomon, in French and Arabic. Malta, 1834. 16°.


From Rev. W. Imbrie.

Kan yeki mon do. [Conversations on buying and selling, in Japanese.] Tokio. 1881. 8°.

From Her Majesty's Secretary of State for India.


Archaeological Survey of Southern India:


Reports on publications issued and registered in the several provinces of British India in 1880, 1881, 1882. [Selections from the records of the government of India, Home Department, no. 185, 191, 195]. Calcutta, 1882–84. 8°.


Catalogue of the Sanskrit MSS. in Oudh. Fasc. xii (1880) and 1881. Allahabad, 1880–82.

Proposals for a catalogue of the Sanskrit MSS. belonging to the government of Bombay, Nov. 1881. f°.


Section i. of linguistic fragments discovered in 1870, 1872, and 1879, by G. W. Leitner, and appendix. Lahore, 1882. f°.

Collection of specimens of commercial and other alphabets, etc., current in various parts of the Punjab, Sind, and other Northwestern Provinces. By G. W. Leitner. Part A. Lahore. f°.


Account of ceremonies at the proclamation of the Imperial title at Delhi i Jan., 1877. [In Hindustani.] 1883. 4°, lithographed.


Additions to the Library.


From the Committee of the National Anthem for India Fund.
Account of the proceedings of a meeting held at the National Club, Whitehall, April 26, 1883. London, 1883. sm. 4°.

From the Indian Rights Association.


From the University of Kiel.


From M. W. Kohlhammer.


From Lieut. G. Kreitner.


From Prof. Adalbert Kahn.


From Dr. R. Lange.

Altiapanische Frühlingslieder aus der Sammlung Kokinwakašu, übersetzt und erläutert von Dr. R. Lange. Berlin, 1884. 8°.

From Messrs. E. Z. Lazarus & Co.


From Prof. A. C. Merriam.


From the Minnesota Academy of Natural Sciences.


From the Missouri Historical Society.


From Prof. F. Max Müller.


From the Royal Bavarian Academy of Sciences at Munich.


American Oriental Society:


Ueber Herkunft und Sprache der transcanganetischen Völker. Festrede von E.

Kuhl. München, 1883. 4°.


Rudolf Agricola, ein deutscher Vertreter der italienischen Renaissance. Fest-


From the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.

Journal of the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society. New series,

vol. xv., xvi. 1, 2, xvii. 2. Shanghai, 1880–84. 8°.

From the Oneida Historical Society of Utica, N. Y.


From Prof. Gustav Oppert.


From the Ethnographical Institute, Paris.


From the Ethnographical Society, Paris.


Bulletin de la Société Académique Indo-Chinoise de Paris. 2e série, tome i.


From Rev. S. D. Peet.


From Dr. Wilhelm Pertzsch.

Die Arabischen Handschriften der herzoglichen Bibliothek zu Gotha. Verzeich-


From Protap Chundra Roy.

The Mahabharata translated into English prose. Published and distributed


From Bibhú Rájendralalá Mitra.

Indo-Aryans: Contributions toward the elucidation of their ancient and medi-


84. 8°.

From the National Museum, Rio de Janeiro.


Janeiro, 1878–81. 4°.

From Mr. S. Robinson.

Persian poetry for English readers: being specimens of six of the greatest clas-

sical poets of Persia. Ferdusi, Nizami, Sádi, Jelíi-ad-Dín Rámi, Háfiz and

Jámi, with biographical notices and notes. By S. Robinson. Printed for pri-

vate circulation. [Glasgow]: 1883. 8°.
Additions to the Library.

From Mr. W. W. Rockhill.
The Mgur-bhum [Hundred thousand songs of Milarepa] in Tibetan. 245 ff. obl.

From the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland.

From the Imperial Academy of Sciences, St. Petersbourg.

From M. Seshagiri Sastri.

From the Royal Socxen Society of Sciences, Leipzig.

From Hon. Eugene Schuyler.
Nine Arabic and Persian MSS., among them one of the Koran. Sádi's Gulistan and another Persian work, lithographed.

From Prof. Gustav Seyffarth.
Planetary configuration on Cyprinian antiquities; also the original Egyptian names of the planets according to the Turin papyrus and some new planetary configurations. By Gustav Seyffarth. 8°. [From Trans. St. Louis Acad. of Sci., vol. iv, no. 3.]

From the Smithsonian Institution.

From Prof. A. F. Stenzler.
Indische Hausregel, Sanskrit and Deutsch, herausgegeben von A. F. Stenzler. i, 1, ii, 1, 2. [Abhand. fändie Kunde des Morgenl. Ed. iii, 4, vi, 2, 4.] Leipzig, 1884-78. 8°.

From Mr. Thomas G. Thrum.
Hawaiian Almanac and Annual for 1883. Honolulu. 8°.
American Oriental Society:

From Mears. N. Trübner & Co.

From the United States Bureau of Education.
Circulars of information. 1881, iv, v; 1882, i–vi; 1883, i–iv; 1884, i–vii; 1885, i. Washington, 1881–86. 8°.

From the United States Geological Survey.

From the Imperial Academy of Sciences, Vienna.

From the Anthropological Society, Vienna.

From the Geographical Society, Vienna.

From Mr. Edward P. Vining.
An inglorious Columbus; or, Evidence that Hwul Shān and a party of Buddhist monks from Afghanistan discovered America in the fifth century A. D. By Edward P. Vining. New York, 1885. 8°.

From Mr. Harrison Wright.

From Prof. William Wright.
The chronicle of Joshua the Stylite composed in Syriac A. D. 507, with a translation into English and notes by W. Wright. Cambridge, 1882. 8°.

From the Wyoming Historical and Geological Society.
LIST OF MEMBERS.

MAY, 1885.

1. CORPORATE MEMBERS.

Names marked with † are those of Life Members.

Cyrus Adler, Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
Prof. Felix Adler, New York, N. Y. (1071, 4th Ave.)
Prof. Charles A. Aiken, Princeton, N. J. (Theol. Sem.)
Robert Arrowsmith, Brooklyn, N. Y. (236 Degraw.)
Prof. John Avery, Brunswick, Me. (Bowdoin Coll.)
Prof. Elijah P. Barrows, Oberlin, O.
Samuel A. Binion, Baltimore, Md. (145 N. Kutaw.)
Prof. Maurice Bloomfield, Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
Prof. Fisk P. Brewer, Grinnell, Iowa. (Iowa Coll.)
Prof. Charles A. Briggs, New York, N. Y. (Union Theol. Sem.)
Rev. Homer J. Broadwell, Orangeburg, S. C.
Prof. Francis Brown, New York, N. Y. (Union Theol. Sem.)
Rev. George S. Burroughs, New Britain, Conn.
Prof. Henry F. Burton, Rochester, N. Y. (Rochester Univ.)
Henry B. Carrington, Boston, Mass. (32 Bromfield.)
Pres. Franklin Carter, Williamstown, Mass. (W'ms Coll.)
Rev. Talbot W. Chambers, New York, N. Y. (70, W. 36.)
Miss Eva Channing, Jamaica Plain, Mass.
Prof. Piny E. Chase, Haverford College, Pa.
Prof. Francis J. Child, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Rev. Edson L. Clarke, Southampton, Mass.
Rev. Henry N. Cobb, New York, N. Y. (Sec. Ref'med Ch. Miss.)
Rev. Edward B. Cox, New York, N. Y. (42, W. 52.)
Wm. Emmette Coleman, San Francisco, Cal. (Presidio.)
†George W. Colles, Morristown, N. J.
Brinton Coxe, Philadelphia, Pa. (1711 Locust.)
Rev. Oliver Crane, Morristown, N. J.
†Edward Cunningham, Milton, Mass.
Prof. George E. Day, New Haven, Conn. (Yale Theol. Sem.)
Rev. Lyndsay Dickerman, Boston, Mass. (Public Library.)
Rev. Samuel F. Dike, Bath, Me.
Dr. George L. Ditson, Malden, Mass.
Rev. D. Stuart Dodge, New York, N. Y. (11 Cliff.)
Prof. Henry Drisler, New York, N. Y. (Columbia Coll.)
Samuel F. Dunlap, New York, N. Y. (18, W. 22.)
American Oriental Society:

Prof. Timothy Dwight,
Adoniram J. Eaton,
Prof. A. Hjalmar Edgren,
Prof. Charles Elliott,
Prof. Levi H. Elwell,
Rev. George R. Enler,
Prof. Charles C. Everett,
Prof. Henry Ferguson,
†Frank B. Forbes,
†John M. Forbes,
Prof. J. N. Bradburnhugh,
Arthur L. Frothingham, Jr.,
Prof. Frederic Gardner,
Pres. Daniel C. Gilman,
Rev. Samuel C. George,
Prof. Basil L. Gildersleeve,
Rev. Edward W. Gilman,
Ralph L. Goodrich,
Prof. William W. Goodwin,
Rev. Gustav Gotttheil,
Rev. John T. Gracely,
Rev. George Z. Gray,
Prof. W. Henry Green,
Rev. Lewis Ghout,
Prof. Ephraim W. Gurney,
Rev. Charles R. Hale,
†Prof. Fitz-Edward Hall,
Prof. Isaac H. Hall,
Pres. Cyrus Hamlin,
Prof. Samuel Hart,
William Haskell,
Prof. James T. Hatfield,
Prof. Paul Haupt,
Michael Heilprin,
Thomas W. Higginson,
Prof. C. Wistar Dodge,
Henry A. Holmes,
Prof. Edward W. Hopkins,
Prof. James M. Hopkins,
Rev. Nicholas Hoppin,
Rev. Samuel R. House,
Miss Annie K. Humphrey,
Abraham V. W. Jackson,
Rev. Joseph S. Jenckes, Jr.,
Rev. Henry F. Jenks,
Henry Johnson,
Prof. Samuel H. Kellogg,
Henry C. Kingsley,
William L. Kingsley,
New Haven, Conn. (Yale Theol. Sem.)
Plymouth, Mass.
Lincoln, Nebr. (Univ. of Nebr.)
Easton, Pa. (Lafayette Coll.)
Amherst, Mass. (Amh. Coll.)
Franklin, N.Y.
Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Hartford, Conn. (Trinity Coll.)
Shanghai, China.
Boston, Mass. (30 Sears Build.)
Titusville, Pa.
Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
Middletown, Conn. (Berkeley Div. Sch.)
Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
Chambersburg, Pa.
Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
New York, N.Y. (Bible Soc.)
Little Rock, Ark.
Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
New York, N. Y. (681 Madison Ave.)
Rochester, N.Y.
Princeton, N.Y. (Theol. Sem.)
West Brattleboro', Vt.
Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Baltimore, Md. (239 Maryland Ave.)
Marlesford, England.
New York, N. Y. (Metr. Museum.)
Middlebury, Vt. (Middlebury Coll.)
Hartford, Conn. (Trinity Coll.)
New Haven, Conn. (Yale Coll.)
Holly Springs, Miss. (Rust Univ.)
Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
New York, N. Y. (31 Beekman Pl.)
Cambridge, Mass.
Princeton, N. J. (Theol. Sem.)
Albany, N. Y. (State Library.)
Bryn Mawr, Pa. (Bryn Mawr Coll.)
New Haven, Conn. (Yale Coll.)
Cambridge, Mass.
Waterford, N. Y.
Washington, D. C. (430, 10th.)
New York, N.Y. (Columbia Coll.)
Cincinnati, O.
Boston, Mass. (2 Mt. Vernon.)
Brunswick, Me.
Allegheny, Pa. (Western Theol. Sem.)
New Haven, Conn. (Yale Coll.)
New Haven, Conn.
List of Members.

Prof. William I. Knapp, New Haven, Conn. (Yale Coll.)
Prof. Charles R. Lanman, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Prof. James E. Latimer, Boston, Mass. (Boston Univ.)
Prof. J. Peter Lesley, Philadelphia, Pa.
Prof. Thomas B. Lindsay, Boston, Mass. (Boston Univ.)
Charles G. Loring, Boston, Mass. (1 Mt. Vernon.)
Prof. J. Russell Lowell, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Prof. Jules Luquiens, Boston, Mass. (Inst. of Technology.)
†Prof. Benjamin S. Lyman, Northampton, Mass.
Prof. David G. Lyon, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
John W. McCoy, Baltimore, Md. (380 Rutaw Pl.)
Prof. James F. McCurdy, Chatham, New Brunswick, Canada.
Prof. Charles M. Mead, Andover, Mass.
Rev. Aelish Merrill, Jerusalem.
Prof. Alexander Metzbowitz, New York, N. Y. (307 E. 34.)
Rev. Orlando D. Miller, Nashua, N. H.
Rev. Lawrence H. Mills, Hannover, Germany.
Prof. James C. Moffat, Princeton, N. J. (Theol. Sem.)
Prof. Alexander B. Nicholson, Kingston, Ontario. (Queen's Univ.)
†Robert M. Oliphant, New York, N. Y. (160 Madison Ave.)
Prof. Charles P. Otis, Boston, Mass. (Inst. of Technology.)
Rev. William A. Packard, Princeton, N. J. (Coll. of N. J.)
Prof. John A. Paine, Tarrytown, N. Y.
Prof. Timothy O. Paine, Elmwood, Mass.
Dr. Peter Parker, Washington, D. C.
Prof. Andrew P. Peabody, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Harry T. Peck, Greenwich, Conn. (Columbia Coll.)
Prof. Edward D. Perry, New York, N. Y. (Columbia Coll.)
P. L. Armand de Potter, Tivoli-on-the-Hudson, N. Y.
Dr. Charles Rice, New York, N. Y. (Bellevue Hosp.)
William W. Rockhill, Peking, China. (Am. Legation.)
Joseph S. Ropes, Boston, Mass. (48 Congress.)
Julius Sachs, New York, N. Y. (649 Madison Ave.)
†Prof. Edward E. Salisbury, New Haven, Conn.
Prof. M. Schele de Vere, University of Virginia.
Dr. H. Ernest Schmid, White Plains, N. Y.
Rev. Henry M. Scudder, Chicago, Ill. (206, 28th.)
J. Herbert Senter, Portland, Me.
Prof. Gustav Seyffarth, New York, N. Y. (1468, 4th Ave.)
Prof. Charles Short, New York, N. Y. (Columbia Coll.)
Herbert W. Smyth, Brooklyn, N. Y. (9 Montague Terr.)
Prof. Henry P. Smith, Cincinnati, O. (Lane Theol. Sem.)
Dr. Edward H. Spiller, Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
American Oriental Society:

Prof. William O. Sproull, Cincinnati, O. (Univ. of Cincinnati.)
Prof. Frederick Stengel, New York, N. Y. (Columbia Coll.)
Prof. Austin Stockey, New York, N. Y. (35, W 17.)
Rev. Lyman Stimson, Jefferson, Iowa.
Richard Sullivan, Boston, Mass.
Rev. Edward W. Style, Philadelphia, Pa. (609 Walnut.)
†George W. Talbot, New York, N. Y. (63, 5th Ave.)
Prof. John P. Taylor, Andover, Mass. (Theol. Sem.)
Rev. Milton S. Terry, New York, N. Y. (249, W. 43.)
Prof. Thomas A. Thacher, New Haven, Conn. (Yale Coll.)
Prof. J. Henry Thayer, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Prof. Calvin Thomas, Ann Arbor, Mich. (Mich. Univ.)
Dr. Henry A. Todd, Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
Prof. Crawford H. Toy, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
J. Hammond Trumbull, Hartford, Conn.
Rev. Kinsey Twining, New York, N. Y. (251 Broadway.)
Rev. W. Tyler, New York, N. Y. (22, W 51.)
Addison Van Name, New Haven, Conn. (Yale Coll.)
Edward P. Vining, Chicago, Ill. (103 Adams.)
†Thomas Walsh, Yokohama, Japan.
Rev. Ferdinand Dew Ward, Genesee, N. Y.
Miss Susan H. Ward, New York, N. Y.
Rev. W. Hayes Ward, New York, N. Y. (251 Broadway.)
Henry C. Warren, Boston, Mass. (67 Mt. Vernon.)
Pres. William F. Warren, Boston, Mass. (Boston Univ.)
Charles E. West, Brooklyn, N. Y. (138 Mautoge.)
John Westall, Fall River, Mass.
Prof. John W. White, Cambridge, Mass. (Harvard Coll.)
Dr. Moses C. White, New Haven, Conn. (Yale Med. School.)
F. Cope Whitehouse, New York, N. Y. (Brevort Ho.)
Prof. William D. Whitney, New Haven, Conn. (Yale Coll.)
Rev. Joseph K. Wright, New Hamburgh, N. Y.
Prof. Alonzo Williams, Providence, R. I. (Brown Univ.)
Talcott Williams, Philadelphia, Pa. ("Press" office.)
Prof. Samuel J. Wilson, Allegheny, Pa. (Western Theol. Sem.)
Rev. William C. Winslow, Boston, Mass. (429 Beacon.)
Prof. Henry Wood, Baltimore, Md. (Johns Hopkins Univ.)
Pres. Theodore D. Woolsey, New Haven, Conn.
Prof. Edward J. Young, Cambridge, Mass.
List of Members.

2. CORRESPONDING MEMBERS.

Prof. Graziadio I. Ascoli, Milan, Italy.
Rev. C. C. Baldwin, Missionary at Foochow, China.
Prof. Adolf Bastian, Berlin, Prussia.
Rev. Cephas Bennett, Missionary at Rangoon, Burma.
Pres. Daniel Bliss, Beirut, Syria.
Rev. Henry Blodget, Missionary at Peking, China.
Rev. Nathan Brown, Missionary at Yokohama, Japan.
Prof. Heinrich Brugsch-Bey, Teheran, Persia.
Prof. George Buehler, Vienna, Austria.
Rev. Alonzo Bunker, Missionary at Toungoo, Burma.
Rev. Marcus C. Carlston, Missionary at Ambala, India.
Rev. William Clarke, • Florence, Italy.
Rev. Charles H. A. Dall, Missionary at Calcutta, India.
Prof. Philippe Ed. Foucaux, Paris, France.
Dr. James C. Hemburn, Missionary at Yokohama, Japan.
Prof. L. Leon de Rosny, Paris, France.
Rev. Albert L. Long, Missionary at Constantinople, Turkey.
Rev. Robert S. Maclay, Missionary at Tokio, Japan.
Dr. Daniel J. MacGowan, Wanchow, China.
Dr. Divin B. McCarter, New York, N. Y. (230, 2d Ave.)
Dr. Alexander G. Paspati, Athens, Greece.
Alphonse Pinart, San Francisco, Cal.
Rajendralal Mitra, Calcutta, India.
Rev. Elias Riggs, Missionary at Constantinople.
Dr. George Rosen, Detmold, Germany.
Rev. William W. Scudder, Missionary at Madanapalle, India.
Dr. Cornelius V. A. Van Dyck, Missionary at Beirut, Syria.
Rev. George T. Washburn, Missionary at Pasumalai, S. India.
Rev. James W. Waugh, Missionary at Lucknow, India.
Prof. Gustav Welt, Heidelberg, Germany.
Rev. George W. Wood, Missionary at Constantinople, Turkey.
American Oriental Society.

3. HONORARY MEMBERS.

APURVA KrsHNA BAHAHur, Calcutta, India.
OTTO BOEHTLINGK, Leipzig, Germany.
Prof. BERThOLD DELBRÜCK, Jena, Germany.
Prof. AUGUST DILLMANN, Berlin, Germany.
Prof. HEnRICI LEBERECHT FLEISCHER, Leipzig, Germany.
Prof. MAx MUELLER, Oxford, England.
Prof. THEODOR NOELDEKE, Strassburg, Germany.
Prof. AUGUST FRIEDRICH POTT, Halle, Germany.
Prof. KENNETH REXAN, Paris, France.
Prof. Rudolf Roth, Tübingen, Germany.
Prof. FRIEDRICH SPIEGEL, Erlangen, Germany.
Prof. ADOLF FRIEDRICH STEINER, Breslau, Germany.
Prof. ALBRECHT WEBER, Berlin, Germany.
Prof. MOnIer WILLIAMS, Oxford, England.
Prof. WILLIAM WRIGHT, Cambridge, England.